





Gc  
974.401  
Es7h  
v.2,pt.2  
1834291

REYNOLDS HISTORICAL  
GENEALOGY COLLECTION



ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01101 6562













Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2015

[https://archive.org/details/historyofessexco22hurd\\_0](https://archive.org/details/historyofessexco22hurd_0)



4484

HISTORY  
OF  
ESSEX COUNTY,  
MASSACHUSETTS,  
WITH  
BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES  
OF MANY OF ITS  
PIONEERS AND PROMINENT MEN.

COMPILED UNDER THE SUPERVISION OF  
D. HAMILTON HURD.

VOL. II.

V. 2, pt. 2

ILLUSTRATED.

PHILADELPHIA:

J. W. LEWIS & CO.

1888.

1871

1871

1871

1871

1871

1871

1871

1871



carried on in Merrimac to a limited extent. Moses Goodrich and Charles Sargent were engaged in the manufacture of boots, and Stephen Clement and James B. Hoyt in that of shoes. Some of these, however, are now dead and only a remnant of the old business remains.

Among those connected with the industries of the town may be mentioned George S. Prescott, who has been for some years engaged in the setting up of lightning-rods in conformity with scientific inventions and discoveries of his own relating to the connection of electric currents with water courses.

The population of Amesbury in 1875, the year before the incorporation of Merrimac, was 5987; according to the next census, in 1880, it was 3355, and in 1885, 4403. In 1880 the population of Merrimac was 2237, and in 1885, 2378. The valuation of Amesbury in 1875, the year before the incorporation of Merrimac, was \$2,331,694.62, and in 1876, \$1,802,007. In 1886 it had increased to \$1,864,101. In 1876 that of Merrimac was \$968,845, and had increased in 1886 to \$1,204,136.

Merrimac is well supplied with professional men and traders in the various branches of business too numerous to mention. It has a good hotel, well kept, and with its increasing prosperity is destined to have a larger growth.

NOTE.—The writer acknowledges the great assistance in the preparation of the sketch of Merrimac which he has received from manuscript notes prepared by Joseph Merrill, Esq., of Amesbury, and Hon. James D. Pike, of Merrimac.

## BIOGRAPHICAL.

### JOHN S. MORSE.

John Sargent Morse, son of John and Patience Sargent Morse, was born March 16, 1780, in that part of Amesbury now incorporated as the town of Merrimac. He was a descendant of Anthony Morse, who was born in Marlborough, Wiltshire, England, May 6, 1606, and emigrated to this country in the ship "James," arriving in Boston June 3, 1635, settling in "Ould Newbury" the same year.

The house in which John S. Morse was born was one of the most substantial structures of the earlier days of New England, and was considered an old house when purchased by his grandfather, Benjamin Morse, in 1728. Although a new and more commodious house was erected near by John S. Morse in his later years (now occupied by his grandson, Edward W. Morse), the old building is still standing in a fair state of preservation. It is now unoccupied, but is kept as a memento of olden time, and still contains the furniture of the past, including the loom, spinning-wheels and other implements of household industry.

The earlier years of John S. Morse were devoted to

the usual employment of a New England boy on the farm and to teaching the district school in the winter. This he continued for such a length of time that his later pupils were in many cases the children of his earlier ones.

Early in life he was appointed a justice of the peace, and as administrator or executor settled a large number of estates.

In the surveying of land he had much experience, and his tenacious memory and good judgment were relied upon as almost infallible in fixing boundaries.

He was many times elected one of the selectmen of Amesbury, and always performed his duties with the strictest fidelity. He was also town treasurer and collector. In 1820 he was a member of the State Constitutional Convention. He was appointed inspector of customs at Newburyport by President Jackson, and served eight years in that capacity.

In 1806 he married Judith Weed, daughter of Ephraim and Judith Goodwin Weed.

A man of remarkable calmness and serenity, conscientious and temperate in all things, he had great influence in the community where his long life was passed.

Two children survive him,—Ephraim Weed Morse of San Diego, Cal., and Sally Maria, wife of Philip J. Neal, of Merrimac.

Ephraim W. Morse sailed from Boston, February 4, 1849, in the ship "Leonora" for San Francisco. He returned in 1851, remaining until 1853, when he returned to San Diego, which place he has since made his home. About twenty years ago he made large purchases of land in the vicinity, which has since greatly increased in value. In 1852 he married Lydia Ann Gray, of Amesbury, by whom he had one son, Edward W., who now occupies the old homestead upon Bear Hill in Merrimac. His second wife was Mary Chase Walker, a teacher in San Diego, and formerly of Manchester, N. H.

### HON. WILLIAM NICHOLS.

Hon. William Nichols was born August 26, 1787. Concerning the early history of the family we may fittingly use Mr. Nichols' own records:

"From the best evidence which I am able to obtain, I find that about the year 1700 our ancestor, Jno. Nichols, lived in a house standing on the north bank of the Merrimac River, in Amesbury, near where Nichols' Creek discharges its waters into the Merrimac. The Amesbury records inform us that he married Abigail Sargent, of Gloucester, December 17, 1701. Tradition says they had twelve sons and three daughters. That their birth took place in the following order: Their first-born was a daughter, they then had six sons in succession, then another daughter, then six sons in succession, and then closed with another daughter, and the town records go far in corroboration of this."





Humphrey, the tenth child and eighth son, from whom many of the Nichols family now residing in the town are descended, was born April 12, 1723, and married Dorothy Hunt, July 10, 1746. Their children were Elizabeth, Hopstill, Hezekiah, Abigail, Humphrey and Sarah. The son Hezekiah was born August 9, 1752, and married Hannah Colby, January 1, 1775, and moved to Newbury, or what is now Newburyport, near what is called "The Laurels," where his son William was born.

In 1796 the family removed to West Amesbury, to a house on Bear Hill, and subsequently to a house near the Upper "Corner."

In 1814 Wm. Nichols was married to Rhoda Sargent, daughter of Moses and Dolly Sargent, of the same town, and from that time till his death lived at the homestead of the "Moulton Farm," which he had purchased in the spring of the same year.

In 1822 he purchased the farm adjoining his own, known as the "Merrill Farm," which contained the largest orchard in the town.

Even in these earlier days carriage manufacturing was begun, and Mr. Nichols carried on the business of a silver-plater, and sometimes engaged in the manufacture of a few carriages. As more ornamental work was used then than now, the business of silver-plating was at that time and for many years quite an important adjunct to the manufacture of carriages.

He was appointed lieutenant and afterwards captain in the State militia, and thus gained the title of "Captain Nichols," by which he was familiarly known during his whole life.

In 1826 he received a commission as justice of the peace, which office he continued to hold till within a year of his death. In this capacity he did much work in writing deeds, wills and other legal papers, for which his considerable literary qualifications rendered him peculiarly fitted. He was also a land surveyor, and for many years did much of this work in Amesbury and the surrounding towns.

Mr. Nichols was elected Senator in 1832, an office which has been held by no one else at the west end of the town. He afterwards served on the Board of Selectmen ten years, served on many important committees, and was frequently elected moderator of town-meetings, for which, by his firmness and self-command, he was well adapted.

His first wife died April 6, 1860, of the small-pox, which was then prevalent.

In the later years of his life, having become the possessor of considerable valuable land, the plating business was nearly abandoned and his time was mostly given to farming.

In the fall of 1861 Mr. Nichols married Eliza, widow of Hiram Colby, who still survives.

After a sickness of some duration he died November 30, 1868.

Mr. Nichols was a man of great energy of character, with good knowledge of men and affairs. An

able man, fair and generous, his advice was often sought and always given to the best of his ability. United with integrity were good judgment and clear sight, so that he was not unjustly considered the ablest man at the west end of the town.

He had four children, all by his first wife.

Betsey, born May 28, 1816, who was married to Frederick Sargent, September, 1841. Mr. Sargent was one of the pioneers of those engaged in the sale of carriage furnishing goods, a business now carried on to a large extent in Merrimac, which business he successfully conducted until the time of his death, which occurred January 12, 1867, leaving his wife with one daughter, Rhoda E. Sargent. Mrs. Sargent died April 25, 1887, universally esteemed for her many excellent traits of heart and mind.

George W., born May 25, 1817. He was married, July 21, 1853, to Fanny Short, of Newbury. Of their three children,—Laura J. (now Mrs. Geo. N. Goodwin), Mary F. and William G.,—the first two, with Mrs. Nichols, still reside in the old homestead. Geo. W. Nichols was a man of wide, general information, well versed in languages and quite a student of natural history. Well read, he was for many successive terms a member of the School Committee, for years a consistent member of the Universalist Church, and its clerk at the time of his death, October 27, 1884.

Both the other sons of William Nichols—Wm. Francis, born April 18, 1819, and Hezekiah Smith, born February 2, 1826,—died in early manhood, the former aged twenty-one, and the latter nineteen. They were both young men of promise and unusually pure character, and their parents deeply felt their loss.

#### PATTEN SARGENT.

Patten Sargent was born August 16, 1793, in West Amesbury (now Merrimac). He was the son of Ichabod B. and Ruth Sargent, being the second in a family of eight children. His parents were persons of earnest religious convictions and exemplary Christian life, and sought to train their children in the right way. At the age of sixteen their son Patten left the paternal roof to serve an apprenticeship at the trade of a silver-plater, with Mr. William Johnson, a citizen of the town. At the age of twenty-one when his period of apprenticeship had expired, he spent a short time working at his trade in Newburyport and at the village of West Amesbury. He then resolved to undertake business for himself and establish himself at the River Village in Amesbury (now Merrimacport), where he resided till his death. The carriage manufacturing business, now so large and prosperous in that community, was then in its infancy. Mr. Sargent, on his removal to the River Village, while not at once giving up active labor at his trade as a plater, opened a store for groceries, family supplies, etc., and also for carriage hardware and trimmings. He soon found it expedient to en-







*Patton Sargent,*





*J. J. Merrill*







*James B. Sargent*





tirely relinquish labor at his trade and gave himself wholly to his store, and to dealing in carriages. He continued thus in active business as a trader till about the year 1850, when, having acquired what he deemed a competence, he retired from business. His business career was characterized by industry, energy, good judgment and strict integrity. In financial transactions his honesty and truthfulness could always be depended upon, and to all who knew him his word was as good as his bond. He was kind-hearted and sympathetic in his feelings, though not demonstrative. He was modest and unpretentious in his bearing, courteous and respectful towards all classes of people and careful in speech concerning the character and conduct of others, his tongue never being that of a backbiter. And yet he was quick in reading the characters of those with whom he had to do. His tastes and habits were simple and frugal and he had no fondness for ostentatious display. He won to an unusual degree the respect and confidence of all. His fellow-townsmen three times elected him their Representative to the General Court. At the organization of the Powow River Bank in Salisbury, in 1836, he was made a member of its board of directors, and at the incorporation of the National Bank in Merrimac, in 1864, he was chosen its first president, a position which advancing age led him to resign in 1872. His life was prolonged to the advanced age of ninety years, his death occurring at Merrimacport, August 17, 1883. He was twice married; his first marriage, which took place January 14, 1819, was to Miss Dolly, daughter of Moses and Dolly Sargent, of West Amesbury. His second marriage, March 4, 1832, was to Miss Betsey, daughter of Robert and Rhoda Patten, of Amesbury. He had six children, all by his first wife. Three—Henry, Laura J. (wife of D. H. Bradley, Esq., of Malden) and Dolly—died during their father's lifetime. Three still survive—William P., head of the late firm of William P. Sargent & Co. carriage manufacturers and dealers of Boston; Sarah, wife of Rev. Albert Paine, of Boston Highlands; and Emily, wife of George O. Goodwin, Esq., of Merrimacport.

#### THOMAS T. MERRILL.

Thomas T. Merrill was the son of Parker and Betsey Merrill. He was born in South Hampton, N. H., August 19, 1797. He was a direct descendent from the French Huguenots; original name, De-Merle; was the eldest child of a family of four, viz.: Thomas True, William, Betsey and Amos. Like the majority of country boys, he had but limited advantages for an education, yet he improved every opportunity, and when quite young was considered an excellent scholar, especially in mathematics; he taught school very successfully for several years during the winter months in different towns in New Hampshire; in summer worked at his trade of carpenter. He

moved to West Amesbury (now Merrimac) in 1838; here he purchased a large farm. At the same time he was engaged in the duties his farm required, he was pursuing his trade, erecting many houses in West Amesbury and vicinity, also Lawrence; he erected the first house in Lawrence, Mass. In 1848 Mr. Merrill, in company with others, established the West Amesbury Wheel Company, and was its agent until his death, which occurred very suddenly, July 12, 1871. He was a strong churchman, and, with his wife, Oliva, united with the Rocky Hill Church in 1832; was very positive in his nature, benevolent, yet prudent, of strong will-power and individuality, with very decided views. In early life he was a strong Whig, later a staunch Republican; no office-seeker, yet he worked hard for his party. He was largely identified with the religious and business prosperity of the place. He was chosen one of the directors of the First National Bank of West Amesbury at its organization, in 1864, which position he held until his death. Prompt to act, a good adviser and a generous giver, he might well be called the unfortunate man's friend. A leader in every good cause, his death was mourned as a public calamity.

He was twice married—his first wife, Oliva, daughter of John and Polly Merrill, died September 30, 1842. By this marriage he had seven children,—Elizabeth J., Joseph T., John F., Emily A., Mary O., Helen A. and Calvin A. (Elizabeth and Calvin deceased.) His second wife, Hannah, who still survives him, was the daughter of Sallie and Edmond Nichols. By his second marriage he had two children,—Lucy M. and Francis S. Mr. Merrill lived to see all his children well married and occupying honorable positions in life. At the time of his death he left twenty grandchildren.

#### JONATHAN BAILEY SARGENT.

Jonathan Bailey Sargent, son of Ichabod B. and Ruth (Patten) Sargent, was born July 3, 1798. He married Sarah E. Nichols May 22, 1822, and had nine children. Mr. Sargent received a common-school education, and at an early age was apprenticed to Willis Patten (at the River Village), who was a blacksmith. After learning his trade (and previous to his marriage) he set up in business for himself, and shortly after commenced manufacturing carriage-axles, to which he subsequently added carriage-springs.

He was for a number of years an extensive builder of carriages, and was the originator of what has long been known as the half-patent-axle, which is still used more extensively than any other.

Having carried on the manufacture of axles and springs successfully for a number of years, he disposed of this business to the West Amesbury Spring and Axle Company.

Mr. Sargent was a man of marked individuality



and strong convictions, and one of the leading men of West Amesbury, and all religious, educational and other measures tending to advance the interest of his town found in him an able advocate. He represented his town in the General Court in 1850 and '52, and served as selectman several years. He was always largely interested in horticulture, and it would be difficult to say whether he derived the greatest satisfaction from his labors in the orchard and garden, or in distributing their products among his neighbors and friends.

In religion he was a pronounced Universalist, and his house was a home for the clergy of that denomination. Mr. Sargent was a great reader, and probably possessed a greater fund of general information than any other man in the town. His opinion and advice were sought for by all classes in matters of business. He died August 11, 1882.

Edmund N. and Bailey Sargent, sons of the subject of this sketch, were brought up in business with their father. Bailey was the first treasurer of the West Amesbury Spring and Axle Company, after this company had purchased the spring and axle business of his father. He has filled several offices of trust in his town, such as postmaster; also selectman in 1869 and '70, treasurer and collector in 1879 and town clerk, treasurer and collector of Merrimac since its incorporation, in 1876. He also served in the late Rebellion, enlisting in the Massachusetts Second Heavy Artillery, and was first lieutenant at the close of the war.

Edmund N., who died February 10, 1887, was agent of the West Amesbury Manufacturing Company from October, 1884, until his death. He also held many offices of trust in his native town.

The commission of Postmaster, held by Bailey from 1861 to 1863, was, upon his resignation, reissued to his sister Jane, who served as postmistress until April, 1866.

Ruth, the oldest daughter, married G. G. Strickland, a Universalist clergyman, and was settled in Amesbury and Merrimac for several years, and afterwards in Saco, Me.

#### DR. BENJAMIN ATKINSON.

Dr. Benjamin Atkinson was born in Minot, Maine, January 29, 1806, and at the age of twenty-five he established himself as a physician in West Amesbury. He was one of eleven children, three having studied medicine and one law. He married, December 1, 1831, a daughter of Dr. Seth Chandler, of Minot, Maine,—Rhoda Wadsworth Chandler, whose graceful presence will long be remembered by her many friends.

Dr. Atkinson, having settled in the village in its infancy, closely allied himself with its varied interests, both moral and educational. On his thirtieth birthday he was chosen a deacon in the Orthodox Congregational Church, serving until his death.

He was instrumental in procuring for successive seasons the most distinguished men of the time as lecturers in the village, always entertaining them at his own house.

I know of no more fitting tribute to his memory than the following lines, written by his pastor, the Rev. Leander Thompson: "How well he performed the duties of his laborious and responsible profession, those who have known him longest and best need not be reminded."

If the united testimony of a great number of grateful and attached friends who have experienced his professional kindness can be relied upon, he has been a physician of rare fidelity. Always self-sacrificing, full of sympathy and tenderness, he never spared himself,—so long as he had strength to expend,—and his presence, his noble form, his gentlemanly bearing and his kindly manner always inspired confidence around the bed of sickness, and suggested supporting considerations around the bed of death. And he has ever had in his profession a more than ordinary share of success.

His friends confided in his skill as well as in his kindness. To not a few among us he has been thus for many years what Luke was to Paul and other primitive Christians—"The beloved Physician."

He died October 22, 1861, leaving a wife and three children, his son, Benjamin Chandler Atkinson, having served through the Civil War.

His eldest daughter married John P. Whittier, formerly a prominent carriage manufacturer of Boston. The younger daughter married Edward Taylor (2d), of Andover.

#### ALFRED E. GOODWIN.

Alfred E. Goodwin was the son of Ephraim and Elizabeth Goodwin, and was born in Amesbury, Mass., October 12, 1807. He was the second child in a family of four, viz: David, Alfred E., Ephraim and Elizabeth. Alfred E. was reared on a farm, and later in life learned the trade of carriage trimmer with Joseph Sargent. Later he went into business on his own account, manufacturing carriages, until the firm of Goodwin, Sargent & Co. was organized for the sale of carriage findings, groceries and manufacture of shoes. (The firm consisted of A. E. Goodwin, Francis Sargent and Albert Sargent.) Mr. Goodwin remained in this business for a few years, when he became associated with the firm of Sargent, Harlow & Co., becoming the company of this concern, and as such continued for some time, when he entered into partnership with Frederick Sargent. Upon the death of Mr. Sargent, Mr. Goodwin admitted into partnership Albert Sargent. This firm continued until 1880, when they sold out to Little & Larkin.

Mr. Goodwin was one of Amesbury's most honored citizens, and always manifested a deep interest in the town; he was a director in the bank, and deacon in the Congregational Church for forty years. He was

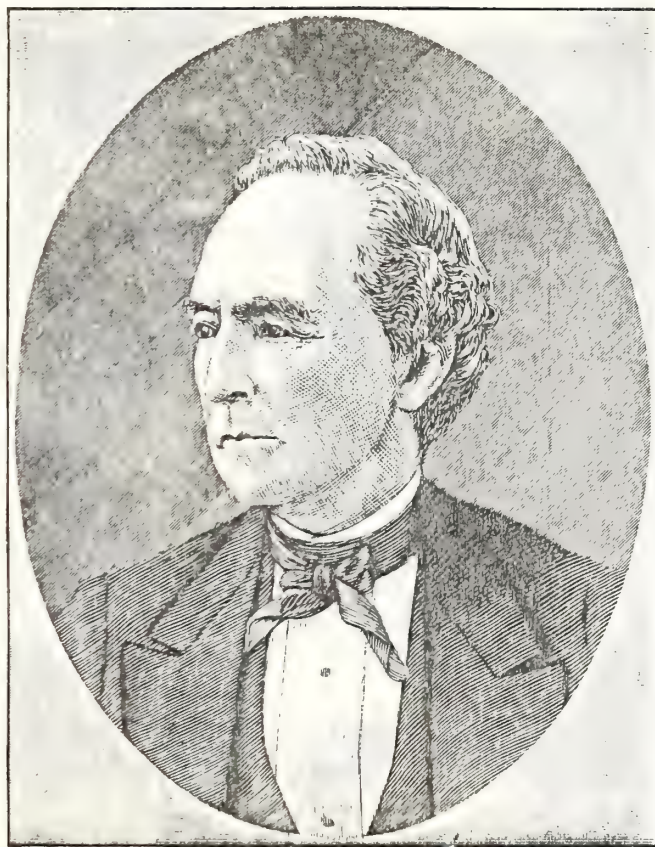






*Benj. Atkinson*





*Alfred E. Goodwin*







*William Garrison*



a Republican in politics and represented his town in the Legislature.

His wife was Maria, daughter of Col. Edmund Sargent. They had one child, Alfred N., who died when eight years of age. Mr. Goodwin died of heart-disease, November 1, 1881, aged seventy-four years.

#### WILLIAM GUNNISON.

William Gunnison was born in Newburyport, Massachusetts, December 11, 1809. Tradition informs us that his ancestry in this country, traces back to one Hugh Gunnison (a Swede) who came to America with an English colony in 1832, and settled in Boston. A few years later he, with others, was disarmed for the Hutchinson heresy, and removed to Kittery, Maine, where many of his descendants were born, and among them William Gunnison, grandfather of the William Gunnison mentioned above.

In 1780 he removed to Fishersfield (now Newbury), New Hampshire. A man of great physical endurance, of deep religious principle, firm and unyielding in whatever he considered as the right, he seemed well-fitted as one of the pioneers of a new country.

One of his sons, Joseph, left home at an early age to seek his fortunes elsewhere. He located in Newburyport; married Anna Chase, of Haverhill, Massachusetts. William Gunnison, the second son of Joseph Gunnison, and subject of this sketch, remained at home until twelve years of age, enjoying the limited educational privileges of his native city. His father dying, he went to Newbury, New Hampshire, to live with his grandfather, remaining with him two years working on the farm, and attending school three months each year.

At the age of fourteen he came to West Amesbury (now Merrimac) and apprenticed himself to Ebenezer Fullington for a term of seven years to learn the carriage trade. Faithfully he served the long term of years.

After two or three years as journeyman, he commenced the manufacture of carriages with small capital. Possessed of strong will, indomitable energy, untiring perseverance, and with such knowledge of the business as his limited resources, aside from keen observation outside of his apprenticeship, allowed him to acquire, he determined to succeed, and from the lowest round of the ladder worked his way upward, slowly but surely.

December 12, 1833, he married Belinda Hayford, daughter of Nathan Hayford, of Tamworth, New Hampshire, a soldier of the War of 1812. He still made West Amesbury (now Merrimac) his home. Interested in the prosperity of the town and people with whom he had identified himself, he was a willing worker with them to advance its interests.

He continued alone the manufacture of carriages until 1851, when a co-partnership was formed with

Mr. William H. Haskell, of Merrimac, and Mr. William P. Sargent, of Boston, and, as a result of hard work and long experience, built up a large business and established an enviable reputation; after ten years the partnership was dissolved.

In 1860, Mr. Gunnison purchased a building lot on Main Street, West Amesbury (now Merrimac), and built a fine residence, which he occupied until his death.

In 1862 he gradually increased his business, by employing small outside concerns to turn out work for him partially finished, which he would complete in his own factory.

During the years between 1862 and 1872 he bought and sold many carriages other than his own manufacture, being unable to meet the demand for his own products. A frequenter of the leading carriage centres, he kept himself fully informed in the line of his business, promptly applying any invention that would add to the utility or elegance of his carriages, thus retaining a front rank as manufacturer.

In 1866-67-68 he gave extensive credits. Seldom, if ever, did he refuse credit to an industrious, honest man. By his genial manners, and the liberal methods by which he conducted his business, he gained the confidence of his patrons, and many of them became his firm friends. In 1874 he removed his business from South to West Amesbury (now Merrimac), and associated with him as partner, Samuel Scofield, his son-in-law, determining to limit his business and take life easier. He enjoyed the fruits of a well-earned competency during the remainder of a long and useful life. Being himself in a measure relieved from the perplexities of business, he took pleasure in assisting many less fortunate than himself. Only those who knew him most intimately were aware of his many kind deeds and acts of friendship. Intensely interested in the organization of the National Bank of Merrimac, he was chosen one of its directors, continuing until his death, which occurred very suddenly, January 2, 1879.

Mr. Gunnison was a man of prepossessing appearance, naturally a good conversationalist. A great reader, well versed in the current topics of the day, and seldom failed to interest. From the resolutions adopted by the Carriage Makers' Convention, of which he was a member, we copy the following: "For over a half a century he has been identified with the carriage trade, and his good works have been so various and important that his long and useful life, recently closed, may be said to form a part of the history of the trade in this country.

"A tribute to his memory: We hold dear the memory of the numerous excellencies which characterize him,—his candor, his honor and unflinching devotion to duty, which made him a friend to every man, and every man a friend."

He had eight children. His widow and six children still survive him. The eldest daughter remained





at home, enjoying his companionship to the last. Two daughters and two sons married, and are residents of Merrimac. Belinda married Samuel Scofield, of Yorkshire, England. He was the one referred to as partner. Lydia M. married Bailey Sargent (business, insurance; also holding the office of town clerk and treasurer of Merrimac). The two sons—William W. and Charles E.—are both interested in the carriage business. C. E. Gunnison is one of the leading manufacturers of Merrimac.

Sarah A., the youngest daughter, married Asa F. Pattee, M.D., of Warner, New Hampshire, then a practicing physician of Merrimac; some of his ancestors were of Merrimac origin.

Successful here, during the war he had charge of the Alexander Hospital, Second Division of the Army of the Potomac. He returned to Merrimac in 1865, resuming practice for a year, and then removed to Boston, 1866, where at the present time he resides, a successful practitioner, and a large contributor to medical literature, and from 1881 to 1886 was professor in the College of Physicians and Surgeons, lecturing on diseases of the nervous system.

#### WILLIAM HENRY HASKELL.

William Henry Haskell, the subject of this sketch, was born in Newburyport September 21, 1810, and obtained his early education in her public schools. In 1824, at the age of fourteen years, he went to West Amesbury, where he learned the trade of silver-plating, then a very important trade in connection with the manufacture of carriages, which was the principal business of the locality.

In 1831 he engaged in the manufacture of carriages, continuing also his silver-plating. In 1850 he entered into co-partnership with Wm. P. Sargent and Wm. Gunnison, under the firm-name of Sargent, Gunnison & Co.

This firm had a repository in Boston for the sale of their carriages, and a manufactory and store in West Amesbury, Mr. Haskell having charge of the store, which was connected with the business of the company, for the sale of carriage findings, together with the usual variety of goods to be found in a country store at that time. This firm was very successful, doing the largest business of any in the town.

Mr. Haskell continued a member of the firm until its dissolution, in 1860. In his business life he developed a decided talent for financial pursuits, which found expression in his efforts for the establishment of the First National Bank of Amesbury, which was chartered in 1864 with a capital of fifty thousand dollars, and of which he became the first cashier, serving in that capacity until 1869, when he was chosen as its president, which position he still holds.

The bank has been very successfully managed, and has had its capital stock increased from \$50,000 to \$200,000.

In 1871 the Merrimac Savings Bank was chartered, and in this movement he also was actively interested. He was its first treasurer, and subsequently, on the death of its first president, he was elected to fill that office, which he acceptably fills at the present time.

Mr. Haskell was also prominently connected with the building of the West Amesbury Branch Railroad, owning largely in its stock. He was made president of the company, which position he still occupies.

He was actively interested in the division of Amesbury and the incorporation of the town of Merrimac, serving on the committee which presented the matter to the Legislature, and doing much for the success of the movement.

He was one of the contributors for the purchase and presentation to the town of the land upon which the Town Hall stands, and his service was recognized by his fellow-citizens in his election as chairman of the first Board of Selectmen in the new town.

Mr. Haskell has always been an active participant in public affairs, serving on the Board of Selectmen of Amesbury. In politics a Republican, he represented that town in the Legislature of 1869 as a member of the House of Representatives, where he was an efficient member of the Committee on Banks and Banking. Subsequently his name was presented as a candidate for the office of Senator.

In 1817 he received a commission as justice of the peace from Governor George N. Briggs, which he held for twenty-eight years, declining further service.

Early in life he identified himself with the temperance cause, and was one of thirteen who organized the first temperance society in Amesbury. In 1828 he united with the Congregational Church in West Amesbury, has been actively interested in its work, and a faithful contributor to its support.

Mr. Haskell's connection with the growth and prosperity of the town has been intimate and active during all the years of his residence in it, and he still holds important trusts and fills a large place in the confidence and esteem of his fellow-townsmen.

Mr. Haskell has been twice married. His first wife was Charissa Whittier; his present wife is a daughter of the late Edmund Whittier, of West Amesbury. He has had eight children, five of whom are still living.

#### FRANCIS SARGENT.

Francis Sargent is a descendant in direct line from Richard, of England, who was an officer in the royal navy; he had a son William (first generation), born in 1602, who came to this country early in life and settled at Ipswich, Mass.; from there he went to Newbury, then to Amesbury, where he died in 1675, aged seventy-three years. He married Elizabeth Perkins and had Thomas (second generation), born April 4, 1643. Thomas married Rachel Barnes January 2, 1667, and had a son Thomas (third generation), born November 15, 1676; he married Mary Stevens December 17, 1702;





Wm H Haskece







*Francis Sargent*





*John A. Payor*





their son was Moses (fourth generation), born Aug. 21, 1797; he married Sarah Bagley July 14, 1727, and had a son Orlando (fifth generation), born April 21, 1728, who married Betty Barnard and had Orlando (sixth generation), born January 20, 1769; he married Hannah Welsh, of Fraistow, N. H.; they had a son *Francis* (seventh generation), the subject of this sketch, who was born November 10, 1810, in the old homestead, West Amesbury (now Merrimac), built by his grandfather Orlando at an early day; he was a farmer, as was his son Orlando, the father of *Francis*.

The grandfather, Deacon Orlando (fifth generation), was prominently identified with the early history of Amesbury, and his name frequently appears on the old records of the town. He often related to his children and grandchildren stories of the Indian troubles and about the old corn-house, which was used for the storing of powder.

*Francis Sargent* had but limited advantages for an education. When quite young he attended the little district school, and later on the academy at Amesbury, being obliged to walk daily three miles each way. When seventeen years of age he went to learn the house-carpenter's trade, or, as it was called in those days, joiner's trade. After serving four years, it was but a step to take up the making of chaise-bodies. Carriage-making at that early day being a prominent feature of the locality, he closely followed this calling evenings, and sometimes far into the night, and teaching in the same district school, daytimes, where he had once been a pupil.

Mr. Sargent married for first wife Hannah Atkinson, August 28, 1836, sister of Dr. Atkinson. They had two children.—Francis Augustus (eighth generation), born September 9, 1842, and died December 3, 1877; Elmer P., born August 11, 1844. Francis Augustus married, May 30, 1867, Sarah J. Woodward, of Bangor, and had three children,—Abram W. (ninth generation), born, June 23, 1868; Louise, born June 13, 1872; and Frank A., born October 23, 1877.

Elmer P. married for first wife Louisa Bartlett of Amesbury, Mass., October 18, 1865; they had two sons,—Francis (ninth generation), born December 17, 1866, and Elmer P., Jr., born July 3, 1869. The first wife of Elmer P., Sr., died February 14, 1872, and he married for second wife Judith B. Follansbee, of West Newbury, November 23, 1876; they had two children,—Edith H., born May 17, 1878, and Fanny A., July 25, 1879.

In June, 1881, Mrs. Francis Sargent met with an accident, which resulted in her death July 1, 1881, in her sixty-seventh year. She was a woman of rare strength of character, and thoroughly devoted to all who were near to her, and a most exemplary mother. She was for many years a member of the Congregational church, of which her husband has been a member for more than fifty years.

In 1836, Mr. Sargent, in partnership with the late A. E. Goodwin, commenced the manufacture of shoes,

which continued until 1840, when, in connection with the grocery business (in which they were in the meantime interested), commenced the sale of carriage-trimmings, exchanging goods for carriages finished; but during all this time, and since 1833, Mr. Sargent had been drawing carriages through the country for sale, which was the custom in those days. In 1852 the concern of Sargent, Harlow & Co. was formed, one of the largest manufacturing firms in the country at that time. They opened a repository in Haymarket Square, Boston, and soon became widely known. Since 1852, Mr. Sargent has been in continuous business in Boston, and on the retirement of Mr. Harlow in November, 1862, the firm-name was changed to Francis Sargent & Co., and, with different partners, has been carried on under that name.

Mr. Sargent, in January, 1885, finding that his customers were demanding a better grade of work, moved to his present location, and under the same firm-name has been constantly gaining a class of trade who appreciate a first-class carriage, at a reasonable price. Mr. Sargent is vigorous in mind, and possesses great energy, and although still living at Merrimac, he goes to Boston every day, and notwithstanding the ride of ninety miles, is able to do more work than many younger men, and we see no reason why he may not live to the advanced age of so many of his ancestors, as quite a number have reached well into the nineties. His sister living in Merrimac is in good health and in her eighty-ninth year. Mr. Sargent married for second wife Mrs. Sarah Patten, of Kingston, N. H.

#### JOHN S. POYEN.

John S. Poyen was born at East Haverhill, October 12, 1818. His father, Joseph Rochemont de Poyen, was a direct descendant from the Marquis Jean de Poyen, who emigrated from France to the Island of Guadaloupe, one of the West Indies, in the year 1658. He was a stanch royalist and an ardent defender of Louis XVI.

In 1792 a large number of the inhabitants of Guadaloupe were obliged to flee, on account of the revolution. Many lost their lives, but among the fortunate ones who escaped were the grandfather and father of John S. Poyen. A Newburyport merchant vessel being in the harbor of Point-a-Pitre at this time, they concealed themselves on board of her, and were landed at Newburyport in March, 1792. The grandfather died the same year of his arrival, October 14, 1792, aged fifty-two years, and was buried in Newburyport, in the old graveyard on "Burial hill."

His son, Joseph Rochemont de Poyen, finally settled at Rock's Bridge, East Haverhill, where he met and became enamored of, and married Sallie, daughter of Thomas Elliot, in spite of the protest of her parents, who did not really like the idea of their daughter marrying a foreigner whom they had not



known for very long. However, they were married and lived happily together. She was a handsome, brilliant girl, and made him an excellent wife. He was an active, genial man, with a little of the French impatience, but a good man and a good husband. He died at the age of eighty-four. Nine children were born to them, John S. being among the youngest.

Mr. Poyen received the customary common-school education of those times, with the additional advantage of a short course of instruction from the distinguished mathematician, Benjamin Greenleaf.

When fourteen years old he came to Merrimac (then West Amesbury) and entered the grocery and carriage supply store of Stephen Patten, who had married his eldest sister, Elizabeth J. Five years later he became a partner, and after ten years of partnership he purchased the interest of Mr. Patten. In the mean time they had begun the manufacture of carriages, in which he continued until 1867, when he sold out the manufacturing business. From that time until his death he continued the business of carriage supplies alone.

In 1871 he gave Mr. H. O. Delano, who was a clerk with him at the time, an interest in the business, and the firm, under the name of John S. Poyen & Co., entered a career of great prosperity and success, and became one of the most prominent of its kind in New England.

He was always ready pecuniarily, and by his personal influence, to promote the public interests of the town, and many times a helping hand was given to young men when he felt they deserved his confidence. He was always liberal in helping those whom he saw trying to help themselves.

The rapid growth in the business of the town, requiring better facilities for banking purposes (the nearest bank for depositors being in Amesbury, five miles distant), he was foremost in promoting the organization of a bank in Merrimac, and in May, 1864, as a result of his efforts, the First National Bank of Merrimac opened its doors for business, with a capital of fifty thousand dollars, which, in July of the same year, was increased to seventy-five thousand dollars, and in November to one hundred thousand dollars. In May, 1875, it had a capital of two hundred thousand dollars. From its first organization until his death he was a prominent director and its largest stockholder.

A little later an institution for savings was established, of which he was made president. He was also one of the trustees of the Public Library for a number of years.

Prior to 1872 the nearest railroad was six miles distant, the town having only stage connections; and the increasing manufacture of carriages demanding better means of transportation, Mr. Poyen used his money and influence for a railroad which should connect Merrimac with other business centres. After

laborious efforts the road was constructed and leased to the Boston and Maine Railroad corporation for ninety-nine years. He was chosen president, which office he also held at the time of his death.

During the years 1870 and '71 he was selectman and advocated the division of the town of Amesbury, believing it would be an advantage to the old and new towns. In 1876 the village of West Amesbury became an incorporated town, and by legislative sanction it took the name of Merrimac.

Various other offices of trust were held by him at different times, and during his business life of forty-two years he served faithfully the best interests of his fellow-townsmen, and by his sudden death Merrimac lost one of its most active and respected citizens.

On the 7th day of December, 1843, he married Miss Elizabeth B., eldest daughter of Dr. Timothy Kenison, a highly-esteemed physician of East Haverhill, and Abigail Longfellow, his wife.

From this marriage were born six children, four of whom are still living. His two sons, John S. and Edward A., still continue in the business established by their father.

In January, 1880, Mr. Poyen, while visiting his father's relatives, for the second time, who were living in Guadaloupe, one of the West India Islands, was attacked by yellow fever, and after a very short illness, died, at Point-a-Pitre, February 22, 1880. A year later he was buried in the family burial-lot at Merrimac.

## CHAPTER CXXVII.

### ANDOVER.

BY REV. CHARLES SMITH.

#### EARLY SETTLEMENT.

THE precise date of the first settlement of the town cannot now be ascertained. In 1634, we are told, "Newtown men, being straitened for ground, sent some men to Merrimack to find a fit place to transplant themselves." Moved thereto, doubtless, by these Newtown men, the General Court in the same year "ordered that the land about Cochichewick shall be assessed for an inland plantation, and whosoever will go to inhabit there shall have three years' immunity from all taxes, levies, public charges and services whatever, military discipline only excepted." A committee of three—John Winthrop, Richard Bellingham and William Coddington—was appointed to license such persons as might desire to avail themselves of the benefits of this order. And it was expressly provided that no person should "go thither without their consent, or the major part of them."





But it appears that the "straithened" men of Newtown did not avail themselves of this liberal inducement to remove to the banks of the Cochichewick. They may have found a more inviting location, or they may have been thwarted in their intentions by others, in a like straitened condition, who had fixed a longing eye upon the meadows and forests of Cochichewick. In 1639 we find Rev. Nathaniel Ward, of Ipswich, writing repeatedly to the Governor, with whom he was connected by marriage, and to whom he was counselor, urging him not to "give any encouragement concerning any plantation att Quichichacke or Pen-ticut (Haverhill) till myself and some others either speake or write to you about it."

Mr. Ward claimed to have gathered a company of "more than 20 families of very good Christians," a portion of whom were "Newbury men." The solicitations of Mr. Ward were so far heeded that in May, 1640, he secured the coveted grant for his company, but, on the express condition, "that they return answer within three weeks from the 27th p'sent, and that they build there before the next Courte." These conditions were not complied with, and the grant lapsed. Whether this failure was owing to a more favorable opening, to discouragement growing out of the hazards of the enterprise, or to the intrigue and opposition of others covetous of the grant, does not, however, appear.

The following year Mr. John Woodbridge, of Newbury, afterwards the first minister of Andover, presents an urgent request for the township forfeited by the Newtown men, in behalf of certain men of Newbury and Ipswich, some of whom "have sold themselves out of house and home, and so desire to be settled as soon as may be." Perchance these men who had "sold themselves out of house and home" were somehow mixed up in the scheme of the Newtown men. However this may be, the new effort, under the wise and persistent direction of Mr. Woodbridge, led to a happy issue.

Though there is no record of the month or year when this company of Ipswich and Newbury men planted themselves on the banks of the "Cochichewick brook," they must have located there before the beginning of 1643. The evidence of this is in the fact that, on the 10th of May, of that year, in an order passed by the General Court for a division of the whole plantation into four shires, Cochichawicke is mentioned as one of the eight towns comprising the shire of Essex. Very soon after the first settlement of the town its name was changed to Andover, at the desire, most probably, of some inhabitant who had emigrated from Andover, in Hants County, England, though we have no direct testimony to that effect. In accordance with the practice uniformly observed by the Puritans, who made the first settlements in New England, Mr. Woodbridge purchased the land included in the township of the Indians. Cutshamache, the Sagamore of Massachusetts, was the chief with

whom the bargain was made, and the price paid was £6 and a coat.

This purchase and the preceding grant were confirmed by the General Court in 1646, when the town was incorporated with its present name. The act of incorporation is as follows:

"At a Genall Corte, at Boston, the 6th, 3th mo., 1646, 'Cutshamache Sagamote of ye Massachusetts, came into ye Corte, & acknowledged yt for ye sume of £6 and a coate, w<sup>ch</sup> he had already received, wee had sold to Mr. John Woodbridge, in behalte of ye inhabitants of Cochichawick, now called Andiver, all his right, interest, & privilege in ye land 6 miles southward from ye towne, two miles eastward to Rowley bounds, he ye same more or lesse, northward Merrimack River, p<sup>ro</sup>vided to yt ye Indian called Roger & his company may have libty to take Abewites in Cochichawick River, for their owne eating; but if they either spoyle or steale any corne, or othe fruite to any considerable value, of ye inhabitants there, this libty of taking sh<sup>al</sup>l forever cease; & ye said Roger is still to enjoy foure acres of ground where he now plants. This purchase ye Corte allowes of, & have granted ye said land to belong to ye said plantation for ever, to be ordered & disposed of by them, reserving libty to ye Corte to lay two miles square of their southerly bounds to any towne or village yt hereafter may be erected thereabouts, if so they see cause."

"Cutshamache acknowledged this before ye magistrates, & so ye Corte app<sup>ro</sup>ved thereof, & of the rest in this bill to be recorded, so as to p<sup>ro</sup>vide no former grant."

We find this spelling Andiver as late as 1648, in the records of the colony. Andiver "was originally bounded by the Merrimack, Rowley, Salem, Woburn and Cambridge, which formerly included Billerica and Tewksbury." Andover in 1829 extended, on its northwestern border, along the banks of the Merrimack River for nearly eleven miles; on its northeastern limits, it was bounded for one hundred and forty-six rods by Bradford, and seven miles, two hundred and forty-one rods by Boxford; on the southeast, three miles and sixty-six rods by Middleton; on the south, four miles by Reading, and two miles and two hundred and eighty-five rods by Wilmington; and on the southwest, six miles and one hundred and ninety-seven rods by Tewksbury, containing thirty-seven thousand seven hundred and thirty-eight acres of land. Territorially, this was one of the largest towns in the county, if not in the State.

The first settlement was made in the North Parish, (now North Andover). The grantees, or proprietors, for convenience, mutual protection, social intercourse and to enjoy the better their religious worship and teaching, settled near each other, around their meeting-house, on "home lots," containing from four to ten acres each, according to the wealth and importance of the occupant. To the owner of a home lot was assigned meadow, tillage and wood-land in the more remote parts of the town. This allotment was in proportion to the size and value of the village lot. These outlying farms were gradually built upon and lived upon by their owners. But not for many years was such occupancy common. For a long time living away from the village was discouraged; and, on one occasion, the town went so far as by vote to forbid any inhabitant's building a dwelling-house in any part of the town other than that which had been set apart for such houses, except by express leave of the



town. The penalty for a disregard of this order was a fine of twenty shillings a month for the time the disobedient person should live in such prohibited place. But, as the population increased, and the roads became more passable, and danger from hostile Indians was largely diminished, people removed to their farms in the present South and West Parishes.

The records of the earliest settlers are scant. But we find in them a list purporting to give, in the order of their settlement, the names of the original proprietors and settlers. The list is as follows:

Mr. Bradstreet.	Henry Jacques.
John Osgood.	John Aslett.
Joseph Parker.	Richard Blake.
Richard Barker.	William Bellard.
John Stevens.	John Lovejoy.
Nicholas Holt.	Thomas Poor.
Benjamin Woodbridge.	George Abbot.
John Frye.	John Russ.
Edmund Haukner.	Andrew Allen.
Robert Barnard.	Andrew Foster.
Daniel Poor.	Thomas Chandler.
Nathan Parker.	

A goodly number of these family names are familiar to our ears as designating living inhabitants of the town every way worthy of their honorable lineage.

It is to be borne in mind that the original proprietors and settlers took up for their personal property but a small portion of the land, holding the large remainder in common, and in reserve for succeeding settlers who might join them, or for the common use.

A liberal allotment of land was set off for the support of the ministry. This was in accordance with the custom in all the new plantations of that period. Such provision of land for the ministry may account for the noticeable fact that the name of John Woodbridge, leader and minister of the first settlers, does not appear in the preceding list of freeholders. His holding seems to have been that of a tenant at will of the parsonage lands.

## CHAPTER CXXVIII.

### ANDOVER—(Continued).

#### DIVISION INTO NORTH AND SOUTH PARISHES—THE INDIANS.

In the early part of the eighteenth century, the town having gained largely in population, the meeting-house became too strait for the people. Perchance it may also have become dilapidated or too ancient in architecture to suit the taste of the increasing and prosperous community. Hence it was voted by the town, in 1705, "to build a new meeting-house as sufficient and convenient for the whole town as may be." And in May, 1707, it was voted again to "build a meeting-house for y<sup>e</sup> inhabitants of Andover of these following dimensions, viz.: of sixty-

foot long, and forty-foot wide and twenty-foot studd, and with a flatt rooffe." But a serious difficulty arose at the outset as to the location of the new meeting-house. When, at the meeting held September 9, 1707, the vote came to be taken on this important question, the majority decided that the house should be built in the South Precinct, "on the spot of ground near the wood called Holt's Wood, where the cross-paths meet at the southwest corner of George Abbot's ground."

As was natural, the residents of the North Precinct strenuously resisted this removal of their place of worship. They complained that the spot selected was not central, that the consent of the proprietors had not been obtained, and that it was at such a distance from the residence of the minister as greatly to incommode him, it being some two or more miles from the Bradford house, which had become the parsonage. On the other hand, it was urged that a decided majority of the people of the town, as the votes showed, would be better accommodated by the selected location.

Not being willing to submit quietly to this majority vote, forty-five residents and proprietors in the North Precinct petitioned the General Court to interfere in their behalf. To frustrate this petition, the town, December 29, 1707, chose a committee "to attend the gentlemen of the General Court's Committee, to view the places and reply to allegations of the petitioners."

At a meeting held February 27, 1708, for the purpose of choosing commissioners to take the valuation of the plantation, in compliance with an act of the General Court, this matter of the location of the meeting-house was again brought up, and for the third time it was voted to build on the spot first selected. As the people could not agree, the General Court, after two hearings, ordered, November 2, 1708, that the town be "forthwith divided into two distinct precincts," and a committee was appointed to carry this order into effect "within the space of two months next coming, unless, in the interim, the town agree thereon and make it themselves, and that thereupon the north division take the present meeting-house and repair and add to it as they please."

The action of the town and that of the General Court on this matter of the location of a new meeting-house are very significant. They show a great change of the population in the course of half a century. The farm-lands had become homesteads. The majority of the people resided in the South Precinct. The North Precinct was in a decided minority. Power had once for all passed away from the village to the outlying districts. The village sovereigns, as was natural, resisted this transfer of power to the utmost, but numbers prevailed.

It is also noticeable that the organization of a new religious parish and church was of scarcely less moment than the incorporation of a new town. The





General Court took the matter in hand. It assigned to the parish its territorial limits, directed with regard to its minister and his support, and went into the details as to parsonage and ministerial lands. We find that the General Court, in making a division of the town into two parishes or precincts, ordered:

"That there be forthwith laid out for the minister of the South Precinct fourteen acres of land for a house-lot, and forty acres at a further distance, part of it low-land, to make meadow of the common land in said precinct, which will make them equal to the other division, to be for the use of the ministry forever." Also

"That the inhabitants and proprietors of the South Division build a convenient meeting-house for their own use and a ministry house.

"Upon all which Mr. Barnard, the present minister, shall declare his choice of which congregation he will officiate in, and the precinct, north or south, shall fully perform the past contract of the town with him, and the other precinct or division of the town shall call and settle another minister for themselves. And the inhabitants of the respective precincts and divisions are hereby impowered to make choice of some discreet persons among themselves, as committees, to manage and govern their affairs with respect to building a meeting-house and ministry house, the making assessments to defray the charge thereof, and for the support of the ministry, and to appoint collectors to gather the same; and are advised and directed to proceed in these several articles with that peace and friendship, one towards another, that they may honor religion and the government and themselves."

The committee thus appointed ran the division line between the parishes, establishing the metes and bounds. A protracted controversy ensued, but disputed points were settled "by mutual agreement, November 7, 1711. The line was renewed by a mutual committee of the parishes, October 7, 1754."

The town was slow in complying with the order of the General Court, requiring it to set apart land for the ministry house and the support of the ministry in the South Parish. The embarrassed parish made complaint of this dilatoriness, or refusal, and asked for action compelling a compliance with the order issued by the court. On November 7, 1710, a further petition was sent in, asking that Mr. Barnard might be directed to make his choice between the precincts. These petitions accomplished their purpose. The General Court directed the committee appointed to make the division of the town to set off the land assigned to the South Precinct, which was speedily done. It also requested Mr. Barnard to choose his precinct, and "to do so before the 11th of December, or that the South Precinct provide for themselves." Mr. Barnard failing to make any choice, "the South Precinct provided for themselves."

The first legal meeting of the new precinct was

held June 20, 1709, with Henry Holt as moderator, and George Abbot as clerk. The first question to be settled was the location of the meeting-house. "The spot of ground near the wood, called Holt's Wood," for which they had so persistently contended, seems not to have met with favor when the new precinct came to select a place for itself alone. Without much controversy, however, it would appear, a site was fixed upon, and accepted by vote of the precinct October 18, 1709. This site was "at ye Rock on the west side of Roger brook," a few rods north of the present South Church edifice. A building was erected upon this ground, and occupied for worship January, 1710. It could not have been a very spacious or a very ornate structure, as only one hundred and eight pounds was levied to defray the expenses of building, and it was occupied for worship within three months from the time the location was fixed. Upon "the young men and maids" was conferred "the liberty to build seats round in the galleries on their own charge."

We have no means of ascertaining the number of inhabitants in the town when this division into North and South Precincts took place. Doubtless the increase in population during the twenty years immediately preceding this division had been more rapid than at any former period in the history of the town. The Indians had ceased to be troublesome and emigration from England had been stimulated by the restoration of Charles II. to the British throne. Andover must have shared fully in this increase of the population of the colony. Some seventeen years previous to the date we are considering, and nearly fifty years after its first settlement, the town ordered a list of tax-payers to be made out, which list has been preserved. It contains one hundred and forty-one names, presumably the names of men who paid a tax on property for civil and religious purposes. The seventeen years which succeeded the making of this list of tax-payers must have added no little to the population and property of the town.

The following is the "rate made for the minister in the year 1692:"

*North End of the Town of Andover.*

Abbot, John, junr.	Carlton, John.
Abbot, George, junr.	Carlton, Joseph.
Abbot, Thomas, senr.	Chandler, William.
Andrew, Joseph.	Chubb, Pasco.
Ashe, John.	Cromwell, John.
Austin, Samuel.	Dane, Nathl.
Barker, Richard, senr.	Eves, Nathan. <sup>1</sup>
Barker, Levi, John.	Elmes, Robert. <sup>1</sup>
Barker, Stephen.	Emery, Joseph.
Barker, Benjamin.	Barnum, John, senr.
Barker, Richard, junr.	Barnum, Ralph, senr.
Barker, William.	Barnum, John, junr.
Bodwell, Henry.	Barnum, Thomas.
Bradstreet, Capt. Dudley.	Barrington, Edward.
Bridges, John.	Baulkner, Francis.
Bridges, James.	Baulkner, John.

<sup>1</sup> Probably Haverhill or Boxford men.



Foster, Ephraim.  
 Foster, Abraham.  
 Frye, Benjamin.  
 Frye, Samuel.  
 Granger, John.  
 Graves, Mark, senr.  
 Gray, Robert.  
 Hault, Nicholas.  
 Hault, Hannah, widdowe.  
 Hutchinson, Samuel.  
 Ingalls, Henry.  
 Ingalls, Henry, junr.  
 Ingalls, Saml.  
 Ingalls, John.  
 Johnson, Francis.  
 Lacey, Lawrence.  
 Lovejoy, Joseph.  
 Martie, Samuel.  
 Marston, John, senr.  
 Marston, John, junr.  
 Marston, Jacob.  
 Marston, Joseph.  
 Martin, Esau Samuel.  
 Nichols, Neli.  
 Osgood, Capt. John.  
 Osgood, John, junr.

*South End of the Towne.*

Abbot, John, senr.  
 Abbot, George, senr.  
 Abbot, Nehemiah.  
 Abbot, Timothy.  
 Abbot, Benjamin.  
 Abbot, William.  
 Abbot, Thomas.  
 Abbot, Nathaniel.  
 Allen, William.  
 Alsou, Thomas.  
 Ballard, John.  
 Richard, Joseph, senr.  
 Balliet, William.  
 Barnard, Stephen.  
 Barker, Esauzer.  
 Bixby, Daniel.  
 Blanchard, Jonathan.  
 Blanchard, Samuel.  
 Blunt, William.  
 Bussell, Samuel.  
 Chandler, Capt.  
 Chandler, William, senr.  
 Chandler, William, junr.  
 Chandler, Joseph.  
 Chandler, Henry.  
 Coombs, John.  
 Clanton, Thomas.  
 Coffey, Thomas.  
 Dane, Francis.  
 Davis, Ephraim.  
 Flanagan, Joseph, junr.  
 Foster, Andrew.  
 Frye, Joseph.  
 Frye, James.

Osgood, Timothy.  
 Parker, Joseph.  
 Parker, Stephen.  
 Parker, John.  
 Poor, Daniel.  
 Poor, Widdow.  
 Post, John.<sup>1</sup>  
 Preston, John.  
 Robinson, Joseph.  
 Stevens, Cornet Nathan.  
 Stevens, Joseph.  
 Stevens, Ephraim, Sargt.  
 Stevens, Benjamin.  
 Stevens, Nathan, junr.  
 Stevens, Widdow.  
 Stevens, Joshua.  
 Stone, Simon.  
 Swan, Samuel.  
 Tyler, John.  
 Toothaker, Allen.  
 White, John.<sup>1</sup>  
 Singletary, Benjamin.<sup>1</sup>  
 Tiler, Moses, senr.<sup>1</sup>  
 Tiler, Moses, junr.<sup>1</sup>  
 Swan, Robert.<sup>1</sup>  
 Swan, Timothy.<sup>1</sup>

Graves, Abraham.  
 Guttersen, John.  
 Haggitt, Moses.  
 Hault, Samuel.  
 Hault, Henry.  
 Hooper, Thomas.  
 Johnson, Thomas.  
 Johnson, William.  
 Johnson, James, Left.  
 Johnson, John, junr.  
 Lovejoy, William.  
 Lovejoy, Christopher.  
 Lovejoy, Nath.  
 Lovejoy, Eben.  
 Marbo, Joseph.  
 More, Abraham.  
 Osgood, Christopher.  
 Osgood, Hooker.  
 Osgood, Widdow.  
 Osgood, Thomas.  
 Peters, Andrew.  
 Preston, Samuel.  
 Phelps, Samuel.  
 Phelps, Edward.  
 Phelps, Widdow.  
 Russell, Thomas.  
 Russell, Robert.  
 Russ, John.  
 Stevens, John.  
 Stone, John.  
 Tyler, Hepestil.  
 Wardwell, Saml's estate.  
 Wilson, Joseph.  
 Wright, Walter.

south end of the town. From this date the history of the town will more properly be connected with the South Parish, (or Andover, as it now is,) than with the North Parish, (or North Andover, as it now is), as a separate town.

As has been already stated, the first settlement of the town was at the North Parish. Here was the village and here the meeting-house, here were the residences of the minister and the principal citizens; and for more than half a century the officers of the town and the church were for the most part dwellers in the village. The North Parish was especially distinguished as being the residence for a time of Mr. Simon Bradstreet, for thirteen years Governor of the province of Massachusetts Bay, and for six months Deputy-Governor, and as the home of his accomplished wife, Mistress Anne Bradstreet, colonial poetess and hospitable matron. The residence of this single family was enough to give the small village prominence, not only in the surrounding county, but throughout the province. And after the removal of the Governor, his family prestige remained, and his son Dudley, occupying the old homestead, himself a liberally educated, capable and worthy gentleman, received marked respect and exercised a large influence in the affairs of the town. In view of these facts, it seems fitting that the details in the early history of the town, including notices of the leading men of those days, should be conceded to the ready pen of the distinguished gentleman who writes for this volume the history of North Andover. Hence only a cursory notice will here be taken of some of the more important matters entering into the life of the town, and this mainly for the purpose of keeping up the continuity in its history and growth from the Andover of 1643 to the Andover of to-day.

The South Parish, the Andover of to-day, was at first but an outlying section of the township. A small portion of the land was allotted to the original proprietors who had their residences in the village. The larger portion was held in common and used for pasturage or left in woodland. The taken-up farms, being from three to five miles distant from the homes of their owners, were cultivated under adverse circumstances. Rough roads at first and Indian incursions later on, made work on distant and isolated lands both difficult and dangerous. But in time, as the roads became more numerous and better trodden and Indian incursions less frequent, the farming portion of the villagers removed to their outlying lands and built upon them. Thus the first settlers of the South Parish were exclusively tillers of the soil. Yeomanry they were called in the forcible dialect of the day. They were a hardy, industrious, self-denying, devout body of men and women. As a class they were sincerely religious, but not fanatical or demonstrative. For the most part they were unlettered, but yet not undisciplined in mind. They knew how to think and reason correctly, though they might not be

It appears from this list of tax-payers that the majority of such inhabitants was at the north end of the town in 1692, when the enumeration was ordered. In 1792, when the question as to the location of the new meeting-house was under discussion, the majority of the voters was found to be at the south end. Doubtless some of the inhabitants had transferred their residence from the north to the south end, and the new comers had more generally located at the

<sup>1</sup> Probably Haverhill or Boxford men.





able to read with fluency or write with accuracy. Their manners may have been uncouth, but their principles were like polished silver. They were men who feared God, loved liberty, respected the rights of their fellow-men, and held opinions for the maintenance of which they were ready to sacrifice ease and worldly interests. They were of the class of people to put at the foundation of a free commonwealth. Such were the first settlers of Andover as it now is.

The early history of many New England villages is darkened by Indian midnight and stealthy attacks, burnings and massacres. Andover suffered in these regards less than some of her sister towns, and the South Parish less than the North. In fact, the people here endured more from the fear and horror growing out of such ravages of the Indians as those at Haverhill and Deerfield, than from any direct injury at their hands. There was but one attack attended by loss of life made by them upon the South Parish during all the Indian and French and Indian Wars. This was on April 18, 1676, by a small band of the allies of King Philip. Their purpose, fortunately to a large degree frustrated, seems to have been, by a stealthy march upon the place, to seize the garrison-house while the men were at work in their fields, and then to burn, capture and slay as they were able. But, as they were crossing the Merrimack River, they were discovered by a scout named Ephraim Stevens, who, mounting a swift horse, gave seasonable notice to the imperiled inhabitants. Thus warned, nearly all who were exposed were able to take timely refuge in the garrison-house.

This house, occupied as a residence by Mr. George Abbot, was situated some few rods south of the present South Church meeting-house, and not far from the residence of the late Mr. John E. Abbot. It so happened that two sons of Mr. George Abbot were at work in a field at some little distance from the house, and did not receive the warning in season to reach the place of safety. The Indians, baffled in their purpose of capturing the garrison house by a stealthy attack, finding these two young men alone in the open field, fell upon them in overpowering numbers. They made a brave resistance, but were soon overpowered, the eldest, Joseph by name, being slain, but not till he had laid low one or more of his assailants. This young man, then twenty-four years of age, had been, the winter previous, engaged in the campaign against the Narragansetts, where he gained the reputation of being of eminently robust build and resolute spirit. The younger of the two brothers, Timothy, was a lad of thirteen. Him the savages seized and carried as a captive to their encampment. He was retained in captivity for four months only, when he was brought back to his parents by a friendly squaw. The youth received no harm whatever at the hands of his savage captors except a noticeable loss of flesh, owing to the mea-

gre diet of an Indian wigwam. The hunger of these few months, however, left an ineffaceable impression upon the mind of the lad. Tradition tells the story that, many years after, when the lad had become the father of a numerous family, he would never permit a child of his to say that he was hungry, protesting that the child did not know the meaning of the word hunger.

It is highly probable that some few men from the South Precinct lost their lives while in the employ of the Commonwealth, engaged in the military service against the Indians. But aside from this, and the terror awakened among the inhabitants, especially among the women and children, by the known cruelties practised by these ferocious and stealthy men of the forest, the South Parish suffered little at their hands.

Our custom has been to call these natives of the soil savages; they have been pictured to us as by nature cruel, blood-thirsty, as delighting in the torture of women and babes, as destitute of honor or humanity. That they were in time of war, or when they felt themselves to have been grossly wronged, cruel in the extreme and relentlessly savage, killing and burning without mercy, there can be no question. But we must remember that the Indian had never been trained in the teaching of Christ, had never learned His doctrine of forbearance and forgiveness. We should further bear in mind that at first he received the white man with kindness and treated him with respect and generosity. Without the friendship of the Indians, the infant colony of Massachusetts Bay would have perished in its swaddling bands.

For more than a quarter of a century this feeble colony dwelt in safety and prospered, protected by theegis of the red man's favor. Not till he felt himself wronged, oppressed, humiliated, cheated, insulted, did this hospitable red man wing the deadly arrow or raise the fatal tomahawk against his white neighbor, intruder though he was. Treacherous oftentimes the Indian doubtless was. But was he alone in this? Captain Pasco Chubb, a citizen of Andover, while in command at Pennaquid Fort, at a conference held with representatives from the Penobscot Indians, for the purpose of effecting an exchange of prisoners, deliberately ordered the massacre of these representatives, in which massacre two chiefs were slain. The Indians are accused of being brutal in their treatment of women and children. The accusation is unquestionably true. But are the white people innocent of like brutality? A brief historical record of unquestioned veracity will afford some light on this question.

In the year 1675, a company of one thousand men levied by the United Colonies of New England, and led by "the brave Josiah Winslow, a native of New England," invaded the territory of the Narragansetts in midwinter, when the snow was at great depth, and the weather bitterly cold. They came



unawares upon a little cluster of wigwams, where the tribe had collected their winter stores, their women and children. Suddenly an attack was made, the feeble palisades were overpassed and the torch hurled into the group of inflammable straw-thatched cabins, amidst carnage and slaughter. "Thus," says Bancroft, "were swept away the humble glories of the Narragansetts, the winter's stores of the tribe, their curiously wrought baskets, full of corn, their famous strings of wampum, their wigwams nicely lined with mats,—all the little comforts of savage life were consumed. And more—their old men, their women, their babes, perished by hundreds in the fire. Then, indeed, was the cup of misery full for these red men. Without shelter and without food, they hid themselves in a cedar swamp, with no defense against the cold but boughs of evergreen trees. They prowled the forests and pawed up the snow, to gather nuts and acorns for food. They ate remnants of horse flesh to keep from starvation. "Winter and famine and disease consequent on vile diet" destroyed the remnant that had escaped fire and sword of this once proud and numerous tribe of red men—a tribe that for years had been friendly to the white strangers.

Is there anything in the record of the Indian cruelties and barbarities to surpass this story in horror? In the massacre at Deerfield, ever memorable in the early New England annals, was there anything to compare with this burning of a village, in which hundreds of women and children were roasted alive?

So far as Andover is concerned, as between her citizens and the Indians, in the balancing of the good and evil received each from the other, it would be difficult to find the score against the red man.

## CHAPTER CXXIX.

### ANDOVER (Continued)

#### ANDOVER IN THE WITCHCRAFT DELUSION.

To Joseph Ballard, a resident in the southeasterly section of the South Parish, near Ballard Vale, belongs the unenviable notoriety of first introducing this pestilent frenzy into the town—early in 1692. The wife of Mr. Ballard had been for a long time afflicted with a disease which had baffled the skill of all her physicians. The account of the marvelous powers of certain girls in Salem Village for detecting the causes of diseases and applying an effectual remedy came to the ears of this helpless family. Mr. Ballard, in his despair, sought the aid of these wonderful girls in behalf of his afflicted wife. Two of them came to his house. From thence they were taken to the meeting-house. An excited crowd filled the house, drawn by curiosity to see and hear these wonder-working and

strange-speaking and acting young women. Fervent prayer was offered by Rev. Mr. Barnard, assistant pastor of the church. The young women were exhorted by him to tell the truth about the sickness of Mrs. Ballard. Thus solemnly introduced and exhorted in the presence of this large assembly of excited people, they proceeded to mention by name certain persons belonging to the town, charging them with being agents of the devil and causing the sickness of Mrs. Ballard. On this accusation by these two stranger girls, without further evidence or inquiry, and without hesitation or delay, a warrant was issued against the persons thus accused, and they were hurried off to Salem Jail. Here they were placed in close confinement, as if guilty of the most heinous crimes. This was the beginning, so far as Andover was concerned, of that terrible tragedy, in which, before its close, forty-one of its citizens, including some of the most prominent and worthy in the town, were accused of being in covenant league with Satan, with having signed his book with blood, and with having received baptism at his hands. Many of these accused persons, some of them delicate women, were imprisoned for months under severe restraints and persecutions. Eight were condemned to death on account of the injuries inflicted upon others by their alleged connection with Satan, of whom one died in prison, one was reprieved and afterwards released, and three were hanged, and their dead bodies ignominiously cast into a common grave. The venerable minister of the town, Rev. Mr. Dane, fell under serious suspicion, while his amiable daughters and granddaughters were accused and imprisoned, and one daughter and granddaughter condemned. Other ladies of the highest rank and culture in the town suffered the same indignity. The fanatical accusers, made bold by their surprising success, struck at the highest personages in the place. Suspicion was cast upon Mr. Dudley Bradstreet, son of Governor Bradstreet, and he was obliged to flee the place to save himself from imprisonment and possible death.

The details of these strange doings, of which the foregoing is but a generalization, are still more mysterious and unaccountable. Mrs. Abigail Faulkner, a daughter of Rev. Mr. Dane, the senior pastor of the church, who for forty-three years had ministered to the people, was accused of being a witch. She was a well-educated, beneficent, most estimable and pious woman. Her two little girls, Dorothy and Abigail, were also accused with her of the same terrible crime. They were arrested, and mother and children were taken to Salem and cast into the common jail.

When brought before the examiners, Mrs. Faulkner was urged to make confession of her crime—confession, being received by them as evidence of penitence, served to palliate the offence and modify the sentence. This she modestly but firmly refused to do. She would not admit, however much pressed, that she was in league with Satan, or had consciously anything to





do with the suffering of the afflicted. Under the repeated urgency of her examiners, who assumed her guilt, she so far yielded as to admit that possibly the devil might be working through her to afflict others, though without her knowledge or consent. She further admitted that, when made almost frantic by the terrible accusations, she had "pinched her hands together" in her agony. It was charged that by this pinching of her hands she had consciously tortured her victims. Admitting the possibility that the clinching of her hands might have occasioned suffering, she stoutly maintained that she had no conscious connection with it, but that it was solely the work of the devil, acting through her without her knowledge or consent. That she did not shed tears at sight of the writhings of the afflicted was taken by the magistrate as evidence of her guilt.

The witnesses brought to substantiate the accusations were, first, Joseph Tyler, Martha Tyler, Johanna Tyler and Sarah Wilson, who confessed that they were witches, but were made such by Abigail Faulkner; and, further, some seven or eight persons from Salem and vicinity were brought forward, who each and all testified that they had been tortured by her.

But the closing act in the tragic trial of this sorely afflicted woman was the bringing forward of her two little girls (one eight, the other ten years of age) as witnesses against their mother. Under the influence of the excitement in which they breathed, and the universal opinion of those around them, and the leading questions of their examiners, who seem to have had no doubt at all as to the guilt of the accused, they testified that they were themselves witches, made such by their own mother.

With this kind of evidence—"spectre evidence," it was called—this worthy woman and loving mother was condemned to death. Through the exertions of her father and other influential friends she received a reprieve, and after lingering for thirteen weeks of intolerable mental and physical suffering in a felon's prison, she was set free, not by a reversal of judgment, but by the general "jail delivery," brought about by a reaction from the frenzy which for a year had ravaged the country.

Elizabeth Johnson, another daughter of Rev. Mr. Dane, was tried on similar charges to those brought against her sister, Mrs. Faulkner. After five months' imprisonment she was acquitted, but her daughter Elizabeth was condemned and her daughter Abigail and her son Stephen, thirteen years of age, were accused and imprisoned five weeks. This daughter Elizabeth, who was said, by her grandfather, to be "but simplish at y' best," made the extraordinary confession that, at the persuasion of Good-wife Carrier, she had been baptized in her well by the devil, who had "dipt her head over in water;" had been at a witch meeting and seen bread and wine at the devil's sacrament, and had afflicted many persons by puppets.

Her free confession to the examiners should have saved her from condemnation.

Her brother Stephen, a lad of thirteen, was charged in the indictment with having "wickedly, maliciously & feloniously, with the devil made a covenant, whereby he gave himself, soule and body, to the devil, and signed the Devil's Booke with his blood, and by the devil was baptized, and renounced his Christian baptism, by which wicked and Diabolical covenant with the devil made, the said Stephen Johnson is bound a detestable witch." This severe indictment of a mere boy, the child of one of the most respectable families in the town, is a fair specimen of the charges brought against the various accused persons, and upon which some of them were condemned and hanged. The magistrates accepted the "spectre evidence" offered by the "afflicted," also the confessions of the accused, as proof positive of guilt. It fared hard with the accused when they fearlessly and persistently denied the allegation of complicity with the devil, and participation in inflicting pains and damage upon their accusers.

Samuel Wardwell, a carpenter by trade, an eccentric man, given to palmistry and fortune-telling, and not averse to prophesying a little on occasion, was accused of having tormented and tortured one Martha Sprague, of Boxford, by wicked arts, and also of having made a covenant with the devil some twenty years before, by which he promised to honor, worship and believe the devil, contrary to the statute of King James the First in that behalf. After much persuasion, and in the hope of saving his life, and, perchance, with some faint suspicion that it might be true, to a certain extent, he made a confession of guilt. But, very soon, he recanted and declared his innocence, saying that in his confession he had "belyed himself," and would hold to the truth of his recantation, though it should cost him his life. And it did cost him his life. He was one of the three from Andover who were hanged.

Ann Foster was another who suffered the same fate. She was an aged woman, of little strength of mind, sincerely religious, and susceptible to the influences and persuasions of her neighbors. When accused of witchcraft, and confronted by the magistrates, who fully believed in her guilt, and urged by them and her trusted friends, who believed with the magistrates, she also concluded that she was in reality in league with Satan. She was examined four times and confessed that she had bewitched a hog, caused the death of a child, made another child sick, and finally had hurt one Timothy Swan by making rag images or puppets of him, and sticking pins in these puppets. She also confessed to having attended witch meetings in Salem, at which she met the Rev. George Burroughs and another minister with gray hair, who was understood to be Rev. Mr. Dane. A poor, old, broken-down, pious woman, she was in a condition to confess anything her accusers and ex-



aminers desired. Her daughter, who was among the accused, and had confessed, appeared as a witness against her, charging that she herself had been made a witch through her mother's agency. Nothing could persuade or compel the aged mother to confess this diabolical crime. On account of her contumacy in this instance, all her previous and numerous and astounding confessions passed for nothing, and she was adjudged a persistent witch and condemned to death. But a merciful Providence permitted her to die in jail before the day of execution came.

The most marked case of all which Andover furnished in these trials was that of Martha Carrier. She was the wife of Thomas Carrier, a Welshman by birth. Thomas seems to have been a good-natured, even-tempered, shiftless sort of man, who took life easy, and left the affairs of the family and farm mainly to the care of his wife. He lived to be one hundred and nine years old, notwithstanding his troubles. Martha Carrier was in most respects the opposite of her husband. She was energetic, stirring, plucky, quick-tempered, easily angered and at times violent in speech; above all, she was a strong-minded woman, who had the courage to speak as she thought and felt. Thus, when others with weaker minds and more submissive natures yielded to the entreaties of husbands and friends, and confessed crimes of which they were not guilty, no amount of persuasion, entreaty or threatening could induce her to criminate herself unjustly, or to retract a word which she had spoken in defense. The badgering of the examiners, who would have forced a confession from her lips, fell powerless upon her.

The Carrier family, on coming to town, were not made welcome by its officers or citizens. They were not considered desirable inhabitants; their neighbors did not favor their society. Under these circumstances, it was but natural that when, in the fury of a frenzy, women and children in large numbers were being accused of witchcraft, Martha Carrier and her children should fall under suspicion and accusation. As manager of affairs, she had, previous to this, had a business controversy about some land with Benjamin Abbot, in which she did some sharp scolding and severe threatening, among other things saying, that she would "stick to him as close as the bark of a tree." Soon after this Mr. Abbot had a swelling upon his foot and an ulcerous sore upon his side, and believed that Martha Carrier was the cause of these troubles. To confirm this belief, it only needed that he should begin "to mend and grow better" from the day that she was removed to Salem Jail. Besides the Andover sufferers from the machinations of Martha Carrier, there were certain Salem girls, as in some other Andover cases, who appeared before the examiners and charged her with inflicting tortures upon them. It was on this account that complaint was made against her by two Salem

men, and a warrant issued for her arrest. When she was brought up for examination before her accusers, five women and children from Salem appeared and testified that they were "hurt" by "Goody Carrier." As the examination proceeded, the scene became tragic. It was held in the meeting-house, which was crowded with excited people. When the accused woman looked into the faces of her accusers, they were "seized with fits," and "fell into the most intolerable outcries and agonies." They professed to see a black man standing by her side. One of them, in her frenzy, cries out, "I see the souls of thirteen persons whom she has murdered at Andover." With the swiftness of lightning comes from the lips of the infuriated woman the response, "You lie! I am wronged!" Then, turning about and facing the magistrates, she declares, "It is false; and it is a shame for you to mind what these say who are out of their wits." The accusers immediately reiterate their charges, and, to prove their truth, go into such hysterical spasms, contortions and apparent tortures "that there was no enduring it," says the record. The great crowd of spectators are moved with sympathy with the tortured and writhing girls. They are aroused to the most intense excitement. They believe themselves to be witnessing one of the fierce struggles between the kingdom of God and that of the Evil One.

June and July pass away, and the close prison holds "Goody Carrier," but it cannot cramp her bold spirit. Her children are also there. In August she comes forth once more to face her accusers. Her whole life passes in review, as if it were the final judgment. Sharp, cutting words and deeds of retaliation are recalled; her sons are put to torture till they bear witness against her. Not one word of confession passes her lips. Cotton Mather says, as a reward of her adherence to Satan, she has received the promise that she shall be "queen of hell." August 11th little Sarah, her daughter, is questioned in court, "How old are you?" "Near eight years old; brother says I shall be eight in November." "How long hast thou been a witch?" "Ever since I was six years old." "Who made you a witch?" "My mother." August 19, 1692, witnesses the closing scene. From the scaffold rings out her last testimony, "I am innocent."

## CHAPTER CXXX.

### ANDOVER (Continued).

#### THE FRENCH AND INDIAN WARS.

WHILE it is impossible to determine the relative amount of the burden borne and sacrifice made by the North and South Precincts of the town in the French and Indian Wars and in the War for Independence, it is safe to assume that the larger share fell to the





precinct containing the greater number of inhabitants. Hence, in the treatment of the stirring events attending these wars, the action of the town will be taken as the action of its larger precinct. Those persons, however, who, either as officers or soldiers, have claim for special notice in a historical sketch of the town, whose residence is known to have been in the North Precinct, will be yielded, as in the case of the first settlers, to the historian of North Andover for mention.

The French and Indian wars were mainly instigated by the mutual jealousies and ambitions of England and France. They were but the sequence to the more desperate and exhaustive ones carried on in Europe by these rival nations. In them the French seem to have been more successful than the English in enlisting the Indians as allies. And there is reason for believing that they not only used the natural savagery of these allies, but stimulated this native tendency to cruelty and blood.

The Jesuit missionaries, who early gained a footing among the Indian tribes in Canada and other parts of the country, were eminently successful in bringing the natives under their influence and control. They have been charged with inflaming their converts with zeal for the destruction of their English and Protestant neighbors. The page of history gives color to these charges. The party of two hundred French and one hundred and forty-two Indians which, in the winter of 1704, burned the village of Deerfield, slaughtered in cold blood forty-seven of its peaceful citizens and took one hundred and twelve captive, carrying those who could bear the fatigue and cold into Canada, were under the lead of Hertel de Rouville. It was under the same leader that, on the 29th day of August, 1708, a party of French and Indians made at daybreak an attack upon Haverhill. Bancroft says that, when they had "assumed the order of battle, Rouville addressed the soldiers, who, after their orisons, marched against the fort, raised the shrill yell, and dispersed themselves through the village to their work of blood. The rattle rang; the cry of the dying rose. Benjamin Rolfe, the minister, was beaten to death; one Indian sunk a hatchet deep into the brain of his wife, while another caught his infant child from its dying mother, and dashed its head against a stone."

These Indians, thus led, came from the mission stations of the Jesuits. Their French commander did nothing to curb, but everything to stimulate their passion for blood. Of like forays, the Jesuit historian of France relates with pride that they had their origin in the counsels and influence of the Catholic missionaries.

In these wars for colonial supremacy and colonial commerce in America, the colony of Massachusetts heartily co-operated with the mother country. The fisheries on the Banks of Newfoundland then, as now, were a coveted possession. Massachusetts fur-

nished her full quota of soldiers for every expedition having the conquest of Canada, Newfoundland or Acadia in view. In these expeditions many of the young men of Andover enlisted, no inconsiderable number of whom lost their lives, either being killed in battle or dying from wounds, privation or disease. The successful expedition against Louisburg brought grief to many Andover homes.

This expedition was of Massachusetts origin. Wm. Shirley, Governor of the State, advising it, the Legislature authorized the same by a majority of one. The mother country was not consulted in the matter. The force employed was mainly from New England, and composed exclusively of volunteers. Pennsylvania, indeed, sent a small quantity of provisions, and New York furnished a limited supply of artillery.

How many of these troops were furnished by Andover, history does not inform us, but no doubt a proportionate contingent went from this town.

Louisburg was the strongest fortress in North America. Situated on a neck of land on the south side of the harbor, its walls were forty feet thick at the base, and from twenty to thirty feet high, surrounded by a ditch eighty feet wide. For armament it was furnished with one hundred and one cannon, seventy-six swivels and six mortars. This fortress was manned by more than sixteen hundred well-equipped soldiers. The harbor was further defended by a battery of thirty twenty-two pounders, posted on an island, and by a royal battery, situated on the main shore, having thirty large cannon, a moat and bastions, all so complete as to justify the belief that, with a garrison of but two hundred men, it might successfully resist the attack and siege of five thousand.

The forces of New England that had the hardihood to attack this strong, well-equipped and ably-manned fortress consisted of less than four thousand undisciplined militia, mechanics, farmers, tradesmen, officered by men of like occupations, and commanded by William Pepperell, a Maine merchant. Their offensive armament consisted of eighteen cannon and three mortars, all told. Having effected a landing, a small squad of four hundred men marched by the city, with cheers for the fortress, to the northeast harbor. This bold act produced a panic among those who manned the royal battery, leading them to spike the cannon in the night and flee. This battery thus abandoned fell into the hands of the audacious incursionists, and, speedily refitted for service, was used with effect against its former possessors.

Repeated attempts to take the island battery fail. These failures are not relished by the troops. A volunteer company, under officers of their own choice, enlist for a night attack. Unfortunately, their boats are discovered while on the way to the island, and are riddled by a deadly cannonade from the battery. A fearful contest ensues on the landing of the boats, resulting in the loss of sixty killed and one hundred and sixteen taken prisoners. The remainder take to their





boats and escape. This disastrous attack was on the night of May 26th. On June 17, 1745, without further serious fighting, the fortress, city and batteries were surrendered. Failing to receive anticipated supplies, the garrison had become discontented, and the commander, Duchambon disheartened. The strong hold was given up while still intact and capable of holding out for months against the force besieging it. The conquerors, on entering the fortress, seeing its unequalled and unimpaired strength, are said to have ascribed this easy victory, not to their own valor, but to the God of battles, saying reverently, "God has gone out of the way of His common providence in a remarkable and almost miraculous manner, to incline the hearts of the French to give up, and deliver this strong city into our hands."

This was pronounced "the greatest success achieved by England during the war." But not an English soldier was among the victorious forces. To Massachusetts belongs the glory of the capture. When the news of the victory reached the colony, there were great rejoicings. Bells were rung, thanksgiving praises offered and laudatory sermons preached in the churches. Amidst this general rejoicing there were, here and there among the humble homes upon the hill-sides and along the river banks of the country towns, mourning and tears for sons, brothers, fathers and husbands, whose lives were the price of the splendid victory. Andover had her share in this mourning.

The following soldiers from Andover were killed or died from sickness or wounds received while "in the King's service at Louisbourg:

Benjamin Erie	Andrew Allen
Samuel Economic, Jr.	Benj. Carlton
Isaiah Barker	Joseph Marble
Andrew Johnson	Philip Abbott
Jonathan Chandler	Isaac Chandler
David Johnson	Jonathan Darlin
Isaac Abbott	Timothy Johnson, Jr.
Francis Price	Joseph Martin

—sixteen in all, most of whom died from sickness.

The war between France and England, including the colonies of each, was brought to a close by the treaties of Aix-la-Chapelle in 1748. After much bloodshed, the accumulation of burdensome debt and incredible suffering on the part of both the belligerents, the treaty restored the condition of each to that before the war. Louisbourg was given back to France.

Peace returned to the colonies for a season, and opportunity for the people to pursue their chosen avocations without the dread of Indian attacks at home, or the fear of enlistments for military service abroad. During this brief interval the town increased in numbers and wealth. Some of its citizens were even inspired with an ambition to form a new settlement. A petition was sent to the General Court in behalf of persons who had been engaged in the Cape Breton enterprise, and the relatives of such as had lost their lives in it, for a grant of land in the

county of York, as a recognition of their services and losses. This was signed by Captain James Stevens, who commanded a company in this expedition, and James Frye, a private, both of Andover, and fifty-six others belonging to Essex or Middlesex County. The petition was favorably received and the grant made, "on condition that they take associates of the Cape Breton soldiers, not excluding representatives of those who are dead, so as to make the whole number of grantees one hundred and twenty;" that they provide a suitable house "for the publick worship of God—a learned Protestant Minister of Good Conversation to be settled" among them, and schools. But it does not appear that any of the petitioners from Andover availed themselves of the privileges of this grant.

The peace was of short duration. The jealousies and rivalries of the two neighboring nations could not be overcome by treaty stipulations. An ambition for colonial extension and commercial aggrandizement dominated the statesmen and merchants of both countries. The colonies also, with antipathies nourished by religious animosity, and stimulated by relentless war, could not readily sit down side by side and cultivate the amenities of peace.

In the spring of 1755—only seven years from the date of that elaborate treaty by which its wise framers, the foremost statesmen of the day, who "believed themselves to be the pacificators of the world," had thought to have created a colonial policy for Europe, "on a basis that would last for ages,"—a new war began. Mother country and colonies, both eager for the fight, united in a bold and comprehensive plan, looking to the subjection of all the French colonies in America. With this object in view, four well-furnished expeditions were set on foot—the first under the command of the ill-fated Braddock, with the young man Washington in charge of a Virginia contingent, having Fort Du Quesne as its first objective point; the second directed against Crown Point, by way of Lakes George and Champlain; the third against Oswego, and the fourth against Nova Scotia. Of the latter, Major General Winslow was in command, with Major Joseph Frye, of Andover, as one of his subordinate officers. In the company of Major Frye were many young men from his native town of Andover. This last expedition was successful. The forces of the enemy were beaten and three strongholds taken. But a sad service awaited the conquerors.

Acadia had been for some years under English rule. The people were peaceful, industrious, virtuous, home-loving and pious; but they were French and Catholic, hence they were distrusted. They had offered no resistance to their English rulers, shown no disposition to rebel, but they belonged to a hostile nation and faith, and they were in a position where they might do mischief to their rulers. The home authorities determined on their removal; and it was further determined that they should not be permitted



to remove, or to be removed, to a French settlement. It was ordered that they be scattered among the English colonies, some to Massachusetts Bay, some as far distant as Georgia. Major Frye was in command of a part of the force under General Winslow, to whom was given the execution of this cruel order. The helpless people, women and children, were forcibly torn from their homes, gathered up from their separate villages, driven to the place of embarkation, like sheep to the shambles, and thrust promiscuously, at the point of the bayonet, upon the decks of the transports; thus were separated families, so that parents were taken to one colony and children to another. While they were thus huddled together upon the decks, wild with grief, the torch was applied to their dwellings, and they sailed away from the land they loved by the lurid light of the homes they had cherished. From country and comfort and fireside freedom they went to exile, poverty and, in some cases, to semi-servitude. If Major Frye was the kind-hearted man that tradition credits him with being, his duty here must have been a far more trying one than any that fell to his lot in the morasses or fights around Louisbourg in the winter of 1746. Those of these wretched exiles who were apportioned to Massachusetts Bay were distributed among the towns with as much regard to humanity, doubtless, as the circumstances and the feelings of the people would admit. They were everywhere received with aversion. They were foreigners of a hostile race,—Papists. Their religion and their nation were alike distrusted, if not abhorred.

In February, 1756, a family of twenty-two Acadians were brought to Andover, "Germain Laundry, his wife, seven sons and thirteen daughters, and," says the report of the selectmen, "one born since, making in all twenty-three who came to town." These, and others who followed them, were cared for by the town as they best might be. Changes were made, so that, in the year 1760, some having been "sett off to the County of Hampshire," there remained, according to the return of the selectmen of July 20th of that year, twelve persons, as follows:

Jno. Laundry.....	age 26 (nearly)	Margaret Bear.....	age 1
Mary Laundry.....	age 26	Amos Dupre.....	age 46
Charles Bear.....	age 36	Mary, his wife.....	age 29
Margaret Bear.....	age 24	Mary Joseph.....	age 5
Molly Bear.....	age 4	Margaret Dupre.....	age 2
Charles Bear.....	age 2	Hermon Dupre.....	age 34

"After a time," says Miss Bailey, "houses were provided for the families, and most of the Acadians in Andover became self-supporting. The family of Jacques Esbert and Charles Esbert were placed in a house on the estate of Mr. Jonathan Abbot, recently "owned by his grandson," (the late) "Mr. Stephen D. Abbot. The house was empty, Mr. Abbot having built a new one for himself. It was, however, a great annoyance to the Puritan farmer to have these tenants—foreigners and Roman Catholics—

quartered near his own residence. But, as his descendants relate, the Acadians completely conquered the prejudices of this family and of the community, and gained the good-will of all acquaintances. They were industrious and frugal. The women worked in the fields, pulling flax and harvesting. They practised the rites of their religion in an inoffensive manner, and commended it by their good conduct. When they went away from Andover, Mr. Abbot's family parted from them with sincere regret."

From this account it would seem that the exiles gradually made their way to the hearts of the people upon whom they were helplessly cast, gained sympathy, kind treatment, respect and warm friends.

In the month of August, 1757, we find Major (now Colonel) Frye among the seventeen hundred provincial troops entrenched under the guns of Fort William Henry, a small fort situated at the head of Lake George, manned by a garrison of less than five hundred English soldiers, under the command of the heroic Lieutenant-Colonel Monro. This fort was besieged by the indefatigable and accomplished Montcalm, with a force of six thousand French and Canadian troops, and seventeen hundred Indian allies of various tribes. After a gallant resistance, succor being refused by General Webb, the superior officer at Fort Edward, the little fort capitulated on the 9th of August, under a guarantee of protection from the French commander. But, at daybreak the next morning, as the officers and soldiers were leaving their intrenchments, they were set upon by the Indians, beaten, hacked, stripped of their clothing, and some twenty or thirty of them massacred. Montcalm would seem to have exerted himself to the utmost, but vainly, to restrain the ferocity of the savages, inflamed, it is said, by intoxicating drink given them by English soldiers the night previous. Some of the officers and men escaped almost naked from the hands of the Indians and fled into the forests. Colonel Frye was one of these. Being dragged into the woods by an infuriated savage, stripped of his clothing, and about to be dispatched by the tomahawk of his captor, seizing a favorable opportunity, he leaped upon his foe and killed him. Then, hastily, with no clothing but a shirt, he ran for the woods, where he wandered for three days, finally reaching Fort Edward nearly famished from hunger and distracted by the cruelties he had experienced and the horrors he had witnessed. He lived, however, for greater exploits and higher honors.

It is not certain that there were other Andover men with Colonel Frye at Fort Henry. Nor does it clearly appear how many or who were the Andover men personally engaged in this war of conquest, which terminated on the 8th day of September, 1760, by the surrender to the English of Montreal, Canada, and whatever territory had been hitherto claimed by France in the Northeast.

But it is reasonably inferred that there were pri-





vate soldiers from this town scattered among the different regiments sent by Massachusetts upon two of these expeditions. From a petition of Abiel Abbot, of Andover, for further pay for services in the army, we learn that he "was surgeon's mate of Col. Frye's regiment, & in that department of it which garrisoned Annapolis Royal in 1759 & 1766." Massachusetts Bay contributed more than ten thousand troops, nearly one-sixth of all able to bear arms, for these expeditions against Canada and Nova Scotia. Andover, of course, must have furnished her proportionate number of these, gathered largely as they were from the agricultural settlements; but, enlisted into different regiments and companies, their names have not been handed down to us.

The taxes for sustaining these military operations for so many years bore heavily upon the inhabitants, especially upon those engaged in farming, as they were largely levied upon the land. Money was scarce; the people were poor; hence much difficulty was experienced in the collection of the taxes.

The property of the delinquent tax-payer was not infrequently seized by the officer and sold to meet the requisition of the colony. Thus, in more ways than one, did trial and grief come to the homes of the humble settlers. We can scarcely imagine the intensity of their joy when the news came that Montreal had capitulated, and all the French possessions in Canada and Nova Scotia had been surrendered. This was a victory that had the promise of permanent peace. Now the sons, brothers, husbands, and fathers whom sickness and the bullet had spared, might return to gladden once more the bereft homes upon the hillsides and in the hamlets of New England. Was ever the Thanksgiving more heartily observed than that which followed the closing up of the devastating French and Indian Wars? The bells of Massachusetts Bay rang merrily on that day.

The names of Andover men holding military commission, from 1745 to 1763, as given by Miss Bailey, are as follows:

Col. Joseph Frye.	Capt. Jonathan Peabody.
Lieut. Col. Isaac Frye.	Capt. Asa Stevens.
Adjt. Col. Moody Bridges.	Capt. James Stevens.
Surgeon Ward Noyes.	Capt. John Wright.
Surgeon Abiel Abbot.	Capt. Isaac Osgood.
Capt. John Farnum.	Lieut. John Peabody.
Capt. Thomas Farrington.	Lieut. Nathan Chandler.
Capt. Abiel Frye.	Lieut. Jacob Farrington.
Capt. Asa Foster.	Lieut. Nicholas Holt.
Capt. Henry Ingalls.	Ensign Nathaniel Lovejoy.
Capt. Peter Parker.	Ensign George Abbot.
Capt. James Parker.	Ensign John Foster.
Capt. Thomas Post.	Ensign William Russ.

The descendants of Captain John Abbot, Jr., have in their possession his commission from the hand of Governor Shirley, of which the following is a copy:

"Province of the  
Massachusetts Bay.

[SEAL.]

WILLIAM SHIRLEY, Esq.: Captain  
General and GOVERNOR in Chief in and over  
His Majesty's Province of the Massachusetts  
Bay in New England, &c.

"To JOHN ABBOT, Junr, Gent<sup>e</sup>, greeting.



By virtue of the Power and Authority, in and by His Majesty's Royal Commission to Me granted, to be Captain-General, etc., over this, His Majesty's Province of the Massachusetts Bay, aforesaid, I do (by these Presents) reposing especial Trust and Confidence in your Loyalty, Courage and good Conduct, constitute and appoint You, the said John Abbot, Captain of the second Foot-Company in the Town of Andover, in the fourth Regiment of Militia in the County of Essex, whereof Rich<sup>d</sup> Saltonstall, Esq<sup>r</sup>, is Colonel. You are, therefore, carefully and diligently to discharge the Duty of a Captain in leading, ordering, and exercising said Company in Arms, both inferior Officers and Soldiers, and to keep them in good Order and Discipline, hereby commanding them to obey you as their Captain and yourself to observe and follow such Orders and Instructions, as you shall from time to time receive from Me, or the Commander-in-Chief for the Time being, or other your superior Officers for His Majesty's service, according to Military Rules and Discipline, pursuant to the Trust reposed in You.

"Given under My Hand and Seal of Arms, at Boston, the Second Day of July, in the twentieth year of the Reign of His Majesty, King GEORGE the Second, Annoq<sup>ue</sup> Domini, 1745.

"By His Excellency's Command

W. SHIRLEY.

"J. WILLARD."

## CHAPTER CXXXI.

### ANDOVER—(Continued).

#### RESISTANCE TO TAXATION.

WHEN the British government was relieved of its foreign wars by the treaty of Paris, it began to look more carefully after the condition of its American colonies, with the purpose of deriving from them a much-needed revenue.

Various forms of taxation were devised—among them was that of a Stamp Act. This was vehemently resisted by the people of Massachusetts Bay. There were riotous proceedings in Boston when the attempt was made to put the act into operation. Andover was aroused; a public meeting of citizens was called, and held September 11, 1765, at which a vote was passed unanimously expressing "their utter detestation and abhorrence of all such violent and extraordinary proceedings," directing the selectmen and officers of the town "to use their utmost endeavours to suppress the same" and maintain the supremacy of the laws; also urging the freeholders and other inhabitants to aid its officers in the discharge of their duty.

While thus strenuous in their purpose to sustain good order and put down rioting, they were equally determined in their opposition to all unjust acts on the part of the mother country. October 21, 1765, at a meeting held in view of the oppressive acts of Parliament, they chose Col. James Frye, Deacon Isaac Abbot, George Abbot, Esq., Mr. Moody Bridges, Capt. Peter Osgood, Col. John Osgood, Capt. Asa Foster, Capt. John Foster, Capt. Peter Parker, Capt. John Farnum "a committee to draw up instructions for the representative of the town, at the great and general Court of this Province, and report as soon as may be."

The committee reported as follows:



"To Samuel Phillips, Esq., Representative for the town of Andover in his Majesty's province of the Massachusetts Bay.

"*Sir*—We, the freeholders and other inhabitants of said town, legally assembled in town-meeting, on said day, to consider what may be proper on our part to be done at this critical conjuncture, being a time, we apprehend, that we and the rest of his Majesty's subjects of this province, as well as those of the other provinces and colonies in British America, are by sundry acts of Parliament of Great Britain, especially by an act commonly called the Stamp Act, in danger of being not only reduced to such indigent circumstances as will render us unable to manifest our loyalty to the Crown of Great Britain, as upon all occasions we have hitherto done, by cheerfully exhibiting our substance for the defence of the British dominions in this part of the world; but of being deprived of some of our most valuable privileges which by Charter and loyalty we have always thought and still think ourselves justly entitled to.

"Therefore, we take it to be a duty justly due to ourselves and posterity to instruct you: that you do not give your assent to any act of Assembly that shall signify any willingness in your constituents to submit to any internal taxes that are under any colour imposed, otherwise than by the General Court of this province agreeable to the constitution of this government; That you join in such dutiful remonstrances to the King and Parliament, and other becoming measures, as shall carry the greatest probability to obtain a repeal of the Stamp Act, and an alleviation of the embarrassments, the commercial affairs of this province labour under by the rigorous execution of the acts of Parliament respecting the same;—and we also desire you to use your utmost endeavours that all extraordinary grants and expensive measures may, upon all occasions, as much as possible, be avoided; and we would recommend particularly the strictest care and the utmost firmness to prevent all unconstitutional draughts upon the public treasury;—that you would use your best endeavours, in conjunction with the other members of the General Court, to suppress all riotous unlawful assemblies, and to prevent all unlawful acts of violence upon the persons and substance of his Majesty's subjects in this Province."

This report was accepted and unanimously adopted and sent to the representative at the General Court.

It is a clear and firm expression of the inhabitants of the town against all lawless and riotous proceedings in opposition to the execution of the offensive acts of Parliament, and also an equally fair and clear expression of their judgment and purpose regarding all unconstitutional and oppressive acts of Parliament. One can read between the lines declaring their loyalty a spirit of independence that will brook no imposition, no oppression, no attempt at coercion. We should recall the fact that, when this resolution was passed in the town-meeting of Andover, the streets of Boston, twenty miles distant, were filled at times with a riotous multitude. This self-restraint, under the circumstances, is as praiseworthy as the settled determination to protect their constitutional rights.

These and similar remonstrances from the colonies secured the repeal of the offensive act, but the right of taxation without representation was not yielded by Parliament. Another act, still more offensive to the colonies, was passed by Parliament, imposing heavy duties on imported articles, such as paper, glass, tea and West India goods. This act, and the attempted forcible imposition of it upon the colonies, especially Massachusetts Bay, aroused the slumbering indignation of the people.

The town of Andover resented this new attempt at unjust taxation. In May, 1770, a meeting, called to "take into consideration the distresses this Province is labouring under by the operation of a late act of

Parliament, imposing duties on tea, paper, glass, etc., made and passed for the express purpose of raising a revenue in the American Colonies, without their consent, which act we apprehend is oppressive, repugnant to the natural and constitutional rights of the people, contrary both to the spirit and letter of the royal Charter, granted by their Majesties King William and Queen Mary to the inhabitants of this province, whereby are ordained and established the having and enjoying all liberties and immunities of free and natural born subjects; and subversive of the great and good designs of our most worthy ancestors, who crossed the ocean, willingly exposed themselves to every danger, parted with their blood and treasure, suffered hunger, cold and nakedness, and every other hardship human nature is capable of, to purchase and defend a quiet habitation for themselves and posterity,"—

"Therefore voted, *nemini contradicenti*,—

"1. That it is the duty of every friend to liberty, and to the British Constitution, to use all legal measures to prevent, if possible, the execution of said act; and would embrace this opportunity to express our warmest gratitude to the merchants and other gentlemen of Boston, and other trading towns in this province, for the regular, constitutional and spirited measures pursued by them, from principles truly noble and generous, for repelling tyranny and oppression, and establishing those rights for themselves and country which they are entitled to as men and as Englishmen.

"2. That we will, by all legal and constitutional measures in our power, support and encourage the non-importation agreement of the merchants, and that we will have no commercial or social connexions, directly or indirectly, with those persons who, as enemies to the country, divested of every public virtue, and even of humanity itself, regardless of and deaf to the miseries and calamities which threaten this people, preferring their own private interest to the liberty and freedom of the community, are sordidly endeavouring to counteract such benevolent and salutary agreement.

"3. That we will encourage frugality, industry and the manufactures of this country; and that we will not make use of any foreign tea, or suffer it to be used in our families (case of sickness only excepted), until the act imposing a duty on that article shall be repealed and a general importation take place."

The spirit which dictated and sustained these resolves did not abate in its intensity as the contest grew fiercer. When armed vessels appeared in Boston harbor to force the landing of tea upon its wharves, the people did not succumb to the threatened compulsion. The rather, their sense of the indignity and tyranny of the act, and its method of enforcement, aroused within them a more determined purpose of resistance.

Thus we find the town referring to this same matter again, February 3, 1774,—

"Resolved, that no person in this town, who has heretofore been concerned in vending tea, or any other person may, on any pretence whatever, either sell himself, or be in any way accessory to selling any tea of foreign importation, while it remains burthened with a duty, under penalty of incurring the town's displeasure."

The displeasure of the town was more to be dreaded than the displeasure of King and Parliament by the village trader of that day.

A careful examination of these resolves and expressions of opinion, on the part of the town, as from time to time they were put upon the town record-book, shows us the gradual growth among the people of a spirit of insubordination, and a weakening of the hold





of the mother country upon their love and confidence. At first they remonstrated, with the expectation that their complaints would be regarded and their grievances redressed, but gradually they came to feel and believe that they must look out for themselves, and take into their own hands such redress. Thus, step by step, were the people led on to do, in 1776, what few, if any of them, would for a moment have thought of doing when, in 1770, they remonstrated with filial confidence and boldness against an oppressive act of the government they revered and trusted.

## CHAPTER CXXXII.

ANDOVER—(*Continued*).

### REVOLUTION.

BUT, as the spirit of resistance to the oppressive acts of Parliament grew strong in the colonies, the determination of the British King, Ministry, Parliament and people to exercise supreme authority in America became more firmly fixed. It was finally determined to use force to subjugate the contumacious colonists. Boston, as the most pestilent breeder of sedition, was the first to feel the heavy hand of authority. An act was passed in March, 1774, closing the port of Boston to commerce. This was speedily followed by an act creating General Gage the military commander of America, the civil Governor of Massachusetts, and four regiments of soldiers were given him to enforce his authority. He was further directed to take immediate measures to bring the ringleaders of the revolt to merited punishment. Samuel Adams was singled out as especially worthy of condemnation.

In order to guard against any interference of the local courts, it was also provided that any revenue officer, magistrate, or soldier indicted for murder should be sent to Nova Scotia or Great Britain for trial. And to make the grip of power doubly sure, the quartering of troops within the town of Boston was sanctioned.

So much of the charter of Massachusetts Bay as gave to the Legislature the election of councilors was abolished; town-meetings, except for the choice of town officers, or by permission of the Governor were forbidden; sheriffs were placed under executive authority, and juries were to be summoned by the sheriffs.

While Parliament was thus passing its coercive acts, the people of the provinces were not unmindful of the seriousness of the crisis, or inactive. A representative gathering by committees of the towns of the province was held in Boston for deliberation and unity of action. A Committee of Correspondence embracing all the colonies, was formed. The cause of one was made the cause of all. Outward pressure

brought inward unity. The thirteen provinces pledged themselves to sustain one another. Other commercial towns engaged to suspend all commerce with Great Britain and the West Indies.

A solemn league and covenant, drawn up by Warren, suspending all commercial intercourse with the mother country, was signed by the great mass of the citizens of Boston, and of many other towns in the province. The signing of this covenant was called traitorous in a proclamation by the Governor, and magistrates were enjoined to seize, and put on trial all such signers. This threat rapidly increased the number of subscribers to the "solemn covenant." At the suggestion of the Legislature of Massachusetts Bay, a congress of the colonies met in Philadelphia the 1st day of September, 1774, and, after long deliberation and a free exchange of opinion, unanimously resolved not to import any merchandise from Great Britain or Ireland after the 1st day of the coming December, and to export no merchandise (rice excepted) to Great Britain, Ireland or the West Indies after the 10th day of September of the following year, provided the redress of American grievances should be delayed until that time. They also approved the opposition of the inhabitants of Massachusetts Bay to the execution of the late acts of Parliament.

The people of Andover watched with eager interest the action of their own Provincial Congress, but with more intense feeling that of the Continental Congress. After the dissolution of these assemblies, the town of Andover, on the 26th day of December,

"Resolved, That it is the indispensable duty of this town strictly to conform and firmly adhere to the Association of the grand American Continental Congress, and to the resolve of the Provincial Congress of the 5th of December thereto relating, and in order that this may be thoroughly effected, that the inhabitants of the town of the age of twenty-one years and upwards subscribe the following agreement, viz.:

"We, the subscribers, having attentively considered the Association of the grand American Continental Congress respecting the non-importation, non-exportation and non-consumption of goods, etc., signed by the Delegates of this and the other Colonies on the Continent, and the Resolve of the Provincial Congress of the 5th of December thereto relating, do heartily approve the same, and every part of them, and in order to make said Association and Resolve our own personal act, Do, by these Presents, under the sacred ties of virtue, honor and love of our country, firmly agree and associate fully and completely to observe and keep all and every article and clause in said association and resolve contained, according to the true intent, meaning and letter thereof, and will duly inform and give notice of every evasion or contravention of either, as far as we are able; and we further covenant, that if any person or persons of the age of twenty-one years and upwards shall neglect or refuse to subscribe this agreement when tendered to him or them, that we will withdraw all commerce, trade or dealing from such, so long as they shall continue thus inimical to the public good, and that their names shall be entered on the records of this town, and published in the *Essex Gazette*, as enemies to their country."

As there are no names of contumacious persons to be found upon the town record, it is to be inferred that all the male inhabitants of the town, of twenty-one years of age and upward, signed the agreement. This agreement was certainly very strict and comprehensive in its terms, indicating an invincible determination to resist to the bitter end all en-





encroachments upon their rights. As the prospect became increasingly clear that a resort to arms would be necessary for the preservation of these rights, it was voted, "that one-quarter part of all the training soldiers of the town enlist themselves, and for their encouragement they are promised pay for every half-day they shall be exercised in the art military." While preparation was thus made for war, a large and influential "Committee of Safety" was chosen, whose duty it was to suppress mobs and riots, maintain peace and harmony, good will and affection among the people, and, by their advice and example, promote good manners and correct living. To this committee was soon after added another, called a "Committee of Inspection," whose duty it was to see to it that the "non-consumption agreement be strictly adhered to;" that every species of extravagance and dissipation be discountenanced. They were to recommend a reduction in the articles and expense of mourning apparel, to inspect the traders of the town, and if any had violated the rules of the Association, to publish their names. They were further "to encourage the people to improve the breed of sheep, and to increase their number;" at the same time they were to "promote agriculture, arts and manufactures."

It is to be observed that these frequent town-meetings and their energetic acts were in defiance of law, the Provincial Legislature having been set aside by the Governor, and the town-meeting suppressed by act of Parliament. But never were town officials more efficient or better obeyed. Events moved fast in those days. In January, 1775, the Committee of Inspection was chosen; in February it was voted to furnish the enlisted soldiers "with bayonets at the expense of the town," and for this purpose, after collecting those "in the hands of individuals," the persons in charge were directed to "procure one hundred more to be made as soon as possible, and supply those firelocks that are effective, which belong to the minute-men, with good bayonets as soon as may be." At this time there were four enlisted companies of one hundred men each in the town—two belonging to the South Parish, and two to the North. These were put under drill two or three times a week.

While the provincial towns were thus preparing to defend their rights by arms, the Parliament of Great Britain was sending an address to the King declaring that "a rebellion existed in Massachusetts," and pledging "their lives and properties for its suppression." An act was also passed, aimed especially at Massachusetts, excluding the fishermen of New England from the Banks of Newfoundland. By this act the coercion of idleness and starvation was brought to bear upon disloyalty. Its effect was to change indignation into detestation. The yeomanry of the country deeply sympathized with the fishermen of the coast. These aggressive acts, designed to punish and subdue the malcontents, served to unite all

classes of the people, North and South, more firmly, and to deepen their determination to maintain their rights at every cost. The Second Provincial Congress of Massachusetts, sitting in Concord, appointed officers to command the forces of the colony, if there should be occasion for their use; chose a "Committee of Safety," charged to resist every attempt at executing the Act of Parliament, and another committee to draw up regulations for the constitutional army; advised the people to pay their province tax to a treasurer of their own choice; made announcements for collecting military stores; sent out an address to their constituents, in which they declared "that resistance to tyranny becomes the Christian and social duty of each individual," and after appointing a day of fasting, dissolved on the 15th day of April.

On the day after this adjournment General Gage began secret preparations for sending out an expedition to destroy some military stores which had been collected at Concord. As stealthily as possible, on the evening of the 18th of April, under the shelter of the darkness of night, eight hundred infantry and grenadiers, the flower of the army in Boston, left the barracks, crossed the Charles, and took up their march for Concord, delighted at the prospect of an agreeable excursion into the country, and the opportunity of inspiring terror among the boorish rebels of the villages around. This expedition, with its purport, was quickly known to the patriots within the city, and speedily the news of it was communicated to the towns between Charlestown and Concord, and from them spread far and wide over the country. As the expedition, in the dawn of the morning, entered the village of Lexington, it came upon a small body of armed men drawn up near their meeting-house. Here was an opportunity for eight hundred disciplined soldiers, well armed, to show their superior valor in an attack upon some sixty villagers, assembled with muskets to protest against an invasion of their rights. They were bidden to disperse, failing in which, they were fired upon. Seven of these Lexington men were killed and nine wounded—a quarter part of all who, that morning, stood upon the village green, as the picket-guard of American liberty.

The news of this slaughter spread over the country upon the wings of the wind. And while the British company proceeded on this expedition and spiked two old cannon at Concord, destroyed an insignificant amount of flour and some old gun-carriages, wounded two and killed two of the Concord minute-men, losing, in turn, two killed and others wounded, the county towns in Middlesex and Essex had been aroused, and armed men from all quarters flocked to the scene of conflict. In Andover, as in other towns, the meeting-house bells rang out their warning, and the heavy beat of the alarm-drum summoned the farmer at his plow, the mechanic in his shop and the minister in his study; and all, leaving their teams, their tools, their books, without even stopping to change



their clothes, hurried to the places of rendezvous, with musket and powder-horn in hand.

Before night came on, the four militia companies of Andover were on the march. There were two hundred and twenty-two men in these companies, some of whom doubtless belonged to the neighboring towns of Methuen and Boxford. They marched under the command of Captain Henry Abbot, Captain Joshua Holt, Lieutenant John Adams and Lieutenant Peter Poor.

They were, however, too distant to arrive in time to participate in the running fight from Lexington back to Charlestown. They were in season, however, to see some of the results of the first fight in the interest of American independence,—the broken windows, the plundered houses, the burning barns, the wounded and the dead, both grenadier and minute-man. It has been reported, with doubtful authority, that a private of Captain Joshua Holt's company, Charles Furbush, with another, on being fired upon by a British soldier, who was plundering a house, rushed into the house and killed the plunderer. A private belonging to the company of Captain Ames, Thomas Boynton, kept a journal, and has left this record of the day's experience, which was included in the printed documents of the Massachusetts Historical Society for 1877:

"ANDOVER, April 19, 1775.

"This morning, being Wednesday, about the sun's rising the town was alarmed with the news that the Regulars was on their march to Concord. Upon which the town mustered and about 10 o'clock marched onward for Concord. In Tewksbury news came that the Regulars had fired on our men in Lexington, and had killed 8. In Billerica news came that the enemy were killing and slaying our men in Concord. Bedford we had the news that the enemy had killed 2 of our men and had retreated back; we shifted our course and pursued after them as fast as possible, but all in vain; the enemy had the start 3 or 4 miles. It is said that their number was about 1500 men. They were pursued as far as Charlestown that night; the next day they passed Charles River. The loss they sustained as we hear were 500; our men about 40. To return, after we came into Concord road we saw houses burning and others plundered and dead bodies of the enemy lying by the way, others taken prisoners. About eight at night our regiment came to a halt in no time. The next morning we came into Cambridge and there abode."

This is doubtless a correct account of the day's work of the Andover companies. It shows the marvellous celerity with which, in those days, when there was neither telegraph, railroad nor even a daily stage, the news of the marching of the grenadiers from Boston for Concord, on the night of the 18th of April, must have reached Andover in season to have collected together more than two hundred men from all over the town, ready for a march to Concord at ten o'clock in the morning of the 19th. They certainly deserved the name of "minute-men."

The Andover troops went into camp in Cambridge under the command of General Ward. Here they were subjected to a drill not very exacting. Many of them obtained short furloughs to return to their homes, which they had so hastily left, to put their affairs in order and make better provision for their own comfort.

The women and children who were left on this eventful morning, when their husbands, fathers and brothers marched away to join battle with the British forces, were in no enviable condition. The fortune of war being proverbially uncertain, these loved ones might never be seen by them again alive. The suddenness of the departure had precluded any preparation for the care of farm, barn, stock or children. Then, might not the British push forward even so far as Andover? Fear started the rumor in one neighborhood that the dreaded regulars were coming. After the noise of the morning, the stillness of the evening was itself a terror. The isolated farm-house, without the husband and father, became the habitation of anxiety, tears and prayers. But, however painful and burdensome might be this desolation and the augmented care and toil, the women of that day did not hold back their husbands and sons from the perilous contest for their inalienable rights.

The apprehension in Andover was at this time so great that, on the 29th day of May, in town-meeting, it was voted "that a watch should be kept in the town." Sentinels were appointed to patrol the streets at night; and, if any person should be found walking the streets or elsewhere after nine o'clock, he should be questioned as to his business, and if, on being thus questioned, he should neglect or refuse to reply, he should be challenged "with a strong voice," and commanded, on the authority of a "guard," to stop, on his peril. If the challenged person should disregard this summons, then the sentinel was directed to fire. The sentinel was further empowered to detain and bring before a magistrate any person who did not give a good account of himself. This action shows a startled, tremulous state of feeling among the people. There was something in the air to arouse suspicion and demand extraordinary vigilance. Spies, informers, British sympathizers, incendiaries might choose the darkness of the night to do some mischief to the property or families of the absent soldiers. For the first time in its history, the town felt its need of night watchmen to guard its streets with loaded muskets in their hands. But these nervous apprehensions were soon to be overcome by serious distresses.

Lord Howe had superseded Gage in the chief command of the British forces in America. He had brought with him from England large re-enforcements, with an ample supply of military equipments and such able officers as Clinton and Burgoyne. It was chafing to the pride of the British commander and soldiers to be cooped up in a small town by a heterogeneous company of undisciplined, badly-equipped and poorly-officered farmers. An aggressive movement was planned. This becoming known to the Committee of Safety and communicated to the officers and men at Cambridge, a counter-movement was determined upon in advance of the British attack. It was decided to occupy Bunker Hill, one of the neighboring heights which commanded Boston.





A thousand men were detailed under the command of Prescott. Among this detachment were three companies under the command of captains from Andover,—Captain Benjamin Ames, Captain Charles Furbush and Captain Benjamin Farnum. A large proportion of the private members belonged also to Andover, though by no means all. There seems to have been a great mixing up of companies for this enterprise, not a few volunteers falling into the ranks of the detached companies to take the places of absentees.

As the sun was setting on the afternoon of the 16th of June, the forces under command of Prescott were drawn up on Cambridge Common, where they listened to an earnest prayer offered by Dr. Langdon, president of Harvard College. The hour, the special interest shown by all in authority in what was transpiring, the solemn and fervent supplication for the blessing of heaven upon the assembled companies, added to the mystery as to their destination, gave to the common soldier a profound sense of the significance and peril of the work in which he was about to engage, and the honor to which he was called, in being selected to participate in such a work. When night came on and silence reigned in camp, this detachment, laden with pick-axe and shovel, as with musket and powder-horn, marched across Charlestown Neck, with no sound of life or drum-beat, to Breed's Hill, threw up their intrenchments, and, to the best of their ability, prepared themselves for the desperate and bloody struggle of the next day. The discovery by the British of this earth-work in the early morning, their astonishment, the bombardment by the war-vessels lying in the offing, the embarking of two thousand of the choicest troops of England, with Major-General Howe himself in command, and their landing in Charlestown, the two unsuccessful and disastrous attacks, and the final successful one, together with the retreat of the American soldiers for lack of powder, are familiar in their details to all.

The description of these events by Thomas Boynton, sergeant in the Andover company, commanded by Captain Ames, is worth quoting. It runs thus:

"Three regiments were ordered to parade at 6 o'clock in the afternoon, namely: Conl. Fryes, Conl. Bridge's and Conl. Prescott's, after which being done we attended prayers and about 9 at night we marched to Charlestown with about a 1000 men, and at about 11 o'clock we began to intrench in sight of Boston and the shipping. At the sun's rising, they began to fire upon us from the shipping, the 3d or 4th shot they kill one man, and many others escaped very narrowly. At length they ceased their fire. Our work went on continually; they began about 8 or 9 o'clock from Corps Hill and continued a hot fire. About 2 or 3 o'clock the enemy landed and advanced toward us, its shot to the number of 2000 men, and soon planted their cannon and began the fire and advancing up to our Fort. After they came within gunshot we fired, and then ensued a very hot engagement. After a number of shots passed, the enemy retreated, and we ceased our fire for a few minutes. They advanced again, and we began a hot fire for a short time. The enemy scaling our walls and the number of our men being few, we was ordered to retreat, at which time the enemy were almost round us and a continual firing at our heels."

It will be observed that there is no mention here of

the second repulse, which our histories of the day's transaction uniformly narrate. This omission, on the part of one engaged in the struggle, is certainly noticeable. But this evidence of omission on the part of one narrator cannot invalidate the testimony of many equally competent witnesses to the fact that three attacks were made, with two repulses.

That there was fighting going on in Charlestown, and that the Andover companies were engaged in it, was known in Andover in the early part of the day. The booming of cannons from the ships and from Copp's Hill was heard in the homes of the soldiers in the trenches. The people left their work, gathered in the streets and on the hill-tops. Many hastened to the place of conflict with provisions and other supplies, women brought out their old-linen for bandages and their choice cordials, for the use of the wounded, and many a parent's, sister's or wife's heart beat anxiously for the loved one exposed to death, possibly lying wounded, possibly dead.

The next day brought tidings of the battle and its disasters. There is no full record to be found of the casualties in the Andover companies. It is known, however, that Captain Farnum was badly wounded, that Captain Furbush was disabled early in the fight, and that his lieutenant, Samuel Bailey, Jr., was killed. Of Captain Ames' company, it is known that Joseph Chandler, Philip Abbot and William Haggitt were killed, and that Lieutenant Isaac Abbot, Lieutenant Joshua Lovejoy, James Turner, Jeremiah Wardwell, Stephen Chandler and Israel Holt were wounded. Thus was a nation's joy at the successful resistance by undisciplined militia to the systematic and repeated attacks of the veteran soldiers of England tempered by the tears of those who mourned over their heroic dead. The next day was the Sabbath. When its sacred light dawned upon the hillsides of Andover the town was in a ferment of excitement. It was rumored that a large number of her sons had been killed or wounded. Uncertainty, anxiety and grief pervaded the place.

The thoughts of all were turned towards Cambridge. All who could go, hastened thither. The sanctuary was forsaken. The Rev. Jonathan French, the pastor of the South Church, who in early life had been a soldier and afterwards a military surgeon, seizing his Bible and surgical instruments, hastened to the succor of his wounded and bereaved parishioners in camp. This is the account he gives of the state of things on that Sabbath day in June:

"Our houses of public worship were generally shut up. It was the case here. When the news of the battle reached us, the anxiety and distress of wives and children, of parents, of brothers, sisters and friends was great. It was not known who were among the slain or living, the wounded or the well. It was thought justifiable for us who could to repair to the camp, to know the circumstances, to join in the defence of the country and prevent the enemy from



pushing the advantages they had gained, and to afford comfort and relief to our suffering brethren and friends."

The presence of this helpful and sympathetic pastor was a healing balm to his wounded parishioners and a sweet consolation to those who wept over their dead. Dr. Thomas Kittredge, of the North Parish, was the surgeon of Colonel Frye's regiment, and doubtless gave special care to his wounded fellow-townsmen and acquaintances.

But, with all these alleviations, not a few Andover homes were made desolate by these glorious battles, which awakened a nation to a consciousness of its power, and to a determination to use that power for the preservation of its rights.

The Andover soldiers were doubtless better cared for than were those from a distance,—garments, provisions, powder, accoutrements and other things that contributed to their comfort and efficiency were taken to them by relatives, friends and the officers of the town. They also enjoyed the privilege of visits from their parents, wives, children, friends and fellow-townsmen, and the not infrequent opportunity of short visits to their homes. Those who had been engaged in the Bunker Hill fight doubtless felt their importance among their old friends and associates, and never allowed the stories or achievements of that momentous day to lose anything of interest or marvel by frequent repetition. Thus it came to pass that single exploits were claimed by or ascribed to different persons. These men were certainly the heroes of the hour, and their memory is sacred.

The nine months which followed the battle of Bunker Hill previous to the evacuation of Boston were trying months to its citizens. Not a few of the poorer class of the people were driven from the city by the British soldiers. They found refuge and support in the neighboring towns. A company of them came to Andover, where they were hospitably received and their necessities relieved. There were also some rich and well-to-do citizens who voluntarily left the city, who, from their acknowledged sympathy with "the rebels," had reason to fear molestation or insult. Andover had its share of such exiles. Among the number we find Mr. William Phillips, nephew of Rev. Samuel Phillips, first pastor of the South Church. He was a wealthy merchant of Boston, the associate of Hancock and Samuel Adams in their unflinching hostility to the Stamp Act and the tea tax. Mr. Nathan Appleton, also a prosperous merchant and ardent patriot, found for a time a safe retreat on the Andover hills. He describes himself as seeking amusement in his forced retirement from business in "hoeing my potatoes and beans." And when in this quiet retreat a son was born to him, he writes exultingly to a friend, "I named him last Sabbath, George Washington." Another Boston man who at this time made Andover his temporary abode was Mr. Joseph Hall.

While here he became the father of a boy, whom "he had christened by the Rev. Mr. French," pastor of the South Church, as "Joseph Warren, to perpetuate the memory of Major-General Joseph Warren, who was slain on Bunker Hill in the ever memorable battle on the 17th of June, 1775."

This christening took place on the 19th of November, five months subsequent to that "ever memorable battle." Most likely it was the first christening of the kind, of which there have been multitudes since, in honor of that high-spirited, self-sacrificing man, who, to rare abilities and generous culture, added purity of life, manly character and fervent patriotism, and who, to crown all, gave up his life fighting as a common soldier in the ranks for the liberty of his country.

In these perilous times Andover became not only the refuge of the poor driven from their homes by hostile soldiers, and the wealthy fleeing from them for safety, but Harvard College sought protection for her choicest treasures within its bounds. By a special act of the Provincial Congress, a portion of the library of the college was transferred to this town, and placed in the residences and under the care of Mr. Samuel Osgood and George Abbot, Esq., This removal was for the purpose of preserving these invaluable books from destruction or capture, should the British, in the fortune of war, gain possession of Cambridge. This small library was held to be of such priceless worth by our fathers as to make it fitting for the Congress, which had taken in hand the task of resisting the tyranny of Britain, to make special provision for its safety.

On the disbanding of the companies first enlisted and the calling out of a fresh levy of troops for a much longer term of service, Andover came promptly forward with a large number of enlistments. The brave and experienced Colonel James Frye, who led her sons in the siege of Louisbourg and at the battle of Bunker Hill, had ceased from his labors, dying at his home on the 8th of January, 1776. Captain Benjamin Farnum and Captain John Peabody, natives of this town, commanded companies in which were enrolled many Andover men. But, in the new disposition of the troops, companies were not made up, as at first, so exclusively of men belonging to one town or section of a town. Thus, in the company of Captain Peabody were to be found men from Haverhill, Methuen, Bradford, Boxford and other places as well as Andover. Hence the Andover soldiers were also scattered among different companies, regiments and brigades. This renders it impossible, at this remove in time, to follow their course or note their conduct. A few of them were assigned to the detachment of General Heath and went with him to the neighborhood of New York. A much larger number were sent North to support the army under the command of General Schuyler. In this service the company of Captain Farnum, composed largely of Andover men, as part





of the regiment of Colonel Francis, was ordered to reinforce Fort Ticonderoga. Their march towards this distant fortress was through roadless forests, muddy morasses, swollen creeks and bridgeless rivers. Before they could reach their destination the stronghold capitulated. This surrender forced a retreat, which, if possible, was more exhausting than the advance. For needed rest, they halted for a time on an island in the Hudson River, between Fort Edward and Saratoga. From hence they marched to this village, shipping their stores down the stream. Here they remained until August 3d, when they were ordered to Stillwater, where they arrived, according to the diary of Captain Farnum, "about one o'clock at nite; lodged on the wet ground. In the morning the ground was laid out for each brigade to camp in. We got our boards out of the river and made our huts. Those that had tents pitched them." Tents were scarce. The soldiers were disheartened by their wearisome and useless marches, retreats, reverses, sicknesses and bad leadership. But to this desponding company there came the cheering news that their compatriots had rallied and beaten the choice soldiers of Britain at Bennington. In his hut at Stillwater, Captain Farnum makes a note of this,—“The following is just from Bennington by express: that the battle their has turned in our favor; that our army has killed and taken 936; that the loss on our side 20 killed and 80 wounded. 4 hrs. field pieces taken from the enemy.” This good news was refreshing to the wearied soldiers at Stillwater. And when, two months later, Burgoyne surrendered with his army of nearly six thousand choice troops and capable officers, this oil of joy must have done much towards bringing health to their sickened hearts.

When fairly recruited, the company of Captain Farnum was sent to Albany, thence down the river and on to the army of Washington, then operating in the neighborhood of Philadelphia. Here, instead of an active campaign, the excitement of battle and generous fare, they were called to hardships more severe than those endured in their march through the northern wilderness. The winter of 1777-78 is memorable in the history of the war for the terrible privations and sufferings of the army under the immediate command of Washington, in its winter encampment at Valley Forge. Many of the soldiers were destitute of blankets, clothing and shoes. Their marches were tracked with blood. The small-pox and other diseases, aggravated by their destitution, added to their wretchedness. The soldiers from Andover seem to have suffered less in these regards than others, relieved in part, it may be, by friends at home.

In addition to the lengthy enlistments, there were frequent calls upon the militia for short terms of service on special expeditions or to meet a special emergency. Thus, a regiment was called out mainly from Essex County, and placed under the command of

Colonel Samuel Johnson, of Andover, for the purpose of assisting the Army of the North after the abandonment of Fort Ticonderoga by Saint Clair and his disastrous retreat through the wilderness. There were a goodly number of Andover men in this regiment, in the two companies commanded respectively by Captain John Abbot and Captain Samuel Johnson. This regiment was placed under the orders of General Lincoln, and was directed by him to harass the rear of Burgoyne. For this purpose they marched upon Fort Ticonderoga in company with two other regiments of a like character. Though not succeeding in recapturing the fort, they secured considerable stores, arms and ammunition from the enemy, destroyed a large number of boats, took nearly three hundred prisoners and set at liberty one hundred American prisoners. By this action the march of Burgoyne southward was greatly embarrassed and much assistance thus rendered towards his ultimate defeat. General Lincoln had joined Gates before the battles which resulted in the surrender of Burgoyne, and it is but reasonable to suppose that the regiment of Colonel Johnson, in which the Andover soldiers served, was engaged in some of the fights which led to this surrender. In an obituary notice of Colonel Johnson, published in 1796, we find the following testimony:

“In 1777 he commanded a regiment detached from the county of Essex, and led them to victory and glory in the memorable action on the 7th of October, where his firmness and courage were particularly distinguished. His regiment was a part of that respectable yeomanry whom General Burgoyne honored as the owners of the soil—men determined to conquer or die.”

In the decisive battle on the 7th of October, which Burgoyne had challenged, it is said by Bancroft that “during all the fight neither Gates nor Lincoln appeared on the field,” “that the action was the battle of the husbandmen,” and “the victory was due to the enthusiasm of the soldiers.” The regiment of Colonel Johnson must have taken a hand in this “battle of the husbandmen,” composed as it was of the yeomanry of Andover and other farming towns in Essex County.

While the town was busy in fitting out and sending forth her sons to endure wearisome marches, severe privations and sickness in the cheerless winter camps, and wounds and death on the battle-field, she was not unmindful of what was transpiring in the Continental Congress. The idea of national independence had, early in the controversy, been entertained by some leading people in the town, and this idea had been steadily growing in favor during the years of strife and sacrifice. The people in town-meetings and their representatives in the Provincial Assembly gave expression to this idea or wish months before the Colonial Congress ventured publicly to entertain the question. Wisely, Congress waited to





hear the voice of the people. On the 12th day of June, 1776, the citizens of Andover were assembled in town-meeting to pass upon this pregnant question: "Should the Honorable Congress, for the safety of the colonies, declare them independent of Great Britain, will you solemnly engage with your lives and fortunes to support them in the measure?"

This grave question was earnestly discussed in all its bearings, with the serious issues and personal responsibilities involved in it, and then, by a unanimous vote, it was answered in the affirmative.

The attention of the people was also directed towards the creation of a permanent State government. The functions of Governor had been exercised thus far, since the setting aside of the royal authority, by an elective Council and a representative Assembly. This was but a temporary arrangement. The time had come for an established form of government. The matter was brought before the people in their respective town-meetings for consideration and action. The citizens of Andover, being thus called together October 3, 1776, in legal town-meeting, to give their judgment on the subject, after full discussion, passed the following vote:

"That it is the consent of the inhabitants of this town now assembled, that the present House of Representatives of this state of Massachusetts Bay in New England, together with the Council, if they consent in one body with the House, and by equal voice, should consult, agree on and enact such a Constitution and form of government for this State, as the said House of Representatives and Council on the fullest and most mature deliberation, shall judge will most conduce to the safety, peace and happiness of this State, in all after successions and generations, provided said Constitution and form of Government be made public for the inspection, approbation, amendment or disapprobation of the inhabitants before the ratification thereof by the Assembly."

This plan for the creation of a State Constitution and form of government failed. Subsequently a convention of representatives of the people was called for the same purpose. This convention met in Cambridge in September of the year 1779. The delegates from Andover who sat in this assembly were Samuel Osgood, Esq., Mr. Samuel Phillips, Jr., Mr. John Farnum, Jr., and Mr. Zebediah Abbot. A Constitution was drafted and submitted to the people for ratification. In Andover, at a legally called meeting, held May 15, 1780, "after due deliberation and debate," it was "adopted with almost entire unanimity."

These votes show us that all important measures affecting the welfare of the State or country, which came before the Provincial Assemblies or the Continental Congress, were first directly or indirectly submitted to the judgment of the people. The leading men of these times unquestionably did much to create and direct public opinion. But the deliberative assemblies were careful to learn and to follow in this action the expressed wishes of the people. In this respect we see a wide difference between the North American Revolution and the revolutions of South America and Europe.

When, at last, after nearly eight years of hardship,

suffering and bloodshed, a treaty of peace was signed in Paris by the representatives of Great Britain and her rebellious American colonies, and the Declaration of Independence of July, 1776, was thus made an accomplished fact, the joy of the people was boundless. The "freeholders and the sons of freeholders" who had done the fighting, endured the privation and suffering, furloughed or disbanded, returned to their homes and farms, bearing little else than their well-tried muskets and a consciousness of having done their duty faithfully and successfully.

During these weary years of war and waiting, Andover continued steadfast in her devotion to the cause she had espoused. She responded cheerfully to the frequent calls for new recruits, re-enlistments and temporary service. Her quota was always full. To encourage enlistments, it was voted, November 18, 1777, "that the town will supply the families of the non-commissioned officers and private soldiers belonging to this town that are engaged in the Continental army with the necessaries of life that their circumstances may require." February 16, 1778, it was "voted to procure for each soldier in the Continental army doing duty for this town one pair of shirts, two pair of stockings, one pair of shoes and a blanket." This undoubtedly was called out by the dire destitution of the troops at Valley Forge, where Andover had a respectable contingent.

In 1779 it was voted "to hire money on the Town's credit, and immediately procure the necessaries of life for the use of the families" of the soldiers in the Continental army.

In July, 1780, it was voted "to provide for the three months' enlisted soldiers, give obligations for their State pay and hire money on the town's credit."

In December of the same year it was voted that "the Town do hereby engage to every able-bodied, effective man that shall enlist, that in case the monthly pay of forty shillings engaged by Congress, to be paid in money of the new emission, shall depreciate from its present value, which is to be considered as now equal to  $\frac{2}{3}$  of the same sum in coined silver, the Town will fully make up such Depreciation at the Expiration of each year's service." As the Continental paper was continually on the downward slide, this backing of the town added no little to the security of the soldier and to the cost of the town.

But the trials of the people were not solely those growing out of the enlistment and support of the soldiers engaged in the war. The withdrawal of a large number of the young and efficient cultivators of the soil caused the farms to be neglected, and thus to become unproductive. The interest of the people was so centred in the doings of the army and the legislative assemblies as to lessen their efficiency in their own secular affairs. They rapidly became poorer year by year. Their homes were made desolate by the death or protracted absence of their sons. But amidst these trials, so wasting and long continued,



we find no murmuring word on the record-book of the town. How many soever may have been the tears shed in secret, and the privations endured in heroic silence, no man wavers in his purpose. There is no looking back to the prosperous days under British rule; no flinching from the next forward step toward independence, however dangerous the step may be. They have a firm faith in the righteousness of their cause, and are willing to trust the issue to the arbitrament of a righteous God. The oppressiveness of their condition, the under-stratum of sadness in their hearts, is, however, sometimes revealed in their public acts.

At the close of the war, the tension of that terrible strife having been taken from the minds and hearts of the people, they found themselves exhausted, unsettled, poor and encompassed with serious difficulties. Taxes were heavy, debts were numerous and large, metallic money was scarce, Continental currency was worth but a fraction of its face value, and daily depreciating. The products of the farm were scanty, owing to the years of neglect. A class of extortioners made their appearance, who exacted enormous interest, with heavy security, for ready money. The habits of the camp followed not a few of the returned soldiers to their homes. The once industrious, frugal and temperate man was too often found with the idlers at the tavern, spending his scanty earnings in drink. Withal, the political atmosphere was unquiet, perturbed. Authority had not become firmly seated in either State or nation. An incipient rebellion broke out in the western section of the State, fomented and stimulated by the discontented and the vagabonds of all other sections. Andover speedily took issue with this spirit of insubordination, while admitting that there were imperfections in the government and grievances in its administration. Under the lead of an able committee, of which Hon. Samuel Phillips, then president of the Senate, was chairman, the citizens passed and put on record this expression of their sentiments Sept. 25, 1786,—"We esteem it our duty at the present day to bear our explicit testimony against all riotous and illegal proceedings, and against all hostile attempts and menaces against law, justice and good government, and to declare our readiness to exert ourselves in support of government and the excellent Constitution of this Commonwealth. But at the same time we suppose there are many things complained of which ought to be remedied, and it is our desire that every grievance may be in a constitutional way redressed." Then follow six specifications where there should or might be changes or amendments of existing things for the public benefit. The paper, as a whole, while outspoken in regard to the existing abuses that were just subjects of complaint, is firm in its tone against all forcible and unconstitutional methods of redress.

When this discontent had culminated in an armed insurrection led by former officers of the army,

the Governor called out a body of militia for its suppression, a fourth of which force was taken from Suffolk and Essex Counties. Andover responded to the call, and sent her soldiers, under the command of General Lincoln, to the scene of disturbance, prepared to fight for the maintenance of order and the Constitution as they had fought to secure national independence. Happily, while there was toilsome marching, there was no occasion for actual fighting. The insurrectionists quickly fled and dispersed on the approach of the State troops. On the dispersion of the malcontents, the General Court created "a special commission to treat with the disaffected and receive their submission," as there was reason to believe that numbers of them were anxious to renew their allegiance. The commissioners selected were General Lincoln, the commander of the troops; Samuel Phillips, President of the Senate, and author of the Andover declaration of sentiment; and Samuel Allyne Otis, Speaker of the House of Representatives. This commission entered at once upon its work, and traversing rapidly those districts of the State most infected with the spirit of resistance, meeting the disaffected in a friendly and conciliatory manner, in the course of a month succeeded in so reconciling the discontented as effectually to prevent any further outbreak.

Those who had personally participated in the insurrection by bearing arms were required to subscribe a paper confessing their wrong-doing, and that they were sincerely penitent for the same and desired to return to their allegiance. And they further pledged themselves to defend the government and to comply with the laws of the State as good citizens. Two credible witnesses were required to substantiate the sincerity of the person making this confession and agreement.

The commissioners, in their report to the General Court, on the 27th of April, stated that seven hundred and ninety persons had returned to their allegiance, and that, on a thorough investigation of the causes which led to the outbreak, they found that chief among them were "private debts," and the principal cause of these debts was "an undue rise of articles of foreign growth and manufacture."

The condition of the currency was a great cause of complaint and a very serious source of trouble. The extreme scarcity of coin and the low and lessening value of the Continental currency induced not a few persons to advocate the issue by the State of paper money. In opposition to this measure the town was outspoken. At a meeting held on the 17th of October, 1785, the following preamble and vote were passed: "Whereas, It has been said that a neighboring town has lately, by a public vote, expressed a disposition for a paper currency; voted, that Joshua Holt, Esq. (Representative for the town at the General Court), be, and he is hereby instructed in case any motion shall be made in the General Court for intro-





ducing a paper medium, vigorously and perseveringly to oppose the same, as being a measure calculated, in our opinion, to promote idleness, dissipation and dishonesty, and, by destroying the morals of the people, to bring on the ruin of the Commonwealth."

Our fathers may have forecast the evils consequent upon the issue by the State of a "paper medium" with extravagant forebodings, but their experience with the Continental currency might reasonably cause them anxious solicitude when it was proposed that the State should go into the manufacture of money. They sagely concluded that, while a "paper medium" might pay off debts, it would not promote morality. As early as 1778 the town had authorized the collector of taxes "to receive seventy-five dollars paper as equal to one silver dollar." The authority of Congress, making its paper currency a legal tender, and declaring him a public enemy who refused to take it, could not prevent its depreciation nearly to the point of worthlessness. The citizens of Andover did not wish to see this experiment repeated by their own Commonwealth.

But the difficulties and trials under which the people labored did not rapidly disappear. In fact, their condition in many respects was more trying than when subject to the rule of Great Britain. Under these disheartening circumstances, the General Court sent out an address to the people, among other things recommending and inculcating the practice of "those virtues which are necessary to form the basis of national happiness." On receiving this address, the town chose a committee to take it into consideration, and to report what measures are proper to be adopted to further the purposes of the address. "The Hon. Samuel Phillips, Esq., Capt. Peter Osgood, Hon. Samuel Phillips, Jr., Esq., Joshua Holt, Esq., Mr. Moody Bridges, Mr. Nehemiah Abbot, Lieut. John Ingalls, Mr. John Farnum and Capt. John Abbot, Jr.," composed this committee, and reported as follows:

"That, in their opinion, a deviation from the principles and practice of industry and economy has been the great cause of the scarcity of specie, the delinquency in the payment of taxes, and in the discharge of private debts, which delinquency naturally tends to mar the reputation and destroy the energy of Government, and to produce impatience in creditors, as well as uneasiness and complaint in debtors; and that hence arises the concern and inquietude of many in the community. Your Committee, therefore, consider this deviation as a fruitful parent of the evils we now suffer, and threatening us with speedy and complete ruin, unless prevented by a thorough reform. We, therefore, consider it of the highest importance to recur to those principles from which we have declined, and to exert ourselves for the encouragement of the manufactures of our own country in every proper way, which will consist with the business which ought to engage our first attention, viz., the cultivation of our lands; and for this purpose the following resolve is proposed to be adopted by the town:

"Whereas the Legislature have warned this people of being in the precise channel in which the liberties of States have been generally swallowed up; and the warning, solemn as it is, appears to be founded in the highest reason; and as it is a part of sound wisdom to convert misfortune and calamities into the means of advantage, in cheerful imitation of the patriotic example set us by the first Magistrate of the Commonwealth, his Council, and the Legislature of the State. We hereby resolve to refrain from, and as far as in our power to prevent the exces-

sive use and consumption of articles of foreign manufacture, especially articles of luxury and extravagance; and that we will exert our best endeavors for the promotion of industry and our own manufactures."

"And in particular, that we will exert ourselves to increase our wool and flax as far as is practicable. That we will, as far as may be, avoid killing our sheep, or selling them for slaughter, after shearing time, till the wool be serviceable for clothing; And that we will exert ourselves to promote and encourage the manufactures of wool and flax and other raw materials into such articles as shall be useful in the community.

"And the inhabitants of the town of every description, but heads of families in particular, are hereby solicited, as they would falsify the predictions and disappoint the hopes of those who are amical to our Independence and happiness; as they would gratify the anxious wishes of our best friends and the friends of freedom in general; as they regard the political well-being of themselves and posterity; as they hold precious the memory of the heroes and patriots, and of our own kindred who have sacrificed their lives that we may enjoy the fruits of virtuous freedom; to unite in this resolution, and to exert their utmost influence, in every proper way, to promote the important design of it.

"And upon this occasion, we apply ourselves to the good sense and virtuous dispositions of the female sex, to the younger as well as the elder, that they would by their engaging examples, as well as in other proper ways, devote that power of influence, with which nature hath endowed them, to the purpose of encouraging every species of economy in living, and particularly, that neat plainness and simplicity in dress which are among the best tokens of a good mind, and which seldom fail to command the esteem and love of the virtuous and wise; giving preference to that clothing which is produced from our own flocks, and from our own fields.

"Your Committee, upon considering the principal obstacles that lie in the way of the desired reform, are clearly of opinion that an undue use of spirituous liquors has a powerful influence to enervate the body, to enfeeble the mind, and to promote dissipation, idleness and extravagance, which are never-failing causes of poverty and ruin. They, therefore, consider it of the highest importance to refrain from ourselves, and to discountenance in others, the undue use of spirituous liquors of all kinds."

This lengthy, carefully-prepared report, with its specific recommendations and pledges, was maturely considered, and, being read and put to vote, paragraph by paragraph, was accepted and adopted. It reveals to us a state of things in the town far from pleasing. With debt, delinquency in the payment of taxes, scarcity of money and general unthrift, there was laziness, extravagance and intemperance. There is something pathetic in this urgent appeal for industry, frugality and temperance to the ill-conditioned citizens of a town where once these virtues flourished as if indigenous to the soil. Some might have questioned whether that coveted jewel, independence, had not been bought at too great cost.

The repeated mention of manufactures and the encouragement of home industries shows us that thus early was discerned the impulse to industry, and the source of prosperity and wealth for the people of our State. Home manufactures were then looked to as a means of increasing the value of farm products, enlarging the number and variety of employments, keeping the money expended for manufactured goods at home, and stimulating enterprise and industry among the people.

It is impossible to give the names or the number of the men who were engaged in the service of the country from Andover during the war; nor can we tell with any degree of accuracy how many of the Andover soldiers were slain in battle, or how many died from wounds or diseases contracted while in the army.



One account says that during the war twenty soldiers died from the South Parish. It is hardly to be supposed that this number covers the deaths from all causes of soldiers from this parish, during the eight years of war. Nearly every family had its representative in the army, first or last. More than fifty men from the South Parish were in the company of Capt. Ames in the battle of Bunker Hill, three of whom were killed and seven wounded.

The following is a list of the commissioned officers from Andover who served in the war, as compiled by Miss S. L. Bailey in her carefully prepared and admirable volume, entitled "Historical Sketches of Andover" ("comprising the present towns of North Andover and Andover"). The writer of this sketch is greatly indebted to Miss Bailey for valuable information so laboriously and accurately collected.

Brigadier-General Joseph Frye.	Captain Stephen Abbot.
Colonel James Frye.	Captain John Adams.
Colonel Samuel Johnson.	Captain Benjamin Farnum.
Colonel Thomas Poor. <sup>1</sup>	Captain Charles Furbush.
Major Samuel Osgood.	Captain Joshua Holt.
Adjut. Genl. Blinsley Stevens.	Captain Samuel Johnson.
Captain Benjamin Ames.	Captain John Peabody.
Captain Henry Abbot.	Dr. Thomas Kittredge. <sup>2</sup>
Captain John Abbot.	

## CHAPTER CXXXIII.

### ANDOVER—(Continued).

#### FORMATION OF CONSTITUTION—INCIDENTS.

THE war having been brought to a satisfactory close, and independence of Great Britain having been achieved and acknowledged by the European powers, the next important and scarcely less difficult task to be undertaken was the formation of a national government. The problem was how to combine into one nation thirteen widely-separated States, with strong sectional and hereditary prejudices, with conflicting interests and sentiments, and diverse social habits, while giving reasonable liberty to each individual, adequate powers to each separate State for the proper conduct of its domestic affairs, and at the same time to confer sufficient power upon the central government to make its authority obeyed at home and respected abroad. The immediate solution of this intricate problem was forced upon the statesmen and people of the country.

The Articles of Confederation, under which the war had been conducted to the desired issue, were felt to be totally inadequate for the basis of a permanent and effective government. The outside pressure of a desperate war for existence being removed, there was not sufficient adhesion in the confederation to prevent

the States from falling asunder, and thus creating confusion, rivalry and strife. The confederate Congress itself recognized this fact, and called a convention of the States to meet in Philadelphia to consult upon the condition of the country, and recommend such changes in the then-existing form of government as they might deem wise and necessary. This convention met, according to the call, on the 14th day of May, 1787. Sixty-five delegates, from twelve States, were elected to this assembly, ten of whom never attended. George Washington was made President of the Convention. After four months' thoughtful deliberation and discussion, a plan for a Constitution was submitted to a vote of the convention, approved by a majority of its members and signed by thirty-nine of them. It was then duly submitted to the Continental Congress, and by this body sent to the several States for amendment, ratification or rejection. It at once became the subject of lively discussion the country over. People differed widely as to its merits and the wisdom of its adoption. Leading statesmen were arrayed on either side of the question. The yeomanry of the country divided in like manner. With this state of feeling among the people, the Legislature summoned a convention to meet in Boston on the 9th of January, 1788, to take into consideration the project for a national Constitution and to act thereon.

The delegates to this convention from Andover were Dr. Thomas Kittredge, Peter Osgood, Jr., and William Symmes, Esq. The first two were men in mature life, of tried judgment and experienced in public affairs. The third was a promising lawyer, twenty-seven years of age, the son of the fourth pastor of the North Andover Parish, who had secured the respect and confidence of his fellow-townsmen by his ability, integrity, fairness and independence. This was his first appearance as a representative of the town in a deliberative assembly. The prevailing sentiment of the town was admitted to be against the adoption of the proposed constitution, and the delegates were understood to be in accord with the prevailing sentiment. As early as the 15th of November preceding, nearly two months before the meeting of the convention, Mr. Symmes wrote a private letter to Mr. Osgood, afterwards chosen his colleague, at the request of the latter, giving his impressions as to the new Constitution. In this letter he reviews in detail its more important provisions, condemning some of them in scathing language, while criticising others as of dangerous tendency. The chief brunt of his criticism is levied against the great power vested in the National Congress, the Judiciary and the President. In the closing paragraphs of his lengthy letter he says: "With regard to the Constitution taken into one view, it is a complete system of Federal government, every part of which is full of energy, and if it be established, I think it can never fail of being obeyed by the people; and no combination can ever be sufficiently extensive or secret to subvert it. In short,

<sup>1</sup> Of Methuen, in the latter part of his service.

<sup>2</sup> Surgeon of First Regiment.





the system would make us formidable abroad, and keep us very *peaceable* at home, and with some amendments, might do very well for us, if we would be contented to become citizens of America, and confuse the thirteen stripes and change the stars into one glorious sun. Let us pause. It is not in a few light strictures, it is not, perhaps, in the most acute and methodical essay, that the merits of this unexpected, this wonderful system can be strictly defined. Reading cannot be applied, and experience is out of the question. Thus much we may easily perceive: it is a great, almost a total, and probably a final change with regard to every state. So great a revolution was never before proposed to a people for their consent. In a time of profound peace, that a matter of such infinite concern should be submitted to general debate throughout such an empire as this, is a phenomenon entirely new. Let us make a due return to that Providence by which we enjoy the privilege, by using it like a wise, prudent and free people. Let us equally shun a hasty acceptance or a precipitate rejection of this all-important scheme. And if our final decision be the effect of true wisdom, let us never doubt the end will be happy."

The late Hon. Nathan Hazen, of Andover, who delivered an appropriate address on the life and character of Mr. Symmes at Andover, in the winter of 1859-60, considers this letter as "probably the earliest review made of the entire instrument." It is undoubtedly a fair expression of the views held by a large number of the intelligent citizens of the town at the time, and on this account merits this extended notice.

When the convention assembled, it was understood that a majority of the members were either decidedly opposed to the ratification or strongly leaning in that direction. But the friends of the measure, if in the minority, comprised some of the ablest, most experienced and most trusted men in the State, among whom were John Hancock, Theophilus Parsons, Rufus King, Fisher Ames, James Bowdoin, Caleb Strong and Samuel Adams. With candor, with urgency and eloquence, the friends of the measure justified its objectionable provisions and proclaimed its necessity.

Among the foremost of those to oppose it was Mr. Symmes. After listening to the debate for a week, he arose, and with a modest exordium, in which he expressed his hesitation at differing from men so much his superiors in age, wisdom and experience, gave his reasons for opposing the instrument, especially that section relating to taxation and collection of the revenues. This speech was a clear, forcible and candid presentation of the chief arguments of the opponents of the measure, and placed Mr. Symmes at once among the foremost leaders of the opposition in the chamber. In closing, with rare frankness addressing the chair, he said, "Sir, I wish the gentlemen who so ably advocate this instrument would enlarge upon this formidable clause," (that giving Congress power of taxation and raising revenue), "and I most sin-

cerely wish that the effect of their reasoning may be my conviction. For, sir, I will not dishonor my constituents by supposing that they expect me to resist that which is irresistible—the force of reason. No, sir; my constituents wish for a firm, efficient continental government—but fear the operation of this which is now proposed. Let them be convinced that their fears are groundless, and I venture to promise in their name that no town in the Commonwealth will sooner approve the form or be better subjects under it."

Theophilus Parsons and others made reply to this forcible speech, with such convincing arguments, and set forth the necessity of a strong government with such persuasive reasons, as to carry conviction to the mind of Mr. Symmes. And when John Hancock moved certain amendments to the instrument, which were adopted by the convention—(following Mr. Turner, who had also opposed, but now strongly favored it)—he arose and said,—

"MR. PRESIDENT, so ample have been the arguments drawn from our national distress, the weakness of the present confederation, the danger of instant dissolution, and perhaps some other topics not included in these, that a man must be obstinate indeed to say, at this period, that a new government is needless. One is proposed. Shall we reject it totally, or shall we amend it? Let any man recollect or peruse the debates in this assembly, and, I venture to say, he shall not hesitate a moment, if he loves his country, in making his election."

"Upon the whole, Mr. President, approving the amendments, and firmly believing they will be adopted, I recall my former opposition, such as it was, to this constitution, and shall, especially as the amendments are to be a standing instruction to our delegates until they are obtained, give it my unreserved assent."

"In so doing I stand acquitted to my own conscience. I hope and trust I shall to my constituents, and know I shall before God," (laying his hand on his breast).

This was a manly utterance; heroic, too, in the face of the recent vote of his constituents; for, while the debate was going on in the convention subsequent to the first speech of Mr. Symmes, the town held a meeting "for the purpose of expressing the sentiments of the inhabitants on the subject of the Federal Constitution." This meeting was more numerously attended than any preceding one in its history, and strong feeling was manifested. On the question being put by Judge Phillips, the moderator, one hundred and fifteen votes were counted in favor of the ratification of the Constitution, and one hundred and twenty-four for its rejection. The two colleagues of Mr. Symmes voted in accordance with this action of the town, though the town refused to give instructions to her delegates.

The course of Mr. Symmes, in changing his attitude from that of an outspoken opponent to that of a decided friend of the measure, and his vote for its ratification, had undoubtedly great weight with the wavering members of the convention. Mr. Hazen thinks it probably changed the final vote from rejection to ratification. He reasons in this wise: "It is moderate to suppose that, being the ablest member in the opposition, his knowledge the best, his motives wholly unimpeached, and yielding, as he declared,



only to the power of argument irresistible by his own mind, changing his views, and ranging himself on the other side, in so large an assembly, he would carry nine votes besides his own. The change of vote in this number only would have reversed the judgment of the convention. If, then, he led nine delegates for the Constitution, who, but for his persuasion, would have voted against it, we probably owe to his action whatever benefits the country has derived from the adoption of the Federal Union by Massachusetts at that time. The contemporary opinion was, that, if it had been rejected by this State, it would not have been accepted by nine others." In this view of the matter, the self-sacrificing action of the young, independent and conscientious lawyer from Andover was of inestimable benefit to the whole country. No one now doubts the wisdom or, in fact, the necessity at that time of the adoption of the Federal Constitution.

But Mr. Symmes paid the penalty of disregarding the expressed wishes of his excited constituents. On returning home he met with a cold reception. His honesty and heroism were not appreciated. Friends fell away. Of a sensitive nature and conscious of his own rectitude, he could not long brook this distrust and alienation of his fellow-citizens. He soon removed to Portland, Maine, where he achieved eminence and acquired property. The division which took place in the town on this question was unprecedented and long continued. Says Abbot, in his "History of Andover" (1829), "the disagreement on this subject was the occasion of a lasting division in town."

After the adoption of the Constitution and the election of Washington to the Presidency, nothing of special interest seems to have occurred in the civil history of the town for a number of years. Certain events of local interest that transpired at divers times it may be well here to mention.

It is said that a slave named Salem Poor, belonging to one of the Andover companies that fought at the battle of Bunker Hill, shot and killed Lieut.-Colonel Abercrombie, of the British army. The story runs that, on the withdrawal of the Americans from the redoubt, in defending which they had exhausted their ammunition, the British colonel sprang upon the parapet exclaiming, "The day is ours!" Salem, hearing the boastful shout, turned around, and, taking deliberate aim with his musket, shot the officer dead. For this act he was highly commended by the officer in command, and became quite a hero in his company. At a later day he was called "a brave and gallant soldier" in a memorial to the Legislature recommending him as deserving some fitting reward.

On the 23d day of May, 1783, James Otis died, at the house of Mr. Jacob Osgood, in Andover, West Parish, where he had resided for some time. This gifted man had been among the foremost, firmest and most effective patriots of the country in his pronounced

resistance to the tyrannous acts of the British Parliament. His eloquent speeches and forcible writings enlightened and electrified his countrymen. In the month of February, 1761, at the beginning of the controversy between Parliament and the colonies, "in the crowded council-chamber of the old Town House in Boston," before Chief Justice Hutchinson and his four associates, arguing against the act of Parliament empowering the collectors of customs to call to their assistance all the executive officers of the colony, he appealed to reason, universal principles founded in truth, the charter of Massachusetts and to the British Constitution itself, declaring that "an act of Parliament against the Constitution is void." So effective was this speech that Hutchinson secured from his associates a delay in their decision. It was likewise the electric spark that fired the soul of the young barrister, John Adams, as he sat listening in the council-chamber. It was the bugle-note which heralded the coming Revolution. Says Bancroft, "With a tongue of flame and the inspiration of a seer, he stepped forward to demonstrate that all arbitrary authority was unconstitutional and against law." This speech before the colonial justices has been called the "opening scene of American resistance." From this time for five years onward we find the name of James Otis associated with the names of Samuel Adams and Joseph Warren in all the patriotic movements of the colony antagonistic to the encroachments of the mother country. But, most unfortunately, his work came to an untimely close. Being of a sensitive and excitable nature, his splendid intellectual powers gradually gave way under the heavy strain put upon them. Enfeebled in mind, but not demented, he lived to see the close of the war, passing his last years at the house of Mr. Osgood. On the 23d of May, a month after the proclamation of peace, a storm coming up, the family hastily came together in the sitting-room of the house. Mr. Otis, with a cane in his hand, stood leaning against the entry-door, diverting the household with a story, when there suddenly came a vivid flash of lightning attended by a clap of thunder that shook the building to its foundations. Without a word, or the movement of a muscle, Mr. Otis fell dead into the arms of Mr. Osgood, who, seeing his condition, sprang forward to catch him. No other person in the room was in the least harmed. No slightest mark could be found on the person of Mr. Otis. He had frequently expressed a wish to die by a stroke of lightning. A kind Providence granted his prayerful desire. There is something in the taking off of this aged patriot by a flash of lightning in singular consonance with the fervid, brilliant and effective oratory of his earlier years.

At the opening of the war a serious difficulty was encountered by the Americans from the lack of ammunition. When Gen. Washington, on taking command of the troops at Cambridge, began to make





preparations for an attack upon the British in Boston, he found to his consternation that there "were not more than about thirty barrels of powder in the camp," and when, after considerable delay, a partial supply had been obtained from the Jerseys, he had scarcely ammunition to serve for more than a single day in a general action. This was an alarming state of things to be kept profoundly secret from foes, and told only in whispers to trusted friends. As one of the confidential friends of the General, and a member of the Massachusetts Assembly, Mr. Samuel Phillips, Jr., became aware of the fact. On the 3d of January, 1776, Mr. Phillips made a proposal to the Provincial Legislature to erect a powder-mill in Andover, with their approval and co-operation. This proposal was accepted, and an agreement entered into to supply him with saltpetre and sulphur, and a bounty of eight pence per pound was granted him for all the powder he should furnish. He was to sell to the government only, or, with their approval, to other States. Mr. Phillips at once entered upon his novel undertaking. Purchasing a mill-seat on the banks of the Shawshin River, he summoned his neighbors to aid him in constructing a canal, frankly telling them the state of things, and saying, "I want your help, and will engage to pay you, if the business pays; but if it fails, you must consent to lose your labor; the powder is needed for the common cause, and we must work together." They eagerly engaged in the arduous work, which was soon completed, Mr. Phillips himself, shovel in hand, working with the rest from morning till night. By the 10th of May he began to deliver powder from his mill, and during the year large supplies were furnished from it for the army and war-vessels,—not less than fifteen thousand and six hundred pounds. In the mean time other mills had been erected; but this was the chief manufactory in the country. The powder-mill, thus patriotically built, proved a pecuniary success, and was continued in operation till 1796, when, having for the second time been partially demolished by an explosion, the business was abandoned.

In the early part of his first administration Washington made a tour through the Eastern States for the benefit of his health, and for the purpose of making personal observations as to the condition of the people and country. He left the executive residence in New York on the 15th of October, 1789, in his private four-horse carriage, attended by his official and private secretaries. His entire journey was an ovation.

On his way from Boston to Salem a company of horsemen from Andover, under Capt. Osgood, consisting of fifty men or more in red uniforms striped with green, met him at Lynn, and continued as his escort till he reached Portsmouth. This marked attention was paid the President at the instance of Judge Phillips, a personal friend and enthusiastic admirer.

On the return journey the Presidential party passed

the night in Haverhill. Taking an early start the next Thursday morning, November 5th, they breakfasted in Andover at the tavern of Deacon Isaac Abbot, now the residence of the Hon. Samuel Locke. The biographer of Judge Phillips, Prof. J. L. Taylor, relates, "that while tarrying here he asked the little daughter of Deacon Abbot to mend for him his riding glove; and when she had done this, took her upon his knee and gave her a kiss, which so elated Miss Priscilla, that she would not allow her face to be washed again for a week."

After breakfast the President was conducted by Mr. Phillips to his mansion on the hill, in the southeast parlor of which he was introduced to Madam Phillips and familiarly entertained by herself, the Judge and their children for half an hour or so. The moment her distinguished visitor left the room, the courtly madam "tied a piece of ribbon upon the chair he had occupied during the interview, and there it remained ever afterwards until the day of his death, when she substituted for it a band of crape." The people gathered in large numbers on the green before the Mansion House to gaze upon the face and form of the man who had earned the title "Father of his Country." To gratify this laudable and affectionate curiosity of the people, the President, mounting his horse, rode upon the green, and there received the hearty greetings of the crowd of men, women and children, after which he departed for Lexington, attended by Judge Phillips and a cavalcade of citizens. The tavern where Washington took breakfast became thus a place of note, and still continues an object of interest to the inquisitive.

Judge Phillips' residence, built in 1782, was, at the time, the largest and finest house in town. After his death it was purchased by the trustees of Phillips Academy, and, under the name of the Mansion House, has been one of the best-known landmarks of Andover. In the early morning of November 29th, 1887, fires burst forth in two separate portions of the venerated and almost sacred building, and the morning light showed only the three tall chimneys left standing among the smoking ruins.

During the administration of President John Adams the relations of our government with the Republic of France became severely strained. The French Directory treated our plenipotentiaries with marked insolence, openly made aggressions upon our commerce, sent emissaries to stir up a factious opposition to the administration, persisted in extravagant demands for money, and, in manifold ways, by irritating acts, brought the two republics fearfully near an open rupture. In this perilous condition of affairs, the whole country being in a feverish state of anxiety, a legally called meeting of the inhabitants of the town was held on the 14th day of May, 1798, for the purpose, as the call reads, "to see if the town will take any measures for expressing their approbation of the measures taken by the President of the



United States in regard to the French Republic, and that we will support our government against the secret or open attempts of any nation whatever." There was an exceptionally large attendance at this meeting. After a free discussion regarding the state of affairs, a committee was selected to prepare an address to the President. The members of this committee were "Hon. Samuel Phillips, Moody Bridges, Thomas Kittredge, Joshua Holt and George Osgood. After a short recess the committee made the following report:

"To the President of the United States:

"Sir, We, the Freeholders and other inhabitants of the town of Andover, in the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, beg leave to join the multitude of our fellow-citizens in presenting you our warmest gratitude for that wisdom, vigilance, integrity and patriotism which have marked your administration; and in particular, for your persevering solicitude to preserve to these States the blessings of peace and neutrality, upon such terms as would consist with the preservation of our essential rights and interests.

"Although repeated attempts to accommodate subsisting differences with the French Republic have not produced the effect which might have been reasonably expected, they may prove essential means of our political salvation by annulling the designs and enormous demands of that government, which we have been unwilling to conclude our enemy. This disclosure must produce universal conviction that no hope of safety is left for us without our own united virtuous exertion.

"We therefore again thank you, sir, for your solemn and repeated calls on the proper departments to make the most speedy and effectual provision against the worst events; for your firm resolution that you will never surrender the independence or essential interests of the country; and for summoning the people to unite with you in supplicating the direction and blessing of that Almighty Being under whose patronage, if not criminal ourselves, we have nothing to fear from any power on earth. In the same resolution we hold it to be our duty, with that of every American, cordially to declare:

"Every attempt to detach us from our government, which is the work of our own hands, and from whence we have already derived blessings far surpassing the highest expectations of its warmest admirers—we regret with indignation.

"To abandon such a Government, and the invaluable privileges, civil and religious, enjoyed under it, from any considerations whatever, would be setting apart unworthy the descendants of our renowned ancestors, to drag infelicitous infamy on ourselves—an act of treachery to our posterity, and betray the basest ingratitude to and distrust of that Supreme Being who gave us these blessings.

"With an humble reliance, therefore, on this Being, whom we do, and ever will, acknowledge as the Arbiter of nations; and confiding in the wisdom, patriotism and frankness of the constituted authorities of our country, we are determined at every hazard, to support those measures which they shall prescribe for the defence of these blessings."

After the reading of this report it was "voted unanimously, that the foregoing address be accepted and forwarded by the town clerk to the Representative of this district in Congress, to be by him presented to the President of the United States."

The representative of the district at this time was the Hon. Bailey Bartlett, of Haverhill, who was afterwards, for forty years, high sheriff of Essex County.

A speedy answer was received from the President to this address, which was as follows:

"To the Freeholders and other inhabitants of the town of Andover, in the State of Massachusetts:

"GENTLEMEN,—Your address, unanimously adopted at a legal and very full meeting, has been presented to me by your Representative in Congress, Mr. Bartlett, and received with great pleasure. When you acknowledge in my administration, wisdom, vigilance, integrity, patriot-

ism and persevering solicitude to preserve to these States the blessings of peace and neutrality, upon such terms as would consist with the preservation of our essential rights and interests, you command my sincere gratitude.

"The unfriendly designs and unreasonable demands of that government, whom we have been unwilling to conclude our enemy, have been long suspected by many, upon very probable grounds; but never so clearly avowed and demonstrated as of late. May the discovery prove the essential means of our political salvation. The conviction appears now to be nearly universal, that no hope of safety is left for us without our own virtuous exertions.

"The indignation with which you repel every attempt to detach you from that government, which is the work of your own hands, and from whence you have derived blessings far surpassing the highest expectations of its warmest admirers, and, in short, all the sentiments of this excellent address, do you great honour.

"JOHN ADAMS.

"Philadelphia, May 25, 1798."

We have here a good illustration of the deep interest taken by the people at large in the affairs of the national government. It is doubtless true that Mr. Phillips, then President of the Senate of the State, and for many years an active participant in State and national affairs, exercised great influence with the inhabitants of the town. Still, he was rather the voice than the mind of the people. He gave expression to the opinions of the yeomanry, as they could not have done; but, nevertheless, the opinions were theirs, crudely conceived, it may be, and roughly wrought out in their own minds and experiences.

We see here also with what freedom the people of a small country town addressed the chief magistrate of the land, expressing their opinions with frankness and fearlessly, as to an equal, but respectfully, as addressing the most exalted personage in the country. We see at once, too, in his reply, how highly gratified the President was by this timely address from the inhabitants of the little country town. Remembering that he was the executive of "a government of the people, by the people and for the people," the approval of the people was a solace to his heart and a stimulant to his righteous purpose, when sorely beset with difficulties. The favorable opinion of the obscure and weak not seldom may so confirm the judgment of the exalted and wise as to give them the courage to act according to their convictions. What the address of the inhabitants did to aid John Adams in holding the nation steadfast to her moorings amidst the surges of the French Revolution, no one can tell. It certainly gave him encouragement and comfort.

## CHAPTER CXXXIV.

ANDOVER—(Continued).

### THE WAR OF THE REBELLION.

On the 18th of April, 1861, six days after the first rebel shot was fired against the United States fort,





Sumter, situated in Charleston harbor, and three days after President Lincoln had sent out his warlike proclamation, summoning to arms seventy-five thousand peaceful citizens for the defense of the national authority, Andover began her active efforts to suppress the Rebellion and maintain the sovereignty of the national government. On the evening of that day there was a small, hastily-gathered assembly of the citizens of Frye village and neighborhood in their village hall for consultation with regard to the raising and drilling of troops to answer the call of the President. After some discussion and patriotic speeches it was thought best to defer action as a neighborhood, and await the action of the citizens' meeting, already notified for the coming Saturday evening at the Town Hall.

At this meeting there was a very full attendance of the inhabitants of the town from all sections, comprising persons of both sexes and all ages and classes. It was organized by the choice of Francis Cogswell, Esq., as president, with thirteen of the most prominent citizens of the town as vice-presidents. Prayer was offered by Prof. Stowe, of the Theological Seminary. The following persons were designated to prepare resolutions for the consideration of the meeting: Judge Marcus Morton, Jr., Prof. Calvin E. Stowe, Oliver H. Perry, Wm. G. Means and Samuel Raymond, who reported resolutions as follows:

*Resolved*, That the armed hostility to the United States government, now assumed by a portion of the Southern people, is entirely without justification in anything which the National Administration has done or proposes to do. That the claim of a right to secede at will is utterly subversive of all government, and leaves the nation a prey to anarchy, like that of the South American peoples, at the close of every election. That the robbing of the nation by the Secessionists of its money, fortifications, arms, munitions, ships, dock-houses and other property, levying war against the government by the raising of troops, and gathering multitudes of every kind, flying upon the national flag, and attempting to murder the national soldiers while in the unaggressive discharge of their duties, and the crying out against *corruption* on the part of the General Government, whenever it makes the least attempt at preparation to defend itself and its property against these open, long-continued and insistent assaults, is at once malignant and mean, beyond all parallel in civilized history, and deserves the utter contempt and denunciation of mankind.

*Resolved*, That the present position and action of the Secessionists is not in consequence of any grievance actually inflicted, or even anticipated, from the General Government, but the meditated result of a plan, cherished for more than thirty years past, by certain restless and ambitious men at the South, to establish a great slave empire in the fertile regions around the Gulf of Mexico,—a plan with which the better part of the Southerners themselves have no sympathy. That they are kept quiet by intimidation and violence only, and that the leaders of this rebellious movement are so well aware of the fact that they dare not, and never will, submit their own action to a fair vote of the people.

*Resolved*, That the exigencies of the present crisis imperatively demand of all patriots and true friends of liberty and order throughout the land that, suspending for the time the discussion of minor party differences, they unite heart and soul to sustain the government against its lawless assailants; and that the zeal and energy with which all parties among us are now actually pursuing this course gives the best evidence of the sincerity of their patriotism, and affords the most encouraging indications of the final success of their efforts, and of the perpetuity of the free institutions which have been so wisely established in this western world, at the expense of so much labor and self-denial, so much treasure and blood.

*Resolved*, That, as the present violent proceedings of the Secessionists can be successfully resisted in no other way than by an overpow-

ing military force at the disposal of the National Government, we hereby pledge ourselves to do all in our power to raise, sustain and encourage such a force; and that, either by bearing arms ourselves, or by contributing according to our ability to support the men who do bear arms, and their families, we will take our full share in this great struggle, and fight as our fathers fought when compelled by a like necessity.

*Resolved*, That the young men of Andover who are about organizing themselves into a military company to be at the disposal of the government, have now, and shall continue to have, our warmest sympathy and most cordial support."

These resolutions were received by the audience with unbounded applause, and, after short speeches in the same strain by able speakers, were unanimously and enthusiastically adopted.

This meeting further raised a committee of twenty-five, to whom was assigned the duty of "devising and carrying into effect such measures as they deem expedient for the support and defence of our national government during the present rebellion." At a subsequent meeting the following persons were designated as members of this committee:

Francis Cogswell, Peter Smith, John Dove, William Chickering, Amos Abbott, Joseph Holt, William P. Foster, Nathan Frye, Jedediah Burt, Stephen D. Abbott, Willard Pike, Isaac O. Blunt, James Shaw, George Foster, William Jenkins, Calvin E. Stowe, Moses Foster, Jr., Benjamin F. Wardwell, John Aiken, Benjamin Boynton, William Abbott, Nathan Shattuck, John Abbott, James Bailey and Warren F. Draper.

At a subsequent meeting, May 6th, it was voted to furnish each volunteer with a uniform, not exceeding in value fourteen dollars, and seventeen dollars in money, and to every one, on being mustered into service, a rubber blanket and such other articles as shall be deemed necessary, to the amount of six dollars; to remit the poll-tax of every one who shall perform regular drill; to pay each enrolled volunteer fifty cents for each day's drill, not exceeding sixty days in all; to pay the family of each married volunteer, except the commissioned officers, the sum of eight dollars per month during the continuance of such volunteer in the service of the government, or until otherwise ordered by the town. For these purposes eight thousand dollars were voted and appropriated.

The months of May and June were crowded with work and military activity. The patriotism and ardor of the people found expression in frequent public meetings, fervid addresses, vigorous resolutions, enlistments, sewing circles, flag-raising, military music and patriotic songs, liberal donations (the firm of Smith, Dove & Co. giving \$3000), and in amateur military companies, as the "Havelock Greys," composed of theological students, and "Ellsworth Guards," composed of Phillips Academy students. Mrs. Harriet Beecher Stowe, the authoress of "Uncle Tom's Cabin," furnished an original song to stimulate and give vent to the enthusiasm of the young men.

On the 24th day of June, 1861, after two months' daily drill, the Andover Light Infantry, the first com-



pany from the town to enlist in the service of the country, left for Fort Warren. After receiving the bounty voted by the town, partaking of a collation prepared for them at the Town Hall, and listening to an address by Francis Cogswell, Esq., they marched to the depot under the escort of the "Havelock Greys" and "Ellsworth Guards," attended by a crowd of friends and citizens. With many hearty cheers they left for their destination. On the 5th of July the company was mustered into the United States service, and designated as "Company H., 14th Regiment Massachusetts Volunteer Infantry." On the same day the regiment left Fort Warren for Washington.

The list of officers and men composing this Andover company on departing for the national capital was as follows:

Capt., Homer Holt.	2d Corp., George A. W. Vinal.
1st Lieut., Charles H. Poor.	3d Corp., Peter D. Smith.
2d Lieut., Moses W. Clement.	4th Corp., John Clark.
1st Sergt., Samuel C. Hervey.	5th Corp., Alonzo P. Berry.
2d Sergt., George T. Brown.	6th Corp., Hor. W. Wardwell.
3d Sergt., Orin L. Farham.	7th Corp., George F. Hatch.
4th Sergt., Newton Holt.	8th Corp., Phineas Buckley, Jr.
5th Sergt., Frank B. Chapin.	Musician, Newton G. Trice.
1st Corp., George S. Farnum.	Musician, George M. Smart.

#### Privates.

Anderson, James I.	Hatch, Lewis G.
Asworth, James.	Hart, William.
Bailey, Thomas R.	Holt, Lewis G.
Bogle, William.	Holt, Warren E.
Bull, Joseph.	Howarth, Oberlin B.
Casey, Daniel.	Hunt, Amos.
Beversell, Willard G.	Jenkins, E. Kendall.
Battemon, Albert L.	Jennings, William E.
Brown, LaRoy S.	Kennedy, John.
Byant, Josephus K.	Lavalett, Philip C.
Burris, Stephen.	Logan, John.
Chandler, George W.	Lovejoy, Benjamin C.
Cheever, Benjamin.	Looney, Henry T.
Cookin, John.	Madoney, Michael.
Cosden, James.	McLennen, Charles W.
Craig, John D.	McCarthy, Bernard.
Craig, George.	Mears, Charles.
Cummings, Charles S.	Mears, Warren Jr.
Cutter, Charles.	McIner, Sylvester C.
Curtis, A. Fuller.	Moss, William B.
Casson, John.	Nichols, William W.
Carter, Maryville K.	O'Hara, Edward.
Cutler, Abeline B.	Pasha, William A.
Dane, George.	Price, George L.
Dolan, Charles.	Rea, Aaron G., Jr.
Edwards, Francis W.	Richardson, Silas, Jr.
Farmer, Edward.	Russell, John B. A.
Farrington, Samuel P.	Russell, Joseph, Jr.
Fineley, James S.	Russell, William.
Fineley, John A.	Russell, Winslow.
Foster, T. Edwin.	Sargent, John S.
Gilcrease, David D.	Saunders, Ziba M.
Gilstrap, William.	Shannon, William.
Goldsmith, Albert.	Shattuck, Charles W.
Grant, Farnham P.	Sherman, Henry T.
Gray, Jesse E.	Smith, James.
Greene, Charles.	Stevens, Benjamin F.
Greene, William H.	Townsend, Milton B.
Harty, Franklin.	Townsend, Warren W.
Harby, John.	Wardwell, Alfred.
Hatch, Andrew J.	Wardwell, William H.
Hatch, Enosh M.	Wood, Elliot.

This was the only full company, officers and privates,

sent out from Andover during the war. Its history will be referred to later on.

On the 1st day of July, 1862, the President issued another order, calling for three hundred thousand volunteers to serve for three years, or until the end of the war. In accordance with this order, Governor Andrew issued a mandate for the enlisting of the State's quota. Fifty-two men were required of Andover. On being notified of this apportionment, a town-meeting was immediately called to be held on the 28th of July. At this meeting it was voted to pay a bounty of one hundred dollars for each volunteer who should enlist on the quota of the town. Messrs. Smith and Dove pledged ten dollars in addition. The community was still aglow with patriotic feeling, and volunteers came forward rapidly, so that on the 7th of August the quota was full. On the 14th of August, three days before the completion of this enlistment, another urgent order came from the President for a draft of three hundred thousand militia for nine months. To this order also the town promptly responded, expressing a desire to fill up its quota of the proposed draft by "furnishing volunteers rather than conscripts." A bounty of one hundred dollars was offered for a volunteer who should be duly accepted under this call, and sworn into the service of the United States. Ten dollars additional was offered for expenses if the volunteer should be from out of town. It was estimated that the quota of Andover under this third call would be twenty-three men. This number was soon obtained. But through some inadvertence of the past, and negligence or misconception of the officers of the town in making returns to the Adjutant-General's office of the number of men liable to military duty, it was found that the town was still liable to a draft for forty-two men. Negotiations and explanations were entered into with the State officials, and, after much delay, a new list of the soldiers in the field who should be credited to Andover was made out, and also a new list of persons liable to do military duty. Upon an estimate formed upon the basis of these new lists, it was finally settled that Andover should furnish an additional complement of thirty-six men. These men were to be furnished from the recruiting stations in Boston. It was further agreed, as a partial correction of the original faulty list furnished by the selectmen of persons liable to military duty, that these thirty-six recruits, on being mustered in for three years, should be accepted for the full quota of forty-two men at first required of the town.

As a matter of fact, as the future revealed, none of these thirty-six Boston recruits ever served in the army. They belonged to that large regiment called "bounty-jumpers." The draft which took place in July, 1863, proved a failure. One person only out of the seventy-seven named for the draft was retained for service. Seven men drawn paid commutation money. The bounty-jumpers referred to above received each from the town one hundred and ten dollars. By





whose fault these men, and many others of a like character, escaped service, it may not be easy to determine, but some one certainly failed in his duty.

On the 17th of October, 1863, there was another call from the President for three hundred thousand volunteers; this time for three years or the war. The quota of Andover under this call was thirty-eight men. The town voted to pay for enlistments under this call fifteen dollars for fresh recruits, and twenty-five dollars for veterans, it being understood that this amount would be paid by the United States government. The quota of Andover was readily filled, mostly from veterans in the field, whose terms of enlistment had expired. It was afterwards ascertained that, up to this time, the town had "filled all demands upon it by furnishing three hundred and twenty-five men for the army alone," besides those serving in the navy.

In the call of the President issued February 11, 1864, the quota assigned to Andover was twenty-six men. A much larger number than this had already re-enlisted, since the preceding call, from the veterans in the field belonging to Andover.

Fifty-two veteran soldiers from Andover, belonging to the First Regiment of Heavy Artillery, re-enlisted from December 4, 1863, to February 29, 1864. The selectmen were authorized to pay all recruits credited to the town, under the various calls of the President, such a sum as might be necessary, not exceeding one hundred and twenty-five dollars. This amount was promised these re-enlisting veterans.

July 6, 1864, the Governor issued a call for five thousand infantry volunteers for one hundred days' service, to do garrison duty in the fortifications near Washington. Andover furnished eighteen men for this service.

Congress having authorized recruiting in certain States in rebellion, the town and certain citizens of the town availed themselves of the opportunity and enlisted eleven "representative recruits" from former slaves.

**COMPANY H OF THE FIRST REGIMENT OF HEAVY ARTILLERY.**—Andover's first company of light infantry formed, as we have seen, Company H of the Fourteenth Regiment of Massachusetts Volunteer Infantry. The regiment left Fort Warren for Washington August 7, 1861. After a few months' garrison duty in the neighborhood of the capital, it was changed, January 1, 1862, to the First Regiment of Heavy Artillery, requiring an increase in its number.

In September, 1862, Companies H and I, and in October Company C, were ordered to Maryland Heights, opposite Harper's Ferry. There they remained until November 30, 1863, when they rejoined the regiment. Their duties, though not dangerous, and seldom exciting, were frequently tedious and severe. In general, the regiment was expected to protect the approaches to Washington and Maryland

from rebel incursion. They perambulated the northern border of Virginia, marching back and forth in the vicinity of the capital, acting thus as a barrier of defense. The detached companies were engaged in erecting barracks, building and destroying fortifications on the heights, as military necessity required. In this useful but uneventful service the regiment passed nearly two years and four months (reckoning from the time it was changed from infantry to heavy artillery), when a welcome interruption came to the monotony. It was ordered to join the Army of the Potomac.

The men were called veterans, having been nearly three years in the service, but had never seen a battle, and had never tested their courage in a serious skirmish with the enemy. The worth of their experience in drilling, manoeuvring, marching and camp-life was to be put to a severe trial. They soon became aware that, under the lead of General Grant, in a march on to Richmond, in the face of the ablest army of the Confederacy, under her ablest general, fighting for existence, there would be untold hardships to be borne and deadly fighting to be done. Yet, the change from the dull life of the fortification to the perilous life of an army in almost daily conflict had its charm for trained soldiers. They could not realize, though they might have feared, as they entered the "Wilderness," that their own blood, or that of their comrades, would moisten the road that led to Richmond. Their duty was to obey orders and go forward. They started May 15, 1864. Although a portion of the Army of the Potomac had been engaged in severe fighting in the neighborhood of Spottsylvania for nearly a fortnight before their arrival, it was not until the afternoon and evening of the 19th of May that they had their first experience in a battle, which proved to them a deadly conflict.

The news of this engagement reached Andover on the 21st day of the month, and caused great anxiety. There was a gathering of the people in the evening, but only meagre information could be obtained as to the casualties in the Andover company. There was a rumor, without any certain foundation, that two or three Andover soldiers had been slain or wounded. Three days after, when reliable information had been received, and it was known that Company H had suffered severely in killed and wounded, there was a large gathering of the citizens at the town hall, to express their deep interest in the news, their profound sympathy with the bereaved at home and the suffering in camp. Addresses were made by prominent clergymen and others fitting the occasion. A committee, consisting of Rev. Charles Smith, Josiah L. Chapin and George Foster, was appointed to report resolutions for the meeting, and prepare a letter to be sent to the soldiers.

The following resolutions were reported and adopted:



"WHEREAS, The citizens of Andover have read of the battle of Thursday night, in which Company H of the First Massachusetts Heavy Artillery was conspicuously engaged, and in which they suffered severely in killed and wounded;

"Resolved, That we express to the soldiers of Company H our admiration of their bravery, and tender them our heartfelt congratulation.

"Resolved, That we deeply sympathize with the wounded, and hereby convey to them the expression of our wishes and prayers for their speedy recovery.

"Resolved, That we pledge ourselves to assist, to the extent of our ability, our soldiers who are perilling their persons and lives for the purpose of suppressing this wicked rebellion.

"Resolved, That we deeply sympathize with those who are called to mourn the death of dear friends who have fallen in battle."

At an adjourned meeting it was voted to send a commission to the army to minister to the wounded soldiers from Andover. Rev. J. W. Turner and Mr. Joseph Abbott were appointed for this purpose. The next day, at noon, these commissioners departed for their duty, taking with them five hundred and forty-three dollars, which had been contributed for the purpose, the resolutions passed at the meeting on the 24th inst. and the following letter which had been adopted by the citizens:

"ANDOVER, May 26, 1864.

"To the officers and privates of Company H and other soldiers connected with the First Regiment Massachusetts Heavy Artillery.

"DEAR FRIENDS,—Last Saturday morning the exciting intelligence reached us that you had taken an engagement with the enemy, even before reaching the main army. And while your bravery and heroism in the deadly conflict were home-tires on every breeze, our admiration of your noble and perilous deeds was mingled with serious apprehensions that casualties had ensued which would bring sadness and mourning to many of our families.

"The selectmen immediately issued a notice for a meeting of the people, to be held on the same evening. A large number assembled at the appointed time, all anxious to do whatever could be done to exhibit their sympathy for those in painful suspense, and their friends who might be in great suffering. As the information was then meagre, the meeting was adjourned to Tuesday evening.

"The adjourned meeting was a very large one, and the interest manifested was most earnest and sympathetic. Facts gathered from your letters were read aloud and listened to with intense eagerness. Appropriate addresses were made by several gentlemen, conveying expressions of condolence and tenderness to the afflicted and sorrowful.

"The undersigned were appointed a committee to address to you a letter, and to prepare and report to the meeting resolutions for adoption. The subjoined resolutions were reported by the committee, and adopted by a unanimous vote.

"While our attention is at this time more particularly directed to your company and regiment on account of the many killed and wounded of your number, we would at the same time make appreciative reference to our other brave friends, scattered throughout the great loyal army, and, like yourself, periling all that is dear of earth for the salvation of our beloved country.

"CHARLES SMITH,

"JOSEPH L. CHAPIN,

"GEORGE FOSTER,

"Committee."

The commissioners found, in the various hospitals in the vicinity of Washington, thirty wounded soldiers from Andover, and ministered to their wants as directed. It was afterward ascertained that the entire list of casualties in the company at the first battle at Spottsylvania and the succeeding fights till the 20th of June amounted to eight killed and sixty-two wounded, four of the latter dying from their wounds.

Company H was at first composed of one hundred men, officers and privates, besides two musicians—all Andover men. When the regiment was changed from infantry to heavy artillery, and the company enlarged by the addition of fifty men to correspond with the requirements of that branch of the service, Andover furnished the additional number. The larger portion of these soldiers, who were not either killed or seriously wounded, or prostrated by sickness, continued in the company till their terms of enlistment expired, and a moiety of them to the end of the war, fighting their way to Richmond, and partaking in the honor of witnessing the final struggle and collapse of the Rebellion.

Company H was present with the regiment, and performed its full share in the engagements from Spottsylvania to the surrender of Lee, viz.: North Anna River, May 24, 1864; Tolopotomy Creek, May 31, 1864; Cold Harbor, June 3, 1864; Petersburg, June 16, 18 and 22, 1864; Strawberry Plain, July 26 and 27, 1864; Petersburg Mine, July 30, 1864; Deep Bottom, August 15 and 16, 1864; Weldon Railroad, August 25, 1864; Poplar Grove Church, October 5, 1864; Boydton Plank-Road, October 27, 1864; Raid on Weldon Railroad to Bellfield, December 6 to 11, 1864; Hatcher's Run, February 5, 1865; Hatcher's Run, March 25, 1865; Attack on fort, March 31, 1865; Assault of the line, April 2, 1865; Sailor's Creek, April 6, 1865; Lee's surrender, April 9, 1865.

Some of those who were wounded at Spottsylvania, and others whose term of service had expired, were in due time sent on to Boston and mustered out of service. These men arrived in town on the 21st day of July 1864, after an absence of three years and a month nearly. They were received at the station by leading citizens of the town, and heartily welcomed by their fellow-townsmen, neighbors, friends and the dear ones at home.

According to the record, "the members of Phillips Academy, with their band of music, and attended by their teachers, led the escort from the depot to the Town Hall. Next followed the selectmen, ministers of the town and the committee of reception. The soldiers brought home their drummer, George B. Clark, who beat the accustomed march, and the citizens fell in in a long line."

"At the Town Hall a bountiful collation had been prepared by the ladies, to which the tired and hungry soldiers were most heartily welcomed amidst the greetings and sympathies of their friends." After the collation the soldiers were addressed with words of welcome and commendation by Francis Cogswell, Esq., chairman of the committee on reception.

Company H, as a company, continued in existence till the close of the war, and those Andover soldiers who continued in the field to the end were mustered out of the United States' service on the 25th of August, 1865, having been in constant service four years, one month and twenty-one days. The company went





into the war with one hundred and fifty stalwart men, all from Andover. When mustered out there were but forty-five men to answer the roll-call. Of the one hundred and five absentees, some had been killed, some taken prisoners, some wounded and discharged, some discharged on account of sickness and others on the expiration of their time of enlistment. This small remainder of Company H, returning singly or in small squads, did not, of course, receive the same popular welcome that awaited their comrades of an earlier return.

But they all, the last as well as the first, almost without exception, easily refilled their old places, taking up again, with cheerfulness and vigor, their accustomed duties and vocations before the war.

Nothing of that idleness, prodigality and dissipation that were so bitterly lamented in the case of the discharged soldiers at the close of the Revolutionary War, was ever seen among the returned soldiers of this town who fought the Rebellion to its death. As a rule, they settled back into the ordinary pursuits of peace, as if they had done nothing to gain special notoriety. Those who still survive, and reside in town, are among our most respected inhabitants, and many of them among our most prosperous citizens.

The whole number of men furnished by the town for the service of the country during the War of the Rebellion, in both army and navy, including enlistments, re-enlistments, representative recruits, assignments and substitutes, amounted to five hundred and ninety-nine, or one hundred and sixty-three more than the town's proportion, as determined by the number of inhabitants subject to draft, or military service. These five hundred and ninety-nine soldiers and seamen were distributed among forty-six regiments, serving in different sections of the country, and in an unknown number of war vessels.

The town expended for army purposes, including bounties, during the war, \$35,623.85.

There was also paid by citizens, in addition, \$27,226.64, including money paid for bounties, substitutes, and gifts contributed by the ladies' charitable organizations.

No sketch of the War of the Rebellion is complete without an appreciative mention of the unflagging labors of the ladies, old and young, in preparing garments, blankets and other comforts for the soldiers in the field, and cordials and delicacies for those in the hospitals.

**MEMORIAL HALL.**—After the close of the war the matter of erecting some memorial, to keep in perpetual remembrance the names of those who gave their lives for the salvation of the nation, was freely talked over by the citizens. The question was, whether this memorial should be a monument or a library. At one time a monument was decided upon, and incipient measures taken towards procuring one, but without success. The town voted four thousand five hundred dollars for this purpose; still it failed to enlist the

warm co-operation of some of the most influential people. The matter was held in abeyance, though not lost sight of, for a number of years.

In July of 1870 a letter was received from Mr. John Smith, then in Dresden, written to his son Joseph, addressed in part to the town, in which he expressed a desire "to commemorate and keep in remembrance the names of those who gave their lives in defending our National Flag, and saving my adopted country to God and liberty." Mr. Smith was born in Scotland. He further declares his willingness to give twenty-five thousand dollars for a library and reading-room, to be dedicated to this memorial purpose, on condition that a like sum be given by others, and that only thirty thousand dollars of the fifty be expended for land and building. A town-meeting was called for August 1st, to take into consideration the propositions of this letter. At this meeting it was announced that Mr. Peter Smith and Mr. John Dove, the business partners of Mr. John Smith, would each of them give five thousand dollars to assist in making up the twenty-five necessary to secure Mr. John Smith's offer, but on the additional condition that the proposed building should be erected on the lot at the corner of Essex and Main Streets, recently made vacant by fire,—the lot upon which Memorial Hall now stands. To this amount, Mr. Joseph W. Smith, Mr. Peter Smith and Mr. Dove each added one thousand dollars, making the whole sum in pledge thirty-eight thousand dollars.

The proposition of Mr. Smith was received with many tokens and expressions of satisfaction by the meeting, and the thanks of the town were voted him. For the purpose of complying with the conditions of the proposed donations, a committee was raised to solicit subscriptions, it being understood that Mr. Smith expected the requisite amount to be raised by individual contribution, and not by town taxation. At a subsequent meeting the committee thus appointed, reported that, after a thorough canvass of the town, they had secured subscriptions for eight thousand five hundred dollars, in sums varying from three hundred and fifty dollars to ten cents; and as there appeared to be little likelihood of obtaining the deficiency of three thousand five hundred dollars by subscription, the committee recommended that the four thousand five hundred dollars raised by the town to erect a monument, and still in the hands of the treasurer unapplied, be appropriated to a memorial building, and thus complete the sum necessary to secure the promised donations. This latter proposition, being acceptable to the donors present, as no further taxation was called for, the town accepted the proposition of the committee.

A building committee was chosen, consisting of William G. Means, Charles Smith, John L. Taylor, David Middleton and Samuel Raymond.

In carrying out the plan of erecting the building on the designated spot, it was found that additional



land would be required, and further, that an unlooked-for outlay of money would be absolutely necessary to render the foundations firm and safe. To meet this additional expense, and to provide for all other contingencies, Mr. John Smith added five thousand dollars to his original gift, and other liberal-minded gentlemen gave sixteen hundred and fifty dollars towards the increased cost.

The corner-stone of the building was laid with appropriate services on the 19th day of September, 1871.

The finished building was dedicated, formally opened and delivered into the hands of the town on Memorial Day, May 30, 1873.

The dedicatory prayer was offered by Prof. Edwards A. Park, of the Theological Seminary, in front of the Memorial Hall, and the address was delivered in the South Church by Rev. Phillips Brooks, rector of Trinity Church, Boston, a lineal descendant of Samuel Phillips, the first pastor of the South Church.

The building contains ample alcoves for library uses, a reading-room, committee-rooms and a spacious hall to be used as a receptacle for mementos of the war, portraits of donors, distinguished officers and others, pictures of battle scenes and curiosities in general. Its chief object of interest is a marble tablet let into the west wall, containing the names of the patriotic dead, who gave their lives for the salvation of the nation.

The building occupies a conspicuous place in the centre of the village, and, architecturally, is an ornament to the town. With its well-selected library and inviting reading-room, with its silent tablet ever, through the eye, appealing to the heart of the beholder, it is a perpetual incentive to patriotism, to a generous culture of the mind, and, through him who first conceived and most liberally contributed to its erection, to liberal giving for the public good.

The library at the present time contains nearly a thousand books, and the reading-room is well supplied with newspapers and the magazines of the day, and is well patronized.

Before the erection of the building Mr. John Byers a merchant of New York, a former resident of the town, gave three thousand dollars for the benefit of the library as a memorial of his brother, Peter Smith Byers, first principal-elect of the Punchard Free School, who died before entering upon his duties. Since the opening of the library Mr. Byers has added five thousand dollars to his first donation, the money to be kept as a perpetual fund, the income of which is to be used for the increase of the library.

Mr. John Smith, in addition to his other benefactions, gave three thousand dollars for the benefit of the library. The following is a copy of the tablet in the Memorial Hall:

TO THE MEMORY OF OUR PATRIOTIC DEAD.

JAMES H. BAILEY,

Died of disease at Washington, D. C., Sept. 14, 1861.

ENOCH O. FRYE,  
Accidentally killed at Fort Albany, Va., Oct. 29, 1861.  
CHARLES H. CALAHAN,  
Died of disease at Chelsea, Mass., May 29, 1862.  
AMOS WHITFARER,  
Killed at Gaines' Mills, Va., June 27, 1862.  
GEORGE M. SMITH,  
Died of disease at Fort Albany, Va., July 25, 1862.  
WILLIAM GREENEY,  
Died of disease at Carrollton, La., Aug. 22, 1862.  
BERNARD KAVANAUGH,  
Died of disease at Philadelphia, Pa., Aug. 24, 1862.  
EDWARD C. MERRILL,  
Died of disease at Carrollton, La., Aug. 27, 1862.  
WILLIAM H. LUKE,  
Died of wounds at Manassas, Va., Sept. 13, 1862.  
JEFFERSON N. RAYMOND,  
Died of disease at New Orleans, La., Sept. 13, 1862.  
JAMES RUSSELL,  
Died of disease at Fort Albany, Va., Oct. 19, 1862.  
JAMES JAQUITH,  
Died of disease at New Orleans, La., Dec. 1, 1862.  
HENRY G. KIMBALL,  
Died of disease at Newbern, N. C., Jan. 1, 1863.  
JAMES W. MERRILL,  
Died of disease at Newbern, N. C., Jan. 20, 1863.  
JOSEPH CHANDLER, JR.,  
Died of disease at New Orleans, La., March 10, 1863.  
NEWTON G. FRYE,  
Died of disease at Andover, Mass., March 28, 1863.  
JOSEPH MASON,  
Died of disease at Andover, Mass., April 7, 1863.  
JAMES LOVELL,  
Died of disease at Baton Rouge, La., May 11, 1863.  
NEWTON LEVING,  
Died of disease at Vicksburg, Miss., July 9, 1863.  
WILLIAM H. WARDWILL,  
Accidentally killed at Maryland Heights, Md., Aug. 1, 1863.  
CHARLES A. CLEMENT,  
Died of wounds at Gettysburg, Pa., Sept. 30, 1863.  
WILLARD G. BODWELL,  
Died of disease at Fort Strong, Va., March 24, 1864.  
THOMAS F. PORTER,  
Died of wounds at Hampton, Va., April 15, 1864.  
JAMES WARD,  
Killed at the Wilderness, Va., May 5, 1864.  
SAMUEL Aiken,  
Killed at Spottsylvania, Va., May 19, 1864.  
ISAAC A. BERRY,  
Died of wounds at City Point, Va., April 22, 1865.  
GRANVILLE K. CUTLER,  
Killed at Spottsylvania, Va., May 19, 1864.  
JAMES H. EVANS,  
Killed at Spottsylvania, Va., May 19, 1864.  
EDWARD FARMER,  
Killed at Spottsylvania, Va., May 19, 1864.  
JONATHAN A. HOLT,  
Killed at Spottsylvania, Va., May 19, 1864.  
JAMES H. RICHWILL,  
Killed at Spottsylvania, Va., May 19, 1864.  
ENOCH M. HATCH,  
Killed near Petersburg, Va., June 16, 1864.  
BERNARD MCGURK,  
Killed at Cold Harbor, Va., June 3, 1864.  
ORRIN L. FARNHAM,  
Died of wounds at Bryant's Farm, Va., June 17, 1864.  
EPAPHROS K. BRYANT,  
Died of wounds at Washington, D. C., July 3, 1864.  
WILLIAM RUSSELL,  
Died of wounds at Washington, D. C., July 11, 1864.  
THOMAS A. BAGLEY,  
Died a prisoner at Andersonville, Ga., Aug. 28, 1864.  
JAMES B. BLACK,  
Died of disease at Fortress Monroe, Va., Aug. 30, 1864.  
GEORGE W. GRANT,  
Died of disease in Second Corps Hospital, Va., Sept. 7, 1864.





GEORGE A. BAILEY,  
Killed at Winchester, Va., Sept. 19, 1864.  
FRANKLIN HARDY,  
Killed at Poplar Grove Church, Va., Oct. 2, 1864.  
EDWARD O. HARRA,  
Killed at Hatcher's Run, Va., Oct. 27, 1864.  
CHARLES P. BARNARD,  
Died of disease at Annapolis, Md., Dec. 2, 1864.  
JAMES MCCUSKER,  
Died a prisoner at Salisbury, N. C., Dec. 2, 1864.  
THOMAS WARDMAN,  
Died a prisoner at Danville, Va., Dec. 20, 1864.  
JOHN MCCLEUGH,  
Died of disease at Andover, Mass., Dec. 21, 1864.  
WALTER L. RAYMOND,  
Died a prisoner at Salisbury, N. C., Dec. 25, 1864.  
GEORGE E. HAYWARD,  
Died of wounds at Andover, Mass., July 24, 1865.  
LEONARD W. RYDER,  
Died of disease at Andover, Mass., Aug. 30, 1865.  
LEWIS G. HATCH,  
Died of disease at Andover, Mass., January 4, 1866.  
SAMUEL P. FARNHAM,  
Died of disease at Andover, Mass., Jan. 12, 1866.  
ANDREW K. PATTERICK,  
Died of wounds at Fredericksburg, Va.

The Andover veterans have an encampment of the G. A. R., called "General William F. Bartlett Post, No. 99," named from the gallant young Massachusetts officer, who came out of the war with a splendid record for heroism and a shattered body. He died in December, 1876, of physical exhaustion, while in the meridian of his years. The purpose of this organization is to care for its sick or destitute members, by extending sympathy or material aid, as circumstances demand. Its present fund is not far from four hundred and fifty dollars. It appears in public every year, "on Decoration Day," but with ever-decreasing numbers.

Among the Andover-born men residing in other States or places at the time the Rebellion broke out, who enlisted and distinguished themselves in the war, we find the names of Lieutenant-Colonel Sumner Carruth, Lieutenant Frank W. Carruth, Lieutenant Samuel F. Tucker, Captain John C. Crowninshield.

## CHAPTER CXXXV.

### ANDOVER—(Continued).

#### TOPOGRAPHY OF ANDOVER.

WHEN incorporated, Andover was among the largest towns in the colony in territorial extent. Since a portion of its original territory has been taken to form Middleton, a large section on its northern border to create the city of Lawrence, and the North Parish has been incorporated as a separate town, its limits have been essentially reduced. But still it is a town of fair dimensions, as compared with the average town of the State. It has a population of nearly six thousand, with a tax-list of five million three

hundred and seventy-five thousand dollars. It has the Merrimac River and the city of Lawrence on the north, North Andover on the east, North Reading, Wilmington and Tewksbury on the south, and Tewksbury on the west. Its superficial area covers not far from ten thousand acres. It is well diversified with hill and valley, meadow and plain, wood and tillage land. It has a variety of soil from the light sandy to the heavy loam, from the thin covering of the plains to the deep muck of the marshy meadows.

For agricultural purposes the township does not compare favorably with many other towns in the State, especially with those bordering upon the banks of the Connecticut River. Market gardening and the production of milk afford the average farmer his principal sources of income. By these products, the owner of a farm of reasonable dimensions can, with industry, thrift and economy, support himself and family in comfort, meet the pecuniary obligations of a citizen, educate his children, and yearly lay aside a small sum for his profit, extraordinary excepted, for old age, or to give his children a start in life.

That in the topography of the town which is its most significant feature, which has had more to do with its material prosperity than all other things combined, is the Shawshin River. This river takes its rise in the towns of Lexington and Bedford, and, running in a northeasterly direction, in a zigzag course, passes through nearly the centre of Andover, and enters the Merrimac River within the territory of North Andover. In this small stream, within the limits of the town, there are four falls, giving opportunity, by the erection of dams, to use the water as power and for other purposes in the business of manufacturing. These have been utilized, and around them four manufacturing villages have grown up,—Ballard Vale, Abbot, Marland and Frye, named respectively from the men who first owned or made extensive use of the water-power. These villages contain between two and three thousand inhabitants. Before the erection of dams, the river must have been a most attractive feature of the landscape, meandering among the hills and through the meadows, sometimes rushing over the rapids, and again slowly creeping through the lowlands.

But the river was destined to be a thing for the creation of wealth and beneficence rather than a thing of taste and beauty. It was the power furnished by this modest stream that supplied the Continental army with powder in its direst need. It ran the paper-mill of Judge Phillips after the close of the war, and was the indirect cause of bringing Mr. Phillips to the South Parish, increasing his property, and thus establishing Phillips Academy and the Theological Seminary in this parish. It was the Shawshin River which induced Mr. Abraham Marland and Mr. John Smith to come to this town and here build up their manufacturing establishments. The



existence of the four villages and their great industries is directly traceable to the coming of these enterprising men.

We may go further and say that not only are we indebted to the river for these villages and their profitable industries, but, no less, for a home-market for the products of the farm, employment for a large number of persons, profitable business for not a few mechanics and tradespeople, a large amount of taxable property to aid in meeting the current expenses of the town, and, above all, for the money which has been so munificently given by the manufacturers for the support of churches and the building up of educational institutions. It is well to notice in this connection, as a special advantage enjoyed by Andover, that most of the successful manufacturers on this stream have resided in the town. Their homes and their business have not been divorced. They have built beautiful residences, and otherwise have spent their money in the place of their gains. This gives them a stake in the welfare of the town, and makes them the more careful as to the class of help they employ. As a matter of fact, the employes of the Smith and Dove Company are among our most reputable citizens, many of them being Scotch people from Brechin and its neighborhood.

There are at least four elevations, called hills, in the town, worthy of notice. Half a mile northeast of the centre is Carmel Hill, upon which Mr. Bradley has recently built a handsome residence, and from which a very delightful view is had of the valley of the Shawshin River, Abbot and Frye villages, and the hills that stretch up beyond them in the distant horizon. Pine Hill rises a short distance north of east of the seminary, upon which Landlord Carter has erected a modern cottage, and from which can be had a very charming prospect of the centre of the town, extending also far over the western hills. The Seminary Hill, upon which stand the buildings used for both Phillips Academy and the Theological Seminary, and also the residences of the professors and teachers in these institutions,—of less height than some other hills,—furnishes also a fine view in a westerly and northwesterly direction.

But the hill of chief interest and reputation is Prospect Hill, situated about a mile southeast of the seminary. It is four hundred and twenty-three feet above the level of the sea, and is said to be the highest land in Essex County. It commands an extensive panorama of three-fourths of the circuit of the horizon. From its summit, on a clear day, may be seen the ocean, the smoke of half a dozen cities, some thirty church spires,—the Danvers Insane Asylum, Tewksbury Almshouse, and innumerable hills and mountains in the far distance. Half-way up its grassy side, on a small plateau, is an old-fashioned farm-house, weather-worn and solitary, built more than one hundred and seventy years ago, still firm in its timbers, in which have lived and died eight gen-

erations of the Holt family, the proprietors of the hill, some of whom have lived on this breezy height to be more than four-score and ten years of age. The place has passed into other hands.

From all these hills the sunset views are unsurpassed and seldom equaled by those of any other locality known to the writer. The Italian sunsets from the Pincio, at Rome, do not surpass, in bewitching beauty and inimitable coloring, the sunsets of our New England, as seen from these Andover heights. It is true, however, that the view of Monte Rosa, in Italy, from Lake Lugano, when its snow-capped peak is bathed in the morning sunlight, excels in richness of coloring and awe-inspiring grandeur anything ever seen here.

There are three ponds in the town of sufficient extent to attract attention. Foster's Pond, on the southern border of the town, named from a former proprietor of the surrounding land, contains fifty acres, the waters of which, when allowed by the mill-owners, find their way to the Shawshin River, a little above Ballard Vale. Pomp's Pond, named after a negro, who for many years lived in a hut built upon its banks, contains a little more than seven acres. It is situated about half a mile west of the seminary, near the Shawshin, into which it empties. Formerly, when partially surrounded by a heavily-timbered pine forest, this small pond was a favorite place of resort for the pupils of the schools and others, who enjoyed a stroll or a lounge upon ground carpeted by the needles of the pine, and shaded by its swaying, musical branches, in sight of rippling, cooling water. But, since the hills have been denuded of their magnificent trees, and the pond has been thus laid bare to the full gaze of the sun, its loneliness and charm have measurably departed.

Hagget's is the third pond, and far the most important of the three. Its name is derived from that of a family that formerly owned a farm skirting its banks. It is situated in the westerly part of the West Parish, a little less than three miles from the centre of the town. Its superficial dimensions are two hundred and twenty acres. Its outlet is into the Merrimac River. This pond, or lake, as it would be called in any other country, is a charming sheet of water, crystal-clear and sparkling, with shores like ocean beaches for shimmering brightness and inviting cleanliness, with wooded islands dotted here and there upon its rippling bosom, almost surrounded and enfolded by forests, with pine-covered hills rising up from its shores. In England this lake would rank with Windermere and the Rydal Lakes. It much resembles Loch Katrine, in Scotland, made memorable by the genius of Walter Scott, in his delightful poem, "The Lady of the Lake." Here we have the counterpart of Ellen's Isle (only much more beautiful) of the Scotch lake, described by the poet, lying at about the same distance from the pebbly shore, wooded and bewitching in its silvery setting.





An observer upon the neighboring hill—Wood's Hill, an unpoetic name—might recall these lines of the Scotch poet,—

"An airy point he won,  
Where, gleaming with the setting sun,  
One burnish'd sheet of living gold,  
Loch Katrine lay beneath him rell'd—  
In all her length far-winding bay,  
With promontory, creek and bay,  
And islands that, empurpled bright,  
Flashed amid the livelier light,  
And mountains that like giants stand  
To sentinel enchanted land."

If viewed on a summer's morn, these lines might come to mind,—

"The summer dawn's reflected hue  
To purple changed Loch Katrine blue;  
Misty and soft the western breeze  
Just kiss'd the lake, just stirr'd the trees,  
And the placid lake, like maiden coy,  
Trembled but dimpled not for joy,  
The mountain shadows on her breast  
Were neither broken nor at rest;  
In bright uncertainty they lie,  
Like future joys to fancy's eye."

To those who enjoy drives in the country there are few places more inviting than Andover. The roads are numerous and good. One can leave the central part of the town for six successive days in the week, returning to nearly his starting-point, without passing over many rods of road twice. The winding and woody by-paths are especially attractive. Following them, you are led over slightly hills and through sombre dells, coming unexpectedly upon some delightful view or inviting nook, continually meeting with surprises, thus stimulating a free play of the fancy.

Those who have spent their youth, or have passed their academic days here, keep in memory the beauties of the place, and often recur to them with pleasure.

Dr. William Adams, a native of the town, trained in her schools, on returning here after a long absence, to attend the jubilee exercises of the semi-centennial of the Theological Seminary, in an address to his fellow-alumni of the institution, having referred to the changes that had taken place in men and things since the time of their leaving the seminary, uses these felicitous words:

"But one thing, I am sure, is here unchanged and unsurpassed—the setting of the summer and the autumn sun behind yonder mountains. I have looked upon the far famed sunsets of Italy, and my sober conviction is, that never was there a display of the beauties and glories of the firmament more magnificent than that which is often furnished, from this very spot, to those who are here in training for the Christian ministry; as if to them, like the Apostle, at Patmos, a door were opened into heaven. Even now, after years of absence, I cannot rid myself of the impression—deepened by so many hours of twilight musings—that the transition from this favored place to the mansions of the blessed is specially easy and natural, that the gates of pearl and the stones of sapphire lie just beyond these gorgeous clouds in the western sky, which forever and ever are taking and giving glory in the light of the setting sun."

## CHAPTER CXXXVI.

### ANDOVER—(Continued).

#### ECCLIESIASTICAL.

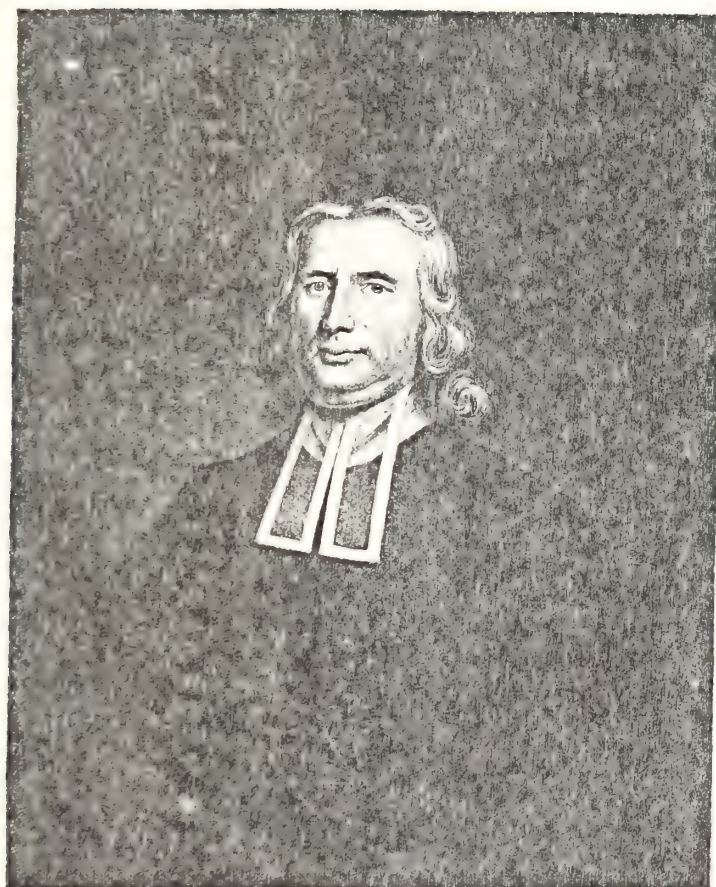
**SOUTH PARISH.**—Andover, as originally incorporated, embraced the present town, North Andover and all of Lawrence lying south of the Merrimac River. The first settlement, as has been previously stated, was at what is now the old centre of North Andover. Here was the house of worship, the home of the minister, the place for the transaction of public business, the residence of the principal men of the town.

But, in the course of half a century, a change took place. Thus, when, in 1707, it became necessary to provide a new meeting-house, it was found, on a test vote as to the location of this new house, that a majority of the voters, and hence of the inhabitants, resided in the southerly and westerly sections of the township. This majority insisted that the new meeting-house should be built much nearer their residences, and hence some distance from the old site. An irreconcilable division took place on this question. The matter was carried to the General Court, resulting finally in a division of the town into two precincts or parishes, by order and under the supervision of the court. This was the beginning, ecclesiastically, of Andover as it now is. Hence, in considering the ecclesiastical affairs of the town, no mention will here be made of the ministers, meeting-houses or other parish matters previous to 1707. This will be conceded to the able historian of North Andover.

The South Parish, having been legally constituted, held its first legal meeting for business purposes on the 20th of June, 1709. The first business of the meeting was "to see whether we can agree where to set our new Meeting-House." After some delay an agreement was finally made to set the meeting-house "at y<sup>e</sup> Rock on the west side of Roger Brook," near the present site of the Centre Primary School-house. The house was built and occupied for the first time in January, 1710; £108 was raised to meet its cost. "Young men and maids had liberty to build seats round in the galleries on their own charge."

A minister for the new parish and meeting-house was at once sought. Mr. Samuel Phillips, a graduate of Harvard College, not yet twenty-one years of age, was invited to preach as a candidate for settlement. He commenced his novitiate on April 30, 1710. After a six months' trial, the parish, on November 2d, voted "clearly in y<sup>e</sup> affirmative" on the question of his "continuance" with them. Less than six weeks later, December 12th, the parish "unanimously" requested him to become their "settled minister." Hesitating, on account of his extreme youth, to assume at once so grave a responsibility, he continued





*S. Phillips*





his ministerial services, without ordination, till October 17th of the following year. On that day he was ordained and inducted by an ecclesiastical council into the office of pastor and teacher of the South Parish and Church in Andover. On the same day, and by the same council, the church was organized and recognized.

The church was composed of thirty-five members, fourteen males and twenty-one females, viz.:

Abbot, George.	Farnum, Sarah (w. Ralph).
Abbot, Thomas (w. Geo.).	Foster, William.
Abbot, John.	Holt, Hannah (w. Samuel).
Abbot, Sarah (w. John).	Johnson, Elizabeth (w. Jas.).
Abbot, Sarah (w. Benj.).	Johnson, William.
Abbot, Nehemiah.	Johnson, John.
Abbot, Abigail (w. Dea. Neh.).	Johnson, Mary (w. John).
Leeland, Rebecca (w. John).	Lovejoy, William.
Badard, Hannah (w. Wm.).	Lovejoy, Mary (w. Wm.).
Bigsby, Hannah (w. Danl.).	Lovejoy, Mary (w. Ebene.).
Blanchard, Anne (w. John).	Osceol, Christopher.
Chandler, William.	Phillips, Samuel.
Chandler, Sarah (w. Wm.).	Preston, Sarah (w. John).
Chandler, Thomas.	Russ, John.
Chandler, Mary (w. Thos.).	Russ, Deborah (w. John).
Dane, Francis.	Russell, Mary (w. Robt.).
Dane, Hannah (w. Francis).	Russell, Phoebe (w. Thos.).
Farnum, Ralph.	

The first deacons of the new church were John Abbot and William Lovejoy. The ministry, thus begun, continued for nearly sixty years after his ordination, terminating only with the life of the pastor, in the eighty-second year of his age.

As the number of worshippers increased, the meeting-house failed to furnish them suitable accommodation, and in 1733-34 a new house was erected, "after the same form and fashion as the old," only larger, being "thirty feet between plate and sill, and forty-four feet wide, and fifty-six feet in length." This was opened for public service on May 19, 1734. The "seating" of this house, as in all similar cases in the churches of New England of that day, was a very difficult and delicate task. After many plans had been suggested and rejected, it was finally settled that a committee should be appointed to "dignify seats and pews," and another committee should allot the seats and pews according to "their judgment, having respect to money and age." This plan lasted for twenty-three years, and was then abandoned for other and varied methods. In a letter from Hon. Josiah Quincy to Mrs. Harriet Beecher Stowe, we have a description of this house as it appeared to him, then a pupil in Phillips Academy:

"It was surrounded by horse-blocks innumerable with a disproportionate number of shaks; for the pillion was the ladies' traveling delight, and alone or in pairs, with their husbands or fathers, they customarily came trooping to their devotions. The church itself was a straggled mass, lofty, and, I should think, containing twice the area of its successor. This, however, may be the exaggeration of my boyish fancy, but it had three lofty stories, with three galleries in the interior, always densely filled with apparently pious zeal and earnest listeners. In the left-hand gallery sat the ladies, in the right the gentlemen, in the midst of whom and in front sat the tything-man, with his white pole three or four emblems in length, the emblem of his dignity and power, and in his right hand a short nasal rod, which, over and

anon, in the midst of the sermon, to the awakening and alarm of the whole congregation, he would, with the whole force of his arm, bring down with a ringing slap on the front of the gallery, shaking it, at the same time, with a terrific menace, at two or three frightened mothers who were whispering or playing in a corner. In a square box in front of the pulpit sat the Deacons, one of whom had pen, ink and paper, and was carefully taking the heads of the preacher's discourse, preparing documentary evidence, either that the sermon was old, or its doctrines new, or consonant with the orthodox platform. In the front gallery sat Precenter Ames, or Eames, with a patch pipe, the token of his authority, with which, as soon as the first line of the Psalm was read, he gave the note to the choir of both sexes, twenty or thirty of each, following the Deacon, reading line by line, in an ecstasy of harmony which none but the lovers of music realize. And the mighty congregation seemed to realize their felicity, for they joined the choir with a will, realizing or exemplifying the happiness of which they sung. Upon the whole, it was an exciting scene, elevating and solemnizing the mind, by the multitude that took part in it.

"The windows of the vast building were of diamond-shaped glass-panes, of rhomboid form, in length about three or four inches, in breadth perhaps two or three. Opening like doors outward, these windows were loose and shacking. In the winter, when the north wind shook the vast building with unmistakable power, their rattling was often a match, and sometimes an over match, for the voice of the clergyman, while the pious females in the pews, sitting, for the most part, on hard benches, with small muffs, and their feet only comforted with small stoves, or stockings over shoes, or heated bricks, had much ado through their sufferings to keep their attention fixed, on the text in memory, and register the infinitesimal heads into which it was divided."

Rev. Mr. Phillips died June 5, 1771. In less than a year after, May 20, 1772, the church and parish united in giving Mr. Jonathan French a unanimous call to become their pastor. He accepted and was ordained September 23, 1772. Previous to the calling of Mr. French there had been considerable talk in the parish about building another meeting-house. There was now, as heretofore, great diversity of opinion as to the location of the new house. After much conflicting and dilatory action on the part of the parish, it was finally voted, in December, 1787, to go forward and build a new meeting-house according to a plan that had been submitted. This house was seventy feet in length and fifty-four feet in width, "with a porch at each end and one in front," and to stand within six or eight rods of the former house. The new building was completed and occupied December 7, 1788.

Mr. French continued in the pastorate of the church and parish till his death, which took place July 28, 1809, embracing a period of thirty-six years and ten months—covering the time of the American Revolution, with all its attending and succeeding anxieties, privations, distresses and forebodings. It was a ministry of help, sympathy, consolation and cheer.

After the death of Rev. Mr. French the parish remained for more than three years without a settled pastor. This large parish had become somewhat fastidious and hard to please. The fact that a theological seminary had been located within its limits, with a corps of able and eloquent professors, who, with the students, belonged to the congregation of worshippers, may have had something to do with this difficulty in finding a man suitable for the place. After a number of ineffectual trials to unite upon a candidate, "the



attention of the people was turned towards Mr. Justin Edwards, then a member of the middle class in the Theological Seminary." After some conference with Mr. Edwards on the part of the church committee, in which he expressed great hesitation as to assuming so grave a charge, the church and parish with a good degree of unanimity extended to him an invitation to settle with them in the gospel ministry. He was ordained and installed as pastor on the 2d day of December, 1812. The parish at this time included a large circuit of territory and a large number of people. Their meeting-house was the only place of public worship in the precinct. The students and teachers of Phillips Academy and the students and professors of the Theological Seminary were stated attendants upon and active participants in its religious services. The pulpit and pastoral labor of a minister of such a parish was necessarily exacting to both mind and body.

After four years of such labor, in 1816, a portion of the congregation was withdrawn by the formation of a church in connection with the Theological Seminary. Since this date the students, teachers and professors of the two institutions have worshipped in their own chapel.

The West Parish was also set off during the ministry of Mr. Edwards, with the cheerful concurrence of those who remained in the old parish.

After an acceptable pastorate of fourteen years and ten months, Rev. Mr. Edwards was dismissed October 1, 1827.

But a brief interval elapsed before the church and parish unanimously invited Mr. Milton Badger to become their pastor.

He accepted and was ordained and installed January 3, 1828. His ministry continued for seven years, and nine months, when he was dismissed to become secretary of the American Home Missionary Society. During his comparatively brief ministry there were unusually large accessions to the church. It was a time of extensive revivals in the New England churches, the era of evangelists, and the South Parish shared liberally in the influences and blessings of the awakened interest in religious matters.

During his ministry radical changes were made in the arrangement of the meeting-house. The square pews of immemorial usage were taken out and long pews substituted; the front porch was removed; the pulpit transferred to the west end of the house, and the galleries changed to correspond with the other improvements.

It was during this ministry also that the Methodists and Baptists first held public worship in the town. The Methodists drew off a few church members, and a much larger number of tax-payers, from the parish. The Baptist Church, formed in 1832, while making no draft upon the church, took quite a number of people from the parish into its society.

Mr. Lorenzo L. Longstroth, having received a

unanimous call from both church and parish, was ordained and installed May 11, 1836. Being in feeble health, he was dismissed after a ministry of two years and ten months.

Mr. John L. Taylor succeeded Mr. Longstroth, being ordained and installed July 18, 1839. His ministry extended over thirteen years, when he was dismissed to become the treasurer of Phillips Academy. On his leaving, the church put on record their belief that he had "performed the duties of his high office with great ability, fidelity and discretion." During this ministry the anti-slavery agitation was at its height, and the church suffered no little in its peace, and somewhat in its membership, from the activity of that wing of the Abolitionists styled "Come-Outers."

The day following the dismissal of Rev. Mr. Taylor, the church and parish gave a call to Rev. Chas. Smith, which he accepted, and was installed as pastor October 28, 1852. After a ministry of one year and one month, against the wishes of the people, but for reasons satisfactory to himself and the council called to act upon his request for a dismissal, he was dismissed to accept the call of the Shawmut Church, Boston.

On the retirement of Mr. Mooar, who succeeded Mr. Smith, the latter was invited to resume the pastorate of the South Church and Parish. This invitation he accepted, and was re-installed December 18, 1861. He was dismissed May, 1876, after a pastorate of fourteen years and five months. His two pastorates together extended over fifteen years and six months, a longer period than that of any other pastor, with the exceptions of Mr. Phillips and Mr. French, the life-tenure pastors. The last ministry of Mr. Smith covered the years of the Civil War,—those years of anxiety, strife and anguish, when the people were called to give their beloved sons a sacrifice for the sin of the nation.

After the first resignation of Mr. Smith the parish was without a settled pastor for nearly two years, when an invitation was unanimously given to Mr. George Mooar, a native of the town, and a recent graduate of the Theological Seminary, to become the pastor. This invitation was accepted, and Mr. Mooar was ordained and installed October 10, 1855. After a pastorate of a little less than five years and six months, the health of his family and his own being somewhat impaired, Mr. Mooar asked a release from his pastorate to accept a charge in Oakland, California. His request being granted, he was dismissed March 27, 1861.

During the ministry of Rev. Mr. Mooar, and largely through his indefatigable exertions, the present house of worship was built. This house, while not the largest built on or near the spot it occupies, is by far the most commodious in its appointments and pleasing in its architectural proportions. The steeple, in its front view, is one of the most satisfying to the eye it has been the fortune of the writer to look upon. It has a seating capacity for nine hundred





people, most ample for all the needs of the parish. As an auditorium, both for speaker and hearer, it is excelled by few buildings of its size.

The second pastorate of Mr. Smith was followed by that of Rev. James H. Laird, who was installed May 19, 1877. After faithfully serving the church and parish for six years, he was, at his own request, dismissed May 11, 1883.

Mr. Laird was followed by Rev. John J. Blair, who was installed May 1, 1884, and is the present efficient and acceptable pastor of the church.

*Pastors of the South Church.*—REV. SAMUEL PHILLIPS, the first pastor of the church, was born in Salem, February 17, 1699. He was the son of Samuel Phillips, goldsmith, and Mary Emerson, daughter of Rev. John Emerson, minister of Gloucester; grandson of Rev. Samuel Phillips, minister of Rowley; great-grandson of Rev. George Phillips, the first minister of Watertown. The last named was a graduate of Caius College, Cambridge, England, and for his first pastorate was settled over a Church of England parish. Coming to entertain conscientious scruples regarding certain ecclesiastical usages of the Established Church, he left its service and joined the Non-conformists. By this change of ecclesiastical connection, his love for the work of the ministry, instead of diminishing, became more ardent. To gratify this holy passion, he joined a company of people entertaining like views with himself, for the purpose of emigrating to the New World. They soon embarked on the good ship "Arbella" for their chosen destination. In this gracious company were included John Winthrop, Rev. John Wilson, Simon Bradstreet, one of the first settlers of Andover, and others of like character and faith. Soon after landing, Mr. Phillips, with a small company, pushed out into the wilderness and commenced a new settlement, now called Watertown. Here he established a church, and, after fourteen years of arduous and successful labor, died, greatly lamented by all the people of his parish, and of the colony as well. He is said to have been, from the first, a leader in the councils of both the church and the colony. By his self-denying, painstaking devotion to the interests of the people, by his simple-hearted fidelity to that which is true and good in faith and life, he so greatly endeared himself to his people that, at his death, in the vigor of his manhood, they took upon themselves, in their poverty, the charges for the liberal education of his eldest son, Samuel, who in time became the honored minister of Rowley. This son was the grandfather of the Rev. Samuel Phillips, minister of the South Parish, Andover.

It was with the prestige of such an ancestry, distinguished alike for their piety and their learning, their conscientiousness and self-sacrifice, their faith in God and their service to men, that he modestly assumed the duties of his high office. His coming was an era in the history of the town. In him was held

potentially, its future distinction and celebrity. The family of the worshipful Simon Bradstreet, which had been socially so pre-eminent, and so potent in all public affairs, had disappeared, leaving slight, if any, permanent traces of its dominant influence. A new name came to take its place, destined to impress its beneficent influence ineffaceably upon the institutions and character of the town. From the first Mr. Phillips secured a firm hold upon the esteem and affections of his people, which he retained to the end of his life. Soon after his settlement they describe him, in a petition to the General Court, as "a worthy, learned and pious minister." To this opinion they adhered, from father to son, for three-score years.

The Rev. Abiel Abbot, in his brief but valuable "History of Andover," published in 1829, gives us the following sketch of Mr. Phillips:

"He was endued with good powers of mind, and was a diligent, faithful and useful minister. He early acquired the habit of order, industry and economy in the management of all his affairs, by which he was enabled to accomplish much and obtain his object. Though he sincerely devoted a tenth of his income to pious and charitable purposes, and his salary was small, yet he educated his family liberally, and accumulated a large estate. In his opinions he was a Calvinist of the old school. As a preacher, he was highly respectable, was zealous, and endeavored not only to indoctrinate his people in sentiments which he deemed correct and important, but to lead them to the practice of all Christian duties. Being strongly attached to his views of Christianity, he exerted himself to defend and propagate them, both by preaching and writing, and to guard his people against opinions contrary to them. His anxiety on the subject may be easily seen in some of his last publications. His labors in the pulpit were protracted beyond what is usual at the present day. His hour-glass was turned at the commencement of his sermon, and the last sands ran out before its conclusion. It was his practice to call at every house in his parish at least once in a year, and he of ten carried Madam with him in these parochial visits. They usually rode together on the same horse, according to the fashion of the times. He had much influence in persuading parents to attend to parental duties and household worship. The people, during his ministry, were remarkably united, and his parish was free from sectaries. Though a man of considerable humor, yet there was an apparent sternness, which caused much fear in many of his people, and especially in the young. Mr. Phillips was highly respected by his brethren in the ministry, and was frequently invited to preach on public occasions."

This statement of Mr. Abbot is doubtless a fair one, so far as it goes, but it fails to give us the impression of a person of such strength and gentleness, persistency and patience, clear insight into the heart of things, and judicious adaptation to the exigencies of the hour, as we look for in a man who held unquestioned for sixty years the reins of authority in large and intelligent parish, and gave to the world through blood and training, a family of children such marked abilities and virtues. Without being an eloquent preacher or a profound philosopher, must have been an able, well-proportioned man, fitting his place admirably, and, in his children, perpetuating his virile influence down the generations.

It seems hardly credible that a country pastor, on salary of seventy pounds, or three hundred and fifty dollars, with the use of the ministerial house and lands, should have "accumulated a large estate. The wonder grows when we learn that one-tenth



this was given to pious and charitable objects; that his was a hospitable house, with attending servants; that he brought up in comfort a family of five children, two of whom were educated at Harvard College; and that the parish was slack in paying him his dues, being in debt to him at one time fifty-three hundred pounds. This heavy default in payment was not allowed to pass unnoticed. The parish was faithfully admonished of its wrong-doing, and urged to make a settlement; then offered an abatement of seven hundred pounds on certain conditions; and, closing his lengthy and mathematically clear statement, the good pastor says,—“And finally, my dear brethren, if, after all y<sup>t</sup> has been said, you do rather incline to Defer y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Settlement, and shall choose to go on Still in Love, as you have done of late, viz., to allow me seventy pounds lawfull money, and my fire-wood annually, I Shall Submit to your Pleasure in that matter.”

The parish chose “to go on Still in Love.”

It is evident that the pastor and his wife (emphatically the latter) must have possessed rare gifts for the conduct of a household and the wise uses of money. There was, of course, rigid economy in the family, but, so far as we know, no pinching, no shabbiness, no pecuniary distress or embarrassment. We can understand how economy must have been reduced to a system in all domestic affairs, and can credit the statement that the pastor who tithed his income, “was so economical as to blow out the candle when he began his evening prayer.” But there was nothing sordid in this minutie in saving. Free-giving, but no waste, must have been his motto.

Near the close of his life the parish made such a settlement of his claims as to call out from him the warmest expressions of gratitude, attended by an offer of “one hundred pounds, lawful money, to be improved for such purposes as the parish shall direct.” In his will he also left to the parish one hundred pounds, the income of which was to be used for the benefit of the poor of the parish. From that day to the present the poor have yearly profited by this bequest. He also bequeathed one hundred pounds for the propagation of Christian knowledge among the Indians.

Mr. Phillips was a dignified man, and realized fully the distinction belonging to his office. His manners were such as to inspire respect, veneration and, perchance, “fear” on the part of some. The parish minister of that day was the distinguished man of the town, to whom deference was paid by all. Mr. Phillips received this deference as his due, and, while courteous to all, was reserved and mindful of his official position.

We have from the pen of an eye-witness a graphic account of his appearance and manner as he came before the people on the Sabbath. As he deliberately passed from his house to the meeting-house, on the opposite side of the street, at the hour of worship,

“he was flanked on the left by his black body-servant, and on his right by madam and her colored maid and the children. His movements were precise and stately, as was becoming in a man occupying his exalted position. As he drew near the house of worship the people who were gathered about the doors hastened within to their seats, and when he entered the house of God, with head uncovered, the whole congregation, as was the hereditary custom, rose from their seats, and remained standing until he had ascended the long flight of steps to the pulpit, entered the sacred enclosure and seated himself. At the close of the service the same deference was paid the minister on retiring, the congregation rising and standing till he and his family had passed into the porch of the sanctuary. This was one of the ways in which both pastor and people deemed it fitting that the worshippers of God should show their reverence for his consecrated ambassador.”

The sermons of Mr. Phillips, many of which, in manuscript, have been preserved, are neatly written, methodical in construction and easy to be understood. They are earnest, often bold, in the rebuke of the prevailing vices and follies,—intemperance, licentiousness, extravagance. His preaching was for the most part practical rather than doctrinal, dealing with the condition of his hearers rather than with speculations concerning future possibilities. And, withal, his sermons show a frequent iteration of the same truth, teaching, administration and rebuke.

Mr. Phillips published a number of sermons and small treatises,—one of the most noticeable of the latter being that entitled, “Seasonable Advice to a Neighbor.” This treatise, published in 1761, is in the form of a dialogue, and is dedicated to the people of his parish, with the prayer that “they might always hold fast to the form of sound words, and especially that they might not settle any succeeding minister of opposite faith.”

In this tract Mr. Phillips clearly manifests his confidence in the Calvinistic theology and the Westminster Confession. He sets forth, with the earnestness born of conviction, the doctrines of “original sin,” the “necessity of the new birth,” “justification by faith without the works of the law,” “divine decrees” and “the saints’ perseverance.” And, while the author “would not be understood” as intending “to confine real Christianity” strictly “to those who are fully in the scheme called Calvinistic,” he is yet “fully persuaded that these truths are most consonant, not only to antiquity, but also to the true standard, the word of inspiration.”

Shortly after his settlement, when the ministerial house had been built, January 17, 1711-12, Mr. Phillips married Hannah White, daughter of John White, Esq., of Haverhill. She was a worthy, capable, pious woman, who greatly assisted her husband in his parochial duties, and, by her prudent, discreet conduct in the parish, her careful and judicious man-





agement of their domestic affairs, and her wise oversight and training of their children, contributed largely to the ministerial success of her husband, and to the development of the noble and generous traits of her sons. She died at the home of her son Samuel, in North Andover, January 7, 1773, two years after the death of her husband, in the eighty-second year of her age.

They had five children,—three sons and two daughters. Mary, born November 30, 1712, married Samuel Appleton, of Haverhill; died December 5, 1737, aged twenty-five.

Lydia, born June 10, 1717, married Dr. Parker Clark, of Andover; died November 4, 1749, aged thirty-two, leaving children. These children were tenderly referred to by Mr. Phillips in his will, made in the seventy-fourth year of his age. His sons had at this time secured for themselves social position and substantial possessions. To them he says: "My desire and prayer is y<sup>t</sup> my s<sup>d</sup> three sons may continue to live in love, and y<sup>t</sup> they still behave respectfully and dutifully towards their aged, tender and good mother, even unto the end; and y<sup>t</sup> they go on to shew kindness to y<sup>e</sup> motherless children of their beloved sister Lydia. And, in a word, that they make it their care to be found in Christ, and to serve their generation according to y<sup>e</sup> will of God, by doing good as they shall have opportunity unto all men, and especially to y<sup>e</sup> household of faith; as knowing y<sup>t</sup> it is more blessed to give than to receive."

Samuel, born February 13, 1715, died August 21, 1790.

John, born December 17, 1719, died August 21, 1795.

William, born June 25, 1722, died January 15, 1804.

Of these three sons of Mr. Phillips there will be further mention in connection with Phillips Academy.

REV. JONATHAN FRENCH, the second minister of the South Parish, was born in Braintree, January 30, 1749. He was the youngest son of Dea. Moses French and Esther Thayer French. On his mother's side he was a descendant of John Alden. His early life was spent on the farm with his father. When seventeen years of age he enlisted as a private soldier in the Continental army, and was stationed at Fort Edward. His health soon becoming impaired by small-pox and fever, he received a discharge, and returned to the paternal farm. On recovering his health, he re-enlisted in the army, and was stationed at Castle William, in Boston harbor. Here he was created sergeant and put in charge of the sutler's store, and not unfrequently, in the absence of the higher officers, of the garrison also. While in this position he made the acquaintance of some literary people from the neighboring city who were accustomed to visit the Castle. To them he revealed his passionate desire for more knowledge and a better education, and in return received encouragement

and assistance from them to pursue his studies. The circumstances in which he was placed turned his attention strongly towards medicine and surgery, especially the latter. In these branches of learning he made such rapid advances as to be soon entrusted by his superiors with the care of the sick in the garrison. While thus employed, his mind took a broader reach, and he resolved on a collegiate education, with the further intent of becoming a missionary, or minister. In this purpose he was further encouraged by his Boston friends and the chaplains of the Castle, who furnished him with the needed preparatory books. So zealous was he in these classical studies that, in his daily trips between the Castle and city, in the boat of which he had command, he pursued his studies while the boatmen plied their oars. By such diligence he soon gained the requisite knowledge for a college matriculation, resigned his position at the Castle, and was admitted to Harvard College, to the class which graduated in 1771. He was thirty-one years old when he took his college diploma. Among his classmates and personal friends were Samuel Phillips, Jr., and David Osgood, natives of Andover. After his graduation he remained for a time in Cambridge, in the family of the lately deceased President Holyoke, for the purpose of taking a course of theological instruction. He still adhered to his original intention of becoming a missionary to the Indians. But, through the persuasion of his Andover classmates, he was induced to preach for a time in the pulpit of the South Parish, recently made vacant by the death of the venerable Mr. Phillips. His appearance, reputation and services were so acceptable to the people that they soon, with great unanimity and cordiality, extended to him an invitation to become their minister. He accepted this invitation, and was ordained and installed pastor September 23, 1772, in the thirty-third year of his age.

As a pastor, Mr. French was faithful, judicious and much beloved. His birth and early life among farmers gave him an experimental acquaintance with the trials, labors and aspirations of the large mass of his parishioners. And his short experience as a soldier prepared him to be a wise counselor to the young men of his parish who went into the Revolutionary War, and a considerate sympathizer with the friends at home. He did not possess the easy dignity of his predecessor, and did not so carry himself in his intercourse with the people as to inspire them with such profound reverence as to make their worship of God intermingle with their veneration for his servant. Being below the medium height and inclined to corpulency, he was heavy of movement and averse to physical exertion. But, notwithstanding this bodily inertness, his pastoral duties were discharged with scrupulous fidelity and loving care. The people in their perplexities often sought his advice in other than religious matters, making him a confidant in their private and family troubles. We find this encomium



of him on record: "Seldom was a minister more beloved, esteemed and venerated by his parishioners."

Mr. French was valued for his practical wisdom. People and parishes beyond the limits of the town sought his advice in difficult matters. It is stated that he "attended seventy-eight ecclesiastical councils," a phenomenal number for those days of few churches and far between and life-long pastorates.

He was fond of anecdote, and could tell a good story with such spirit as to afford pleasure to old and young. The children were delighted to gather around his knee, repeat their catechism and listen to his amusing recitals.

"As a preacher, he maintained a highly respectable rank. His preaching was rather practical than doctrinal. For though he cordially received the Calvinistic doctrines, he very rarely went into a particular exposition of them—much less attempted anything like a formal defence." His manner in the pulpit was impressive and at times uncomfortably deliberate. His style was plain, intelligible to the least cultivated and better adapted to instruct than to please the hearer.

Mr. Moor, in his admirable "Historical Manual of the South Church," in speaking of Mr. French as a theologian, says: "It seems evident that he not only did not make very sharp discriminations, but was rather averse to having them made. He was, beyond all dispute, no friend to the Hopkinsian theories of his day. Yet, as between such Arminians as Dr. Symmes, of the North Parish, and Dr. Cummings, of Billerica, and the Calvinists as a class, he undoubtedly sided with the latter. He was nearly the only one of his Association whose sympathies were Calvinistic. He was reputed a Calvinist, though living in the atmosphere of Arminianism," and exchanged pulpits with ministers of each wing. "I have heard it said, that, after preaching sound and solemn doctrine, he was in the habit of adding a remark or two which mitigated very much the severity of his statements."

As a man, Mr. French was noted for his cheerful disposition, charitableness towards all classes and for his hospitality, remarkable for even those days, when the ministerial house was expected to be and was the hostelry for all traveling preachers, their families and friends. One who profited by this hospitality has said: "To every brother in the ministry and to a large circle of acquaintances his doors were always open, and every one who came met with a cordial welcome."

As a citizen, Mr. French deeply sympathized with the patriots who resisted the aggression of the mother country and thus precipitated the Revolution. And, when the hour for armed resistance came, he was found among the foremost to encourage such resistance. When the news of the fight at Lexington reached town, his presence and voice stimulated the young men of his parish to hasten to the bloody strife.

And when these parishioners of his, in the fight at Bunker Hill, were slain or wounded, he headed the company of citizens who hastened to the scene of conflict with sympathy and aid. And, however wavering, uncertain, or both-sided may have been his position in the doctrinal controversies of the day, he was an unquestioned patriot, with unwavering consistency and constancy favoring the war and the independence of the colonies. The severe trials which came to his people in consequence of the war he cheerfully shared. In a long letter to the parish touching the payment of his salary, dated February 19, 1779, he says: "The true intent and design of the original contract between us, so far as it relates to the money part, was to afford me, with the other things specified in the contract, a comfortable and decent support; which was all I wanted. And, supposing the necessities of life would continue nearly as they were then, upon an average, one year with another, I imagined this would render it unnecessary for me to encumber myself with the entanglements of the world, and enable me, according to the apostolic direction, to give myself wholly to the work of the ministry. A comfortable, decent support for myself and family was all I desired. Experience showed me that the provisions you made were adequate to this purpose, and yet were not too much to enable me to afford that time and care for this flock which the great duties of my calling required. I was well-contented, and, had things remained in that channel, you never would have heard any complaints from me. But circumstances are greatly altered. In 1775, the first year of the war, the articles necessary for clothing were raised in their prices twenty-five per cent., which diminished my salary, so far as these articles were necessary, one-quarter part. With the decrease of my salary my expenses increased. Soldiers almost daily fell in upon us, and such entertainment as we could we gave them and they were welcome." While many in the parish during these years did not take this change of prices into consideration, others did, and furnished "the necessities of life at former prices," and "others considered me in their private kindness, so that, on the whole, I was so far from complaining that I gave you a generous and public credit for the same, though I then thought, and still do think, that I sustained my full proportion or more of the public burthen, which I was willing to do." In "the spring of 1778 the necessities of life, upon an average, had arisen five or six-fold in their demands. My salary decreased in value in proportion. I found the burden then increasing upon me and threatening to become insupportable; and with the best economy I could use, my salary fell far short of procuring the real necessities of life for my family." This becoming known, he was assisted by private donations, public contribution and help on the farm, so that, while short of his nominal salary, "in proportion to about three for one," he says, "I was fully





satisfied and felt grateful to my people for their marks of justice and generosity towards me."

Having made this review of the past, he comes to the then present price of the necessities of life, — grain, meat, sugar, drink, "water excepted," "from fifteen to twenty-fold higher than when my contract was made." After going into minute detail and estimate he continues, "upon this calculation, my salary, which is in the contract £80, is in its value to me now no more than £8." But, "as I desire nothing of you but what is perfectly right and just and perfectly reasonable, and should be unworthy the sacred character I sustain among you if I were not willing to sympathize with you and participate of all your burthens and afflictions as well as rejoice in all your prosperity, I am willing in these public calamities and burthens to rise and fall with you; nor could I be happy to be freed from them myself and see you burthened and groaning under them.—I am therefore willing to have a consideration made me annually or semi-annually, according to the then present circumstances,—I am willing to bind myself to let my salary every year, so long as it shall please God to continue me among you, be regulated in proportion to the prices of the necessities of life and to your rates to the public, till the debt that has been, or may be, contracted by the present war, shall be discharged. If you will pay me my salary in due proportion, in the necessities of life, for the past year, I will relinquish one-third part. That the poor may not be oppressed when the rate shall be made, let it be shown me, and I will cross out of the rates of those whom the assessors shall think most needy, a sum equal to the six lowest rates in the bill; and if the parish think this not enough, I will do more."

This proposed plan was in substance adopted by the parish. This letter brings vividly before us, not only the pecuniary embarrassments of the pastor, but the straitened condition of the people. The pastor is in a strait betwixt the pinching need of his family, and the heavy burdens of his people.

The state of things at the parsonage is graphically set forth in a letter of Josiah Quincy, a member of the family at this time, published in Dr. Sprague's "Annals of the American Pulpit ;"

"Frugality was the necessity of the time and the law of his household. The only bread we tasted was Indian or Rye, or a mixture of both. Mr. French, on the Sabbath, had the special privilege of white or flour bread because, as he said, the Rye or Indian gave him the heart burn. As he took, on that day, no other dinner, he justified himself in indulging in that enviable luxury. Our date was the breakfast, our dinner pork and I best, with a plentiful allowance of cabbage and all the usual vegetables farmers cultivate. In the winter frozen cod came along from the sea-coast. Biscuits, a tea to modern luxury almost unknown, was our table resort, with a qualification of milk at supper time."

The pastor, it seems, took boarders from the pupils at the academy. He also had a family divinity school, from which went out men who afterwards took high rank among their brethren. He was from the first a trustee of Phillips Academy, and gave theological in-

struction to the pupils for some years. He was the especial confidant and adviser of Mr. Samuel Abbot, his parishioner, in his gifts for the establishment of a theological seminary. He published a number of ordination sermons, and sermons and addresses on special occasions.

Mr. French married, August 26, 1773, Miss Abigail Richards, daughter of Dr. Benjamin Richards, of Weymouth. She died August, 1821.

Their children were, Sarah, born November 18, 1774, died in infancy; Abigail, born May 29, 1776, married Rev. Samuel Stearns, Bedford; Jonathan, born August 16, 1777, pastor at Northampton, N. H.; Mary Holyoke, born August 6, 1781, married Ebenezer P. Sperry, Wenham; Sarah, born December 13, 1784, died April 12, 1788.

JUSTIN EDWARDS, D.D. (third pastor), was born in Westhampton, Mass., April 25, 1787. He was the son of Justin and Elizabeth (Clark) Edwards. His father was a farmer, industrious, frugal, upright, "a man of few words." His early years were spent in assisting his father upon the farm. Becoming a Christian when eighteen years of age, he began to cherish the idea of obtaining a collegiate education, that he might become a minister. He received his preparatory training at the hands of his pastor, Rev. Enoch Hall. In 1807 he entered the sophomore class at Williams College and graduated three years later with the valedictory address. Soon after graduation he entered the Theological Seminary in Andover. Here he secured the esteem and respect of his associates and teachers, for his scholarship, ability and piety. He became so prominent among his classmates, and so acceptable as a preacher, as to secure a unanimous invitation from both church and parish of the South Parish to become their pastor, before he had completed the second year of his theological course. In the seminary, as in the college, he was associated with Samuel J. Mills, Gordon Hall and James Richards, and deeply sympathized with their missionary spirit and projects. After leaving Andover, he for a time was engaged as an agent for the American Temperance Society. Afterwards, for more than a year and a half, he was pastor of the Salem Street Church, Boston. His health failing there, he resumed his labors with the Temperance Society and engaged actively in this work, delivering addresses, writing and distributing documents, and forming temperance societies in various parts of the country. In 1836 he was elected to the presidency of the Theological Seminary, which office he held till April 19, 1842. Again he returned for a year to the service of the Temperance Society. On the formation of the American and Foreign Sabbath Union, he became its secretary, and for seven years devoted much time and energy to the interest of Sabbath observance. From 1849 to his death he was in the employment of the American Tract Society, for the most part engaged in preparing a popular commentary of the Scriptures. He had finished the New Testa-



ment and more than half of the Old, when he was laid aside by sickness, and, after lingering for some fifteen months, died suddenly at Bath Alum Springs, Va., July 24, 1853, aged sixty-six years.

Dr. Edwards was much esteemed for his practical wisdom and executive ability. He was for thirty-three years trustee of the Theological Seminary. He was a member of the executive committee of the New England Tract Society; a promoter of the American Tract Society and member of its publishing committee; a director in the American Home Missionary Society and a corporate member of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions. He was honored with the degree of Doctor of Divinity by Yale College, 1827.

In person Dr. Edwards was tall, erect, muscular, a fine specimen of the physical man. In bearing he was stately, dignified, with a grave countenance, and somewhat stiff in manner and formal in address. His voice was a heavy sub-bass, well fitted to startle the Sabbath sleepers when given full scope. His pulpit delivery was in harmony "with the rugged simplicity of his thought and diction." The style of his sermons was simple, with little rhetorical embellishment, little play of the imagination or flash of the seer, or the sharp, terse strokes of the orator. But his sentences were solid, his Saxon words weighty with common sense and Scripture truth, and, when sent home to the minds and hearts of his hearers by his sonorous voice, they often left an abiding impression. He had the reputation, especially in the early part of his ministry, of being an exceptionally able preacher. During the last six of the fifteen years of his ministry in the South Parish, says Dr. Amos Blanchard, "with an undisputed ascendancy among his own people, he was known far and near as a powerful preacher and a man of eminent, practical wisdom. . . . Yet, even then, he had neither attractiveness nor popularity; he had, however, what is so much better,—influence: an influence growing out of his personal qualities, and accumulating with every year of his pastoral life." It is evident that the great power gained by Dr. Edwards over his fellow-men was owing largely not so much to his superior intellectual abilities or acquisitions, or to any felicity of speech, as to his downright earnestness, the conviction of his profound sincerity, his simple straightforwardness, his tact in approaching men and his luminous piety. He had, withal, some rare gifts for organization, for bringing men into co-operative action.

As a pastor he was indefatigable,—catechising the children, establishing and maintaining a Bible-class for adults, visiting frequently the large number of homes of his parishioners, scattered far and wide over miles of territory. In this field of labor he was unsurpassed.

Dr. Edwards was the author of a large number of printed tracts, documents, sermons, letters, and the commentary of which mention has been made.

He married Miss Lydia Bigelow, daughter of Asa Bigelow, of Colchester, Conn., September 17, 1817, a most worthy woman and efficient helper in the pastoral work.

Their children were six in number,—Justin Asa, born January 20, 1819; Jonathan, born July 17, 1820 (ordained at Woburn, September 7, 1848, and since settled in Plymouth Church, Rochester, N. Y., Dedham and Wellesley Hills, where he now resides); Newton, born March 11, 1822, died May 7, 1855; Elizabeth, born November 9, 1824, resides in Andover; Lydia, born March 6, 1826, resides in Andover; Ann Eliza, born September 29, 1828 (married Rev. Thomas N. Haskell).

REV. MILTON BADGER was the fourth pastor of the South Church. He was born in Coventry, Conn., May 6, 1800, and was the twelfth child of his parents, Enoch and Mary Badger. He was a graduate of Yale College, in the class of 1823; was for one year the principal of the Academy at New Canaan. After this he passed most of his time for three years at Andover with the class in the seminary which graduated in 1827, yet was tutor in Yale College 1826-27. He was installed pastor of the South Church in 1828. He left this last position to become secretary of the American Home Missionary Society. In this last important position the great labor of his life was performed. As a pastor and preacher he was eminently successful. His ministry embraced a period of extensive and heart-stirring revivals. Protracted meetings and arousing sermons and appeals from such men as Dr. Wisner, Dr. Lyman Beecher, Rev. Charles S. Finney, and others who preached in the South Church, brought many to the exercise of penitence and faith in Christ. Seldom have the churches of New England been so signally enlarged. During Mr. Badger's ministry, some three hundred and thirty joined the church, mostly on profession.

But the work to which Mr. Badger gave the best of his life, and for which he developed a peculiar fitness, was that of a Home Missionary secretary. Here his large heart and far-reaching mind and ever-expanding faith had free scope. His parish was the country, extending finally from the Atlantic to the Pacific. But he was a modest man and buried beneath his work. Little can be learned of Dr. Badger, except what is to be found in the history and progress of the missionary enterprise in our broad Western territory. The importance and value of his services for the thirty-eight years during which he was secretary are beyond estimate. Thousands of feeble churches have been nurtured into vigorous life, and thousands of faithful ministers have been cheered and sustained in their self-denying work by his agency. Revered for his piety, trusted for his wisdom and integrity, honored for his manliness and courage, esteemed for his sagacity and patience, loved for his warm, sympathetic heart, many and many a struggling church and toil-worn minister have risen up to call





him blessed. He died in Madison, Conn., March 1, 1873, aged seventy-three years, mourned by multitudes.

Mr. Badger was married to Miss Clarissa Munger, of Madison, who is still living. They had five children, only two of whom lived to manhood. Both of these entered the medical profession,—Dr. George Badger, died at Panama; Dr. William Badger, lives at Flushing, Long Island.

REV. LORENZO L. LANGSTROTH, the fifth minister, was born in Philadelphia, Pa., December 25, 1810. He was a graduate of Yale College, and studied theology in New Haven. After his dismissal from the South Church he was for a year principal of Abbot Academy; after this, for four years, principal of the High School for Young Ladies in Greenfield, Mass., preaching for a portion of the time in the Congregational Church in that town. Receiving an invitation to settle there, he was installed and continued its pastor for over four years. On leaving his pastorate he established a Young Ladies' School in his native city, which he was obliged to relinquish, owing to poor health. He was for a time stated supply at Coleraine. He removed to Oxford, Ohio, where he now resides. Of late years he has given much attention to the culture of honey bees, and has published a valuable treatise on their nature and habits, and the methods of raising and treating them. His book is considered one of the most scientific, complete and trustworthy in the language on this subject. As a minister, he secured the favor, respect and love of his parishioners. But his physical strength was not equal to the care and labor of a large parish.

REV. JOHN L. TAYLOR, sixth pastor of the church, was born in Warren, Conn., May 20, 1814. His parents were John Taylor and Anna (Beardsley) Taylor. He graduated at Yale College in 1835. After graduation he taught in Ellington, Conn., two years, was tutor in Yale three years, at the same time pursuing a course of theological study, and then became pastor of the South Church for thirteen years.

On leaving this pastorate he took the responsible position of treasurer of Phillips Academy, which he held with marked ability and approval for sixteen years. When a new department, called the "Short Course," was created in the Theological Seminary for the benefit of worthy and suitable men to study for the ministry, who were unable to pursue a collegiate course, Mr. Taylor was appointed its professor in 1868. His title was, "Smith Professor of Theology and Homiletics, and Lecturer on Pastoral Theology." The endowment fund for this professorship had been given by Miss Sophia Smith, of Hatfield, who, at her decease, left the funds to found Smith College, Northampton. Though for a few years this "Short Course" experiment was measurably successful, yet there were not forthcoming so many and so capable men to take advantage of it as had been anticipated by its friends. Prof. Tay-

lor continued to discharge the duties of his office, with great fidelity and much favor, for eleven years, when, owing to paralysis and increasing feebleness, he resigned. After this the department was given up. During his incumbency of the professorship he was also dean or president of the faculty. From the time he became treasurer to near the time of his death he was President of the Andover (National) Bank. In 1868 he received the degree of Doctor of Divinity from Middlebury College. Occupying these diverse and responsible positions in the town for forty-five years, he became thoroughly identified with its best interests—material, educational and religious. The institution, with which he had been intimately connected as financier and teacher for twenty-seven years, was especially dear to him. In his will he made provision for perpetually associating himself in its work, by giving the bulk of his property to further endow the Taylor Professorship of Biblical Theology, which had been established by a liberal bequest of his deceased son, Frederick. He passed away calmly and quietly, as if falling asleep, in his chair, September 23, 1884, aged seventy-three years.

As a minister Dr. Taylor was an able sermonizer, an acceptable preacher and a faithful pastor. His preaching was instructing and impressive. Without shunning to declare the whole truth of God in the doctrines of Scripture as he received them, his main endeavor seems to have been to persuade men to search the Scriptures, believe in Jesus as the Christ of God, and to become followers of Him in faith and love.

As a teacher he was in his element. In his duties as instructor in the Theological Seminary, he took special pleasure. In the class-room, to young men eager for the information that would fit them to become ministers, he could bring forth from his treasures of Biblical learning, religious experience and ministerial work, "things new and old," worthy of their closest attention.

As a man he has been characterized, by one who knew him well, as "self-controlled, sagacious, sanguine, alert, humorous, disinterested, discreet, and as possessing a rare memory for names and faces,"—the last a most happy faculty for a public man. It may be added, from observation of his years of inactivity, loneliness, feebleness and gradual decay, that he was endowed by nature and grace with rare patience, cheerfulness, steadiness of faith and serenity of spirit.

Dr. Taylor united in himself the student and the man of affairs, the teacher and the financier. He could preside, with equal success, over a meeting of bank directors or a meeting of theological professors, in either case with words of wisdom profitable for direction. He was deeply interested in educational matters, from the common school to the seminary. Poor students enlisted his sympathies and commanded his assistance.



In addition to his other labors, Dr. Taylor prepared and published, mostly by request, Sunday sermons preached on special occasions, addresses and brief memoirs. He also prepared the "Memorial of the Semi-Centennial Celebration of the Founding of the Theological Seminary," and a "Memoir of Judge Phillips," which, for completeness, finish and accuracy, ranks with the best of biographies.

He married Miss Caroline Lord Phelps, daughter of Epaphras Phelps, of East Windsor, Conn. They had five children, three of whom died in early childhood. The remaining two were Frederick H. Taylor, who died when but twenty-one years of age, leaving his property, a liberal amount, to the Theological Seminary. Rev. John Phelps Taylor, after successful pastorates in three churches,—at Middletown, Conn.; at Newport, R. I.; and at New London, Conn,—now occupies the chair of Taylor Professor of Biblical Theology, in the Theological Seminary, endowed by his brother and father.

REV. CHARLES SMITH<sup>1</sup> was born at Hatfield, Mass., August 10, 1818. His character was moulded in that typical New England township where Rev. William Williams preached from 1685 until 1741, and Rev. Joseph Lyman, D.D., from 1772 until 1828. The influence of these eminent pastors was distinctly recognized in the town during Mr. Smith's early years. He was related to a family which has become conspicuous by its charitable donations. One member of the family was the founder of the noted "Smith Charities" at Northampton; another was the founder of an academy in Hatfield, the Smith Professorship at Andover, and Smith College at Northampton. Mr. Smith was graduated at Amherst College in 1841, and at Andover Theological Seminary in 1845. In each of these institutions he was held in high esteem as a young man of studious habit and unimpeachable character. His sound mind and strong common sense warranted the expectation of his future usefulness. He was ordained October 12, 1847, as pastor of the Congregational Church in Warren, Mass.; but after about five years of acceptable service there, he was called to the pastorate of the Old South Church in Andover. He labored faithfully and successfully in his second pastorate during the years 1852 and '53, when he was invited to the Shawmut Church in Boston. He was urged by friends of the Andover parish to refuse this invitation, but was persuaded by his Boston friends to accept it. He remained pastor of the Shawmut Church from 1853 to 1858. He spent the years 1860-61 as acting-pastor of the Oak Place Church in Boston. He was then honored by an invitation to resume the pastorate of the Old South Church in Andover. He accepted this invitation, and was re-installed over his former charge. His second pastorate here continued from 1861 until 1876. He spent seventeen years in his ministry at Andover,

—a longer period than that spent by any other pastor of the Old South Church during the present century. The ecclesiastical council that sanctioned the closing of his lengthened pastorate declared in its result: "We give our hearty testimony to his eminent ability, his abundant labors, his well-accomplished work, and the deep mutual confidence and tender love between his people and himself, which have grown with the years of his labor among them."

"We commend our dear brother to the churches and their pastors as one who, under large and peculiar responsibility in successive pastorates, has proved himself equal to the demand for a high order of culture, of character, and of natural endowments; and is esteemed by us as a learned, eloquent, and edifying preacher, a devout and faithful pastor, and worthy of all confidence as a true and honest servant of our common Lord."

When Mr. Smith resigned his pastorate he was requested by his church to recall his resignation. When he refused to recall it, he was requested by the church and parish to continue his residence in Andover. After having made the tour of Europe in 1876-77, visiting France, Belgium, Switzerland, Italy, Germany, Ireland, England and Scotland, he complied with this request and made Andover his home. He often preached in the neighboring parishes, and although not the pastor of the Old South Church, he continued to be a real minister of the town. He was often called to perform ministerial services in the homes of his former parishioners. Such was the confidence of his fellow-citizens in his discretion and incorruptible integrity, that he was elected for the years 1882, '83, '85, and '87 to represent the town in the Massachusetts House of Representatives. He manifested his well-known sagacity and faithfulness in the Legislature, particularly in saving the waters of the Shawshin River from being turned out of their natural course into a water-supply for the city of Boston. Being intimately acquainted with the interests of the central region, and also of the seaboard, of Massachusetts, he commanded the confidence of varying parties in the Legislature. They found him to be a man of political intelligence and wisdom, a prudent and independent counselor, effective in debate, and fitted to exert a steady and wholesome influence. When a citizen of Andover was needed to prepare the history of the town for the present volume, Mr. Smith was at once selected for the work. He understood the agricultural, mercantile, manufacturing, and educational interests of the town, and thus knew what to write and what to omit. He labored with his wonted vigor and fidelity in representing these various interests until the 27th day of October, 1887. He fully expected to finish his manuscript and forward it to the editor of the "Essex County History" on the 31st of the month. He was attacked on the morning of the 27th with a pain which did not alarm him, and at eleven o'clock in the forenoon of the 29th he died.

<sup>1</sup> Prepared by Prof. Edwards A. Park.





Probably he was not aware that his death was near when he suddenly left the world. It did not seem to be death, but a translation to a higher life. The announcement of his departure was received with universal surprise and grief.

He married Caroline L. Sprague, daughter of Hon. Joseph E. Sprague, of Salem. They have three children,—Edwin Bartlett Smith, in business in Minneapolis; Charles Sprague Smith, Professor of Modern Languages and Foreign Literature in Columbia College, New York; Caroline Reed Smith, resides in Andover.

DR. GEORGE MOOAR, eighth pastor, was born in Andover, West Parish, May 27, 1830. He graduated at Williams College, 1851. After teaching a year in Falmouth and Brookline he entered the Theological Seminary at Andover, and graduated in 1855. After remaining pastor of the South Church from October 10, 1855, to March 27, 1861, he was dismissed to take charge of the First Congregational Church in Oakland, Cal. Here he was installed May 6, 1861, and continued, with eminent success, for eleven years. In 1872 he was elected Professor of Systematic Theology and Church History in the Pacific Theological Seminary, which position he still retains. In 1874 he became pastor of the Plymouth Avenue Church in Oakland, which position he also retains. In 1863 he became an editor of the *San Francisco Pacific*, the organ of the Congregational Churches on the Pacific coast, where he still shares in the editorial work with his co-laborers.

While in Andover Dr. Mooar prepared a most admirable "Historical Manual" of the South Church, from which much valuable information for this sketch has been derived. Dr. Mooar has been, and now is, engaged upon the family histories of Isaac Cummings, of Topsfield, who immigrated as early as 1644, and Abraham Mooar, of Andover, who immigrated in 1687.

Dr. Mooar received the degree of Doctor of Divinity from Williams College.

REV. JAMES H. LAIRD, the tenth pastor of the South Church, was born in Milton, Pa., August 19, 1832. He graduated at Oberlin College in 1860, and at the Theological Seminary in 1864; was settled in North Fairfield, Ohio, December 21, 1864; dismissed 1868. He preached in the suburbs of Chicago, and afterwards settled for two years in Madison, Ohio; then became principal of the preparatory department in Oberlin College, from whence he came to the South Parish. He was installed in Hinsdale July 10, 1883, where he still remains.

REV. JOHN J. BLAIR, the present efficient pastor of the South Church, has had but one previous settlement,—in Rockland, Me., 1876 to 1881.

WEST PARISH.—As early as 1771 complaints began to be heard from members of the South Church residing in the westerly section of the parish, on account of their distance from the place of worship.

With ever-increasing numbers, their complaints became more pronounced. Whenever the question of a new meeting-house was agitated in the parish, as was frequently the case, the matter of location necessarily came to the front. Those living on the west side of the Shawshin insisted that the house should be on their side of the river. The trouble grew till in 1788, Isaac Osgood and others, residents of the west side, petitioned the General Court to be set off into a separate parish. Their petition was refused. But the majority of the parish recognized the disadvantages under which their brethren in the west section labored, and, in the hope of retaining them, voted that they be relieved of all obligation to aid in building the new house of worship. But this did not satisfy the complainants. The parish, finally, taking into consideration the wishes of these discontented brethren, and further, the onerous labors of the pastor of a parish eight miles in length and four in breadth, concluded to form a new parish on the west side of Shawshin River, and voted, March 12, 1826, that, "should the people on the west side of the Shawshin River erect a Meeting-House at their own expense, they have the cordial approbation of the parish." The house was soon erected by private enterprise, but built of stone taken from the immediate neighborhood. It contained ninety-eight pews, with a seating capacity for six hundred people. This stone structure still stands, though, in its interior arrangements, it has been repeatedly remodeled, refitted and improved. It was dedicated December 26, 1826. The dedicatory sermon was by Mr. Edwards, the pastor of the South Church.

On the 5th of December, 1826, the church was organized, and called the "West Church of Andover." Fifty-six persons constituted its membership, mostly from the South Church. The parish made application to the next General Court to be set off with definite bounds, which application was granted, no one opposing. As thus incorporated, the new parish embraced one hundred and fifty-eight families, or eight hundred and seventy people. On being thus set off, the South Parish granted to the West, for its use perpetually, three-eighths of the income of its ministerial funds.

The Church and Parish have had five pastors:—Rev. Samuel C. Jackson, who was settled June 6, 1827, dismissed September 25, 1850; Rev. Charles H. Peirce, ordained October 9, 1850, dismissed April 11, 1855; Rev. James H. Merrill, installed April 30, 1856, dismissed December 1, 1879; Rev. Austin H. Burr, installed April 29, 1880, dismissed January 21, 1885; Frederick W. Greene, installed September 3, 1885, still the pastor.

*Pastors of the West Church.*—REV. SAMUEL CRAM JACKSON, D.D., was born in Dorset, Vt., March 13, 1802. He was the son of Dr. William Jackson and Susanna Cram Jackson, a lineal descendant of John Rogers of Smithfield memory. He prepared for college under the tuition of his father, a thorough



classical scholar. When fifteen years of age he entered Middlebury College, and graduated in 1821. Having a natural bent for legal studies, and an inherited fondness for public affairs, he spent one year in the law-office of Hon. Richard Skinner, Manchester, Vt., and one in the office of Judge David Daggett, of New Haven, preparatory to entering the legal profession. While at the latter place, his attention was turned with special interest to the subject of personal faith in Christ. His former skeptical notions gave way under a thoughtful examination of the claims of Christianity, and he consecrated himself to the service of Christ. With this new element of life, came a change in the purpose of life and its vocation. Cheerfully yielding to the wishes of his parents, who had consecrated him to the work of the ministry, and following the advice of Dr. Porter, a friend of his parents, he joined the Theological Seminary at Andover, graduating in 1826 with the valedictory addresses. Soon after this he entered upon his ministerial work with the West Parish, where he remained for twenty-two years. His physical energies having become permanently so impaired as to render his continuance of the labors, cares and responsibilities of a minister inexpedient, if not impracticable, he sought and obtained the position of Assistant State Librarian.

At first his duties were rather those of an assistant secretary of the Board of Education than of an assistant librarian. For all the duties which came to his hands at the State House, he was fully equipped and admirably adapted. First by his legal training, then by his warm interest in all educational and scholarly pursuits and efforts, and finally, by his long and practical experience in founding, supervising and sustaining educational institutions, he had become a sort of expert in the science of education. When the State Library came under his systematic hand, it was redeemed from chaos and made available for use. The reports which came from the office of the secretary assumed new importance and interest. During his occupancy of the office, twenty-eight thousand volumes were added to the library, "making it, in some respects, the best law library in the Commonwealth." But the effective influence and activity of Dr. Jackson there was not merely that of an official. By his position he made the acquaintance of many of the leading educators, statesmen and lawyers of the Commonwealth and of other states. The library became a council chamber for college presidents, promoters of beneficent enterprises and liberal-minded donors to charitable institutions. Such men would rarely fail to drop into the library for a word of cheer or counsel when they visited the city. "His sound judgment, strict integrity and interest in every thing pertaining to the public welfare, gave him, in a high degree, the confidence of wise and good men. Few men in the State House were more consulted or more trusted than he." Such is the testimony of Dr. Sears, for a time

associated with him as Secretary of the Board of Education. Hon. Joseph White, another associate for sixteen years as Secretary of Education, says of him: "He brought to his entire work a ripe scholarship, a cool, unclouded judgment, a strong common sense, a fine legal acumen and a habit of prompt, untiring industry. After my sixteen years of observation, I am confident that no man within my knowledge has rendered the commonwealth a more useful and honorable service than Dr. Jackson, a service which will bear rich fruit in future years." Under these two secretaries for twenty-two years he filled the position of assistant librarian at the State House, with much satisfaction to himself, and with great acceptance to those with whom he had to do. But as years went on his health and strength, always on a low base, steadily failed, so that he was constrained to abandon his position in 1876. From this time he rapidly declined. Paralysis, combined with chronic disease, by degrees consumed his powers, both of body and mind, till the glad hour of release came, July 26, 1878.

It was the good fortune of Dr. Jackson to be the first pastor of a new church enterprise. He was by nature and taste an organizer. He possessed something of the spirit of the great Apostle who boasted that his aim had been "not to build on another man's foundation." To him came the pleasing duty of organizing the Sabbath-School, benevolent societies, the order and usages of worship, and the varied activities of a Christian Church. With such care and wisdom was this work done, as to require, like the stone meeting-house, only now and then a little interior renovation or remodeling.

We are told that when he entered upon his ministry "his style was classical, his manner in the pulpit, graceful and sprightly." As a preacher, however, he was distinguished "for his skill in adapting his sermons to the particular needs of his hearers." Says Professor Park, the best of judges, "His sermons were not marked by power, so much as by grace; not by brilliancy, so much as by dignity. They were argumentative, when argument was needed, but were generally didactic, often earnest, uniformly solemn. His manner was so natural; his voice so well cultivated and so expressive; his words were so choice and his thoughts so good; he was in such evident sympathy with his theme and with his hearers, that he drew into the sanctuary some men who had previously absented themselves from public worship; he attracted the uniform attention of his hearers; he satisfied them so fully that they were reluctant to have him exchange pulpits with other ministers, even when those ministers were celebrated men." His discourses on fast days, and thanksgiving days, when the New England pastor feels at liberty to leave slightly the beaten track of Sabbath service, were especially attractive. In his discussions of secular, state, and political affairs, he permitted free play to the varied powers of his





mind in graphic descriptions, keen witticisms, and pungent criticisms, which never failed to give pleasure, instruction and profit.

As a pastor, Dr. Jackson was faithful, attentive, sympathetic and tender. He visited each family in his small parish frequently, and could call all the children by name. He took special interest in the youth of both sexes. And when he found a lad of unusual promise, he took much pains to have him receive a liberal education. Thus, under his wise guidance, not a few West Andover boys have become useful and even eminent men, in the different professions in various parts of the country. He was also the trusted adviser of his people, acting at times as physician, lawyer and even instructor in horticulture and agriculture.

During his long pastorate, there were frequent revivals, in which a large number of persons were gathered into the church, some of whom as ministers, have done, and are still doing, good work for their Divine Master.

Aside from his professional work, Dr. Jackson gave much attention to the cause of education. He was associated with Samuel Farrar, Mr. Badger and other influential citizens, in starting a school in town for the higher education of girls, and was one of the committee selected to devise measures and form a constitution for such a school, and, when a liberal donation from Mrs. Abbot for this purpose had been received, and Abbot Academy had accepted its act of incorporation, he was chosen one of its trustees, in which trust he continued to the day of his death, a period of nearly fifty years. At times of urgent need or perplexity in the affairs of the institution, he was the man uniformly looked to for advice or help. He was a warm friend of Phillips Academy and the Theological Seminary of which he was trustee for thirty years.

While in the ministry, the reputation of Dr. Jackson extended beyond the limits of his own town and Association. He was invited to become president of Middlebury College, and repeatedly to become the pastor of churches much larger and richer than that at Andover. He received the degree of D.D. from Middlebury College.

Dr. Jackson published but little. The annual election sermon, which he delivered before the Governor, Lieutenant-Governor, Council and General Court in 1813, was published and created quite a furor of excitement. No little animosity was aroused by it against its author in certain quarters, on account of its sharp arraignment of the sins of the day.

Dr. Jackson married Miss Caroline True, daughter of William and Rebecca Mariner True. They had five children,—Samuel Charles, a young man of rare promise, who died at twenty-eight years of age; Caroline R., resides in Andover; Susan E., resides in Andover; Mary A. married to Rev. Wil-

liam Warren, Springfield, Ohio; William, doing business in Boston.

REV. CHARLES H. PEIRCE.—The second pastor of the West Parish Church was born in Peru, Mass., November 29, 1822. He graduated at Oberlin College in 1845, taught two years, then studied theology at Andover; graduating in 1850. Soon after graduation, he was settled in the West Parish, where he remained for four years and six months. After his dismissal he removed to the West, where he spent some seven years in labor with different churches in Illinois and Tennessee. On returning to this State he was settled in Millbury October 22, 1862, and died in office October 5, 1865, aged forty-three.

Mr. Peirce was a warm-hearted, active, kindly disposed man, who made friends wherever he went. A man of good abilities, and the full average of ministerial scholarship and pulpit talent, it was his misfortune to follow in his first pastorate a man of marked attainments and personal power. Nevertheless, he was esteemed both as a pastor and preacher, and "greatly beloved" by a large circle of friends in the community and in the ministry.

REV. JAMES H. MERRILL.—The third pastor was born in Lyndeborough, N. H., October 16, 1814. He was the son of Nathaniel and Elizabeth (Carpenter) Merrill. He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1834, taught two years in Fryeburg Academy, Maine, studied theology in Andover, graduating in 1839. His first settlement was at Montague, November 25, 1839, where he remained for more than sixteen years, and then became for twenty-three years the beloved pastor of the West Church.

After his dismissal, December 1, 1879, Mr. Merrill made a protracted visit to his children living at the West. On returning to town, he located his home on the "Hill," where he lived, and, by slow degrees faded away, till on the 28th day of October, 1886, he fell on sleep.

Mr. Merrill was of slight build, delicate in constitution and of limited strength, with hereditary tendencies to consumption. Hence he never felt himself to be physically equal to the work of a large parish. He courted the quiet country, and was perfectly satisfied to spend his days in ministering to a small church of intelligent and appreciative people. Such a church and people he found and loved in the West Parish. He was exceptionally wise in this, that, quite early in his ministerial life, he took the measure of his strength, and, while expending this strength daily quite up to its maximum, he rarely much exceeded this, save under special stress. It was a matter of conscience with him to husband his vitality. By so doing, he was able to hold back his hereditary enemy, and spread his work over many years, accomplishing more for his people and the cause of Christ and the church, than many others with sound constitution and equal abilities.



Mr. Merrill was an instructive, rather than a stimulating preacher. He was methodical in his pulpit preparation, as in his parochial visits, and brought "beaten oil" into the sanctuary. True to his own convictions, and a critical student of the Scriptures, he always had something fresh and profitable for his people, who took truth from his lips as from the lips of a prophet. His opinions on controverted matters were cautiously formed, firmly held, and frankly stated. Controversy, engendering hard feeling, he religiously shunned. A man of sound judgment, genial temper, affable, courteous, unambitious, without craft, envy or hypocrisy. Recognising the fact that the young men of his parish, in large numbers, left the farm for a wider sphere of activity, he regarded the work of training the youth to a reverence for truth, righteousness, honor and piety, as of pre-eminent importance. This work he never lost sight of, and never failed to emphasize. The result has been that a goodly number of West Andover boys are now to be found among the active and leading lawyers, ministers, railroad and business men all over the country, from Maine to California.

Mr. Merrill was a scholar himself, and a warm friend of all educational institutions, from the common school upwards. As trustee for twenty-three years, of the Punchard Free School, and for a like period one of three composing its Visiting Committee, upon whom devolved the supervision of its instruction, he gave much time and thought to the education of the young. In these varied spheres of activity and usefulness, Mr. Merrill so carried himself as to secure the favor of the people at large, and the esteem and affection of his parishioners and others who were privileged to enjoy his friendship.

Mr. Merrill married Miss Lucia Wadsworth Griswold, daughter of Dr. Oliver Griswold, of Fryeburg, Maine. They have had five children: James G., D.D., Pastor of the First Congregational Church, St. Louis, Missouri; William F., (General Manager of the H. & St. J., C. B. & K. C. R. R.); George C., (deceased) Professor in Washburn College, Kansas, and teacher in Phillips' Academy; Sarah E. married Rev. Joseph D. Wilson, Rector of St. John's Reformed Episcopal Church, Chicago; Lucia S. resides in Andover.

THE REV. AUSTIN BURR, the fourth pastor, was born in Charlestown, Ohio, June 18, 1849; received his collegiate training at Oberlin College, and his theological instruction at Andover Seminary, graduating in 1875. His first settlement was in Franklin, N. H., November 3, 1875, where he remained until 1880, when he came to the West Parish. Since leaving this parish, he has been settled in Peterboro', N. H., where he still remains. He married Miss Fanny Hammond, of Andover.

The present pastor, Rev. Frederick W. Greene, received his collegiate education at Amherst, and his theological instruction at Hartford Seminary, Conn.

#### LATER CHURCHES OF VARIOUS DENOMINATIONS.

For a century and a quarter, the South Church, with its daughter, the West Church, embraced in its ecclesiastical fold the entire territory of the South Precinct. The people of this territory were all expected to attend public worship, first at the meeting-house in the South Church, and afterwards at that or the house of the West Church. They were by law compelled to pay taxes for the support of worship in one or the other of the parishes, whether they attended the service or not. This was the state of things till the year 1833; then the law was so changed as to give people the liberty to worship where they pleased, and to pay taxes when and as much as they pleased. This was followed by the incoming of other sects.

METHODISTS.—As early as 1829, the Methodists began to hold occasional services in the bank hall, but not for four or five years did they acquire sufficient strength to establish regular worship and build a meeting-house. For a few years, this society flourished, some of the tax-payers leaving the South Church and joining their number. But little by little they grew feeble, and in 1840 gave up regular service. The meeting-house was finally sold to the parties who formed the "Free Church," and is now, after undergoing extensive alterations, their house of worship. Some of the Methodists followed it to its new site, and joined the "Free Church."

While there has been no Methodist preaching in the center of the town since this sale of the meeting-house, there has been, and now is, a Methodist Society at Ballard Vale. In 1851, a Methodist meeting-house was built in this village, and, since then, with more or less regularity, preaching has been sustained there. By the liberality of Capt. Bradlee, they have a neat place of worship, and a commodious parsonage.

BAPTISTS.—A Baptist Church was formed and recognized October 3, 1832, the services of recognition being held in the South Church meeting-house. The society erected and dedicated a house of their own August 28, 1834. For fifteen years the church sustained regular preaching, having during these years five different pastors, who remained from one to five years each. After the departure of the last of these pastors, October, 1849, the church was without stated preaching until its dissolution, which took place December 8, 1857, sixteen of its members uniting with a Baptist church in Lawrence. The pastor of this church, Rev. Frank Remington, after a time, opened the meeting-house of the denomination in town for services. His preaching drew a full congregation, and was attended with such marked success in the conversion of the unregenerate and the quickening of the old members of the church, that a new church (with one hundred and fifty-six members) was formed and recognized July 28, 1858, a little over seven months from the time the





church had, in despair, disbanded. At this time they received as their pastor Rev. William S. McKenzie, who remained with them for more than two years. Since his dismissal, December, 1860, the church has sustained regular services, and had four stated preachers and various temporary supplies. Rev. H. R. Wilbur, who was the pastor from April, 1872, to October, 1876, has been their most reliable and abiding pastor. He is now a resident of the town, a public-spirited citizen, who, by his money and his personal labors in the church and parish, contributes largely to the maintenance of the religious services. The feeble health of Mr. Wilbur forbids his assuming the active pastorate of the church, but his assistance is invaluable to its prosperity, if not to its existence. Dr. Bronson, who recently left the service of the church for a western field of labor, ministered to them for a number of years.

**PROTESTANT EPISCOPAL (CHRIST) CHURCH.**—Mr. Abraham Marland, an immigrant from England, a member of the English Church, a successful manufacturer in Andover, and, withal, a man of sterling piety, liberality, and indomitable purpose, has been called, with much aptness, "the father of the Episcopal Society in Andover." It had been his determination for years, while rising from poverty to riches, to see an Episcopal Church established in his adopted home, "even if the whole cost of it were borne by himself." Through his agency, doubtless, a liturgical service was held at the South Church meeting-house, by Rev. Dr. Stone, rector of St. Paul's Church, Boston, as early as December 25, 1833. But, though the society was in embryo in the mind of Mr. Marland at this time, no serious effort was made to form an Episcopal Church till 1835. On July 26th of that year "an Episcopal service was held in the bank hall," conducted by Bishop Smith, of Kentucky. He was followed by other distinguished clergymen of the denomination, including Bishop Griswold. On the 4th day of August following twenty-three men met together, and agreed to "form themselves into a religious society, to be called the Episcopal Society in Andover." They drew up a petition to N. W. Hazen, Esq., justice of the peace, for him "to issue a warrant for calling the first meeting" of the society. This meeting was held August 6th, when an organization was formed, and the customary officers chosen.

The formation of this society was, ecclesiastically, an entirely novel movement in the town, not in sympathy with its antecedents, or prevailing sentiment. It drew from the South Parish a goodly number of able and influential men and prominent families. But this new ecclesiastical departure, attended by a depletion of its membership, was not merely acquiesced in by the South Parish, but generously encouraged by friendly speech and acts. The Christmas service of the new church, with decorations and music, was held for the first time, by invitation, in

the meeting-house of the South Parish. These services were conducted by Bishop Griswold, who, in administering the communion, extended an invitation to partake in the ordinance, so liberal as to bring many members of the South Church to receive the sacred emblems at his hands. The present rector of the Episcopal Church, Rev. Leverett Bradley, in his admirable semi-centennial sermon, from which the facts of this paper are mostly drawn, in recalling this passage in the history of his church, says, "Whatever may have been the spirit of the most populous churches towards the Episcopal Church during the first century of her life in America, it is well to know that in Andover the Episcopal Church has received nothing but the best wishes and kindly interest from all denominations." "The South Church by the loan of its building to our people on several occasions, that they might hold liturgical services and listen to preaching by one of their own clergymen, disclosed a spirit of Christian brotherhood, as the most carefully drawn resolutions could not have done,"—giving "new proof of the large-minded, Christian spirit of the officers and members" of this church.

Mr. Marland, as has been intimated, was the most liberal supporter of this enterprise. He gave the cemetery lot, built and donated the "rectory," contributed freely towards building the church edifice, and sustaining public worship. His son-in-law and partner in business, Mr. Benjamin H. Punchard, gave seven thousand dollars, as a testamentary bequest, to the society, the income of which is available for current expenses.

• The church has had six rectors and two ministers, all of whom have been worthy and capable clergymen, and some of them notably able. Dr. Fuller, in his two pastorates, served the church sixteen years, and in this time did much towards forming its character and shaping its destiny. He was a man, physically and intellectually, fitted to command the respect of his fellow-men, and in heart and life such as to win their confidence and esteem. His influence was felt beyond his parish in the esthetic, educational and moral interests of the town, and in the councils of the diocese.

In the summer of 1885, Mr. John Byers, a liberal merchant of New York, whose deceased parents were members of this church, wishing to erect some memorial to their memory, and, above all, to do something that would be of permanent service to the church and the cause of Christ, offered to build and furnish a new stone church edifice, and give it to the parish. On the evening of the Sabbath, February 28, 1886, while preparation was going forward for confirmation services, to be performed by the Bishop, the original church building took fire from a defective chimney and was entirely consumed. The present stone edifice, the gift of Mr. Byers, was erected in 1886, and consecrated with appropriate services, Dr. Phillips Brooks



of Boston preaching the sermon, and Bishop Paddock conducting the consecrating rites on January 4, 1887.

The new edifice is a tasty and commodious structure, costing, with its furnishings, not far from forty-one thousand dollars. It is credited by all as a choice specimen of church architecture, an instructive lesson in enduring stone, an ornament to the town and a priceless boon to the church. It is thought by some good judges to be, architecturally, the finest public building in town, while others give precedence to the stone Chapel on the Hill.

"The building is of the Byzantine Romanesque style of architecture, built of reddish granite with trimmings of Kibbe stone. The church fronts to the east, contrary to the usual custom, owing to the position of the lot. The tower, situated on the southeast corner, is a large, plain and solid structure, and contains a semicircular staircase. It serves as the principal porch of the building, and is balanced by a smaller porch on the northeast corner. The chancel is semi-circular in form. The rectangular auditorium has a seating capacity of four hundred. The pews are open and of oak finish. The roof of the main body of the church is of hard pine construction, the panels between the rafters being of spruce, and the whole being shellaced in natural color. The ceiling of the semi-circular chancel or apsis is treated with honeycomb in gold, and is devoid of stars. The decoration throughout the church is exceedingly quiet and simple, particularly the stained glass windows in the apsis, which, although very rich in color, are framed by a ground of rather dark color. Five of them represent the life of John the Baptist,—as a child, in the wilderness, as a preacher, in prison, and received up." A sixth is inscribed to the memory of the donor's brother.

The organ was the gift of Mr. Horace H. Tyer and Miss Catherine L. Tyer in memory of their father and mother, Henry George and Elizabeth Tyer, former worshippers at Christ Church. Miss Catherine Tyer died suddenly intestate. Her heirs discovered among her papers a memorandum of a purpose to give \$10,000 to the parish. In recognition of this wish, they have given the above sum as a permanent fund, one-fourth of the income to be expended for the care and improvement of the church grounds, the remainder for the church music. There is a chapel connected with the church at its northwest corner, of corresponding architecture, and built of the same material.

**UNIVERSALISTS.**—"A Universalist Society was formed in town in the fall of 1838. A church was formed later. Public worship was irregularly sustained till 1846, when for several years it was entirely suspended." The declared purpose of organizing this society, as set forth in its records, was "the promotion of truth and morality among its members, and also the world at large, and as the Gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ is calculated above all truth to

inspire the heart with the emotions of benevolence and virtue, this Society shall deem it one of its main objects to support the preaching of the Gospel according to the Society's ability, and to aid in spreading a knowledge of it among men." The society sustained public worship for twenty-five years, with considerable intervals of suspension, when regular preaching was abandoned, and the meeting-house was finally sold and devoted to other uses. During its existence, this church had seven resident ministers or stated supplies, Rev. Varnum Lincoln being the one longest in service. Mr. Lincoln was pastor for five years, and, after an interval of several years, a regular supply for a time. He now resides in Andover, where he has served for a term on the School Committee, and is an active member of the "Farmers' Club."

**THE FREE CHRISTIAN CHURCH.**—This church was organized May 7, 1846, with a membership of forty-four persons, drawn from the South and West Parishes, and largely from the disbanded Methodist Society. A number of circumstances combined at this time to bring the church into existence. The partners of the Smith & Dove Manufacturing Company were natives of Scotland. Their operatives were almost exclusively from Scotland. They did not fully coalesce with the natives of Andover. The factory village was at some distance from existing places of worship. Above all, the anti-slavery agitation had begun to introduce dissension into the churches. The more determined opponents of slavery held that the church should not fellowship with those churches at the South which upheld slavery, or with those churches at the North that fellowshipped with the Southern churches, nor should they unite with either of them in any missionary work at home or abroad. Many of this class did not go to the extreme of denouncing the entire church as "the bulwark of slavery," or in demanding that all true friends of the State should "come out" of the churches. They wished to have a church connection, but in a church that should be free from all alliance, near or remote with slavery. Messrs. Smith and Dove belonged to the latter class of anti-slavery men.

Under these converging circumstances the project of a new church had its birth. The church took its name—"The Free Christian Church"—partly, it may be, from the attachment of many of its members to the church of their home in the old country, but, more especially, as a declaration of severance from every religious organization which in any way tolerated slavery. Its seats were not free. It did not fellowship with the neighboring churches by sitting in council with them, or by an exchange of pulpit services by its ministers with theirs for a number of years. At first the congregation worshipped in the vacant house of the Universalists. In 1849 the meeting-house of the Methodists was purchased by Mr. John Smith, removed from Main Street to where it





now stands, repaired and fitted up within and without, a spire and bell added, and, altogether, it made a neat and commodious place of worship. It was dedicated March 9, 1850. The expense was borne by Mr. John Smith, who conveyed the property by deed to the parish, and, in addition, gave the society a permanent fund of five thousand dollars. Some years subsequent to this a parsonage was built near by the house of worship, and given to the society by Messrs. Smith and Dove.

At first the church, not recognizing the neighboring churches, did not settle its ministers in the usual Congregational method, through the medium of a council composed of pastors and delegates from other Congregational Churches. They were employed by the year. In this way the church had, between February 1, 1846, and November 5, 1865, five ministers, who served it from one to six years each. This church, while not in fellowship, was always at peace with its neighbors, and its stated supplies were always in brotherly accord with the pastors of neighboring churches. At the close of the War of the Rebellion all distinctions were obliterated. The next minister called by the church—Rev. James P. Lane—was duly installed, after the Congregational custom, by a council composed of pastors and delegates from neighboring churches, and this practice has continued to the present time.

Rev. James P. Lane was pastor from April 4, 1866, to March 27, 1870.

Rev. Edwin S. Williams from November 29, 1870, to April 24, 1872.

Rev. G. Frederick Wright from May 27, 1872, to September 4, 1881.

The present pastor, Rev. F. Barrows Makepeace, was installed January 12, 1882.

Mr. Lane has since been settled in Bristol, R. I., and in Norton, where he now resides. Mr. Williams has been engaged in ministerial work at the West, in various capacities, and has now the charge of city missionary work in Minneapolis, Minn.

Mr. Wright, on leaving his pastorate here, became professor of New Testament Greek, in the Theological Department of Oberlin College, where he received his education. He is still there. Mr. Wright has been much interested in scientific studies, especially those pertaining to geology and biology. He has published numerous papers on these and kindred subjects, which have attracted the attention of scholars. Since the publication of the *Bibliotheca* has been removed to Oberlin, he has been its principal editor. He has also published a small treatise entitled "The Logic of Christian Evidences," especially designed for the use of the higher schools of learning. He has received the degree of Doctor of Divinity.

The church, from a membership in 1846 of forty-four, has increased to three hundred and sixty-nine, and now has the largest membership of any Protestant

church in town, and also the largest Sabbath-school. Its house of worship has been refitted, improved, and made more attractive. With its large financial ability, its increasing and active membership, and full congregation, it has the "promise and potency" of future growth and usefulness, surpassing those of the past.

**UNION CHURCH, BALLARD VALE.**—After some unsuccessful efforts to establish an Episcopal Church in the Vale, and to unite all denominations in one religious enterprise, a church was organized in 1850, called the "Union Congregational Church." The Rev. Henry S. Greene was its minister from its organization in 1850 to the day of his death, June 11, 1880. Mr. Greene was born in 1807; graduated at Amherst College, 1834; at Andover Theological Seminary, 1837; was thirteen years settled in Lynnfield, before coming to Ballard Vale. He left no children—his only child, a son educated at Amherst College, having died before him. Through his efforts a comfortable place of worship has been erected for the society which he so long served. He also left to the church for a parsonage his residence at the Vale. The society has always been weak, depending upon the Home Missionary Society for aid. Rev. Samuel Bowker is the present pastor.

**ST. AUGUSTINE (CATHOLIC) CHURCH.**—This church was gathered by the Augustine Fathers of Lawrence in 1852. The first pastor was Rev. James O'Donnell. He was followed in 1862, by Rev. Edward Mullen, O.S.A., and in 1863 by Michael F. Gallagher, O.S.A., by Rev. Ambrose A. Mullen, O.S.A., in 1869, by Rev. Maurice J. Murphy, O.S.A., in the fall of 1876, and by Rev. J. J. Ryan in the fall of 1887. This society worshipped in a house built on Central Street, now unoccupied. With the increasing number of worshippers it became necessary to provide a larger house for their accommodation, and the present edifice was erected, and consecrated September 2, 1883. The Sabbath audience here averages not far from six hundred, with a Sabbath-school of one hundred and seventy. There is a branch society at Ballard Vale, served by Rev. J. J. Ryan, the pastor of the Augustine Church, which has a neat little chapel for its religious purposes. The members of this large society are almost exclusively of Irish nativity or descent, showing what a marked change has taken place in the nativity and religion of the people during the last half-century. The charitable and beneficent organizations sustained by it are "the Young Ladies' Sodality," "the Married Ladies' Sodality," and "the Children of Mercy." It has furnished the church with two priests,—Rev. Daniel D. Regan, pastor of St. John's Church, Mechanicsville, N. Y., and Rev. Timothy H. Regan, assistant pastor at Johnsonville, N. Y. These priests are both sons of John Regan, of Andover, and were educated at the Punchard Free School and Villanova College, Pennsylvania.

**MINISTERS.**—The following persons, who were either born in Andover South Parish, or resided here



with their parents when children, have become ministers. The list is taken largely from that made by Dr. Moear for the "South Church Manual."

John Blunt, son of William.....	graduated 1727
James Chandler, son of Thomas.....	graduated 1728
Samuel Chandler, son of Josiah.....	graduated 1735
Abiel Abbott, son of Deacon John.....	graduated 1737
John Chandler, son of Thomas.....	graduated 1743
Nathan Holt, son of Nicholas.....	graduated 1757
Abiel Foster, <sup>1</sup> son of Captain Asa.....	graduated 1756
David Osgood, D.D., son of Captain Isaac.....	graduated 1771
John Abbott, <sup>2</sup> son of Captain John.....	graduated 1784
Robert Gray, son of Robert.....	graduated 1786
Peter Holt, son of Deacon Joshua.....	graduated 1790
Abiel Abbott, D.D., son of Captain John.....	graduated 1792
Jonathan French, D.D., son of Rev. Jonathan.....	graduated 1798
Thos. Abbot Merrill, D.D., son of Deacon Thomas.....	graduated 1801
John Lovejoy Abbott, son of John Lovejoy.....	graduated 1806
Joshua Chandler, son of Major Abiel.....	graduated 1807
Jaime Holt, son of Ebenezer.....	graduated 1813
Samuel Phelps Newman, son of Deacon Mark.....	graduated 1816
John R. Adams, son of John.....	graduated 1821
Ames Blanchard, D.D., <sup>3</sup> son of Deacon Amos.....	graduated 1825
Wm. Adams, D.D., <sup>4</sup> son of Principal J. Adams.....	graduated 1827
Leonard Woods, <sup>5</sup> son of Prof. Leonard Woods.....	graduated 1827
Joshua Emery, son of Joshua.....	graduated 1831
Sereno Timothy Abbott, son of Asa.....	graduated 1833
Samuel Hopkins Emery, son of Joshua.....	graduated 1834
Wilson Truitt, son of Ezra.....	graduated 1836
Daniel Bates Woods, son of Prof. Leonard.....	graduated 1837
Daniel Emerson, son of Prof. Emerson.....	graduated 1839
Jonathan Edwards, son of Dr. Justin.....	graduated 1839
Thomas E. Foster, son of Captain Thomas.....	graduated 1840
Joseph Emerson, <sup>6</sup> son of Prof. Emerson.....	graduated 1841
Charles A. Aiken, D.D., <sup>7</sup> son of Hon. John.....	graduated 1846
Samuel Emerson, son of Prof. Emerson.....	graduated 1848
Peter Smith Ryers, son of Jesse (not ordained).....	graduated 1851
George Merrill, <sup>8</sup> son of Benjamin (West Parish).....	graduated 1851
George Johnson, son of Principal Osgood.....	graduated 1852
Simon S. Fuller, son of Dr. Fuller (Episcopal).....	graduated 1858
John F. Aiken, son of Hon. John.....	graduated 1858
William F. Edwards Park, son of Prof. F. A. Park.....	graduated 1864
Allen C. Barrows, son of Prof. Barrows.....	graduated 1864
John Phelps Taylor, <sup>9</sup> son of Prof. John L.....	graduated 1862
James S. Merrill, D.D., <sup>10</sup> son of Rev. James H.	
(West Parish).....	graduated 1863
John H. Manning, <sup>11</sup> son of Thomas.....	graduated 1864
David S. Morgan, Andover Theological Seminary.....	graduated 1866
E. Winchester Donald, D.D., son of William	
(Free Church).....	graduated 1869
Daniel D. Regan, son of John (Catholic).....	graduated 1870
Moses Stuart Phelps, <sup>12</sup> son of Prof. A. Phelps.....	graduated 1869

<sup>1</sup> Representative in the General Court, New Hampshire, president of the State Senate, Chief Justice of Court Common Pleas, Rockingham County, Representative in the Continental Congress, and for ten years in the Congress under the present Constitution.

<sup>2</sup> Instructor in Phillips Academy, merchant in Portland, professor of the Greek and Latin languages in Bowdoin College, treasurer of the college.

<sup>3</sup> Librarian of Harvard College, minister of the First Church, Boston.

<sup>4</sup> Principal of Phillips Academy.

<sup>5</sup> Pastor of First Church and Kirk Street Church, Lowell, from 1829 to 1870, till death, forty-one years.

<sup>6</sup> Pastor of Madison Square Presbyterian Church, N. Y., president of Union Theological Seminary, N. Y.

<sup>7</sup> Professor in Bangor Theological Seminary, and president of Bowdoin College, Maine.

<sup>8</sup> Professor of ancient languages, Beloit College.

<sup>9</sup> Professor in Dartmouth College, in New Jersey. College, president of Union College, professor in Princeton Theological Seminary.

<sup>10</sup> Professor in Pacific Theological Seminary, California.

<sup>11</sup> Professor in Andover Theological Seminary.

<sup>12</sup> Andover Theological Seminary.

<sup>13</sup> Professor in Smith College, Northampton.

Charles H. Abbott, <sup>13</sup> son of Henry.....	graduated 1875
George H. Guttererson, <sup>14</sup> son of George.....	graduated 1878
Lawrence Phelps, son of Prof. Austin Phelps.	
J. D. Stone, son of Nahum (Baptist).	

## CHAPTER CXXXVII.

### ANDOVER—(Continued).

#### EDUCATIONAL.

THE first settlers of the town were for the most part poorly educated. The men could, as a rule, read, write and perform such mathematical calculations as were required in their ordinary business. There were only a few whose education took a much wider range. A large proportion of the women had even less learning than the men. Many of them, in good social standing, could neither read nor write. When there was occasion for their signatures, they made their marks. But there was no lack of desire for a better education on the part of these thus deficient. There is evidence that, from the first settlement, there was a purpose on the part of the settlers to create schools. They early provided for the education of their children, so far at least as to have them taught to "Read, Rite and Cypher." The ministers were, to a certain extent, teachers; they fitted lads for Harvard College.

Dames' schools were also early established for the instruction of young children. These were taught by women who had more education and leisure than their female neighbors, and were usually kept at the homes of the teachers.

The residence of Gov. Bradstreet and his family in the town for a number of years, doubtless, gave an impulse to all these efforts for a better education. The sons of the Governor, fitted at the parsonage for college, and graduated at Harvard, mingling with the people, helped them the better to realize the value of learning. The educated man was the oracle of the town. As men prospered and acquired the means, they sent their sons to college. As early as 1678 the town sent to Harvard a contribution of twelve bushels of corn as "a compliment for y<sup>e</sup> new building of y<sup>e</sup> College," showing that the college was an object of interest, and held out aspirations for their children.

In the year 1647, by an act of the Colonial Legislature, every township of fifty families was required to support a school in which children should be taught to read and write; and every town of a hundred families was required to maintain a grammar school, in which boys could be fitted for Harvard College. In 1683 the Legislature further enacted that a township of five hundred families should support

<sup>14</sup> Chicago Theological Seminary.

<sup>15</sup> Andover Theological Seminary, missionary in India.





two such grammar schools. The instruction in these schools was required to be of such a grade that the pupils fitting for college could "read any classical author into English, and readily speak and make true Latin, and write it in verse as well as prose, and perfectly decline the paradigms of nouns and verbs in the Greek tongue."

These laws laid a heavy tax upon the people struggling to get a living and establish homes, but they seem to have been for the most part cheerfully borne. It is impossible to say when Andover, by its growth, came under these laws. But it is a matter of record that not till 1701 did the town take measures to comply with the law requiring a grammar school. In February 3, 1700-1, it was "voted that a convenient school-house be erected at y<sup>e</sup> parting of y<sup>e</sup> ways, by Joseph Wilson's, to be twenty foot long and sixteen foot wide." And further, the selectmen were ordered to employ for the school a suitable master from year to year. This latter order was more easily voted than executed. Suitable masters were scarce. The college graduates were in demand for the ministry. The compensation of teachers was small. But Andover at that time was more fortunate than her neighbors in having a son of her own, a recent graduate of Harvard, who was fitted for the place and willing to take it. Mr. Dudley Bradstreet, son of Gov. Bradstreet, in 1704 became master of the first grammar school in town. He was followed in this office, in quick succession, by forty-one others, whose united services covered eighty-seven years. In this line of grammar school masters we find some notable names, among whom are Wm. Symmes, Jr., Samuel Phillips and Eliphalet Pearson. The amount of money appropriated yearly for the support of the school varied from thirty-five to forty-five pounds, not certainly affording a luxurious living to an ambitious graduate of Harvard.

When the town was divided by act of the General Court, in 1708, into "two distinct precincts," the grammar school was not divided, but, under the same master, was held alternately in each precinct. In 1718 a school-house was erected in the South Precinct "upon the Hill, on the Southwest of the Meeting House." This being done, an agreement was entered into, between the selectmen and Mr. James Bailey, January 12, 1719, according to which he was "to keep a gramer school for one year following, for forty-four pounds, and he is to teach children to Read and elder persons to wright and Sifer as far as they are capable for the Time being, according to the Regular methods of such a school, and to keep the School in each precinct for the s<sup>d</sup> Term of Time, and to begin the schoole about three-quarters of an hour after seven a'clock, and to keep it according to the accustomed manner in the Sheer Towne."

As the population increased in the "outskirts" of the town, there arose a demand for school accommodation nearer their places of residence. This led to

sending the master, for a time, into different localities to attend upon his scholars. We have the following account of one Philemon Robbins, who was master in 1729, as narrated by Miss Bailey:

"Philemon Robbins came first to keep a school in Andover, and began his school in y<sup>e</sup> south end of y<sup>e</sup> Town, and continued there 3 months, and then went behind the pond in y<sup>e</sup> first day of December, and continued there until the 25th day of said December, and then Returned to the middle of the Town and was sent to the south end of the town, and continued there until the Last of January, and then was sent and continued in the middle of the town into y<sup>e</sup> Last of February next, and then was sent behind the pond in y<sup>e</sup> 3d day of March, and to continue there fourteen nights, and then y<sup>e</sup> 16th March was returned to y<sup>e</sup> middle of y<sup>e</sup> town, and continued there nine weeks."

This wandering of the schoolmaster over the town to teach the children reminds us of the custom which once prevailed in the country towns of New England, for the cobblers and tailoresses to go around among the people, doing the work of their craft in the homes of their patrons.

Regular schools were not established in the outlying districts before 1755. The schools at first were of a lower grade than the grammar school, teaching little save reading, writing and arithmetic. They were taught in winter by men, in the summer by women.

In 1795 the town was divided into twelve districts, in each of which a school was sustained from six to eight months of the year. The money for the support of these twelve schools was raised by taxation, as at present. This money was apportioned to the schools according to the number of families residing in the district. When this arrangement was first made, there were four hundred and one families in the town, and six hundred dollars were raised for their support, or an average of fifty dollars for each school. Two years later the sum raised was eight hundred dollars. When the district system went into operation the grammar school was discontinued. The winter schools being taught by masters, two-thirds of the money raised for the support of scholars was devoted to the winter schools. This practice of having the winter schools taught by men, in which much the larger portion of the money appropriated was expended, prevailed for more than half a century. It was then universally thought that female teachers were unsuitable for winter schools, not so much from their lack of knowledge, as from their lack of muscle. The older boys of the district, who, in the summer, were employed on the farm or in the shop, were expected to attend the winter school for three or four months. These boys were supposed to need discipline no less than instruction. The long ferule and the birch were as necessary an outfit for the master as the Arithmetic



and the Reader. Hence the committee, in looking for a master, had regard to his physical, no less than his intellectual equipment. In these winter schools, in not a few districts in the State, there used to be continually recurring contests between the big boys and the master for supremacy. Not seldom was it that the boys came off victors, though, as a rule, the birch rod and oaken ruler conquered. When the master was overcome and cast from the door of the school-room into a snow-drift, as was sometimes the case, he usually vacated his office.

The writer has personally known of two such instances. As late as 1848, in a district school in a thriving village, which had from the first been under the charge of a master during the winter session, the master was turned out of the school-house and thrown into a snow-drift by the older boys. This was not generally looked upon by the parents as anything to be severely reprov'd. The struggle between master and boys, like hazing in college, being of ancient custom, was treated with sufferance. In the case referred to, however, a different state of feeling as to this practice having gained influence in the district, the following winter the district committee-man was persuaded to employ a young lady, who had taught the summer school with marked success, to continue in the same school through the winter session. When the news of this new departure spread over the district, it produced consternation in some parents and called forth open opposition and threats from others. The teacher was of small stature but full of pluck, richly endowed with good nature, tact and common sense, and withal, abundantly supplied with knowledge and mother wit. The protesting and indignant parents were told that the lady teacher would take her place in the school-room at the appointed time, that she was amply qualified to instruct their sons in any branch of learning they might wish to pursue, and that, if they sent their boys to school for the purpose of being flogged, the committee would hire an Irishman to discharge that part of the teacher's duty. The school was successfully "kept," and from that day to this no master has been employed in the district.

The district schools in this town were sometimes called "outsirt" schools, sometimes "squadron" schools, and were in session from six to eight months. They were much under the oversight of the minister of the two parishes, who visited them regularly and "catechised" the children. Dr. Edwards distinguished himself for special fidelity in this service. As all the parents belonged to his parish, this practice of his, so far from being cause for complaint, was matter of universal approval and commendation.

Within comparatively a short time, great changes have taken place in the public schools of the town. The district system has been abolished. The schools are graded into primary, intermediate, grammar and

high schools, and in all the grades are further divided into classes. Those supported by the town are all taught by ladies. The Punchard Free School, which takes the place of a high school, has a male principal and two female assistants. The employment of teachers and the supervision of the schools have been placed in the hands of a committee chosen by the town. Eight thousand dollars a year are appropriated for the support of schools, besides the income from the Punchard fund. The school buildings are all owned and cared for by the town. They are neat, commodious and comfortable, which could not have been said of some of them under the district system. The grammar, and the high or Punchard school buildings, are of brick, large, airy, fitted with all modern appliances for health, convenience, comfort, and for aiding study. The aim is to secure the best teachers, and to continue them in office as long as they give satisfaction or desire to remain. There are at present twenty teachers employed in the town schools.

THE PROPRIETORS' FUND.—This fund, as its name implies, is a gift, or appropriation, made by the proprietors of the town, successors of the original proprietors who purchased the township from the Indian Sagamore, and were confirmed in their title by a grant from the General Court. This company retained its legal existence till all the land included in their purchase and grant had been deeded to individuals, or donated to public uses. In closing up their accounts, previous to dissolution, they found a surplus of money in their treasury amounting to \$1719. As this property had come into their hands not for personal advantage, but to be used by them, as trustees, for the public benefit, they decided to devote the money to educational purposes in the town. We find on their book of records that at a meeting held September 23, 1801, it was "voted that the money belonging to the proprietors of Andover be equally divided between the two parishes." After more mature deliberation it was subsequently "voted that the said property be divided into two equal parts; the income of the one-half to be applied to the instruction of youth of both sexes in reading, writing and arithmetic in free schools in the South Parish in said Andover; the other half to be appropriated to the use of the Academy in the North Parish in Andover." At this meeting a committee was appointed to carry the vote into effect. As the matter was finally arranged, a charter was obtained from the General Court creating a self-perpetuating board of trustees for each of the parishes, to hold and use the fund, "*in perpetuum*," in accordance with the vote of the proprietors. The charter for the South Parish is a lengthy one, going much into details. It is carefully drawn, has six sections, provides for the holding of additional funds by the trustees, and evidently manifests an expectation that their fund will become a nucleus for the gathering in of other considerable sums, to be devoted to





free schooling. They, however, limit the amount to be held by their trustees to a sum that will yield an income of one thousand dollars. The expectation of these early friends of free schooling has not been realized in the manner they anticipated. Not a dollar has been added to the original fund, either by gift or bequest. The trustees of the fund are still in existence, and, preserving the principal intact, they yearly pay over the income to the School Committee, who use it to lengthen out the schools beyond the time they are supported by the town appropriations.

But this small sum has the honorable distinction of being the first money set apart in trust, the income of which is to be used for education.

What the silent influence of this small trust fund may have been, no one can say. That it was prophetic is apparent. It was suggestive. It was a constant reminder of a judicious way of forever benefiting a community. The yearly use of the income of a permanent fund for free schools in the town, being a familiar fact to Judge Phillips from his boyhood, may have implanted in his mind, early and unawares, the idea of a trust fund administered for educational purposes. If not thus the seed-corn of an abundant harvest of like benefactions, it was certainly the forerunner of such benefactions, munificent in amount and unspeakably fruitful in results. It is not unreasonable to suppose that the latent germ of a free high school should have been hidden in the proprietors' perpetual fund. However this may be, it was in Andover that the first incorporated institution for the higher education of boys and divinity students, and for a like education for girls, had their birth. Phillips Academy, the Theological Seminary and Abbot Female Academy, each the first of its kind endowed and incorporated in the country, have sent the fame of this small country town over the civilized world, and further still, into the darkness of heathen lands. Other towns in the State far surpass Andover in other respects, some in commercial enterprise and importance, some in the fertility of their soil, some in their manufacturing interests and industries, some in their wealth and architectural adornments, some as places of heroic historic deeds; but Andover is second to no other town in the State, Cambridge excepted, for its historic educational institutions, and the wide influence, through these institutions, it has exerted in the fields of letters, science, statesmanship, morals and religion. Hence, of all the things pertaining to the history of the town, the inception, growth and character of these institutions of learning are of the foremost consequence.

**MASTER FOSTER'S SCHOOL.**—Previous to our notice of these incorporated institutions of learning, it may be proper to mention a select school for lads opened in the South Parish by Mr. William Foster, not long after the removal of Judge Phillips to the South Parish. This private school was, for the most part, patronized from abroad. Mr. Foster took the

lads into his family, and gave them such care and training as their age and circumstances required. "Master Foster's" school became quite celebrated, and proved to be, both to master and pupils, a source of profit. It was continued for a series of years, or till the teacher had become enfeebled by age.

**PUNCHARD FREE SCHOOL.**—The Punchard Free School, as its name implies, was established by the munificent bequest of Mr. Benjamin Hanover Punchard. Mr. Punchard was born in Salem, Mass., December 16, 1799. His ancestors were immigrants from the island of Jersey. His father dying when he was only ten years of age, he was compelled, from that date, to earn his own living. Up to this time he had enjoyed the advantages of good schools and competent teachers. But, at this early age, his educational opportunities terminated.

That he improved well the privileges he enjoyed is evident from the fact that, when a little above the age of eleven, he was employed as a copyist, afterwards as a clerk in a West India store in Boston.

In this latter employment he developed so much ability, and displayed such industry and fidelity, as to secure the confidence of his employers, and, at twenty years of age, a partnership in the firm. But the labor and responsibility of his position wore upon his constitution, enfeebled by undue hardships in his youth. He was obliged to give up business and retire from the firm at twenty-eight years of age. He had, however, in this brief period, acquired a handsome fortune for those days. He came to Andover as a desirable locality for recruiting his exhausted energies. Here he became a stockholder in the Andover Bank, then recently started. He also soon, in partnership with Mr. John Derby, opened a store in the town for trade in miscellaneous goods. Here also he married the daughter of Mr. Abraham Marland, and when, in 1834, the Marland Manufacturing Company was incorporated, he became one of the few incorporators and owners. This business, proving eminently lucrative, added much to his fortune. He built a handsome residence in the centre of the village, the finest at that time in the town. He traveled much in this and foreign countries, partly for the advantage of his health, and partly to increase his knowledge and gratify his taste. He took a deep interest in the education of the young. His own deprivation of educational privileges in his youth, and his residence in Andover, where the atmosphere was impregnated with the school spirit, doubtless turned his thoughts towards a free school, as the most desirable object upon which to bestow his wealth. He was childless, and had few near kindred. He was withal a public-spirited man, and desired earnestly the welfare of his fellow-citizens and countrymen. He had contributed liberally to the support of the Episcopal Church in the town, and in his will left a handsome sum for its maintenance. He was a communicant in this church, a consistent member and de-



vout worshipper. He died April 4, 1850, aged fifty years, three months and nineteen days.

In his will he bequeathed fifty thousand dollars, with a reversion, at the decease of his wife, of twenty thousand dollars additional, for the establishment of a free school for the town. Ten thousand of the fifty thousand dollars were made available for a building, and forty thousand were to be kept in trust as a perpetual fund for the support of the school. The reversionary bequest, when received, was to be added to the permanent fund.

The following provisions for the management of the school are specified in the will:

"Said school shall be under the direction of eight trustees, of whom the Rector of Christ Church is to be one; also, the ministers of the South Parish and West Parish Congregational Societies to be members; also, the remaining five to be chosen by the inhabitants of Andover in Town-Meeting, to serve for three years; two of whom to be taken from Christ Church Society, two from the South Parish Society, and one from the West Parish Society. Said school to be free to all youths resident in Andover, under the restrictions of the trustees as to age and qualifications. No sectarian influence to be used in the school; the Bible to be in daily use; and the Lord's Prayer, in which the pupils shall join audibly with the teacher, in the morning at the opening; the said trustees to have the sole direction, and power, also, to determine and decide whether the school shall be for males only, or for the benefit of both sexes. Said school to be located in the South Parish, of Andover, but free for all the Parishes equally."

These provisions of the will have been strictly adhered to. Since the North Parish has been incorporated as a separate town, it has established a high school of its own, and, though legally entitled to the benefits of the Punchard School, the people of North Andover have long since ceased to avail themselves of their right.

An act of incorporation for the school was obtained from the Legislature February 26, 1851. Also by act of the Legislature March 28, 1856, the Punchard School was made the High School for the town, thus relieving the town from the statute obligation to sustain by taxation a high school.

The amount of money designated in the will for a school building being quite inadequate for the purpose, and there being much diversity of opinion among the trustees as to the best location for the building, the edifice was not commenced till June, 1855. It was completed in September, 1856. The interest on the money, added to the ten thousand dollars designated in the will, enabled the trustees to erect a building both commodious and attractive. It was dedicated September 2, 1856, the address on the occasion being delivered by Dr. Fuller, rector of Christ Church and trustee of the school.

This building was destroyed by an incendiary fire on the morning of December 15, 1868. The insurance money, not being sufficient to replace the building, and the town having been enjoined by the Supreme Court from carrying out their vote to aid, with an appropriation, the trustees in rebuilding, the school was for a time suspended. The town purchased the site of the Punchard School building of the trustees, erected thereon an edifice similar in de-

sign, appearance and structure to the former edifice, with minor changes, which experience had shown to be desirable, and then leased the same to the Punchard trustees for a nominal yearly rent. In this building the school was opened September, 1871.

The course of study in the institution is similar to that of the high schools in the Commonwealth.

The permanent fund, having been increased by the addition of the insurance money and the sale of land, now amounts to seventy-five thousand dollars.

Mr. Peter Smith Byers, A.M., was the first principal elected. He died March 19, 1856, never having filled the position of principal. He was a graduate of Harvard College, had been assistant teacher in Phillips Academy and principal of the High School in Providence, R. I. On account of his scholarship, general ability, success as a teacher and rich promise of future usefulness as the manager and instructor of youth, he was chosen principal of the Punchard School by the trustees in advance of the time for the opening of the school, and given leave to travel for his health, in the mean time drawing the salary of the principal.

His death was greatly lamented, and even to the present day is spoken of with tenderness and regret. One of his classmates at Harvard, speaking of him, writes: "In his threefold character as a scholar, a gentleman and a Christian, he had the entire respect and confidence of all our class. If I were to single out any one who had a more uniform and high respect from all, and who had a higher influence than any other upon the class, I should certainly single him. Until the grave shall have closed over the last of his friends and classmates, the direct influence of his Christian example will live upon earth."

The brother of Mr. Byers, Mr. John Byers, of New York, has given money for an alcove in Memorial Hall with books in his remembrance, also a memorial in Christ Church.

The second principal of the school was Mr. Nathan M. Belden, A.M., a graduate of Trinity College, Hartford, Conn. He was elected January 1, 1856, and resigned February 27, 1857. Mr. Belden was succeeded by Rev. Charles H. Seymour, of Haverhill, who was elected February 27, 1857, and resigned October, 1858.

Mr. William Gleason Goldsmith, A.M., a native of Andover, and a graduate of Harvard College, a student of law, succeeded Mr. Seymour, being elected November 1, 1858. When the school building was destroyed, and the school was to be suspended, Mr. Goldsmith resigned and took the position of Peabody Instructor of the Natural Sciences in Phillips Academy. While he was in discharge of the duties of this position, Dr. Taylor, the principal, died suddenly, and Mr. Goldsmith was appointed to act as principal till the close of the year. On the re-opening of the Punchard School in 1871, Mr. Goldsmith was re-appointed principal, which position he held with





marked success till his resignation, December 22, 1885. He is now postmaster for the town.

In 1885 Mr. Charles H. Clark, M.A., a graduate of Bowdoin College, Maine, was elected principal to succeed Mr. Goldsmith. He is still filling the office and conducting the school successfully, with the aid of two female assistants.

HON. SAMUEL PHILLIPS.—As the potential existence of Phillips Academy dates back to the birth of Samuel Phillips, Senator, Judge, Lieutenant-Governor, conceiver and projector of this institution, and prime mover in every step of its development from a crude idea to an accomplished fact, whose personality was infused into every sentiment and principle upon which the institution is based, it is fitting that any historical sketch of this institution should open with the birth of Mr. Phillips, and synchronize with his life to its close.

Hon. Samuel Phillips, sixth child of Samuel Phillips and Elizabeth Barnard Phillips, and the only one of seven that lived to manhood, was born in Andover, February 5, 1752. He was the fifth in descent from Rev. George Phillips of Watertown, the head of the family in this country, and the grandson of Rev. Samuel Phillips, the first pastor of the South Church. He was not a robust boy, and was much more disposed to books than hardy sports; of a thoughtful and sedate temperament, inclining him to pursuits and companionships unusual to lads of his years. Though his father was a trader, he was a graduate of Harvard, and desired a collegiate education for his only child. With this in view, the boy was sent to Dummer Academy, Byfield, the only institution of the kind then in the country, for a preparatory training. He was thirteen years old, "a remarkably systematic, industrious, mature child, full of bright promise in kindred virtues for the future." At Dummer he met Eliphalet Pearson, then a poor boy, eager and struggling for a liberal education. This school acquaintance ripened into a friendship which grew in strength through the years of preparation, and soon through the collegiate course into their manhood, when it became the source of unspeakable benefit to both and to mankind. Young Phillips from his earliest years was serious-minded, the child of ancestral faith and prayers, blameless in conduct, and of a devout disposition; but not till eighteen years old did he publicly declare his faith in Christ, and, by uniting with the Church, devote himself to the service of God. This act was the result of long deliberation, and was done with such thoughtfulness and firmness of purpose, as to furnish an effectual barrier against the temptations of youth and college life. He was in his junior year at this time, having entered Harvard when but fifteen years old. He graduated in 1771, at the age of nineteen, in the largest class the College graduated till the year 1810. He was second in rank in this class, which contained many men who afterwards gained distinction in

various pursuits and professions. He was not a brilliant scholar, but studious; making amends for his slowness in acquisition by his diligence, and by the tenacity with which his memory held what hard labor had gained. He was, withal, exceedingly conscientious in the use of his time and in the improvement of his opportunities. In his journal we find expressions of regret for time wasted in sleep, and for "precious moments unimproved." "Time once gone," he says, "is gone forever. We take no notice of it but by its loss; how short! and of what vast importance is a diligent improvement of it." In this conscientious use of opportunities and time we may find the secret of his manifold labors and marked successes. The proverb of the wise king is here verified: "Seest thou a man diligent in his business, he shall stand before kings." We see here a young man leaving college with a frail body, a mind well trained, but of slow movement, with no genius, unless it be for tireless work, who, by a diligent use of his powers, opportunities and time, achieves marked success in various lines of labor, and lays the nation under obligation by his benefactions and example.

While in college, Mr. Phillips became intimately acquainted with Miss Phoebe Foxcroft, daughter of Hon. Francis Foxcroft. This lady was "highly cultivated in mind and manners, the very center of an attractive and courted circle, sprightly, ardent and sanguine." But she was his senior by more than eight years, having been born August 12, 1743. Notwithstanding this disparity in age, the intimate acquaintance and frequent association resulted in "a devoted and lasting mutual attachment." The youth of nineteen left college affianced to a lady approaching her twenty-eighth birthday. This disparity in years was regarded by the parents of Mr. Phillips as an insuperable obstacle to their union. They were greatly displeased at the arrangement. In consequence of this parental opposition, he deferred indefinitely the marriage which he had proposed should take place soon after his graduation. He submitted to the wishes of his parents in this as in other matters, but his heart could not yield obedience. Naturally frail, he grew more feeble under the severe trial, until there were but faint hopes of his life. On being told the condition of their only child, its cause and remedy, by the family physician, they yielded their opposition, and the marriage took place in 1773, after two years of painful waiting. This marriage proved to be not only a very happy one, but also one peculiarly fitting and helpful.

The same year, and previous to his marriage, while but twenty-one years old, he had been chosen town clerk and treasurer, to succeed his father, who had held these responsible offices for fourteen years. From this time onward, Mr. Phillips was prominent in the public affairs of the town. The country was in a state of ferment on account of the aggressive acts of the British Parliament. While in college, he had been



in the midst of the popular discussions and excitement on this matter. For two years previous to his graduation, the General Court had convened in the college chapel. The British troops had been quartered in Boston, and the massacre had taken place. His mind and heart had been fully instructed and quickened by what he had heard and seen. He had been educated in that nursery of patriots; he had felt the hurt of tyranny. With this training and experience, young Phillips, on returning to his native town, was prepared for leadership in the troublous times to follow. Hence, when a Provincial Congress was called in 1775, he was chosen to represent the town, and, though but twenty-three years of age, took a prominent part in its proceedings. During the ten months of its existence, and the four long sessions through which it sat, he was indefatigable in his labors for the public good. Associated with Samuel Adams, John Hancock and other leading patriots, he gained inspiration from their speech and spirit, and by his youthful ardor and sound judgment added much to the strength of the patriot cause. In this, his first experience in a deliberative body, he gained no little reputation for persuasive speech. Without any claims to the special gifts or arts of the orator or the rhetorician, he spoke with such candor, sincerity, earnestness, clearness and good sense, as to gain the ear of the assembly and produce conviction in their minds. Young as he was, he was placed upon the important committees that held conferences with the Commander-in-Chief, and thus became acquainted with the condition of the army.

In 1779 Mr. Phillips was chosen one of the four representatives from Andover to the convention held in Cambridge, Sept. 1, of that year, to form a constitution for the State. He was selected by the convention as one of the three members from Essex county, to make up a committee of thirty-one, to whom was assigned the duty of preparing "a Frame of a Constitution and Declaration of Rights." The ablest and most experienced men of the State were members of this convention, which comprised three hundred delegates. With this body of distinguished men, Mr. Phillips labored faithfully, wisely and efficiently, contributing his part to the formation of a constitution that met the approval of the people, and, in operation, has proved to be a most judicious fundamental law.

At the first popular election under the new constitution, Mr. Phillips was chosen Senator, receiving a large majority of the votes cast for this office. This was in 1780, when he was twenty-eight years of age. To this honorable position he was re-elected, with practical unanimity for twenty years in succession, with the exception of a single year, 1787, when, with General Lincoln and Samuel Allyne Otis, Speaker of the House, he was employed in the delicate duty of suppressing and quieting the Shays' Rebellion. In 1785 he was chosen president of the Senate, which

high position he held for fifteen years, till elected lieutenant governor. In 1781, when twenty-nine years of age, he was appointed by Governor Hancock, one of four justices of the Court of Common Pleas for Essex County. Though not a lawyer, and ignorant of legal usages and precedents, and associated with such able jurists as Benjamin Greenleaf, Samuel Holton and John Pickering, he so conducted himself as to secure the confidence of the bar no less than that of the people, whose cases came before him for trial. What he lacked at first in a technical knowledge of the law, he soon more than made up by his diligence in study, his patience, common sense, sound judgment and unbending integrity. In the manifold cases, petty and important, which came before his court, he gave to each such careful and conscientious examination as to secure the reputation not only of an upright, but also that of a legally sound judge. In fact, such was his judicial standing among the people, that he was popularly known and spoken of as the Judge. He held the position for sixteen years, till his multiplied cares and declining vigor compelled him to demit its onerous duties. During these sixteen years of service, Judge Phillips, though at the same time weighted with the cares of State, and not a few business enterprises, was never absent from his place on the bench at a session of the court but twice, and these two absences were owing to his being at the time engaged upon other important public affairs. His addresses to the grand jurors were especially noted for their direct, plain and forcible presentment of the duty of the grand juror with regard to all crimes, misdemeanors and neglects which should come to his knowledge, either by information or observation. On one occasion he tells them "you may be considered as the eye and the ear of the public, which the law has provided, to notice those offences that come within your knowledge, and which the public welfare requires should be corrected and suppressed. It ought to be remembered, that every law, unexecuted, is a standing monument of the imbecility of the government, and tends to bring its authority into disrepute and contempt." The labor connected with his position as judge and senator was enhanced by the distance of his home from the place of his work. He was obliged to go to Boston, Salem and Newburyport on horseback, often spending much of the night on these solitary and wearisome journeys. In this way his never robust body, when exhausted by a hard day's work, would become much enfeebled, and it is thought that, by this continuous overwork, his days on earth were shortened. He did not know how to shirk or to spare himself.

In addition to his senatorial and judicial functions, he carried on an extensive correspondence with the leading men of the country, regarding its most important interests, at a time of much perplexity, division and discussion, when almost every thing pertaining to the government of the country was in a





chaotic and formative state. He also carried on successfully different branches of business. He was the owner and cultivator of large and profitable farms—maintained stores for country merchandise in three separate places, was a leading member of the Harvard College corporation, and was a large manufacturer for those days, first of powder, and then of paper. Another great work which he early took in hand, and upon which he spent his best thought and most unwearyed efforts, was the establishment of a free academy for the education of boys.

PHILLIPS ACADEMY. —This project for a free academy for the education of boys seems to have been latent in the mind of Mr. Phillips at an early date in his life, perchance before he left the walls of Harvard. It began to take shape, and find expression, it is presumed, as early as 1776, when he was intensely interested in the manufacture of powder for the patriot army. There is a manuscript paper extant, in the handwriting of Mr. Phillips, which bears internal evidence of having been written in the early part of 1776, which directly treats of this subject. It is addressed to his father and begins by deprecating the decay of virtue, public and private, the prevalence of public and private vice, "the amazing change in the tempers, dispositions and conduct of people in this country within these thirty years." This decay of virtue and prevalence of vice he attributes to the lack of suitable schools for the instruction of children. This state of things bodes incalculable evil in the future to families and the country. The remedy can not be found in any existing plan for the instruction of youth. The grammar schools are hopelessly unequal to the task of correcting existing evils. Recourse must be had to "*the method of the ancients*." His imitation of the ancients was only partial, viz.: "That a public building be erected for the purpose, and the children sent, be supported and continued there for a certain term, say from the age of seven to fourteen." A teacher was at hand, "one of the best of men," who, in addition to the intellectual training, should "make it his chief concern to see to the regulation of the *moral*s of the pupils, and attentively and vigorously guard against the first dawning of depraved nature. He is to instruct them in the several relations they sustain to God, their parents, the public and their neighbors, and make their whole course of education *one continued lecture on all that is great and good*." A garden plot is also suggested, where the boys who are destined to become farmers may be taught the art of agriculture. From such an institution as thus outlined Mr. Phillips anticipates a surprising change in the moral condition of the people. He looks for a success surpassing that "from the labors of priest and magistrate united."

He then proceeds to notice and answer the objections which might be urged against the scheme, closing with a gentle hint to his wealthy father that he might aid this "glorious plan" by giving to it the

money which it would be a relief to him to part with. And then, looking to the blessing of thus giving, he says, "Who would not gain inconceivably by sparing some of that wealth for which he has no occasion, in order to establish such a design?"

It is to be borne in mind that the writer of this is the only child and heir of the man whom he importunes, by the highest motives, to devote his wealth to a charitable purpose. The school here outlined was not indeed the school finally established. There was no pattern even among "the ancients" for the school that was struggling for birth in his brain. After many and prolonged conferences with his bosom friend and co-worker, was the plan matured and given to the world. At first Mr. Phillips was opposed to making his school a classical school, thinking that the study of the pagan writers did not tend to promote in the young morality and piety—the prime purpose of his project. Neither was he in favor of fostering charity students in his school, believing that the sons of the rich would be numerous enough to take up all the space and attention the institution could offer. He reasons that the opportunity of the rich child for doing good is greater than that of the poor child, while his happiness is of equal consequence. "His *disinterestedness* is a great argument in favor of his honest intentions in following the profession of a minister, that he does it from principle and *not from a lucrative view*; but charity scholars must pursue this; they speak because they are hired to; it is their living, say the scoffers." His views underwent a radical change on these particulars before the ideal academy became a reality. Poor boys were made welcome from the first, and funds were solicited and obtained by himself for their support, and the institution was opened as a distinctively classical school, and, as such, has been conspicuous the country over from that time to this.

There was much consultation and conference with leading educators, especially with his life-long friend, Eliphalet Pearson, as to the scope and shape the Academy should take. A plan was fixed upon. His father and his uncle, John Phillips, of Exeter, N. H., had been persuaded to endow the institution. In fact, through his influence and ardor in the matter, they had come to take a deep personal interest in the project. He seems to have acquired a controlling influence over the hearts and pockets of these, his nearest kindred. He was prospectively heir to their estates, and, in persuading them to devote a portion of their property to this benevolent object, he won them to his wishes by his unselfishness, no less than by his argument. His father gave land, his uncle money. The South Parish was chosen for the location of the institution. Mr. Phillips moved into a house upon the land purchased, that he might be near to the academy, as well as to his powder-mill, then working to supply the army. A charter was carefully drawn up by Mr. Phillips, and under it,



as an act of the Legislature, the academy was incorporated October 4, 1780.

The act of incorporation is as follows:

"1780, October 4.

"STATE OF MASSACHUSETTS BAY.—An act to incorporate an academy in the town of Andover, by the name of Phillips Academy.

"PRESERVE.

"Whereas, the education of youth has ever been considered by the wise and good as an object of the highest consequence to the safety and happiness of a people; as at that period the mind easily receives and retains impressions, is formed with peculiar advantage to piety and virtue and directed to the pursuit of the most useful knowledge; and whereas the Honorable Samuel Phillips, of Andover, in the County of Essex, Esq., and the Honorable John Phillips, of Exeter, in the County of Rockingham, and State of New Hampshire, Esq., on the first day of April, in the year of Our Lord, one thousand seven hundred and seventy-eight, by a legal instrument of that date, gave, granted, assigned to the Honorable William Phillips, Esquire, and others, therein named, and to their heirs, divers lots and parcels of land, in said instrument described, as well as certain other estate, to the use and upon the trust following, namely, that the rents, profits, and interest thereof be forever and without expiation by the Trustees in the said instrument named, for the support of a Public Free School in Andover, in the town of Andover; and whereas the execution of the generous and important design of the granters aforesaid, will be attended with very great embarrassments, unless by an act of incorporation, the Trustees, mentioned in the said instrument, and their successors, shall be authorized to commence and prosecute actions at law, and transact such other matters in their corporate capacity as the interest of the said Academy shall require:—

"ACADEMY ESTABLISHED.

"I. Be it therefore enacted by the Council and House of Representatives in General Court assembled, and by the authority of the same; that there be and hereby is established in the Town of Andover, and County of Essex, an Academy, by the name of *Phillips Academy*, for the purpose of promoting true piety and virtue, and for the education of youth, in the English, Latin and Greek languages, together with Writing, Arithmetic, Music and the Art of Speaking; also practical Geometry, Logic and Geography, and such other of the liberal Arts and Sciences, or Languages, as opportunity may hereafter permit, and as the Trustees, hereinafter provided, shall direct.

"TRUSTEES APPOINTED AND INCORPORATED.

"II. Be it further enacted by the authority aforesaid, that the Hon. Samuel Phillips of Andover aforesaid, Esq., the Hon. John Phillips of Exeter aforesaid, Esq., the Hon. William Phillips and Oliver Wendell, Esq., and John Lowell, Esq., of Boston, in the County of Suffolk, and State of Massachusetts Bay, the Rev. Josiah Stearns of Epping, in the County of Rockingham aforesaid, the Reverend William Symmes of said Andover, the Reverend Elias Smith of Middleton, in the said County of Essex, the Reverend Jonathan French, Samuel Phillips, Junr., Esq., Mr. Eliphalet Pearson, gentleman, and Mr. Nehemiah Abbot, yeoman, all of Andover aforesaid, be, and they hereby are nominated and appointed Trustees of said Academy; and they are hereby incorporated into a body politic, by the name of the *Trustees of Phillips Academy*, and that they, and their successors, shall be and continue a body politic and corporate, by the same name forever."

Following these are seven other sections of this act—confirming the lands donated to the trustees; authorizing a common seal, with power to sue and be sued; empowering the trustees to make rules and elect officers; limiting to thirteen the number of trustees; designating the principal of the school as, *ex officio*, one of the trustees; authorizing the trustees to fill all vacancies in their body; empowering them to receive property by gift or bequest to the extent that the annual income of the property held shall not exceed two thousand pounds, provided said gift or bequest shall not be so conditioned as to require any act "in any respect counter to the design of the first

grantors;" and, further, empowering the trustees, by a two-thirds vote, to remove the seminary from Andover if, in their judgment, the purpose of the founders can thereby be better carried out.

"In the House of Representatives, October 4, 1780.

"This Bill, having been read several times, passed to be enacted.

"JOHN HAYDOCK, Speaker.

"In Council, October 4, 1780.

"This Bill, having had two several readings, passed to be enacted.

"JOHN AVARY, D. Secretary.

"We consent to the enacting of this bill,—

"S. Cushing.

N. Cushing.

J. Fisher.

Wm. Whiting.

Moses Gull.

Samuel Niles.

H. Gardner.

A. Fuller.

T. Danielson.

Jno. Pitts.

Benj. Austin.

Stephen Choate."

When this act of incorporation passed, the school had been in successful operation for more than two years, under the mastership of Eliphalet Pearson, gentleman. On the 21st of April, 1778, the founders signed a constitution for the academy, in which they grant certain parcels of land in Andover and other places to the trustees named in the act, for the purposes set forth in this instrument. In this constitution they state with more particularity the reasons and motives which led them to establish the school. In substance they say a reflection upon the purpose of the Creator, in forming the mind capable of improvement in knowledge and virtue, as well as upon the prevalence of ignorance and vice, creates anxious solicitude to find the source and remedy for these existing evils. The susceptibility of young minds, and their tenacity in retaining impressions, lead to the conclusion that the correction must come from the proper training of the young, intellectually and religiously. Hence the endowment, with the earnest wish that the "institution may grow and flourish," that "its advantages may be extensive and lasting," that "its usefulness may be so manifest as to lead to other establishments on the same principles," that "it may finally prove an eminent means of advancing the interests of the great Redeemer." While defining the duties of trustees, officers and teachers, and the objects and aims of the institution, much emphasis, with varied repetition, is given in this instrument to moral and religious instruction as that of paramount importance. "Above all, it is expected that the master's attention to the disposition of the *minds* and *morals* of the youth under his charge will exceed every other care." The duty of the master is further defined to be "to instruct and establish the scholars, according to their capacities, in the truth of Christianity," and "also early and diligently to inculcate upon them the great and important Scripture doctrines."

In this paper, drawn up by Mr. Phillips, as was also the act of incorporation, and signed by his father and his uncle, John Phillips, the former donates certain parcels of land, and the latter sixteen hundred and fourteen pounds in money, in trust, for the benefit of the academy. The paper is instinct with the





spirit of its writer, the projector of the institution. The training of the boys so that they shall become intelligent, virtuous, religious men, useful citizens, disciples of Christ and benefactors of mankind, is the sole purpose in view. We can discover in this project, from its inception to its completion, no single trace of self-seeking, or purpose to secure posthumous fame.

The number of scholars at first was limited to thirty, and to those who pursued classical studies. The first school building was correspondingly small, being an old joiner's shop, removed to the corner of the present Main and Phillips Streets (where the residence of Professor Churchill now stands), and reconstructed for the purpose. The pupils were from six years of age upwards. Eliphalet Pearson was master. In the autumn of 1786 Mr. Pearson left to become Professor of Hebrew and the Oriental Languages in Harvard College. The school had prospered and a new building became a necessity. This was erected jointly by the three brothers, Samuel, John and William Phillips, the only surviving children of the first pastor of the South Church. This building was much larger and more convenient than the thirty-foot carpenter's shop.

Ebenezer Pemberton succeeded to the mastership. Under his management the school prospered greatly. Poor health led to his resignation in 1793. Mark Newman was his successor, a student of theology, but never a preacher. "His administration was uniformly prosperous, and during the fourteen years of his continuance in office the institution steadily increased in numbers and influence." The reputation of the academy had extended over the country, and pupils from Virginia, from the families of Washington and Lee, were found within its walls. It was during this administration that Lieutenant-Governor Phillips died, at the age of fifty, his feeble body worn out by the unflagging energy and activity of his indomitable spirit. At the preceding State election he had been chosen Lieutenant-Governor on the ticket with Caleb Strong as Governor.

In 1810 Mr. Newman resigned and John Adams became master. With him fresh life came into the institution. Mr. Adams was a man thoroughly in sympathy with the spirit and purpose of the original projector. Earnest, deeply sympathetic, profoundly religious, filled with the spirit of his Master, "he imparted an impulse which will never die to the institution into which he came as a new moral force." In 1818 the school building was destroyed by fire, and a brick edifice was erected, largely through the liberality of Hon. William Phillips. This building is the one now used as a gymnasium. In 1830 a new department was added to the institution, called the Teachers' Seminary. This was the first Normal School in the country. Its aim was to furnish a thorough training in the English branches, in the natural sciences and mathematics, to those who proposed to engage in teaching. While under the control of the trustees of the academy it was distinct

from the Classical School in its organization and in its corps of teachers. It had its own building, a stone edifice on Main Street, west of the Samaritan House. This stone academy was destroyed by fire in 1864. The English Commons were built for its use. During its brief history it not only gave a thorough training to common-school teachers, but imparted instruction in civil engineering and in practical and scientific agriculture. Owing to the expense of keeping up two separate organizations, in 1842 the Teachers' Seminary was merged into Phillips Academy proper, and made a department of this institution, which it still is. Dr. Adams continued in the school till 1833, when he resigned, and Osgood Johnson took his place. Mr. Johnson was possessed of rare qualifications for the place. A thorough scholar and a devout Christian, he commanded the respect and won the love of his pupils. His strictness in discipline was so tempered by kindness as to soften the heart while subduing the will of the offender. But hereditary consumption had marked him for an early grave, and he died after only four years' service in the institution.

His successor was Samuel H. Taylor, LL.D.,<sup>1</sup> whose long and brilliant career as a teacher, joined to his remarkable faculty as a disciplinarian, and his charming character as a man, merit special notice aside from this mention.

During Dr. Taylor's administration the institution gained largely in numbers and reputation. Its pupils came from all parts of the country and from other nations. As a classical scholar he excelled, and his enthusiasm for his favorite studies, while making him an exacting teacher, made him also a thorough one. On the destruction of the stone academy, a new building was erected at the junction of Main and School Streets. This is a large and imposing structure of brick, ninety feet long by fifty feet in width. It is three stories high, with an elevated, light and airy basement. The recitation rooms, occupying the first and second stories, are large and commodious. The upper story, lighted chiefly by windows in the roof, is a hall of the full size of the building, adorned with portraits of the founders, teachers and benefactors of the institution, and is used for exhibitions and other public exercises connected with the school. Its seating capacity is twelve hundred.

The successor of Dr. Taylor was Mr. Frederick W. Tilton. Lacking the robust health necessary for the oversight and conduct of so large a school, Mr. Tilton, after two years' service, resigned in 1873, to be succeeded by Mr. C. F. P. Bancroft, the present efficient principal. The school has steadily increased in numbers, endowments, facilities for education and reputation for completeness and thoroughness in its academical instruction. It has at present a

<sup>1</sup> For personal sketch of Dr. Taylor see page 1648.



corps of department instructors unsurpassed by any school of like character in the country. From an attendance of thirty youthful pupils, with which the institution started, it now, in 1887, has an attendance of three hundred and twelve young men with minds sufficiently matured to appreciate the advantages enjoyed.

The following are the amounts of money which have been given to the academy at sundry times by the persons mentioned, to be held in trust, and the income to be used for the benefit of the institution:

PERMANENT FUNDS OF PHILLIPS ACADEMY.

1778. John Phillips.....	\$31,074 00
1788. Samuel and John Phillips.....	10,290 16
1795. John FENNER.....	302 50
1797. General Court—lands in Maine.....	2,158 15
1804. Hon. William Phillips, Boston.....	4,633 34
1827. Hon. William Phillips, Boston.....	15,315 02
1835. Samuel Farrar, treasurer.....	25,000 00
1800. George Peabody, Landover.....	2,500 00
1857. Sundry Contributors, Dr. Samuel H. Taylor (Memorial Fund).....	3,700 00
1878. Centennial Contribution—sundry friends.....	27,288 84
1870. John Smith, \$10,000; Peter Smith, \$2,000; John Byers, \$10,000; for a Memorial Fund—donor of a Peter Smith Byers chair of instruction.....	10,000 00
1870. John C. Phillips, of kin to the founder.....	25,000 00
1881. Dr. Frederick Alden—Alden Memorial.....	5,000 00
1882. Mrs. Valerius G. Stone—Stone Educational Fund.....	25,000 00
Sundry scholarships and Prize Funds, amounting in all to.....	14,926 00

In addition to these trust funds, yielding an income for the support of the institution, the academic department owns several houses besides its school buildings, and two rows of unattractive, but still quite useful, wooden dormitories—and a neat, substantial and commodious brick building for the use of the treasurer and principal.

The school is fairly well furnished with charts, models and apparatus necessary for imparting the best instruction in the ancient languages and the modern sciences. An additional equipment in these directions would add no doubt to the effectiveness of the institution.

The students sustain a semi-weekly paper called *The Phillippian*. The ground for athletic exercises has recently been graded at considerable cost, part of which was borne by past and present pupils, and thus rendered more suitable for the games now so popular with collegiate and academic students.

**ABBOT ACADEMY.**—Abbot Academy in Andover was incorporated by act of the Legislature February 26, 1829.

A few friends of a higher education for girls, similar to that provided for boys by Phillips Academy, had talked the matter over from time to time for a year or two before this. At length, taking courage from their convictions, they issued a notice for a gathering of persons interested in such a project, as follows:

"NOTICE.

"Those persons who feel favorably disposed towards the establishment of a Female High School in the South Parish of Andover are requested to meet at Mr. James Locke's, on Thursday evening next, the 19th inst., at 6 o'clock P.M.

"Andover, February 15, 1828."

The meeting was held, the result of which was a unanimous vote that such an institution was needed, and a further vote to take measures at once to create it. A committee was appointed to select a site, raise funds and enter upon the work of building at the earliest practicable day. Soon after, a subscription paper was started, a board of trustees chosen, a constitution formed, a building planned of definite dimensions and material.

In the constitution it is stated that:

"The primary objects to be aimed at in this school shall ever be to regulate the temper, to improve the taste, to discipline and enlarge the minds and form the morals of the youth who may be members of it. To form the immortal mind to habits suited to an immortal being, and to instil principles of conduct and form the character for an immortal destiny, shall be subordinate to no other care. Solid acquisitions shall always have precedence of those which are merely showy, and the useful of those which are merely ornamental."

The trustees who affixed their names to this instrument were Mark Newman, Milton Badger, Samuel C. Jackson, Samuel Farrar, Amos Blanchard, Hobart Clark and Amos Abbot.

At first the funds requisite for carrying out the resolutions of the projectors were not forthcoming, and they halted in their work. The first site purchased, opposite the residence of the late Hon. Nathan Hazen, was abandoned. Deacon Newman came to the rescue of the halting enterprise by giving an acre of land as a site for the building, where it now stands. In addition, Mrs. Sarah Abbot, widow of Nehemiah Abbot, steward of Phillips Academy, pledged one thousand dollars, to be paid at her decease. Upon this slim pecuniary foundation and a large faith, the trustees went forward to build.

Mrs. Abbot had been a life-long friend of Madam Phillips, and had imbibed her spirit of benevolence and desire to promote the better education of the young. She was also by blood distantly related to Judge Phillips. Samuel Farrar was her trusted adviser. Being childless and advanced in life, she desired to make such disposition of her small property as should be most conducive to the good of men and the glory of God. In consultation with Mr. Farrar, she was led to believe that the building up of a school for girls was the most desirable use she could make of her money. Thus was founded an institution of learning which will carry the name of its first benefactress with blessings upon it to the latest posterity. The building now standing, when erected, was thought to be a very elegant and commodious structure, and was doubtless the most attractive public building in town. Friends of the enterprise loaned money on mortgage of the property to complete it.

While Madam Abbot furnished the money which





laid the corner stone of the edifice, others put into the institution creating energy. Samuel Farrar, treasurer of Phillips Academy, a man who had identified himself with the interests of education in Andover, and Rev. Samuel C. Jackson, of the West Parish, recently settled, were among the most active, zealous and efficient promoters of the enterprise.

Esquire Farrar, as for many years he was commonly called, came to Andover directly after graduation from Harvard College, as assistant teacher in Phillips Academy. He was at once received into the family of Judge Phillips, and treated as a son. He soon became an ardent admirer of the judge and still more so of his noble wife. In 1802 he was elected trustee of Phillips Academy, which position he held for forty-four years. In 1807 he was chosen treasurer and held this position for thirty-seven years. In 1808, on the establishment of the Theological Seminary, he was elected its librarian, and held that position for thirty-four years. In 1826 he was elected president of the Andover Bank, then just organized, and of which he was one of the foremost promoters. He held this office for thirty years. In 1829 he was chosen one of the trustees of the new female academy, and continued so for twenty-one years.

It will be seen, from this summary, that Esquire Farrar was closely identified with the educational and other important interests in the town for nearly half a century. He was one of the efficient agents in securing a union of the divergent parties who coalesced to establish the Theological Seminary. Honest, accurate, energetic, persevering, he was fitted to lead in any new and promising enterprise, which aimed to promote the intellectual, moral or religious well-being of his fellow-men. A high school for the education of women had for years been a dream of his, which his early association with the family of Judge Phillips may have inspired. Professor Park has graphically described the influence of Madam Phillips upon him: "She had been his model for womanhood. It seemed to be the desire of his heart that every young lady should become like Madam Phillips. For fifteen years after her decease he cherished an habitual interest in the higher education of her sex. Towards the end of these fifteen years, a lady, who had been the life-long friend of Madam Phillips, came to him and asked: 'What shall I do with my surplus funds?' He answered 'Found an Academy in Andover for the education of women.' This one sentence did the work. Mr. Farrar was a technical lawyer; he was an incorrigible arithmetician; he was absorbed in the keeping of accounts; he was devoted to rigid methods and exact order; he was constitutionally free from romance. But he had been electrified by Madam Phillips; he was a conducting wire from her to the heart of her friend, Madam Abbot; and the electric spark kindled the Abbot Academy, which for well-nigh fifty (sixty) years has been a burning and shining light. The monetary foundations of the school were laid in the

humble estate of a woman; one man raised his finger to lay them there, and that man had been inspired by the modest utterances of a woman; but that woman was a queen."

From its opening, in 1829, to the advent of Miss Nancy J. Hasseltine, in 1853, twenty-four years, the school had seven principals, all young men, recently graduated from the Theological Seminary, or still pursuing their theological studies. Their terms of service varied from one year to three years, with the exception of Rev. Asa Farwell, who was principal from 1842 to 1852. The compensation at best, being only the income from tuition, was not a sufficient inducement for teachers to remain.

In 1853 the trustees changed their policy and chose a woman as principal. From that day to this the institution, to say the least, has lost nothing by the change on the score of management, discipline, popularity or thoroughness of instruction. The first three lady principals, however, Miss Nancy Hasseltine, Miss Maria J. B. Browne and Miss Emma L. Taylor,—together occupied the position but six years. The poverty of the institution doubtless influenced their stay, as it did that of their male predecessors.

In 1859 Miss Philena McKeen was elected principal, and her sister, Miss Phebe F. McKeen, was appointed first assistant teacher. Miss McKeen still continues to occupy her position, which she has now filled with remarkable success for twenty-eight years. Miss Phebe McKeen died, after a lingering illness, in 1880, much lamented. It has been well said of her:

"In the school-room she was distinguished for her clear thought and definite expression. She knew what she meant to say, and said it. Her taste was delicate and accurate. She had an eye for the beauties of nature and art. In her philosophical studies she was quick and keen, sometimes profound. She was an enthusiast in study, and thus imparted an enthusiasm to her pupils. She was original in her thinking, and her originality endeared in others a love of thought. She united a sisterly affection for her scholars with a kind of maternal authority over them. She was mild and genial; but, if her duty required her to act as a disciplinarian, she could be firm and intrepid. She was courageous. Tracing the history of Abbot Academy, we can detect her influence, as a stream winding through a landscape and adorning it."

The institution started with no endowment, and has always been cramped for means. When Miss Mary Lyon, with the enthusiasm of Peter the Hermit, was going through the towns and villages of Western Massachusetts, preaching to the mechanics and farmers of the country the necessity of establishing a school for the education of capable young women in indigent or moderate circumstances, the trustees of Abbot Academy made a formal proposition to her, to the effect that she should adopt their institution, with certain modifications, for the basis of her contemplated school. But Miss Lyon preferred not to build upon another woman's foundation.

As the school increased in numbers, the accommodations became the more straitened, especially as regarded the pupils from abroad. A boarding-house became a necessity. Through the generosity of Messrs. Peter and John Smith, a building was erected



in the rear of the academy, plain and spacious. It was furnished and fitted for occupancy by the ladies of the town, under the lead of Mrs. Harriet Beecher Stowe and Mrs. Samuel C. Jackson. It was called Smith Hall, in honor of the principal donors. This building has recently been removed to some distance south of its original location, to give place to a projected new edifice.

The school still increasing beyond its capacity for accommodation, the house belonging to Mr. Farwell, adjoining the seminary grounds, was purchased by Hon. George L. Davis, of North Andover, a trustee, for four thousand five hundred dollars, and deeded to the seminary. It was called Davis Hall, in honor of the donor. Mr. Davis subsequently purchased and gave to the academy contiguous lands.

The estate of Rev. Josiah Turner, on the side of the academy building opposite Davis Hall, was purchased by the trustees, and opened for a family of pupils, the purchase money being loaned by Mr. Davis.

From the surplus earnings of the school a patch of grove and meadow-land was also purchased. Finally, to provide for all future exigencies, and give ample grounds for a large, flourishing institution, the trustees purchased of Mr. John Abbot fourteen acres of contiguous land, including some acres of charming grove.

On the forty-second anniversary of the institution, in 1871, an Alumnae Association was formed, since which a deeper interest in the welfare of the seminary has been manifested by its graduates. Liberal contributions of money and certain useful and ornamental articles have been received from them. They have also aided essentially the efforts which have been recently made and are at present being made, to raise one hundred thousand dollars to erect new buildings in keeping with the times and the standing of the institution.

In 1875 an observatory was built as a cupola on the academy, which received one of Mr. Clark's valuable instruments. The observatory and telescope cost some twenty-four hundred dollars. For this the seminary is largely indebted to Miss Mary J. Belcher, a teacher, and instructor in astronomy. By persevering effort, with the special co-operation of Colonel George Ripley, one of the trustees, in the course of three or four years she gathered the requisite funds.

In the summer of 1879, after fifty years of useful life, the academy held its semi-centennial anniversary. This was a great success. Graduates with their families were in attendance from all parts of the country. The exercises were of a high order of excellence. Speeches were made by ex-Principals Brown, Farwell and Bittinger, Lieutenant-Governor Long, Rev. N. G. Clark, D.D., Rev. Daniel Butler, Dr. Alexander McKenzie, Dr. A. P. Peabody, Dr. Paul A. Chadbourne, president of Williams College, Dr. L. Clark Seelye, president of Smith College, and

Professors Park, Smith and Churchill, of the Theological Seminary. The brilliant address of the day, on "the Education of Women," was by Rev. Richard Salter Storrs, D.D., LL.D., of Brooklyn, who married one of the daughters of Abbot Academy.

The course of study includes instruction in English literature and composition, history, physical geography, natural sciences, mathematics, metaphysics, logic, rhetoric, elocution, modern and ancient languages, evidences of Christianity and study of the Bible, painting and drawing, vocal and instrumental music and physical culture. The kind of training proposed by the projectors of the institution is religiously adhered to, and a distinctive Christian influence is diffused through the whole teaching and discipline of the school. From the effect of this influence many devoted and useful Christian women ascribe their consecration to a life "hid with Christ in God."

The most liberal donors to the academy are the following:

Madam Sarah Abbot, gifts and bequest	\$10,100.04
Hon. George L. Davis	6,641.00
John Smith, Esq.	4,700.00
Peter Smith, Esq.	3,111.00

The school has seven scholarships of a thousand dollars each, yielding fifty dollars each, for the benefit of worthy but poor students.

The friends of the institution for the past few years have been putting forth strenuous efforts to place it in a condition to meet the demands of the times for a better accommodation of its boarding pupils, for school buildings in keeping with those of other institutions of like character, and for a larger and better equipment for imparting instruction in the sciences.

Through the persistent energy of Miss McKeen, these efforts have been so far successful that fifty-three thousand dollars have been raised, and a commencement made for the erection of a new building. A complete plan for the entire series of buildings contemplated has been made, and the trustees will push forward the work of erecting them as fast as the funds received will warrant. The exigencies of the school are quite imperious. Sitting accommodations cannot now be furnished for all who apply for admission.

The school in its exceptional history, extending over fifty-eight years, has acquired a reputation for high intellectual, aesthetic, moral and religious culture, that places it among the first in the country, as it is the oldest chartered institution of the kind in the land. It has also become memorable for its healthfulness. Never has there been an epidemic disease within its walls, and but little serious illness. It has been observed that the health of the young ladies while here at school has been above the average health of young ladies at their homes at the same period of life.

The future of this institution is even more promising than its past has been—with an enviable history back of it, with a prestige to give it momentum, with





a valuable experience by which to guide its management with a large circle of alumne scattered over the country, with the new friends which success always secures, with wise and capable teachers and trustees, with extensive grounds capable of indefinite adornment, with new buildings and a larger equipment for scientific study anticipated in the near future, there seems to be a fair prospect that Abbot Female Academy will go forward for the next half-century, as in the past, steadily increasing in numbers and importance, ever coming nearer the pattern of a school furnishing the fitting physical, industrial, intellectual, social, moral and spiritual training requisite for the development of the perfect woman.

**THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY.**—The Theological Seminary is not only by act of incorporation and official management a department of Phillips Academy, but also by growth from the original intention of its projector. In the constitution of the academy drawn up by Mr. Phillips before the institution came into existence, we find this paragraph:

"And whereas many of the students in this Seminary may be devoted to the sacred work of the gospel ministry; that the true and fundamental principles of the Christian Religion may be cultivated, established and perpetuated in the Christian Church, so far as this Institution may have influence; it shall be the duty of the Master, as the age and capacities of the Scholars will admit, not only to instruct and establish them in the truths of Christianity; but also early and diligently to meditate upon them the great and important Scripture doctrines of the existence of one true God, the Father, Son and Holy Ghost, of the fallen man, the depravity of human nature, the necessity of an atonement, and of our being renewed in the spirit of holiness, the doctrines of repentance toward God and of faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ; of sanctification by the Holy Spirit, and of justification by the free grace of God, through the redemption that is in Jesus Christ, in opposition to the erroneous and dangerous doctrine of justification by our own merit, and a dependence on self-righteousness, together with the other important doctrines and duties of our Holy Christian Religion."

Here is work enough laid out for a master in theology. It holds the germ of a theological school as it reveals the animating purpose of Mr. Phillips in establishing the academy.

Not for some years, however, did this idea of imparting systematic instruction in the doctrines of the Christian religion receive its full development. Circumstances favored and stimulated this development in 1806. In May of that year Dr. Henry Ware, a Unitarian, was inaugurated Hollis Professor of Divinity in Harvard College. Mr. Hollis had given the fund for this professorship to support an "orthodox" teacher of theology. This apparent disregard of the intention of the donor was the occasion of much criticism and dissatisfaction on the part of the ministers and churches in the State that still held to the Calvinistic theology. Eliphalet Pearson was at that time professor at Harvard, but, in the conflict growing out of the appointment of Dr. Ware, he, siding with the Evangelicals, resigned his professorship and removed to Andover. "Being thoroughly convinced that a new theological seminary ought to be instituted for the purpose of checking the influence of Arminianism and Unitarianism," he engaged

with all his native ardor in the effort to establish such an institution. Having been a personal friend of Judge Phillips, his co worker in the establishment of the academy, and fully conversant with his purposes and aspirations concerning it, he appealed forcibly to the widow and son of the judge to perfect the original purpose of the academy, by endowing a theological department. His appeals were not in vain. Mr. Samuel Abbot, a wealthy merchant who resided in Andover, was also enlisted in favor of the project. Mr. Abbot, being childless, had purposed to give by will the bulk of his property to Harvard College, but, when Harvard lapsed to Unitarianism, this will was revoked. The money was pledged to found the new seminary. Mr. Pearson, with the efficient co-operation of Dr. Morse, of Charlestown, a moderate Calvinist, prepared a draft for a constitution.

But those who were directly interested in establishing a theological school at Andover were by no means the only persons among the ministers and evangelical Christians who were grieved and alarmed at the departure of Harvard from the faith of its founders. The section of the Calvinistic divines that embraced the doctrinal views of Samuel Hopkins, D.D., not being fully in sympathy with Dr. Pearson and those he represented, and not aware of their intention with regard to a theological school, began, early after the election of Dr. Ware, to agitate the creation of a theological seminary. They were able and determined men, represented by such distinguished divines as Dr. Emmons, of Franklin, and Dr. Spring, of Newburyport. They had for condutors men of wealth and generosity—Messrs. Bartlet and Brown, of Newburyport, and John Norris, Esq., of Salem. They purposed the establishment of a theological college, based upon the Calvinistic interpretation of the Scriptures, as explained and understood by the Hopkinsian divines. They had gone so far as to have fixed upon West Newbury as the place for their institution, and Rev. Leonard Woods, the pastor at West Newbury, as its theological teacher.

When the news of these proceedings came to the ears of the men promoting the Andover enterprise, they at once sought a conference with the men interested in the Newbury institution. When these representatives of the two wings of the Calvinistic party met, compared views and proceedings, they could not fail to see that the creation of two rival seminaries, within twenty miles of each other, essentially similar in doctrine, purpose and character, would be unwise. Frequent conferences were held, much discussion was had, careful consideration was given to all the details of doctrine and faith,—and, after protracted negotiations, painstaking labor and much tribulation a basis of union was formed, and a creed agreed upon for the united seminaries. The school was to be located at Andover, as the Andover promoters had planned under the charter of Phillips Academy



The constitution which the Andover founders had provided for their seminary, and the trustees of Phillips Academy had accepted, was retained, and certain additional statutes were appended, which together were to form the doctrinal standard of the coalesced seminary.

The two contracting parties were denominated respectively the Original Founders, who were Mrs. Phoebe Phillips, "relict of Samuel Phillips, Esq., late Lieutenant-Governor of the Commonwealth," his son, John Phillips, and Samuel Abbot, merchant of Andover; and the Associate Founders, who were "Moses Brown and William Bartlet, both of Newburyport, merchants, and John Norris, of Salem, esquire." The original founders agreed to erect two buildings for the accommodation of students and the necessary uses of the institution, one to be two and the other three stories in height, and to furnish the sum of twenty thousand dollars, in trust, for the purpose of maintaining a professor in Christian theology. The associate founders agreed to contribute at first thirty (afterwards forty) thousand dollars, in trust, "for the maintenance of two professors in the Theological Institution or Seminary lately founded in the town of Andover."

The fact that there was apprehension of serious difficulty in obtaining from the General Court a charter for a Calvinistic Theological Seminary may have been the balancing argument for establishing the institution at Andover, sheltered by the charter of Phillips Academy.

The original constitution, formed in 1807, is a masterly document, elaborate, comprehensive, providing, with much wisdom and foresight, for the minor details which concern the regulation of a seminary in all possible circumstances and exigencies.

The matters of primary interest in this constitution are contained in Articles XI. and XII.

#### Article XI. reads as follows:

"Every Professor in this Seminary shall be a Master of Arts, of the Protestant Reformed Religion, in communion with some Christian Church of the Congregational or Presbyterian denomination, and shall sustain the character of a discreet, honest, learned and pious man; he shall, moreover, be a sound and orthodox principle in divinity, according to that train of sacred truths or system of evangelical doctrines drawn from the Scriptures, and denominated the Westminster Assembly's Shorter Catechism, and more concisely delineated in the Constitution of Phillips Academy."

#### Article XII. reads as follows:

"Every person, therefore, appointed or elected a Professor in this Seminary shall, on the day of his inauguration into office, and in the presence of the said Trustees, publicly make and subscribe a solemn declaration of his faith in Divine Revelation, and in the fundamental and distinguishing doctrines of the Gospel of Christ, as summarily expressed in the Westminster Assembly's Shorter Catechism, and he shall furthermore solemnly promise that he will open and explain the Scriptures to his pupils with integrity and faithfulness; that he will maintain and maintain the Christian faith, as above expressed, together with all the other doctrines and duties of our holy religion, so far as may appertain to his office, according to the best light God shall give him, and in opposition not only to Atheists and Infidels, but to Jews, Mahometans, Anians, Pelagians, Antinomians, Arminians, Socinians, Unitarians and Universalists and to all other heresies and errors, an-

cient or modern, which may be opposed to the Gospel of Christ, or hazardous to the souls of men; that by his instructions, counsels and example, he will endeavor to promote true Piety and Godliness; that he will consult the good of this Institution and the peace of the churches of our Lord Jesus Christ on all occasions, and that he will religiously observe the Statutes of this Institution, relative to his official duties and deportment, and all such other Statutes and Laws as shall be constitutionally made by the Trustees of Phillips Academy, not repugnant thereto."

The matters of most importance in the statutes of the associate founders are designated in the II. and III. Articles of these statutes.

#### Article II. reads as follows:

"Every Professor on this foundation shall be a Master of Arts of the Protestant Reformed Religion, an ordained Minister of the Congregational or Presbyterian denomination, and shall sustain the character of a discreet, honest, learned and devout Christian, an orthodox and consistent Calvinist; and after a careful examination by the Visitors with reference to his religious principles, he shall, on the day of his inauguration, publicly make and subscribe a solemn declaration of his faith in Divine Revelation, and in the fundamental and distinguishing doctrines of the Gospel as expressed in the following Creed, which is supported by the infallible Revelation which God constantly makes of Himself in his works of creation, providence and redemption, namely:-

"I believe that there is one, and but one, living and true God; that the word of God, contained in the Scriptures of the Old and New Testament, is the only perfect rule of faith and practice; that agreeably to those Scriptures, God is a Spirit, infinite, eternal and unchangeable in his being, wisdom, power, holiness, justice, goodness and truth; that in the Godhead are three Persons, the Father, the Son and the Holy Ghost; and that these Three are One God, the same in substance, equal in power and glory, that God created and after his own image, in knowledge, righteousness and holiness, that the glory of God is man's chief end, the enjoyment of God his supreme happiness; that this enjoyment is derived solely from conformity of heart to the moral character and will of God; that Adam, the federal head and representative of the human race, was placed in a state of probation, and that in consequence of his disobedience all his descendants were constituted sinners, that by nature every man is personally depraved, destitute of holiness, unlikeliest and opposed to God; and that previously to the renewing agency of the Divine Spirit all his moral actions are adverse to the character and glory of God; that being morally incapable of recovering the image of his Creator, which was lost in Adam, every man is justly exposed to eternal damnation; so that, except a man be born again he cannot see the kingdom of God; that God, of his mere good pleasure, from all eternity, elected some to everlasting life, and that he entered into a covenant of grace to deliver them out of this state of sin and misery by a Redeemer; that the only Redeemer of the elect is the eternal Son of God, who for this purpose became man, and continues to be God and man in two distinct natures and one person forever; that Christ as our Redeemer executeth the office of a Prophet, Priest and King; that agreeably to the covenant of redemption the Son of God, and he alone, by his suffering and death, has made atonement for the sins of all men; that Repentance, faith and holiness are the personal requisites in the Gospel scheme of salvation; that the righteousness of Christ is the only ground of a sinner's justification; that this righteousness is received through faith, and that this faith is the gift of God; so that our salvation is wholly of grace; that no means whatever can change the heart of a sinner and make it holy; that regeneration and sanctification are effects of the creating and renewing agency of the Holy Spirit, and that supreme love to God constitutes the essential difference between saints and sinners; that, by convincing us of our sin and misery, enlightening our minds, working faith in us, and renewing our wills, the Holy Spirit makes us partakers of the benefits of redemption, and that the ordinary means by which these benefits are communicated to us are the Word, sacraments and prayer; that repentance unto life, faith to feed upon Christ, love to God, and new obedience are the appropriate qualifications for the Lord's Supper, and that a Christian Church ought to admit no person to its holy communion before he exhibit credible evidence of his godly sincerity; that perseverance in holiness is the only method of making our calling and election sure, and that the final perseverance of saints, though it is the effect of the special operation of God on their hearts, yet necessarily implies their own watchful diligence; that they who are effectually called do in this life partake of justification, adoption and sanctification and





these several benefits which do either accompany or flow from them; that the souls of believers are at their birth made perfect in holiness, and do immediately possess glory; that their bodies, being still united to Christ, will at the resurrection be raised up to glory; and that the saints will be made perfectly blessed in the full enjoyment of God to all eternity, but that the wicked will awake to shame and everlasting contempt, and with devils be plunged into the lake that burneth with fire and brimstone for ever and ever. I moreover believe that God, according to the counsel of his own will and for his own glory, hath fore-ordained whatsoever comes to pass, and that all beings, actions and events, both in the natural and moral world, are under his providential direction; that God's decrees perfectly consist with human liberty, God's universal agency with the agency of man and man's dependence with his accountability; that man has understanding and corporeal strength to do all that God requires of him, so that nothing but the sinners' perverse stubbornness prevents his salvation; that it is the prerogative of God to bring good out of evil, and that he will cause the wrath and rage of wicked men and devils to praise him; and that all the evil which has ever and will forever exist in the moral system, will eventually be made to promote a most important purpose under the wise and perfect administration of that Almighty Being who will cause all things to work for his own glory, and thus fulfil all his pleasure. And, further more, I do solemnly promise that I will open and explain the Scriptures to my People with integrity and faithfulness; that I will maintain and moderate the Christian faith as expressed in the Creed by me now repeated, together with all the other doctrines and duties of our holy Religion, as far as may appertain to my office, according to the best light God shall vouchsafe, and in opposition not only to atheists and infidels, but to Jews, Papists, Mahometans, Arrians, Pelagians, Antinomians, Arminians, Semiaris, Catholics, Unitarians and Universalists, and to all other heresies and errors ancient and modern, which may be opposed to the Gospel of Christ, or be hazardous to the souls of men; that by my instruction, counsel and example I will endeavor to promote true Piety and holiness; that I will consult the good of this Institution and the peace of the Churches of our Lord Jesus Christ on all occasions; and that I will religiously conform to the Constitution and Laws of this Seminary, and to the Statutes of this Foundation."

#### Article III. reads as follows:

"The preceding Creed and Declaration shall be repeated by every Professor on this Foundation at the expiration of every successive period of five years; and no man shall be continued a Professor on said Foundation who shall not continue to approve himself a man of sound and orthodox principles in Divinity agreeably to the aforesaid Creed."

The original founders, having reserved in their constitution the right to amend that instrument, provided such alteration "be not prejudicial to the true design of said Foundation," that they might bring this constitution into accord with the creed agreed upon with the associate founders, proceeded to establish certain additional statutes.

Their language is, "We do now, agreeably to the said reserved right, and in furtherance, as we trust, of our original design, therein expressed, make and ordain the following Articles, to be added to, and taken as a part of, our said Constitution, and to continue of full force, as a part of our said Constitution, so long as the said Associate Foundation shall continue attached to our said Institution, and no longer."

Article I. of these "Additional Statutes" reads thus:

"Having provided in the twelfth Article of our said Constitution that 'every person, appointed or elected a Professor in the said Seminary, shall, on the day of his inauguration into office, publicly make and subscribe a Declaration of his faith in Divine Revelation and in the fundamental and distinguishing doctrines of the Gospel of Christ, as summarily expressed in the Westminster Assembly's Shorter Catechism,' we now ordain the following addition, to be inserted in said article, in connection with the said clause, viz.: 'and as more particularly expressed in the following Creed, to wit: . . .'"

Then follows verbatim the Associate Creed.

The sentence preceding the creed, in Article I. of the additional statutes, viz., "and as more particularly expressed in the following Creed," has been the subject of diverse interpretation, and of much warm discussion. Some contend that it does not in the least infringe upon or modify the preceding requirements of the founders that their professors shall make subscription to the Shorter Catechism. They claim that the associate creed, is in addition to, not explanatory of, the Westminster Assembly's Catechism.

Others maintain that this clause introduced between the requirement of faith in the Catechism and the associate creed, is a qualifying clause, and was intended to indicate that the creed was to be regarded as an equivalent of the Catechism, or that the creed was to be taken as a more definite expression of what the founders meant to include by the language, "as summarily expressed in the Westminster Assembly's Shorter Catechism," or as embodying so much of, and all of, the Catechism which they desired their professors to accept and subscribe. Wise and good men are to be found on both sides of this delicate question. But practically the question was settled in 1842 by the decision of the board of visitors, the final arbiters on all questions as to the interpretation of the statutes.

The history of this matter is briefly this: From the first till the year 1826 the professors were not required to, and did not, give their assent to or subscribe the Catechism. In that year the Catechism was introduced by the trustees as part of the confession of faith to which the professors must give their adhesion. They conformed to the requirement, and their example was followed till 1842, when one of the professors, deeming the requirement at variance with the demand of the statutes, refused compliance, and appealed to the board of visitors against the demand of the trustees. This board, then composed of Dr. Codman, Dr. Humphrey and Hon. Seth Terry, of Hartford, after an exhaustive hearing, ably conducted on both sides, decided in favor of the professor, on the ground that the statutes did not require the professors and visitors to give their assent to and subscribe the Catechism in addition to the creed. Since this decision the professors have not been required to profess adhesion to the Westminster Assembly's Shorter Catechism.

In addition to this change in the creed, there was a further provision made, in agreement with that in the foundation of the associates, for a visitatorial board. Thus the two projects were assimilated, amalgamated, forming one homogeneous institution.

This provision for a board of visitors is unique. The circumstances and conditions under which the seminary came into existence were also singular.

The recent perversion, as these founders considered it, of the Hollis Fund at Harvard by the trustees of that institution, together with the fact that a majority



of the trustees of Phillips Academy might be, and originally were, laymen, and the anomalous status of their school, the same being placed under the control of persons selected to have charge of a classical institution, and without doctrinal tests or qualifications, led these founders of a theological seminary, who proposed to teach for all time certain specified doctrines, to place their professors under the supervision of a special board. Thus in Article II. of the additional statutes they say:

"That the trust aforesaid may be always executed agreeably to the true intent of our said Foundation, and that we may effectually guard the same, in all future time, against all perversion, or the smallest avoidance of our true design, as therein expressed; We do hereby constitute a Board of Visitors to be, in our place and stead, the Guardians, Overseers and Protectors of our said Foundation, in manner, as is expressed in the following provisions; that is to say, we appoint and constitute the Honorable Nathaniel Strong, Esq., the Governor of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, the Reverend Timothy Dwight, D.D., President of Yale College, and the Reverend Samuel Spring, D.D., of Newburyport, Visitors of this said Foundation; who, with their successors hereafter to be chosen, as hereinafter directed, shall be a perpetual body for this purpose, with all the powers and duties in them here invested and on them enjoined."

The founders—Messrs. Brown, Bartlet, Norris and Abbot—were added to the three above mentioned, to hold office till resignation or death, when, from that day onward, the board was to consist of only three persons—"two clergymen and one layman—all of whom shall be men of distinguished talents and piety." The elected visitors are not to be "under the age of forty years," nor over "the age of seventy years." "A majority shall be a quorum," and, "in case of an equi-vote, the question shall determine on that side on which the presiding member shall have voted." The board shall fill its own vacancies. The members, on taking their seats, are required to "make and subscribe the following declaration:" "Approving the Constitution of the Theological Institution, I solemnly declare, in the presence of God and of this Board, that I will faithfully exert my abilities to carry into execution the Regulations therein contained, and to promote the great object of the Institution." They are further required "to subscribe the same theological Creed, which every professor-elect is required to subscribe," and to make a fresh declaration of faith in the same every five years. The power and duties of the board are to approve or negative the election of a professor by the trustees; to visit the Foundation once a year, and oftener if necessary; to inquire into the state of the fund and the management of the same with respect to the said Professor; "to determine, interpret and explain the Statutes of the said Foundation in all cases brought before them in their judicial capacity; to redress grievances with respect to the said Professor; to hear appeals from decisions of the Board of Trustees, and to remedy upon complaint duly exhibited in behalf of the said professor; to review and reverse any censure passed by said Trustees upon any professor on said Foundation; to declare void all Rules and Regulations made by the said Trustees relative to said Foundation,

which may be inconsistent with the original Statutes thereof; to take care that the duties of each Professor on said Foundation be intelligibly and faithfully discharged, and to admonish or remove him either for misbehaviour, heterodoxy, incapacity or neglect of the duties of his office, and in general to see that our true intentions, as expressed in our said Constitution, in relation to said Professor, be faithfully executed; always administering justice impartially, and exercising the functions of their office in the fear of God, according to these Regulations, the Provisions of the said Constitution and the Laws of the land."

If the visitors, in the exercise of their power, "exceed the limits of their jurisdiction and Constitutional power, the party aggrieved may have recourse by appeal to the *Justices of the Supreme Judicial Court of this Commonwealth*," who are "authorized to judge in such case," and by a majority vote "declare null and void any decree or sentence of the said Visitors" by them deemed "contrary to the said Statutes, or beyond the just limits of their power, therein prescribed."

It is provided in the statutes that the professors, as well as the visitors, shall renew their declaration of faith in the creed and their subscription to the same every five years.

The associate foundation provides further that if the board of visitors and the trustees "be well satisfied," after seven years' experiment, "with the safety and expediency of the Visitation system, and that a perpetual coalition is important and desirable, Union shall be established upon Visitation principles, to continue as the Sun and Moon forever." Agreeably to this provision, these boards at the time appointed expressed their approval of the system, and hence it has been established "to continue forever."

In establishing this seminary, the design of the promoters and founders was evidently not only to furnish a school for the proper education of ministers of the Gospel, but also to create an institution that should to the end of time antagonize all heresies, and teach those doctrines embodied in their creed which they esteemed Scriptural, fundamental and essential in the religion of Christ. They intended to guard their institution against "the smallest avoidance of our true design." The occasion of this intense circumspection against any perversion of their trust was doubtless owing to the defection of Harvard from the faith of its founders. Their creed has been called "an iron-bound creed." It certainly is a thoroughly panoplied creed for either defensive or offensive service. Its authors heartily believed in the doctrines they so clearly and definitely stated, and purposed to have these doctrines, and none others at variance with them, taught in their school to the end of time.

Whatever may be thought of the wisdom or unwisdom of this creed, of "anchoring" a school of divinity, designed "to continue as the Sun and Moon," the





purpose of its promoters and founders can hardly be open to mistake.

The seminary having been fully established by the acceptance of its constitution, statutes and trusts on the part of the trustees of Phillips Academy, the institution was opened for students September 28, 1808. This was an entirely new departure in the method of ministerial education. It was the first incorporated and endowed institution of the kind in this or in any country. It was designed to embrace Presbyterians as well as Congregationalists, both in the department of instruction and in that of education. This may account, in part, for the introduction of the Catechism into the original constitution of the seminary. The first two professors were Dr. Leonard Woods, designated by one of the original founders, and Dr. Eliphalet Pearson, designated by the associate founders. During the first year thirty-six students, from various sections of the country, were admitted to the privileges of the institution, a number far in excess of the fondest expectations of its founders.

From that first opening year to the present day the institution has gone forward in its beneficent work of educating young men for the ministry of the Gospel of Christ with marked success. Indirectly, also, it has been further instrumental of much good. Its establishment created a revolution in the method of ministerial education. Previous to this, what students for the ministry had by way of instruction and guidance was furnished by the pastors of churches, and that for a limited time. Since the foundation of the Andover Seminary multitudes of like institutions have sprung up, and are continually springing up all over the land, germinated by its example and success. Thousands of young ministers have gone from its halls to preach the glorious Gospel of the Son of God throughout the world.

It is highly probable that it leads every other educational institution, in this or any other land, in the extent of territory over which, and in the number of nations and peoples among which, its graduates have performed labors and exercised a salutary influence. It has carried the name of Andover to the ends of the earth, and that, too, with a benediction. This fact will justify, if it needs justification, the somewhat extended notice here given of the establishment of this institution.

At the close of the first year Dr. Pearson resigned his office of professor, and removed from Andover.

In the spring of the year 1810, Rev. Moses Stuart, the popular pastor of the Centre Church, New Haven, Connecticut, was elected to the Professorship of Sacred Literature. He was in the thirty-third year of his age, "a young man of uncommon promise," who amply fulfilled the promise of his young manhood by his subsequent achievements. He resigned in 1848, after thirty-eight years of exceptionally valuable service in a department of study little under-

stood or pursued in this country previous to his inauguration.

Mr. Bartlet, having founded a Professorship of Pulpit Eloquence, or Sacred Rhetoric, Rev. Edward Dorr Griffin, D.D., of Newark, N. J., was invited by him to accept the position of professor in this department. This invitation he at first declined, but afterwards accepted, on the condition that he might preach half the time at the newly-organized Park Street Church, in Boston, this church having extended to him an earnest invitation to become its pastor. He was inaugurated June 21, 1809. He came to the seminary with a flattering reputation for theological learning and soundness, and for pulpit eloquence. As he entered upon his duties with zeal and efficiency, it soon became apparent "that he possessed extraordinary qualifications for the work he had undertaken." But his time of service was brief. The duties of the two important positions he held proving too much for his health and strength, he resigned the professorship in 1811, and devoted himself exclusively to his ministerial work at Park Street.

Rev. Ebenezer Porter, D.D., of Washington, Conn., was elected to succeed Dr. Griffin, and was inaugurated as professor April 1, 1812. At his request the title of his office had been changed from Professorship of Pulpit Eloquence to that of Sacred Rhetoric. Dr. Porter entered upon his duties with some reluctance and apprehension, owing to his feeble health and his sense of the great importance of the service to be rendered.

He had been a successful pastor, "was possessed of a clear, well-balanced and discriminating mind." With fine literary taste and a nice appreciation of the requirements of the pulpit, he was well fitted to teach young men the arts of sermonizing and the delivery of sermons. With a genial temper, tender sensibilities and great benevolence he combined much dignity and gentle courtesy, thus winning the affection and commanding the reverence of his students. To his intellectual and moral excellencies he added diligence and perseverance, which enabled him to accomplish much, though always hindered by feeble health. On the creation of the office of president of the seminary, in 1828, he was chosen to fill that office. In 1832, owing to impaired health, he resigned his professorship, retaining the presidency till his death, which occurred in 1834.

The number of students rapidly increased year by year, and the wants of the seminary in like ratio increased. The prosperity of the institution deepening the interest of its founders, led them to provide generously for its needs. In 1821 Mr. Brown endowed a Professorship of Ecclesiastical History. The Rev. James Murdock, D.D., an eminent scholar, was elected the first professor on this foundation. Dr. Murdock came to the seminary expecting to find fitting employment for his extensive and erudite learning, and felt aggrieved that he was required to devote so much of his time to rudimentary instruction. Dis-



satisfied with his work, he failed to satisfy his associates. He was accused by them of a neglect of duty, and, on this charge, was arraigned before the trustees. They sustained the accusation. The professor appealed to the board of visitors. After a long and ably conducted hearing, the visitors affirmed the sentence of the trustees and deposed the professor. He appealed his case to the justices of the Supreme Court. They decided that the visitors had not exceeded their powers under the statutes, and hence that their verdict was final. In a subsequent trial for salary, the court decided that the professor could draw his salary up to the time he was deposed by the visitors. By these two decisions the Supreme Court established the power of removal in the board of visitors, and that their judgments of the evidence and merits of a case could not come under the review of this court.

The connection of Dr. Murdock with the seminary closed in 1828.

The Rev. Ralph Emerson, D.D., pastor of the church in Norfolk, Conn., succeeded Dr. Murdock as Brown Professor of Ecclesiastical History in 1829. Dr. Emerson belonged to a family noted for its intellectual force, for its extensive influence and for its efficient activity in promoting the interests of higher education. He was a graduate of Yale College, a tutor for a time there, from which he also received his degree of S.T.D. He was among the earliest graduates of Andover Seminary. When invited to occupy the chair of professor he at first declined. Afterwards, on a renewal of the invitation, he accepted, on condition that Pastoral Theology be added to Ecclesiastical History. This proposition being acceded to, he was inaugurated as Brown Professor in 1829.

Dr. Emerson was especially noted for his rare modesty. Never intrusive, never self-asserting, never forward to express his opinion or to press his measures, never eager for reputation or a foremost place, he had few disagreements, and no quarrels or personal controversies. He was esteemed a man of sound judgment and discretion, whose opinion in matters affecting conduct it were wise to follow. He brought to the discharge of his duties in the seminary patient industry, a conscientious purpose to do his best, and a deep, fatherly interest in the improvement and usefulness of the young men who came under his instruction. The personal advice he gave his students was often the most valuable instruction they received. He had, in large degree, the wisdom of common sense. Hence, while not possessing the learning of his predecessor, or the ability of one of his colleagues, or the enthusiasm of another, he filled a much-needed place in a body of teachers, and, in his unassuming way, was often of incalculable service to the students.

In 1830 Rev. Edward Robinson, D.D., LL.D., was chosen Professor Extraordinary of Sacred Literature. He resigned in 1833, after but three years' service.

In 1833, Rev. Thomas H. Skinner, D.D., was chosen

Bartlet Professor of Sacred Rhetoric, to succeed Dr. Porter. He resigned in 1835.

In 1836 Rev. Justin Edwards, D.D., for a time pastor of the South Church, was elected president of the seminary. He resigned in 1842, and has had no successor.

In 1836 Rev. Edwards Amasa Park, D.D., professor in Amherst College, was elected Bartlet Professor of Sacred Rhetoric. In 1847 he was transferred from this professorship to that of Abbot Professor of Christian Theology. He resigned this position in 1881, having been for forty-five years in the service of the seminary—eleven years as Professor of Sacred Rhetoric, and thirty-four years as Professor of Christian Theology,—and in addition Lecturer on Christian Theology for one year previous to his appointment as professor. Since his resignation Dr. Park has employed his leisure, as his health permitted, in preparing his lectures for the press, and in other literary labors. It will be seen that Prof. Park held the position of professor in the seminary for a longer period, by seven years, than any other professor. Dr. Woods and Prof. Stuart held office for thirty-eight years each. By this phenomenal and life-long service in the seminary, overlapping the preceding and succeeding generations of teachers, having given the best energies of his mind and the unstinted devotion of his soul to the interests of the institution, it would not be surprising if Professor Park should come to feel a personal identification with it,—to be so one with it as to feel that his individual honor was involved in its reputation, and his personal happiness interwoven with its welfare. The time has not come, and may the day be distant, for giving a sketch of his life, his work, his theology, his mental characteristics, his idiosyncrasies of character, his personality, but the writer must be pardoned for here expressing his personal obligation to Professor Park, as a teacher, for the intellectual stimulus, quickening, he received under his instruction.

In 1837 Rev. Bela Bates Edwards, D.D., was elected Professor of Hebrew, and in 1848, Associate Professor of Sacred Literature. He died while in office in 1851, much lamented.

In 1852 Rev. Calvin Ellis Stowe, D.D., was elected Associate Professor of Sacred Literature, to succeed Dr. Edwards. A man of varied learning and experience, he brought to the discharge of his duties unusual enthusiasm and energy. With a warm heart, quick impulses and ready speech, he could not fail to give interest to his class exercises. He resigned in 1864.

In 1853 Rev. Elijah Porter Barrows, D.D., was elected Professor of Hebrew, and in 1858, Hitchcock Professor, which position he resigned in 1862. He is still living at Oberlin, Ohio.

In 1848, Rev. Austin Phelps, D.D., then pastor of Pine Street Church, Boston, was elected Bartlet Professor of Sacred Rhetoric, to fill the vacancy made by the transfer of Professor Park. He resigned in 1879, on account of continued ill health. Professor Phelps,





during a considerable portion of the time in which he filled this office, was not able, from poor health, to devote as much time, thought and energy to his work as when he first entered upon his duties. His lectures and personal influence, however, were regarded by the trustees as of such value to the seminary as to make his retention expedient, when his resignation was at their disposal.

In 1853, Rev. William Greenough Thayer Shedd, D.D., was elected Brown Professor of Ecclesiastical History and Lecturer on Pastoral Theology. After nine years of service in these departments, in which he did much to raise to importance the department of history, and to create for himself an enviable reputation as a scholar and theologian, he resigned in 1862. He is now connected with Union Theological Seminary, New York.

In 1863, Rev. Egbert Coffin Smyth, D.D., was elected to succeed Professor Shedd as Professor of Ecclesiastical History and Lecturer on Pastoral Theology. He retained the lectureship till 1868. He still holds the professorship, and is also president of the faculty. He is the oldest in office of the incumbent professors. Under his guidance the department has continued to grow in importance and attractiveness.

In 1864, Rev. Joseph Henry Thayer, D.D., then pastor of Crombie Street Church, Salem, was elected Associate Professor of Sacred Literature. After filling with acceptance his office for eighteen years, he resigned in 1882. He is now Bussey Professor of New Testament Criticism and Interpretation at Harvard College.

In 1866, Rev. Charles Marsh Mead, Ph.D., was chosen Hitchcock Professor of the Hebrew Language and Literature. Wishing to devote himself for a time to special studies, he resigned in 1882. Since then he has been living in Europe, mostly in Germany, pursuing his favorite studies.

The professors now filling departments are the following: Rev. Egbert Coffin Smyth, D.D., elected 1863, Brown Professor of Ecclesiastical History and president of the faculty; Rev. John Wesley Churchill, M.A., elected 1868, Jones Professor of Elocution; Rev. John Putnam Gulliver, D.D., LL.D., elected 1878, Stone Professor of the Relations of Christianity to the Secular Sciences; Rev. William Jewett Tucker, D.D., elected 1879, Bartlet Professor of Sacred Rhetoric and Lecturer on Pastoral Theology; Rev. John Phelps Taylor, M.A., elected 1882, Taylor Professor of Biblical Theology and History; Rev. George Harris, D.D., elected 1882, Abbot Professor of Christian Theology; Rev. Edward Young Hincks, D.D., elected 1882, Smith Professor of Biblical Theology; Rev. George Foot Moore, D.D., elected 1883, Hitchcock Professor of the Hebrew Language and Literature.

Up to 1816 the professors and students of the Theological Seminary, the teachers and students of

Phillips Academy, and all other persons having official or other connection with these institutions, attended worship at the South Church, and had their religious connection with it. In fact, up to this date all the religious organizations in town were established upon a territorial basis. The General Court divided the town into territorial parishes, and the people were expected to belong to the one in which they resided, and to attend religious worship in the parish church and pay for its support. There were no divisive denominations in town at that day.

On the 22d day of August, 1816, this territorial parish regulation was, for the first time, infringed upon by the formation of an independent Church at the Theological Seminary, within the territorial limits of the South Parish. The members of the academy and seminary had so increased as almost to necessitate for them a separate place of worship. At first they worshipped in one of the rooms of Phillips Hall; afterwards a chapel was erected for their accommodation. The professors were, and ever have been, the pastors of the church. The church was reorganized Nov. 1, 1865. This church is, ecclesiastically speaking, an anomaly. It has no parish. It has nothing to do with calling, settling, dismissing or supporting its pastor. It is under the charge of a board of trustees, no one of whom necessarily belongs to its membership. No one of the pastors is in the slightest degree amenable to the church over which he presides, and to which he preaches. He may be heretical, heterodox, or otherwise objectionable; the Church can do nothing about it. It cannot even discipline one of its own members without first obtaining the approval of the trustees. The organization of the church may be called Evangelical, but not Congregational.

After worshipping for many years in the building erected by the liberality of Mr. Bartlet for the triple purpose of furnishing recitation-rooms, a library-room and a place of worship, in 1876 a new and elegant Gothic stone chapel was erected on the seminary campus, a short distance northwest of Phillips Hall. This is an ornamental, no less than a much-needed and highly useful, building. Architecturally speaking, it is by far the choicest edifice on the Hill, and, many people think, in the town. Some connoisseurs give the preference to the new edifice of Christ Church. The chapel is used exclusively for religious services, save that the anniversary exercises of the seminary are held there, which, previous to its erection, had been held in the meeting-house of the South Church.

The old chapel has undergone extensive repairs, changes and improvements, and is now an exceedingly commodious structure for lectures and recitation purposes, and all other uses of a similar character.

It may be as well, perhaps, to refer here to the one other new building which has been, in the later years of its history, erected for the benefit of the seminary. Brechin Hall, the library building, standing on the



south side of the seminary grounds, near where stood the second building for Phillips Academy, is the gift of the Messrs. Smith and Dove. It is built of stone, and was designed to be fire-proof. It is a well-proportioned and attractive building, convenient for the purposes for which it was erected. It contains a library of nearly forty thousand volumes (some of them of priceless value), besides magazines, a large number of curiosities, sent by missionaries in foreign lands, as tokens of their love for the institution that gave them their theological training, and the portraits and busts of the patrons and professors who established and gave character to the seminary. The hall was named Brechin, by the donors, in honor of the city of that name in Scotland, in which they were born. In a like spirit, these same generous benefactors of learning named the hill in Brechin, upon which they erected their free school-house for the benefit of the poor in that city, "Andover Hill." Thus they united the place of their birth and the place of their prosperity by an interchange of names and a baptism of far-reaching beneficence.

During the past few years the seminary has been in grievous affliction, by what instrumentality it is no part of our business to inquire. Perchance it is one of those ordeals by which institutions, like individuals, are made (under divine guidance) to pass through sore trials for their profit. The profit in this case, as in the case of the afflicted believer, is not seen at present, but may be seen hereafter. As early as 1883 there began to be rumors that the faith and teaching of some of the professors were not strictly in accord with the prescribed creed of the seminary. These rumors, circulated by newspapers and otherwise, in a measure perhaps fostered, or at least made plausible, by the open avowal of some of the professors in the *Andover Review*, of which they are the editors, of their adherence to a "progressive theology" and a "new departure" in theological development, grew more numerous and pronounced. The publication by the accused parties of a volume of which they are also the editors, made up of articles taken from the *Andover Review*, entitled "Progressive Orthodoxy," led to decisive action on the part of those who felt aggrieved at the course of these professors. The matter came up for consideration before the trustees, who, with a single exception, approved the course of the professors.

The dogma or hypothesis of a probation after death for the heathen and others who had never known or heard of the salvation of Christ, accepted and defended by these professors, was that for which they were especially called to account by the newspapers.

In 1886, the dissentient trustee, in conjunction with two other influential graduates of the seminary, called the attention of the board of visitors to the fact of the alleged dereliction of certain professors from the creed of the institution. This was followed,

at the instigation of the visitors, by the presentation of a set of charges, drawn up in form, with references to the evidence by which they were supported. Upon these charges, five of the professors were summoned before the board of visitors and put on trial for heterodoxy, or a departure from the prescribed statutes under which they held their professorships. The trial was a protracted one, occupying a number of days. The accused and the accusers were both represented by eminent counsel. Both also presented elaborate and able arguments for the support of the position they respectively assumed. The trial was attended by many eminent theologians and jurists, as well as by the friends of the parties more immediately interested. It was the newspaper sensation of the day. The board upon whom the duty devolved of deciding upon the merits of this controversy of such delicacy and far-reaching significance was composed of Rev. Julius Harriman Scelye, D.D., LL.D., president of Amherst College; Rev. William Tappan Eustis, D.D., pastor of the Memorial Church, Springfield; and Hon. Joshua N. Marshall, of Lowell. After many months' deliberation the verdict of these visitors was announced on the evening of the closing day of the anniversary exercises in June, 1887, by private notes addressed to each one of the accused professors. By this verdict the charge against Professor Egbert C. Smyth was sustained, and he was removed from the professorship he held. With regard to the other four defendants, "Rev. Mr. Eustis declined to act thereon with his associates, upon the ground that he was not present on the day of the hearing," "when said respondents severally appeared." Thereupon the complaints were "considered and none of the charges" "were sustained." Professor Smyth has appealed his case to the justices of the Supreme Court. Awaiting their decision, he continues to hold his office and discharge its duties.

This sad episode in the history of this ancient and world-renowned institution of sacred learning is working serious injury to its prosperity and usefulness at a time when, in its material strength, it was never before so well equipped to do a glorious work for Christ and the Church.

*Permanent Funds.*—The following amounts have been given by the persons whose names are mentioned, to the theological department of Phillips Academy, for the purposes designated at the time specified:

1808. Samuel Abbot, Abbot Professorship.....	\$20,000
1808. William Bartlet, Bartlet Professorship.....	25,000
1809. William Bartlet, \$10,000	} Associate fund... 60,000
1809. Moses Brown, \$10,000	
1809. John Norris, \$10,000	
1815. John Norris, Legacy \$30,000 }	
1819. Moses Brown, Brown Professorship.....	25,000
1813-15. Samuel Abbot, Legacy, Abbot Fund.....	84,000
1855-18. Misses Rebecca and Sarah Waldo.....	15,000
1841. William Bartlet, Legacy, Bartlet Fund.....	50,000
1856. Boston Fund, Sundry Contributors.....	28,420
1857. Samuel A. Hitchcock, Hitchcock Professorship...	15,000





1866-77. Peter and John Smith, and John Dove, support of Library .....	45,000
1867. Miss Sophia Smith, Smith Professorship.....	38,005
1874-76. Frederick Jones, Jones Professorship.....	15,000
1860. Samuel A. Hitchcock, Contingent Fund.....	40,770
1872. Samuel A. Hitchcock, Relief Fund.....	60,000
1871. John L. Taylor and family, Taylor Professorship.....	38,405
1878-80. Henry Winkley, General Fund.....	60,000
1880-81. Park Testamental .....	14,147
1880. Mrs. Valerita G. Stone, Stone Professorship.....	50,000
1880. Mrs. Valerita G. Stone, General Fund.....	100,000
1887. N. G. White, Legney, General Fund.....	50,000
Sundry sums at sundry times for scholarships and to aid poor students.....	97,000
Library Funds.....	28,400
Lectureship Funds.....	10,000

In addition to these permanent and income-bearing funds, the trustees hold buildings and lands contributing to the support and carrying forward of the institution valued at two hundred and fifty thousand dollars.

In the above donations, that given by Mr. Bartlet for building Bartlet Hall, Bartlet Chapel, and the president's house are not included; neither is there included the amount, forty-one thousand dollars, given by the Smith & Dove Manufacturing Company to build Breechin Hall, nor the amount given by Madam Phillips and Mr. Samuel Phillips to erect the first seminary building.

#### PROFESSORS IN THE THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY.

LEONARD WOODS, the first Abbot Professor of Christian Theology in the Andover Seminary, was born in Princeton June 19, 1774, and baptized on the day of his birth.

His father was a farmer in moderate circumstances, but above the average of his class in intellectual activity and attainments. He was always known as "Master Woods," having been appointed first school-master of the town. He was a member of the Provincial Congress and one of Governor Gill's Council. His mother was an energetic woman, full of motherly love and ambition for her children, only too willing to sacrifice herself for their benefit.

At a very early period of his life he showed a fondness for books and for studies in advance of his years. His father had designed that he should follow the farm; but, owing to an accident which brought on an illness that lasted for two years, and which affected his bodily strength, the father was induced to comply with the wishes of the son and the desire of his mother, and permitted him to enter upon the study of Latin with the pastor of the parish. While the father could promise no assistance to him in pursuing a collegiate course, the mother promised to do what she could to aid him. Under these conditions young Woods applied himself assiduously, spending three months at Leicester Academy, but otherwise mainly conducting his own preparatory studies. He entered Harvard College in 1792, and graduated in 1796, the first in the class, which contained some afterwards eminent scholars.

His college course came at a time when infidelity and skepticism were popular with young men, and their

pernicious influence pervaded all the higher institutions of learning in the land. At one time during his connection with Harvard there was but one professing Christian among its students. Young Woods, though nurtured in a pious family, and taught the Catechism by a praying mother, could not altogether escape the influence of the atmospheric skepticism in which he drew his breath. He did not go to the extreme of disbelief, but his faith in some of the cardinal doctrines of the Christian religion was seriously shaken.

On leaving college he taught school for eight months in Medford. On being thus separated from his college associates, and brought face to face with the work of life, the training of his childhood began to reassert its influence. He entered upon a careful study of the Scriptures with the purpose of finding out for himself the evidence for their truth or falsity. With this spirit of earnest inquiry and candor of judgment, he pursued his investigation till he was led, intellectually and from the heart, to accept the Scriptures as the word of God, and Jesus Christ as the Son of God and the Saviour of men. Soon after this he made a public profession of his faith, and united with the church in Medford. This acceptance of Christ and consecration to his service at once gave direction to his future life. He entered upon a course of theological study, with the ministry in view. It being the custom of those days for an aspirant for the ministry to spend a short time under the instruction of some eminent divine, he spent three months with Dr. Charles Backus, at Somers, Conn. The winter following he spent with his parents, pursuing his theological studies by himself, with some assistance from his pastor.

In the spring of 1798 he was licensed to preach, and in November of the same year was settled as pastor of the Congregational Church at West Newbury. This church was an influential and important one, its retiring pastor being Dr. Tappan, who had been chosen to be a professor in Harvard College. Thus, at the age of twenty-four, after a Christian experience of less than two years and scarcely more than one year of theological study, he entered upon his ministry with an extensive and numerous parish. His mind was mature beyond his years, his knowledge more distinct and available than is common to neophytes in religion and his beliefs were more clear, well-considered and terse than is the case with those who have never wrought their way to an abiding faith through grave doubts and questionings. He at once took high rank among his ministerial brethren as a thinker, sermonizer, preacher and pastor. Being naturally of a genial, conciliatory temper, he was received on friendly terms by ministers of different shades of theological belief between the high and the low, the loose and the consistent Calvinists. After a few years of successful service in West Newbury, he came to be on familiar terms with the distinguished



divines of the region. Dr. Morse, of Charlestown, so valued his friendship and esteemed his ability, as to invite him to become an associate editor with himself of the *Panoplist*, the organ of the old Calvinists. Dr. Spring, of Newburyport, a near neighbor of his and a staunch Hopkinsian, requested his assistance as a contributor to his magazine of the consistent Calvinistic shade.

After ten years of ministerial labor and intercourse with some of the ablest divines in the State, he had attained such consideration that, when the Hopkinsians, under the lead of Dr. Enmons and Dr. Spring, determined on establishing a theological college, they fixed upon him as their theological professor and his parish as the place for its location. And when the important question came up whether there should be one or two theological seminaries to represent the two shades of Calvinism in New England, he was found to be an important medium in bringing the divergent elements into agreement. In the narrative we have from the pen of Dr. Woods, written after he had retired from the professor's chair, describing the difficulties attending the project to unite the two contemplated institutions, we are constrained to believe that it was a fortunate Providence that had brought Dr. Spring and Dr. Woods into such intimate association. Dr. Pearson was doubtless the master mover in all the efforts put forth and all the methods devised to produce harmony between the parties; but Dr. Woods, with less push and persistency and less accumulated power, was able, from his relation to the Newbury men, to exert a most salutary influence in favor of union. He clearly saw the waste and folly of having two theological seminaries within twenty miles of each other, of essentially the same religious character and belief. If we understand his narrative, he was, first and last, in favor of union. And when the difficulties in the way of this union increased, and the fears, jealousies and hitches in the way of harmony threatened disaster to the plan when apparently near its consummation, he put forth strenuous and effective efforts for its accomplishment. On the apparent failure of the negotiations after months of anxious treating, and when the Hopkinsians had renewed their offer to him of a professorship in their college, he declined the honor and urged a renewal of the endeavor to effect a union. If, as seems likely by this narrative, it was largely by the persistent efforts of Dr. Woods towards the close of these protracted negotiations, that the hindrances were finally removed, the church is hardly less indebted to him for this feat of friendly diplomacy than for the able instruction he afterwards gave in the united seminary.

The seminary was opened for the reception of students on September 28, 1808. On that day Dr. Pearson and Dr. Woods were inaugurated as professors. The narrative of this important event will be given in the words of Dr. Woods, who was not only an eyewitness, but himself no small part of it:

"It was an auspicious day, a day of rejoicing and hope, a day involving in no small measure the most precious interests of the church and the world. This was the first Divinity School founded in America, and the large assembly of Christian ministers from different and distant places, and of other friends of the Seminary, indicated the interest and the profound sense of the importance of this occasion.

"The public services were conducted in the Parish Church with consummate order and propriety, while earnest attention, deep reverence and solemn feeling prevailed in the Sanctuary.

"As Dr. Pearson was a layman, the Statutes of the Founders required that he should receive ordination. The prayers on the occasion were appropriate and fervent. The sermon was preached by Dr. Dwight; the Rev. Jonathan French gave to Dr. Pearson the customary charge, and Dr. Morse gave the right hand of fellowship. Dr. Pearson, President of the Board of Trustees, then gave an historical sketch of the events which contributed to the establishment of the Institution, and read such portions of the Constitution and Statutes as the occasion called for. After that he was inducted into office as Professor of Natural Theology, and the Rev. Leonard Woods as Professor of Christian Theology, and the Seminary was declared to be open for the admission of Theological Students.

"After the close of the public solemnities, the Founders of the United Institution, and their principal advisers and agents, were all together, and how cordial were their mutual congratulations! They felt it to be the happiest hour of their lives. What joy brightened their countenances, and how deep and unutterable their emotions of gratitude to God as then exerted minds glaced over the crowded transactions and events of the two preceding years!

Dr. Woods entered upon his duties with great eagerness and high expectations.

Students came to his class-room in greater numbers than could be well accommodated. His popularity and usefulness increased from year to year, till, in 1833, the seminary admitted to its privileges eighty new students.

As a lecturer on theology, Dr. Woods was lucid, didactic, somewhat diffuse, scriptural rather than philosophical, resting his conclusions on the statements of the Bible rather than on the deductions of reason. Of a calm temperament, his words were carefully weighed before they were uttered. He never indulged in speculations that unloosed his foothold upon Scripture truth. There was in him, doubtless, a lack of imagination, or vision to see, as is given to some, the germinating life that lies hidden in the letter of Scripture statements. But, whatever his limitations, he was an able and sound theologian, who, from his lecture-room, exerted a wide and salutary influence upon the minds of a multitude of ministers, and thus did an incalculable service to the interests of evangelical religion.

As the seminary came into existence in part as a protest against what its promoters regarded as unsound doctrine, it was from the beginning involved in controversy. As a controversialist, Dr. Woods was, to an unusual degree, dispassionate and courteous. He treated his adversary with fairness and his arguments with candor, while presenting his own position in a clear and commanding manner. Naturally conciliatory, and having had personal experience in the region of doubt and unbelief, he was the more ready to treat with forbearance and charity the errors of others, though he never yielded a point he deemed scripturally true.

As a man Dr. Woods secured the esteem and con-





fidence of his fellow-men to a marked degree. Tall in person, dignified in manner, approachable, with a winning smile and affable speech, kind and sympathetic, he won the hearts of young men, and led his associates to rely, not only upon his ability, but also upon his steadfastness and integrity. As a Christian, his heart was in full sympathy with his doctrinal belief. That which he taught in the lecture-room he accepted as the rule of life. From personal experience he could speak of the depravity of human nature, the influence of the Holy Spirit, the new birth of the soul through repentance, and faith in the Lord Jesus as the Christ of God. His piety had in it a trace of the Puritan piety of the Commonwealth as described by Macaulay. At times, he was all penitence and self-abasement before God, while, before men, he was serene and self-sustained. His sense of personal guilt was profound, if not at times bitter. But his confidence in the atoning merits of the Lord Jesus and the enduring mercy of the Heavenly Father was equally strong and profound. He uses this language regarding himself: "The sight of a thousandth part of my sinfulness of heart and life has filled me with amazement and shame. But O, there is very plenteous redemption—sufficient even for me; and if for me, for any one on earth."

In addition to his duties as professor in the seminary, Dr. Woods took a conspicuous part in the controversy with the Unitarians, and was forward in originating and promoting all those beneficent projects which had in view the moral improvement of the people or their enlightenment, and the preaching of the gospel to those to whom it was unknown. Many of the charitable, reformatory and missionary organizations of the day had their origin on the Hill, or, if not their origin, their most potent assistance. Dr. Woods was one of those who originated the Education Society, the Tract Society, the Total Abstinence Society, and was an early and efficient friend of the Foreign Missionary Board.

In 1846 he resigned his office as professor, after having served in that capacity for thirty-eight years. At the request of the trustees he employed himself, after his resignation, in preparing a history of the seminary. While engaged in this work he was called hence in the eighty-first year of his age. His history, a most valuable volume, was published in 1855, under the editorial supervision of his grandson, Dr. George S. Baker.

ELPHALIT PEARSON,<sup>1</sup> LL.D., was born in Byfield, a parish in Newbury, Massachusetts, June 11, 1752, and died in Greenland, New Hampshire, September 12, 1826, aged seventy-four years, three months, and one day. He entered Harvard College in 1769, and was graduated with high honors in 1773. His eminence was then predicted by his instructors. Soon after graduation he was called to teach a grammar school

at Andover (now North Andover), the home of his friend, Samuel Phillips, afterwards Lieutenant-Governor of Massachusetts.

In 1775 Governor Phillips was commissioned by the General Court to manufacture gunpowder for the Revolutionary army. In this enterprise he relied very much on the scientific attainments of Pearson. He relied on the same while he was laying the foundation of Phillips Academy at Andover. Pearson became the first principal of the academy, and remained in this office from 1778 to 1786. He was one of the twelve original trustees, and was the first president of the board who did not belong to the Phillips family.

In 1786 he was called to the Professorship of the Hebrew and Oriental Languages at Harvard College,—an office for which he was then well qualified. He delivered to the students a valuable course of lectures on language. He was particularly successful as a teacher of rhetoric. Occasionally he spent the entire night in correcting the compositions of the students, in order that he might spend the day in the multiplied extra-official duties which were heaped upon him. He labored with rare zeal and tact for the financial as well as literary welfare of the college. He searched the documents which illustrated the claim of the university to certain disputed possessions; examined old deeds in the registry of probate, old notes pertaining to farms, ferries, bridges, in which the university had, or was thought to have, an interest. For twenty years he was an uncommonly laborious professor in the college; for six years was a leading member of its Board of Fellows, and for a long time performed many of the duties belonging to the President. Among his pupils were some of the most eminent men of the day, such as John Quincy Adams, Judge Story, Presidents Kirkland and Quincy, Drs. William E. Channing and Edward Payson, John Pickering, Alexander H. Everett. It has been often said by President Quincy that if Governor Phillips had lived, Pearson would have been elected President of Harvard College, as successor to Dr. Joseph Willard.

He resigned his office at Cambridge in 1806. He immediately repaired to Andover, where he gave the first impulse to the formation of the Andover Theological Seminary. He originated its remarkable constitution. He worked with wonderful energy in order to unite with each other the members of his own theological party. Afterward he was a conspicuous agent in effecting the union between his own party and a dissenting one,—that is, between the seminary planned at Andover and that which had been planned by Dr. Samuel Spring, of Newburyport. He rode from Andover to Newburyport thirty-six times for the purpose of consummating that union. He was elected the first Professor of Sacred Literature in the Seminary. He was the first president of the board of trustees after the theological institution came under

<sup>1</sup> Prepared by Prof. Edwards A. Park



its care. He retained the presidency of that board nineteen years,—a longer period than any other one, either before or since his time, has held it. He continued a member of the board forty-eight years.

Dr. Pearson was noted for the variety of his talents and interests. A large collection of his papers impresses the readers of them that he was merely "a man of affairs." He was an adept in the fine arts; he possessed remarkable skill and taste in music; he had also an architect's eye and forecast. The oak tree is yet standing which he climbed in order to lay out the plan for the building and grounds of Andover Seminary. For many years he had been an industrious member, and also the secretary, of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences. He had associated mainly with men of letters, of science and of political renown. He had not addicted himself to the niceties of theological studies, but was an accurate critic of the Hebrew and Greek Scriptures. He once published a Hebrew grammar. With great care he revised and prepared for the press Thomas Wilson's "Sacra Privata," Leslie's "Short Method with the Deists," Baxter's "Saints' Rest," Baxter's "Call to the Unconverted," Doddridge's "Address to a Master of a Family," also several pamphlets and tracts. Occupied, as he was, with great schemes, theological and political, he yet interested himself in securing the publication and extending the circulation of Dr. Watts' "Divine Songs for Children." Watts and Doddridge were his favorite authors. He also held in high esteem the writings of Owen, Leighton, Flavel, Tillotson and Bishop Thomas Wilson. He originated the "Massachusetts Society for the Promotion of Christian Knowledge," and was the most conspicuous man in forming the "American Education Society." His enterprising spirit made him a pioneer in many great and good works, which need not be particularized here. His person was noble and commanding, his manners were dignified and courtly. As a teacher he was faithful; as a disciplinarian, exact and severe. His severity excited some opposition among his pupils, but many of the most eminent among them regarded him as their prominent benefactor.

The establishment of Andover Theological Seminary was opposed with great vigor by men of great influence in New England. Some of them had been the scholars of Pearson at Cambridge. The brunt of their opposition was borne by him; he was the target against which their deadliest missiles were aimed and thrown. President Josiah Quincy was familiar with the obstacles which Pearson was called to resist, and with the herculean efforts which the brave man made in resisting them. Mr. Quincy says: "What no other man would have dared to attempt with any hope of success he effected. Whatever good has resulted, or shall result, from the mere fact of this union [between the two parties who coalesced in forming the Seminary], the merit of es-

tablishing it belongs to Eliphalet Pearson. I speak without reserve. I had better opportunities of knowing his principles, motives, and causes of success perhaps than any other man. I was *eight* years, from 1778 to 1786, his pupil, *four* years under his instruction in college. Afterwards through life I had frequent intercourse with him. In 1808, as a trustee of the academy, I witnessed his zeal, his labors, and the untiring spirit with which he pursued, until he succeeded in effecting, the cherished object of his heart. After his retirement from the government of the Seminary he made me the confidant of his opinions and feelings concerning it. I mean no disparagement to Dr. Spring and his associates. The institution is an ever-enduring monument of their zeal for religion and their munificence. But I owe it to truth and to the memory of Dr. Pearson to declare that his influence and power effected the desired union and fixed the locality of this Theological Seminary." (See a Memorial of the Semi-Centennial Celebration of the founding of the Theological Seminary at Andover, pp. 119, 120.)

MOSES STUART<sup>1</sup> was born in Wilton, Conn., March 26, 1789, and died in Andover, January 4, 1852, aged seventy-one years, nine months, and nine days. When a lad of but twelve years he became absorbed in the perusal of Edwards on the Will. In his fifteenth year, entering an academy in Norwalk, Conn., he learned the whole Latin grammar in three days, and then joined a class who had devoted several months to Latin studies. In May, 1797, having been under the careful tuition of Roger Minot Sherman, he was admitted as a sophomore to Yale College. Here his tastes were pre-eminently for the mathematics.

At his graduation, in 1799, he delivered the salutatory oration, at that time the highest appointment awarded to the class. One year after leaving Yale he taught an academy in North Fairfield, Conn., and in the following year was principal of a high school at Danbury, Conn. Having pursued the study of the law, he was admitted to the bar in 1802 at Danbury. His fertile and versatile mind, his enthusiasm and prodigious memory, gave promise of eminent success in the legal profession. From his study in fitting himself for this profession he derived signal advantages through life. A few weeks before his admission to the bar he was called to a tutorship in Yale College. Here he distinguished himself as an inspiring teacher. At this time he publicly devoted himself to the service of God.

Having pursued the study of theology with President Dwight, he was ordained March 5, 1806, pastor of the First Congregational Church in New Haven, Conn. During his pastorate of three years and ten months two hundred persons were admitted, all but twenty-eight by profession, into his church. His

<sup>1</sup> Prepared by Edwards A. Park





deep, solemn, and sonorous voice, his commanding and impassioned manner, his translucent style, his vivacity of thought, his energy of feeling, contributed to make him one of the most eloquent of preachers. Many supposed that he mistook his calling when he left his pulpit for the professor's chair. Doubtless in his early manhood "the pulpit was his throne."

On the 28th of February, 1810, he was inaugurated Professor of Sacred Literature in Andover Theological Seminary. In about two years he composed a Hebrew grammar for the immediate use of his pupils. They copied it day by day from his written sheets. When he printed it he was compelled to set up the types for about half the paradigms of verbs with his own hands.

The following letter is perhaps the earliest notice of all his published works :

"To Rev. Dr. Pearson, President, December 12, 1813:

"Rev. and Dear Sir: Please to accept a copy of the Heb. Grammar I send you, and to read it with a view to note its errors and defects, for it has both. I have printed only about 120 copies, and have not ventured to put any into the Library, my object being to get the aid of all the Hebrew scholars in our land in bringing it to a state of more perfection before I venture to add it to the Professor's classical book. Robert's is the True and Ancient Method, too late, or I should have discussed his principles briefly in the Preface. I shall place much dependence on your Remarks. Please to write them down.

"Your obedient servant, MOSES STUART."

Eight years after writing this germinal letter he printed his larger "Hebrew Grammar." This he remodeled with great painstaking, and published it in a second edition two years after the first. Not satisfied with this, he re-examined all its principles anew, wrote some of it three, four, and a small part of it seven or eight times over, and published the third edition five years after the second. Professor Lee, of Cambridge University, England, speaking of this edition, said: "The industry of its author is new matter for my admiration of him." The fourth edition of this grammar was republished at Oxford University, England, under the superintendence of the celebrated Professor E. B. Pusey. In correcting the proof-sheets of the grammar Mr. Stuart read some of them over seven times, and a few of them eleven times.

This is one example of the care which he took for securing the accuracy of his publications. Another example is found in his edition of "Newcome's Greek Harmony of the Gospels." He published it without the accents in a duodecimo and also a quarto form. He requested the students in the seminary to re-examine the proof-sheets of the "Harmony," and offered a small pecuniary recompense for the detection of any, even the minutest, error in them.

In the midst of his labors on his "epoch-making" grammar he published his "Letters to Rev. William Ellery Channing," a work which, on the whole, has been the most popular of all his writings. The first edition of these letters was sold within a week; two other editions followed it very soon in America, and four in England. The last American edition was published in 1846. Perhaps Mr.

Stuart's "Commentary on the Epistle to the Hebrews" stands next to these Letters in general popularity among clergymen. It was published in 1827-28, in two octavo volumes. It has passed through four editions in America, and perhaps twice as many in England. The celebrated Dr. John Pye Smith characterized it as "the most important present to the cause of sound Biblical interpretation that has ever been made in the English language." His commentaries on the Epistle to the Romans and on the Apocalypse are even more elaborate than his work on the Hebrews.

All his published writings cannot be here enumerated. Among them are more than twenty volumes; fourteen pamphlets; thirty-four articles containing fifteen hundred pages in the *American Biblical Repository*; fourteen articles containing four hundred and ninety pages in the *Bibliotheca Sacra*; thirty-three important articles in other periodicals. The pamphlets and periodical essays occupy more than two thousand octavo pages.

The publications of Mr. Stuart fail to exhibit the large proportions of the man. He was greater than his books. His greatness was most conspicuous in his lecture-room. Hundreds of his pupils will indorse the words of Dr. Francis Wayland, a late President of Brown University, who said: "I have never known any man who had so great power of kindling enthusiasm for study in a class. It mattered not what was the subject of investigation, the moment he touched upon it it assumed an absorbing interest in the eyes of all of us. I do not think that there was one of us who would not have chosen to fast for a day rather than to lose one of his lectures."

He was the inspiring teacher of more than seventy presidents or professors in our highest literary institutions, of more than a hundred missionaries to the heathen, of about thirty translators of the Bible into foreign languages. Several of our most important volumes pertaining to Biblical literature were begun by his pupils "in the bosom of his family."

From the fact that he was the pioneer in familiarizing our clergymen with Hebrew and German learning, and thus opening a new era in our theological history; from the fact that by the wonderful magnetism of his character he quickened the literary zeal of men who afterward became leaders of popular thought; from the fact that he prepared more than fifteen hundred of his pupils for appreciating the richness of the Bible in its original languages, and elucidated those languages in a fresh and attractive way, he has been called "The Father of Biblical Literature in our Land." In no small degree he deserves to be honored as a father of Biblical literature in Great Britain also. His influence is the more noticeable as his life was a perpetual struggle with infirm health, and he was wont to remark that he never allowed himself to work as a real student more than three hours in the day.



BELA BATES EDWARDS, D.D.,<sup>1</sup> was born in Southampton, Mass., July 4, 1802, and died in Athens, Georgia, April 20, 1852, aged forty-nine years, nine months, sixteen days. His ancestors were among the first settlers of Springfield and Northampton, Mass. His grandparents were parishioners of Jonathan Edwards in Northampton; his maternal grandmother was for some time an inmate in Jonathan Edwards' family, and transmitted to her descendants no small degree of the virtues derived from her pastor's instruction and example. The paternal grandfather of Professor Edwards was a soldier in two colonial armies, one of which captured Louisburg in 1745, and the other defeated Burgoyne in 1777. During his boyhood Prof. Edwards labored on his father's farm and enjoyed the truly intelligent society of his father's household. While thus laboring, he devoted every leisure hour to his books. He fitted for college partly under the guidance of his pastor, Rev. Vinson Gould; partly under that of his pastor's wife, a lady of remarkable learning, who prepared several young men for college; partly under the special care of Rev. Moses Hallock, of Plainfield, Mass., a distinguished teacher in that day. He was graduated at Amherst College in 1824; taught an academy in Ashfield, Mass., in 1825; spent the year 1825-26 as a member of Andover Theological Seminary; was then called to a tutorship in Amherst College; passed two years in that office; returned to the seminary in 1828; was graduated there in 1830, having held an exceptionally high position in a class of exceptional ability. Before he returned to the seminary three offices were pressed upon him,—he was invited to be a professor in Amherst College, the assistant secretary of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions, the assistant secretary of the American Education Society. The last of these offices appeared to him the least honorable, but with his characteristic modesty he accepted it. He continued to discharge its duties while he was a member of the seminary, and when the office of the society was removed from Andover to Boston he removed his residence to the city.

In Boston he spent five years and a half of his busy life, managing the details of his office, and at the same time taking the principal charge of the *American Quarterly Register*, a periodical which he made to bristle with statistics. In 1833 he founded the *American Quarterly Observer*, which he afterwards united with the *American Biblical Repository*, which he subsequently merged into the *Bibliotheca Sacra*. For these periodicals he wrote uncounted essays and reviews, translated various articles from the German and other languages, and conducted an extensive correspondence in order to enlist youthful writers in literary work.

He was thus a benefactor of the young. He can-

not be said to have founded all the periodicals which he edited, but he originated new plans for them all, and in process of time became the chief supporter of them all. His conscientiousness in editing them is illustrated by the fact that, in order to write two paragraphs in a review of a scientific work, he once read the whole of an elaborate treatise on geology. Throughout his life he superintended the publication of thirty-one octavo volumes of periodical literature, and in these volumes inserted many paragraphs, which he wrote with scrupulous care and in exquisite taste.

While Mr. Edwards was thus promoting the cause of literature in his periodicals, he was incessant in his efforts for the literary and moral improvement of society at large. His published writings were numerous. Among them were two admirable school-books—the "Eclectic Reader" and the "Introduction to the Eclectic Reader"—the "Biography of Self-taught Men" (a volume republished in England as well as this country), the "Missionary Gazetteer," the "Memoir of Rev. Elias Cornelius, D.D.," the "Introductory Essay" to the "Memoir of Henry Martyn," and valuable "Notes" to the Memoir which he edited with rare fidelity. He united with Professor Park in translating and publishing a volume of "Selections from German Literature;" with Dr. Samuel H. Taylor in translating and publishing the "Larger Greek Grammar" of Dr. Kühner; with Dr. Sears, afterward President of Brown University, and Professor Felton, afterward president of Harvard College, in publishing a volume entitled "Classical Studies." During a large part of his life he was a trustee of Abbot Academy, and a leading trustee of Amherst College,—an institution of which he was urgently solicited to be president. The founders of the seminary at South Hadley and of Williston Academy acknowledged their obligation to him as their trusted adviser. Perhaps no man was so familiarly acquainted as he with the policy and the needs of our colleges and higher schools. He formed a plan, and expended much of his strength in toiling, for the establishment of a Puritan Library and Museum in Boston, and the present library in the Congregational house may be looked upon as in large degree a monument to him.

His philanthropic labors were not performed in a perfunctory way. He devoted his whole sensitive nature to them. When the Choctaws and Cherokees were driven from the graves of their fathers, when the British forced the opium trade upon China, his gentle spirit was roused to unwonted indignation, and it seemed to those who heard his utterances that he was the one oppressed. His deepest sympathies, however, were with the enslaved African. His enthusiastic desire for the freedom of the bondmen was developed as early as 1825, and it never left him. A sense of the wrong done to the negroes burned like fire in his bones. For several months he felt anxious to devote his entire life to the African cause. After

<sup>1</sup> Prepared by Rev. William Edwards Park, Gloversville, N. Y.





he had decided that it was not his duty to do so, he found that he could not resume his interest in study until he forcibly abstained from thinking on the subject. The first address which he ever delivered from the pulpit was on the evils of slavery; his first "Fourth of July" oration was on the same theme; so was the first pamphlet which he ever published. For twenty-six years he was an unwavering friend of the Colonization Society. The secretary of the Massachusetts Branch of that institution declared that the Branch was kept alive during its earliest years, mainly by Mr. Edwards' efforts. He was one of the founders of "The American Union for the Relief and Improvement of the Colored Race," and gave the greater part of two years' work to the establishment of that society, which, by its appeals and published statistics, roused general attention to the evils of slavery, and finds its work grandly continued by the "American Missionary Association" of the present day. This Association was in some degree a result of the antecedent "Union." As Mr. Edwards was anxious at one time to spend his life in the service of the enslaved, so he was anxious at another time, but finally was restrained from gratifying his desire, to spend his life as a missionary of the American Board. He was a close friend of Jeremiah Evarts, Samuel Hubbard, Rufus Anderson, and others who were most intimately connected with the board.

As a preacher, Mr. Edwards was not popular with the masses, but was highly prized by the more intelligent men. His natural diffidence sometimes embarrassed him, his voice was not strong, his gestures not graceful, he had the "student's nearsightedness," which compelled him to keep his eyes close to his manuscript. But there was an earnestness in his manner, a delicacy in adjusting the light and shade upon the idea which he was developing, a tender yet powerful sympathy with his hearers, making him yearn to have them see his theme as he saw it, and feel about it as he felt. Behind his utterances there was a pure and large personality which overcame all elocutionary defect, changed his diffident manner to one of persuasive eloquence, and enabled him to hold an intellectual audience spell-bound. The day of his preaching in the Andover Chapel was a "high day" for the auditors.

We have not yet approached the more important part of Mr. Edwards' life-work. In 1837 he was appointed Professor of the Hebrew Language in Andover Theological Seminary. In 1848 he was elevated to the Professorship of Sacred Literature in the Seminary,—the office previously occupied by Professor Moses Stuart. For this office he had eminent qualifications. In fact, he began unconsciously to prepare himself for it in his early childhood. Before he was eleven years old he had read through the Bible seven times, and all of Dr. Scott's "Notes" twice. At the age of twenty-two he began the study of Hebrew, which he pursued almost daily as long as he lived.

He made immense acquisitions in philology, solely in order to qualify himself for the task of Biblical interpretation. That he might understand Wickliffe's translation of the Bible, he studied the old Saxon of Chaucer. In order to familiarize himself with Greek words and particles used in the New Testament, he read the tragedies of Æschylus. He studied Arabic, Syriac and various dialects cognate with the Hebrew. He mastered the minutiae of interpretation by correcting proof-sheets of Greek and Hebrew writings. Desiring to enlarge his acquaintance with the science of Biblical interpretation, he read German authors until their words became to him as his mother tongue.

His manner in the lecture-room was singularly fascinating. He had a clear and exact sense of the meaning of a Scriptural passage, traced out in the original the finer modifications of its import, saw at once the emphatic expression to which the preceding paragraphs contributed, and enthusiastically led the minds of his pupils up to the full height of the poet's or prophet's meaning. Some of his scholars can even now remember his rebuke when a commonplace translation was presented,—"*Such a meaning is jejune and frigid. It does not come up to the splendor of the words.*" The late Professor John N. Putnam, one of Dr. Edwards' pupils, wrote concerning his teacher: "Indeed it was by no means alone by what he *said* that he instructed us, but by what he *was* in the lecture-room. He formed us by a calm and constant influence that dropped as the rain and distilled as the dew. By some it was not felt at first, but it grew upon us silently day by day, and we found at the year's end that we had gained more than our note-books could show,—a greater fineness and precision of view, a calmer and surer habit of mind. He taught us *in himself* how often the perception of the final truth may depend on the moral feeling more than on logical keenness."

As soon as Mr. Edwards took the professorship at Andover he began to execute the broad plans which he had formed in earlier life. He began to prepare a Commentary on Habakkuk, Job, the Psalter, and the First Epistle to the Corinthians; also an Introduction to the Old and New Testaments. He began to collect the gems which he might insert into their fitting caskets, and to gather into a uniform series of works the results of his multifarious reading. The hopes of literary men, however, were disappointed by the pulmonary disease which terminated his labors on earth. One of his friends has remarked: "The day of his entrance on his professorship reminded me of the sun rising upon the seminary; the day of his burial reminded me of an Andover sunset."

If this man of restless energy and far-seeing prudence had devoted his life to the acquisition of wealth, he might have amassed such treasures as would have been conspicuous in even the rich valley of the Merrimack. His wealth was his *character*. Other men might possess his unconquerable industry,



but we have yet to find the man who can leave upon others the exact impression which Dr. Edwards left. It is impossible to portray him as he seemed to those about him, or transfer to other minds the impression which was stamped by his very presence. His aptitude for Biblical interpretation gave unmistakable signs of genius, but it was not a merely intellectual attribute. Genius may get nearer to the throne when she rises higher than the intellect, and takes her seat in the moral powers. It awakens admiration, not so much for the *mental faculties*, as for the *man* who directs them. A nature uncommonly disinterested, profoundly reverential; an originality of feeling more than of thought, a rare combination of apparently opposite qualities; great strength of purpose with an exquisite refinement of character and taste; a profound humility, with self-reliance in reserve, ready for the proper moment; a union of strong practical sense with deep imaginative and poetic instincts; a singularly active mind, joined to a richly contemplative one; good reasoning power, animated by the warmest emotions; and, withal, a tender-hearted humor that played like a sunbeam around his lofty meditations,—all these elements gave a singular interest to Dr. Edwards' character. Beyond this, there was a fascination which no written description can explain, a mysterious something to which the heart responded, but which the mind could not analyze.

A Memoir of Prof. Edwards, seven of his sermons, and sixteen of his addresses and lectures were published after his death, in two volumes. They contain instructive extracts from the papers which he wrote during his tour through England, Scotland, France, Germany, and Italy in 1846 and 1847. He was married in 1831 to Miss Jerusha W. Billings, daughter of Col. Charles E. Billings, of Conway, Mass., and descended from clergymen, among whom are Richard Salter Storrs, of Longmeadow; Solomon Stoddard, of Northampton; Timothy Edwards, of East Windsor; John Williams, of Deerfield; Eleazer and Richard Mather.

SAMUEL HARVEY TAYLOR, LL.D.,<sup>1</sup> was born October 3, 1807, and died January 29, 1871, aged sixty-three years, three months, and twenty-six days. He was descended from Scotch Covenanters, who established themselves in the old township of Londonderry, New Hampshire. Mr. Horace Greeley says that probably "more teachers now living trace their descent to the Scotch pioneers of Londonderry than to any equal number anywhere else." In the single State of New Hampshire six descendants of these pioneers "have been Governors of the State, nine have been members of Congress, five, judges of the Supreme Court, two, members of the Provincial Congress, and one of these was a signer of the Declaration of Independence."

Mr. Taylor is supposed to have derived his Chris-

tian name from Samuel Harvey, a youthful hero who distinguished himself at the celebrated siege of Londonderry in Ireland.

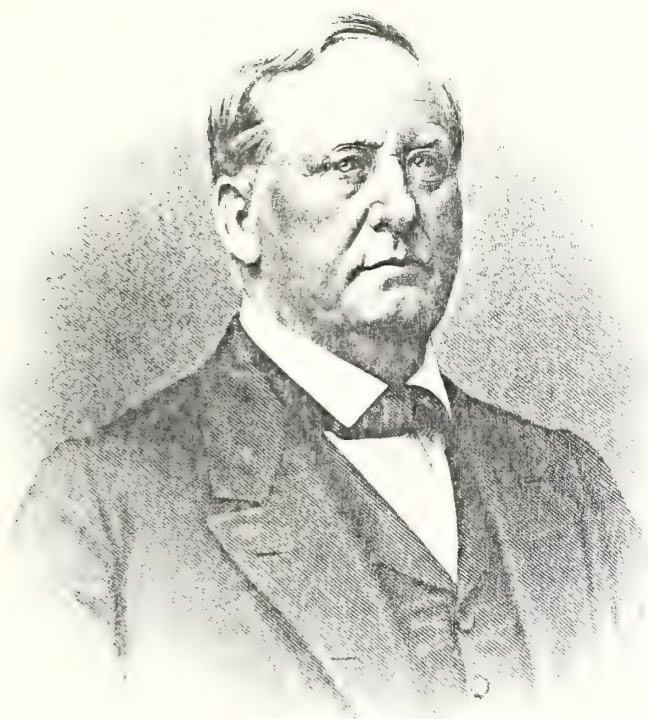
After an eventful childhood and boyhood, Mr. Taylor entered Dartmouth College, where he was conspicuous for his iron diligence and mental grasp. After his graduation, in 1832, he entered the Theological Seminary at Andover. Professor Stuart and Dr. Edward Robinson often expressed their admiration of his zeal and accuracy in his Hebrew and Greek studies. Dr. Leonard Woods had confidence in his theological views, for Mr. Taylor was an early conservative in theology. His pastor and father-in-law was an intimate friend of Dr. Daniel Dana, and through life Mr. Taylor retained the high esteem of Dr. Dana as well as Professor Stuart. His fellow-students, as much as his instructors, trusted him as an interpreter of the Bible and as a theologian. With such antecedents he was called from the seminary to a tutorship in Dartmouth College. This call appeared to be an omen that his future course would be a literary one. He remained in his tutorship about two years, and returned to Andover so as to receive his regular diploma in the autumn of 1837. Before he acquired his high reputation as an instructor and disciplinarian at Dartmouth College, he had won golden opinions as an assistant teacher in Phillips Academy, Andover. He was chosen principal of this academy and began to discharge the duties of his new office near the close of his theological studies.

He might have received ampler emoluments in other schools, but the trustees of the academy recognized his peculiar qualifications for this school. They saw that he united accuracy in the details of classical literature with an enthusiasm in its life-giving spirit; an uncommon quickness of perception with an uncommon solidity of judgment; a singular devotion to the Greek and Roman classics with a general interest in scholarly pursuits and the affairs of life. In a peculiar degree he united the factitious with the natural qualifications for a teacher. In several particulars he resembled his great predecessor, Eliphalet Pearson. Like Pearson, he had a stalwart frame and sonorous voice. It may be said of him, as was said of another: "The commander was visible and vocal in him." His personal appearance gave him a right to his Christian name—"Samuel Harvey." When he was directing the movements of the "Phillips fire-engine," he spoke and looked like a military general. Indeed, he seemed to have a decided military taste. His dignified presence and expressive emphasis gave him one kind of power. Another kind was given him by his reputation for trustworthiness;—this reputation was the fruit of his previous success, and this success was the means of his continuing to succeed. Before he became the principal of the academy it was not the prominent school which it became before he left it. Sometimes the senior class, to whom the principal mainly devoted himself, had consisted, on an average,

<sup>1</sup> Prepared by Prof. Edwards A. Park







*J. H. Taylor*





*Austin Phelps.*





of about twenty members; but after he came the class consisted of thirty-five, forty, forty-three, forty-eight, fifty-eight, sixty-four or seventy-three members. These were members of the Classical Department alone. The senior class was called *his* class, and it was the great magnet of the institution, attracting young men to it from the plantations of Georgia, the cotton-fields of Louisiana, the banks of the Ohio and Mississippi, and the Canadian provinces. It was common to remark that students went into "*his* class" as boys, and came out as men.

He adopted no artificial means for swelling the number of his pupils, his heart was intent on magnifying rather than multiplying them. He founded the new success of his school upon its intrinsic worth. His great aim was not to make an outward show, but to work on the inner spirit of his scholars.

His perpetual inquiries were: "How can the academy be made to exert the best influence in promoting regular habits of work among the young men who are soon to be members of the learned professions, and whose usefulness will depend upon their regularity in study? How can it be most effectual in promoting a respect for law and government, and thus guarding the future citizens of the republic against the spirit of anarchy, against the American tendency toward irreverence for superiors? How can it be most successful in training our future statesmen for the dignified performance of their duties in the legislative hall?" He has been criticised for paying too scrupulous attention to the minutiae of scholarship, but his motto was: "Trifles make perfection, and perfection is no trifle." He believed himself to be discharging the duties of a true patriot, when he was preparing his pupils for holding intimate communion with the sages and poets of Greece and Rome; when he was holding up a high standard of classical learning, and urging young men up to that standard, himself leading the way in the laborious ascent, and demanding that his pupils should follow him. Many a pupil is now living who can say, "I should have ruined myself by indolence, if it had not been for Dr. Taylor;" "My life would have been broken into fragments, if it had not been for his persevering exactions of duty." Hundreds of his pupils have said: "I owe more to *number nine*, than to all other recitation rooms in which I was ever drilled."

Such was Dr. Taylor's interest in Phillips Academy and kindred institutions, that he prepared for them several text books. In 1843 he published a "Guide for Writing Latin" translated from the German of John Phillip Krebs; in 1844 (in connection with Prof. B. B. Edwards) a "Grammar of the Greek Language" translated from the German of Dr. Raphael Kuhner; in 1846 an "Elementary Greek Grammar" compiled from a similar work of Dr. Kuhner. He published also in 1861 a volume entitled "Method of Classical Study, illustrated by

Questions on a few Selections from Latin and Greek Authors;" in 1870 a volume entitled "Classical Study; its Value illustrated by Extracts from the Writings of Eminent Scholars," with an introduction by himself. Among his other writings is a Memoir of his father-in-law, Rev. Edward L. Parker, prefixed to Mr. Parker's "History of Londonderry" edited in part by Dr. Taylor, also a Memorial of Dr. Taylor's brother-in-law, Joseph P. Fairbanks, a liberal and most exemplary benefactor of various literary institutions. From the year 1852 to the time of his death Dr. Taylor was an editor of the *Bibliotheca Sacra*. He corrected the proof-sheets of eighteen volumes of this quarterly, and wrote several anonymous articles for it.

One of the most remarkable of his literary exploits is found in his unpublished letters and journal, written during the foreign tour which he took in 1856. He wrote suggestive notices of Paris, Malta, Alexandria, Cairo, Palestine, Constantinople, the Plains of Troy, Athens, Marathon, Corinth, Herculaneum and Pompeii, Rome, Florence, Switzerland, the university towns of Germany, England, Scotland, and was absent from his favorite academy only six months. His record of his travels is a monument of his literary enterprise and patience, his inquisitive spirit and his success in gratifying it, his care and deliberation in forming his judgments, his extensive investigations preparing him to make the tour, and his more extensive learning derived from his having made it.

On Saturday morning, January 28, 1871, Dr. Taylor exhibited his wonted vigor in the exercises of his school, visited Boston and Cambridge in the afternoon, returned to his home in the evening with more than usual buoyancy of spirit. He rose on Sabbath morning and prepared himself for his large Bible-class in the academy. He went forth like a hero, carrying his New Testament through the deep and rapidly falling snow, to the new academy edifice, which had been erected under his care and according to his plan. His pupils were assembling to receive his Christian instruction, the bell was yet tolling; he stopped in the vestibule of his academy; his countenance was changed; he fell; he said not a word; he neither sighed nor groaned, but ascended from the circle of his astonished and loving and weeping pupils to become a glorified pupil in the school of his Redeemer.

REV. AUSTIN PHELPS, D.D.,<sup>1</sup> Professor Emeritus of Sacred Rhetoric in the Andover Theological Seminary.

The Phelps family in America trace their descent from an ancient Staffordshire house in England. The English families of the name believe themselves to be a branch of the Wells (*Jelfs*) or Guelphs, whose eminence in European history is well-known.

The good ship "Mary and John" brought, in 1630,

<sup>1</sup> By one of his pupils.



to Massachusetts Bay, William Phelps, his wife and four sons, and his brother George. Another brother, who remained behind, was the secretary of the Protector in 1654. After the Restoration he was in this country, in hiding, at the same time with the regicide judges.

William was one of the leaders of the colony from Dorchester, which settled the town of Windsor, Conn., in 1635, and one of the eight who, by authority of the Massachusetts Colony, instituted the first organization of the infant settlements in Connecticut, in the following year. Dr. Stiles, in his "History of Connecticut," represents the Hon. Wm. Phelps as a man of mark in the affairs of both church and state. His third son, Nathaniel, was the founder of a family of Phelps in Hampshire County, Mass., which became numerous and of local fame. It is in the line of this family that the name descended to the subject of this sketch. His grandfather was for many years the foremost citizen of Belchertown. He represented that township in the General Court of Massachusetts for sixteen successive years.

The father of Professor Phelps, the Rev. Eliakim Phelps, D.D., was born March, 1799, and died December 1880. He was an admirable specimen of the ministers of the Gospel, whose piety, courage and progressive spirit made the earlier half of this century a period so fruitful of Christian enterprise and of enterprising Christians.

His wife, Sarah Adams, the daughter of a substantial farmer of Wilbraham, Mass., was born on the 25th of June, 1791, and died November 13, 1845. On the maternal side she was connected with the Connecticut family of Skinner, honorably known in that Commonwealth, and also in Virginia and among the earliest settlers of Ohio.

Austin Phelps was born in the parsonage at West Brookfield, Mass., January 7, 1829. A tradition survives that he was so puny a child as to call from a friend of the father, on the day following, the remark: "You will hardly expect to raise that boy." The reply had in it the spirit which pervaded the atmosphere of his household; "Oh, yes! He shall be a member of Congress yet!" In 1826 the family removed to Pittsfield, Mass., and in 1830 to Geneva, N. Y., where the father was pastor of the First Presbyterian Church. In 1836 he removed to Philadelphia.

These facts in the father's career are noteworthy for their relation to the education of the son. At the age of eight years the latter began his preparation for college, in the High School of Pittsfield, under the direction of Rev. Chester Dewey, D.D. The tutor who introduced him to Latin literature was the late Rev. Mark Hopkins, D.D. In 1829 he went to the Wesleyan Academy at Wilbraham, then under the charge of Dr. Wilbur Fisk, afterward president of the Wesleyan University at Middletown, Conn. In 1830 he entered the High School in Geneva, then

conducted by Rev. Dr. Justus French, the most eminent educator in Western New York for many years. In 1833, *i.e.*, at thirteen years of age, he entered what is now known as Hobart College, in Geneva. There he came under the magnetic influence of Professor Horace Webster, subsequently president of the College of the City of New York. In 1835 he was transferred to Amherst College, in Massachusetts, and in 1836, after his father's removal to Philadelphia, he entered the University of Pennsylvania, where he graduated in 1837, with the honor of the valedictory oration.

The year succeeding his graduation he spent in post-graduate study, chiefly in history and English literature, under the direction of Prof. Henry Reed, the editor of the works of Wordsworth in this country. He then commenced the study of theology, his preceptors being his father and the Rev. Dr. Albert Barnes. In December, 1839, he went to Union Theological Seminary, in New York, where he studied Hebrew with Dr. Isaac Nordheimer, and attended the lectures of the Professor of Theology, Rev. Charles White, D.D. In the spring of 1840 he was licensed to preach by the Third Presbytery of Philadelphia. At about the same time he went to New Haven, and attended the lectures of Rev. N. W. Taylor, D.D., in systematic theology. Later he was enrolled as a resident licentiate in the Theological Seminary at Andover. Here he pursued his studies for a year and a half, attending chiefly the lectures of Prof. Moses Stuart, and of Prof. E. A. Park, D.D., then Professor of Sacred Rhetoric. This period of study was concluded by his call to the Pine Street Congregational Church in Boston, where he was ordained pastor March 31, 1842. He was most fortunate in the succession of eminent and stimulating educators in whose hands he was placed in that formative period of his mind. He has somewhere expressed his consciousness of being deeply indebted to the silent influence of the large-minded and erudite men with whom he was brought into contact.

Probably to none was he under greater obligation, for the development of his mind at that time, than to the lamented Prof. Henry Reed. The classic taste and wise counsels of the accomplished instructor could not but leave a lasting impress upon a pupil so fitted by a certain affinity of genius to encourage and reward his endeavors. Professor Reed led his docile pupil into an appreciative study of the poetry of Wordsworth. Of Milton's verse and prose the young student was already a passionate admirer. A chance hearer of one of his early sermons said, in leaving the church, "That young fellow preaches as if he had lived on *Paradise Lost*!" Other favorite authors balanced what was then an extravagant taste. Jeremy Taylor, Dr. South, Edmund Burke and John Foster were among the feeders of his early culture.

Hardly less fortunate was Mr. Phelps in his associates than in his instructors. He became more or less





intimate, in his academic years, with many men who at a later period achieved distinction. Among these may be mentioned the Right Reverend A. Cleaveland Cox, D.D., of Western New York; Rev. R. D. Hitchcock, D.D., the late president of the Union Theological Seminary in New York City; Rev. Edwin E. Bliss, D.D., of Constantinople; Rev. D. W. Poor, D.D., of Philadelphia; and, among civilians, Hon. Ensign H. Kellogg, late Speaker of the Massachusetts House of Representatives; Hon. Henry Williams, of the Supreme Court of Pennsylvania; Judge Walter March, of Indiana; the late Hon. Charles Folger, Secretary of the Treasury of the United States; and Hon. Horace Maynard, late Postmaster-General of the United States.

His own estimate of his six years' pastorate in Boston is not extravagant. But the congregation and the community which knew him best received a different impression, from another stand-point than his. A straw which shows the drift of opinion in the general public was his election to the chaplaincy of the House of Representatives in 1843-44, and, a year or two later, to that of the Senate, in which he alternated with Rev. James Freeman Clark, D.D. Something also in the man and in his pastoral career attracted the attention of wise men to him as a fit candidate for the vacant chair of Sacred Rhetoric in the Theological Seminary at Andover, from which Rev. E. A. Park, D.D., had been recently transferred to the department of Systematic Theology. Mr. Phelps became his successor in March, 1842, at the age of twenty-eight years.

This change was an unlooked for and an undesired defection from the strong current of his tastes and prepossessions. He was devoted to the profession of his choice. He had chosen it by a sort of moral gravitation. The traditions of his family had indicated it to him. The atmosphere of his father's house had predisposed him to it. In his memorial of his father's pastoral career, he tells us that from the age of four years he had felt himself predestined to it. His own religious culture, in later years, had led him to it as the type of service to which he was inwardly called. He had concentrated upon it his chastened ambition as a man and his aspirations as a Christian. He had come to it exceptionally well prepared for it as a life's work. He had been heard to speak of his retirement from it as the great trial of his professional career. One consideration only overcame his reluctance to leave it. His laborious ministry had overtaken his strength, and he felt the premonitions of disease in the near future. That he did not overestimate his peril was proved by the fact that on the morning of the day on which his pastoral relations were dissolved he was attacked by an amaurosis, from which he did not recover for four years.

He was inaugurated at Andover September 6, 1843. From that date his life was given to the duties of his professorship, till declining health compelled his re-

tirement in June, 1879, a period of thirty-one years. In the years which have since elapsed he has lived in comparative seclusion, but has performed some of the most valuable literary work of his life. His pen has been in almost constant use. He has been a welcome contributor to the representative religious journals. He has actively participated in current theological discussions. He has put to press several volumes, and, altogether, has evinced an intellectual vigor never surpassed in the years of his prime.

Of course the part of his career which invites the more careful criticism is that spent in the labors of his professorship. The work of that period is central in his life. It was the work he was born to do. It was work most significant in its relation to the future of twelve hundred young preachers of the Gospel, many of whom have become educators of younger men in the same sphere of public influence.

His methods of procedure in the conduct of his department are best given in his own words. He says:

"I set myself to work, *de novo*, as if the department had no history. I aimed to construct the science out of the materials of the art. I watched the working of the minds of my pupils. I encouraged an inquisitive spirit. I kept a record of their inquiries, and answered them as best I could by the spur of mother-wit. These answers to practical inquiries, in the lecture-room and out of it, constituted the backbone of my instructions. I was dealing with young minds; with live minds, with minds wide-awake to the exigencies of a noble profession. The collision of my mind with their minds, under such conditions, struck out almost all that I know of the department which it was my province to create and to expand. They asked, and I answered; that is the whole story. I was a daily student with them. My mind was growing, in company with theirs."

This is undoubtedly a just statement in the main. What it needs to be absolutely correct is an enlargement of the obvious meaning of the phrase "by the spur of mother-wit." It was "mother-wit" reinforced by the results of wide critical reading and severe self-criticism by a mind of acutely appreciative instincts and a marvelous power of appropriation.

A life-work entered upon by such a man with such a spirit and in such a method, and prosecuted for more than thirty years, it is needless to say, was a great and successful work. The usefulness of it could hardly be over-stated. Never did more felicitous relations of instructor and pupil exist than were illustrated in that lecture-room. Never were instructions more quickening, more sympathetic, more genially adapted to find out and to fetch out the best of which a pupil was capable. The courses of lectures always seemed to glow with the heat of recent thinking. They were wise, conscientious, scholarly, exhaustive discussions.

The whole atmosphere of the class-room was pure and bracing. Many a minister looks back to his experience there, as to the most quickening period of his education, quickening not only to his intellect and executive powers, but to his spiritual culture as well.

An important factor of Professor Phelps' influence



as an instructor was his own power in the pulpit. The limits of this sketch forbid a description of this at length. It may be summed up in the single fact that, to his pupils his preaching illustrated and emphasized his homiletical instructions. The ecclesiastical records of those days indicate that on nearly a hundred occasions in his first fifteen years at Andover he was called to preach in services of dedication, ordination or installation.

His literary work since he resigned his professorship cannot receive here any adequate discussion. In amount it is very large. It is the matured fruitage of the industry of his whole previous life. It belongs to the best thinking of his time. Of the aggregate influence of his professional labors it is impossible as yet to take the measure. Of one of his lesser books, the circulation has reached 150,000 copies. His temperament, and the naturally disheartening effect of ill-health, led him to deplore the relinquishment of his chair as "the premature closing of a life's work." Really, however, his pastorate, his professorship and his life in retirement present to a juster estimate three periods of cumulative usefulness. His latter days must be recognized as the most fruitful of all.

With the name of Andover is associated the fame of many eminent men. It has been the home of not a few of the first rank of able preachers and successful teachers. Among these Professor Phelps has taken his abiding-place in the history of the American churches.

Dr. Phelps married, first (September, 1842), Elizabeth, the eldest daughter of Professor Moses Stuart. She was the author of ten volumes for use in Sunday-schools, which have reached an aggregate sale of between two and three hundred thousand copies. She died in Boston, November, 1852, at the outset of what promised to be a brilliant literary career.

Of this marriage were born: 1st, Elizabeth Stuart (August 31, 1844), who has become widely known as the author of "Gates Ajar" and twenty-six other works of fiction.

2d, Moses Stuart (March 16, 1849), who, after graduating at Yale College, 1869, served as tutor in that institution three years, and as Professor of Mental Philosophy in Middlebury College one year, and as professor of the same department in Smith College, Northampton, five years, till his death, in 1883.

3d, Lawrence (August 22, 1852), graduated at Middlebury College, 1876, and is now pastor of the Congregational Church at Gardner, Mass.

Professor Phelps married again, April, 1855, Mary, the third daughter of Professor Stuart. She died September, 1856.

He married again, June, 1858, Mary A., the youngest daughter of Samuel Johnson, Esq., of Boston. Of this marriage have been born,—1st, Francis Johnson, December 7, 1860; and 2d, Edward, April 18, 1863, both of whom have recently finished their studies at Yale College.

Of Dr. Phelps' published discourses the following deserve special mention, viz.: A Sermon before the Pastoral Association of Massachusetts, in 1851; A Sermon before the General Association of Massachusetts, in 1853; A Sermon before the Convention of Congregational Ministers of Massachusetts, in 1859; An Election Sermon before the Government of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, in 1861; and several addresses before Collegiate and Theological Societies, 1818 to 1868.

His published volumes are the following, viz.:

1. "The Still Hour," a work on prayer, which has been republished in England, Scotland, and translated into the German, the French, the Dutch and the Italian languages.
2. "The New Birth," a treatise on regeneration, also republished in Europe.
3. "Studies of the Old Testament," a collection of sermons on events and characters in the Old Testament.
4. "Sabbath Hours," a small volume of religious essays.
5. "The Solitude of Christ," meditations suggested by the sacrament of the Lord's Supper.
6. "The Sabbath Hymn Book," "The Sabbath Hymn and Tune Book," "The Sabbath Tune Book," "The Sabbath School Hymn and Tune Book," a series designed for public worship, constructed jointly with Rev. E. A. Park, D.D., and Dr. Lowell Mason. Baptist editions of the same revised by Rev. Francis Wayland, D.D. Sale about 200,000 copies.
7. "Hymns and Chorus," essays on Hymnology, constructed jointly with Rev. E. A. Park, D.D., and Rev. Daniel Furbur, D.D., of Newton, Mass.
8. "The Theory of Preaching," a series of lectures on Homiletics, delivered in Andover Theological Seminary.
9. "Men and Books," a second series of lectures on homiletics.
10. "English Style in Public Discourse, with special reference to the dialect of the Pulpit," a third series of homiletic lectures.
11. "My Portfolio," a memorial of his father and other essays on topics of current interest.
12. "My Study," a memorial of the founders of Andover Theological Seminary and other essays on topics of current interest.
13. He has now in preparation a volume entitled "My Note Book; or, Fragmentary Studies in Theology."

EDWARDS A. PARK, D.D., LL.D.,<sup>1</sup> Professor Emeritus of Andover Theological Seminary.

[The following sketch has been compiled from several bibliographical narratives—particularly from the new "American Cyclopaedia," "Allibone's Dictionary of Authors" and the supplement to the "Schaff-Herzog Encyclopedia."]

Edwards A. Park, D.D., LL.D., was born in Providence, R. I., December 29, 1808. He is descended on the paternal side from Richard Park, one of the original settlers of Newton, Mass. (see Jackson's "History of Newton"), and on the maternal side from Robert Ware, one of the original settlers of Dedham, Mass. (see the "Genealogy" of the Ware family). His father was Rev. Calvin Park, D.D., formerly professor in Brown University, afterward Congregational pastor in Stoughton, Mass. His mother was Abigail Ware, daughter of Capt. Nathaniel Ware, of Wrentham (which was formerly part of Dedham, Mass.). The subject of this sketch was graduated at Brown University, 1826; at Andover Theological Seminary, in 1831; pastor at Brain-

<sup>1</sup> By Rev. Daniel L. Furbur, Newton Centre, Mass.







*Edwards A. Park.*



tree, Mass., 1831-33; Professor of Mental and Moral Philosophy at Amherst College, 1835-36; Professor of Sacred Rhetoric at Andover Theological Seminary, 1836-47; Professor of Christian Theology at Andover, 1847-81. He held a professorship at Andover forty-five years, and has had some connection with the seminary nearly fifty-five years. In the years 1852-62 he devoted much time and labor to the plan of enlarging the endowments of the seminary, of creating new professorships, erecting new buildings, improving the accommodations of the library, etc., etc.

During the years 1812-43 he spent sixteen months in Switzerland, and at the Universities of Berlin and Halle, in Germany; during 1862-63 he spent the larger part of sixteen months at Hanover and at the Universities of Marburg, Berlin and Halle, in Germany; during 1869-70 he spent about sixteen months in Great Britain, Italy, Egypt, Palestine and Greece.

He began to write for the secular newspapers in 1826, and for the religious periodicals in 1828. Since that time he has written for the *American Quarterly Register*, the *Spirit of the Pilgrims*, *American Quarterly Observer*, *American Biblical Repository*, the *Congregational Quarterly*, the *Christian Review*, the *Bibliotheca Sacra*, and for various cyclopaedias, theological and ecclesiastical dictionaries or histories.

He has published sixteen or seventeen separate pamphlets; one, a Sermon at the Funeral of Rev. Charles B. Storrs, President of Western Reserve College (Boston, 1833); one, a Sermon at the Funeral of Prof. Moses Stuart; one, a Sermon commemorative of Prof. B. B. Edwards; one, an Essay commemorative of Rev. Joseph S. Clark, D.D.; one, a Sermon at the Funeral of Rev. Richard S. Storrs, D.D., of Braintree; one, a Sermon at the Funeral of Rev. Samuel C. Jackson, D.D. of Andover; one a Discourse commemorative of Dr. Leonard Woods, president of Bowdoin College. Besides these biographical essays he has published four lengthened biographies,—one of Rev. William Bradford Homer, pp. 136, 12mo., first edition 1842, second edition 1848, with an introductory essay of forty-nine pages; one, of Prof. B. B. Edwards, D.D., pp. 370, 12mo., 1853; one, of Rev. Samuel Hopkins, D.D., pp. 264, 8vo., 1854; one, of Rev. Nathanael Emmons, D.D., pp. 468, 8vo., 1861.

Some of his pamphlets have been repeatedly republished—as his sermon preached before the Legislature of Massachusetts in 1851, on the "Indebtedness of the State to the Clergy." Some have started some controversy. One of these was his "Dudleian Lecture," delivered at Harvard College in 1845, on the "Intellectual and Moral Influence of Romanism," pp. 37, 8vo. This was controverted in an elaborate review by Dr. Orestes A. Brownson, who had then recently joined the Catholic communion. The sermon delivered in 1850 before the convention of Congregational ministers of Massachusetts, on the

"Theology of the Intellect and that of the Feelings," pp. 36, 8vo., called forth various replies. One of them was an essay published by Rev. Dr. Charles Hodge, of Princeton, New Jersey, and was soon followed by two essays from the same writer on the same theme. To these three essays Professor Park responded in three separate pamphlets, all of them originally published in the *Bibliotheca Sacra*, as Professor Hodge's criticisms were first published in the *Princeton Biblical Repository*.

A large part of his work has been editorial. In connection with Prof. B. B. Edwards, in 1839, he edited and translated an octavo volume of 472 pages, entitled "Selections from German Literature." In 1842 he edited the writings, to which he prefixed his memoir, of Rev. William Bradford Homer. In 1845 he edited the "Preacher and Pastor," a collection of treatises on homiletics and the pastoral care, to which he prefixed an introductory essay of thirty-six pages. In 1859 he edited a collection of "Discourses and Treatises on the Atonement," to which he prefixed an introductory essay of eighty pages. He has also written introductory essays for several other volumes not edited by him. The last two of these essays are one of twenty-seven pages, prefixed to the volume on the "Life and Education of Laura Bridgman," the deaf, dumb and blind pupil of Dr. S. G. Howe; and one essay of about the same length, prefixed to the "Autobiography of Rev. W. G. Schaufler, D.D." In connection with Professor Austin Phelps, D.D., and Dr. Lowell Mason, he compiled and edited the "Sabbath Hymn Book." Between the years 1859 and 1866, with the appendages of tunes for congregational worship, it reached a circulation of about 120,000. In relation to this hymn-book, he, with Drs. Austin Phelps and Daniel L. Furbur, published a volume entitled "Hymns and Choirs." Of this work an essay of sixty-one pages, on the "Text of Hymns," was written by Prof. Park. In 1844 Prof. Edwards and Prof. Park established the *Bibliotheca Sacra* on its new plan. Prof. Edwards was editor-in-chief from 1844 till 1851. Prof. Park was editor-in-chief from 1851 till 1884. Having been engaged forty years in the editorship of the work, and in the preparation of its forty volumes for the press, he has continued to interest himself in the work since it was removed from Andover to Oberlin. In 1883 he published a pamphlet containing ninety-eight pages, on the "Associate Creed of Andover Theological Seminary." His last publication was "Discourses on some Theological Doctrines as related to Religious Character," 1883, pp. 398, 8vo.

For more than thirty years he has been president of the board of trustees of Abbot Academy at Andover; by the will of the founder he was appointed one of the original trustees of Smith College at Northampton; since 1863 he has been a member of the Board of Fellows of Brown University. He has been elected a member of the Victoria Institute in





England, and of several historical societies in the United States.

## CHAPTER CXXXVIII.

### ANDOVER—(Continued).

#### MANUFACTURING INDUSTRIES.

AT quite an early period of its history the town held out substantial encouragement for the establishment of manufacturing industries within its borders. In 1673, by vote of the town, there were "granted to Edward Whittington and Walter Wright, five acres of land for encouragement of erecting a fulling-mill, which they promise to set about the next spring." In 1675 "liberty was granted a tanner that he shall be allowed by the town to make use of what bark is needful for his works in town, provided he fell no trees that are fit for building or mill-timber." In 1682 "liberty was granted to any man that the town or committee shall choose, to set up a saw-mill, fulling mill and grist-mill upon Shawshin River, near Rogers Brook, to take up twenty acres of land adjoining said place and to enjoy the same forever, with the privilege of a townsman."

In 1688 "it was voted that the twenty acres of land shall be improved by Joseph and John Ballard and their heirs, so long as they shall keep up a grist-mill, fulling-mill, &c. In the same year it was voted to encourage setting up iron-works."

In 1768 the town raised an influential committee "to consider of some measures that may tend to encourage prudence and manufactures, and to lessen the use of superfluities." This committee, in their report, among other valuable recommendations, to further which the inhabitants of the town should use their utmost endeavors, mention this, "to promote and encourage manufactures in the town."

In 1770, when taking action concerning the distress in the province growing out of the operation of the late act of Parliament, imposing duties on tea, paper, etc., the town votes to "encourage frugality, industry and the manufactures of this country." And again, in 1775, the town votes "to discountenance and discourage every species of extravagance and dissipation," and "to encourage frugality, economy and industry, and to promote agriculture, arts and manufactures." We thus find, continually, manufactures associated with the economic and moral virtues, as things which are to be distinctly and specifically encouraged and promoted.

Joseph and John Ballard are mentioned as having received grants of land, on the condition of building and keeping up grist and fulling mills, where is now Ballard Vale. Frye Village takes its name from Sam'l Frye, who, in 1718, built a saw and grist-mill at that

place on the Shawshin River. A fulling-mill was added by a son of Mr. Frye.

Not far from the spot where the mills of Hon. Moses T. Stevens are now located in Marland Village, the Lovejoys had iron works. The business of these mills was necessarily on a small scale, and not always profitable to the owner. While on the Shawshin River there were, first and last, quite a number of small mills established, employing a few operatives, not till 1775 was there any very extensive or important manufacturing enterprise established in the town.

In the winter of 1775-76 Mr. Phillips built a powder-mill on the Shawshin River, in what is now Marland Village. This mill, as has been previously mentioned, was erected to meet a pressing necessity of the Continental army, not as a business venture. It proved to be, however, not only of immediate service to the army and of immense importance to the country, but of large pecuniary profit to its owner. When it ceased to be a necessity to the army and country it was continued for a number of years as a strictly business enterprise; and this was not abandoned till the year 1796. In October of that year an explosion took place, which killed two men and made havoc of the mill.

Some few years previous to this, the demand for powder having slackened, Mr. Phillips had introduced the manufacture of paper, for this purpose using the powder-mill, when there were no orders for powder. In 1789 he erected a paper mill. The associate of Mr. Phillips in this business was Mr. Thomas Houghton, an Englishman, a practical paper manufacturer, who, having met with reverses in his own country, came here to retrieve his fortunes. He was a devout Quaker, persistent, hopeful, energetic and well-trained to his business. By agreement, as Mr. Houghton states it, "Mr. Phillips builds the mill and I am to manage the work. My care and management is to stand against the Rent and we are to share profits equally." The "building occupied as a paper-mill," as described by Mr. Phillips, was "thirty six by thirty-two feet, with two vats upon the ground floor, which have a Cast Iron pot in each of them, sunk into Brick chimneys, for heating the vats. The first floor has two engines for beating-stuff, a room for dressing rags, with a brick chimney and fire-place, also two other rooms for rags. The second floor is occupied for a Rag ware-house.

"Another building connected to the mill by a covered passage way of 20 feet long, used for drying and keeping paper before finished, 20 by 24 feet, at the end next the mill; a part of the drying-house is taken off for a finishing room, 27 by 24 feet, in which is a cast-iron stove used in the winter season. At one side of the finishing-room is a sizing copper, set with bricks and brick chimney. Another building, 35 feet from the mill, that is 24 feet by 20, for Rags and finished paper. Another building, 131 feet from the mill, 20 by 13 feet, for Rope and other lumber. No



other building near on the same side of the river. A Grist Mill upon the opposite side of the river, at about 140 feet distance."

This may seem to us insignificant as compared with the more numerous and much more extensive buildings and appurtenances of the mills owned by Mr. Stevens, now occupying the same site, but, in these days of beginnings in manufacturing, this was an extensive plant and worthy of minute description. As a new enterprise, competing with others in the neighborhood of like character, with a scarcity of material and with untrained workmen, its success at first was not up to the expectations of its projectors. In time, however, when experience had brought skill to the workmen, and the rag-bag material to the mill, and the market had enlarged, the business became profitable.

Mr. Houghton, after an experience that tested his faith and strength of character, emerged from his impoverished condition to one of comparative ease. His son succeeded him. Colonel Samuel Phillips succeeded his father in the ownership. On the death of Colonel Phillips, in 1820, the property changed hands. Messrs. Amos and Abel Blanchard and Daniel Poor carried on the business. The financial results not proving satisfactory, the manufacture of paper was abandoned after a few years, and the property fell into the hands of Mr. Peter C. Brooks, and ultimately into the possession of the Marland Manufacturing Company.

This company came into existence through the perseverance, energy and ability of one man—Mr. Abraham Marland.

MR. MARLAND was born in Ashton Parish, Lancashire, England, February 22, 1772. His father, Jonathan Marland, was a millwright and afterwards a linen-weaver. Losing his mother at the early age of four years, he was taken into the family of a maternal uncle. For three years he enjoyed the privilege of attending a school where the younger children, of whom he was one, learned to read the New Testament, and little else. At less than eight years of age he was put into the woolen-mill of his uncle, where, by practice for seven years, he learned the business of weaving. On the death of his uncle, preferring to rely upon his own efforts for a living, rather than return to the house of his father, who had married again, he entered the service of another woolen manufacturer, earning here three shillings a week above his board, and thinking himself quite well off at that.

It was while in this place that he sought and obtained confirmation in the Established Church of England, for which he ever after had a strong predilection and warm affection. He continued in the same employment for two years, acquiring a good knowledge of the business, and a reputation for frugality, ingenuity, persistency and application.

In 1790 he was chosen to take charge of carding and spinning in a new mill in Shrewsbury, at a sal-

ary of a guinea a week. His success was such that his compensation was soon raised. He continued here for two years, when, by some misfortune of the owners, the enterprise failed and was closed up. Not finding congenial employment in that vicinity, young Marland next went to London, seeking his fortune. Here for a time he found employment in a flannel-mill at low wages. Becoming restless, he was induced by certain allurements to enlist in the service of the East India Company. But while on shipboard, waiting the day of sailing, he became disgusted by his taste of subordination and the prospect before him. Unceremoniously, without bidding good-bye to any one, on the night previous to the sailing of the ship, he slipped from her deck, boarded a small boat, landed on the wharf, and put a long distance between the vessel and himself before the morning dawned. After much waiting and destitution, he found employment in the ware-house of a firm of linen drapers and cotton manufacturers. He soon after went to Leeds, where he engaged in the manufacturing business, first as an employe, and afterwards on his own account with a partner, and then again as a manager of a manufactory owned by Mr. John Wood. Here Mr. Marland married, his wife bringing a dowry of two hundred pounds.

In 1801, investing his savings and the property of his wife in woolen cloths, he embarked for America with his family, landing in Boston September 17th.

It ought not to be passed over, in this connection, that the cloth Mr. Marland brought with him to this country was placed in the hands of a merchant in Boston for sale. Before any returns were made, the merchant failed, and Mr. Marland lost nearly the whole of his venture, which represented his own savings and the dowry of his wife. This heavy loss, instead of depressing the new immigrants, only gave steadiness to their courage and vigor to their efforts. He is reported to have said that, on starting in this country, he had but one hundred dollars in his pocket. The success of Mr. Marland has been attributed, in part, to his admirable wife. She was distinguished for her courage, industry, frugality, helpfulness, good management of family affairs and religious character. She gave aid and comfort to her husband under all circumstances, and was especially helpful in times of disaster or discouragement.

Soon after landing in Boston, Mr. Marland went to Beverly, and entered the employment of Colonel Burnham, a superintendent in cotton-spinning and in the manufacture and running of factory machinery. His compensation, esteemed by him, at the time, large, was seven shillings a day. After two years he removed to Lynnfield, where he engaged in the manufacture of wick-yarn on his own account; to this was soon added custom carding of wool for the farmers. In all this business Mr. Marland succeeded beyond his expectations. As his business increased he was embarrassed for want of power, and, to remedy this





want, removed to Andover in 1807. Here he at first established himself in Abbot Village, engaging in the manufacture of cotton, the yarn being spun in his factory and woven into cloth by hand, by women living in the neighborhood. This was a day of small things, demanding economy, industry and energy.

The business of manufacturing cotton being injurious to his health, on account of the dust arising from it, Mr. Marland turned his attention to woolen manufacturing—the employment of his youth.

In 1820 the mill privilege and property formerly belonging to Judge Phillips came into the possession of Mr. Peter C. Brooks, a wealthy merchant of Boston.

Mr. Marland, desirous of enlarging his business, entered into negotiations with Mr. Brooks, which resulted in his leasing the property for a term of twenty years. By the terms of this lease Mr. Brooks was to erect a new brick mill and a large tenement block, and to receive nine per cent. on the entire property.

After eight years the business had been so profitable, and was so well established and extended, that Mr. Marland was prepared to purchase the entire plant—buildings, machinery, land and power. This he did for \$22,000. The year after, he built a new mill, larger than the one standing, and at that time esteemed a very large structure.

The business still increased in profitableness as it increased in extent, and in 1834 Mr. Marland took his two eldest sons and Mr. Punchard, his son-in-law, into partnership, they forming a stock company and obtaining from the Legislature an act of incorporation as "The Marland Manufacturing Company." The elder of the two sons, John Marland, receiving a flattering offer, went to New Zealand the next year to purchase wool for a Boston company. On his return, the following year, he and his brother William withdrew their interest in the Marland Company, and started a manufacturing enterprise, in connection with others, at Ballard Vale. Mr. Abraham Marland and Mr. Benjamin H. Punchard remained, and, from this time till the death of Mr. Marland, February 20, 1849, were practically the owners of the property. Mr. Punchard followed his father-in-law a little more than a year later, dying April 4, 1850. Up to this time the business had been remarkably remunerative, paying a dividend of twenty-five per cent., year after year, for many successive years. These manufacturers, as has been mentioned in another place, made a liberal disposition of their large profits, by which disposition their renown and usefulness are perpetuated, and will continue to be perpetuated through all coming generations.

After the decease of Messrs. Marland and Punchard the mills were operated by the heirs of these gentlemen and the other stock-holders, who had from time to time obtained an interest in the property. Mr. Nathan Frye was chosen president and manager of the company, and continued such for nearly thirty

years. Mr. Frye was highly esteemed by his fellow-citizens and business associates for his courtesy, integrity and public spirit. For a time under his management the mills prospered, but, in a season of financial embarrassment, they suffered losses, were financially crippled, and finally the company was obliged to sell out and wind up its affairs.

Hon. Moses T. Stevens, of North Andover, became the purchaser of the property in 1879. Mr. Stevens, the son of one of the earliest manufacturers of the undivided town, himself an experienced, extensive and successful manufacturer of woolen goods, has repaired and refurnished the old mills, built new ones and furnished them with the best styles of machinery, repaired the old tenement-houses and erected others, thus putting the whole property into first-class condition. For the last eight years these mills have been in successful operation, the class of help employed has been improved, and the whole aspect of Marland Village has been greatly changed for the better.

MR. JOHN SMITH was born in Brechin, Forfarshire, Scotland, May 19, 1796, an ancient city, noted not so much on account of the number of its inhabitants, or the extent of its commercial or manufacturing enterprises as for its antiquity, and that it has been a cathedral town since 1159, when it was created an Episcopal See by David I. then King of Scotland. John's father, whose name was Peter, was a carpenter by occupation. John was the second of five children. His father died in 1809, when he was a little over thirteen years old, leaving to his mother the support of two children younger than himself. The circumstances of his father were such that, from the age of nine years, John had been placed at work on a farm in the neighborhood of his home during the summer to assist in the support of the family, while during the winter he was permitted to remain at home and attend school. On the death of his father he was apprenticed to learn the trade of a millwright, which at that time included work on both wood and iron. It embraced not only the construction of water-wheels, with their frame-work and appurtenances, but, in addition, the machines to be used in the various departments of manufacturing. This profitable apprenticeship he served faithfully, and thus qualified himself to become a master millwright.

When thus fitted for active life he went to Glasgow seeking employment. As he was moneyless, he performed the journey of a hundred miles on foot. He remained in the city for a year and a half, in which time he familiarized himself to a certain extent with the construction and operation of machinery as it was conducted in this great centre of the textile industries of Scotland. But desirable situations in his business were not easily obtained. The supply of competent young men was greater than the demand. The young mechanics of the city became infected with a desire to emigrate to America, where it was represented that wider fields and better opportunities



awaited capable and enterprising workmen. Mr. Smith, being of a sanguine temperament, and of a courageous spirit, shared in this adventurous desire.

So it came to pass that he left Greenock, August 24, 1816, for America, and landed in Halifax after a tedious voyage of sixty days, in which the vessel narrowly escaped being wrecked. He obtained work here for a short time as house carpenter. After a little observation, he became persuaded that in Halifax his dreams of prosperity in a new country could never be realized, and hence, after a stay of less than two months, he sailed for Boston, where he landed after a voyage of six days. There he learned that there was a cotton factory in Watertown, to which he made his way, seeking employment. The mill he sought he found two miles beyond, in Waltham. Mr. Paul Moody, the master machinist of this mill, which was that of the Boston Manufacturing Company, was glad to see the young Scotchman fresh from the works of Glasgow, those headquarters of manufacturing industries.

It was a fortunate circumstance for Mr. Smith that Mr. Moody was at that time anxious to learn about the latest improvements in cotton machinery abroad, and the methods adopted for combining the spinning of the yarn and the weaving of the cloth. It so happened that Mr. Smith, in his short stop in Glasgow, had been employed in a factory that united all the processes of the manufacture, from picking the cotton to finishing the cloth—a practice then unknown in this country. Mr. Moody, eager to obtain the information the young workman was able to impart, took him through his factory, showing him all his machinery and its working, at the same time revealing his hindrances and desires. The result was that Mr. Smith entered at once into the service of the company, a very auspicious beginning for a stranger in a strange land, with no introduction but his honest face and the knowledge he carried in his brain.

Mr. Smith continued in the service of this company for a little over two years and six months, when he started on a trip to the South, partly to see the country, but more especially to find a suitable place to locate himself in business. He was not satisfied to be an employé, however advantageous the situation might be. He was ambitious to start up a business on his own account, and take the risks and profits. By easy stages, stopping here and there, for a longer or shorter time, he reached Augusta, Ga., where he found a friend and fellow-workman at Waltham established as a machinist. Here he remained till July of the next year. After a careful observation of the condition of things at the South, its climate, its peculiar institutions, its social relations, its business methods, he became more and more disinclined to make his home in that section of the country. Having satisfied himself, he returned to Waltham. Here he learned that four of his fellow-workmen in

Waltham had established themselves in Medway as manufacturers of cotton machinery. He entered into employment with them, where he continued for some twenty months, continually on the lookout for some opening for starting up a business of his own.

At length the time and opportunity came. In the spring of 1822 he and two of his fellow-workmen, Joseph Faulkner and Warren Richardson, entered into a partnership, under the name of "John Smith and Company," for the manufacture of machinery. After a careful examination of places for a location, extending as far as Paterson, N. J., and Philadelphia, Pa., they finally fixed upon Plymouth, Mass., induced thereto partly by the promise of a profitable contract for the building of the machinery of a cotton-mill, situated about three miles from the village of Plymouth. Their stay here, however, was short,—some two and a half years.

Messrs. Faulkner and Richardson were natives of Andover. This, together with the fact that Andover, Mass., was better located with regard to the factories from which they might look for work, and the further fact that they might obtain from the Shawshin River abundant power for all their need, decided them to remove their enterprise to Andover. They purchased the mill privilege in Frye Village, now occupied by the lower mills of the Smith & Dove Manufacturing Company, and at once built a machine-shop, which is the building now standing on the east side of the Shawshin. The shop was seventy-two feet long by thirty-seven feet wide, and three stories above the basement. Business flowed in to the company from the start. Profitable contracts came from Newmarket, Lowell and other parts of New Hampshire and Eastern Massachusetts. The amount of business developed during the first five years may be estimated from the fact that, at the end of that period, they employed thirty men. They started in Andover in 1824. Five years later Mr. Richardson died. Two years after the death of Mr. Richardson, Mr. Faulkner died, leaving Mr. Smith the sole survivor of the firm. He purchased the interests of his deceased partners, and assumed the responsibility of the entire business, placing his brother Peter, who had been in the employ of the company for nine years, in charge as superintendent.

Previous to this, in the summer of 1829, Mr. John Smith had commissioned his brother Peter to go to Scotland (his expenses being paid, and his family supported in the mean time) to bring over Miss Agnes Ferguson, of Glasgow, his betrothed. This young lady Mr. Smith had known and tenderly regarded when, twelve years before, he lived in Glasgow, but his circumstances then forbade any mention of marriage. In 1828, on a visit to Scotland, he had renewed the acquaintance, which, before many months, had resulted in a betrothal. Mr. Peter Smith successfully executed his important commission, and the young lady was safely landed in Boston on the





1st day of August, 1829, and soon after the marriage took place. This lady died December 30, 1851.

On March 5, 1869, Mr. Smith married Miss Sarah Gleason, who survives him.

In 1835 Mr. John Smith joined his brother Peter and Mr. Dove in the new undertaking of flax-spinning, and after that he gradually drew out of the machine-making business till it was wholly given up. It had been very lucrative, and Mr. Smith had acquired a handsome property, which was used to good advantage in carrying on the flax-spinning enterprise.

As to the personal characteristics of Mr. Smith, no better, more discriminating, more just delineation can be given than that we have from the pen of Rev. William B. Brown, D.D., of Orange, N. J., who for some years was Mr. Smith's pastor and for thirty years on terms of friendly intimacy with him. Mr. Brown writes: "Mr. Smith's friends have never claimed for him that he was, in the ordinary sense, an educated man; yet, if education consists in thorough mental discipline, as it does largely, then he was highly educated. But few men have attained to his power of concentrating their thoughts upon a given subject.

"Nor has John Smith been known as a public speaker; yet in the many little addresses he has made, especially on social occasions, he has spoken with a directness, an earnestness and power that has thrilled many a heart. He always strikes the central thought in his first sentence. His remarks are brief, but pointed and to the purpose. I remember one of his speeches that was characterized as 'common sense on fire.'

"Nor has Mr. Smith ever aspired to civil office, yet, by his life and deeds, he has done more to make public sentiment and to mould society than have most men who hold high political stations and live in the public gaze.

"One of the leading characteristics of Mr. Smith was his *unflinching integrity*. Rectitude was a part of his nature—duty to God and man his supreme law. He could not take a mean advantage or do a mean thing. He could never look upon injustice or any kind of evil-doing with toleration. His love of rectitude made him, in early life and ever after, a reformer. He denounced slavery and took part with the fleeing fugitive when it cost something so to do. From the first he took strong and advanced ground on the temperance question, and made studied and effective speeches in favor of total abstinence that would be profitable reading at this day. But the point I make is, that Mr. Smith's position as a reformer followed as naturally from his integrity of character as does effect from cause. Being what he was, he could not do otherwise than as he did.

"Considered as a business man, in which capacity Mr. Smith's success was most remarkable, I should say that unusual *business sagacity* and other qualities

to match were at the foundation. He had a genius for business. He could see openings before others had dreamed of them. While young, his resources of brain were equal to any emergency. Whatever he touched turned to gold. This was not the result of chance or good fortune, but of quick business sagacity. He knew how to take the tide at its flood, while others waited till the tide began to ebb. The co-operating qualities of his character were courage, energy, perseverance and common sense. With sagacity to perceive and common sense to plan, he had courage to enter the lists, and patience and perseverance, accompanied by rich resources, to secure victory.

"Mr. Smith was a conscientious and benevolent man, as his many and large contributions to educational and other beneficent objects abundantly witness. He gave on principle, not from impulse. Constituted as he was by nature and beginning life as he did, men are not likely to be generous, and Mr. Smith might not have been, save for his religious principles. He regarded himself as the Lord's steward, and that, having received much, of him would much be required. Thus he brought religion into his business, and made business a part of his religion. His giving was under the lead of conscience, not of fancy, nor the result of importunity, not at all out of regard for popularity or posthumous fame. He was modest by nature and shrank from vulgar notoriety. His largest gifts were resolved upon in the quiet of his own chamber, alone with his God.

"Socially, Mr. Smith was always open, free and genial. He was subject to dyspepsia, and at times to depression from the effects of over-work. But this was sickness and foreign from his nature. When well he was uniformly cheerful and companionable. When engrossed in business he was taciturn, but when the hours of business had passed he was ready for a lively chat and a cordial greeting.

"In religion, Mr. Smith was worthy the imitation of business Christians. He never let his business, however pressing, stand in the way of his religious duties. In his attitude toward God he had the reverence, trust and affection of a little child. What God would have him do, he esteemed a privilege more than a duty to do. His life was for the most part passed in the sunshine of the Heavenly Father's countenance—but when His face was for a time hidden by the dark clouds of bereavement or despondency, his faith did not fail him—he had songs in the night."

The last ten years of his life were years of declining strength, and withdrawal from the cares of the world and the society of his fellow-men. He greatly missed his old associates in business, but, for the most part, was cheerful and happy, calmly awaiting the summons that should call him to his Father's house. That summons came February 25, 1886. He was aged eighty-nine years, nine months and six days.

A most charming, *the most charming*, feature in the character of Mr. Smith, not referred to by Mr. Brown,







*Peter Smith*





*John Smith*





which ought not to be overlooked, was seen in his filial, almost religious, devotion to his mother. As a lad, his slender earnings were sacredly hoarded, and placed in the hands of his mother for the family support. When grown to manhood and in a foreign land, his thoughts continually went back to the humble home in Brechin, where the loving mother toiled at spinning, and loving epistles frequently followed these thoughts to cheer the lonely woman. And when the fruits of his industry began to come in, a liberal share of these fruits found their way, month by month, across the ocean to cheer that mother's heart in her desolate home. No sooner had he made for himself a home in the New World than he sent for the beloved mother, and from the day of her arrival to the day of her departure hence, gave to her the best the house afforded, thus making her last days as peaceful and comfortable as her early days had been troublesome and pinching. Perchance, however, he may have been, instinctively, but paying a debt of nature; since to her mainly, by heredity, he was doubtless indebted for the energy, courage and faith which carried him on to wealth and eminence.<sup>1</sup>

MR. PETER SMITH was born in Brechin, Forfarshire, Scotland, September 21, 1802. He was the fourth of five children, and bore the name of his father, who was a carpenter by trade. When eight years of age his father died, which left the mother in charge of the children, and in straitened circumstances. The oldest son was her only assistance in providing for the support of the family. Her means of earning a livelihood was the spinning-wheel, which she plied with great diligence. The year after the death of his father the lad went to work for a farmer during the harvest season, and from this time onward till his fifteenth year was engaged for brief periods in different employments as he could obtain them, courageously striving to support himself and assist his mother in her arduous task. He passed through not a few trying circumstances and scenes which tested his powers of endurance and perseverance. When fourteen years of age, he took it into his head to go to Glasgow, where his brother James worked, in pursuit of employment. This city was more than one hundred miles from Brechin. Over this distance, on foot and alone, drenched by rain and benumbed by snow, with money sufficient only for one night's entertainment at a public-house, he boldly plodded his way to his destination. Too proud to beg for food, and too destitute to purchase it, he depended upon the pity and kindness of the good people whose doors necessity compelled him to enter for shelter and nourishment. In reviewing this episode in his life, he writes: "It was only by perseverance and the kind providence of my Heavenly Father that I ever got there."

He spent a year in work as a weaver in Glasgow, where he attended an evening school for a time, made the acquaintance of a "good Christian man," who, possessing a fine library, encouraged him in reading profitable books. This "good Christian" took a very lively interest in the plucky boy, and suggested to his brother James that weaving was not the employment for which he was best adapted. This suggestion was heeded and led to his attaining, through the influence of a maternal uncle, a situation as apprentice to a wheelwright in Kerrimuir. His return to Brechin was on foot, as had been his departure, but not without money sufficient for food and lodging. Having made a short visit to his mother, he proceeded to his destination, and served an apprenticeship of four years to the trade of a wheelwright. The first two of these years were uneventful. During the third his attention was specially called to the subject of personal religion. As a boy, he had been trained by his mother in the Catechism, to forms of worship and to respect and value religion. But at this time, as never before, he was brought to see the importance of personal piety, and to seek acceptance with God through repentance and faith in Jesus Christ. In this spiritual awakening his moral and intellectual faculties received a marked development. The realities of the present life, its responsibilities and possibilities, and the realities of the life to come, as set forth in the Scriptures, took such hold upon his mind and heart as not only to create him anew in the purposes and desires he cherished, but also served to awaken and enlarge his mental powers. He says of himself at this time, "The Lord led me in a wonderful way to seek salvation and to make a personal application of the truth of His Word." The wheelwright's apprentice, with no schooling, sprang at once into the office of teacher. Overcoming his natural diffidence and the defects of his education, he took part in the social and prayer-meetings of the place, was a teacher in the Sabbath-school, and, on invitation, addressed large audiences in neighboring places with acceptance and effect.

Having faithfully served his apprenticeship, on coming to the age of twenty years he began to look about for the place of his life's work. From early youth his cherished desire had been to make his home in America. His brother John had already established himself here. With him he communicated, making known his wishes. This resulted in his receiving an invitation from his brother to come to him. He embarked at Liverpool for this country August 1, 1822, without a penny in his pocket. He landed in Boston, where he was to meet his brother, on September 3d of the same year, with one cent in his pocket, which he had received as a gift from one of the passengers. His brother was not in the city to receive him. The solitary cent was spent for a drink of ginger beer, and then the penniless young man went out into the great city to await his fate. He was directed to a hotel kept by Scotch people,

<sup>1</sup> The engraving of Mr. John Smith was made from a photograph taken when he was eighty-nine years and eight months old, and in comparatively good health, and only about four months before he died.



where he received a cordial welcome. His own words best describe this reception. It was at the Burns Tavern, kept by a Mr. Nicholson and wife. "I suppose that all the Scotchmen that were then about Boston called to see me and get the news from Scotland. I was feasted as if I were some great character. In the midst of it all I began to think there was too much whiskey used. I often look back with thankfulness to God that I was preserved from the temptation of drink, which was freely offered to me. I was then in my twentieth year, and, with the excitement of landing on a foreign shore, I was in a condition to become an easy prey to the temptation of strong drink; but, thanks be to God, I was saved!" In a short time his brother John came on, and a most hearty greeting was exchanged between the brothers.

Mr. John Smith was established in business at Plymouth, and thither they proceeded. Peter entered the employment of the company of which his brother was the head at eight dollars a month, "board and washing included." He had not been here many months before he found himself in the midst of a religious awakening, similar to that in which he had received such marked benefit while an apprentice. His spiritual nature had become somewhat sluggish and cold, but soon felt the old flame rekindled, and his whole being revived and replenished by the love of God. Again he resumed the duties of a Sabbath-school instructor and became a participant in social prayer-meetings. His labors in these regards were well received and productive of good. With such felicity, earnestness and success did he address assemblies of people, that he was urged by the good Christians of the place to study for the ministry and devote his life to preaching the Gospel. His brother John, though not at that time a professing Christian, offered to furnish him with the money necessary to obtain a collegiate and ministerial education. This was a matter for the most serious consideration. An entire change in the plan and labor of life was proposed. After long, painful, prayerful deliberation he came to the conclusion that the ministry was not the calling for which he was best fitted. He never regretted his decision on this momentous question.

August 24, 1824, at the age of twenty-two, he married Miss Rebecca Bartlett, of Plymouth, with whom he lived for nine years in the enjoyment of the truest conjugal trust and affection, when she was taken from him by death, leaving five children, the youngest of whom was but a day old.

In 1825 the firm of "John Smith & Co., machinists," removed to Andover, where better facilities were offered for conducting their business. Mr. Peter Smith, being in the employment of this company, came with them to Andover. Here he was soon recognized as an earnest Christian man, active and zealous in every good word and work. He united with the South Church, afterwards with the West

Church. With regard to his Christian work at this time, he says, "I was often called upon to take part in the prayer-meetings. I was very timid at first, but, as I became more acquainted with the brethren and sisters of the church, I gathered more courage, and felt that they would overlook any imperfections in my speech, if my daily life was 'such as becometh the Gospel of Christ.'" He was also quite interested and active in reform measures—temperance and anti-slavery. His chief pleasure, aside from that connected with his family, was derived from his religious privileges and activities, and throughout his life of constant engagement in business affairs the Sabbath and the prayer-meeting were ever the source to him of the most serene and satisfying enjoyment.

Two years after the death of his first wife he married Miss Esther H. Ward, June 5, 1835. She still survives him, in a good old age, having been the mother of seven children, four of whom are living. Dea. Peter Smith had twelve children, four of whom died before him. The death of these children was a severe affliction, but his faith in the loving-kindness of his Heavenly Father and the Christian faith and character of these departed dear ones served greatly to assuage his grief.

Soon after the coming of Mr. Dove to Andover, in the employment of John Smith & Co., Mr. Peter Smith and Mr. Dove entered into partnership for the manufacture of chalk lines from cotton. This was to be done with a machine invented by Mr. Dove. Mr. Smith proposed to furnish five hundred dollars to pay for the material, and to support Mr. Dove's family while he should be engaged in constructing the machine; Mr. Smith meanwhile retaining charge of his brother's shop until there should be a good prospect of success in this new enterprise. The profits of both the business and the patent for the machine were to be divided equally. However, before the enterprise had made much headway, Mr. John Smith, having satisfied himself that the business would be a success, made an offer to join the two younger men in his employ, in this new venture. This offer was gladly accepted, being regarded by the younger brother as most timely, as the elder had the means for starting a new enterprise.

When thus constituted, the firm took the name of "Smith, Dove & Company." The name was afterwards changed to "The Smith and Dove Manufacturing Company," and it has continued doing business under this name to the present time, though all the original proprietors have passed away.

At first this company manufactured machine twine from cotton yarn. In 1836 they commenced the manufacture of yarn from flax. It is in this flax manufacture that they have achieved such signal success. The patterns for the flax machinery were brought from the flax-spinning district of Scotland by Mr. Dove, who visited his native country for the purpose of obtaining them. The first invoice of shoe





thread made by this company was carried to Boston by Mr. Peter Smith, in a bundle weighing thirteen pounds, on a stage-coach. The manufacturer found great difficulty in disposing of his goods, and not till he became much discouraged by several unsuccessful attempts was he able to effect a sale.

Dea. Smith, or Dea. Peter, as he was familiarly called, to distinguish him from his brother John, was not confined in his active labors to the exacting business in which he was engaged. He was a director in several banking and railroad corporations; a corporate member of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions; trustee of Phillips Academy and the Theological Seminary; trustee, and for some time president of the board of Abbot Academy; superintendent of the West Parish Sunday-school, and deacon of the church for a long series of years; member of the State Legislature for two years, and deeply interested in all public matters affecting the welfare of the town. When the War of the Rebellion broke out, he was intensely interested on the side of the country, promoting enlistment by speech and liberal contributions, sending his sons into the army, and giving pecuniary assistance to the government by the purchase of its securities. He was a Christian patriot and philanthropist. The unity of the States and the freedom of the slave moved his soul to its depths. In this warm devotion to his adopted country he did not forget the place of his nativity and his fellow-countrymen. He gave liberally to establish free schools in Brechin, and was a most generous supporter and member of the Scots Charitable Society, of Boston.

As a husband and father, son and brother, he was an example worthy of imitation. His especial delight was at his own hearth-stone, with his numerous family around him. His great anxiety for his children ever was that they might become the disciples of Christ, and so spend their lives as to glorify their Creator, that they might enjoy Him forever. In his business relations he was just, fair, honest, diligent and above suspicion. He was generous, kind-hearted, and on principle, a promoter of religious and philanthropic enterprises. He was diligent in business, "fervent in spirit, serving the Lord." He was economical, careful in details and wise in the disbursement of charity. He was modest; reticent as to himself, shunning rather than courting notoriety or conspicuous position.

But Deacon Smith had his limitations and defects. He was human. It may with justice be said, however, that his many and wide-spreading excellencies of life and character would cover a multitude of blemishes, did they exist. "He was a man into the four corners of whose house there had shined, through the years of his pilgrimage, the light of the glory of God." In the dawning light of July 6, 1880, at the age of nearly seventy-eight, with a mind unclouded, with a heart still warm with tenderest love, his ransomed spirit

gently, peacefully, sweetly sank to rest on the bosom of his Lord.

Mr. JOHN DOVE was born in Brechin, Forfarshire, Scotland, May 5, 1805. In early life his opportunities for education, while limited, were somewhat superior to those enjoyed by his townsmen with whom he was afterwards associated in business. He was a schoolmate and playmate of the celebrated astronomer, Professor Nichol, and the no less celebrated preacher, Dr. Guthrie. He was not, however, distinguished for his studiousness and proficiency in school studies at this early day. He preferred to spend his time in getting up some mechanical contrivance for his own amusement and that of his associates. The bent of his mind was decidedly towards mechanics. On leaving school he followed this natural bent and was apprenticed to a machinist. There he was systematically and carefully trained, according to the custom of that day and country, in all the details of the craft. On leaving the shop of his master he was a thorough workman, qualified to engage in the business on his own account.

But remunerative employment was difficult to obtain in Scotland. He married, and, when twenty-eight years of age, finding it far from an easy task to support a family from the proceeds of his labor, he began seriously to meditate trying his fortune in a foreign land. Australia and America were the two countries then presenting the greatest inducements for emigration. After much inquiry and thought he fixed upon the latter as his future home. Leaving his native country, he landed in New York in 1833. Here he found employment for a year. But this was unsatisfying. At this crisis in his history a slight circumstance—providential, he was accustomed to regard it—intervened to determine his life-work.

The brothers, Peter and John Smith, townsmen of his, had preceded him, and were located in Andover. Peter had been in childhood for a short time a school-mate. He had also been for some months a fellow-workman in the same shop with him. Before leaving his native city, Mr. Dove had received a letter from an aged citizen of the place, introducing him to Mr. John Smith. This letter, written at the request of Mr. Dove's father, and by a friend of the Smith and Dove families, had been put at the bottom of his trunk by the young man, as a thing of little practical use, and was forgotten. There it lay for a year after his arrival in New York. One day, on an overhauling of the trunk, this forgotten letter came to light. The unsettled condition of Mr. Dove led him to use it as a possible means of obtaining suitable employment. The letter, being forwarded to Andover, reached its destination just at the time when Mr. John Smith was preparing to take a business trip to Washington. On his way thither he stopped over in New York to see his correspondent and countryman. In the friendly interview which took place between the natives of Brechin in a foreign





city, they were drawn towards each other, not only by their common nativity, but also by sympathy and mutual respect. It also appeared that Mr. Smith, engaged in the manufacture of machinery, needed a well-trained machinist to oversee his shop, and that, in this regard, Mr. Dove was just the right man for the place. It was soon arranged that he should go on to Andover, make a personal examination of the business, and see if some arrangement might be made between him and the company, by which he could enter their service to their mutual advantage. Finding the condition of things satisfactory, he at once engaged with the Machine Company, and went to work in their shop.

But his fertile mind could not be confined to the routine of his daily labor. His busy thoughts were alert to discover some way by which certain products, made by hand, might more readily be made by machinery. The problem was to devise machinery suitable for the purpose. The result was his invention of a machine for the manufacture of chalk-twine from cotton thread, and also a partnership between himself and Mr. Peter Smith, in which the new machine was to be utilized. But, before this enterprise had gone into operation, Mr. John Smith entered into the partnership, and the plan was changed. Instead of manufacturing cotton twine they resolved on the manufacture of flax thread by machinery.

At that time there was no such thread made by machinery in the country. Mr. Dove was sent to Scotland to obtain drawings for the requisite machinery, which he speedily secured. His labor in this direction was made the more easy from the fact that his father was at that time proprietor of flax-spinning mills on the South Esk River, about four miles south of Brechin.

The position of Mr. Dove in this new company was that of superintendent of machinery. In this employment he found much pleasure. The construction and management of machinery, and the overcoming of difficulties in its working, gave his mind its appropriate exercise and consequent satisfaction. It was a common remark of his: "I never enjoy myself better than when my mind is taxed to overcome some mechanical difficulty."

Aside from his aptness for mechanics and his genius for mechanical invention, Mr. Dove had a decided taste for scientific studies in other directions. In his hours of recreation he turned to them with delight. Had his chief attention been given to the natural sciences instead of the application of mechanics, he would doubtless have distinguished himself as a scientist in the special direction to which he would have given his energies and his life.

He was something more than a skillful machinist and successful business man. He had a loving heart, full of sympathy for the ignorant and poor. He gave freely to the needy and to objects of charity. He was especially interested in, and generous towards, institu-

tions of learning. He found pleasure in assisting promising but poor young men to obtain a liberal education. In co-operation with his associates in business, he contributed liberally to found a free high school in his native city. In like manner, with his associates, he contributed largely to the Theological Seminary. To the Memorial Hall building and Library he gave seven thousand dollars. He was a warm and liberal friend of temperance and the slave. While thus prosperous and benevolent, he was never assuming, self-conceited, or exacting in his treatment of the less successful. While firm in his convictions and independent in his conduct, he was modest in his demeanor towards others not in agreement with himself. In a word, he was a practical no less than a professed Christian. He united with the church at the West Parish July 4, 1841, and ever after honored his profession. His piety was of the reticent, unostentatious sort, not given to much talk, but operative in his daily life. It was influential in his treatment of his workmen, in his bearing towards the poor and ignorant, in his business transactions, in his daily intercourse with his fellow-citizens, in his strict and what some would call Puritanical observance of the Sabbath, (he reading upon that day scarcely any book but the Bible), in his regular and reverent attention to family worship, in a general interest in the promotion of religion at home and abroad, and in the cultivation of a meek and quiet spirit, that would be at peace with all men. His example as a business man of sound judgment, unimpeachable honesty, unquestioned honor, always true and reliable, gentle, cordial, cheerful and devout, is still felt as a blessing by his fellow-citizens. He died at his home in Andover, Nov. 20, 1876.

**SMITH & DOVE MANUFACTURING COMPANY.**—In the fall of 1834, Mr. John Dove and Mr. Peter Smith, both then in the employ of Mr. John Smith in his machine shop, the latter as superintendent, entered into an agreement to form a partnership for the manufacture of chalk-twine from cotton, Mr. Dove having invented a machine for that purpose. The machine of Mr. Dove was to be patented. Before this was accomplished, and while the new partners were hesitating about the best way of procedure, in 1835, they were joined by Mr. John Smith bringing in capital to their aid. But before actually starting operations the plan was modified, and it was determined to set up the manufacture of flax thread. This led to the sending of Mr. Dove to Scotland to obtain drawings of flax-spinning machinery. These he, with some difficulty, obtained, and returned after a few months' absence, when the proper machinery was made in the machine shop of Mr. John Smith. In the mean time Mr. Smith erected a building of brick, on the west side of the Shawshin River, in Frye Village, opposite his machine shop, for the purpose of carrying on the business, which went into operation in 1835. The goods manufactured were flax yarns for carpet weav-





*John Dowe.*





ers, sail twines, shoe thread and other goods of a like character. At that time there was no flax-spinning machinery in operation in the country. All the goods of the class they made that were in the market were imported.

There had been, as early as 1820, an enterprise of a similar character started in Patterson, N. Y., but after a short existence it failed. The Messrs. Smith & Dove may be said to have been the first successful manufacturers of flax thread by machinery and power in the country. They had no competitors at the start, nor for some time after, in America.

Their competitors were foreign manufacturers, chiefly the mills of Great Britain. At first they met with considerable difficulty in disposing of their product, there being a prejudice in favor of the foreign article on the part of both merchant and consumer. This had to be overcome by the manufacture of an equally good or better class of goods, at a cheaper rate if possible. These enterprising manufacturers undertook this difficult task. That they succeeded is evident from the fact that within a few years they secured a market for all the goods they could make, and a reputation for the quality of their goods that placed them on an equal footing in the market with the best foreign made of the same grade. In less than eight years from the start the demand for their threads exceeded their ability for manufacturing. This led to the purchase, on the 1st of December, 1843, of the mill privilege and buildings of the woolen-mills at Abbot Village.

These mills had been established in 1814 by the brothers Abel and Paschal Abbot. They at first built a wooden mill on the west side of the Shawshin, afterwards, as their business increased, adding other buildings. In these mills were manufactured flannel and cassimeres, and cotton and woolen yarns were spun for sale, and for the accommodation of farmers, who came from a considerable distance with their wool to have it spun for domestic uses. This enterprise was peculiarly unsuccessful, and, in the financial crisis of 1837, the Abbots were obliged to succumb.

Besides the business of the brothers Abbot in this village there was, on the east side of the river, a stone mill, in which the manufacture of flannels was commenced in 1824 and continued for some years by James Howarth's sons, under the firm-name of "John Howarth & Company." This company also failed in the financial crisis of 1837. The property of this company fell into the hands of Mr. Henry H. Stevens, of North Andover, and others, who carried on the woolen manufacture till 1843, when they also sold out their interest to Smith, Dove & Company.

The mills on both sides of the river were repaired and furnished with flax-spinning machinery, thus very essentially enlarging the producing capacity of the company. Still the demand for their goods kept pace with the production, and a lucrative business

was carried on for a series of years—John Smith having the general management of the mercantile and financial department, Peter Smith the superintendence of the mills and of the operatives, and Mr. Dove having charge of the machinery, looking not only to its running, but also to any improvement that would increase its efficiency.

In 1864 the firm underwent some modifications. A joint stock company was organized. The sons of the original proprietors—Joseph W., son of John Smith, James B., son of Peter Smith, George W. W., son of John Dove—and George H. Torr were taken into the company. From that time to this the business has been successfully prosecuted, necessitating the erection of new buildings, and in all directions an enlargement of their capacity for the production of goods.

Other mills producing the same class of goods have sprung up in the country, so that, of late years, the competition has been more sharp, thus demanding more close attention to all the minor details of the business and reducing to a degree its profits. It is still a profitable business as at present managed.

The original promoters and proprietors have all passed away, Mr. Dove dying first in 1876, Mr. Peter Smith in 1880 and Mr. John Smith in 1886.

The property is now owned and operated by the heirs of the above-named original proprietors. Joseph W. Smith is president of the company; James B. Smith, George W. W. Dove and George H. Torr are directors, and the latter is secretary, treasurer and general manager. Mr. Torr came into the employment of the firm in 1858, taking charge of its books, leaving for this position a situation he held with the Coheco Manufacturing Company, at Dover, N. H. On the resignation by Mr. Peter Smith of his position as treasurer and agent in 1876, Mr. Torr was chosen to fill his place, having, by eighteen years' service in the employment of the company, merited and secured their confidence in him as a man of the strictest integrity, of sagacity, of untiring industry and of good business ability. The business of the company under its present management is apparently prosperous. The help employed is of the best character. A strike or lock-out has never been known in its history. A large number of the employés are from Scotland, and make permanent and valuable citizens.

The original firm was rarely constituted. They were, in the first place, all of them, men who had been trained in the school of poverty—who knew what it was to struggle for their daily bread—men who had the daring to breast difficulties, dangers and fearful hardships—men whom no obstacles or failures could cast down or greatly discourage. Secondly, they were all men of great energy and native capacity for business. Though possessing but a meagre education from the schools, they had been taught in the weaver's room, in the wheelwright's shop, in their contacts with men, lessons in endurance, persistent



effort and sagacious conduct, which gave them a mental training and practical knowledge well calculated to fit them for their after-career. They were also men of tried and unimpeachable integrity, altogether trustworthy, and trusting implicitly each other. They were not only natives of the same city, but their general views of life, its moralities and duties, were much the same. They were alike religious, and acknowledged their obligation to serve God with their substance as with their speech. So harmonious were they in their opinions, judgments and sentiments as to business affairs, moral duties and religious obligations, that there never was any serious disagreement between them on any matter, and never an angry or harsh word passed from one to another during their long connection.

Their diversities of judgment but served to increase the sum total of their combined practical wisdom. While diverse in temper, they were united in conduct. So in agreement were they as to contribute jointly in their large donations to beneficent objects—such as Brechin Hall, the free schools in the city of Brechin and the Memorial Hall.

And further, each was especially adapted to fill that department of the work in which he engaged. Mr. John Smith was by nature a skillful financier, a far-seeing and sagacious manager of monetary affairs. Mr. Peter Smith had a talent for the management of men and the minute regulation of the internal affairs of a large industrial establishment. Mr. Dove had a genius for mechanics. To work amongst machinery, search out its defects, make improvements, invent new methods and combinations, and thus get the most possible out of a given plant, was his great delight. They were a cord of triple strands which, thus bound together, made a cable of rare strength. Such a combination is seldom seen, and, when seen, commands our admiration, and is sure of success.

**BALLARD VALE MANUFACTURING COMPANY.**—When the Ballard Vale Manufacturing Company was incorporated, in 1836, the village contained but a few scattered and cheap houses. Mr. John Marland was the enterprising manager and treasurer of the company. Some Boston gentlemen of wealth and a few citizens of Andover were associated with the Marland Brothers in this enterprise. The first business engaged in was the manufacture of flannels. This was profitable. But Mr. John Marland was not satisfied with this measure of prosperity. His ambition craved a larger business and a variety of production. He experimented a little in the manufacture of silk, and set the farmers to work in planting mulberry trees. He aimed not only to take the lead in the country in the manufacture of the finest flannels, but also in that of the choicest woolen fabrics of all kinds.

In 1843 he started the manufacture of delaines and stuff goods, and, for this purpose, imported from England the latest style of machinery adapted to it. His activity extended beyond the Vale. In other parts of

the country he superintended the erection of delaine mills, taking an interest in them. His ambition and enterprise went beyond the manufacture of textile fabrics to that of machinery. For this latter purpose he erected a large stone building at the Vale, in which he purposed to carry on the manufacture, not only of factory machinery, but that of locomotives and all other products of a like nature.

These extended and varied operations were beyond the financial ability of the company, and beyond the business ability of Mr. Marland as well. The company failed, the stockholders lost heavily and Mr. Marland's career as a manufacturer closed.

Mr. Marland was a man of boundless ambition, of large projects, of a sanguine temperament, of supreme confidence in himself, daring, but indiscreet. His attempts largely exceeded his means. He had the genius of an inventor. Could his ability as a manufacturer, his knowledge of the special business in which he at first engaged and his indomitable energy have been under the control of a cool head, steadied by practical wisdom, his success must have been phenomenal. Soon after his failure he went to England seeking to retrieve his fortunes, returning, however, the next year. Again, in 1858, he went to England, returning in 1861. But he was unable to secure the confidence of moneyed men so as to start up another business. He settled down in a modest, quiet but comfortable home in Andover for some years. But his restless mind sought occupation. He obtained an island on the coast of Maine upon which he engaged in farming. Here he lived two years industriously cultivating the soil. This labor was too arduous for him. He contracted a disease of the heart, and died April 16, 1865, aged sixty-two years and four months.

The flannel-mill, after the failure of the company, came into the hands of its treasurer, Mr. J. Putnam Bradlee, of Boston, who was a creditor of the company to a considerable amount. When he purchased the property he knew nothing about the manufacture of flannel, but at once applied himself to acquire the requisite knowledge. Concentrating his indomitable energy and masterly business tact upon the work, he was soon able to pay up the stockholders, whose stock he had purchased, from the profits of the mills. The flannels here manufactured have acquired a reputation for beauty and quality, in this and in foreign countries, second to that of no other establishment of the kind in the world. The business in the hands of Mr. Bradlee became very profitable, so that, at his death, he left an estate valued at over a million of dollars, most of which, at the decease of his surviving sister, is to be devoted to charitable purposes.

Mr. Bradlee not only profited himself by the running of these mills; he was also of great service to the village and to a large number of employes and their families. When other enterprises in the place failed, and loss and discouragement came to the people of the





village, when financial stress closed other similar establishments and their operatives were set adrift, his mills were kept in full operation and his employes paid their customary wages. By his death, which occurred in January, 1887, Ballard Vale met with a severe loss. There was sincere mourning among his work-people when the news of his decease was spread through the rooms of the factory.

Mr. Bradlee ever had the interests of his employes at heart, and did everything in his power to better their condition. The result is that Ballard Vale is considered one of the finest manufacturing villages in the State. Evening schools were established, a selected library of some two thousand volumes provided and a public hall and reading-room erected. A course of lectures and concerts was given every winter. All this was free to his employes. The churches in the village—three in number, Methodist, Congregational and Roman Catholic—have all been furnished and repaired at his expense.

Since his death the mills have been operated by his executors and trustees in accordance with the methods he had established.

**CRAIGHEAD AND KINTZ MANUFACTURING COMPANY.**—The stone building erected for a machine-shop by Mr. Marland was, for a time, used by a Boston corporation, called the Whipple File and Steel Company. This company, in the spirit of the original designer of its work-shop, laid out a large sum of money in buildings, machinery and improvements, and, for a time, carried on an extensive business in the manufacture of steel and files. After a few years, either from misfortune, mismanagement or the lack of business sagacity in its inception and conduct, the losses of the company were so great that they were forced to close up their shops. The extensive buildings remained for a number of years unoccupied—going to decay.

A new company, called the Craighead and Kintz Manufacturing Company, now occupies a portion of the file-shops. This company was started in 1883 for the manufacture of brass and bronze goods of a miscellaneous character. It is now in successful operation, employing some two hundred and eighty hands, much the larger portion of whom are men. Their products amount to about one hundred thousand dollars yearly.

A number of other manufacturing enterprises have been started at Ballard Vale, first and last, within the past thirty years, which have flourished for a brief period and then disappeared. The only business that has been carried on there successfully for a series of years has been that of the fine flannel-mill of Captain Bradlee. This has prospered and held on steadily in times of financial stringency, as well as in times of financial plethora. The whole outcome has been a large fortune, which Captain Bradlee has left mostly for charitable purposes, after the decease of his maiden sister.

**THE TYER RUBBER COMPANY.**—The Tyer Rubber Company was incorporated February, 1876. It manufactures rubber goods in what was formerly a shop of the Boston and Maine Railroad Company. Among the various articles manufactured by this corporation are to be found the diagonal rubber cloth used in the Congress Arctic over-shoe, and a line of goods in use for medical and surgical purposes. The company employs about fifty hands, mostly females.

The founder of this company, as the name indicates, was Mr. Henry George Tyer. Mr. Tyer was born in England in 1812. He came to this country in 1840. His first settlement here was in New Jersey, where he was connected with the rubber business. After remaining there for a time he removed to Andover, first establishing himself at Ballard Vale, but afterwards, in 1856, he took up his residence in the centre of the town, to which locality he removed his business. Since this removal the business has gradually increased till it has reached its present respectable amount.

Mr. Tyer was an inventor in the line of rubber and rubber goods. He discovered the method of producing white rubber, from which all the white rubber articles now manufactured are made. The full value of this discovery he did not at first appreciate, and consequently did not take the necessary steps to derive from it the remuneration to which he was reasonably entitled. The "Compo shoe" is an invention of his,—also the Arctic over-shoe and the diagonal rubber cloth. For these and other inventions he received letters patent, and from some of them derived a fair remuneration.

Mr. Tyer was a business man, confining himself largely to his calling, and, in his business relations and transactions, was strictly upright, straight-forward and reliable. By nature he was reticent, self-contained, and was seldom seen in the public gatherings of the people. He was courteous in manner, and had the bearing of a well-to-do Englishman, intent upon his own affairs. He was a warm adherent of the Episcopal Church, and, as an officer and communicant in Christ Church, did much to advance its interest and maintain its worship. He was a man of great energy and persistency of purpose, who saw things clearly and pursued the right, according to his judgment, with vigor. He was a firm believer in the Christian religion, and a devout worshipper of his God, after the customs of his fathers, and the mother church he so heartily revered and tenderly loved. He died at his residence in Andover on July 10, 1882, and was buried in the cemetery of Christ Church, in "consecrated ground," for which he had a reverential regard too seldom seen among our native inhabitants.

#### BANKS AND INSURANCE.

**THE ANDOVER NATIONAL BANK.**—This bank was originally chartered by the State Legislature, in 1826, under the name of the President, Directors and Com-





pany of the Andover Bank. The corporators were Samuel Farrar, Joseph Kittredge, Amos Abbot, Nathaniel Swift, Amos Spaulding, Henry Skinner, Francis Kidder, Hobart Clark and Mark Newman. April 3, 1826, Amos Blanchard was chosen cashier. October 3, 1826, Samuel Farrar was chosen president. The first semi-annual dividend of three and one-half per cent. was declared March 2, 1827. The same rate was continued till April, 1837, with the exception of one in April, 1832, of three per cent. After passing four dividends, they were resumed at the same rate and so continued till 1842. For the five succeeding years the average rate was two and seventy-two hundredths dollars. From this date till 1865 the rate of dividends varied from three and one-fourth dollars to three and eighty-three hundredths dollars.

In 1865 the bank was reorganized under the laws of the United States, and took the name of "The Andover National Bank." Since that it has paid four per cent. semi-annual dividends for five years, five per cent. for eight years, three and one-half per cent. for four years, and a trifle more than three for the remainder of the time till 1887.

The bank, like other national banks in the State, has paid the taxes assessed upon the shares of its stockholders, amounting in 1886 to over \$3980.

In 1843 Deacon Blanchard resigned his office of cashier, and was succeeded by Mr. Edward Taylor.

Deacon Taylor resigned in May, 1845, and was succeeded by Francis Cogswell, Esq.

Esquire Cogswell resigned in October, 1856, to take the office of president of the Boston and Maine Railroad, and was succeeded by Moses Foster, Esq., who has held the office continuously to the present time, twenty-one years.

Esquire Farrar held the office of president till October, 1856, thirty years, when he resigned, and John Flint, Esq., was chosen to fill the place.

Esquire Flint held the office till his decease, in June, 1873. Professor John L. Taylor was chosen to succeed Mr. Flint, and held the office till Jan., 1880.

Professor Taylor was succeeded by Deacon Edward Taylor, treasurer of Phillips Academy, who still holds the office.

All the presidents of the bank have been treasurers of Phillips Academy with the exception of Mr. Flint.

The present directors are Edward Taylor, George W. W. Dove, Moses T. Stevens, Joseph A. Smart, Joseph W. Smith, John H. Flint and John F. Kimball.

The bank has always been conservative in its management, running few risks, and hence incurring few losses.

**ANDOVER SAVINGS BANK.**—The Andover Savings Bank was incorporated in 1834. The first president of the bank was Deacon Amos Abbot, who was chosen February 9, 1835, and resigned January 1, 1845. His successor was Nathan W. Hazen, Esq., chosen January 1, 1845, and resigned January 1, 1852. Mr.

Samuel Gray was chosen January 1, 1852, and resigned January 1, 1861. His successor was Mr. Nathaniel Swift, who was chosen January 7, 1861, and resigned in 1878. Mr. John E. Abbot was chosen in 1879, and continued till his death, in 1881. Moses Foster, Esq., was chosen May 16, 1881, and is still in office.

The treasurers of the bank have been Mr. John Flint, chosen February 23, 1835, and resigned October 1, 1870; Mr. John F. Kimball, chosen September 15, 1870, and still continues in office.

The amount of deposits in 1886 was \$1,696,587. Profits on hand at that time, \$59,123. The guaranteed fund is \$55,000.

The bank, as will be seen, is in good financial standing, has uniformly been honestly and judiciously managed, and has paid fair dividends semi-annually to its depositors. By its regulations no one person can place on deposit to his own account more than five thousand dollars.

**MERRIMAC MUTUAL FIRE INSURANCE COMPANY.**—This company was incorporated by the General Court, February, 1828, for the limited term of twenty-eight years, the act of incorporation to take effect when subscribers for insurance should be obtained to the amount of \$100,000. This amount was speedily obtained, and in the month of April of the same year the company was organized, choosing for its first president Hobart Clark, Esq. Mr. Clark served till April, 1839, and was succeeded by Samuel Merrill, Esq., who served till the time of his death, in December, 1869, and was succeeded by Nathan W. Hazen, Esq., who served till January, 1875, and was succeeded by Mr. Samuel Gray, who served till November, 1880, and was succeeded by Mr. William S. Jenkins, the present president.

Samuel Phillips, Esq., was the first secretary. He served one year, and was succeeded by Samuel Merrill, Esq., who served till December 19, 1835, and was succeeded by Mr. Samuel Gray, who served till 1885, his successor being Mr. Joseph A. Smart, the present secretary.

This company has had its office in Andover from the first, though doing a large portion of its business in other towns and cities. Its executive officers have always been citizens of this town. Its business has been conducted in a careful and conservative manner, so as to secure the best results for its policy-holders. It avoids specially hazardous risks, and risks on property with an inflated valuation. The result of this policy has been that it has given eminent satisfaction to its membership, has steadily grown in strength and in favor in the community, and to-day stands among the most reliable and prosperous companies of its class in the commonwealth. In the year 1886 it divided sixty per cent. on its five year policies. It now has surplus assets for the payment of losses amounting to nearly \$300,000, with outstanding policies amounting to nearly \$20,000,—a steady but substantial growth.



ACKNOWLEDGMENT.—As the author of the preceding history was called so suddenly from his almost finished work, the duty of acknowledging assistance in its preparation devolves upon another. Thanks are here given to Professor Edwards A. Park, D.D., for his notices of Professors Pearson and Stuart, of Dr. Samuel Taylor and of the author; to Rev. William E. Park for his notice of Professor Edwards; also to various persons who have furnished material either by manuscript or funeral sermons to facilitate the writing of memorials of their deceased friends; and to others who have given verbal information as it was needed. Thanks are given also to the authors of the following works, to which recourse has been had: Abbot's "History of Andover," Miss Bailey's "Historical Sketches of Andover," Raymond's "Record of Andover in the Rebellion," Moor's "Manual of the South Church," Taylor's "Memoir of Judge Phillips" and Wood's "History of the Andover Theological Seminary."

If there is an omission to render thanks where thanks are due, it is hoped that the peculiar circumstances of the case will furnish a sufficient apology.

C. L. S.

## CHAPTER CXXXIX.

### NORTH ANDOVER.

BY GEORGE B. LORING.

*Ecclesiastical — Civil and Military — Education — Industries — Witchcraft — Associations.*

THE town of North Andover occupies that portion of the original town of Andover which lies northerly and easterly of a line running from the Shawshin River, at a point not far from where the Salem turnpike crosses it, in a southerly direction to the town-line of North Reading. By this line the town was divided in 1855, and the name of Andover was bestowed by the Legislature upon that portion of the territory lying southerly and westerly of this line, and formerly known as the South Parish. The North Parish, as it was called from 1709 to the date of the act dividing the town, became North Andover, and it is bounded on the northwest by the Shawshin and Merrimac Rivers, on the northeast by Bradford and Boxford, on the southwest by Andover and on the southeast by Middleton and North Reading. It contains about fifteen thousand four hundred acres, and constitutes a territory full of interest to the geologist and the agriculturist. Its rocky foundation belongs to the oldest periods of the world, "antedating by a vast period the strata of the White Mountains in New Hampshire," and it furnishes a field for most interesting speculation, wide, diverse and comprehensive, reaching to the more manifest geological arrangements of the glacial epoch, whose marks are visible every-

where throughout the town. The result of these earlier and later geological operations is a most fertile and beautiful tract of country, abounding in imposing lens-shaped hills, originally wooded to the summit, deep valleys of fine extent and sweep, all interspersed with lakelets and streams. It is seldom that a more interesting geological formation than this can be found; and nowhere, as the result of nature's handiwork, does a more lovely landscape appear—the view stretching from each one of these rounded elevations miles away to the Wachusett and Monadnock on the northwest, while, to the immediate gaze, the mysterious group stands around as fascinating monuments of an ancient age. The explanation which is given of these unusual hills is most interesting, and carries the mind back to the time when the great seas of ice covered this hemisphere, and left the record of their slow and steady march as a guide to man in his endeavors to unravel the mystery of the earth's formation and his own creation. However formed, they are really hills "in verdure clad," being immense mounds of fertile soil, composed of clay and sand, well watered from the far-off spring-heads which, at their origin, overtop them, and constituting, with the fertile valleys which lie between them, a most attractive and admirable tract of farming land, adapted to grass, and grain, and fruits, and gardens and pasturage. Standing upon the top of one of these "commanding hills," the observer may view a far-off western horizon whose sunsets vie with those for which Italy is famous,—a wide-spread landscape dotted with villages and towns, and interspersed with field and woodland, the long line of the Merrimac a flashing silver stream, the "Great Pond" a crowning gem and the sauntering Cochichewick, which finds its way slowly through reedy meadows before it steps down and at last plunges into the river, which bears its waters to the sea.

It was this territory of which, in 1634, by action of the court, "It is ordered that the land about Cochichewick shall be reserved for an inland plantation, and whosoever will go to inhabit there shall have three years' immunity from all taxes, levies, public charges and services whatever, military discipline only excepted." "John Winthrop, Richard Bellingham and William Coddington, Esquire, are chosen a committee to license any that may think meet to inhabit there, and that it shall be lawful for no person to go thither without their consent or the major part of them."

The land referred to in this order was purchased by Rev. John Woodbridge, of Newbury in 1641, after a long correspondence with Gov. Winthrop, and various demonstrations by the people of Ipswich, Newbury and Rowley, which seem to have resulted in a mere temporary occupation. There were acts of the General Court, but exactly to what they applied is not known. In 1646, however, the purchase and grants were confirmed by the court, and the





town was named Andover, "with reference to some of the planters who came from Andover in Hampshire, England." Upon this order the town began to take shape. The temporary settlers, who were few, gathered themselves together on the banks of the Cochichewick and in the region lying westerly and northwesterly from Wire Hill, a spot which for many years was occupied by the meeting-house and such other buildings as would constitute it the centre of the town. The oldest list of settlers, probably made before 1644, while the affairs of the settlement were somewhat unadjusted, gives the following names as original residents of the plantation of a permanent character :

John Osgood,	Henry Jacques.
Joseph Parker.	John Aslett.
Richard Barker.	Richard Blake.
John Stevens.	William Ballard.
Nicholas Holt.	John Lovejoy.
Benjamin Woodbridge.	Thomas Poor.
John Tye.	George Abbott.
Edmond Faulkner.	John Russ.
Robert Barnard.	Andrew Allen.
Daniel Poor.	Andrew Foster.
Nathan Parker.	Thomas Chandler.

These men received the titles of the lands they occupied from the town, the conveyance being made by a vote of the town, and all freeholders being considered proprietors and voters. The lands were divided into small lots,—ten acres for house lots; remote from these, tillage lots; wood-lots elsewhere; swamp and meadow-lands wherever they could be found. A large contiguous farm was unknown, and scattered lots are even now the order of the day.

Meanwhile records of private business transactions have been brought to light by the faithful chroniclers of the town. In 1643 William Hughes, of Ipswich, sells heifers, bulls, kine, calves, a house and a house-lot to Richard Barker, of Cochichewicke. "In 1650 a house and land and three cows in Andover are mortgaged by Job Tyler to John Godfrey, of Newbury." Mr. Simon Bradstreet sells a house lot and dwelling-house and fifty acres of land to Richard Sutton, many of whose descendants have had large interests in Andover, some of whom in this generation are engaged in most important transactions.

The following description of Andover is given by Captain Edward Johnson, of Woburn, in 1654:

"About this time there was a town founded about one or two miles distant from the place where the goodly river of Merrimack receives her branches into her own body, hard upon the river Shawshin, which is one of her chief heads; the honored Mr. Simon Bradstreet taking up his habitation there, hath been a great means to further the work, it being a place well fitted for the husbandman's hand, were it not that remoteness of the place from towns of trade bringeth forth some inconveniences upon the planters, who are enforced to carry their corn far to market. This town is called Andover, and hath good store of land improved for the bigness of it."

In discussing the foundation of a New England town, the peculiar and extraordinary nature of a civil organization of this kind should not be forgotten, especially by those who enjoy the high privileges which

belong to it. To many nationalities and peoples a town means nothing more than a cluster of houses surrounded by a wall and fortified, or the realm of a constable, or the seat of a church; but to New England the town was in the beginning, as it is now, the primary organization, sovereign in itself. "The colonists had no sooner formed a settlement and erected their cabins in proximity to each other than they organized themselves into a town—an independent nationality—in which every citizen had a voice and a vote." The first duty of these organizations in the minds of the fathers was the establishment of a church, and the erection of a meeting-house and a school-house received their earliest care and attention. It is remarkable and interesting to see how, in the little municipalities of New England, all the rights of citizenship were cherished, and how silently and unostentatiously all the elements of a free state were fixed and developed. Starting away from the original colonies, they planted themselves in the wilderness, and assumed at once the duty of independent organizations. Their citizens, in town-meeting assembled, had control of all matters relating to their civil and criminal jurisdiction. "In the New England colonies the towns were combined in counties long after their establishment and representation as towns; so that the county here was a collection of towns, rather than the town a sub-division of the county."

This system of town organization is maintained throughout New England to the present day, constituting one of the most interesting features of the civil polity of this section of our country. Says Palfrey in his "History of New England: "With something of the same propriety with which the nation may be said to be a confederacy of republics called States, each New England State may be described as a confederacy of minor republics called towns." Neither in New York with its great landed properties, at first held and occupied by a kind of feudal tenure, and afterwards with its counties; nor in the Western States, where the town survey carries with it no local political authority; nor in the South where the county organization is the one which governs local matters, can be found that form of self-government which gives to the New England towns their individuality and which has enabled them to enroll their names on the brightest pages of American history. How in the olden time they cherished the church and built the meeting-house; how they fostered education and erected the school-house; how they selected their wisest and bravest men for the public councils; how they resolved for freedom in open town-meeting; how they hurled defiance at the oppressor and sprang up, an army of defiant communities, each one feeling its responsibility and ready and anxious to assume it! To study the valor of the early days and learn where the leaders and statesmen were taught their lesson of independence and nationality, it is only necessary to



turn to the recorded resolves of the New England towns.

The motives and manners and customs of those who founded North Andover and its associate towns are interesting and important. They formed a part of that large body of dissenters who, under various names, came to New England and settled the colonies of Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay. They came, it is true, to enjoy religious freedom, but they also sought a civil organization, founded on the right of every man to a voice in the government under which he lives. In the charters granted to all the towns by the General Court, it was provided that the grantees were "to procure and maintain an able and orthodox minister amongst them," and to build a meeting-house within three years. This was their first motive. In all their customs they were obliged to exercise the utmost simplicity, and they voluntarily regulated their conduct by those formal rules which in their day constituted the Puritans' guide through the world. As an illustration of their character and manners, in 1651 dancing was forbidden at weddings by the laws of the colony.

In 1660 William Walker was imprisoned a month "for courting a maid without the leave of her parents." In 1675, because "there is manifest pride appearing in our streets," the wearing of "long hair or periwigs," and also "superstitious ribands," used to tie up and decorate the hair, were forbidden under severe penalties. Men, too, were forbidden to "keep Christmas," because it was a "Popish custom." In 1677 an act was passed to prevent "the profaneness" of "turning the back upon the public worship before it is finished and the blessing pronounced." Towns were directed to erect a cage near the meeting-house, and in this all offenders against the sanctity of the Sabbath were confined.

At the same time children were placed in a particular part of the meeting-house by themselves, and tithing-men were chosen, whose duty it was to take care of them. So strict were they in the observance of the Sabbath that John Atherton, a soldier in Colonel Tyng's regiment, was fined by him forty shillings for "wetting a piece of an old hat to put into his shoes," which chafed his feet upon the march; and those who neglected to attend meeting for three months were publicly whipped. Even in Harvard College students were whipped for grave offenses in the chapel in the presence of students and professors, and prayers were had before and after the infliction of the punishment.

The domestic economy of the early colonists was simple and, in many cases, rude; their dwellings were small, coarsely constructed and deficient in all those appointments which are now considered necessary to the health and comfort of the family; their diet was coarse and common. Palfrey tells us that "in the early days of New England wheaten bread was not so uncommon as it afterwards became," but

its place was largely supplied by preparations of Indian corn. A mixture of two parts of the meal of this grain with one part of rye has continued until far into the present century to furnish the bread of the great body of the people. In the beginning there was but a sparing consumption of butcher's meat. The multiplication of flocks for their wool and of herds for draught and for milk was an important care, and they generally bore a high money value. Game and fish, to a considerable extent, supplied the want of animal food. Next to these, swine and poultry, fowls—ducks, geese and turkeys—were in common use earlier than other kinds of flesh meat. The New Englander of the present time, who, in whatever rank of life, would be at a loss without his tea and coffee twice, at least, in every day, pities the hardships of his ancestors, who, almost universally, for a century and a half, made their morning and evening repast on boiled Indian meal and milk, or a porridge, or a broth made of peas and beans and flavored by being boiled with salted beef or pork. Beer, however, which was brewed in families, was accounted a necessary of life, and the orchards soon yielded a bountiful supply of cider. Wine and rum found a ready market as soon as they were brought from abroad; and tobacco and legislation had a long conflict, in which the latter at last gave way.

The people who lived in this fashion were generally very poor; the amount of money circulating among them was very small. They built with their own hands, and their trade was mainly barter. The commodities in which they dealt were fish, which was sent into France, Spain and the Straits; pipe-staves, masts, fir-boards, some pitch and tar, pork, beef and horses, which they sent to Virginia, Barbadoes, etc., and took tobacco and sugar for payment, which they often sent to England.

It was on the territory now inclosed in the boundary of North Andover that the farms were cultivated, and the dwellings erected, and the church built, and civil government organized, which constituted the ancient town of Andover; was named the North Parish by act of the Legislature in 1709, and was left in 1855 by the South Parish, which assumed the original name of the town. The locality of the settlement, and early history, remains, however, with its landmarks; and its events, which constitute the annals of Old Andover, are now in the keeping of North Andover.

The first practical business of the settlers of North Andover, as of all other New England towns, was the division of the lands around a central point into house-lots. These lots consisted of about eight acres, and were grouped together, probably for common defense. The isolation of the wilderness had few charms when the life therein was exposed to sudden surprises from Indian and wild beast. Each house-lot carried with it, however, larger tracts called farm lands, for ploughing, grazing, tillage and mowing.





The meeting-house formed, as it were, the centre of the group, near which was located the burying-ground, which often remains with all its significance, long after the house of God and the abodes of the living have disappeared. The locality of this primeval civilization of the town of North Andover is now marked by the old burying-ground, whose gravestones bear a date as early as 1672. On this point the accurate and accomplished author of "Historical Sketches of Andover" says:

"It is difficult to ascertain with certainty anything definite about the first house-lots and their occupants, who seem to have removed from place to place in the town. In 1658 Richard Sutton bought a house which had belonged to Mr. Bradstreet. The deed gives a clew to the residence of some of the other settlers. George Abbott, senior, had a house-lot on the north, and George Abbott, junior, (not the son, but a younger man, George Abbott, 'nabor,' or 'of Rowley,' as the Genealogical Register designates him), had the lot south. Robert Barnard's lot adjoined Mr. Bradstreet's, Mr. Dane lived near; John Stevens seems to have lived near the burying-ground to the east. Joseph Parker had his lot toward the Mill River, southeast of the meeting-house, bounded by the house-lot of Nicholas Holt and by Mr. Francis Lamikanen on the common. This was probably as late as 1670. Henry Ingals lived near the meeting-house, 1657. The Osgeed and Johnson lots were towards the Cochichewick and north of it. Richard Barker's was contiguous. It is a tradition that John Frye lived south of the Bradstreet house and the Poots near the Shawshon. Thus we learn that the first settlers, whose estates are now in the Southern and West Parishes of Andover, lived in the beginning in the north part of the town."

For many years there was a strong and persistent determination to retain the early system of land-holding, for the convenience and security it afforded. As late as 1660 the town forbade all citizens "to go out of the village to live," by the following order:

"Att a generall townmeeting March, 1660, the Towne taking into consideration the great damage that may come to the Towne by persons living remote from the Towne upon such lands as were given them for ploughing or planting and soe, by their hoggs & cattle, destroy the meadows adjoining therunto, have therefore ordered and doe hereby order that whosoever, inhabitant or other shall, build any dwelling-house in any part of the towne but upon such house lott or other place granted for that end without express leave from the town shall forfeit twenty shillings a month for the time he shall soe live in any such prohibited place, provided it is not intended to restrain any person from building any shed for himself or cattle that shall be necessary for the ploughing of his ground or hoeing of his corne, but to restrain only from their constant abode there, the towne having given house lotts to build on to all such as they regard as inhabitants of the towne."

The houses erected in the village were not distinguished for architectural beauty or for fine and costly furnishing. There was but little attractive furniture, and, with one or two exceptions, no plate or porcelain, no drapery, no fine linen. The domestic outfit was as simple as the dwelling itself. Pewter plates and wooden platters constituted a large part of the table furniture. Around the wide fire-place, capable of taking an eight-foot stick for a back-log, with a chimney corner into which the younger members of the family could gather and survey the stars above the chimney-top, sat the solemn fathers and mothers, warmed by the roaring blaze in front and protected from the cold of the open room by the high-backed settle, strengthened no doubt in mind and body by the frigid dignity of the scene. In the cold night air perhaps the ear was startled by the

wild cries of the tenants of the forest and by the creaking of the great branches tossed by the wintry blast; but the home was warmed by contrast; the dimly-lighted room was solemn with its shadows, and the faculties of the self-reliant family were strengthened by every circumstance around them. In winter's cold and summer's heat they had wild and untamed nature about them with all its ennobling influences; and these sons of a primitive civilization were filled with great courage and endurance by their life in the wilderness.

Of all the houses erected in that early day perhaps only one or two remain. The mansion built in or about 1667 by the Hon. Simon Bradstreet stands near the site of the first meeting-house, is hard by the old burying-ground, and undoubtedly formed a part of the cluster of houses which constituted the village which is now North Andover. Its history is most interesting. Here Anne Bradstreet found her home after the original house on this spot had been destroyed by fire; here she wrote her verse which has given her an immortal name in American literature; here lived Simon Bradstreet, the wise and good Governor during the most active years of his life; here lived Dudley Bradstreet, the honest magistrate, who resisted the witchcraft delusion and was obliged to flee before the wrath of a deluded people; here the murderous savage made his attack, to be disarmed by the memory of Christian acts of kindness bestowed upon the tribe by the same humane ruler; here resided for half a century the Rev. Wm. Symmes, the faithful and devoted pastor of the first church in Andover; here lived for a short season his pious and devoted young successor, the Rev. Bailey Loring. And entering upon the scene as the prince of classical teachers, and the autocrat of discipline, then appeared Mr. Simeon Putnam, to cast over the ancient dwelling an air of culture and careful scholarship which can never be forgotten by those who were subjected to its stimulating influences. And in more recent days it has been occupied by Mr. Otis Bailey, whose daughter, Sarah L. Bailey, has given to the public a most delightful and graphic history of the town—a model local sketch. This house still stands and is likely to stand a century longer, unless its huge and solid oaken timbers are violently destroyed, while everything about it decays and changes. Its contemporaries are all gone. But there have sprung up in the region about it many more modern companions, around which gather some of the noble incidents in the town's history. The Phillips mansion stands opposite, built in 1752 in the most approved style of that day, of which the Collins house, the Pickman house and the Cabot house in Salem are well-known and historic examples. It was built by the Hon. Samuel Phillips, distinguished in the Revolutionary period, Representative and Senator; was afterwards the residence of his son, the Hon. Samuel Phillips, Jr., who influenced his father to aid in founding





Phillips Academy; and at his death was inherited by his son, Col. John Phillips, who died at the age of forty-four and left a widow with thirteen children, who maintained the honor and dignity of the family and passed the venerable name on to the distinguished members of the present generation. Near by stands the Kittredge mansion, erected in 1784 by Dr. Thomas Kittredge, one of the ablest surgeons of the Revolutionary army, a public-spirited citizen, a capable and useful public officer—the ancestor of a line of surgeons and physicians who have done most important service in the community. In a secluded and shaded spot on the land north of Cochichewick Brook stands the old Osgood house, similar in structure to the Bradstreet house, and contemporaneous with it. The house of Col. John Osgood, the ancestor of many illustrious persons of that name, nearer the brook and on the border of the meadow, is the birth-place of Hon. Samuel Osgood, of Revolutionary and Constitutional fame,—a fine specimen of the architecture of that period. On an elevation to the northward of this house is the stately mansion built by Isaac Osgood, Esq., about 1798, for years the abode of great refinement and hospitality. On the same road, and on the old Johnson lot, “north of Cochichewick,” may be seen the house built by Captain Timothy Johnson in 1771, near the spot where Penelope Johnson was murdered by the Indians, 1798, recently the residence of the Rev. Samuel Johnson, the Oriental scholar and liberal divine. On an elevated site, southerly from the village stands the house of Colonel James Frye, once shaded by the elm which Chaplain Frye planted when he left to join Lovewell’s band on their way to Pequaket, in which engagement the chaplain lost his life. The house is now occupied by Mr. Nathaniel Peters. From these houses went out a brave and patriotic band of men, who, on all occasions, served their country well. The duty which their ancestors imposed upon them, when the goodly town was founded in the wilderness, was well performed. It would be difficult to find in any one neighborhood so large a number of controlling and guiding minds. Quincy had her Adams in Revolutionary days; Shrewsbury her Ward; Boston, the capital city of Massachusetts, her Samuel Adams, her Otis and Warren, and Quincy and Revere and Hancock; Salem her Timothy Pickering. North Andover sent from her farms and homes Osgood to the army and councils of the nation, Phillips to the halls of the State, Frye to the front of the fighting regiments, and scores of sons to the ranks. In field and in council the town appeared with strong influence, and with leaders who came from a community ready to support them in all deeds and words which redounded to the honor of the country.

The settlement at North Andover was fortunate in the direction it received from many of the early planters. Among them Simon Bradstreet undoubtedly stands foremost. Abbot says of him, he “was son of a non-conforming minister, and was born March,

1603, at Horblin, Lincolnshire. His father died when he was fourteen years old, and he was committed to the care of the Hon. Thomas Dudley for eight years following. He spent one year at Emanuel College, Cambridge, pursuing his studies amidst various interruptions. Leaving Cambridge, he resided in the family of the Earl of Lincoln, as his steward; and afterwards lived in the same capacity with the Countess of Warwick. Having married a daughter of Mr. Dudley, he, with Mr. Winthrop, Mr. Dudley and others, agreed to emigrate and form a settlement in Massachusetts; and being appointed as assistant, he, with his family and others, went aboard the “*Arbella*” on the 29th of March, 1630; anchored June 12th, near Naumkeag, now Salem; went on shore, but returned to the vessel at night; came on the 14th into the inner harbor and went on shore; on the 17th went to Massachusetts and returned the 19th. He attended the first court, the 23d of August, at Charlestown.

The adventurers had but little time to prepare for themselves temporary shelters for the winter, which set in about the 1st of December, and from Christmas to about the middle of February was very severe. It was with great difficulty that they could render themselves comfortable. Provisions were very scarce and extremely dear. Wheat meal was fourteen shillings sterling a bushel; peas, ten shillings; and Indian corn from Virginia, ten shillings. Many were exposed to cold, lying in tents and wretched cabins, and suffering much, being obliged to feed on clams and other shell fish; and, instead of bread, to eat acorns and ground-nuts. They had appointed a fast, the 22d of February; but on the 5th the ship “*Lyon*” arrived with provisions, which were distributed, and they turned the fast into a thanksgiving. Many died during the winter and spring.

In the spring of 1631, Mr. Bradstreet, with other gentlemen, commenced building at Newtown (now Cambridge) and his name is among those constituting the first company that settled in that town in 1632. He resided there several years. In 1639 the court granted him five hundred acres of land in Salem, in the next convenient place, near Mr. Endicott’s farm. It appears that he resided a short time at Ipswich.

Mr. Bradstreet was among the first settlers of North Andover, and was highly useful in promoting the settlement, in bearing the burdens incident to a new plantation and in giving a right direction to affairs. About the year 1644 he built the first mill on the Cochichewick. He was a selectman from the first record of town officers to 1672, soon after which he probably spent most his time in Boston and Salem.

He was the first secretary of the colony, and discharged the duties of the office many years. He was one of the first commissioners of the United Colonies in 1643, and served many years with fidelity and usefulness, in this office. In 1653 he, with his colleague, vigorously opposed making war on the Dutch in New York, and on the Indians; and it was



prevented by his steady and conscientious opposition and the decision of the General Court of Massachusetts, though earnestly and strenuously urged by all the commissioners of the other three colonies.

In 1662, in a time of great alarm and distress, he was sent agent with Mr. Norton to England to congratulate Charles II. on his restoration, and, if possible, to secure the privileges granted in the old charter. The mission was attended with more success than could have been expected, considering that the colonists were republicans in opinions, and strict Puritans, and had no respect for nobles and bishops. But many of the magistrates and people were dissatisfied, as they conceived the charter privileges were invaded. The agents fell under no small degree of resentment and public obloquy. Mr. Bradstreet, conscious of rectitude and feeling a cold indifference to the opinions and clamours of the multitude, continued to discharge the duties of his station.

He was Deputy-Governor from 1672 to 1679, when he was elected Governor, and continued in office till Mr. Joseph Dudley, his nephew, was appointed, in 1686, head of the administration, and the government was changed and the charter annulled. He was appointed counselor under Dudley, but declined.

Mr. Bradstreet was considered at the head of the moderate party, and, when the charter was demanded by King Charles, thought it better it should be surrendered than that it should be taken away by judgment, as in that case it might be more easily resumed. The King promised lenity on compliance, and threatened severity if the colony forced him to a judgment against the charter. He judged it wise and provident to save part of the privileges of the colony rather than lose the whole. It was, moreover, submitting to the necessity of the times, and to a power they were unable to resist. He was reproached for his pusillanimity, but his views were probably best for the country. The censure of the opposite party ought not to transmit reproach to posterity, or in the least to tarnish his character.

He strenuously opposed the arbitrary proceedings of Andross; and when, in 1689, the people put down his authority, they made their old Governor their President. He continued at the head of the administration till May, 1692, at the advanced age of eighty-nine years, when Sir William Phips arrived from England with the new charter, in which Sir William was appointed Governor and Mr. Bradstreet first assistant. He had been in service in the government sixty-two years, excepting the short administration of Dudley and Andross. No man in the country has continued in so high offices so many years and to so advanced an age. He was a popular magistrate, was opposed to the witchcraft delusion in 1692, which caused great alarm and distress at the commencement of Governor Phips' administration. He lived to be the Nestor of New England; all who came over from England with him died before him.

Mr. Bradstreet was not distinguished for splendid and powerful talents, but for those abilities and qualifications which rendered him eminently useful. He was upright in his principles, of sound judgment, strict integrity, persevering in business, and sought usefulness rather than popularity. He was not the most highly esteemed by any party, but was despised by none. He was one of the fathers of the Massachusetts colony, and contributed much to its establishment and prosperity. He was a man of fortitude and suffered, with the other early settlers, many privations and hardships, discouragements and disappointments. The first two or three years were very trying and afflicting. They were exposed to the severity of the climate, with poor accommodations, to scarcity of provisions and the necessities of life, and to sickness, which proved mortal to many of them.

The following inscription is on his monument erected in Salem:

"SIMON BRADSTREET.

"Armiger, ex ordine in Colonia Massachusettsensi ab anno 1630, usque ad annum 1673. Deinde ad annum 1679, Vice-Gubernator. Demumque ad annum 1686, ejusdem colonie, communi et constanti populi suffragio,

GUBERNATOR.

Vir, judicio Lynceario predictus; quem nec numma, nec honos allexit. Regis auctoritatem et populi libertatem aqua lance haurivit. Religiosa cordatus, vita innocens, mandum et viam et desertum 27 die Martii, A. D. 1697, annoque Gulielmi: 36, IX et Act. 91."

Mr. Bradstreet was married in England to Miss Ann Dudley, daughter of Mr. Thomas Dudley, when she was sixteen years old. She bore eight children, —four sons and four daughters,—and died in North Andover, September 16, 1672. She is the most distinguished of the early matrons of our country by her literary powers, of which proof is given in a volume of poems, the second edition of which was printed at Boston, 1678, by John Foster, in a respectable 12mo of 255 pp. It does honor to her education, by her frequent allusions to ancient literature and historical facts and to her character as a daughter, a wife, a parent and a Christian. This volume is a real curiosity, though no reader, free from partiality of friendship, might coincide in the commendation of the funeral eulogy of John Norton:

"Could Maro's muse but hear her lively strain,  
He would condemn his works to fire again.

\* \* \* \* \*

Her breast was a brave palace, a broad street  
Where all heroic, ample thoughts did meet,  
Where nature had such a tenement ta'en,  
That other souls to her's, dwell in a lane."

Dr. Mather, in his "Magnalia," gives high commendation of her, "whose poems, divers times printed, have afforded a grateful entertainment unto the ingenious, and a monument for her memory beyond the stateliest marbles."

Her poems were also highly praised by President Rogers, of Harvard College, who said that "twice drinking of the nectar of her lines," left him "weltering in delight." "Edward Phillips, the nephew of





Milton, speaks of her as the tenth muse sprung up in America."

"None of the descendants of Simon Bradstreet are now living in North Andover. He married for his second wife a sister of Sir George Downing, who was in the first class graduated at Harvard, and who was ambassador of Cromwell and Charles II. to Holland."

Some of the other prominent citizens of the town were John Osgood, of whose descendants, Isaac F. Osgood, (town-clerk and postmaster), T. Osgood Wardwell, Mrs. Charlotte (Osgood) Stevens, with her children and George B. Loring (2d) and John O. Loring, a son of I. Osgood Loring, are now residents; John Stevens whose descendants have been numerous and efficient; John Frye, ancestor of distinguished soldiers in the French and Revolutionary Wars; Daniel Poor, whose descendants have occupied important positions; William Johnson, Andrew Peters, and Ephraim Foster, all of whom have left an honorable record, which has been maintained by their descendants; Nicholas Holt, the ancestor of many influential and learned men; John Lovejoy, the great grandfather of Gen. Nathaniel Lovejoy, who was graduated at Harvard in 1766, and was a merchant in North Andover; Andrew Foster, the ancestor of Hon. Ephraim Foster, statesman and patriot in the Revolutionary period, and of the Hon. Dwight Foster, United States Senator; Joseph Parker, a miller on the Cochichewick, ancestor of many worthy citizens of the town.

**ECCLIASTICAL.**—Of all the obligations imposed by the General Court on the founders of the towns in New England, no one was considered more imperative and binding than that which required them "to provide and maintain an able and orthodox minister among them," and to build a meeting-house within three years. In obedience to this order, and in accordance with the pious impulses of a people impressed with the importance of freedom of conscience in matters of religion, the settlers around Cochichewick selected, soon after their arrival, a spot on which to erect their sacred edifice. The precise date of the erection is not known; but in 1669 a new meeting-house was constructed; and a house was destroyed, on which the following order has been issued:

"At a lawful town-meeting, the 3d of Feb'y, 1661, it is ordered 'that all first comers of inhabitants that have been at the charges of purchasing the plantation and building the minister's house, the mill and the meeting-house, For and in consideration thereof are allowed an acre and a half to every acre house-lot of Low and Swamp land, and every other inhabitant that have been at the charges of building the meeting-house and mill is to be allowed one acre to every house lot, and this land to be apportioned to the lots.'"

It is evident, therefore, that soon after 1646 the first house was built, and there is every reason to believe that it stood near the "Old North Burying-ground," and on the high land opposite the house of Governor Bradstreet. Its successor stood probably on the same spot and was evidently a commodious

building, furnished with a bell which was used until 1755; was protected by legislation against "doggs"; was provided with a sexton to sweep it and ring the bell, and was "seated" by a committee appointed to select the pews for the worshippers according to their position in society and the church. The selectmen undertook to keep the boys quiet in the galleries during divine service, and to stop their "prophanenes of y<sup>e</sup> Sabbath" in front of the church at noon-time.

Sabbath-breakers were punished severely under special laws, by being confined in a cage; they were reproved publicly by the minister, and heavily fined.

This second meeting-house stood until 1711. A new one was then erected, which stood until 1753, when in June of that year a meeting-house was raised; 300 pounds sterling were voted for its construction, and January 1, 1754, pews were sold for £667 15s. 8d.; the highest pew at £17 0s. 8d.; the lowest at £6 13s. 4d.

The first of the ministers engaged in conducting public worship in these meeting-houses, whose existence covered the first century of the town, was John Woodbridge. He came early to the town and took part in a conference of messengers of churches, which met in September, 1641, and appointed two churches to be gathered, one at Haverhill, the other at Andover, both on the Merrimac River. At this meeting, which was held in Rowley on account of the inability of the two towns mentioned to entertain the assembly, "most of those who were to join together in church-fellowship at that time refused to make confession of their faith and repentance, because, as was said, they declared it openly before in other churches upon their admission into them." This assembly broke up, but was called together again in 1645, when the difficulty was settled, and Mr. John Ward was ordained pastor of the church at Haverhill, on the north side of the Merrimac, and Mr. John Woodbridge was ordained pastor of the church of Andover, on the south side of the same. These two churches were the twenty-third and twenty-fourth organized in Massachusetts.

Ten male members, including the pastor, composed the church gathered at that time, viz.: Mr. John Woodbridge, teacher; John Osgood, Robert Barnard, John Frye, Nicholas Holt, Richard Barker, Joseph Parker, Nathan Parker, Richard Blake, Edmond Faulkner.

The Rev. John Woodbridge was a most extraordinary character. He was instrumental in purchasing the Andover plantation from Cutshamache. He came to this country in 1634, took up lands in Newbury and soon became one of the most active and useful members of the colony. He was master of the Boston Latin School at the time he came to North Andover, having turned his attention to the ministry as a means of advancement. He was, alternately, deputy to the General Court, justice of the peace, religious teacher, schoolmaster, Indian trader and, in England, chaplain of the commissioners who treated with the



banished monarch, Charles I. Having lost his living for non-conformity in England, he returned to New England, took up his abode again in Newbury, where he became assistant in the ministry of his uncle, magistrate and justice of the peace. He inclined somewhat to the English Church, so far as the powers and prerogatives of the minister were concerned. He died in 1695, at the age of eighty-two, leaving "three sons with two sons-in-law improved in the ministry of the Gospel, and four grandsons happily advanced thereto."

Cotton Mather, in his biographical sketches of the "young scholars, whose education for their designed ministry not being finished, yet came over from England with their friends, and had their education perfected in the country, before the college was come into maturity enough to bestow its laurels," says of Mr. Woodbridge:

"But he that brings up the Rear is Mr. John Woodbridge, of whom we are able to speak a little more particularly. He was born at Stanton, in Highworth, in Wiltshire, about the year 1613, of which Parish his father was minister, and a minister so blest and Faithful as to obtain an high esteem among those that knew at all the invaluable worth of such a minister. His mother was daughter of Mr. Robert Parker, and a daughter who did so virtuously that her own personal character would have made her highly esteemed if a Relation to such a Father had not further added to the lustre of her character.

"Our John was, by his worthy parents, trained up in the way that he should go, and sent into *Oxford*, where his education and Proficiency at school had ripened him for the University, and kept at Oxford until the Oath of Conformity came to be required of him, which neither his father nor his conscience approving, he removed from thence unto a course of more *Private Studies*. The vigorous enforcing of the unhappy ceremonies there causing many that understood and regarded the Second Commandment in the Laws of Heaven, to seek a peaceful recess for the pure worship of the Lord Jesus Christ in an *American Desert*, our young Woodbridge, with the consent of his parents undertook a voyage to New England about the year 1641, and the company and assistance of his worthy uncle, Mr. Thomas Parker, was not the least encouragement of the voyage. He had not been long in the country before Newberry began to be planted, when he accordingly took up lands and so seated himself that he Comfortably and Industiously Studied on, until the advice of his father's death obliged him to return to England, where, having settled his affairs, he returned again into New England, bringing with him his two brothers, whereof one died on the way. He had married the daughter of the Honble Thomas Dudley, Esq., and the town of Andover then first peeping into the world, he was, by the hands of Mr. Wilson and Mr. Worcester, September 16, 1641, ordained the teacher of a Congregation there. Here, he continued with great Reputation, discharging the duties of the ministry until, upon the invitation of friends, he returned once more to England."

The Rev. Francis Dane succeeded Mr. Woodbridge. The time of his ordination is unknown, but it was about the year 1648. He was a resident of Ipswich in 1641, and according to Felt "he removed to Andover in 1648." He was not graduated at either of the universities in England, but finished his studies in this country at "the college," before degrees were conferred. He left no autobiography, nor was any sketch of his life or of his pastorate written and published, although he was pastor of an important parish forty-eight years, and was intimately connected with some interesting proceedings of the colony. A record of his creed, which he left written out in a note-book, shows him to have been inclined to liberal views,

although accepting the doctrines which prevailed generally among the Puritans. His mind and heart were evidently in sympathy with all Christians of whatsoever denomination and with the universal church of Christ. It is not known that he had any part in the severity of the theological hierarchy which ruled New England, especially during the years of his ministry; and there is no reason to suppose that he had any controversy with them. He was evidently inclined to peace in his parish, and was not ambitious to be conspicuous in the controversies of his time or active in the organization of the colony. A difficulty which arose between himself and his church regarding the continuance of his salary when the infirmities of years rendered it necessary to furnish him assistance in the pulpit, either by colleague or associate, was amicably settled by the General Court, on terms satisfactory to all parties; and the peace of the parish remained unbroken. By this step the church was saved from the painful consciousness of having neglected a faithful pastor, who had shared their joys and sorrows during the life of more than a generation—and the pastor was supported in his infirmities by the assurance that the tender relations which had been established between himself and his people were not ungratefully forgotten.

Mr. Dane and his colleague labored together sixteen years for the edification of a united people and for their mutual benefit and happiness. He was a man of good judgment, practical wisdom and courage. In his old age he defied the madness of the witchcraft delusion, even when his own life was in danger and many members of his own family were under arrest, bore all his trials with Christian fortitude and resignation, and died, patiently submissive to the Lord's will, February 17, 1697, aged eighty-one years, "having been an officer in the church at North Andover forty-eight years."

The Rev. Thomas Barnard was the colleague of Mr. Dane and his successor in the pulpit at North Andover. He was a son of Francis Barnard, of Hadley; was graduated at Harvard 1679, and was the founder of an illustrious line of clergymen,—his son, John Barnard, who succeeded him as pastor of the First Church in North Andover; his grandsons, Rev. Thomas Barnard, of the First Church in Salem, and the Rev. Edward Barnard, of Haverhill; and his great-grandson, the Rev. Thomas Barnard, Jr., who in 1772 was ordained first pastor of the North Church in Salem. On the death of Mr. Dane, he became sole pastor of the church, and seems to have infused new life into his parish. The parsonage-house was improved; a new meeting-house was built; the territory was set off by the General Court into the North Parish, and Mr. Barnard was allowed to make choice of the parish over which he was to act as minister. He had his trials also. The division of the town gave rise to difficulties not easily removed. The South Parish had built their meeting-house, and still Mr.





Barnard was undecided which precinct to choose, and did not decide until the General Court compelled him, and the South Parish decided that "Mr. Samuel Phillips shall be our pastor." Mr. Barnard by this act lost many valuable parishioners and members of the church, and he complained to the General Court that "the north part of the town, that was the first settlement, are dissatisfied that they are made the lesser part"—a complaint which was renewed a century and a half later, when the town was divided. The erection of the new meeting-house followed the division, and it was a commodious building, suited to a devoted and growing parish. "During the long and warm altercation, Mr. Barnard conducted with such prudence and affectionate fidelity as to retain the esteem and confidence of all his people." He was always on terms of warm friendship with Mr. Phillips, of the South Parish, who said of him in public:

"I have always esteemed it a favor of Providence that my lot was cast in the same town with that holy man of God, who was pleased to express the fatherhood of a Father to me, and where I had for some years the advantage of his guidance and example. He was really one of the best of ministers. Had the tongue of the learned, was a sound & current divine, delivered excellent sermons, and had the spirit as well as the gift of prayer, was gentle as a father, yet maintaining government & discipline in the church very obliging toward all men, and always studied the things that make for peace."

At his death the parish set apart a day of "fasting and prayer to all-mighty God that the Lat & awfull Stroke in taking away the Reverend Pastur by so sudden a death be sanctified to His Flock left destitute of a Preacher." The funeral expenses were liberally paid by the parish, and a simple upright gravestone marks the spot where he was buried.

Mr. Barnard married, December, 1686, Elizabeth Price, who died October, 1692; for a second wife, May, 1696, Abigail Bull, who died August, 1702. He was married to his third wife, Lydia Goffe, August, 1704. Thomas, his oldest son, born October, 1688, died before his father, without issue. John, born March, 1690, was graduated at Harvard, 1709, ordained minister of Andover North Parish April, 1719, died June 14, 1757. Theodore, his youngest son, born February, 1692, died February, 1724, aged thirty-two years, leaving three children—Elizabeth, Theodore and Hannah. Elizabeth was the wife of the Hon. S. Phillips, and mother of the late Lieutenant-Governor S. Phillips.

Rev. John Barnard, son of the Rev. Thomas Barnard, was graduated at Harvard 1709, and was invited as successor to his father December 16, 1718, only two months after the death of the latter. He began to preach as settled minister in January, 1719, and was ordained the 8th of April following. Prior to his ministry he had taught school in Andover and in the North Grammar School, Boston.

The history of Mr. Barnard's ministry has been carefully written by both of the able and excellent annalists of Andover. He is represented by them as a man of piety, gentleness and pleasantry, of faithfulness in the discharge of his ministerial duties,

highly respected as a preacher, and possessed of a sound understanding, benevolence and urbanity.

"His ministry," says Miss Bailey,

"was a period of stirring events in the religious world and in the provincial history, and yet this would not appear from the church and parish records. Then, notwithstanding the prominent part of members of the parish in the Indian and French Wars, and the connection of the pastor with the controversy in regard to the Rev. George Whitefield and the Great Awakening, nothing more exciting appears on the record than building and seating the meeting-house, buying silver for the communion service and stock and bell for the meeting house. Mr. Barnard was not in sympathy with Mr. Whitefield. He did not believe in itinerancy, he was no enthusiast, but had a supreme regard for propriety. He was himself regarded by some of the clergy as belonging to the party of doubtful orthodoxy. But, whatever his theology, he disapproved the fanaticism, as he thought it, and abhorred what he regarded as the irreverence and impiety of the great evangelist, who denounced the dignitaries of the commonwealth, and hurled anathemas at the ancient and venerable seats of learning, Harvard College and her younger, but also honored sister, Yale College. Nor could Mr. Barnard, like some of his brother ministers, overlook the evil and find the good in the movement. His name, therefore, heads the list of one of the two neighboring associations of ministers in the county who addressed a letter to the Associated Ministers of Boston and Charlestown remonstrating on the admission of Mr. Whitefield into their pulpits.

"The North Church prospered under Mr. Barnard's hands. Five hundred new members were added and there were twelve hundred baptisms during his ministry.

"In 1753 the North Parish built another new meeting-house. Pewers sold, Jan. 1, 1754, for £367 4s 8d. Silver was procured for the communion service, and the pewter plate formerly used was given to the church in Methuen. . . .

"The silver service is massive and elegant. It consists of eleven tankards with covers and two flagons. The oldest tankard was given by Mrs. Sarah Martyn, of Boston, 1724. The others were the gifts respectively of Benjamin Stevens, Esq., 1728; Mrs. Mary Ashby, 1750; Ebenezer Osgood, 1751; Peter Osgood, 1754, in fulfillment of the desire of his grandfather, Timothy Osgood, widow Elizabeth Abbot, 1756; Capt. Timothy Johnson, 1761; there are three inscribed 'For the use of the First Church of Christ in Andover, A. D., 1725, one 1729.' The two flagons were given, one by Benjamin Barker, 1755, the other in 1761, by Capt. Peter Osgood."

The discipline of the church members, during Mr. Barnard's ministry, was such as is usually found in the records of the New England parishes, and indicated a determination to expose and punish those demoralizing habits which were too common in our colonial period.

Mr. Barnard was married, 1725, to Miss Sarah Osgood, a daughter of Deacon John Osgood, who died 1765, aged eighty-three. His son, the Rev. Thomas Barnard, was settled in Newbury, 1740, and in 1755 over the First Church in Salem. His son Edmund was settled in Haverhill. Mr. Barnard died suddenly, June 14, 1757, aged sixty-seven years, and after a ministry of thirty-eight years. He was sincerely mourned by his people, and the best minds of the community hastened to pay tribute to his memory.

The printed discourses of Mr. Barnard were, one on the death of Mr. Abiel Abbot; one at the ordination of the Rev. Timothy Walder, of Concord, N. H., and an election sermon, 1746.

The faith which had prevailed thus far in the First Church of Andover was that brought over by the Puritans and preserved by them with great care. They believed that all men are, by nature, destitute of true piety; that they naturally grow up in the practice of sin; and that no one becomes religious except by a change in his habits of thought, feeling and conduct, which they ascribed to the special operation of the Holy Spirit as a supernatural cause.





They believed that the truly pious are ordinarily conscious of this change in the action of their own minds when it takes place, and are able to describe it, though they may not then know that the change of which they are conscious is regeneration.

The creed adopted by the Theological Institution organized in 1808, in the South Parish of Andover, is perhaps the most perfect embodiment of the Puritan religious belief; viz,—

"We believe in the existence of one true God, Father, Son and Holy Ghost; that the Scriptures of the Old and New Testament were given by divine inspiration, and contain the only perfect rule of faith and practice; in the fall of man and in his entire moral depravity; the necessity of an atonement and of our being renewed in the spirit of our minds; the doctrine of repentance toward God and of faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ; sanctification by the Holy Spirit, of justification by the free grace of God through the redemption that is in Jesus Christ; in the doctrine of a general resurrection and future judgment; in the everlasting blessedness of the righteous and the endless punishment of the finally impenitent, and generally in the principles of religion contained in the Assembly's Shorter Catechism."

In all the revivals which took place in the colony, especially in that of 1740, in which Whitfield took an active and powerful part, it was held that every man is born in sin, and, unless some evidence appears to the contrary, is to be esteemed an heir to perdition, and that regeneration is a change accompanied with evidence by which it may be proved.

A growing uneasiness under these doctrines became manifest about the middle of the last century, and throughout New England there was an inclination to adopt the views of Arminius, that God had resolved from eternity on the salvation and damnation of men dependent on man's belief or unbelief, by which he would be saved or damned; that Christ died for all men, but nobody could partake of his salvation except he believe, and that man must be born again of God in Christ through the Holy Ghost to be saved, that nobody can without the grace of God think, will or do anything good, because all our good works have their origin in God's grace; that the faithful can struggle against Satan successfully by the assistance of the Holy Ghost.

It will be remembered that the Rev. Francis Dane, in a creed of his own composition, manifested considerable moderation in doctrine, and that his orthodoxy was somewhat questioned. Through the minds of his successors this liberality evidently ran, and although the fraternity of the churches was maintained, there was evidently a dividing sentiment growing up between them. On the death of the Rev. John Barnard the tendency of the First Church in Andover to liberal views was shown by the settlement of the Rev. William Symmes over the bereaved parish. Dr. Symmes, as he is usually called (having received the degree of D.D. from Harvard), was born in Charlestown, was graduated at Harvard in 1659, began to preach in North Andover soon after the decease of Mr. Barnard, and was on the 5th of December, 1757, invited to settle over the parish. On account of sickness his ordination was postponed until November 1, 1758.

Dr. Symmes held a high rank among the clergy of his day. He came to North Andover with a good reputation as a scholar and a learned divine. He had enjoyed the social opportunities of Boston and Charlestown in his youth, and had been a tutor at Harvard for three years, from 1755 to 1758. He possessed great intellectual delicacy and a nature responsive to all good thoughts and noble emotions. As a writer he was one of the purest of his day. His sermons were carefully prepared, methodical in their arrangement and conclusive in their reasoning. He delivered them in a calm and dignified manner, without the grace or fervor of oratory, but in a way calculated to arrest the attention of the thoughtful and to carry conviction to the cultivated mind. He may have been deficient in worldly wisdom and exposed at times to the designs of the selfish and unprincipled; but his piety, sincerity and devotion to his calling were never questioned, and in times of great civil, social and financial trial he bore himself with great calmness and submission, and retained his commanding influence among his people. His views of domestic discipline were somewhat severe; but he was a kind and indulgent parent, ready at all times to sacrifice himself for the good of his children. He was quick and at times irritable; but he usually held himself in perfect control. His church was harmonious, and sectarian disputes were unknown in his parish. He was prudent and economical in his affairs, and was so careful in his expenditures that when the parish voted to raise £1940 to pay the deficiency in his salary since the depreciation of paper money during the Revolutionary War, he relinquished one thousand dollars of the sum so generously and thoughtfully bestowed. During his ministry the French War was raging; the Revolutionary War, with all its preliminary troubles, was carried on to its glorious, but exhausted conclusion; the disturbances of the French Revolution reached our infant State and society, and disorder reigned throughout the civilized world. But through all Dr. Symmes accommodated himself to circumstances, took a wise and judicious survey of passing events, and preserved the good order and unanimity of his parish.

Dr. Symmes, in his views of the Calvinistic school, went beyond his predecessors. Dr. Abbot says of him: "In opinions he accorded rather with Arminius than with Calvin; and with Arius rather than Athanasius." True, he exchanged pulpits with the Rev. Mr. French, of the South Parish, but they differed widely in their views, and that divergence began which early in the ministry of his successor resulted in a complete separation and non-intercourse. At his death his church was already classed with the Unitarian organizations of New England, and from that time has been united with that denomination.

The manuscripts of Dr. Symmes were destroyed at his death, in accordance with his own instructions, and a valuable mass of information on local affairs



was lost. His printed publications were a Lecture on Psalmody; a Thanksgiving Sermon, 1768; Sermon at the General Election, 1785.

Dr. Symmes married, in 1759, Anna, daughter of the Rev. Joshua Gee, of Boston; she died in 1772. They had five sons and four daughters, all of whom, except Daniel and Mrs. Cazeneau, died before him. William, a counselor-at-law, died in Portland, January, 1807, in the forty-sixth year of his age, not having been married; Daniel, born October, 1764, went to the southward; Joshua Gee, a physician, died at sea; Elizabeth, died August, 1784, aged nineteen years; Theodore, a physician, settled in Falmouth, died at New Gloucester.

Anna married Mr. Isaac Cazeneau, lived in the homestead for many years, removed to Boston about 1836, where she died in 1849. Converse died young. Lydia and Charlotte were twins, and died in infancy, December 30, 1771.

His second wife was Miss Susannah Powell, who died July, 1807, aged seventy-nine.

Dr. Symmes died May 3, 1807.

The parish, after having a number of candidates for the ministry, united July 10, 1810, in calling the Rev. Bailey Loring, of Duxbury, to settle in the Gospel ministry. The ordination was on the 19th of September, 1810.

It is a curious and interesting fact that the church covenant that had been in use previously to this time could not be found when Mr. Loring entered upon his ministry. The church, however, soon adopted the following:

"You profess to believe in one God the Father—maker of all things—and in Jesus Christ his Son, the Messiah and Saviour of men, the only Mediator between God and men, and in the Holy Spirit which bears testimony to the truth and contains the Faith of Christians. You receive the Holy Scriptures of the Old and New Testament, as being profitable for doctrine, reproof, correction and instruction in righteousness; and through Faith in Christ, sufficient to make men wise unto salvation. You profess to embrace all past times and a full purpose of heart to forsake every evil and false way and to cleave to that which is good. You do now publicly covenant with God that you will bear in mind and obey the Ten Commandments—that fleeing sinful lusts, you will follow after righteousnes, purity and peace—that you will not forsake the assembling of yourselves with the people of God for public worship, but make it your constant study to work in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blamelessly—and that walking in concordance with this church, you will submit to its watchful care and discipline, praying for its edification and the prosperity of Zion.

In 1817 the parish purchased land of Jonathan Stevens for a burying-ground, on the high land north of and near the church. In 1822 stoves were introduced into the meeting-house. In 1825 the training-field north of Dr. Kittredge's house, and near the spot where the first meeting-house stood, was exchanged for four acres in front of the meeting-house, to be opened for a common.

"In 1834 a few members of the First Church withdrew, and uniting with Free Church members from the South Church, formed the Evangelical Church in North Andover, and established religious worship in a meeting-house which had been built by subscriptions of the Evangelical Churches of Essex County."

In the same year the First Church and Parish decided to build a new meeting-house in place of the structure erected in 1753, and voted to appropriate

seven thousand dollars to build. The house was dedicated June 1, 1835. The cost of the building was eleven thousand five hundred dollars; and it stands near the site of the old one. The old clock and bell were preserved. Into this meeting-house an organ was introduced in 1844—and the clarinet and bassoon and violin and bass-viol of the old orchestra were heard no more. Dr. Rufus Wyman was thanked by the society for the "gift of a very elegant Bible for the pulpit of the new meeting-house."

An extended biographical sketch of Mr. Loring will be found toward the close of this history of the town.

The seventh minister was the Rev. Francis Williams. He was ordained February 27, 1850, and continued in office to May 27, 1856. He resigned to accept a call to Brattleborough, Vt. He left many warm friends in the parish.

The eighth minister was the Rev. Charles C. Vinal, ordained May 6, 1857. He continued in office thirteen years, to March, 1870. During his pastorate a parsonage was built, the parish having received for that purpose a testamentary bequest of six thousand dollars, from the late Hon. William Johnson. Mr. Vinal, in 1870, accepted a call to the Unitarian Church in Kennebunk, Maine, where he is now the pastor. His resignation was received with regret and he is kindly remembered in the parish.

The parsonage was destroyed by fire while it was unoccupied in 1870, and the parish library, the gift of the Rev. Mr. Loring, and the later church records were burned. The new parsonage was built in 1871.

The ninth and present pastor, the Rev. John H. Clifford, was ordained August 29, 1871. He and the two preceding pastors were graduates of the Cambridge Divinity school.

The deacons of the First Church during the one hundred and eighty-nine years in which it was the only church in North Andover, and who sat in a special seat in front of the pulpit, were the following: John Frye, John Barker, 1693; Joseph Stevens, 1694; John Osgood, 1719; John Farnum, 1727; Samuel Barker, 1736; Samuel Phillips, 1748; Joseph Osgood, 1763; Joseph Barker, 1766; Benjamin Farnum, 1790; John Adams, 1797; George Osgood, 1797; Joshua Wilson, 1813; Jedediah Farnum, 1824; William Frost, 1824.

The Evangelical Church of North Andover, 1834, was the next religious organization made in the old town. The establishment of the Theological Seminary had tended to bring questions of creed more prominently before the churches, and to emphasize the importance of doctrinal distinctions. The churches and individuals came more and more to consider it a duty to define their position and to range themselves conspicuously on one side or the other of the denominational lines, which, about the beginning of the present century, began to be closely drawn. The questions which finally ended in the division of the Congregational body into Unitarian and Trinitarian





were discussed with more earnestness and acrimony. The North Church, from the beginning, had been more Arminian than Calvinist, in tendency, although its pastors had associated in cordial fellowship with their brother clergy of the Calvinistic creed, and even in later times the names of Dr. Symmes and Mr. Loring were on the "Andover Association" (now of Calvinistic and Trinitarian Congregational order). But a strong feeling had grown up in the town that the First Church was not of the true faith, or supporting an Evangelical ministry, and that another church ought to be organized in the North Parish for the accommodation of individuals of the First Church who were not in sympathy with its prevailing tone, and for persons of Calvinistic faith, who had become residents of the parish, but had not removed their connection from the churches in the respective towns of their former residence.

The South and West Churches and the Church of the Theological Seminary favored this movement, and aid was pledged by the Home Missionary Society. Subscriptions were obtained among the churches of the county and a meeting-house was erected in North Andover, a little east of the North meeting-house. The house of worship was dedicated September 4, 1834, and on the same day the Evangelical Church was organized. It consisted of thirty-one members; seven of whom were from the First Church, fourteen from the South Parish. The others were from churches in various towns, but probably nearly all residents of North Andover.

The church was supplied with preachers for some months by the neighboring churches. In 1835, September 9th, the first minister was settled—the Rev. Jesse Page.

In 1865 the original house of worship at the centre of the town was abandoned, and a new and commodious church edifice was built in the Machine-shop Village.

The names of the ministers are as follows: Rev. Jesse Page, graduate of Dartmouth College 1831, of Andover Theological Seminary 1835; Rev. William T. Briggs, graduate of Oberlin Institute 1841, ordained in North Andover November 4, 1846; Rev. Levi H. Cobb, graduate of Dartmouth College 1854, Andover Theological Seminary 1857, ordained at North Andover October 28, 1857; Rev. Benjamin F. Hamilton, graduate of Amherst College 1861, Andover Theological Seminary 1864, ordained at North Andover June 28, 1865; Rev. Rufus C. Flagg, graduate of Middlebury College, Vt., installed at North Andover September 26, 1872; Rev. George Pierce, graduate of Dartmouth College 1863, installed at North Andover October 16, 1878.

The following churches have been organized in North Andover in addition to those already mentioned: Methodist Episcopal Church, 1845; Roman Catholic Church, 1868; Protestant Episcopal Church, 1880.

**CIVIL AND MILITARY.**—The civil and military movements of North Andover are for a long series of years so intimately connected with the entire town, as originally founded, that it is difficult to deal with either precinct or parish separately. The events, however, which occurred on the territory of North Andover, and the persons who took an active part in them may with propriety be referred to in this sketch.

The first town-meeting, according to the records, was held in 1656 at the house of John Osgood. The freeholders were expected to attend these meetings and were fined for absence. Perfect order was preserved in these assemblies; and it was ordered that if any man speak in town-meeting after silence commanded twice by the moderator, he shall forfeit twelve pence. Care was taken that the metes and bounds of the various estates should be preserved accurately by inspection every three years. The discipline with regard to seats in the meeting-house was severe. Young persons were not allowed abroad on Saturday or Sunday nights, and no entertainments could be given after nine o'clock. The settlement of mechanics and tradesmen was especially encouraged; and the building of mills was favored greatly. In 1686 Henry Ingalls was allowed to set up a saw-mill on Musketoe River; and in 1695 Samuel Osgood, John Abbot, Sr., Joseph and Henry Chandler, had liberty granted them to erect a saw-mill on Cochichewick Brook two or three rods above the lower ford way, probably near the site of the North Andover Woolen Mills.

An act was passed June, 1801, by the General Court requiring the treasurer of the proprietors of Andover to pay over one-half of all the moneys and estate which was or may hereafter be in his hands as treasurer unto the trustees of the Free School in the North Parish in Andover for instruction in the school.

In 1765 it was voted that:

"Whereas, sundry of the inhabitants of the town are threatened with injuries and losses from riotous assemblies said town unanimously voted their utter abhorrence of all such violent and extraordinary proceedings; and that the election, the militia collects and magistrates of the town be desired to use their utmost endeavors agreeable to law to suppress the same; and that the freeholders and other inhabitants will do everything in their power to assist them therein."

In 1765 a committee, consisting of Colonel James Frye, Moody Bridges, Peter Osgood, Colonel John Osgood and others, residents of North Andover, addressed the following instructions:

"To Samuel Phillips, Esq., Representative for the town of Andover in his Majesty's Province of the Massachusetts Bay:

"Sir, We, the freeholders and other inhabitants of said town, legally assembled in town-meeting on said day, to consider what may be proper on our part to be done at this critical juncture, being a time we apprehend that we and the rest of his Majesty's subjects of this province, as well as those of the other provinces and colonies in British America, are by sundry acts of Parliament of Great Britain, especially by an act commonly called the Stamp Act, in danger of being not only reduced to such indigent circumstances as will render us unable to manifest our loyalty to the Crown of Great Britain, as upon all occasions we have heretofore done, by cheerfully exhibiting our substance for the defence of the British dominions in this part of the world; but of being deprived



of some of our most valuable privileges which by charter and loyalty we have always thought and still think ourselves justly entitled to ;

"Therefore we take it to be our duty justly due to ourselves and posterity to instruct you, that you do not give your assent to any act of Assembly that shall signify any willingness in your constituents to admit heavy internal taxes that are under any colour imposed otherwise than by the General Court of this province, agreeable to the constitution of this government: That you join in such dutiful remonstrances to the King and Parliament and other becoming measures as shall carry the greatest probability to obtain a repeal of the Stamp Act, and an alleviation of the evil circumstances, the commercial affairs of this province labour under by the vigorous execution of the acts of Parliament respecting the same; and we also desire you to use your utmost endeavors that all extraordinary grants and expensive measures may upon all occasions as much as possible be avoided; and we would recommend particularly the strictest care and the utmost firmness to prevent all unconstitutional draughts upon the public treasury; that you would use your best endeavors, in conjunction with the other members of the General Court, to suppress all riotous unlawful assemblies, and to prevent all unlawful acts of violence upon the persons and substance of his Majesty's subjects in this Province."

In 1756 the following expression of sympathy with the sufferers during the commotion respecting the Stamp Act is honorable to the town: "Being put to vote whether the town will instruct their Representative to use his influence in the Great and General Court of this province that the sufferers in the late troublesome times in Boston may have a consideration paid them out of the Province Treasury, or such other way as said Court shall judge to be most fit and equitable:" it passed in the affirmative.

In 1768 it was voted that Samuel Phillips, Capt. Peter Osgood, Col. James Frye and others be a committee to consider some measures that may tend to encourage prudence and manufactures and to lessen the use of superfluities in the town, and report at the annual meeting of the town in May next. The committee appointed reported: "That in order to securing to ourselves and transmitting to posterity these invaluable rights and privileges, both civil and religious, which have been dearly purchased by our predecessors, the first settlers of this country, the loss of which is greatly threatened by the great and growing imprudences and immoralities among us,—The committee are humbly of the opinion that it is absolutely necessary that the inhabitants of this town use their utmost endeavors, and that they enforce their endeavors by their example, for the suppressing of extravagance, idleness and vice, and for the promoting of industry, economy and good morals; and by all prudent means endeavor to discountenance the importation and use of foreign superfluities, and to promote and encourage manufactures in the town." The above report was unanimously accepted by the town.

In 1770, "The town, taking into consideration the distresses this province is laboring under by the operation of a late act of Parliament imposing duties on tea, paper, glass, etc., made and passed for the express purpose of raising a revenue in the American Colonies without their consent, which we apprehend is oppressive, repugnant to the natural and constitutional rights of the people, contrary both to the spirit and letter of the royal Charter granted by their majesties William and Queen Mary to the inhabitants

of this province, whereby are ordained and established the having and enjoying all liberties and immunities of free and natural born subjects; and subversive of the great and good designs of our most worthy ancestors, who crossed the ocean, willingly exposed themselves to every danger, parted with their blood and treasure, suffered hunger, cold and nakedness, and every other hardship human nature is capable of, to purchase and defend a quiet habitation for themselves and posterity; Therefore voted, *namine contradicente*.

"1. That it is the duty of every friend of liberty and to the British constitution to use all legal measures to prevent, if possible, the execution of said act, and would embrace this opportunity to express our warmest gratitude to the merchants and other gentlemen of Boston and other trading towns in this province for the regular, constitutional and spirited measures pursued by them, from principles truly generous, for repelling tyranny and oppression and establishing those rights for themselves and country which they are entitled to as men and as Englishmen.

"2. That we will, by all legal and constitutional measures in our power, support and encourage the non importation agreement of the merchants; and that we will have no commercial or social connections, directly or indirectly, with those persons who, as enemies to the country, divorced of every public virtue, and even of humanity itself, regardless of and deaf to the miseries and calamities which threaten this people, preferring their own private interest to the liberty and freedom of the community, are so ardently endeavoring to counteract such benevolent and salutary agreement.

"3. That we will encourage frugality, industry and the manufactures of this country; and that we will not make use of any foreign tea, or suffer it to be used in our families (case of sickness alone excepted), until the act imposing a duty on that article be repealed and a general importation take place."

In 1774 it was,—

"Resolved, That no person in this town who has heretofore been concerned in vending tea, or any other person, may, on any pretence whatever, either sell himself, or be accessory to selling, any tea of foreign importation, while it remains burdened with a duty, under penalty of incurring the town's displeasure."

In December, 1774, it was,—

"Resolved, That it is the indispensable duty of this town to conform and firmly adhere to the Association of the Grand American Continental Congress, and to the resolve of the Provincial Congress of the 5th of December, thereto relating; and in order that this may be thoroughly effected, that the inhabitants of the town of the age of twenty-one years and upwards subscribe to the following agreement, viz.:

"We, the subscribers, having attentively considered the Association of the Grand American Continental Congress, respecting the non importation, non exportation and non consumption of goods, etc., signed by the Delegates of this and other colonies on the Continent, and the resolve of the Provincial Congress of the 5th of December thereto relating, do heartily approve the same and every part of them; and in order to make said Association resolve our own personal act, Do, by these presents, under the sacred ties of virtue, honor and love of our country, firmly agree and associate fully and completely to observe and keep all and every article and clause in said Association, and resolve contained, according to the true intent, meaning and letter thereof, and will duly inform and give notice of every evasion or contravention of either, as far as we are able; and we further covenant that if any person or persons of the age of twenty-one years and upwards shall neglect or refuse to subscribe this agreement, when tendered to him or them, that we will withdraw all commerce, trade or dealing from such, so long as they shall continue thus inimical to the public good, and that their names shall be entered on the records of this town and published in the *Essex Gazette* as enemies to their country."

January 2, 1775, a committee was appointed, of which Colonel James Frye, Colonel Samuel Johnson, Captain John Farnum and Moody Bridges were members, to observe that the resolves of the Grand American and Provincial Congresses be strictly adhered to. The instructions to the committee require them to—





"Use their utmost endeavours that the non-consumption agreement be strictly adhered to; to encourage the people to improve the breed of sheep and to increase their number; to encourage frugality, economy and industry, and promote agriculture, arts and manufactures, and discountenance and discourage every species of extravagance and dissipation; and that they recommend to the people of the town that they, on the death of any near relations, go into no further mourning dress than a black crape or ribbon on the arm or hat for men, and a black ribbon or necklace for women; that said Committee inspect the merchants and traders in this town, and give information to the public of all persons as shall violate the Ninth article of the Association by advancing the price of their goods; that they apply to all merchants and traders in this town immediately after the tenth day of October next, and take a full inventory of all the goods, wares and merchandize which shall then be in their hands, and shall require them to offer no more of those goods for sale; and if any merchant, trader or others shall refuse to have an inventory taken, or shall offer for sale after the tenth of October aforesaid any such goods, wares or merchandize, the Committee is directed to take the goods into their possession, at the risk of the proper owners, until the repeal of the Acts referred to, and publish the names of such refractory merchants or traders, that they may meet with the merits of enemies to their country; and the town doth hereby engage to assist and support said committee in the discharge of their trust; that the Committee inspect the conduct of every person in the town touching the aforesaid Association; that if any person or persons shall wilfully violate said Association, that the majority of said Committee cause the name of such person or persons forthwith to be published in the *Gazette*, to the end that all such foes to the rights of British America may be publicly known; and it is further recommended to said Committee that they act in every respect as it shall appear to them to be their duty as a Committee of inspection, whose duty is more fully pointed out in the Continental Association and Provincial Resolves."

June 12, 1776, the question being put, "Whether, should the Honorable Congress, for the safety of the colonies, declare them independent of the Kingdom of Great Britain, you will solemnly engage with your lives and fortunes to support them in the measure," it passed in the affirmative unanimously.

Oct. 3d, 1776, it was voted to support the House of Representatives, should they conclude to submit a constitution and form of government for the State to the people thereof.

In 1777 the town voted to supply the families of non-commissioned officers and private soldiers belonging to this town, that are engaged in the Continental army, with the necessaries of life, that their circumstances may require, agreeable to a resolve of the General Court.

July 2, 1779, Mr. Sam'l Osgood, Mr. Sam'l Phillips, Jr., Mr. John Farnum and Mr. Zebediah Abbot, were elected delegates "to attend at the convention to be holden at Cambridge, on September next, for the purpose of forming a Constitution of Government."

The conduct of the town during the Revolutionary War was most exemplary. There was great unanimity of feeling and a resolute determination to stand by the patriot cause. In raising men and taking care of their families, the town was patriotic, charitable and liberal. And the persons to whom the work was entrusted had the entire confidence of the people. The sentiments of the town were expressed in the resolves which have been already quoted.

In the French and Indian Wars which preceded, and in the Revolutionary War, which followed the adoption of these resolves, North Andover took an important and conspicuous part. Her soldiers in the

French War were in almost every engagement; her officers were able, efficient and distinguished. Col. James Frye, who seems to have been a leading man in the town, commenced at Crown Point that career as a commander which culminated in the Revolutionary War.

Col. Joseph Frye, who was conspicuous in the destruction of Acadia, commenced in this war his long and brilliant career of service. His house in North Andover stood near the famous elm-tree planted by Chaplain Frye when he departed with Lovewell's expedition. He had command of a small body of troops outside Fort William Henry, when the disastrous attack was made on it by Montcalm with his savages. He fought the enemy in front, opposed capitulation in the rear, and slew the savage who led him forth a prisoner to torture and death.

"In the massacre which followed the surrender, he was dragged into the woods, stripped of his clothes, except his shirt, and was about to be murdered, when, in the sudden strength of desperation, he sprang upon his foe, and unarmed and naked as he was, beat down and dispatched the warrior who was already exulting in his anticipated scalping. Three days he wandered through the forests in a state bordering on distraction, suffering in body and mind from the long protracted horrors of the night, the terrible scene of the massacre and his perils and exposure. At last he found his way back to Fort Edward in a most pitiable condition, half starved and nearly crazed, and in the same naked condition in which he had escaped from the savage. But with tender nursing he regained strength of body and mind, and lived to render more valiant service in the war, and in the Revolution he received the commission of brigadier-general."

A petition was granted him to purchase land in the region of the Saco and Ossipee Rivers, and about 1770 he settled there with some associates from Andover.

On May 23, 1759, John Farnum, of Andover, solicited aid from the government on account of his services in the Canada expedition. John Beverly and others made a similar application, and their applications were successful.

The prominent officers in the French and Indian War from North Andover were Captain Joseph Frye, Lieutenant-Colonel James Frye, Colonel Moody Bridges, Surgeon Ward Noyes, Captain John Farnum, Captain Thomas Farrington and Captain Abiel Frye.

The military experience of the French and Indian War soon proved to be most valuable to the colonies, in the great conflict out of which the independence of this country was secured. As it became necessary to defend the principles avowed by the citizens of North Andover in the resolves and instructions they adopted, the soldiers and officers of the English and American forces in the French War came to the front with their skill and courage, and the declarations of the town were renewed with greater force. New names appeared, it is true, but many a familiar form presented itself ready for the new conflict. Into the councils of the town entered Samuel Phillips and Samuel Osgood, and in martial array stood Gen. James Frye with his military training and his soldierly genius; Col. Moody Bridges with his fervid popular





oratory and his courage and resolution; Capt. Peter Osgood, Capt. John Farnum, Capt. Henry Ingalls with their old comrades-in-arms. Samuel Phillips had spoken the voice of the young men of the town when he declared, "We must watch against every encroachment and with the fortitude of calm, intrepid resolution oppose them. Unborn generations will either bless us for our activity and magnanimity, or curse us for our pusillanimity." His successor in the House of Representatives, Col. Bridges was instructed as to his duty in language somewhat familiar to himself, in which it was declared, "May all that is dear in nature defend us, and not only us, but our domesticities that are possessed of the least degree of feeling, from such an inquisition." Col. Bridges was sent to the First Provincial Congress which met in Salem, September, 1774. A Committee of Inspection for the town was chosen January 2, 1775, to see that the resolves of the Continental and Provincial Congresses were adhered to, and "to inspect the conduct of every person in the town touching the aforesaid association." On this committee were Col. James Frye, Col. Samuel Johnson, Ensign Joshua Holt, Capt. John Farnum, Col. Moody Bridges, Ensign Stephen Holt, Samuel Frye and Lieut. John Ingalls. A Committee of Safety was also appointed, on which the names of those who have appeared so often are repeated.

At this time there were four companies in the town, numbering in all four hundred men. Two companies appear on the muster-rolls of the "Lexington Alarm," in the regiment of Col. James Frye.

Col. Johnson labored incessantly to fill up the ranks of the patriotic forces, and appealed to the people with great earnestness and force. His regiment was rapidly filled, and his address to his soldiers was eloquent and inspiring. The first resistance to British attempts to seize the arms and ammunition of the colonists had been made by Leslie and his forces in Salem, in February, 1775, and had been successful under the leadership of the firm and fearless Timothy Pickering; and when a few weeks after, the country was roused and alarmed by the struggle at Concord and Lexington, the soldiers of North Andover, already organized, marched to the conflict. Four companies are recorded as having marched from Andover to Cambridge, April 19, 1775. A "number of aged men and some unable to bear arms, rode to Cambridge on the day of the alarm and the following day to carry provisions to those who stood in need." At this time Samuel Osgood appeared on the field and commenced his long career as soldier and statesman.

The journals of the soldiers and the records all give evidence of the zeal and devotion of the town in the opening skirmish of the war, and in the memorable engagements which followed and taught the British government and all men in the colonies that there were Americans who were ready to fight for their rights, and the independence, if need be, of their country.

The town promptly responded to the communication from the Provincial Congress, signed by Joseph Warren, president, that "General Gage had utterly disqualified himself to serve the colony as Governor," by choosing Mr. Samuel Phillips, Jr., to represent them in the Provincial Congress to be held at the meeting-house in Watertown on Wednesday, the 31st of May inst. (1775). Mr. Phillips' services in this Congress are thus recorded by his biographer:

"During this period Mr. Phillips was twice on a committee to confer with General Washington upon points connected with the war; he was also in rapid succession upon committees to countersign the colony notes emitted by the Continental Congress, and the notes of the Receiver-General; to direct the mustering and paying of one militia company, to muster and pay another, etc., etc. In all this he distinguished himself and did honor to the town he represented."

The difficulties under which the soldiers labored at this time are strongly set forth in the following communication, dated "Camp in Cambridge, August 2, 1775," addressed "To the Honorable, the Council and House of Representatives of the Colonies of Massachusetts Bay in General Court assembled," by Benjamin Ames, a captain in Colonel James Frye's regiment:

"Your petitioner, a captain in Col. James Frye's regiment, begs leave to relate that the company which he has the honor to command, consisting of fifty seven non-commissioned officers & soldiers, came into camp at Cambridge on the 19th of April last; that since that time said company has regularly done duty; but, though they have been in the service of this colony above three months, not one man has received one part of the forty shillings which a late Congress promised should be advanced to them. That these soldiers, with many of their families, have suffered difficulties that are not small by reason of this delay. Their necessities have been growing daily more urgent till, at length, I am able to withstand their impatience no longer. I am, therefore, constrained most earnestly to entreat of this Honorable Court that relief to which your humble petitioner presumes he has some claim in justice, & your petitioner, as in duty bound, shall ever pray."

The prayer of the petitioner was granted, and Mr. Samuel Phillips was empowered to carry out the necessary arrangements.

It is difficult to realize the effect the battle of Bunker Hill had upon the people of the colonies generally, of the colony in which it was fought especially, and of the towns which, at great sacrifice, had sent their fathers and sons into the conflict. The return of the dead and wounded to a peaceful and quiet rural community sent a thrill of horror through all ranks and orders of men. The heat of preliminary debate had roused the passions of men to a point of resistance, but the result of the blows struck being brought to their very firesides, changed the indignation of conflicting opinion to the exasperation of grief and the desperation of the mourner. The mild and feeble emotions were roused at once to defiant impulses, and the community dwelt upon every personal detail of the struggle with keen and intense interest. The story of Colonel Frye, who hastened in the midst of the battle to the bloody scene, was rehearsed with pride at his home. The account given by John Barker, of his rescue of Benjamin Farnum from the jaws of death in the midst of the battle, has been passed with pride from generation to generation.



Salem Poor, a slave, became a hero in the town. The painful doubt which surrounded the fate of Captain Furbush and Samuel Bailey, Jr., hung like a pall over the community. The generation which saw Captain Farnum brought home on a litter improvised by his neighbors has entirely passed away, it is true, but there are those who remember the old Christian hero as he hobbled to his seat as deacon of the First Church, a model of faith and heroic patriotism. And conspicuous among all was the surgeon of Colonel James Frye's regiment—Dr. Thomas Kittredge—the beloved physician, the influential citizen, the wise public servant, the patriotic soldier, during more than half a century of useful service in war and peace.

While the sons of North Andover were busy on the field of battle, many of the citizens of beleaguered Boston sought refuge in her safe and quiet homes. A large portion of the library of Harvard College was sent to Samuel Osgood for safe keeping. The town seems to have been a favorite place of refuge during the dangers of wars and sieges. Not only in the Revolution, but in the War of 1812, the merchants of Salem and Boston took up their abode among its charming hills and valleys and in the families of its thrifty and cultivated citizens.

The suffering in the town at this period became great. The absence of a great number of the able-bodied men during the summer season of 1775 prevented the pursuit of a large part of the farming industry and the provision usually made for winter in that sparsely-settled region. As the war went on this difficulty was not removed. When the siege of Boston was brought to a successful termination, the soldiers of the American army were transferred to remote fields, and their absence from home was necessarily of longer continuance. They were found in many engagements and in every section of the country. They were in service in New York. The men of North Andover were enrolled in the Continental army. Their brave old colonel, James Frye, had fought his fight and was reposing in the grave yard, not having reached the infirmities of old age, nor having reached the consummation of his life-long effort for the independence of his country. *Homo fuit*, truly says his epitaph. But Johnson and Farnum remained, and the soldiers followed them wherever their services were needed. They were at Bennington and Stillwater. They shared the sufferings of the winter camp at Valley Forge. Captain Samuel Johnson and his men were engaged in Rhode Island. And of the services of Colonel Johnson at Stillwater and during the entire campaign, which resulted in the defeat of Burgoyne, it has been said:

"In 1777 he commanded a regiment detached from the county of Essex and led them to victory and glory in the memorable action on the 7th of October, when his firmness and courage was particularly distinguished. His regiment was a part of that respectable yeomanry whom General Burgoyne looked on as the owners of the soil, men determined to conquer or die. This was the Fourth Massachusetts Regiment, which

Colonel Johnson commanded through the war, and with promptness and punctuality answered the requisitions of Government in a manner highly satisfactory to the several corps which composed the regiment."

As the war went on the sufferings of soldiers and citizens increased. Business was neglected. There was a scanty supply of food and clothing; the lands became exhausted; the flocks and herds decreased. But the people of North Andover did all in their power to rise above the general disaster, encouraged the soldiers and provided for their families. The manufacturing industries of the town were not neglected. The work of furnishing homespun clothes for citizens and soldiers was diligently carried on in the houses. The town was liberal in bestowing bounties on the soldiers.

No family was more intimately connected with the welfare of the country before and during and after the Revolutionary War than the family of Phillips. Descended from one of the most influential ministers of the colony, the Rev. Samuel Phillips settled in the South Parish of Andover in 1710, and through his own agency and that of his remarkable sons and grandsons he shaped the destiny of that portion of the original town. Of his sons, Samuel, born February 24, 1715, graduate of Harvard 1734; John, born January 7, 1720, graduate of Harvard 1735; and William, born July 6, 1725, Samuel settled in North Andover, and in 1752 built the house which has already been described, and is an heir-loom of the family. He established himself there in trade. He married Elizabeth Barnard, a cousin of the minister and "his household was a model of a Christian family, his wife being a lady of rare virtues and himself deacon of the North Church, a man of inflexible principles and integrity." He was among the most distinguished men of the Revolutionary period, being Representative, Senator and the friend of the most eminent statesmen of the times. He died in 1790, leaving one son, Samuel Phillips, Jr., who married Miss Phebe Foxcroft, of Cambridge, and who was known as "Judge" Phillips. He resided after his marriage in the South Parish, and induced his father and his uncle to found Phillips Academy. The original design was to locate the academy in the North Parish, near the family homestead, but it was found difficult to purchase the land, and the South Parish was made the important and influential centre of academic and theological education. The constitution and deeds of trust were signed April 21, 1778. Shortly after this "Judge" Phillips removed to the South Parish, where he died February 10, 1802.

His son, John Phillips, a graduate of Harvard in 1795, entered into trade in Charlestown and married Miss Lydia Gorham, daughter of the Hon. Nathaniel Gorham, shortly after which he moved to North Andover. It was on the event of his marriage that partisan papers of the day announced that the peace of the Commonwealth was secured, as the rival families of Phillips and Gorham were at last united. John Phillips died at the age of forty-four years,





leaving a widow with thirteen children, three sons. A more dignified and exemplary family never lived in North Andover.

Mrs. Phillips was a cultured, self-contained Christian woman, and her daughters possessed the refinement of the mother combined with that calm judgment and discretion for which the family of Phillips had long been noted. The presence of herself and her family gave tone to the town.

The description of the Phillips Manse given by Miss Bailey ought not to be omitted here :

"The Phillips manse is probably the richest of any in the town in an art collection of ancestral grandeur. The fine old family portraits, the portrait of Washington," now removed, "presented by his nephews, the antique silver tankard and pewterers, the massive sideboard, the carved cabinet in which used to be kept mysterious packets of ancient letters, too private and sacred to be read by any outside the family, the tapestries wrought by hands long ago instructed to dust, the samplers in frames over the mantel, and the profiles of the first master and mistress of the manse; in the hall the library of quaint old books owned by generations of masters looking back to the settlement of the colony,—all these appeal powerfully to the imagination and stir the feelings deeply, as one goes from room to room in this ancient house."

One of the most important political movements during the war was the adoption of a State Constitution by Massachusetts. Until 1776 the Provincial Congress had constituted the civil power of the Commonwealth, and it was found necessary to complete the executive, legislative and judicial departments of government, for the sake of harmony and efficiency in the organization. This question, like all others involving a radical change, created a very considerable commotion and gave rise to sharp discussion and hot debate. Andover voted to leave the matter with the House of Representatives and the Council, and finally assumed direct opposition to the measure. To the House of Representatives, who were engaged in discussing the question of organizing the government, the North Parish furnished the member for the town,—Col. Samuel Johnson, who accepted willingly the instructions of the town in which it declared, "We therefore conclude that to set about the forming a New Constitution of Government at this time is unnecessary, impolitic and dangerous; and it is accordingly our direction that you oppose it with those solid arguments of which you are so fruitful, and that you do it vigorously and perseveringly."

The House having failed to accept the report of a committee appointed to draft a Constitution, a convention was called to meet in Cambridge in 1779, and the town was represented by Samuel Osgood, Samuel Phillips, Jr., Zebediah Abbot and John Farnum, Jr.

It was at this juncture that a most important step was taken by the towns of Essex County,—a step which had a controlling influence on the organization of the State under a Constitution. The difficulties surrounding this question were immense. The spirit of the Revolution was still on the people. In their efforts to throw off a foreign yoke they had

become jealous of all authority, and were hardly willing to clothe any government with power sufficient to give it even a practical operation. Liberty was in danger of degenerating into license.

It was in this state of public affairs that Theophilus Parsons, a young lawyer in Newburyport, stepped forth and commenced that career which placed him in the position of chief justice of Massachusetts—perhaps the greatest of all her jurists. At his instigation a meeting of the freeholders and other inhabitants of the town of Newburyport, the place of his residence, by law qualified to vote in town affairs, was held on the 27th of March, 1778. Resolutions were adopted setting forth the defects in the Constitution already proposed, desiring the selectmen to issue circular letters to the several towns in Essex County, to meet by delegates in convention, and choosing, as representatives of Newburyport in the convention, Theophilus Parsons, Tristram Dalton, Jonathan Greenleaf, Jonathan Jackson and Stephen Cross. This convention met in Ipswich in April of that year, and among the names recorded appear those of Ward, Goodhue, Andrews, Goodale, Springer, of Salem; Putnam and Shillaber, of Danvers; Farley and Noyes, of Ipswich; Coffin and Porter, of Gloucester; Gould and Clarke, of Topsfield; Dodge, of Wenham; Perley, of Boxford; and the "Honorable Caleb Cushing, Esq., of Salisbury."

Under a vote of the convention Messrs. Parsons, Goodale and Putnam were appointed a committee "to attempt to ascertain the true principles of government; to state the non-conformity of the Constitution prepared by the convention of this state to those principles; and to delineate the outlines of a constitution conformable thereto, and to report the same to this body."

Can we at this day estimate the difficulty of this task? The spirit which had thus far animated Massachusetts, and had kept her up to the standard adopted by her at the North Bridge and Lexington and Concord, at Bunker Hill and in the streets of Boston, rendered her peculiarly sensitive with regard to every form of popular right. She had impoverished herself for the war. Her sons were at that very hour suffering from the horrors of that winter at Valley Forge. The western counties, governed by "that public virtue and the unbounded love of freedom and their country with which the militia of the state had always been inspired," had sent their hardiest men to win the glories of Bennington and Saratoga. The eastern counties were already moving for the expedition against the British in Rhode Island. The people were on fire for freedom—for a common cause—for a common country. The appeals were spirited and ardent. Said the *Boston Gazette*: "He who wishes for permanent happiness, let him now put forth all his strength for the immediate salvation of his country, and he shall reap immortal pleasure and renown. It is good for us to anticipate the joy that will fill our



minds when we shall receive the reward of our labors; when we shall see our country flourish in peace; when grateful millions shall hail us as the protectors of our country, and an approving conscience shall light up eternal sunshine in our souls."

To deliberate calmly in an hour of mingled desperation and hope, when our armies were sinking through weariness even on victorious battle-fields, and were freezing in their winter-quarters, when the only remaining power through all was an indomitable love of freedom, was by no means easy. The lessons of free government, moreover, were few, and not by any means successful. Ancient states had gone down into the darkness of anarchy or despotism; modern states had been organized chiefly as colonial dependencies. There was much confusion; there were many jealousies; there was but little light when that committee met to lay the foundations of a Constitution for Massachusetts. The work they performed is called the "Essex result." It was an earnest endeavor to declare how progress and conservatism, "liberty and order, might be adjusted in human institutions, that freedom should be secure and happiness might be the children of freedom."

As an essay on free government it has hardly been equaled. Avoiding the misanthropy of Rousseau and the consolidation of the ancient republics, it assumed that the moving springs of a free government are political virtue, patriotism and a just regard to the natural rights of mankind, and that in its operations a just distribution of power is supremely essential. Upon its suggestions was based the first Constitution of Massachusetts, carried as they were by the young lawyer of Newburyport into the subsequent State Convention, and submitted to the Bowdoin and Adamses and Lowells and Pickerings and Strongs of that distinguished body.

The town of North Andover finally gave its adhesion to the Constitution, after expressing an opinion that all citizens should be taxed to support public worship, and that religious tests should be applied to candidates for office.

It was the organization of the State government which saved the Commonwealth from anarchy and ruin during the Shay's Rebellion, which broke out with armed insurrection in 1786; and to aid in the suppression of which, by reason, as well as by force, Andover chose a Committee of Consideration, of whose members North Andover furnished Peter Osgood, Moody Bridges, John Ingalls, Col. Samuel Johnson, and on which were four of the family of Abbot, from the South Parish.

The popular jealousy extended at this time not only against all civil authority, but also against all lawyers and all persons connected with the courts. There is a letter in existence, not before this time published, written by William Symmes, who became distinguished ten years later in the convention which adopted the Federal Constitution, to Isaac Osgood,

Esq., who was at that time clerk of the courts of Essex County, under date of October 25, 1786, an extract from which will indicate the estimate in which lawyers were held at that time. He says:

"The profession by which I am to get my bread, nay the very court in which I am at present exercising it, is denied. The Supreme Judicature itself is punished with impunity. The legislature is irresolute, and therefore private credit is a mere cipher in all calculations, money out of circulation and a tender act (and heaven knows what else) impending. When? When I am but just admitted to the bar, have some debts to pay, am without reputation, or clients, and can raise no money either where it is or where it is not due. . . .

"You have here, my dear Sir, a sketch of my present condition. If the General Court should finally act with the spirit and effect so much to be desired, I shall hesitate no longer. But if the strength of the government be found inadequate to the suppression of tumult and the support of law, if the constitution be too feeble to conquer the present sickness of the state, I had rather be here than in Salem. But I had rather be in Turkey than here."

#### FEDERAL CONSTITUTION.

The War of Independence had been fought, and North Andover had performed well her part in the great struggle. The confederation had proved to be a "rope of sand," and led on by Virginia, the States had assembled to form our present Federal Constitution. It had been adopted by the convention which framed it and accepted by Delaware, Pennsylvania, New Jersey, Georgia and Connecticut. All eyes were turned on Massachusetts; for on her action depended very much that of New York, Maryland and Virginia. The mass of the people here were opposed to its adoption—some from interest, some from principle as they supposed, and some from jealousy. It met with violent opposition from the insurgents of Shay's army, many of whom represented the Western counties in the convention assembled to consider the question.

General Knox wrote to General Washington:—

"The opposition has arisen not from a consideration of the merits or demerits of the thing itself; but from a deadly principle leveled at the existence of all government whatsoever,—the principle of insurgency, deriving fresh strength and life from the impunity with which the rebellion of last year was suffered to escape. It is a singular circumstance that in Massachusetts the property, the ability and the virtue, of the state are almost solely for the constitution; opposed to it are the late insurgents, and all those who abetted their designs, constituting four-fifths of the opposition. A few, very few indeed, well-meaning people are joined to them."

The debate in the Convention of 1788 sitting in Boston grew warmer and warmer as each day went on. There were men who, guided by personal ambition, sat with their fingers on the popular pulse, and governed their course by the unreasonable and narrow demands of an excited and just now rebellious community. The temptations of local elevation were more than they could resist. There were their obligations to Massachusetts, the opportunities which she presented, the favors which she had to bestow on





her sons who obeyed the behests of her people. There were then none of the achievements of a powerful republic, none of the prosperity attending a constitutional confederation, no commanding presence before the nations of the earth, no flag crowded with a galaxy of increasing States, no projects in which all had a common interest. The history of the Revolution, with its privations and its brilliant close, seemed to be the only bond which held together rival States, each one of which was drifting farther and farther from its companions and partners in the great work which they had commenced shoulder to shoulder.

To the convention three citizens of North Andover were sent as delegates on account of their entire sympathy with the often-expressed opinion of the town that the Constitution ought not to be adopted. These delegates were Dr. Thomas Kittredge, Capt. Peter Osgood and William Symmes, the last the youngest, most impulsive, and most unreserved of the three. Soon after the adoption of the Constitution by the convention which framed it he addressed a letter to Peter Osgood, afterwards one of his colleagues, dated November 15, 1787, in which he discussed the Constitution at length, asked for it a candid and fair consideration and for the first time gave definite expression to the points of the opposition. This letter undoubtedly gave him his election. On the 22d of January he made a most powerful argument against the Constitution, one of the few fully reported in the doings of the convention, his strongest point being the danger of empowering Congress to levy taxes in the States. His speech closed with a candid declaration of his readiness to be convinced of the wisdom of the instrument, at the same time fearing, as his constituents did, "the operation of this which is now proposed." His argument seems to have produced one effect which he probably did not anticipate,—a reply from Theophilus Parsons, who had hesitated to indorse the Constitution.

It was at this time that Washington fearlessly and strenuously exerted his influence in favor of the Constitution which, as president of the Convention, he had submitted to the States. It was unquestionably the weight of his influence which carried the Constitution through the State of Virginia, against the persistent opposition of Richard Henry Lee and Grayson, Harrison and Patrick Henry and the indifference of George Mason. But not in Virginia alone was the hand of Washington felt. In Pennsylvania, where the opposition was a factious and violent minority, the arguments which Lee had disseminated were counteracted by James Wilson, whom Washington approved as being "as able, candid and honest a member as was in the convention," and whose speech in reply to Lee he published for wide circulation in Virginia.

In Massachusetts the struggle was long and bitter in the convention containing such names as King, Gorham, Strong, Bowdoin and Hancock, Heath and

Lincoln of the army, John Brooks and Christopher Gore, Theophilus Parsons, Theodore Sedgwick, John Davis, Fisher Ames and Samuel Adams. Elbridge Gerry, who, although a member of the convention at Philadelphia, had been defeated for the convention in Boston, had, under the influence of Richard Henry Lee, written a letter to the two Houses of Massachusetts, intimating that the Constitution needed amendments and should not be adopted until they were made. At this point he was met by Washington. "If another federal convention is attempted," wrote he, "its members will be more discordant, will agree on no general plan. The Constitution is the best that can be obtained at this time; it is free from many of the imperfections with which it is charged. The Constitution or disunion is before us to choose from. If the Constitution is our election, a constitutional door is open for amendments, and may be adopted in a peaceable manner, without tumult or disorder." Guided by this suggestion, Parsons, Bowdoin, Hancock and Adams determined to combine with its ratification a recommendation of amendments, and with Parsons' "conciliatory resolution," as it has been called, the Constitution was adopted. This resolution, which embodied the famous States' rights doctrines of the Constitution, was one of the early amendments, and was as follows:

"That it is explicitly declared that all powers not expressly delegated to Congress are reserved to the several States to be by them exercised."

That much is due to Mr. Symmes for the adoption of this resolution, which has played so important a part in the history of the republic, there can be no doubt. He was young, ardent and eloquent. His mind was entirely occupied with public affairs, and he contemplated the political events of the times with the deepest interest. His letter to his colleague, Peter Osgood, and his speech in the convention embodied the views of a very considerable portion of the people of the Commonwealth. He spoke the opinions of a large body of the delegates composing the convention, and when he made up his mind to vote for the adoption he had a most brilliant and able body of associates in the change. It is much less difficult to see why a larger number of delegates did not come to the conclusion to be converted to the support of the Constitution, than it is to see why he did. And yet, with the fate not unusual to converts, he fell under the bitter condemnation of his constituents, and alone of all those who followed Bowdoin, and Hancock, and Christopher Gore, and Fisher Ames, and Samuel Adams, and Theophilus Parsons in accepting the wise and patriotic advice of Washington, he was compelled to submit to ostracism and exile, was obliged to seek his fortune elsewhere than in his native town, and died in middle life a disappointed man. Of the honesty of his convictions there is no doubt. He expected the approval and support of the distinguished men with whom he was associated, and in obeying the dictates of his conscience anticipated the fair and





candid consideration of his townsmen. But his services were not appreciated, his feelings were wounded, his ambition was broken. He was freely charged with bad motives, and with an overweening desire to be found with the majority. His fate was a hard one, and stands, not as a warning, but as an intimidation to those who, with honest convictions, rise above their party, and support conscientiously the cause they have adopted. If any native of North Andover should have a memorial tablet, it is William Symmes, who defied popular indignation in obedience to the dictates of his conscience, and gave his support to the great charter of our freedom, the most remarkable governmental document ever designed by man.

On October 17, 1785, it was voted,—

"That Joshua Holt, Esq., be and he is hereby instructed in case any motion shall be made in the General Court for introducing a paper medium, vigorously and perseveringly to oppose the same as being a measure calculated, in our opinion, to promote idleness, dissipation and dishonesty, and by destroying the morals of the people, to bring on the ruin of the Commonwealth."

In 1786 a committee, of which Peter Osgood, Moody Bridges, John Ingalls and Samuel Johnson were conspicuous members, was appointed to consult and agree upon some measures which may promote the general welfare. The committee made the following report, which was unanimously accepted:

"It is the duty of the free and virtuous people of the Commonwealth at all times to keep a watchful eye against all encroachments upon their dearest rights and privileges; that they carefully guard against all previous attacks of the Legislature on the one hand, and against all contentions and unconstitutional opposition to Government on the other.

"We esteem it our duty at the present day to bear our explicit testimony against all riotous and illegal proceedings; and against all hostile attempts and measures against law, justice and good government, and to declare our readiness to exert ourselves in support of Government, and in execution of the Constitution of this Commonwealth. But at the same time we suppose there are many things complained of which ought to be remedied, and it is our issue that every grievance may be in a constitutional way redressed. We would take particular notice of those following, viz.:

"1. We conceive that the method commonly practised in our Courts of Common Pleas for receiving debts is attended with great and needless expense. . . .

"2. The delinquencies of many towns in the payments of their public taxes, more especially in the western part of the State, as appears by the Treasurer's accounts, we conceive to be one great cause of the disturbances which have arisen in these parts. . . .

"3. We apprehend the method of paying the Representatives out of the public Treasury lays an unequal burden on many parts of the State which might be avoided by each town paying their own Representatives for their services out of their own Treasuries.

"4. As prudence and economy ever become a virtuous people, so are they peculiarly necessary in these infant states. We are of opinion, therefore, that the public officers and their respective salaries ought to be thoroughly looked into; their pay and services duly compared and properly estimated, that all superfluous offices be abolished, and the salaries of those whose services are inadequate to their pay be lowered, and that every unnecessary expense of government and burden on the people be removed."

They also suggested that the removal of the General Court from Boston would lessen the expense of the government.

On January 7, 1787, the town accepted the report of a committee instructed "to consider what measures are proper to be adopted for promoting industry and

economy and those other virtues which are represented by the Legislature in their address to the people as necessary to form the basis of national happiness, as follows:

"That in their opinion, a deviation from the principles and practice of industry and economy has been the great cause of the scarcity of specie, the delinquency in the payment of taxes, and in the discharge of private debts, which delinquency naturally tends to mar the reputation and destroy the energy of government, and to produce impatience in creditors as well as uneasiness and complaint in debtors; and that hence arises the concern and disquietude of many in the community. Your committee therefore consider this deviation as a fruitful parent of the evils we now suffer, and threatening us with speedy and complete ruin unless prevented by a thorough reform. We, therefore, consider it of the highest importance to recur to those principles from which we have declined, and to exert ourselves for the encouragement of the manufacturers of our own country in every proper way which will consist with the business which ought to engage our first attention, viz. : The cultivation of the land, and for this purpose the following resolve is proposed to be adopted by the town:

"WHEREAS, the Legislature have warned this people of being in the precise channel in which the liberties of States have been generally swallowed up, and the warning, solemn as it is, appears to be heeded in the highest reason; and as it is a part of sound wisdom to convert misfortunes and calamities into the means of advantage, in cheerful imitation of the patriotic example set us by the first magistrate of the Commonwealth, his council and the Legislature of the State: We hereby resolve to refrain from, and as far as in our power to prevent, the excessive use and consumption of articles of foreign manufacture, especially articles of luxury and extravagance, and that we will exert our best endeavors for the promotion of industry and our own manufactures.

"And in particular that we will exert ourselves to increase our wool and flax as far as it is practicable. That we will, as far as may be, avoid killing our sheep or selling them for slaughter after shearing time, till the wool be serviceable for clothing; and that we will exert ourselves to promote and encourage the manufactures of wool and flax and other raw materials into such articles as shall be useful in the community.

"And the inhabitants of the town of every description, but heads of families in particular, are hereby solicited, as they would fidelity the predictions and disappoint the hopes of those who are inimical to our Independence and happiness, as they would gratify the anxious wishes of our best friends and the friends of freedom in general; as they regard the political well being of themselves and posterity; as they hold precious the memory of the heroes and patriots, and of our kindred who have sacrificed their lives that we may enjoy the fruits of virtuous freedom—to unite in this resolution, and to exert their utmost influence in every proper way to promote the important design of it.

"And upon this occasion we apply ourselves to the good sense and virtuous dispositions of the female sex, to the younger as well as the elder, that they would by their engaging examples as well as in other proper ways, devote that power of influence, with which nature hath endowed them, to the purpose of encouraging every species of economy in living, and particularly that neat simplicity and modesty in dress, which are among the best tokens of a good mind and which seldom fail to command the esteem and love of the virtuous and wise; giving preference to that clothing which is produced from our own flocks and from our own fields.

"Your committee, upon considering the principal obstacles that lie in the way of the desired reform, are clearly of opinion that an undue use of spirituous liquors has a powerful influence to enervate the body, to enfeeble the mind, and to promote dissipation, idleness and extravagance, which are the never-failing causes of poverty and ruin. They therefore consider it of the highest importance to refrain from ourselves, and to discountenance in others, the undue use of spirituous liquors of all kinds.

"Your committee further recommend to the town to take it under consideration whether some other measures than those which have hitherto been practised may not be adopted for the support and employment of the poor, which may be productive of advantage to them, and diminish the charge to which the town is subjected for that purpose."

This report—taken with a statement made not a long time previous by the town, that the practice in the Court of Common Pleas was a needlessly expensive



method of collecting debts; that the delinquencies of the towns in paying their taxes were dangerous; that the towns should pay their own representatives; that the salaries of public officers should be thoroughly looked into; that the accounts of the United States with the Commonwealth should be adjusted; and that the General Court ought to be moved from the town of Boston—indicates the tone and temper of the town in that early day, and shows what a severe sense of propriety and civil independence and economy the delegates of the town and the representatives were obliged to deal with. The question of the adoption of the Federal Constitution was not only fatal to Mr. Symmes, but it served to divide the town into two political parties—Federalists and Republicans—a division which has generally continued to this time. The North Parish, from which Kittredge, Osgood and Symmes went to the convention, became strongly devoted to the Republican party, led by Mr. Jederson, and it has adhered to his doctrines through the various changes of name which in the last century have attended the political organization which claimed to be the especial custodian of his policy, while in the South Parish the Federalists prevailed in the beginning, to be succeeded by Whigs and Republicans as their legitimate heirs. As it was in the North Parish, so is it in North Andover to-day.

From 1771 to 1792 the North Parish furnished a representative to the General Court—fifteen years—during which Capt. Peter Osgood, who opposed the adoption of the Constitution to the end and truly represented his section of the town, served during six sessions.

The most distinguished citizen of North Andover in this Revolutionary and Constitutional period was Samuel Osgood, son of Peter, who was in the fifth generation from John Osgood, one of the founders of the church in 1645, and the first representative of the town in the General Court in 1657. He was a brother of Isaac Osgood, who was for many years clerk of the courts of Essex County, and a resident of Salem until he returned to North Andover, in 1804, and led a life of great dignity and repose until his death, in 1846. Samuel Osgood was born in 1748 and died in 1813. He was graduated at Harvard in 1770. His mind turned naturally to theological studies, and he commenced preparation for the ministry immediately on leaving college. He was a quiet, sedate, devout young man. He was modest and unassuming in his deportment, avoided all violent disputations, was confident of his own judgment, careful in his investigations, firm in his convictions. Soon after entering upon his theological studies he impaired his health and injured his eyes by close application, and went into mercantile business with his brother Peter. He took a deep interest in the great questions which occupied the public mind during the events which preceded and led to the Revolution, and was considered a leader in the town during all that stormy period. The finan-

cial disturbances of the war destroyed the business in which he and his brother were engaged as partners, and threw all the obligation of liquidating the debts of the concern on him. This duty he discharged completely and honorably. For some time before the breaking out of the war he was chosen a member of the Provincial Congress, where he exerted great influence as a wise, far-seeing and judicious legislator. In preparation of the great event, he had organized a company of minute-men, probably a body of his patriotic friends, with whom he marched to Lexington on hearing of the conflict, and thence to Cambridge to join the Continental army stationed there. He was appointed an aid by General Ward and remained in that official station until 1776, "when," as he says, "he quitted the army, not having much taste for military affairs."

On his return to civil life he commenced anew his career as a legislator and passed from the Provincial to the Continental Congress, and was appointed one of the Board of War. His services in that capacity secured the confidence and esteem of Washington, who relied on his judgment and patriotism in all his appeals to Congress for support in the great crises of the conflict. He took part in the Convention for framing the State Constitution of Massachusetts in 1779; and on the organization of the confederacy, he was selected as first commissioner of the treasury, and signed, on behalf of the government, the papers transferring a portion of the Northwest Territory to the Ohio Company, who, led by Manasseh Cutler, laid the foundation of western civilization at Marietta and secured the adoption of the Ordinance of 1787. Upon the organization of the Federal Government and the entry of Washington upon his administration, Mr. Osgood was selected as the Postmaster-General. Of this event he says in his unpublished autobiography: "It was not expected that he should have had any office offered him, he having been opposed for a time to an unqualified adoption of the new Constitution. Parties being highly exasperated, those who had exerted themselves in procuring the adoption of the new Constitution were to be rewarded with all the offices. But General Washington had been well acquainted with him from the commencement of the war, and offered him the Postmaster-General's department, which he accepted and held for about two years, with a salary of \$1500 a year. He had been encouraged to believe that this would be increased, but seeing no prospect of it, he resigned and continued in private life till the year 1800."

In all the duties of public and private life he conducted himself with a strict regard to honesty and fidelity. His own town, his own State believed in him implicitly. On his appointment as commissioner of the treasury, he expressed an unwillingness to call on his friends for the heavy bonds of \$100,000 required by the Federal Government, and "the government of Massachusetts became voluntarily responsible in his





behalf." When Congress left the city of New York, he resigned his office on account of the inadequacy of his salary and declined to follow the government to Philadelphia. He was soon after appointed surveyor of the port of New York, which office he held until his death.

In early life he had married Martha Brandon, a niece of Mrs. Phœbe Foxcroft Phillips, a woman of rare accomplishments, of a brilliant intellect, an amiable disposition and great personal beauty. Devoted to her friends, she left her own home to minister to the sufferings of her uncle in Cambridge during a long and severe illness, and died there after three years of married life, childless. Mr. Osgood's tribute to her memory in his autobiography is tender and touching.

During his official life in New York he secured for Washington a residence in Franklin Place, adjoining the dwelling of Mrs. Martha Franklin, who was the owner of the block. Mrs. Franklin won his heart and became his devoted wife to the end of his life. By her he had a son, Walter Franklin Osgood, and daughters—Julia, who married her cousin, Samuel Osgood, of North Andover; Martha, who married Mr. Genet, the French minister; and Susan, who married Mr. Field, of New York.

He now became identified with life in New York. He was surrounded by a charming circle of friends and by an affectionate and devoted family. He took an active part in politics and was placed on the ticket by which Aaron Burr overthrew the power of Hamilton in the Legislature of New York and elected as delegates to the Assembly George Clinton, General Horatio Gates, Samuel Osgood, Brockholst Livingston, John Swartwout and seven others, all influential citizens, supporters of Jefferson and Burr, among whom Osgood was most conspicuous and influential. He devoted himself to literature, was an original member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences and found great delight in investigating those questions of theology and metaphysics to which he had turned his attention in early life as a student of divinity. His treatment of Locke's chapter on the will attracted the attention of the best students of the time. North Andover has always been proud of his memory.

The records of the town, copies of which are deposited with the town clerk of North Andover, Mr. Jona. F. Osgood, contain but little from 1800 to the division of Andover, in 1855, besides the ordinary routine of town business, relating to schools, roads and bridges and the fisheries of the streams.

In 1802 Thomas Kittredge was chosen Representative to the General Court over John Phillips, and he continued to represent the town every year, except 1803, until 1809. In 1811 he was also elected in connection with Joshua Chandler and John Cornish.

July 6, 1812, the town voted to make up to the soldiers detached from the militia of the town pur-

suant to a law passed the 10th day of April last, such compensation, which, together with that allowed by government, shall amount to twelve dollars per month for each soldier while in actual service.

In 1813, Timothy Osgood, Dr. George Osgood and Benjamin Jenkins were elected Representatives over Thomas Kittredge, John Kneeland and Stephen Barker.

The same year notice was issued to all male inhabitants twenty-one years of age and upward, possessed of freehold estate with an annual income of \$10, or any estate to the value of \$200, that they had the right to vote.

September 19, 1814, during the War of 1812, the town voted: "That the town treasurer be authorized to hire a sum of money, not to exceed six hundred dollars, for the purpose of purchasing arms and equipments for the militia of the town that are unable to equip themselves."

Also voted: "To make up to the soldiers of Captain Henry Poor's Company, who have been called into actual service, such compensation which, together with that allowed by government, shall amount to twelve dollars per month for each soldier while in actual service."

In 1815 Thomas Kittredge was elected member of the Legislature and in 1816 he ran for Congress. In 1817 he, in connection with John Kneeland and Stephen Barker, represented the town in the General Court.

And here the useful and honorable career of Dr. Kittredge as a citizen and a public servant ended. He died suddenly, October, 1818, in the midst of his activity,—the last acts of his life being devoted to the welfare of his neighbors and friends. A touching tale is told by a conspicuous citizen of the town, who was a child when the occurrence took place, and whose father was the object of Dr. Kittredge's kindness, of his solicitude for the jaded horse of this townsman, whom he met returning from an excursion, and whom he urged to place the animal in his own stable for rest while one of his own horses was used to complete the journey. When, on the following morning, his horse was returned, the kind-hearted and generous physician had gone to his long home.

Dr. Thomas Kittredge was the third son of Dr. John Kittredge, who was born in Tewksbury and settled in North Andover, near the mouth of the Cochichewick Brook about 1741. He was born in 1745, pursued his academical studies at Dummer Academy, and studied medicine with Dr. Sawyer, of Newburyport. He commenced practice in North Andover in 1776. He was not only a skillful physician and surgeon, of whom Dr. John Warren, surgeon general of the Revolutionary army, said "He had more natural skill than any man in the country," but he was a most patriotic citizen also and a most valuable public servant. He was appointed surgeon of the army while it was at Cambridge; was present at the battle of Bunker Hill,



and served in his professional capacity during the war. He was a dignified and commanding gentleman—a man of honor and honesty, and possessed great courage and sound judgment. He had a true comprehension of the object of the war, entire faith in its result and a large understanding of the character and destiny of the republic. Jealous of the rights of the States and citizens under the central government, he adopted the views and principles of Jefferson, and during a long public service as legislator and delegate he represented his ancient town as a Republican of the strictest sort. In the halls of legislation and as a member of the leading societies of his profession he had great influence. His capacity for business enabled him to accumulate a handsome fortune, and the stately mansion he erected a hundred years ago still stands a monument of his substantial taste and his understanding of an appropriate home for a prosperous citizen. His household was organized in accordance with the social customs of his times and was ample in its outfit, liberal in its hospitality and dignified in its conduct.

Dr. Kittredge married Susanna Osgood, a sister of Samuel Osgood, a most sensible and large-hearted woman. They had two sons; Joseph and John, and three daughters,—Martha, who married Dr. Lemuel Le Baron, and Catherine and Maria who married Judge David Cummins.

It has been deemed proper to give this conspicuous and influential citizen a place in the civil history of the town he loved and adorned.

The two sons of Dr. Thomas Kittredge were distinguished physicians also. Joseph, who was born in 1753, was graduated at Dartmouth in 1806, commenced practice with his father in 1809, and was the leading physician of the town and the surrounding country until his death, in 1847. He inherited the medical skill of the family and adopted modes of practice by intuition, which was proclaimed and adopted by scientific investigators long after they had become familiar to him. When the European schools advised the use of wine and opium in typhoid fever as a new discovery, they entered on a treatment which he had pursued for years with great success. He was not only a good physician, but he was a public-spirited and influential citizen. He was a sound adviser in town-meetings; he represented the town in General Court, and was a candidate for Congress in many hotly-contested elections. He invested largely in the manufactures of the place, and managed a large farm in an economical and exemplary manner. He was a sincere friend, a courteous gentleman, a warm-hearted husband and father and an honest man.

Dr. Kittredge married Miss Hannah Hodges, of Salem, daughter of Capt. George Hodges, in 1819 (December 19th). Mrs. Kittredge was distinguished for those sterling qualities which characterize the town in which she was born. She had a strong and well-balanced mind, a kind and charitable disposi-

tion and great personal dignity. Her influence was felt throughout the town, and she contributed largely to the worth and culture of the society in which she moved. She died in 1877, thirty years after her husband, leaving three sons—George Hodges, Joseph, and John—and four daughters.

Of the sons, Joseph, a graduate of Dartmouth College and the Harvard Medical School, succeeded to his father's practice in North Andover, and secured by his skill and judgment the entire confidence of the town. He died in 1878, leaving two sons,—Thomas, a successful physician and a valuable citizen in Salem, and Joseph, a prosperous and skillful physician in Marblehead.

John, the other of the sons, has long been attached to the Lunatic Asylum at Taunton, an efficient and useful officer.

The daughters of Joseph and Hannah (Hodges), Kittredge are Mary Hodges, Susan, Sarah and Hannah Armstrong. Susan married Dr. George C. S. Choate. The others occupy the fine old estate in North Andover.

After the death of Dr. Thomas Kittredge the town was represented for many years by Stephen Barker, William Johnson, Samuel Merrill and others of Federal faith, until about 1830, when the fortunes of political contests varied. The best known of the representatives from that time to 1850 were George Hodges, Joseph Kittredge, Nathaniel Stevens and William Stevens.

Commencing in 1831, and ending June 10, 1833, one of the most interesting and memorable political contests which have taken place in Massachusetts occurred in what at that time was known as the Essex North Congressional District. In this contest North Andover had a peculiar interest, one of her foremost citizens, Gayton P. Osgood, being the candidate of the Democratic or Jackson party during the twelve successive trials which resulted in his election and the defeat of Caleb Cushing, the candidate of the Whig party of that day. The contest was long and bitter, and was characterized by unusual animosity and personal detraction. The opponents of Mr. Cushing were unsparing in their attacks and criticisms; and the opponents of Mr. Osgood were unwearied in their efforts to defeat him by adopting candidates who they hoped would demoralize and divide his party. North Andover, though divided at times in her allegiance between Mr. Osgood and Dr. Kittredge, who was substituted for Mr. Cushing during the trials, at last declared herself by an emphatic vote for Mr. Osgood as against Mr. Cushing, who was again a candidate; and so went the district.

The two representatives of the old town in 1854, the last year before the division, were William Jenkins and Daniel Carlton.

At this time, on the petition of Amos Abbott and others, the South Parish of Andover was set off into an independent municipality, and was authorized to





adopt the name of Andover, not on account of its priority of settlement, but as a matter of convenience to the seminary and schools which had received their charters as within the territory of that name. The committee chosen to carry out the sentiment of the town in relation to division were Samuel C. Jackson, William Chickering, Marcus Norton, Jr., Solomon Holt and John Aiken, all residents of the South Parish, to whom, at an adjourned meeting, were added Benjamin F. Jenkins and Daniel Carleton. A fair division of property was made, a copy of the town record was lodged with the town clerk of North Andover and the new town was organized by mutual consent.

The first town-meeting held in North Andover after the division was held April 23, 1855.

George N. White was chosen moderator; Hiram Berry, clerk; Daniel Carleton, James C. Carleton, and Farnham Spofford, selectmen; Hiram Berry, treasurer; Farnham Spofford, Daniel Weed, Jr., and Hiram Berry, school committee; James Stevens, Jedediah H. Barker and Isaac Wilson, auditors.

The representatives of the town since the division have been: For Senators, Moses P. Stevens, 1867-68; George L. Davis, 1874-75; John A. Wiley, 1880-81; Newton P. Frye, 1885. For the House of Representatives, Moses T. Stevens, 1861; John A. Wiley, 1867; B. P. Saunders, 1870; Hiram Berry, 1872; Andrew Smith, 1875; Newton P. Frye, 1878; Thomas K. Gilman, 1880; Frank W. Frisbie, 1883; Newton P. Frye, 1884; Calvin Read, 1885. In most cases the representatives served a second term.

Among the distinguished citizens of North Andover during the period which ended with the division of the town of Andover was the Hon. Gayton Pickman Osgood. He was a son of Isaac Osgood and Rebecca T. (Pickman) Osgood, and was born in Salem, July 4, 1797. He was fitted for college in North Andover, and was graduated at Harvard in 1815, with high honors, in a class of which John Gorham Palfrey and Jared Sparks were members. He studied law in Salem, and practiced there a short time, when, his health failing, he took up his residence with his father in North Andover, where he resided the remainder of his life. He abandoned his profession and, being engaged in no business, he led a life of scholarly and elegant leisure and ease. He became, however, deeply interested in politics, and was one of the most active leaders in the movement in favor of General Jackson for the Presidency, and one of the ablest advocates of the principles of that great Democratic organization which placed Jackson in power. In 1831 he was nominated for Congress by the Democracy of the Essex North Congressional District, and was elected after a long and vigorous campaign and many elections. Having been defeated for the succession, he retired to private life, and declined all further public position.

The influence of Mr. Osgood on the town is still well remembered. To a certain extent he was a re-

cluse: he was not active in society or in the affairs of the town. Beyond his aged father and mother and their family he had few companions. His time was spent in his large and carefully selected library. His courteous and dignified presence, always in repose, was one of the features of the town. And yet, recluse as he was, his influence was felt throughout the community. His character gave force to his opinions, and without advocacy from him they were adopted. His advice was sought in all public enterprises, and freely though cautiously given. His impressive bearing was so without condescension that all classes respected it. He was recognized as a scholar, and his scholarship was acknowledged by the most practical of his townsmen as an ornament to their vocation. He was recognized as an accomplished critic, and he was a centre around which the cultivated men of the region gathered for advice and sympathy. The Latin and Greek classics constituted a part of his daily reading. Without imagination or creative faculty of his own, he comprehended the genius of the great English poets. From his solitude he watched with keen scrutiny the eloquent utterances of Everett, the masterly statesmanship of Webster, the fervid work of Bancroft, the productions of American authors in every literary walk, as they came upon the stage; and his judgment of them was wise and discriminating—his judgment of their strength and weakness.

The productions of his pen were few and, notwithstanding the severity of his criticism, somewhat florid, but pure. As a public speaker he was strong and convincing, attractive and eloquent. Governed by his convictions, he knew no fear, and never considered the effect of his declarations on his own personal fortunes. When, as a member of Congress, he spoke, it was for his country, and he was always proud of the compliment paid him by Mr. Van Buren, who introduced him to a group of statesmen as "the fearless representative who spoke for the good of his constituents as he understood it, and not for his own success."

Mr. Osgood secured the confidence and esteem of his friends by his sagacity and integrity, and by the manifest sincerity of his opinions. Those of his immediate companions and connections who differed from him, and they were many, had no controversy with him, recognizing as they did the broad and firm foundations of his belief, and the dignified intelligence with which he maintained them. He was a product of the social stateliness of the Revolutionary and early constitutional period of our country, and represented that class which gave great strength to the rural districts, from whence in those days our guides and leaders came. He died June 26, 1861.

#### CIVIL WAR.

The social and civil current of North Andover ran on as usual until the breaking out of the Civil War. The obligations which rested upon it in this startling



event were promptly and liberally fulfilled. At a town-meeting, held May 6, 1861, it was voted to appropriate five thousand dollars to uniform and equip a company of volunteers, and to provide for their families. The men were to receive fifty cents per day while drilling, and ten dollars per month from the date of their muster in to the date of discharge. I. Osgood Loring, George L. Davis and Moses T. Stevens were appointed a committee to assist the selectmen in disbursing the funds. A company was immediately formed.

July 28, 1862, voted to pay a bounty of two hundred dollars to each volunteer who should enlist for three years within ten days, and should be credited to the town. August 25th the bounty was increased to two hundred and fifty dollars.

March 8, 1864, voted to raise one hundred and twenty-five dollars for each recruit who shall enlist on or before the 15th of June next to fill out the quota.

July 5, 1864, voted to pay the same bounty to each volunteer who shall enlist as part of the quota of the town prior to March 5, 1865, under any calls of the President.

The town furnished two hundred and fifty men for the war, fifteen more than were called for, of whom thirty-three died, viz.:

Geo. H. Farndham, April 3, 1862.  
Thos. Russell, June 4, 1862.  
Ansell Burdham, Nov. 24, 1862.  
John Berkeley, Feb. 13, 1863.  
Otis S. Merrill, Mar. 2, 1863.  
Chas. W. Coley, Mar. 3, 1863.  
Andrew J. Fish, Apr. 15, 1863.  
Nicholas Tuttle, Apr. 25, 1863.  
Michael Hughes, May 26, 1863.  
Martin Hayward, June, 1863.  
C. W. Needham, June 29, 1863.  
Henry E. Chase, July, 1863.  
John F. Spafford, July 8, 1863.  
Chas. Lee Foster, Aug. 8, 1863.  
Aron Peabody, Aug. 10, 1863.  
Benj. W. Pingree, Dec. 11, 1863.  
Henry W. Stevens, Mar. 11, 1864.  
Thos. S. Porter, Apr. 16, 1864.

L. G. Phelps, July 22, 1864.  
G. W. Ray, Sept. 24, 1864.  
C. W. Bridges, Sept. 24, 1864.  
Wallace W. Ray, Sept. 25, 1864.  
J. A. Needham, Dec. 14, 1864.  
Chas. Angier, Dec. 15, 1864.  
Abram Haywood, Oct. 1, 1865.  
Harrison Langley, May 12, 1867.  
Henry L. Lovejoy, Sept. 1, 1867.  
Labridges G. Manning, May 31, 1869.  
J. B. Fuller, Mar. 27, 1874.  
Jos. H. Farndham, Jan. 14, 1875.  
David L. Plummer, Feb. 4, 1874.  
Wm. Johnson Damon, July 3, 1875.  
Chas. K. Hedley, Apr. 20, 1877.

The whole amount of the money raised and spent by the town on account of the war, exclusive of State aid, was \$40,795.10. The amount of money raised and spent in aid of payment of State aid to families of volunteers during the four years of war, and repaid by the Commonwealth, \$12,936.94.

Among the sons of North Andover who have made themselves distinguished by civil and military service, and by great qualities in the Civil War, General Isaac I. Stevens ranks with the foremost. He was a son of Isaac Stevens; was born in 1817; educated at Franklin and Phillips Academies; was appointed a cadet in West Point in 1834 by the Hon. Gayton P. Osgood, at that time member of Congress; was graduated in 1838, and entered the engineer corps of the army. He was stationed for many years at Newport, R. I., in charge of

Fort Adams; and while there he married Miss Hazard, a lady of talents and accomplishments. In 1853 he was appointed Governor of Washington Territory by President Pierce, and, in connection with General Frederick W. Lander, surveyed the route now occupied by the Northern Pacific Railroad. In 1855 he was returned as a delegate in Congress from that Territory, and distinguished himself by his activity and industry for his constituency in that important section of the country. He was a Democrat in politics, and took an active part in the campaign of 1860. When the war broke out, in 1861, he entered at once in active military service, and his skill and courage were at once recognized. He was killed at Chantilly, Va., September 1, 1862, while rallying his men.

General Stevens possessed great intellectual powers, which manifested themselves from early boyhood. He was in many respects the first scholar of his day at Franklin Academy, and was a favorite of Mr. Simeon Putnam, the most critical of teachers. On his entry at West Point he rose to high rank at once, and was graduated with the first honors of his class. In addition to his mathematical genius, which was great, he possessed strong reasoning powers, keenness of perception and the courage of his convictions. His death was sincerely and deeply mourned.

EDUCATION.—In North Andover the attention of the people was turned early to the work of education. Not only were they directed by the order of the court, providing for this "inland plantation" but their own judgment led them to consider how schools should be established and the children taught. The leading men in the Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay colonies were well educated, many of them being graduates of English universities, and they set high value on education as the foundation of a civil organization.

"The Legislature, in 1617, considering the great importance of a general diffusion of knowledge, made provision for free schools by ordering that every township of fifty families shall provide a school, in which children may be taught to read and write; and that every town of a hundred families shall maintain a grammar school, in which youth may be prepared for college, to which another was added in 1683, providing that every township of more than five hundred families should maintain two grammar schools and two writing schools, a burden which, considering the feeble means of the colony, and the dark period when it was assumed, was no doubt vastly greater than any similar burden that has been borne since; and, when compared with the present wealth of the State, greater than any one of its civil expenses. It is a singular fact, too, that no legal requisitions made since, have, even in name and form, come up to this noble standard established by our poor and suffering forefathers in the middle of the seventeenth century.

"In 1701 it was voted that a convenient school-house be erected at the parting of the ways, by Joseph Wilson's, to be twenty feet long and sixteen feet wide; and the selectmen were directed to employ a grammar school master from year to year. Soon after the division of the town, the grammar school was kept alternately in each parish.

"Schools for small children were maintained by subscription in various parts of the town, and kept by females."

Mr. Dudley Bradstreet was in 1703 selected by the selectmen of the town, teacher of the school provided for by the building near Joseph Wilson's, and he was undoubtedly the first officially appointed teacher in





the town—at least he is the first on record. In the business of teaching he was succeeded by John Barnard 1709, Joseph Dorr, William Cooke, Thomas Paine, and in 1718 by Mr. Withum. In the middle of the eighteenth century provision was made for schools in the outlying districts. From that time the district school system was carefully supported and diligently pursued. In them the great mass of the children were educated. The children and youths of each district, ranging in age from ten to twenty-one years, filled the modest school-houses, often to the number of fifty, and most of them closely connected by family ties. The discipline of these schools was usually enforced by great physical energy; the teachers were often the poor and energetic undergraduates of New England colleges, and the pupils were graduated with all their natural faculties unimpaired for the active service of life. Out of this primitive system has grown the grading of schools now in vogue in the country, of which the town of North Andover has "six district schools—two of which are graded—making in all thirteen schools, including the grammar schools."

Teaching during the existence of the district school system was a profession adopted by well-educated men as an honorable and useful and somewhat profitable occupation. Dr. Berry and Mr. Stevens, natives of North Andover, teachers in Nashville, Tenn., and Mr. Henry Osgood in Danvers, were distinguished in their day for their efficiency as teachers of schools of a high order. Mr. Farnham Spoonford, a teacher in the district schools of his native town, North Andover for many years, removed in 1827 to Nantucket, where for fourteen years, till 1841, he had charge of the principal grammar school of the island. Without the training of normal schools and without any special education for their task, these men, and many others similarly situated, conducted useful and influential schools, advancing many of them, from the grammar school to the academy; and from the same sphere in life came a faithful and capable class of female teachers, mindful of their domestic duties and family ties—motherly teachers, to whose hearts children appealed, and whose minds were strong enough for school purposes, and who gave additional reputation to the Fosters and Peterses, whose names they bore. Over all these schools the minister of the parish kept a watchful eye and exerted a most useful influence. In 1800 Thomas Kittridge, Deacon Benjamin Farnum, Samuel Johnson, Michael Parker, Nathan Barker and Jonathan Ingalls were appointed a committee, in addition to the ministers of the gospel and the selectmen of the town, to visit the schools and to inquire into the regulations thereof, and to see to the proficiency, conduct and regularity of the scholars, and to advise, assist and direct respecting the same, as they shall judge will best promote a virtuous, religious and useful education.

From the humble beginning of the fathers, North

Andover has advanced to an annual appropriation of \$13,300, and to six hundred and eighty-four pupils in all the classes of her schools.

As the demand for higher education increased, the endowment of the academy became quite general in the colonies. The branches taught in these institutions constituted the foundation of classical culture in the colleges, gave the youthful minds who pursued them great strength, and established a corps of scholars from whom the distinguished students sprang. The course of study was not extensive, but it had nothing in it which was superfluous or confusing. A graduate from an academy found himself prepared to enter at once on the curriculum of the college, and adapted to the companionship of the learned men in those days, who made scholarship a profession. For the practical purposes of life the district school furnished all the necessary accomplishments; but those who occupied the pulpit, and interpreted and applied the laws, and devoted themselves to the health of the community, pursued a higher course of study, and to a certain degree formed a class by themselves. Their minds seemed to be strengthened by classical culture, and the educational methods adopted by scholars in the academy and students in the college recognized no royal road to learning. The strongest mental powers were called into action, and when the foundation of academic culture was laid, it was laid for a life-time, and formed a part of the character of him who had laid it. Minds thus cultivated were fitted for any walk in life to which vigorous thought could be applied; and the strength they acquired by concentrated scholarly discipline enabled them to grasp with ease those minor subjects which belong to daily life.

To these institutions, therefore, the leaders of state and society turned for the mental discipline their duty required. The public high school was unknown. The privately-endowed academy grew up out of the social and civil requirements of the earlier days, as the State-endowed high and normal schools are the natural growth of these later days. Phillips Academy at Exeter, Phillips Academy at Andover, Dummer Academy at Byfield, Franklin Academy at North Andover all belong to those institutions of learning which are classed with Rugby and Eton, and can boast of sons to whom Christian civilization owes an incalculable debt,—clergymen, jurists, physicians, statesmen, authors, scientists, ethical teachers. The scholar in those days was counted of value to society.

As early as 1787 the establishment of an academy in North Andover began to be discussed, and after the lapse of more than ten years, in 1799, land liberally offered by Jonathan Stevens was accepted for the location, and subscriptions were made for the erection of a building. The school was organized for the education of both sexes, and was called the North Parish Free School until 1803, when, by an



act of the court, it was named Franklin Academy. The history of the school is almost entirely a matter of tradition. It seems to be well known that Mr. Stowe, of Reading, was the first preceptor, and that he was succeeded in 1800-1 by the Rev. James Flint, D.D., afterward a distinguished divine and author of many favorite and beautiful hymns. About 1801-4 Nathaniel Peabody managed the male department and Elizabeth Palmer the female, who were afterwards married, and were the parents of Elizabeth P. Peabody, the well-known writer and philanthropist, and Sophia Peabody, the wife of Nathaniel Hawthorne, and Mary Peabody, the wife of Horace Mann. The school, under their tuition, was successful, and they were long remembered with great affection by the people of the town. Samuel L. Knapp, a graduate of Harvard in 1804, a bright writer, an eccentric thinker, an enthusiastic author of lives of distinguished lawyers and editor of the *Boston Gazette*, had charge of the school in 1805 and 1806. He was followed by Samuel L. Burnside, afterward a prominent lawyer in Worcester, and James C. Merrill, who rose to the distinction of judge.

Following these were David Damon, in 1812, who became an able, eloquent and powerful Unitarian preacher, and whose capacity and attainments were the admiration of all who knew him; the Rev. Robert Page; John Cleaveland, brother of the distinguished teacher, Nehemiah Cleaveland, of Topsfield, and afterward a successful lawyer in New York in 1825; and Stephen Coburn in 1826, a graduate of Andover Theological Seminary, a teacher and postmaster for many years in Ipswich.

The reputation of the school, however, was made by Simeon Putnam, who took charge about 1817 and continued as teacher until shortly before his death, May 19, 1833, with the exception of a little over a year, 1825-27, during which, on account of a disagreement with the trustees, he occupied a building his own. During nearly sixteen years, from 1817 to 1833, Mr. Putnam was the great teacher of youth in the town. He was born in Rutland, Mass., was graduated at Harvard in 1811, a contestant with Edward Everett for the first scholarship of the class, and having taken his second degree in 1817, commenced his work as a teacher, for which he was thoroughly accomplished. He believed in discipline and endeavored to enforce it by means not now recognized as a necessary part of school arrangement. He did not quite understand the limitations of a dull mind, and felt that application alone was necessary to solve the hardest problem and to learn the most difficult lesson. The value of time he believed in, and often advised his scholars to "make time" when they complained that the hours were too short for their purposes. For a brilliant scholar, however, he had the warmest affection. He was in immediate sympathy with a fine recitation, and the boy who made it was at once close to his heart. The relations he estab-

lished between himself and the talented youth who were placed under his care were not those which exist between a teacher and his pupils, but those which bring scholars into a cultivated fraternity. His knowledge of the classics was most accurate, and his faculty for imparting his knowledge was extraordinary. It was his delight to analyze the structure of a sentence, and to solve an idiom, and his rendering of Greek and Latin into English was exact and at the same time graceful and expressive. It has been said that he was harsh—but while he met disobedience with severity and knew no remedy for disorderly conduct but condign punishment, the encouragement he offered the bright and the obedient was as kindly as the influence of spring upon the face of nature. The tributes paid him by his patrons and pupils were full of kind regard and respect, and were a recognition of the power of great and good qualities to obliterate the memory of petty annoyances and irritations. Over all his life was shed the influence of a stern religious faith to whose requirements he was always obedient. In morals, religion and action, he accustomed himself to hew to the line, and he expected those connected with him to follow his example. His books were selected with great care; his horses were swift and spirited; he rode with precision; he marshaled boys like a martinet. "If you had been in Bonaparte's army you would have been shot," he said to a clumsy and unfortunate youth, who dropped his books by the way, as he was marching in line from one school building to another.

Among his neighbors and friends, Mr. Putnam met all his obligations with exactness, and discharged his duties liberally and conscientiously. In the social circle his conversation was most attractive—the outpouring of a well-stored and discriminating mind. In his sphere he was an autocrat, and the community in which he lived recognized his power. As a teacher he strengthened many a weak mind and inspired and developed many a strong one. Timothy and Brewster Walker and Cornelius Conway Felton were scholars of whom he was proud; there were hundreds in whom he took a personal interest through life. He had a keen understanding of the duty of an educator.

In 1827 Mr. Putnam took as an associate teacher the Rev. Cyrus Pierce, who had been a faithful and useful Unitarian clergyman, settled for a long time in North Reading, and subsequently the "father of the normal-school system" of Massachusetts. The sturdy qualities of Mr. Pierce made the association complete.

Mr. Putnam married Abigail S. Fay, of Concord, a sister of Judge S. P. P. Fay, a most amiable and intelligent woman, whose kindly influence was felt wherever she was known. Their children were Rev. Charles S., rector in the Church of the Redeemer, Brooklyn, N. Y., who died in 1860, aged forty-two; Professor John N., of Dartmouth College, a most accomplished Greek scholar and a man of the sweetest character, who died in 1863, aged forty-one; and





Samuel P. P. F., a beautiful boy, who died at the age of four from an accident.

The other preceptors of the academy were Benjamin Eddy Cutting, 1833; John A. Richardson, 1833-36; John White Brown and Charles Allen, 1839-40; John Maynard, 1841-45; Geo. B. Loring, 1841; Hiram Berry, 1845-47. The succeeding teachers were Isaac T. Case and Spencer Wills, of Bowdoin College. The school was given up about 1853, and the old academy building has since been used as a stable to the Bradstreet house, the former residence of Mr. Putnam.

Franklin Academy was one of the first schools of this description, in which female scholars were taught and female teachers employed. During its early years a preceptor and a preceptress were engaged, and the academy building was divided into two rooms for their accommodation. The female teachers were somewhat distinguished. They were Elizabeth Palmer, to whom allusion has already been made; Abby Dowse, who was the mother of the Rev. Chandler Robbins and the Rev. Samuel D. Robbins; Susan Bullfinch, Charlotte Verstelle, Hannah Bancroft, Joanna Prince, Nancy Denney, Adeline and Susan Abbott, daughters of the Rev. Abiel Abbot, of Beverly; Hannah Osgood, Martha Lincoln, Mary Kendall, Lucy Jane Handen.

**INDUSTRIES.**—North Andover has always been a prosperous town. Possessed of a good soil, it attracted an industrious and thrifty body of settlers, and it took a foremost rank in agricultural enterprise, when the cultivation of the soil constituted almost the entire occupation of the people. The farms have varied in size from ten to three hundred acres, and still retain about these proportions. The early occupants of the land possessed great skill in the selection of good soil, and for many years they were able to raise large crops without expensive fertilizing, or an extravagant amount of labor: and the farmers contributed their share of the remarkable crops recorded for Essex County by Colonel Timothy Pickering. The pasturage also was remarkably good. Scattered over the entire territory, from the fertile and well-tilled lands lying east of the Great Pond to the boundary now drawn between the two towns, was a body of yeomanry who secured an ample subsistence from well-managed farms. Their homesteads were in good order and constructed with ample proportions; and they constituted a rural population which, in intelligence and resolution, in good order and business success, could not be surpassed. The history of their farms and homes is a tale of industry and economy, of commanding influence and energy which have entered into every great enterprise in our country. While the fathers have pursued their quiet avocations at home, the sons have gone forth to broader fields and more conspicuous service, having learned the lesson that the same qualities which secure success in a narrow sphere will avail in a large one. In the economy of these farms has been reared many a successful merchant; in the domestic intelligence of

these homes have been taught the rudiments of an education which has often broadened into the capacity and culture required by influential public service.

Formerly the agriculture of the town consisted in the raising of the ordinary products required for subsistence and the local markets. The orchard, the cornfield, the meadow all contributed their proportion, and dairying was esteemed a profitable pursuit. Recently all this enterprise has been diversified, and largely increased by the great local markets which have gathered in the neighborhood, and the growing wealth of the people has converted many of the farms into estates. The North Andover of to-day is not only a good farming town, but presents a most beautiful and attractive landscape, charming enough by nature, but most charming from cultivation.

In the mean time manufactures have increased to a great extent. From the primitive mills of Joseph Parker and Stephen Johnson, who dammed the Cochichewick in 1671 or thereabouts, the growth of mill property has been enormous. It is unnecessary to recall the long list of mill-sites, of which nothing now remains but a decayed timber or the grassy mounds which once restrained the water. Grist-mills were always encouraged by the colonies, and they multiplied on every stream. Fulling-mills were a necessity also. But the spinning and weaving were performed by members of the family, the flax and wool being raised on the farm—and here and there a weaving-room and spinning-wheel, long gone into disuse, may be found in the ancient houses. The later attempts at the manufacture of paper and powder were not entirely successful, and gradually the water power of the town was devoted to turning the wheels of woolen-mills and machine-shops. The early founders of the woolen industry seem to have been attracted by the Cochichewick, and some of the most skillful of those who came from England to pursue this business established themselves here. Arthur, John and James Scholfield were the pioneers, and it was they who gave the first real impetus to that industry which has at last grown to such huge proportions. They bought land in Andover, on the Cochichewick and Shawshin, set up their carding-machines, but ultimately joined Nathaniel Stevens in his more capacious and better organized building on the same stream. On the site of the primitive carding-mill has grown up a large manufacturing establishment, and the Stevens Mill has grown into an imposing structure, well-equipped and successfully managed.

The pioneer in all this enterprise was undoubtedly Nathaniel Stevens. He was born in North Andover, October 18, 1786, a son of Jonathan Stevens; was educated at Franklin Academy with his brothers William, who was graduated at Harvard in 1819, and was for a long time judge of the Municipal Court at Lawrence, and Isaac, who was distinguished as a philanthro-



pist and reformer. He commenced life as a seaman, making a voyage to Leghorn in 1804, and afterwards a trader in his native town from 1810 to 1812. In 1815 he married Miss Harriet Hale, daughter of Moses Hale, of Chelmsford, having, in 1813, through the advice of his father-in-law, embarked in the manufacturing of flannels. Having engaged James Scholfield to manage his mill, he united with Dr. Joseph Kittredge and Josiah Monroe in conducting the business. Captain Stevens (a title which he acquired from commanding a company of militia in 1815) was the first to introduce American-made flannels into the market. In spite of the discouragements of small capital, narrow quarters, a market flooded with foreign goods and the adverse counsels of his friends, he persevered and lived long enough to witness a handsome fortune of his own, and a national woolen industry employing profitably millions of dollars of capital and thousands of operatives enjoying the comforts which attend labor in the United States under the fostering care of a protective tariff. As his business increased, his bounty was bestowed on all the worthy objects of the town. He encouraged internal improvements, cared for the poor, cultivated with great success his ancestral acres, was a model of industry and energy. He never felt fatigue, he said, "until he was fifty years old." He believed in the value of sound learning, and he gave his numerous family the best education to be found. In politics he was an ardent Democrat, a supporter of Jackson, and a most formidable antagonist in debate whenever called on to defend the policy of his administration, and when in his old age he found his country in danger of disruption, his loyalty was fervid, his hand was ever open to support the flag, and his voice was raised in defense of the principles for which the war was fought. He died in 1865.

Capt. Stevens left five sons, all of whom engaged in the business of manufacturing;—Charles A. Stevens, an enterprising manufacturer at Ware, Mass., for some years a member of the Governor's Council; Henry H. Stevens, the founder of an extensive linen-mill in Douglas, Mass.; Moses A. Stevens, the owner of the largest private woolen establishment in the country, formerly a Senator from Essex County and Representative from North Andover; George Stevens and Horace N. Stevens, both of whom were connected with the business in North Andover and who died in middle life. He also left three daughters, Julia Maria, who married the Rev. Sylvan S. Hunting; Catharine, who married the Hon. Oliver Stevens; Ann Eliza, who married John H. D. Smith.

A contemporary of Capt. Stevens was Abraham Marland, who at one time carried on a mill in North Andover.

Next in order on the Cochichewick comes the machine shop established in 1836 on the privilege owned by Isaac Osgood and occupied by his grist-mill. The founders of the machine shop were Charles Barnes, George H. Gilbert and Parker Richardson. The

property underwent several changes until, in 1851, George L. Davis and Charles Furber bought the entire interest. Mr. Furber died in 1857 and his place in the firm was filled by Daniel T. Gage and John A. Wiley, the former of whom withdrew in 1860. In January, 1861, Joseph M. Stone, of Manchester, N. H., became a partner; and in 1867 George C. Davis, Joseph H. Stone and James H. Davis became members of the firm. Since that time George C. Davis has withdrawn to business in Boston, and in 1886 James H. Davis died.

This concern has been remarkably prosperous and has organized a manufacturing village of large proportions and great industry. The partners in the business have all been most exemplary men,—accurate and trustworthy in business, useful members of society, and several of them having rendered valuable service to the State in the Senate and House of Representatives. The founder, the Hon. George L. Davis, still lives to enjoy the ample returns of his business, and the respect and esteem of a community in which he has for a long time been a generous benefactor and a faithful supporter of Christian institutions.

Below this "Machine-Shop Village" stands the North Andover Mill, erected near the site of the old stone mill, which was occupied in 1828 by George Hodges and Edward Pranker. In 1839 the new mill, a large brick structure, was put in operation, and was owned by a company consisting of Eben Sutton, Dr. Joseph Kittredge and George Hodges. This property fell mainly into the hands of Eben Sutton, and together with the Sutton Mill, lower down the stream, constituted a part of the large estate left by Eben Sutton at his death, in November, 1864. The management of this property is now in the hands of General Eben Sutton, a son of General William Sutton, and a nephew of the final founder of the mills.

The three woolen-mills on the Cochichewick employ about three hundred and twenty operatives and manufacture about 1,050,000 pounds of wool.

WITCHCRAFT.—A belief in a personal devil and his agents on earth was a prevailing idea among the Puritans,—an idea which they did not leave behind them when they came to America. Demonology had played a prominent part in every form of faith in the East, from the earliest days. It was worked into Greek philosophy and poetry, and when Christianity dawned, the doctrine of demons was accepted as a necessary element of religious life. The supernatural possessed an indescribable charm, and conjurers and sorcerers and exorcists were considered as important in society as lawyers and the whole order of priestcraft. An epidemic witchcraft broke out in 1374, in France, in which great groups of festive men and women became entranced. For more than two centuries all Europe was apparently overrun with sorcerers and witches, thousands of witches suffering death by fire annually. In the reign of Francis I.





more than one hundred thousand witches are said to have been put to death. Demoniack traditions were brought to this country by the early settlers, and the frightful judicial discipline applied in Essex County in 1692, although of comparatively small extent, constitutes a painful chapter in our colonial history, mitigated only by the fact that here alone in the world the delusion was suppressed by the popular voice—and suppressed completely—while it still lingered in many parts of Europe.

The Tragedy of 1692, usually attributed to Salem, was enacted also in North Andover. More than fifty persons were complained of there, and Dudley Bradstreet, the magistrate who refused to grant more warrants, was obliged to flee for his life. A recital of the experiences of persons belonging to North Andover will give a clear and definite idea of the widespread outrage in which this town was involved.

Nahemiah Abbot was taken to Salem for trial, April 22, 1692, and the following is his examination :

"What say you, are you guilty of witchcraft, of which you are suspected or not? No, sir. I say before God, before whom I stand, that I know nothing of witchcraft. Who is this man? Ann Putnam named him. Mary Wolcott said she had seen his shape. What do you say to this? I never did hurt them. Who hurt you, Ann Putnam? That man. I never hurt her. Ann Putnam said he is upon the beam, just such a discovery of the persons cannot out, she confesses it; and if you would find mercy of God you must confess. If I should confess thus I must confess what is false. Tell how far you have gone; who hurts you? I do not know. I am absolutely free. As you say, God knows. If you will confess the truth, we desire nothing else, that you may not hide your guilt, if you are guilty, and therefore confess it, sir. I speak before God, that I am clear from this accusation. What, in all respects. Yes, in all respects. Both this man hurt you? Their mouths were stopped. You hear several say so, though one cannot open her mouth. I am altogether free. Charge him not, unless it be he. This is the man say some, and some say he is not his true name. How did you know his name? He did not tell me; but other witnesses told me. Ann Putnam said it is the same name, and then she was taken in a fit. Mary Wolcott, is this the man? He is like him, I cannot say it is he. Moses Hewes said, it is not the man. They all agreed the man had a bunch on his eyes. Ann Putnam in a fit, said, Be you the man? Ay, do you say you be the man? Did you put mustard in my eyes? Then he was sent forth till several others were examined. When he was brought in again, by order of much people and many in the windows so that the accused could not have a clear view of him, he was asked to be absent, and the accused to go forth to him and show him in the night, which they did, and in the presence of the magistrates and many others, he came forth with him, one and all, sitting time, but yet said he was like that man, but he had not the scar they saw in his apparition.

"Now, he was a fully-faced man, and stood shaded by reason of his own hair, so that for a time he seemed to some bystanders and observers to be considerably like the person the afflicted did describe.

"Mr. Samuel Paris, being desired to take in writing the examination of Nahemiah Abbot, hath delivered it as above said, and upon hearing the same did so, as can be manifest him.

"JOHN HAWTHORNE, } Assistants.  
"JONA. CORWIN, }

As a fitting sequel to this jargon comes another examination on September 2, 1692, before the same John Hawthorne and his associates—this time of a most exemplary woman, Mary Osgood, wife of a worthy man, Captain Osgood, and bearing a name which has been known at this day as a synonym of all female loveliness and Christian virtues.

"She confesses that about eleven years ago, when she was in a melan-

choly state and condition, she used to walk abroad in her orchard; and upon a certain time she saw the appearance of a cat at the end of the house, which yet she thought was a real cat. However, at that time, it diverted her from praying to God, and instead thereof she prayed to the devil; about which time she made a covenant with the devil, who as a black man came to her and presented her a book, upon which she laid her finger, and that left a red spot; and that upon her signing the devil told her he was her god, and that she should serve and worship him; and she believes she consented to it. She says further that about two years ago, she was carried through the air in company with Deacon Frye's wife, Ebenezer Barker's wife, and Goody Tyler, to five-mile pond, where she was baptized by the devil, who dipt her face in the water and made her renounce her former baptism, and told her she must be his, soul and body, forever, and that she must serve him, which she promised to do. She says the renouncing her first baptism was after her dipping, and that she was transported back again through the air, in company with the forenamed persons in the same manner as she went, and believes they were carried upon a pole. Q. How many persons were upon the pole? A. As I have said before, viz. four persons and no more, but whom she had named above. She confesses she has afflicted three persons, John Sawdy, Martha Sprague and Rose Foster, and that she did it by pinching her bed-clothes and giving consent the devil should do it in her shape, and that the devil could not do it without her consent. She confesses the afflicting persons in the court by the glance of her eye. She says as she was coming down to Salem to be examined she and the rest of the company with her stopped at Mr. Phillips', to refresh themselves, and the afflicted persons being behind them upon the road, came up just as she was mounting again, and were then afflicted, and cried out upon her, so that she was forced to stay until they were all past, and said she only looked that way towards them. Q. Do you know the devil can take the shape of an innocent person and afflict? A. I believe he cannot. Q. Who taught you this way of witchcraft? A. Satan; and that he promised her abundance of satisfaction and quietness in her future state, but never performed anything; and that he has lived more miserably and more discontented since than ever before. She confesses further that she herself, in company with Goody Parker, Goody Tyler and Goody Dean, had a meeting at Moses Tyler's house last Monday night, to afflict, and that he and Goody Dean carried the shape of Mr. Dean, the minister, before them, to make persons believe that Mr. Dean afflicted. Q. What hindered you from accomplishing what you intended? A. The Lord would not suffer it so to be; that the devil should afflict in an innocent person's shape. Q. Have you been at any other witch-meetings? A. I know nothing thereof, as I shall answer in the presence of God and his people; but said that the black man stood before her, and told her that what she had confessed was a lie; notwithstanding she said that what she had confessed was true, and there to put her hand. Her husband being present was asked, if he judged his wife to be in any way discomposed. He answered, that having lived with her so long, he doth not judge her to be any way discomposed, but had to believe what she has said is true. When Mistress Osgood was first called, she afflicted Martha Sprague and Rose Foster by the glance of her eyes, and recovered them out of their fits by the touch of her hand. Mary Lacey and Betty Johnston and Hannah Post saw Mistress Osgood afflicting Sprague and Foster. The said Mary Lacey and Hannah Post and Betty Johnston, Jane and Rose Foster and Mary Richardson were afflicted by Mistress Osgood, in the time of their examination, and recovered by her touching of their hands.

"I, underwritten, being appointed by authority to take this examination, do testify upon oath, taken in court, that this is a true copy of the substance of it, to the best of my knowledge, January 5, 1692-93. The within Mary Osgood was examined before their Majesties Justices of the peace in Salem.

"Attest, JOHN HIGGINSON, Just. Pac."

The following recantation made by these unhappy women presents a most humiliating spectacle of the arrogance of one side and the pitiable demoralization of the other, and fills us with indignation and shame alike:

"We, whose names are underwritten, inhabitants of Andover; when as that horrible and tremendous judgment, beginning at Salem Village in the year 1692, by some called witchcraft, first breaking forth at Mr. Paris' house, several young persons, being seemingly afflicted, did accuse several persons for afflicting them, and many there believing it to be so, we being informed that if a person was sick, the afflicted person could





*Barth Loring*





tell what or who was the cause of that sickness; Joseph Ballard, of Andover, his wife being sick at the same time, he either from himself or by the advice of others, fetched two of the persons called the afflicted persons from Salem Village to Andover, which was the beginning of that dreadful calamity that befell us in Andover, believing the said accusations to be true, sent for the said persons to come over to the meeting-house in Andover, the afflicted persons being there. After Mr. Barnard had been at prayer, we were blindfolded, and our hands were laid on the afflicted persons, they being in their fits and falling in their fits at our coming into their presence, as they said; and some led us and laid our hands upon them, and then they said they were well, and that we were guilty of afflicting them. Whereupon we were all seized as prisoners, by a warrant from the justice of the peace and forthwith carried to Salem. And, by reason of that sudden surprisal, we knowing ourselves altogether innocent of that crime, we were all exceedingly astonished and amazed, and consternated and affrighted out of our reason; and our nearest and dearest relations, seeing us in that dreadful condition, and knowing our great danger, apprehended there was no other way of saving our lives, as the case was then circumstanced, but by our confessing ourselves to be such and such persons as the afflicted represented us to be, they, out of tenderness and pity, persuaded us to confess what we did confess. And, indeed, that confession that it is said we made was no other than what was suggested to us by some gentlemen, they telling us that we were witches, and they knew it, which made us think that it was so; and our understandings, our reason, our faculties almost gone, we were not capable of judging of our condition; as also the hard measures they used with us rendered us incapable of making our defense, but said anything and everything which they desired, and most of what we said, was in effect a consenting to what they said. Some time after, when we were better composed, they telling us what we had confessed, we did profess that we were innocent and ignorant of such things; and we hearing that Samuel Wardwell had renounced his confession, not quickly after condemned and executed, some of us were told we were going after Wardwell. Mary Osgood, Deliverance Dane, Sarah Wilson, Mary Tyler, Abigail Barker, Hannah Tyler."

To the good character of all these women Dudley Bradstreet, Francis Dane, Sr., Thomas Barnard and fifty others bore witness in an elaborate statement.

The credulity and superstition and cruelty of this delusion are all manifested in these papers, and the sons of North Andover may well rejoice that the wave which swept inland from Salem had spent its force when it reached their community, and that with them the first protest against the madness was proclaimed.

**ASSOCIATIONS.**—The citizens of North Andover have always been ready to associate themselves together for mutual improvement. As early as 1825 a temperance society was formed under the presidency of the Rev. Bailey Loring, who was an ardent and exemplary advocate of the cause, and through whose influence such speakers as Lucius Manlius Sargent, E. H. Chapin, Hosea Hildreth were induced to deliver their powerful arguments.

A lyceum was established in 1829, and courses of lectures were delivered in the church by Wilber, the astronomer, and in the hall of the brick-store by Hon. Gayton P. Osgood, Rev. Bailey Loring, Hon. Wm. Stevens, Dr. George Choate, of Salem, and others of distinction in the county. These courses of lectures were continued from time to time for many years.

A debating club was formed in 1841, of which James Stevens was president and George B. Loring secretary. This club met in Franklin Academy and discussed the prominent questions of the day.

A lodge of Free and Accepted Masons was organ-

ized some time prior to 1820, and had a large membership. Its records seem to have disappeared, and in the anti-Masonic excitement following 1830 the existence of the lodge was suspended. The order was revived, however, and June 24, 1875, the officers of Co-chichewick Lodge were installed by the M. W. Percival J. Everett, Grand Master, and officers of the M. W. Grand Lodge of Massachusetts. The order of exercises consisted of a reception of Grand Officers, prayer by the Grand Chaplain, opening hymn, ceremonies of consecration, constitution by the M. W. Grand Master, hymn, procession to the church, installation of Worshipful Master, installation of the Senior Warden, installation of the Junior Warden, installation of the other officers, proclamation, prayer, hymn and an address by Brother Geo. B. Loring.

The officers of the lodge consisted of Louis Weil, W. M.; Joseph F. Allen, S. W.; John Parkhurst, J. W., Horace N. Stevens, Treasurer; Chas. F. Johnson, Secretary; Robert Brookhouse, Jr., S. D.; S. William Ingalls, J. D.; Joseph N. Taylor, Marshal; C. P. Merrill, Chaplain; Isaac N. Dixon, S. S.; Henry Newhall, J. S.; Fred. P. Hanaford, Tyler.

This following are the Past Masters who have presided over the lodge since the installation in 1875: John Parkhurst, 1876-77; Charles P. Merrill, 1878-79; Thomas K. Gilman, 1880-81; William W. Chickering, 1882-85; Loring B. Rea, 1884; Clinton C. Barber, 1885-'86; Calvin Rea, 1887.

The lodge has continued in a flourishing condition and its work is well performed. The officers for the year 1887-88 are Calvin Rea, W. M.; George L. Smith, S. W.; John Barker, J. W.; John H. Sutton, Treasurer; Charles F. Johnson, Secretary; John S. Sanborn, Chaplain; Eben B. Downing, Marshal; Frank Tisdale, S. D.; George S. Weil, J. D.; George H. Perkins, S. S.; Artemas V. Chalk, J. S.; Edmund S. Colby, Organist; Frederick P. Hanaford, Tyler.

The object of this sketch is not so much to give the details or incidents of the town in full, as to record the part taken in the important events of local and national history in that portion of the ancient town first settled, and now called North Andover. The influence of the pioneers here was great; the theatre of their actions for generations was conspicuous in the colony and State; the political position was singularly important; the military service most honorable. The characteristics of the town have been remarkably preserved to this day; its prosperity and importance have been continued.

## BIOGRAPHICAL.

### REV. BAILEY LORING.

The Rev. Bailey Loring was born in Duxbury, Mass., December 10, 1786. He was the youngest child of William and Alithea (Alden) Loring, and



was descended from Caleb Loring, the founder of the family in the town of Hull. His father was a farmer and inn-keeper on the road from Plymouth to Boston, near the line of the town of Pembroke, and was an industrious, prudent citizen, well known to the numerous enterprising young men who traveled on foot from Cape Cod and the Old Colony to Boston in search of that fortune and distinction which many of them secured. The mother of Mr. Loring was a descendant in direct line from John Alden, who came over in the "Mayflower," and who was a prominent magistrate of the Plymouth Colony. Chosen by Miles Standish to solicit for him the hand of Priscilla Mullins, he was met with the well-known inquiry: "Prithee, John, why do you not speak for yourself?" And the romantic matrimonial adventure which followed has become a subject of song and story, and forms a bright and radiant spot in the hard and gloomy annals of the colony. Mrs. Loring inherited the beauty of her paternal ancestor and the quiet wit of her maternal. Of their large family, five sons and two daughters, Bailey seems to have been the favorite. He was a handsome lad of an amiable disposition, which endeared him to the domestic circle, and his apt scholarship led to his selection as the son to be educated for the ministry—a calling to which every Puritan father felt he must dedicate at least one son at whatever cost and degree of self-sacrifice. Bailey Loring was graduated at Brown University in 1807, and entered at once on the study of divinity. He was the first scholar in his class, and had for his competitor and room-mate the Rev. Adoniram Judson, whose career as a missionary among the heathen was so distinguished and important. Mr. Loring commenced his theological studies with the Rev. John Allyn, of Duxbury, a graduate of Harvard in 1785, a rare scholar, a powerful thinker, an impressive preacher and a leader in the Arminian movement of that day, which advanced rapidly to Unitarianism and modified largely the theological thought of New England. The advantages offered by the Theological School at Andover, which was opened September 28, 1808, attracted the attention of all young men preparing for the ministry, and Mr. Loring presented himself at the dedication of that institution for the purpose of entering its classes. To an active and studious and devoted young man, with his mind bent on the sacred calling opening before him, and anxiously searching for the truth, the obligations which would be imposed on a graduate of the school were of deep importance. To professor and student alike, the Andover Creed was laid down as a rule of faith, and belief in it was naturally made the test of fitness for connection with the institution. In an interview with the Rev. Eliphalet Pearson, Mr. Loring was informed that he could not enter upon the ministry with the sanction and license of the school as then founded if he entertained theological views different from those laid down in the

creed and taught by those who believed in it. He therefore returned to Dr. Allyn, and completed his studies under his guidance.

On May 3, 1807, the Rev. William Symmes, who had been pastor of the First Church in Andover for nearly half a century, died, and the parish made diligent search for a successor during the three following years. The Rev. Samuel Gay, on the verge of ordination, proved to be too Calvinistic; the Rev. Samuel Osgood preferred Springfield; the Rev. Timothy Alden and others, who preached as candidates, either did not suit or were not suited, and the choice fell at last on the Rev. Bailey Loring, a young man of twenty-three, who had been recommended as "an Arminian in theology and a Republican in politics" by the Rev. Joseph Richardson, the strong and independent leader, political and theological, in that day in Hingham, whose long service as a pastor covered many generations, and whose civil service extended to the halls of Congress.

He was ordained September 19, 1810. There seems to be no record of the council under which he was ordained or of the clergymen who took part in the services. But he took up the work where the Rev. Dr. Symmes had laid it down, and placed himself in intimate relations with the liberal clergy of that time, between whom and their Calvinistic brethren the lines were soon distinctly drawn. The Rev. Abiel Abbot, whose ministry in Coventry, Conn., was brought to a close by the Consociation of Tolland County "on the ground of his holding heretical doctrines," was his friend and adviser. The Rev. Abiel Abbot, D.D., of Beverly, who until 1810 was in the habit of exchanging with ministers denominated "Orthodox," but who, as the Unitarian controversy advanced, confined himself to an association with those whose "opinions were supposed to be in substantial accordance with his own," was a frequent occupant of Mr. Loring's pulpit. The Rev. Charles Lowell, D.D., sympathized with him and preached often for him. John Bartlett, David Damon, Hosea Hildreth, Cyrus Peirce, Nathaniel Whitman, Samuel Barrett, Ezra Stiles Gannett, Alexander Young, Charles W. Upham, James Flint, John Brazier, Peter Eaton, all frequented his house and his pulpit, and the Essex County Unitarian Association gathered annually around his fireside for friendly intercourse and an encouraging interchange of views. His relations with his Christian brethren of all denominations were friendly and liberal, and he was extremely reluctant to recognize that dividing line between the two branches of the Congregational Church, even while avowing and defending his liberal theological views. The divisions which arose were not created by himself; and when, in response to an invitation, he took part in an ecclesiastical council for the ordination of an Orthodox brother, his questions and suggestions were not considered quite pertinent, he quietly remarked: "It is evident I am but a carnal







Geo. B. Loring





spoke in your spiritual wheel," and withdrew. With the pastor of a church erected by subscriptions of the evangelical churches of Essex County, for the accommodation of a few worshippers in his own parish inclined to orthodoxy, he maintained most friendly intercourse. At the same time he placed the First Church of Andover in the front rank of the Unitarian Congregational Churches of the country and for forty years discharged the duties of a faithful and affectionate pastor and a sound and effective preacher. In the business affairs of his people and his parish, his advice was constantly sought and followed.

In hours of trial and sorrow his consolation came from the heart of a patient, devoted, trusting, pious Christian, and reached with solemn effect and support the wounded spirit. His sympathy with his parishioners was intense,—as intense as that of a father with his children. His manner in the pulpit was most impressive. His sermons were filled with sound advice, broad Christian doctrine, confidence in the Creator and love of his Son Jesus Christ. His prayers, for the fervor and power of which he was distinguished, were uttered in most devotional tones and expressed in language of great Scriptural beauty and devout effect. He was watchful for the general welfare of the community in which he lived; established a lyceum and contributed to its course of lectures; was a warm and early friend of temperance, and organized a total-abstinence society; encouraged the public schools, and visited them often; patronized the Franklin Academy, and always stood by the teachers; joined the young men in a debating club; and encouraged improvements in agriculture, of which he was extravagantly fond. He planted trees along the highway before village improvement societies were known. He represented his town in the Legislature.

Mr. Loring had no love of public display. He did his duty faithfully and conscientiously. In extemporaneous speech he was eminently successful, but he never made a point for the sake of applause, and he never allowed his zeal to outrun his judgment. In settling private disputes and public controversies, he gave each side the weight to which it was entitled, and impressed both with his desire for equal and exact justice. He published but little either in newspaper or magazine, two sermons preached in 1829,—one on "Gratitude" and one on "Profanity," and bound together—constituting all the work of this description he laid before the public. His power with his hearers consisted of his manifest suavity, his clearness of statement, his honest conviction and the sweetness of his voice and the serenity of his manner. He was a favorite and acceptable preacher in the pulpits of his denomination.

Mr. Loring resigned his pastorate February 17, 1859; and he died May 5, 1860. On his death the following resolutions were adopted in honor of his memory:

"Resolved, 1st. That the members of this Religious Society are deeply sensible of the loss they have sustained by the death of the Rev. Bailey Loring, who for nearly forty years was their Spiritual Instructor and Guide, and for nearly half a century an esteemed and respected citizen of the town.

"2d. That during the long period in which he officiated as our minister he displayed, in an eminent degree, all the virtues and graces that belong to and adorn the character of a Christian Divine. That as a preacher he was always found faithful to the cause of his Master in expounding the doctrine and enforcing the precepts of his holy word, reproving and rebuking sin wherever it was to be found, and inciting his hearers by the most alluring and weighty considerations to the love and practice of the Christian virtues. That as a pastor, he was instant in season and out of season in visiting the sick and relieving the distressed, so that every member of his society was sure of finding, at all times and under all circumstances of life, a friend, adviser and comforter in his minister; and that by his death the cause of education, morals and religion in this society and community has lost one of its strongest advocates and most sincere supporters.

"3d. That the interest he manifested in the welfare of his church and society, after his official connection with it was dissolved, and especially his regard for the intellectual improvement of his successors in the ministerial office, by the donation of his theological library for their use and benefit, will always be remembered by us with the most lively emotions of gratitude."

Mr. Loring married, February 20, 1816, Miss Sally Pickman Osgood, eldest child of Isaac and Rebecca T. (Pickman) Osgood, born in Salem, April 12, 1796. At the time of her marriage she was residing with her father in the North Parish, Andover. She was a person of rare beauty, a strong mind, a warm heart, and of fine social and domestic accomplishments. Educated to a life of luxury and ease, she entered upon her duties as a minister's wife with devotion and self-sacrifice, and endeared herself to the people of his charge by her constant sympathy and kindness, and by her zeal in the cause of the church which she had joined. She died July 18, 1835, and neither the pastor nor the people recovered from her loss. She left four sons,—George Bailey Loring, Isaac Osgood Loring, Gayton Pickman Loring and John Alden Loring.

#### GEORGE B. LORING.

Hon. Geo. B. Loring was born in the North Parish, Andover, November 8, 1817. He is the oldest son of the Rev. Bailey and Sally Pickman (Osgood) Loring, daughter of Isaac Osgood and Rebecca T. (Pickman) Osgood, born in Salem April 12, 1796.<sup>1</sup> She was a

<sup>1</sup> See life of Rev. Bailey Loring in this volume.



niece of Samuel Osgood, colonel in the Revolutionary army, member of the Continental Congress, first commissioner of the treasury, first Postmaster-General under Washington, and surveyor of the port of New York. Dr. Loring was fitted for college in Franklin Academy under the tuition of Simeon Putnam and Cyrus Pierce and John Richardson. He entered Harvard University in 1834 and was graduated in 1838. For a year after his graduation he taught school in Boston and in Andover, an occupation which he had taken up before he entered college, in the town of North Reading. In 1839 he began the study of medicine with Dr. Joseph Kittredge, of North Andover, pursued it for a time with Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes, and after attending medical lectures at Harvard and Dartmouth, he received the degree of M.D. at Harvard in 1842. For a short period he practiced in North Andover, and in 1843 he was appointed surgeon of the Marine Hospital, Chelsea, by John C. Spencer, Secretary of the Treasury, and entered upon the duties of his office September 1st of that year. He remained in this position until September 1, 1850, during which time he had made a journey to Europe (in 1848) to witness the revolutionary proceedings of that year, in which he was a correspondent of the *Boston Post*, from London, Paris and Naples; and he had also made an elaborate examination of and report upon the Marine Hospital System of the United States to Hon. Robert J. Walker, Secretary of the Treasury. In 1851 Dr. Loring removed to Salem, where he married and became interested in agriculture and the political questions of the day, and commenced a series of addresses, lectures and essays, which have been delivered in great numbers in many parts of the country. He was appointed postmaster of Salem in 1853 and remained in office until 1857. He then entered upon the business of agriculture with great assiduity and was active in the introduction of new methods and new machinery in that business. He was among the first to introduce the thorough drainage of clay lands into Massachusetts; encouraged the growing of root-crops largely, and imported and bred Ayrshire cattle as the breed best fitted to the New England farm. He became a careful student of farming in all its relations to American society and industry and discussed carefully, in writing and debate, its most important problems. He was for many years a member of the State Board of Agriculture in Massachusetts; was a Trustee of the Massachusetts Society for Promoting Agriculture from 1859 to 1863; was for a long time a Trustee and is now Vice-President of the Essex Agricultural Society, and has published a large collection of books and reports and addresses on the subject of agriculture. In 1864 he founded the New England Agricultural Society and has been its President from that time.

In politics, Dr. Loring was educated as a Democrat, in the school of Jackson, and under the immediate

influence of his uncle, the Hon. Gayton P. Osgood, formerly member of Congress from the Essex North District. He was an earnest advocate of all those measures which were supposed to be conducive to the peace and prosperity of the country. The position of his party deprived him of all voice in the public affairs of Massachusetts, and he found himself at the beginning of the Civil War, which he had long predicted, in opposition to the party in power in the country. On the outbreak of hostilities, however, he commenced at once to encourage the support of the government, discussed in public address the importance of an active prosecution of the war and its inevitable results, and although differing in theory from the administration and believing for a time that the policy which induced the conservative men of Massachusetts to place Gen. Devens in the field as candidate for Governor against Gov. Andrew in 1862, was the way to success and honor, he took part in that struggle. His work as a political writer and speaker now became active and constant. He had taken a leading part in many conventions, State and national, and could not well avoid that kind of service which finds expression in such assemblies. In 1864 he declined to act with the Democratic party longer, refused to attend its national convention and declared himself in favor of an earnest support of President Lincoln's administration. In a letter addressed at that time in reply to Caleb Foote, John Bertram, Stephen B. Ives, Augustus Storey and others of Salem, he said:

"I am confident that our country will come honorably out of this contest, purified as gold that is tried by the fire. However much I may have deplored the strife, however much I may have regretted any policy which seemed to prolong and embitter it, I can see nothing before us at this hour but a determined march in the course pointed out to us. God knows the sufferings of the war are enough to appal the stoutest heart, and the sorrows which follow in its train are innumerable and sickening. But never before has such a service been placed in the hands of a nation as is now submitted to ours. Never before have the statesmen of any age been charged with a duty so momentous as that which rests so solemnly on ours. I would have this people strengthen the hands of all its public servants, confident that when the day of peace does dawn it will bestow its light upon a nation that has emerged so bravely, nobly, and manfully from the attempt to oppress and enslave a great, free government. That the prosperity and happiness, the good order and elevation of the nation absorb all the thought and effort of those who hold our destinies in their hands I cannot for a moment doubt. That our soil has been watered by the blood of our bravest sons in vain I cannot for a moment believe."

And in the same letter he made the following prediction, now so wonderfully fulfilled:

"But when the power of our country shall be established by the sword, and labor shall return to its accustomed channels, the fabulous wealth of Indian hardy compare with that which may be drawn from our immense and untamed soil, and which will be created by the ceaseless ingenuity of our people on the land and on the sea."

Shortly after the re-election of Mr. Lincoln, Dr. Loring was called on to serve as a Republican in the Massachusetts House of Representatives. He entered that body in January, 1866, at a time when the contest had arisen between President Johnson and the party which placed him in power. In the adjustment of matters involved in the domestic econ-





omy of the Commonwealth, Dr. Loring took an active part; but as chairman of the Committee on Federal Relations, he felt especially called on to secure the approval of the Legislature for the stand taken by Charles Sumner in the matter of reconstruction, for which he had been bitterly denounced by the President. In his speech before the House on the state of the Union, he supported his resolutions with such convincing arguments that they were adopted almost unanimously by the House, and the course of Mr. Sumner, which became the policy of the country, was sustained. In 1867 he was returned again to the Legislature by a strong majority.

In 1868 Dr. Loring was selected as a State delegate to the Republican National Convention and took an active part in the nomination and election of Gen. Grant. He entered the field at this time as a lecturer and was constantly employed in this service, much of which was voluntarily contributed to the associations which called on him. In 1872 he was again elected a delegate to the Republican National Convention held in Philadelphia, in which he joined warmly in the renomination of Gen. Grant, and, as chairman of the Massachusetts delegation, brought forward the nomination of Henry Wilson to the Vice-Presidency. Again, in 1876, he was sent from the Sixth Congressional District as a delegate to the Republican National Convention at Cincinnati, and he used every endeavor to secure the nomination of Hon. James G. Blaine as Republican candidate for the Presidency. When the choice of the Convention fell upon Gov. Hayes, he entered warmly into the campaign, and in his canvass for Congress in the same year, carried the Republican ticket safely through his district.

During the campaign of 1872, Dr. Loring was elected Senator from the Second Essex District, composed of Marblehead, Salem, Peabody, Danvers, Wenham and Lynnfield. He was chosen president of the Senate in January, 1873, with but one dissenting vote, and during the four terms, 1873, '74, '75 and '76 he was re-elected to this position. While in the Senate he took active part in the debates on the important questions of the day. He advocated the grant of \$50,000 to the Museum of Comparative Zoology, and secured the passage of the last act in this direction requested by Agassiz for the prosecution and completion of his immortal work. He opposed the union of the Hoosac Tunnel into a line of railroad owned and managed by the Commonwealth, and laid down the policy on which the tunnel was for years conducted. He led off in the debate which ended in the rescinding of the resolutions of the Legislature of 1872, condemning Charles Sumner for his proposition with regard to regimental colors. He presented a carefully-prepared argument on the right of suffrage under a republic in connection with the application for woman suffrage, and he pronounced eulogies on Dr. S. G. Howe, Charles Sumner and

others who died during these years. These speeches were elaborately prepared, and were denominated in certain quarters "Legislative Orations."

Dr. Loring's Senatorial service ended in 1876, and he entered at once on a campaign for Congress in the Sixth Massachusetts District. The district was in the hands of the Democratic party, which was ably represented by the Hon. Charles P. Thompson, of Gloucester. The contest was conducted with great vigor by Dr. Loring, who presented his argument in favor of the Republican candidate for the Presidency and the platform of the party so forcibly that he was elected by a majority of twelve hundred votes. He took his seat in the Forty-fifth Congress and was re-elected to the Forty-sixth. During his Congressional service his speeches commanded the attention of the House. His argument on the currency question in favor of resumption, in November, 1877, was pronounced at the time to be one of the most comprehensive and powerful arguments made on that subject. There is space only for a single excerpt, touching our commercial relations with other countries:

"But we are warned, Mr. Speaker, that the time has now arrived when the United States can establish an independent financial basis, and subduing all commercial nations to her own system, can sit in triumph over a universal monetary empire of their own creating. Now, sir, if this were necessary even, it is impossible. When our bonds were first placed upon the European markets during the war, they were obliged to meet the great discrepancy which then existed between our paper currency and coin. The existence of war was an impediment, it is true, to favorable negotiation. The disturbed condition of the country had injured our credit. But the fact that we were using a legal tender currency vastly depreciated at home, which might at any moment be forced upon the holders of our securities, was the foremost obstacle to our financial success. We were then running a system of our own, and were obliged to pay the price for that luxury. Can we expect to change this natural law of financial intercourse by legislative enactments and bend all policies to our own? No, gentlemen, the attempt to set aside the commercial laws of the world is a reflection upon the commercial wisdom of those nations with whom we are compelled to deal, and is sure to cast discredit upon ourselves. The best commercial relations are established by a monetary system as nearly uniform as possible between those nations which are engaged in commercial transactions. Our trade is becoming more and more intimately connected with the great markets of the world. Can any man suppose that this trade can be advantageously conducted by placing ourselves in discredit, while we are offering bills of exchange drawn on us in the conduct of our internal affairs? I think not. My anticipations with regard to the future of this country will not allow me to entertain a thought of such folly, even through a mistaken policy. The time, I doubt not, is rapidly approaching when the immense resources of our land will so far enter into the commerce of the world that the controlling financial forces will be turned into our hands. It is not unreasonable to suppose that our supply to foreign markets will for the future exceed our demand upon them. The growth of our great inland States, with all the accumulation of production which increasing skill and untiring energy can create, must necessarily stimulate a commercial activity which for power and extent has hardly yet been equaled. The untried channels of communication which make this continent a commercial highway, must of necessity be occupied, not only by our local traffic, but by that tide of trade which has for so many ages set from east to west, and only now requires mercantile enterprise and mercantile solvency to be turned in the opposite direction. Whenever we honestly and firmly place ourselves in accord with the great commercial nations of the earth, and unite with them in supporting a standard of value on which they can all rely, the time will have arrived which will ultimately give us the controlling financial power of the world."

His speech in favor of an appropriation to rebuild William and Mary College was most enthusiastically



received by the entire House, and won for its author a high reputation as a scholar, and the warm respect of educated men in every State in the Union, as well as the deep gratitude of the sons of Virginia everywhere. His eulogy on Judge Collamer, on the presentation of his statue by the State of Vermont, was a just and eloquent tribute to that distinguished statesman. His defense of Massachusetts made a great impression on the House, and refuted completely the charges of disfranchisement and disloyalty which had been made against her. And his support of all measures conducive to the development of agriculture always met with a warm and favorable response on the part of the House.

In his defense of Massachusetts, January 20, 1881, he said:

"Now, sir, how could a State animated by this force, fail to make itself felt in the great crises which have attended the formation and growth of that free Republic of which it forms a part? As a colony, Massachusetts was always heard when the great occasion called for utterance, and always responded to the high and honorable appeal of others. Torn and driven by internal contentions, tossed on a sea of civil strife, about every this country of schoolhouses and meeting-houses presented a ready and a bold front for popular right and privilege. The people of Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay were a valiant as well as a godly people. They carried the sword of the Lord and of valour, as their ancestors and brethren did at Marston Moor and Naseby, and they behaved as men in the struggle of Miles Standish as they did in the business of Peter Brewster. During the two centuries and a half of their existence in this continent they have been ready at any time to go to the sword. In the early Indian wars they traversed the forests with the fatal persistence of the slow bow, from the waters of the Bay to the Green Mountains, and from the Herring towns, at Bristol and Essex, to the eastern lakes, upon whose bosoms fall the shadows of Agassiz and Mount Washington. In the last great struggle of France to retain her foothold on this continent Massachusetts soldiers stormed Abraham Heights with Wolfe, and cherished his memory for generations in their households; the merchants of Massachusetts supplied the outfit for the siege of Louisbourg, and left behind them, as a proud memento for their sons, the tokens of regard for their devotion bestowed upon them by the Colonial Legislature; and to-day the Senate of Massachusetts, as it assembles in its chamber, passes beneath the Puritanism which beat the tattoo, and the Puritan musket which blazed in the line when the power of the mother country was established along the waters of the St. Lawrence and far on toward the frozen seas. . . . The history of mankind is radiant with its record of great deeds and inspiring valour, but not one can compare that which led to the establishment of a new Republic when a little band of Puritan fathers, with the meagre authority of Great Britain and Ireland, that first general assembly of the colonies, met and brought New England and New York, New Jersey and Delaware, Pennsylvania and Virginia, Maryland and the Carolinas and Georgia into a united Commonwealth, whose memories are still fondly cherished and whose bond is not yet broken."

As pertinent to the vital issues of to-day, it may be well in this connection to give one or two illustrations of Dr. Loring's thoughts on the subject of "American Industry," the first of which was delivered in the House of Representatives, May 23, 1878:

"Now, gentlemen, do you ask how this unparalleled growth of a nation, this sudden, full armed creation, assuming in less time than was counted the infancy of the ancient States a port and mien worthy of a man, was brought into existence? Undoubtedly much is to be set down to the spirit of liberty, which, meeting her home here, has breathed into the souls of men elsewhere, that deep desire which defies all dangers and trials. Of the five and a half millions of the sons of men who have sought a home upon our soil, what a multitude had dreamed of the charms of a free country! But they had been told, too, of the broad lands waiting for the civilizing touch; and they had heard, moreover,

that under the protection of good government their skilled labor would meet with ample reward. That policy to which I have alluded, as declared by the founders of our Government, brought over from the mills of England and Scotland, in the early days of the Republic, a thrifty, skillful and ingenious race of men, who planted the seeds of our manufactures all along the water courses of New England. And the same policy has made the ocean a highway for the laboring classes of Europe as they pass from the narrow lanes of the Old World into the broad avenues to social and civil elevation, which citizenship under a free government offers. We have reason to be grateful to our fathers for the high virtues which they exercised, for their wisdom and for their great accomplishments. But they performed no higher service than when they declared it to be the duty of government to protect its own people in all their industries, and thus to preserve those characteristics which constitute, in every variety, the nations of the earth. . . .

It was with them a question of how best to establish and invigorate an American nationality as distinct from every other nationality, and as they surveyed with proud gaze the great social and civil system which they had founded, they resolved to surround it with every necessary support, to the end that its grand design might be accomplished; and so far as France preserves her very life-blood by protecting her own artisans and manufactures against foreign competition, and England protects her cheap labor and great masses of capital against the skilled products of more favorable latitudes, so they resolved that the toiling citizen, the dearer capital and the better paid laborer of America should at least try the great experiment unmolested."

And this from his speech at the Cooper Institute, New York, November 29, 1881:

"It is the intimate relation between agriculture and manufactures which makes general farming what it is, and will probably make American farming what it should be. The benefit, moreover, which the manufacturer derives from his free and intimate relations with the agriculture of the country cannot be overlooked. On the one hand, drawing his raw material largely from the immense and various resources of our country—iron, cotton, wool, hides, etc., and on the other hand, finding a home market in the great agricultural regions, the American manufacturer possesses opportunities and advantages hardly known to any other country on earth, and illustrating most forcibly the self-supporting power of our people. So closely are these interests united that what benefits one naturally benefits both. What injures one injures both. The same policy which has been extended over our mills has been extended also over our fields, and the result in both cases will demonstrate its true value. While the American manufacturer has furnished the American farmer with almost all his necessary articles, such as cotton goods and fabrics, boots and shoes, axes, forks, spades, shovels, hoes, harrows, plows, rakes, cultivators, reapers, mowers, wagons, tinware, glassware, etc., cheaper than they can be purchased in the English market, the American farmer has furnished his products, wool, cotton, provisions, grain, etc., at rates established by our own supply and demand, and not in accordance with rates fixed abroad. The traffic is free and equal, and it is between parties enjoying equal privileges and opportunities; rates of interest, wages of labor, taxes, social and civil expenses, all being regulated by one system and varying only with different localities."

In 1884 Dr. Loring was appointed United States Commissioner of Agriculture by President Garfield, who gave him his commission and instructions the day before he was mortally wounded. The instructions of the President were strong and earnest for the enlargement and development of the department, and to this work Dr. Loring applied himself with great diligence until the close of his official career as commissioner, April, 1885. Under his guidance the department secured the respect and confidence of the American people, and was referred to abroad as a model organization of the kind. In the collection and arrangement of statistics it advanced to the front rank, and was considered authority on industrial matters that came before it. In the investigation of the annual industry of the country, and into the





*George L. Davis*





nature and danger of animal diseases, it secured confidence and collected a large fund of valuable information. In the examination of the sugar-producing qualities of various plants it secured the reputation of carrying on fair, dispassionate and useful experiments. In all entomological and botanical work it obtained the best scientific aid, and Congress manifested a growing confidence in the department by increasing its appropriations from year to year, often beyond the estimates of the commissioner.

Meanwhile the amount of work which Dr. Loring did outside of the department was very large. In many of the States he delivered addresses on questions relating to agriculture, and joined the boards and associations in their deliberations for the benefit of that industry. He discussed the industries of the South at the exhibition at Atlanta in 1881; he addressed the Mississippi Valley Sorghum-growers in 1862; the Cattle Association at Chicago in 1862; the Dairy Association of Iowa in 1863; the American Forestry Association at Cincinnati in 1862; at St. Paul in 1863, at Montreal in 1864, besides speaking at many State fairs from Wisconsin to South Carolina.

In 1872 Dr. Loring was appointed Centennial Commissioner for the State of Massachusetts, and was placed on the executive committee of the commission where he served until the close of the exhibition in Philadelphia in 1876.

Dr. Loring was first married in November, 1851, to Mary Tappan Pickman, daughter of Dr. Thomas and Sophia (Palmer) Pickman, a most brilliant and accomplished woman, who died December 1, 1878, leaving one daughter, Sallie Pickman Loring. In 1880 he married Mrs. Anna Smith Hildreth, of New York, whose rare social gifts and hospitality have made his home a centre of great enjoyment and happiness.

Dr. Loring still takes an active part in the public discussions of the day, and a portion of his contributions to the literature of the times may be found in the "History of Literature in Salem," in this volume.

#### HON. GEORGE L. DAVIS.

The subject of this sketch was a farmer's son, born in Oxford, Mass., in 1816. He descended in a direct line from William Davis, who came from Wales to this country about 1635, and settled in Roxbury, Mass.

His boyhood days were spent upon his father's farm, and to the discipline which farm-labor brought, together with the guidance and moral training given by noble Christian parents, is largely due his physical strength, sterling integrity and large business capacity.

He was educated in the common schools of his native town principally, only enjoying for a short time the privilege of a select school. When eighteen years old he taught the village school in the neigh-

boring town of Sutton, Mass.; but deciding that a business career was preferable to that of teaching, and that a trade might be "a stepping stone" to business, he left home, with his parents' consent, in the spring of 1835, for Andover, where he went to work for the then well-known firm of Barnes, Gilbert & Richardson, machinery builders, to learn the machinist's trade. In the spring of 1836 his employers removed their business to North Andover, to their new shop. In 1844, when the old firm dissolved, Mr. Davis became the junior member of the succeeding firm of Gilbert, Gleason & Davis. In 1851 this firm dissolved, and a new co-partnership was formed with Mr. Davis as senior partner, and one associate, Mr. Charles Furber, under the firm-name of Davis & Furber, continuing the business of building wool machinery, at the same place. The firm of Davis & Furber was successful and continued without interruption until the death of Mr. Furber, in 1857.

This was a sad loss to Mr. Davis, as in the death of his partner he parted with a true friend, an honest, upright man, a most genial and kind business partner, and a good business adviser. After the death of Mr. Furber, still keeping the old firm-name of Davis & Furber, he associated with himself John A. Wiley and D. T. Gage, and continued the business of manufacturing wool machinery. In 1860 Mr. Gage withdrew, and in 1861 Joseph M. Stone entered the firm, and this last co-partnership continued until 1882, when the corporation of the Davis & Furber Machine Company was formed, with Mr. Wiley as president and Mr. Davis as treasurer. The business of this corporation is the manufacture of wool machinery, shafting, pulleys and all kinds of card clothing. Commencing business with limited means and a small water privilege, the firm, in its successful growth, has seen the thriving village of North Andover grow up around it, the city of Lawrence spring into existence and develop into a large manufacturing centre, and the entire manufacturing business of the country reach its now extensive proportions, to all of which this firm has very largely contributed. They began with a very few men, but have gradually increased and enlarged, until now in their shops and foundries they employ a large number of men. But Mr. Davis is not only well known in business circles, but has been widely an influential man in other respects. He has always resided in North Andover, and early in life became actively identified in all religious, educational and charitable matters. He has been an active member of the Congregational Church in North Andover for many years, and was deacon of that church from 1857 to 1885. The firm were large contributors when the new church building was erected, in 1865.

Mr. Davis is a large stockholder in the Bay State National Bank, of Lawrence, and for some twenty years has been its president. In politics he has always been a Republican, and his party, honoring



him and his ability, have sent him four times to the State Senate; he was elected and served in the sessions of 1859 and 1860, and also 1875 and 1876. During all four terms he ranked well as a Senator and held important committeeships.

## CHAPTER CXL.

### GROVELAND.

BY WILLIAM T. DAVIS.

On the 4th of September, 1639, the town of Rowley, which had been settled by Rev. Ezekiel Rogers with about sixty families, and which was called for a time Rogers' Plantation, was incorporated. It included the territory now occupied by the towns of Rowley, Georgetown, Groveland, Boxford and Bradford. The name of Rowley was adopted in honor of Mr. Rogers, who had come from Rowley, a parish of East Riding, Yorkshire, England. Among the companions of Mr. Rogers were John and Robert Haseltine and William Wilde, and in 1649 these three men, desirous of more land, sought the rich meadows and fields along the Merrimac, in the Indian territory of Pentucket, for a permanent settlement. They received grants from the town of Rowley, each of forty acres of upland, the use of the commons for twenty head of cattle for each, and also for each twenty acres of meadows, one thousand pipestaves annually, for seven years, from 1649, timber for building a house and for fencing and firewood.

As the number of settlers in Rowley village, on the Merrimac, increased, the name of the settlement was changed to Merrimac and finally to Bradford. The first mention of the name "Bradford" in the Massachusetts records is under date of October 13, 1675, in the list of rates for expenses of King Philip's War, but the name is mentioned in the town records as early as 1665. It took its name from Bradford in England, the native town of some of the early settlers. The incorporation of the town is expressed in the following order passed by the General Court May 27, 1668:

"In answer to the petition of the inhabitants of Rowley, living over against Haverhill, the Court, having considered the petition, perused the town of Rowley's grant to the petitioners, heard Rowley's Deputy and also considering a writing sent from Rowley with what els hath been presented in the case, doe find that there is liberty granted to the petitioners by the town of Rowley to provide themselves of a minister and also an intent to release them from the township when they are accordingly provided, and therefore see not, but this Court may grant the petitioners to be a township provided they doe gett and settle an able and orthodox minister and continue to maynteyne him or els to remaine to Rowley as formerly."

A meeting of the town is recorded as having been held February 20, 1668-69, at which Thomas Kimball was chosen constable; John Gage, Robert Haseltine,

Joseph Pike, John Griffing and John Tenney, selectmen; Joseph Pike, clerk of writs; Samuel Worcester, Benjamin Gage, Benjamin Kimball and David Haseltine, overseers.

In 1667 or 1668, Rev. Zachariah Symmes was engaged as pastor, with a salary of £40, one-half of which was to be paid in wheat, pork, butter and cheese and the other half in corn and cattle. During the first two years religious services were held in a private house, perhaps in the parsonage which was built at once after the arrival of Mr. Symmes and under his direction. Another parsonage was built opposite the old cemetery in 1708, which is described as being forty-six feet by twenty, with fifteen feet stud and four "chimbleys."

On the 18th of April, 1670, it was voted by the townsmen that "Sargent Gage, Robert Haseltine, Benjamin Kimball, Thomas Kimball, John Simmonds, Nicholas Wadlington, and John Griffing be chosen for the ordering, setting up and furnishing of a Meeting House according to their best discretion for the good of the town."

The erection of a meeting-house had been in contemplation several years, as is shown by a vote passed January 5, 1665, the preamble of which is: "Whereas, John Haseltine, sen., of Haverhill, having given ye inhabitants of ye town of Bradford one acre of land to set their meeting-house on, and for a burying place," etc.

Notwithstanding the church had been practically in existence since 1668, and had since that time listened to the preaching of their pastor, Mr. Symmes, it was not until the 27th of December, 1682, that it was formally organized. On the same day Mr. Symmes was ordained. Those subscribing the creed were Zachariah Symmes, Samuel Stickney, John Tennie, John Simmons, Wm. Duchence, Joseph Palmer, Thomas West, David Haseltine, Richard Hall, John Watson, Samuel Haseltine, Robert Haseltine, Joseph Bailey, Abraham Haseltine, Benjamin Kimball, Robert Savory, John Hardy and John Boynton. In 1705, Mr. Hale was engaged as a colleague to Mr. Symmes, who had become somewhat infirm, and on the 22d of March, 1707, Mr. Symmes died. During his pastorate a new meeting-house was built on the hill a few rods east of the old one, which is described as forty-eight feet long, forty wide and twenty feet stud.

Mr. Symmes was the son of Rev. Zechariah Symmes, of Charlestown, who came from England in 1634. The latter was born in Canterbury, England, in 1599, and was the grandson of William Symmes, ordained to the ministry in 1588, and great-grandson of another William, who was a distinguished Protestant in the reign of Queen Mary. Mr. Symmes was born in Charlestown, January 9, 1637, and graduated at Harvard in 1657, the first scholar in a class of seven, one of whom was John Cotton, son of Rev. John Cotton, of Boston, and for many years the pastor of the First Church in Plymouth. Another





member of the class was Rev. John Hale, who was probably the Mr. Hale selected as the colleague of Mr. Symmes, and whose full name is not given in the records. Mr. Symmes preached in Rehoboth from 1661 to 1666, and married, in the latter year, Susannah Graves, of Charlestown. A second wife was Mrs. Mehitabel (Palmer) Dalton, widow of S. Dalton, of Hampton, New Hampshire.

The successor of Mr. Symmes was his son Thomas, who was born February 1, 1667, and graduated at Harvard in 1698. He was settled at Boxford, December 30, 1702, and installed at Bradford in December, 1708. He died October 6, 1725, and was succeeded by Joseph Parsons, who was ordained June 8, 1726. At his ordination Rev. Joseph Parsons, of Salisbury, preached the sermon, Rev. John Rogers, of Boxford, gave the charge, and Rev. Moses Hale, of Newbury, the right hand of fellowship.

It is unnecessary to follow the history of this church farther, for in the first year of the pastorate of Mr. Parsons, the church in the East Parish of Bradford (now Groveland) was organized, and became the nucleus of that community which, more than a hundred years later, obtained the privileges and benefits of a separate municipal government.

The church in the East Parish of Bradford was incorporated June 17, 1726, and formally organized on the 7th of June, 1727. Immediately after the incorporation a meeting-house was erected near the site of the present one, and the first parish meeting was held July 4, 1726. At first forty-eight males were dismissed from the parent church and admitted as members of the new organization. These were:

William Balch.	Caleb Hopkinson.
Samuel Tenney.	Abraham Parker, Jr.
Richard Bailey.	Samuel Jewett.
William Savory.	William Hardy.
Samuel Hale.	Francis Walker.
John Hutchins.	Elen Kimball.
Daniel Hardy.	Moses Worcester.
Ezra Ball.	Thomas Stickney.
Thomas Savory.	Benjamin Hardy.
James Bailey.	Thomas Hardy.
Ezek Hardy.	Frederic Wood.
James Hardy, Jr.	Robert Savory.
Thomas Hardy, Jr.	Joseph Hardy, Jr.
Samuel Hale, Jr.	James Hardy.
Francis Jewett.	David Tenney.
Joseph Worcester.	Edward Hardy.
William Hardy.	Timothy Hardy.
John Pemberton.	Jonathan Hale.
Jacob Hardy.	Jonathan Tenney.
Joseph Hardy.	Joseph Bailey.
Richard Hardy.	Joshua Richardson.
Thomas Bailey.	Thomas Hardy (Jr.).
Elen Burbank.	Samuel Hardy.
Samuel Palmer.	Jonas Platts.

On the 28th of July, 1727, fifty-three females were admitted, and these were, —

Widow Bailey.	Jane Harriman.
Widow Hopkinson.	Hannah Tenney.
Widow Hardy.	Hannah Bailey.
Wife of Thomas Hardy, Sr.	Hannah Savory.
Wife of Joseph Hardy.	Hannah Hardy.

Wife of James Hardy.	Hannah Kimball.
Wife of Thomas Hardy, Jr.	Hannah Hardy.
Wife of Richard Hardy.	Hannah Richardson.
Wife of John Tenney.	Hannah Smith.
Wife of Samuel Hardy.	Emmie Bailey.
Martha Hopkinson.	Emmie Foster.
Martha Hardy.	Dorothy Tenney.
Martha Pemberton.	Abigail Bailey.
Martha Leason.	Abigail Worcester.
Sarah Worcester.	Mary Wood.
Sarah Hardy.	Mary Stickney.
Sarah Burbank.	Mary Hardy.
Sarah Tenney.	Mary Bailey.
Sarah Jewett.	Bethiah Hutchens.
Elizabeth Hutchens.	Rebecca Savory.
Elizabeth Worcester.	Rebecca Hardy.
Elizabeth Parker.	Mervie Worcester.
Elizabeth Palmer.	Deborah Hardy.
Joanna Bailey.	Deborah Wallingford.
Ruth Jewett.	Esther Hardy.
Anna Jewett.	Mehitabel Hardy.
Anna Platts.	

On the 7th of June, 1727, the day of the organization of the church, Rev. William Balch was ordained, having preached for the church since the preceding November. The council at the ordination consisted of the churches of Newbury, Byfield, Beverly and Haverhill. Samuel Tenney was the elder of the church, and Richard Bailey deacon. Mr. Balch was to receive one hundred pounds settlement and one hundred pounds salary and the use of the parsonage. At the end of the first year the church membership had increased from 101 to 179, and William Hardy, Jr., was chosen assistant deacon. Mr. Balch was an educated man, a graduate of Harvard, in the class of 1724, fifteen of whose forty members became ministers. Through a long pastorate of sixty-five years he retained the affection and esteem of his people, and closed his pastorate with his life in 1792. During the last year of his life, in 1791, a new meeting-house was built. On the 17th of November, 1779, Rev. Ebenezer Dutch, of Ipswich, was ordained as colleague, and on the death of Mr. Balch became full pastor, dying in the service of the church, August 4, 1814.

On the 28th of September, 1814, Rev. Gardner Braman Perry was installed and continued his pastorate until his death, December 16, 1859. Mr. Perry was a man who early won, and retained until his death, a wide reputation among the clergy of the Orthodox Congregational faith. He was born in Norton, Mass., and graduated at Union College in 1804. Before his settlement at East Bradford he had been a tutor in Union College, and received honorary degrees from his *alma mater* and Harvard in 1814. On the 4th of September, 1851, Rev. David A. Wasson was settled as his colleague, but only remained one year. Mr. Wasson was a graduate of the Bangor Seminary, and, though his confession of faith was believed to be sufficiently evangelical, he soon manifested in his preaching a strong disinclination to advocate the tenets of the church in which he had been ordained. He was, in fact, more Unitarian than Orthodox, and,



of course, his ministry was unsatisfactory to his people. The result was the resignation of Mr. Wasson at the end of a year, and the secession of some who had been leading members of the church, but who were more inclined to follow the teachings of their colleague pastor than those of the older faith. Those who adhered to Mr. Wasson hired the meeting-house of the Methodist Society, then in a languishing condition, and formed an Independent Congregational Society with him as their pastor. He was followed by Rev. James Richardson, whose service continued one year, after which time the society gradually disintegrated, finally restoring the meeting-house to the Methodists for their permanent use.

After the resignation of Mr. Wasson, Rev. Daniel Pickard was ordained as colleague, and remained about four years. Thomas Daggett was ordained as colleague March 4, 1857, and in the same year the name of the church was changed by a legislative act from the Second Congregational Church of Bradford to the Congregational Church of Groveland. Mr. Daggett was dismissed April 20, 1864, and Rev. Martin S. Howard was ordained December 29th in the same year. Mr. Howard was dismissed October 5, 1868, and was succeeded by Rev. John C. Paine, who was installed April 20, 1870, and dismissed October 30, 1877. Rev. James McLean supplied the pulpit for a time after the dismissal of Mr. Paine, and was followed by Rev. Augustus C. Swain July 6, 1881, and by the present pastor, Rev. Bernard Copping, in October, 1887.

Besides the Congregational Church, a Methodist Church was organized in East Bradford before its incorporation as Groveland, and must be referred to as one of the preliminary steps leading to a distinct municipality. This church was formed on the 15th of October, 1831, under the direction of Rev. Thomas W. Gile, a Methodist Episcopal local preacher, and Aaron Wait, who was employed by the Christian Union Association. Rev. Charles S. McReading was the first preacher sent by the Conference, and began his pastorate in the spring of 1832. In 1833 the meeting-house now used by the society was built, and March 3, 1838, the "Trustees of the First Methodist Episcopal Meeting-House in Bradford" were incorporated. Mr. McReading died April 11, 1866. In 1833 Rev. Robert D. Easterbrook took charge, and was succeeded in 1834 and 1835 by Rev. David Culver. Mr. Easterbrook died in November, 1852. Rev. Morely Dwight followed Mr. Culver in 1836, and was succeeded by Rev. Apollon Hale in 1837-38. Mr. Dwight died in 1838. Rev. William Ramsdell followed in 1839, and Rev. Increase B. Bigelow in 1840. From 1841 to 1843, inclusive, Rev. Bryan Morse, a local preacher, supplied, and from about 1853 to 1859 the church was dropped from the Conference, the meeting-house being used a part of the time by the adherents of Rev. Mr. Wasson, who had formed themselves into an Independent Congregational So-

ciety. On the 11th of May, 1853, an act of the Legislature was passed changing the name of "The Trustees of the First Methodist Episcopal Meeting-House in Bradford" to "Trustees of the First Independent Church in Groveland."

In 1859 the Methodists reoccupied their house and their pulpit was supplied by Rev. Horace Moulton. Mr. Moulton died April 11, 1873. Rev. B. W. Chase had charge in 1860, Rev. Newell S. Spaulding in 1861, and during the next three years the pulpit was supplied by Rev. E. Peaslee. Rev. John Capen had charge in 1866-67 and Rev. S. H. Noon 1868, '69, '70. In 1871-72 Rev. H. S. Booth had charge of the Methodist pulpits in both Georgetown and Groveland, and in 1873 Rev. Henry Mathews was assigned to Groveland. In 1874-75 Rev. A. H. Dwight had charge; in 1876 Rev. Lewis Fish, who died March 26, 1877; in 1877 Rev. R. W. Allen; and in 1878 the pulpit was supplied by Rev. H. S. Booth. From 1879 to 1881, inclusive, Rev. A. W. Baird had charge; in 1882 Rev. J. Alphonso Day; in 1883-84 Rev. Walter Wilkie; and in 1885, to June, 1886, Rev. F. C. Thompson. Since that time the pulpit has been supplied by Rev. David Roberts. The Methodist Church is now in a prosperous condition. In January, 1871, the debt of the society was two thousand three hundred dollars, of which one thousand two hundred dollars was paid by Abner Chase, Eliza D. M. Merrill, W. W. Ray and Allen Hardy, by the surrender of notes held by them for money advanced. In 1873 Miss Merrill surrendered a note for one thousand dollars, which, with interest, amounted to one thousand five hundred dollars. In that year the meeting-house was altered and improved at a cost of two thousand six hundred dollars and reopened on the 23d of December. Towards defraying the cost of the work on the house, Miss Merrill contributed one thousand six hundred dollars, and in 1881, the semi-centennial year of the society, the last remnant of the debt, amounting to nine hundred and fifty dollars, was canceled.

There are other matters in the history of the town of Bradford which should be treated in a sketch of Groveland, besides those connected with the churches of the East Parish. The educational as well as the religious career of the town deserves a place in this narrative. The first allusion in the records to a school is in the year 1701, when it was voted "that the selectmen should provide a school according to their discretion and that they should assess the town for the expense of the same." We are, in our day, so accustomed to public schools, and are so apt to look upon them as essential to popular education, that we are inclined to look on the absence or scarcity of these schools in the days of our fathers as indications of their disregard of the cause of education. We must remember that popular free education has grown with the growth of our institutions, and that not until after the Revolution was it established on a solid and permanent founda-





tion. Parental education and private schools largely prevailed, and the fact that Harvard College was so early established, for admission to which competent teachers must have been employed, is sufficient evidence of the interest felt in early days in the best instruction of youth.

In 1789 the town voted "one month's schooling at the school-house near John Burbank's," in the East Parish.

In 1795 the first School Committee was chosen in Bradford, consisting of Nathaniel Thurston, James Kimball, Nathan Burbank and Seth Jewett. But the old fondness for private schools lingered long after the enlargement and improvement of the public school system. It manifested itself all over New England in the formation of academies, some of which still flourish, but many of which have languished and finally disappeared. In the establishment of these academies the town of Bradford took a leading and prominent part. At a meeting of a number of its inhabitants held in the First Parish on the 7th of March, 1803, "it was mutually agreed upon that a building should be erected for an academy, and subscriptions were raised to defray the charges of building said house."

In three months the building was completed and the academy opened for pupils. Samuel Walker, of Haverhill, was the first principal and Hannah Swan the preceptress. It was incorporated February 10, 1804, and the preamble of the act of incorporation states that Rev. Jonathan Allen, Benjamin Carlton, Daniel Carlton, Joseph Chadwick, Jonathan Chadwick, Asa Gage, Uriah Gage, Jeremiah Gage, Peter Gage, John Griffin, John Haseltine, Moses Kimball, James Kimball, Edmund Kimball, Edward Kimball, John Smiley, Nathaniel Thurston, Ezra Trask, Benjamin Walker and Samuel Webster had built a good and convenient house for the purpose of an academy, for the education of youth of both sexes in the West Parish of Bradford, and had given the sum of fifteen hundred dollars, the interest of which was to be applied to the support of the academy. Among the successors of Samuel Walker, the first principal, there were many distinguished men. Samuel Greeley, a native of Wilton, N. H., took charge of the academy in 1804; Rev. Dr. James Flint, in 1805; Rev. Abraham Durnham, D.D., of Dunbarton, N. H., in 1806; Isaac Morrell, of Needham, Mass., in 1807; Samuel Peabody, of Boxford, in 1808; Rev. Daniel Hardy, of Bradford, in 1809-10; Rev. Luther Bailey, of Canton, Mass., in 1811; Hon. Samuel Adams, of Rowley, Richard Kimball, of Bradford, and Rev. Eben Peck Sperry, of New Haven, Conn., in 1812; Hon. Nathaniel Dike, of Beverly, in 1813; Daniel Noyes, in 1814; and Benjamin Greenleaf, from 1814 to 1836, who was the last male principal. Since 1836 the academy has been devoted exclusively to the education of girls, and has been under the principal charge of Miss Abigail C. Haseltine (who had been precep-

tress from 1815 to 1836), Miss Abby Haseltine Johnson, Miss Annie E. Johnson and others with short terms of service.

Rev. James Flint, one of the principals, was born in Reading, Mass., Dec. 10, 1779, and graduated at Harvard in 1802. He was the pastor of the East Church in Salem from September 19, 1825, to December 17, 1851, and died March 4, 1855. Isaac Morrell graduated at Harvard in 1805. Benjamin Greenleaf was born in Haverhill, September 25, 1786, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1813. His name is well known by teachers and pupils of the two last generations as that of the author of a series of mathematical text-books used in the schools. He died in Bradford, October 29, 1864.

But the East Parish was not far behind the West in the cause of academic education. It was far enough behind, however, to see the public schools established on a solid foundation, and affording adequate instruction before its movement was made towards the establishment of an academy. The eighteen years which had elapsed since the organization of the Bradford Academy, during which the public school system had not thoroughly won popular favor and support, enabled that institution to gain a reputation so widespread and so great that the impetus it received has not even now perceptibly diminished. The academy in the East Parish, coming at so late a day, found it difficult to compete with the privileges of the schools, and finally succumbed under the burden it was attempting to carry. It was organized in 1821, and incorporated February 7, 1822. The first section of the act of incorporation provides that "Rev. Gardner B. Perry, Benjamin Parker, M.D., Moses Parker, William Greenough, Jeremiah Spofford, M. M. S. Ebenezer Rollins, Capt. George Savery, Capt. Samuel Tenney and Phineas Parker are nominated and appointed trustees of the said Academy, and they are hereby incorporated into a body politic by the name of the Trustees of Merrimac Academy in the County of Essex." The act provided that it was established "for the education of youth of both sexes in such languages, and such of the liberal arts and sciences as the trustees may direct." The academy building was raised July 4, 1821, and cost about nine hundred dollars. In its most flourishing days its pupils numbered from fifty to seventy-five. More than one thousand of the inhabitants of Groveland and vicinity received the greater part of their education within its walls, there seeking a higher education in Greek and Latin and mathematics than the common schools afforded, and eagerly taking advantage of its privileges. The academy was sustained partly by tuition fees, and partly by contributions from its friends. Its early preceptors were Stephen Morse, David L. Nichols, John Tenney, Alonzo Chapin, Sylvanus Morse, Rufus C. Hardy and A. J. Saunders. In later years its teachers have been females,





among whom have been Miss Hattie Paine and Miss Martha and Miss Jenny Thompson.

The academy was burned September 1, 1870, and rebuilt in 1871 at the cost of two thousand dollars, with increased accommodations. In 1878 the trustees leased the academy to the town for the term of ninety-nine years, the consideration being an agreement to occupy it for educational and public purposes, and to assume the debts of the academy, which amounted to \$1229.92. Since the town has occupied it, the building has been enlarged, at a cost of eighteen hundred dollars, and now furnishes accommodations for two schools in the lower story, and for a Town Hall in the upper.

The school system of the town at the present time is well supported and well managed. According to the last report of the School Committee, covering the year 1886, there were at that time ten schools,—the High School, with an average membership of twenty-eight, under the charge of R. A. Hutchinson; the Central Grammar School, with an average membership of twenty-eight, under the charge of Miss Mattie P. Parker; the South Grammar School, with an average membership of twenty-five, under Miss Hattie E. Boynton; the Central Intermediate, with a membership of forty-one, under Miss Abbie C. Hopkinson; the South Intermediate, at various times under Mrs. Sarah L. Peabody, Miss Ada R. Mason and Miss M. Newhall; the East Mixed School, at different times under Miss Clara M. Organ and Miss Amy C. White; the North Primary, with membership of twenty-one, under Miss Sadie Stickney; the Central Primary, with a membership of thirty-nine, under Miss Mattie I. Morse; the First South Primary, with a membership of fifty-one, under Miss Eleanor A. Foster; and the Second South Primary, with a membership of fifty-four, under Miss Nellie G. Hill. For the support of these ten schools the town appropriated in 1886 \$4290 for teachers' salaries and text-books and school maintenance, \$300 for repairs and incidentals, \$125 for apparatus for the High School, and received \$227.33 from the Massachusetts School Fund, making a total of \$4852.33. The expenses were \$3501 for salaries, \$116.27 for text-books and supplies, \$256.43 for fuel, \$156.58 for repairs and incidentals, \$382.79 for philosophical apparatus \$118.26,—making a total of \$4831.23.

Nor must the Revolutionary career of the town of Bradford, in which the East Parish was prominent, be omitted in this narrative. Its patriotism, its burdens and its honors were shared by the people of each parish, and to the history of each they legitimately belong. In 1773 Capt. Daniel Thurston was Representative of Bradford in the General Court. At that time the special grievances of taxation and the salaries of the judges had created an excitement which was spreading like a fire through the province of Massachusetts Bay. The people of Boston had taken a determined stand, and those of various other towns

were extending to them encouragement and support. On the 17th of January, 1773, a town-meeting was called to see what instructions should be given to their Representative in view of the perils which surrounded them. A committee was appointed, consisting of Dudley Carleton, William Greenough, Benjamin Gage, Jr., Thomas Webster and Amos Mullekin, to draw up instructions, who subsequently reported the following address to Captain Thurston, which was adopted by the meeting:

"SIR,—We, his majesty's most dutiful and loyal subjects, freemen and other inhabitants, of the town of Bradford, legally assembled this 7th day of January, 1773, take this opportunity to express our very great uneasiness at the infringements on our natural and constitutional rights by many of the late measures of the British administration, particularly of the extension of the Colonies and the granting of salaries to the Judges of the Superior Court, measures adapted, as we apprehend, to lay a foundation in time to render property precarious, and to introduce a system of despotism which we cannot but view with the utmost aversion and to which we cannot submit while possible to be avoided. We recommend it to you, as our Representative in General Assembly, to use your influence to obtain redress of all our grievances, and in particular to inquire whether the support of the Judges of the Superior Court has been adequate to their services, offices and station, and if not, to use your influence in obtaining suitable grants and establishments as may be thought sufficient to remove all pretense that government is not supplied among ourselves.

"We also vote the thanks of this town to the town of Boston for the care and vigilance they have discovered for the rights and privileges of this province as men, as Christians and as patriots."

Capt. Daniel Thurston was also a member of the Provincial Congress which convened in Salem, of which John Hancock was president, and also of the Second Congress, over which Dr. Joseph Warren presided. The town laid in a store of ammunition before hostilities began, and appropriated the sum of £30 for its purchase. Minute-men were equipped and drilled, and after the battle of Lexington Capt. Nathaniel Gage marched to Cambridge with forty men, and was engaged in the battle of Bunker Hill. At a meeting of the town, held on the 20th of June, 1776, an address to Dudley Carleton, the Representative of Bradford in the General Assembly, was reported by a committee consisting of Thomas Webster, John Burbank, Nathaniel Gage, Benjamin Muzzy and Capt. John Savory, and adopted by the town. The address was as follows:

"To Dudley Carleton, Esq., representative from the town of Bradford in the General Assembly, sir:—When we consider the despotic plan of government adopted by the King's Ministers and Parliament of Great Britain to enslave these American colonies, we consider that instead of redressing our grievances they have turned a deaf ear to the repeated petitions and remonstrances of all the united colonies, and have also been and still are endeavoring to enforce their arbitrary plans upon us by spilling our blood, by burning our towns, by seizing our property and by instigating the savages of the wilderness and negroes to take up the cause against us; when we consider these things it rouses our indignation, that we, who have always been loyal subjects to the King of Great Britain, should be so unconstitutionally and inhumanely treated. Such tyrannical impositions and abuses of power we cannot, as men, submit to. Therefore, utterly despairing of a happy reconciliation ever taking place between Great Britain and their colonies, you are hereby desired as our representative to use your utmost endeavor, that our delegates in Congress be instructed to shake off the tyrannical yoke of Great Britain and declare these united colonies independent of that venal, corrupt and avaricious court forever, provided no prospects for a happy reconciliation be offered which the honorable Congress think proper to accept; and we hereby engage that we will, at the risk of our lives and fortunes, endeavor to support and defend their plans."



In 1776 also a committee was appointed, consisting of Colonel Daniel Thurston, Deacon Thomas Kimball, Benjamin Muzzy, Major Benjamin Gage, Jr., and John Burbank, who reported a vote, which was adopted by the meeting, opposing the adoption of a State Constitution by the Legislature and Council, to be ratified by the people, and proposing the draft of a constitution by the Legislature and its submission to the towns concerned, before its adoption in the Assembly.

On the 23d of September, 1776, the town voted to appropriate £41 15s. 2d. for gunlocks, lead and flints; and also voted to pay £14 to each soldier drafted from the militia. On the 11th of October, 1779, it was voted to appropriate £1995 to hire ten men to join the army of Washington in New York. On the 12th of June, 1780, it was voted to raise sixteen men for six months, and on the 28th of June four men for six months and nineteen for three months, and the sum of £12,527 was raised to meet town charges. On the 12th of October, 1780, the sum of £43,814 10s. 6d. was raised for town charges, including the cost of 10,750 pounds of beef, which the town had been called upon to furnish. On the 4th of December, 1780, a call was made on the town for 20,642 pounds of beef, and on the 3d of January, 1781, the sum of £61,926 was raised to defray its cost.

In 1779 the delegate from Bradford in the Convention to form a Constitution was Peter Russell, and the Constitution was promptly adopted by the town. The most prominent men of the town in military affairs, most of whom were at some period of the war in active service, were Capt. Nathaniel Gage, Lieut. Daniel Kimball, Lieut. Thomas Stickney, Lieut. Eliphalet Hardy, Lieut. Moses Harriman, Lieut. Phineas Col., Adj. Daniel Hardy, Lieut. Abel Kimball, Lieut. Nathaniel Parker, Lieut. Nathaniel Plummer, Capt. John Savory, Col. Daniel Thurston, Benjamin Muzzy, Maj. Benjamin Gage, John Burbank, Thomas Webster, Dudley Carleton, William Greenough and Amos Mulliken.

The population growing up round the churches in the East Parish, to whose spiritual wants they ministered, amounted in 1850 to about thirteen hundred, which was only a little less than half of that of the whole town of Bradford. At that time, owing to various causes of dissatisfaction, the people of the East Parish sought and obtained an act of incorporation. One of these causes, which may seem a trivial one to those unfamiliar with the jealousies which often arise in small communities, related to the post-office. The only office in Bradford, up to the year 1843, was established in 1811 and was located in the East Parish, under the name of the Bradford post-office. In 1843 the people in the West Parish secured a new office in their neighborhood, and used sufficient influence with the Post-office Department to have their office called the Bradford office and that in the East Parish the East Bradford office. At that time George

Savory was the postmaster at Bradford and Jeremiah Spofford at East Bradford.

The act of incorporation was passed March 7, 1850, and describes the new township as

"all that part of the town of Bradford which lies east of a line beginning at the Merrimac River at the west side of Johnson's Creek at low water mark; thence running southerly up the westerly side of said creek about 70 rods to a small white oak tree; then south 15 degrees west 89 rods to a bound on the southerly side of the highway near Jonathan Kimball's house; thence south 54 degrees west 86 to 147 links to a walnut tree on the easterly side of a road near the house of William Brown; thence south 38½ degrees west 154 rods to a bound at the northerly angle of the highway; thence south 45 degrees west 149 rods 9 links to a bound at the northwesterly angle of said highway, near Johnson's Pond; thence south 27 degrees west to a bound at the westerly side of said highway at Boxford line."

The parent town included a territory about seven miles long, on the average, and two and a half miles wide, containing about ten thousand acres, of which about one-half was set off to the new town. The bounds of Groveland were the Merrimac River, West Newbury, Newbury, Georgetown, Boxford and Bradford. On the 21st of March, 1856, an act was passed by the General Court providing that all that part of the town of Boxford should be annexed to Groveland, "beginning at a stone monument at the northwesterly corner of the town of Georgetown and northeasterly corner of said town of Boxford; thence running south 10 degrees 30' west 311 rods 5 links on a line between said town of Georgetown and Boxford to a stone monument at an angle between said towns; thence running on an angle with the first-mentioned line, containing 46 degrees 30' 558 rods 20 links northwesterly, and between the houses of William Ross and John C. Foot, and across Johnson's Pond to a stone monument between the towns of Bradford, Boxford and Groveland; thence running easterly on a line between said towns of Boxford and Groveland (which is the present dividing line between said towns) to the point first begun at."

The larger part of the territory of Groveland was originally laid out in lots running south from the river, which were granted in the following order, beginning down the river at the easterly end, to Joseph Richardson, Jonas Platts, John Hopkinson, Joseph Bailey, Edward Wood, Benjamin Savory, William Hutchens, Ezra Rolf, Samuel Tenney, Francis Jewett, Samuel Worster, Samuel Stickney, John Hardy, William Hardy, Abraham Parker and Daniel Parker, and adjoining these was the Carleton Patent. The location of the town is exceedingly picturesque, lying along the southerly bank of the Merrimac, and not only beautiful in itself, but looking out on the undulating slopes with the alternating pasture and wood of the outskirts of Haverhill on the opposite shore. A large part of Johnson's Pond, a fine sheet of water on the Boxford line, is within the limits of the town, and from this flows Johnson's Creek, with a fall of seventy-five feet to the river.

The name "Groveland" had no historic origin, but is believed to have been suggested by the exis-





tence of attractive groves within its limits, one or more of which had been for many years resorted to for amusement and pleasure. Under authority of the act of incorporation, Jeremiah Spofford, a justice of the peace and a citizen of the new town, issued a warrant to Nathaniel Ladd, of Groveland, directing him to warn its inhabitants to meet at the vestry of the Congregational Church on the 18th of March, 1850, to choose town officers and take such measures as might be necessary to effect a settlement between the old and new towns. Jacob W. Reed was chosen moderator and Moses Foster, Jr., town clerk. The selectmen chosen were Stephen Parker, Paul Hopkinson and Nathaniel Ladd. The overseers of the poor were Phineas Hardy, Jacob W. Reed and Elijah Clark, Jr.; the town treasurer, Otis B. Merrill; school committee, Gardner B. Perry, Bryan Morse and Rufus C. Hardy; and the committee to settle with the town of Bradford, Jeremiah Spofford, George Hudson and Charles Harriman.

At an adjourned meeting, held April 1st, George Eaton, Moses Foot, Moses Morse, Eben P. Jewett, Eldred S. Parker, John Tappan, Reuben Sawyer, Paul Hopkinson, Thomas Burbank, Enoch S. Noyes, Richard Lunt and Manly Hardy were chosen highway surveyors, and Burton E. Merrill, Ira Hopkinson, Jonathan Balch, Moses Foot, Allen H. Goss, Eben E. Morse and Rufus P. Hovey, tithingmen. On the same day the sum of eighteen hundred dollars was appropriated to defray the expenses of the town for the year, and the sum of five hundred dollars for highways.

On the 20th of January, 1851, it was voted that the overseers be authorized to receive proposals for the purchase of a house or farm for the poor of the town, and to report to the town. At the annual meeting held on the 3d of March, 1851, it was voted that the old and new boards of overseers be authorized to purchase or hire a farm. Before the meeting held on the 7th of April, it seems that the overseers bought a farm, for on that date they were instructed by the town "to purchase the Conmill farm and to sell the other."

The selectmen chosen each year since 1850 have been as follows:

1851. Charles Peabody. Elijah Clark, Jr. George Hudson.	1857. Nathaniel H. Griffith. H. A. Spofford. George S. Walker.
1852. Paul Hopkinson. Charles Harriman. Edwin T. Curtis.	1858. George S. Walker. J. C. Foot. Thomas Burbank.
1853. Nathaniel H. Griffith. Thomas M. Hopkinson. Enoch Harriman.	1859. Thomas M. Hopkinson. George Hudson. George S. Walker.
1854. Thomas M. Hopkinson. Enoch Harriman. John George.	1860. Nathaniel Ladd. Thomas M. Hopkinson. Nathaniel Parker.
1855. Nathaniel H. Griffith. John Tenney. Warren L. Parker.	1861. Nathaniel Ladd. Solomon Spofford. Charles W. Hopkinson.
1856. Nathaniel H. Griffith. H. A. Spofford. C. A. Shaw.	1862. Same. 1863. Nathaniel Ladd. Charles W. Hopkinson.

Samuel Balch. 1864. Nathaniel Ladd. Z. C. Wardwell. Charles W. Hopkinson.	1874. Charles H. Hopkinson. Edward C. Peabody. Norman Nichols.
1865. Same. 1866. Nathaniel Ladd. Z. C. Wardwell. James L. Wales.	1875. Charles H. Hopkinson. Norman Nichols. John W. Libbey.
1867. Nathaniel Ladd. Charles A. Shaw. Paul Hopkinson.	1876. Charles H. Hopkinson. John W. Libbey. Edward Harriman.
1868. Nathaniel Ladd. Charles W. Hopkinson. E. T. Curtis.	1877. Same. 1878. Charles H. Hopkinson. Edward Harrington. Charles F. Stiles.
1869. Nathaniel Ladd. Edwin Hopkinson. Charles F. Stiles.	1879. Charles H. Hopkinson. John W. Libbey. Thomas P. Harriman.
1870. Nathaniel Ladd. Edwin Hopkinson. Edwin T. Curtis.	1880. Same. 1881. Same. 1882. Charles N. Hardy. Samuel Gage.
1871. Moses Foster. Nathaniel H. Griffith. Charles A. Shaw.	Gardner P. Ladd. 1883. Gardner P. Ladd. W. S. Peabody. Abel S. Harriman.
1872. Edwin T. Curtis. D. H. Stickney. Charles H. Hopkinson. Enoch Harriman.	1884. Same. 1885. Same. 1886. Gardner P. Ladd. Ellsworth P. Nichols.
Mark Griffin 1873. Charles H. Hopkinson. Edward C. Peabody. Enoch Harriman.	Benjamin Horne. 1887. Same.

The moderators, clerks and treasurers have been as follows:

1850. Jacob W. Reed, moderator; Moses Foster, Jr., clerk; Otis B. Merrill, treasurer.
1851. Abner M. Merrill, moderator; Ira Hopkinson, clerk; Charles G. Saxory, treasurer.
1852. Abner M. Merrill, moderator; Joseph Saxory, clerk; George Hudson, treasurer.
1853. Abner M. Merrill, moderator; George S. Walker, clerk; Edwin T. Curtis, treasurer.
1854. Abner M. Merrill, moderator; Edwin Hopkinson, clerk; John S. Ladd, treasurer.
1855. Eben P. Jewett, moderator; George S. Walker, clerk; Moses Foster, Jr., treasurer.
1856. George W. Hopkinson, moderator; George Hudson, clerk; Moses Foster, Jr., treasurer.
1857. George W. Hopkinson, moderator; William Hopkinson, clerk; William Hopkinson, treasurer.
1858. George W. Hopkinson, moderator; J. M. Spofford, clerk; Wm. Hopkinson, treasurer.
1859. George W. Hopkinson, moderator; J. M. Spofford, clerk; J. M. Spofford, treasurer.
1860. George W. Hopkinson, moderator; J. M. Spofford, clerk; J. M. Spofford, treasurer.
1861. George W. Hopkinson, moderator; Morris Spofford, clerk; Morris Spofford, treasurer.
1862. Eben S. Jewett, moderator; Morris Spofford, clerk; Morris Spofford, treasurer.
1863. Charles D. Page, moderator; Morris Spofford, clerk; Morris Spofford, treasurer.
1864. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Morris Spofford, clerk; Morris Spofford, treasurer.
1865. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Chas. H. Hopkinson, treasurer.
1866. Thomas M. Hopkinson, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Charles H. Hopkinson, treasurer.
1867. Uriah G. Spofford, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Charles H. Hopkinson, treasurer.
1868. Thomas M. Hopkinson, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Charles H. Hopkinson, treasurer.
1869. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Chas. H. Hopkinson, treasurer.
1870. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Charles H. Hopkinson, treasurer.



1871. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Chas. H. Hopkinson, treasurer.
1872. Thomas M. Hopkinson, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1873. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1874. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1875. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1876. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1877. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1878. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1879. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1880. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1881. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1882. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1883. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1884. Otis B. Merrill, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1885. L. P. Jewett, moderator; Charles H. Hopkinson, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1886. Lavin T. Curtis, moderator; J. B. P. Ladd, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.
1887. Charles H. Hopkinson, moderator; J. B. P. Ladd, clerk; Gardner P. Ladd, treasurer.

The Representatives to the General Court have been chosen as follows:

1850. Moses Foster.
1851. Almon M. Merrill.
1852. None.
1853. None.
1854. Nathan Purley.
1855. John Tenney.
1856. John Tenney.
1857. From the Fourth Representative District of Essex County composed of Georgetown and Groveland, Mark F. Edmunds, of Georgetown.
1858. Edwin B. George, of Groveland.
1859. From District No. 1, composed of the same towns, Samuel Hood, of Georgetown.
1860. George W. Hopkinson, of Groveland.
1861. Joseph J. Stickney, of Georgetown.
1862. Thomas M. Hopkinson, of Groveland.
1863. Charles Bocher, of Georgetown.
1864. D. H. Stickney, of Groveland.
1865. O. B. Tenney, of Georgetown.
1866. From District No. 5, composed of the towns of Georgetown, Groveland and Boxford, Joseph C. Stacy, of Groveland.
1867. Roscoe W. Gage, of Boxford.
1868. John G. Barnes, of Georgetown.
1869. Zenas C. Wardwell, of Groveland.
1870. Stephen Osgood, of Georgetown.
1871. Leverett Hopkinson, of Groveland.
1872. Charles Perley, of Boxford.
1873. Joseph E. Bailey, of Georgetown.
1874. Daniel P. Hopkinson, of Groveland.
1875. Sherman Nelson, of Georgetown.
1876. From District No. 17, composed of the towns of Georgetown, Groveland and Bradford, Charles Stickney, of Groveland.
1877. Chauncey O. Noyes, of Georgetown.
1878. Albert Kimball, of Bradford.
1879. Andrew J. Hunters, of Groveland.
1880. George H. Carleton, of Georgetown.
1881. Albert E. Towne, of Bradford.
1882. W. Scott Peabody, of Bradford.
1883. Simon T. Peakes, of Georgetown.
1884. John B. Farrar, of Bradford.

1885. Mosely D. Chase, of Georgetown.

1886. Nathaniel E. Ladd, of Groveland.

1887. William A. Butler, of Georgetown.

In 1853 Gardner P. Ladd, of Groveland, was a delegate to the Constitutional Convention.

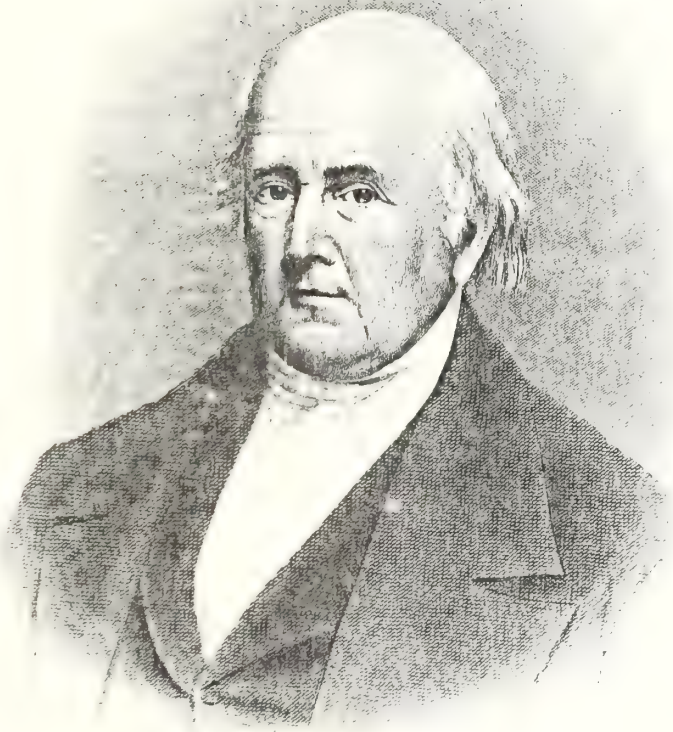
When the War of the Rebellion broke out the citizens of Groveland at once took active steps towards the performance of their share of patriotic duties. At a town-meeting held on the 30th of April, 1861, it was voted "to choose a committee consisting of E. B. George, Elijah Clark, John C. Foot, Nathaniel H. Griffith and D. H. Stickney, who shall furnish all persons who are called into active service for this town with all necessary articles, and to provide for their families during their absence at the expense of the town." It was also voted "that all volunteers from this town in regularly organized companies, holding themselves liable to instant call to the service of their country, and in constant drill to prepare themselves for service, to be paid the sum of ten dollars per month by the town while so employed."

The latter vote continued in operation until the 22d of the following June, when it was annulled, and at the same date the duties of the committee chosen on the 30th of April were transferred to the Board of Selectmen.

On the 19th of July, 1862, the town voted to pay a bounty of one hundred dollars to each soldier enlisting before August 5th for three years to fill the quota of twenty-one then required of the town. On the 26th of July the bounty was increased to one hundred and fifty dollars. On the 13th of August, 1862, a bounty of one hundred and fifty dollars was offered for enlistments for nine months to the extent of the required quota. On the 12th of December, 1862, it was voted to pay no more bounties to nine months' men, and to authorize the selectmen to fill the quota of the town with three years' men on the best possible terms. On the 8th of April, 1864, the selectmen were authorized to pay one hundred and twenty-five dollars for each enlistment to fill the quota then required of the town. On the 1st of August, 1864, it was voted to procure subscriptions for additions to the bounty of one hundred and twenty-five dollars offered by the town, and it was also voted to guarantee to each soldier the sum of two hundred and fifty dollars. On the 15th of August the committee having the subscriptions in charge reported that they had received the sum of one thousand three hundred and sixty-four dollars from one hundred and twenty subscribers. On the 10th of February, 1865, the selectmen were authorized to furnish the soldiers required of the town on the most favorable terms, and draw on the town treasurer for the necessary funds. These are some, if not all, of the votes passed by the town during the war, and they show no signs of hesitation to meet fully and promptly every call upon its patriotism and resources.

The following is as complete a list of soldiers enlisted at various times as can be made up from the





*Gardner B. Perry*





records. It contains the names of only one hundred and fifty-eight, while one hundred and eighty-five were credited to the town. It is probable that the remaining twenty-six were soldiers credited to the town by the State, unknown to the town authorities.

Regt.	Regt.
John G. B. Adams, 3 yrs. ....19th	Sumner G. Hardy, 3 yrs., 3d H. A.
Isaac N. Adams, 1 yr. ....14th	Lowell H. Hopkins, 3 yrs. ....11th
George H. Adams, .....Navy	Melvin Hopkins, 1 yr., 3d H. A.
Enoch T. Adams, 100 days, 17th Un.	Aaron W. Hardy, 3 mos. ....48th
Wm. Anderson, 3 yrs. ....1 Cav.	Lyman Hopkins, 1 yr., 4th H. A.
James J. Anderson, 3 yrs., 1st H. Art.	Rufus Hopkins, 3 yrs., 3d H. A.
Hiram T. Balch, 3 mos. ....48th	Leicester Hopkins, 1 year.
E. Cleveland Bradford, 1 yr., 4th H. Art.	Paul Hopkins, 1 year.
Joseph A. Banks, 3 yrs. ....3d	Wm. H. Hopkins, 1 year.
Wm. A. Balch, 100 days, 1 yr., 17th Un.	Wendell Hopkins, 100 days, 17th Un.
C. T. Balch, 101 dys. ....17th Un.	John H. Hardy, 1 yr., 2 mos. ....48th
Eugene C. Brown, 100 days, 17th Un.	James W. Hollister, 3 years.
Erwin F. Barlow, 3 yrs. ....19th	John H. Hardy, 3 yrs., 48th
Charles H. Brown, 1 yr., 4th H. A.	David S. Hardy, 3 years.
John E. Brown, 1 yr., 14th H. Art.	Asa T. Hardy, 9 mos. ....48th
Moses Brown, 3 yrs. ....3d	John F. Hoyt.
Laurentia Bailey, 3 yrs. ....17th	John H. Hardy, 9 mos. ....48th
John A. Bacon, 9 mos. ....50th	James P. Ivory, 1 yr., 11th
Charles Boynton, 3 yrs. ....19th	George H. Johnson, 3 yrs. ....11th
Joseph Banks, 3 yrs. ....3d	Samuel E. Jones, 5 yrs. ....19th
Marcus M. Chase.	Horace Jacques, 3 yrs. ....50th
William Carr, 3 yrs. ....12th	Charles H. Kimball, 3 yrs., 4th Cav.
Wallace N. Chase, 3 yrs. ....3d	Asa Kimball, 1 year.
Willard K. Chase.	Marcus Kimball, 3 yrs. ....19th
Leonard J. Chase.	James M. Kimball, 3 years.
Amos P. Chase, 3 yrs. ....2d	Jeremiah B. P. Kild, 3 years.
Charles H. Cunnett, 3 yrs. ....17th	Robert Lower, 3 yrs. ....2d Cav.
John N. Cramble, 100 days, 17th Un.	Nathaniel E. Ladd, 3 yrs. ....19th
George C. Cramble, 3 yrs. ....19th	Nathaniel Loveland, 3 yrs. ....19th
Thomas W. Cramble, 3 yrs. ....19th	Wm. D. Mitchell, 3 yrs. ....17th
George H. Dinsforth, 3 mos. ....19th	Charles H. Mitchell, 3 yrs. ....48th
John Dinsforth, 3 yrs. ....11th	John Mason, 3 yrs. ....19th
Alpheus Dinsforth, 3 yrs. ....11th	George H. Mitchell, 9 mos. ....48th
Michael Dow, 3 yrs. ....19th	John Malone, 3 yrs. ....2d Cav.
Wm. G. Eaton, 3 yrs. ....2d	Augustus P. Boyes, 3 yrs. ....11th
Leicester Fagan, 3 yrs. ....3d H. Art.	Burns H. Nelson, 9 mos. ....48th
John Fagan.	Edwin C. Noyes.
Hiram S. Faye, 9 mos. ....48th	George A. Olin, 3 years.
George H. Foster, 3 yrs. ....19th	Henry N. Page, 1 yr., 4th H. Art.
Charles C. French, 3 yrs. ....19th	Charles Parker, 9 mos. ....48th
Charles A. Foster, 3 yrs. ....3d	Rufus E. Parker, 9 mos. ....50th
Frank M. Foster, 9 mos. ....48th	Charles E. Peabody, 3 yrs. ....12th
William P. Foster, 7 yrs., 1st H. A.	Samuel T. Perry, 3 yrs. ....17th
Colvin A. Farrington, 3 yrs., 1st H. Art.	Wm. S. Perry, 3 yrs. ....33d
Thomas E. Gilman, 3 yrs. ....17th	Emile G. Parker, 3 yrs. ....19th
Frank Griffith, 100 days, 1 year, 17th Un.	Aaron B. Parker, 1 yr., 4th H. A.
George W. Gove, 3 yrs. ....33d	Eugene Parker, 3 years.
Michael Gispie, 3 yrs. ....4th Cav.	Gilman S. Parker, 3 yrs. ....19th
Thomas George, 100 days, 17th Un.	Orlando S. Paris, 3 yrs. ....Navy
Mancel C. Hardy, 9 mos. ....48th	Morrison Proctor, 3 yrs. ....17th
Sylvanus W. Hardy, 3 yrs. ....19th	Benj. F. Pike, 3 years.
Erastus G. Ham, 3 yrs. ....19th	Daniel S. Pike, 3 yrs. ....33d
Warren B. Hardy, 3 yrs. ....33d	Oliver S. Rindlett, 3 yrs. ....19th
Charles F. Hardy, 3 yrs. ....33d	Ellbridge A. Richardson, 1 year, 17th Un.
Wm. Holmes, 3 yrs. ....19th	John F. Richardson, 3 yrs. ....33d
Albert L. Hardy, 3 yrs. 3d H. Art.	Edward Richardson, 100 days, 17th Un.
Allen Hardy, 3 yrs. ....33d H. Art.	Henry G. Rollins, 9 mos. ....48th
John Harriman, 9 mos. ....48th	Henry C. Rice, 2 yrs. ....12th
Reef I. Hardy, 9 mos. ....48th	Enoch H. Ricker, 100 days, 17th Un.
John Herschel, 3 mos. ....18th	Edward C. Ricker, 2 yrs. ....33d
Charles S. Herschel, 1 yr., 4th H. A.	Wm. H. Ricker, 100 days, 17th Un.
Granville Herschel, 3 yrs. ....17th	Thomas W. Spiller, 3 yrs. ....11th
Frank A. Hall, 100 days, 1 year, 17th Un.	George Sides.
	Thomas A. Sides, 9 mos. ....50th
	Wm. O. Sider, 9 mos. ....50th

Regt.	Regt.
Timothy A. Stacey, 3 yrs. ....33d	Charles H. Tandy, 100 days, 17th Un.
Joseph C. Stacey, 3 yrs. ....33d	A. Dana Torrey, 3 yrs. ....19th
John M. Stacey, 1 yr. ....14th	Charles D. Twombly, 3 yrs., 3d H. Art.
Albert C. Stacey, 3 yrs. ....33d	Charles W. Watkins, 3 mos. ....5th
Moses H. Stickney, 3 yrs. ....33d	James S. Walsh, 103 days, 17th Un.
Chas. H. Smith, 100 days, 17th Un.	Henry B. Webber, 3 yrs. ....17th
Edward Savory, 1 yr., 14th H. Art.	Wellington B. Webber, 3 mos. ....5th
Charles B. Smith, 1 yr., 4th H. A.	George H. Wiggin, 9 mos. ....48th
Nathan Sargent, 1 yr., 14th H. Art.	Justin R. Wood, 1 yr., 4th H. Art.
Warren Sargent, 1 yr., 4th H. Art.	George Willey, .....Navy
Oscar P. Stevens, 9 mos. ....5th	Cyrus R. Wiggin, 9 mos. ....50th
Edwin T. Stevens, 3 yrs., 3d H. A.	Luther P. Withum, 1 yr., 4th H. A.
Peter Stillman, 5 yrs. ....19th	Joseph A. Walsh, 100 days, 17th Un.
Peter Stillman re-enl., 3 years, 19th.	Wm. Young, 3 yrs., 16th Light Bat.
Oscar M. Stickney, 9 mos. ....48th	
T. B. Sanborn, 9 mos. ....48th	

Of these, Isaac N. Adams was wounded at Antietam, and died September 22, 1862, Charles Boynton was killed on the Peninsula in 1862, William Carr died of wounds received at Gettysburg, John Fagan and David S. Hardy died in Andersonville Prison, Frank M. Foster and John Harriman died in Louisiana, Granville Herschel died of wounds in North Carolina, Asa Kimball died in Libby Prison, Nathaniel Loveland was killed on the Peninsula, Darius H. Nelson was killed at Port Hudson, William S. Perry died in Washington, John M. Stacy died in Washington, Moses W. Stickney died in Philadelphia, Edward C. Ricker died at Falmouth, and Charles W. Watkins was killed at Cold Harbor. Edwin F. Berdige, Marcus M. Chase, Willard K. Chase, Leonard J. Chase, Michael Glistler, William D. Mitchell, Charles H. Mitchell and William O. Sides are stated in the town records to have died but whether of wounds or disease there is no record to show.

The whole number of men furnished during the war was one hundred and eighty-five, of whom seven were officers. The total sum of money appropriated for war purposes was \$27,812.57. A marble shaft was erected on the common in memory of the dead soldiers of the war and dedicated in 1866. In 1867 the Charles Sumner Post, No. 107, of the Grand Army of the Republic was known as the L. B. Schwabe Post, and its name was subsequently changed to the one it now bears in honor of the late distinguished Senator.

On the 8th of May, 1868, Francis Sargent, William Gunnison and John S. Poyen, all residents of what is now Merrimac, were, with their associates, incorporated as the West Amesbury Branch Railroad Company, with a capital of one hundred and fifty thousand dollars. They were authorized to locate within two years a road from "West Amesbury near the Four Corners, thence westerly near the house of Joseph R. Thomas, thence more northerly to the State line near a corner of Newton, there to connect with any railroad which may be authorized by the laws of New Hampshire from said State line to a point on the Boston and Maine Railroad, or from said State line to a point on the State line separating Haverhill from Plaistow, near the house of James Brickett, and from said last-named point may locate, construct and main-



tain and operate a railroad in said town of Haverhill to a point on the Boston and Maine Railroad not less than one mile northerly from the depot in Haverhill."

On the 12th of June, 1839, they were authorized to so change the location as to commence "at some convenient point in West Amesbury and run through said town to the east part of the town of Haverhill, thence through said easterly part of Haverhill to the Merrimac River, at or near the Rock's Bridge and cross the river by a new bridge or by building suitable structures on the present bridge, on such terms as may be agreed upon by the County Commissioners of Essex County, Haverhill, West Newbury and Amesbury, thence through West Newbury and Groveland to the railroad in Groveland." The town of Groveland was also authorized to subscribe for stock not exceeding five per cent. of its assessed valuation. The result of the whole matter was that Groveland did not subscribe and the road was built on one of the routes mentioned in the original act of incorporation.

For many years prior to 1826 there was no established ferry across the river at Bradford. Muliken's ferry, at West Bradford, was established in 1745, and continued in operation until the Haverhill bridge was built, in 1794. After that time the scattering travel at points below, as far as East Bradford, was accommodated by individual enterprise, which was far from satisfactory. Under the lead of Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, subscriptions for the establishment of a chain ferry were raised, and a stock company formed which carried on its business with profit, until the construction of the iron bridge in 1871. The increase of travel from Groveland and West Newbury and other points to Haverhill rendered at this time better accommodations necessary, and in response to a petition to the General Court, an act was passed March 6, 1870, requiring the county commissioners within two years, to construct a suitable bridge, and assess its cost in such proportions as they thought just on the county of Essex, the city of Haverhill and the towns of West Newbury and Groveland. On the 20th of July, 1870, the commissioners laid out the bridge and at once set about its construction. Its cost was \$84,962.79, of which the sum of \$38,233.22 was assessed on the county, \$26,904.85 on the city of Haverhill, \$11,328.36 on the town of Groveland and \$8496.27 on the town of West Newbury. The bridge was opened April 10, 1872. In the spring of 1881 the bridge fell, and by an act of the Legislature, passed on the 20th of March, the commissioners were authorized to rebuild it and assess the cost as before. In April the commissioners decided to build a new bridge, and its cost of \$73,105.40 was assessed, \$36,552.70 on the county, \$28,197.78 on the city of Haverhill, \$5744 on the town of Groveland and \$2610.92 on the town of West Newbury. In 1877 the Haverhill and Groveland Street Railway was built, which crosses the bridge. It has since been extended to West Newbury, thus adding a new tributary to the

enterprising city of Haverhill, which should have been secured to Newburyport. While on this point it may not be impertinent to suggest that the people of Newburyport might find it for their interest, not only to build a horse railway to West Newbury, their neighboring town, but also to extend their Amesbury road to Merrimac.

Besides the Congregational and Methodist Churches, of which mention has been made as organizations in existence at the time of the incorporation of the town, there are others which have sprung up since that time, all of which are in that part of the town known as South Groveland. In 1855, through the enterprise mainly of Jacob W. Reed, a church was built in that section, which, for a time, was occupied by various denominations. That, however, has disappeared. Since that time the St. James Episcopal Church has been built, in which a flourishing society holds its Sabbath service. The church, complete and ready for occupation, was the gift of E. J. M. Hale, of Haverhill, the owner of a large manufacturing establishment in its neighborhood. The last officiating clergyman was Rev. Albert E. George, but at present it is without a pastor. The St. Patrick's Catholic Church has been also built, Mr. Hale contributing the land on which it stands and a liberal sum also towards defraying the cost of its construction. Rev. Edward Murphy, of Georgetown, has the present charge of this church.

On the 8th of March, 1828, Moses Parker, Jeremiah Spofford and Benjamin Parker, and their associates, were incorporated as the Bradford Mutual Fire Insurance Company. After the incorporation of the town, on the 23th of April, 1850, the name of the company was changed to the Groveland Mutual Fire Insurance Company, and on the 14th of April, 1855, its charter was renewed for twenty-eight years, from March 8, 1856. Its present officers are Moses Foster president and Nathaniel H. Griffith secretary. The company pays its expenses and losses by assessments on deposit notes, which, on the 31st of December, 1886, amounted to \$104,852.69, while the amount at risk at that date was \$1,615,799.

On the 1st of May, 1869, Nathaniel H. Griffith, Nathaniel Ladd and Edwin T. Curtis, and their associates, were incorporated as the Groveland Savings Bank, and the officers of the company were Moses Foster president and Nathaniel H. Griffith treasurer. After being in operation sixteen years its affairs were gradually wound up.

The industries of Groveland, though now except in South Groveland well-nigh extinct, have in the past been varied and extensive. At a very early date the advantages of Johnson's Creek were discovered, and in 1670 a grist-mill was built on that stream. In 1684 the town of Bradford received proposals from Richard Thomas, of Rowley, and John Perle, of Marblehead, to set up a corn-mill on the creek. Mills were also built there by Edward Carleton,





Phineas Carleton and Aaron Parker. In 1740 Joseph Kimball and Eliphalet Hardy built mills. In 1760 Thomas Carleton established a fulling-mill on the creek, and in 1790 Retier Parker built a tanyard. In the same year William Tenney, Jr., established a chaise-factory, which flourished for thirty years. In 1784 Francis Kimball used the waters of the stream for a saw-mill, and Benjamin Morris for a fulling-mill.

Rev. Gardner B. Perry, of East Bradford (now Groveland), stated, in an historical address delivered in 1820, that up to that time there had been on the creek four saw-mills, five grist-mills, three fulling-mills and two bark-mills.

In 1820 there were in the East Parish five tanyards in active operation, the first of which, in point of time, was established by Shubael Walker, who removed his business from the West Parish. In connection with the preparation of leather the manufacture of shoes sprang up, chiefly devoted to the production of a coarse article which found its market in the Southern States and the West Indies. Jesse Atwood carried on a chocolate-factory, Stephen Foster the manufacture of brass and pewter buckles, Jotham Hunt the coopering business, Moses Parker the manufacture of tobacco, and others were engaged in making buicks and straw bonnets. Nor was ship-building neglected. In this industry Bradford shared to a limited extent a business which was carried on so extensively in the towns on the Merrimac nearer the sea.

Until about the time of the incorporation of Groveland the waters of Johnson's Creek had only been utilized by the smaller mills, to which reference has been made. These, however, gradually disappeared. In 1837, William Perry removed to the East Parish, from Bridgewater, and built a brass foundry, which in 1843 was converted into a shoe-thread factory, carried on by Perry & Swett. In 1854 it became the property of E. A. Straw of Manchester, N. H., and Nathaniel Webster, of Amesbury, who converted it into a factory, for the manufacture of seamless bags. In 1859 it was purchased by E. J. M. Hale, of Haverhill, who changed it into a woolen-factory. Mr. Hale soon doubled the size of the old mill, and supplied it with a forty horse-power engine. In 1861 he built a new mill, one hundred and thirty-seven feet by fifty-two, four stories high, and attached to it an eighty horse-power engine. In 1875 an addition was made, eighty feet by fifty-four, three stories high. In 1869 Mr. Hale built still another mill below the others, three hundred and sixteen feet by fifty-two, four stories high in the main building, and supplied it with an engine of one hundred and fifty horse-power. All the mills contained thirty-six sets of machinery, including one hundred and eight carding-machines, forty-two spinners, and two hundred and thirty-eight looms engaged in the manufacture of flannel. There are also connected with the mills a repair-shop, four picker-houses, a

dye-house, a forging-shop, three store-houses and a large number of tenements for operatives. About four hundred hands are employed in and about the mills, and as the mills were gradually enlarged, the population of the south section of the town increased until it had become about one half of that of the whole town.

It is unnecessary to make special mention of those citizens who have been prominent in the town since its incorporation, as, with but few exceptions, their names are included in the lists of town officers or Representatives in the early part of this sketch. There will be found the names of Capt. George Savory, Rev. Gardner B. Perry, Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, Nathaniel Ladd, and of the recently deceased Daniel B. Hopkinson, all of whom have passed away, leaving honorable records and a fragrant memory.

A few statistics, some of which are given to show the relative growth in population and valuation of Groveland and its parent town, must close this sketch. The population of Bradford in 1850, after the incorporation of Groveland, was 1328 and that of Groveland 1286. The valuation of each town at that time was about \$400,000. In 1885 the population of Bradford was 3106 and that of Groveland 2272. In the same year the valuation of Bradford was \$1,423,243 and that of Groveland \$874,444. The affairs of the town are managed with intelligence, prudence and economy. The current expenses of the town for the year 1886 amounted to \$34,515.48, and the town debt March 1, 1887, to \$17,517.73, while the property of the town, including the town farm, school-houses, etc., amounted to \$25,098.61. The financial soundness and strength of the town is apparent; and while its growth has been checked by causes which have ceased to operate, it seems certain that, with its good soil, its admirable location, the prosperity of the Halemills and its proximity to the flourishing city of Haverhill, its future increase and prosperity are assured.

## BIOGRAPHICAL.

### GARDNER B. PERRY, D.D.

Gardner Braman Perry was the fifth child and second son of Nathan and Phoebe (Braman) Perry, of Norton, Mass. He was born August 9, 1783. He was a lineal descendant of Anthony Perry, one of the first settlers and most influential citizens of Rehoboth. His father was a farmer, a man of quiet, methodical and industrious habits, yet energetic and public-spirited when the occasion demanded it. A good evidence of this was afforded by his enlistment after the battle of Bunker Hill and service in the siege of Boston. His readiness thus to leave his young wife and infant child at a period when the colonists had not yet fully testified their ability to



resist regular troops showed both patriotism and pluck.

If he inherited good principles and quiet decision from his father, he was indebted to his mother for that energy, noble ambition and geniality by which he was so eminently characterized. It was the testimony of more than one of Mrs. Perry's children that their success in life was mainly attributable to her instructions and example. She was a woman of rare sweetness, sprightliness and tact. She was a sister of the late Isaac Braman, D.D., who, called to be pastor of the church in Georgetown, after more than fifty candidates had been heard, retained the position until his death, sixty-one years later, and ruled his flock in peace. Soon after his death the old quarrel broke out under new pretexts, but between the grandchildren of the former combatants, who were ranged pretty much as their ancestors had been. The disease was probably inveterate, but Dr. Braman's rare good sense proved a thorough palliative through two generations.

We can discover many common traits in Gardner Perry and his uncle. Yet there were differences: while both were emphatically peace-makers, Dr. Braman often avoided difficulties by strictly confining himself to his parish duties. Dr. Perry, on the contrary, was a zealous reformer, yet free from the asperity and one-sidedness unhappily too common among the champions of new measures. He thus retained the esteem and good will even of those who strongly dissented from his methods and objects.

Nathan Perry's family was a large one, and Bristol County farms are not over-productive; but he, and especially his wife, were determined that their children should be well educated. Gardner was therefore fitted for college in the academy in his native town, and in 1800 entered Brown University. The president of the institution, Dr. Macey, was a man of unusual magnetism, and accordingly, when, in 1802, he resigned his office to accept the presidency of Union College, at Schenectady, he was followed thither by several of his pupils, young Perry and the late Bishop Brownell, of Connecticut, among the members.

Mr. Perry held high rank as a scholar. He was graduated in 1804, and immediately after took charge of the academy at Ballston, N. Y. A year later he returned to Schenectady and became tutor and instructor in French. In 1807 he was invited to become principal of the Kingston (N. Y.) Academy, where he remained five years. He was very successful and popular as an educator. Indeed, it was the opinion of his younger brother and pupil, the late Dr. William Perry, of Exeter, N. H., that "he was especially designed for a teacher, and that the class-room rather than the pulpit was his appropriate field. However well founded, or the reverse, this belief may have been, his literary and executive abilities were highly esteemed by his *alma mater*. When Dr. Nott's resignation of its presidency was expected,

about forty-five years ago, Dr. Perry was prominently mentioned as his successor. Dr. Nott concluded, however, to remain and so Dr. Perry's services were not required.

He had entered the ministry from thoroughly conscientious motives. He was earning a comfortable livelihood and could not hope for as large an income from his pastoral labors. No one was better aware than himself that he lacked those showy qualities which attract crowds and bring apparent, though superficial success. Nevertheless, he felt that he was called to preach the gospel, and in 1812 was licensed by the Presbytery of Albany. Though pastor of a Congregational Church in New England, we believe that he always retained his connection with the body which admitted him to the ministry.

In 1814 he accepted a call from the East Parish in Bradford Mass. (now Groveland), and was formally installed September 28th. The engagement proved a life one. He was sole pastor until 1851, when a colleague was called. He entered upon his duties with a zeal which was unintermitted until the infirmities of age compelled him to leave to others the more arduous responsibilities of his position. If the field was not a large one, the fact was not allowed to give an excuse for luxurious ease. It was thoroughly, intelligently and prayerfully cultivated.

Mr. Perry—he received the Doctorate of Divinity from Union College in 1843—was the father, brother and fellow-worker of all his people. In the pulpit, and out of it, he had their wants and their highest good constantly in mind. He pointed them to the world above, but he ever kept in their minds the necessity of making the best use of the world that now is. Hence he instructed them to be frugal, to till their lands, so as to return the largest profits, to provide thorough instruction for their children and to be temperate in all things. No one could be long in his company without receiving some practical suggestion.

His interests were not limited to his parish. Throughout Essex County, and beyond, he was foremost as an advocate of education. The common schools of Eastern Massachusetts owe him much, for he was the predecessor of Horace Mann and furnished that noted educator with many of the facts and statistics which he used so much to his own, as well as the public's advantage. Dr. Perry was an earnest supporter of the temperance cause. He had grown up in an age when excess was far too prevalent among all classes, and he labored for a better state of things with signal success.

He was very influential among his ministerial brethren. When heated discussions occurred, all sides were anxious to hear Dr. Perry's opinion, for he never yielded to excitement and his decisions were as impressive in form as judicious in their substance. He had a rare grace in saying even unpleasant things. His courtliness was that of the "old school," minus its





ponposity. He was always the true gentleman, but without mannerism or effort. He was gracious in expression and action, because he obeyed the impulses of a thoroughly kindly heart. This quality impressed itself upon strangers who never heard him preach and who exchanged few, if any, words with him. His mere look was full of benignity.

As a preacher he was instructive, but not magnetic. The thoughtful hearer would always find food for reflection in his sermons and would gain new appreciation from them by reading after hearing them. He was best enjoyed by those who were regular attendants on his ministry, and had accustomed themselves to look for what was said rather than toward the manner of saying it. A centennial sermon, preached in 1823, contains a real history of the church and parish. As such it is much prized by antiquaries. As copies of the first edition grew scarce, the price increased until the pamphlet was worth almost its weight in gold. A new edition was printed—an honor conferred on very few pulpit discourses.

Dr. Perry's long and useful life closed on the 16th of December, 1859, when he had reached the age of seventy-six years. Until shortly before his death he had been able to enjoy the attentions which all his relations and friends were anxious to bestow upon him. If his strength declined, his appreciation of the universal esteem—reverence would be the better word—in which every one held him must have increased. Yet his genuine modesty ever forbade him to take much credit to himself. He had tried to do his duty; that was all. Time is, however, a great test of character. Nearly thirty years have passed since Gardner B. Perry was borne to the grave, and his name and virtues are still warmly cherished in Groveland and throughout Essex County. He is remembered by all his contemporaries as a truly good and useful man, clear-headed and sound-hearted, and they have imparted their estimate to their children and grandchildren.

Dr. Perry was thrice married,—first to Maria P. Chamberlain, of Exeter, N. H.; second to Eunice Tuttle, of Acton, Mass.; and third to Sarah Brown, of Grafton. His surviving children are Mrs. Charles Robinson and Mrs. Peter Parker, of Groveland; Mr. Gardner B. Perry, of Buenos Ayres; and Mr. Charles F. Perry, of Boston.

## CHAPTER CXLII.

### NEWBURY.

BY WILLIAM T. DAVIS.

THE river Kennet rises in the county of Berks, England, and flows into the Thames at Reading. On its northern bank a settlement was made by the Ro-

mans, remnants of which continued until the time of the Norman Conquest, when a new settlement was made on the south side of the river, which was called the "New Bourg" or "New Town." The termination Bourg, from the Latin *Burgus*, had originally signified a fortress, but became gradually changed to the meaning now attached to it. The spelling of the word has experienced various transformations, none of which, however, have changed its application to a town, or district, or borough. These changes are illustrated in the names of towns familiar to us, such as Newbury, Newburg, Newberg, Attleboro', Middleborough and Newberry.

In the English town of "New-Bourg," or "Newburg" as it has been long called, on the south side of the Kennet, there lived in the early half of the seventeenth century a man to whom a reference would be appropriate at this point in our narrative. This man was the Rev. Thomas Parker, who, for some time previous to 1634, taught the free school of the town. He was the only son of Rev. Robert Parker, who was said by Cotton Mather to have been "one of the greatest scholars in the English nation." He was admitted to Magdalen College, Oxford, but his father having been exiled for non-conformity, he removed to Dublin, where he studied under Dr. Usher, and afterwards to Holland, where he continued his studies with Dr. Ames. About the year 1617, when he was twenty-two years of age, he published a treatise on repentance, entitled "*De traductione peccatores ad vitam*," which won for him a high reputation, and afterwards a treatise on the book of Daniel. It was after his return from Holland that he became the teacher of the free school in Newburg.

In May, 1634, Mr. Parker arrived in New England, one of a company of about one hundred, who went first to Ipswich, then called Agawam, to settle. After passing the winter at Ipswich it was found, as Hubbard says, in his "History of New England," "so filled with inhabitants that some of them presently swarmed out into another place a little farther eastward." Mr. Parker was at first called to Ipswich to join with Mr. Ward, but he choosing rather to accompany some of his countrymen (who came out of Wiltshire in England) to that new place, than to be engaged with such as he had not been acquainted withal before, removed with them and settled at Newbury, which recess of theirs made room for others that soon after supplied their places."

There has been a division of opinion as to the precise time of the settlement of Newbury by Mr. Parker and his companions. But upon examination this division will be found to have originated in the confused expressions of writers concerning dates under the old and new style. It may be stated now with a considerable degree of positiveness that the settlement took place at some time during the early part of 1635, if we reckon the year as beginning on the 1st day of January, or during the latter part of





1634, if we reckon it as beginning according to the old style on the 25th of March. That it could not have occurred before the 29th of December, 1634, is demonstrated by the following extract from the records of Ipswich:

"December 29, 1634. It is consented unto that John Perkins, junior, shall build a ware upon the river Quasacumung (Parker River) and enjoy the profits of it, but in case a plantation shall there settle, then he is to submit himself unto such conditions as shall by them be imposed."

That it could not have been later than the 6th of May, 1635, is demonstrated by the following extract from the records of Massachusetts Colony, which includes the only act of incorporation ever passed concerning the town of Newbury:

"May 6th, 1635. Quasacumung is allowed by the court to be a plantation and it is referred to Mr. Humphrey, Mr. Endicott, Captain Turner and Captain Frisk or any three of them to set out the bounds of Ipswich and Quasacumung, or so much thereof as they can, and the name of the said plantation shall be changed and shall hereafter be called Newbury."

"Further, it is ordered that it shall be in the power of the court to take order that the said plantation shall receive a sufficient company to make it competent to serve."

The Indian name Quasacumung is applied in the records to the whole territory between Agawam (Ipswich) and the Merrimac River. Its Indian application, however—its meaning being a "waterfall"—was merely to the "falls" on the river Parker, and perhaps also to the immediate vicinity. More properly the whole territory from Naumkeag River to the Merrimac may be considered as having been a part of Agawam, as these two rivers bounded the jurisdiction of Masconomo, the Sagamore of Agawam.

At some time, then, in the spring of 1635, reckoning according to the new style, Rev. Thomas Parker, with his little band of immigrants, removed from Ipswich to Newbury. They went by water through Plum Island Sound and thence up the river, to which they gave the name of their honored leader. Their landing-place was on the north side of the river, not far below the bridge which now connects Newbury old town with Rowley. They were about forty in number, and the following are those whose names are known: Thomas Parker, James Noyes and wife, John Woodbridge, Henry Sewall and servants, James Browne and wife, Francis Plumer and wife, Nicholas Easton and wife, John Easton, Wm. Moody and wife and four sons, Anthony Short, Henry Short and wife, John Spencer, Richard Kent, Sr., and wife, Richard Kent, Jr., Stephen Kent and wife, James Kent, Nicholas Noyes, Thomas Browne, Richard Browne, George Brown, Thomas Coleman, Joseph Plumer and Samuel Plumer.

It is not unlikely that some of these were old residents of the English Newbury. Kent, at least, was a Newbury name, and may be found in the records of that town at about the period of the settlement of its namesake on this side of the ocean. During the summer of 1635 other settlers came in, and the population gradually extended farther and farther from the river.

Among these new comers were Richard Dummer and John and Richard Pike, and John Emery, and after their arrival, probably in June or July, the first church was formed. Mr. Parker preached his first sermon in the open air, beneath the branches of a primeval oak which stood on the north bank of the river about one hundred yards below the Rowley bridge and near the original landing-place. The precise location of the first meeting-house, while it has been fixed by tradition as the lower Green, is rendered somewhat doubtful by evidence, which will be referred to hereafter, tending to fix it at Fisherman's Green, adjoining the old burial-ground. The first houses clustered about the meeting-house, in conformity with the order of the General Court, "that no dwelling-house shall be built above a half a mile from the meeting-house on any new plantation without leave from the Court, except mills and farm-houses of such as have their dwellings in town."

The only record extant concerning the formation of the church is contained in the testimony of John Pike, John Emery and Thomas Browne, given at the court in Ipswich during the church controversies which occurred in 1669, '70, '71, to which reference will be made hereafter. The testimony of Mr. Pike was as follows:

"I, John Pike do testify that I was present at the gathering of the church at Newbury, and I did hear our reverend pastor preach a sermon on the eighteenth of Matthew, seventeenth verse, 'And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church; but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican,' wherein he did hold forth that the power of discipline belonged to the whole church, & that the matter of the church ought to be visible saints joyned or gathered together, that the manner of their joyning together ought to be by covenant, & that the end of it is for the ever-esting and enjoyning of the ordinances of Christ together. He strongly proved his doctrine by many places of the Scripture, both in the old and new testament. The which sermon, together with the Scripture, did much instruct and confirm us in that waye of church discipline which we then used. He then preached for, namely, the Congregational waye, some notes of the said sermon which I then took from his mouth I have here ready to show if you please. The sermon being ended the brethren joyned together by express covenant, and being joyned they chose their pastor, Mr. Parker, who accepted the call and joyned with them according to the covenant abovesaid, and those that afterwards joyned to the church consented to the said covenant explicit. The brethren of the church acted in these admissions of ye members expressing their voits therein by lifting up the hands, and so continued together lovingly a considerable number of yeares until other doctrine began to be preached amongst us."

"Per me, JOHN PIKE."

"Sworne in Court, 30 March, 1669."

"Robert Pike also testifies that the meeting was on the Sabbath and in the open air under a tree."

"At the same time that Mr. Parker was chosen pastor, Mr. James Noyes was chosen teacher."

In 1636 Edward Woodman, John Woodbridge, Henry Short, Christopher Hussey, Richard Kent, Richard Brown and Richard Knight were chosen to manage the affairs of the town. The election of these men was had by authority of the following order, passed by the General Court on the 3d of March, 1635-36:

"If several particular townes have many things which concerne onely themselves & the ordering of their owne affaires and disposing of businesses"



in their owne towne, it is therefore ordered, that the freemen of evy towne, or the major pte of them, shall onely have power to dispose of their owne lands & woods, with all the priviledges & appurtenances of the said townes, to graunt lotts, & make such orders as may concerne the well ordering of their owne townes, not repugnant to the laws & orders here established by the Genl Court; as also to lay mulks & penalties for the breach of their orders, & to levy & distreine the same not exceeding the some of xxs; also to chuse their owne pte of officers, as constables, surveyors for the high wages & the like; & because much business is like to ensue to the constables of sevall townes, by reason they are to make distresses & gather ffynes, therefore that evy towne shall have two constables, where there is neede, that see their office may not be a burthen unto them, & they may attend more carefully upon the discharge of their office, for wch they shalbe lyable to give their accompts to this Court when they shalbe called thereunto."

These officers were the germ from which sprang, at a later day, the Board of Selectmen.

In 1637 eight men were furnished by Newbury for the Pequod War, and in the same year Richard Dummer, John Spencer and Nicholas Easton were disarmed by the General Court for holding erroneous opinions on theological matters. John Spencer returned to England, Nicholas Easton removed to Rhode Island, but Richard Dummer remained in Newbury. In the year before a grant of land was made to Mr. Dummer and Mr. Spencer at the falls of River Parker for the erection of a grist-mill.

After the departure of Mr. Spencer the mill was carried on by Mr. Dummer alone, and in 1638 the following agreement was entered into concerning it:

"August 6th, 1638. Whereas it is agreed with Mr. Richard Dummer, of Newbury, by the persons whose names are underwritten, hereunto subscribed, that in case Mr. Dummer doe make his mill fit to grind corne, and doe maintain the same as also doe keep a man to attend grinding of corne then they, for their part, will send all the corne that they shall have ground, and doe likewise promise that all the rest of the towne, if it lye in their power to promise the same shal also bring their corne, from tyme to tyme, to be ground at the said mill. And it is further agreed that the abovementioned conditions being observed by Mr. Dummer there shall not any other mill be erected within the sayd towne.

"EDWARD WOODMAN.  
"JOHN KNIGHT  
"EDWARD RAWSON  
"RENEAD BROWN  
"HENRY SHORT."

Three, at least, of these subscribers were members of the committee of seven chosen to manage the affairs of the town, and on the 6th of October, 1638, their promise was agreed to by the town. Additions were constantly making to the population of the town, and among those arriving in 1637 were Edward Rawson, Richard Singleterry, William Palmer, John Moulton, Thomas Moulton, Nicholas Busbee and Abraham Toppan, all of whom were formally admitted as inhabitants.

On the 13th of March, 1639, it was ordered by the General Court that "Plum Island is to remain in the Court's power only for the present. Ipswich, Newbury and the new plantation (Rowley) between them may make use of it till the Court shall see cause to dispose of it."

It so continued until 1649. On the 15th of May in that year the town of Newbury petitioned the Gen-

eral Court for a grant of the whole island. The town stated in their petition that:

"The substance of our desires is that, if, after you have heard and perused what we say, that in right Plum Island belongs not to us, yet out of your just favor it may be granted to us to relieve our pinching necessities, without which we see no way to continue or subsist. Our tears were occasioned by a petition which was presented to the last General Court for it. Our apprehensions of our right to it are, First, because for three or four miles together there is no channel betwixt us and it. Second, because at low water we can go dry to it over many places, in most with carts and horses, which we usually do, being necessitated so to do since our gift to Rowley on the Court's request and promise that we should have anything in the Court's power to grant. Thirdly, because the Court's order gives all lands to dead low water mark, not exceeding one hundred rods, to towns or persons, where any lands do so border. In many places Plum Island is not ten rods, at no place one hundred rods from low water mark. Fourth, because we only can improve it without damage to our neighboring plantation, which none can do without much damage to your petitioners, if not to the ruining of both the meadow and corn of your petitioners and so forth. The premises considered, we hope (and doubt not) this honorable Court will see just grounds to answer our request and confirm the Island to our town, and we shall always, as in duty we are bound, pray and so forth.

"Thomas Parker. James Noyes.  
Percival Towle. William Gerrish.  
John Spencer. Edward Woodman.  
John Saunders. Henry Short.  
Richard Kent in ye name of ye rest."

The result of the petition was that on the 17th of October, 1649, the court granted two-fifths of the island to Newbury, two-fifths to Ipswich and one-fifth to Rowley.

In 1639 an important change was made in the territorial limits of Newbury by the settlement of Rowley. Rev. Ezekiel Rogers arrived in New England in December, 1638, and with about sixty families settled on land which was afterwards incorporated as the town of Rowley. On the 13th of March, 1638-39, Mr. Rogers and Mr. John Philips and their company had granted to them by the General Court "eight miles every way into the country where it may not trench upon other plantations already settled." This grant was called Rogers Plantation until the 4th of the following September, when it was ordered by the court "that Mr. Ezechl Rogers plantation should be called Rowley."

Previously to the grant to Mr. Rogers, Newbury and Ipswich were adjoining towns. The Rogers grant took a slice from each of these towns and extended to the Merrimac River, including what are now the towns of Bradford, Groveland, Georgetown and part of Boxford. Its boundaries were fixed by the court on the 13th of May, 1640, when, as the record says, "it is declared that Rowley bounds is to be eight miles from their meeting-house, in a straight line, and then a crose line diameter from Ipswich Ryver to Merrimack Ryver, where it doth not pjudice any former grant." These boundaries in a somewhat indefinite manner fixed also the boundaries of Newbury, which may be described as having been in 1639 the line of Rowley, the Merrimac River and the ocean. Within these boundaries it was about thirteen miles long and about six miles broad, and contained not far from thirty thousand acres, of which





about two thousand acres were covered with water. Prior to the grant of the Rogers plantation Newbury, in the exercise of its ownership of a part of the newly-granted territory, had made grants of farming-lands within its limits, and after the grant to Mr. Phillips and his company by the court, it expended the sum of eight hundred pounds in buying back the farms it had granted, and then surrendered them to the court's grantees. The records of Newbury say concerning this matter that

"The towne being assembled together and being desirous to manifest their earnest desires and willingness to give due inclosurement unto the worthy gentlemen who desire to set down between us and Ipswich as to part with such a portion of land as cannot any way be expected from them, or they may without endangering their present necessities afford. Hoping on good grounds it may fully answer their desires and expectations they have determined as followeth:

"By the common and general suffrages of the body of freemen, none excepted, there was granted to the said gentlemen all the upland and meadows and marsh between us and Ipswich encompassed by the line hereunderwritten, namely:

"That their line shall begin from the head of the great creek between the great river Parker and Mr. Dimmer's, running due west as we come to the great creek, being the head of John Osgood's farm, which issues into Mr. Easton's river, and above that creek all the land southward of Mr. Easton's river and from that river from the path leading to the falls to run due west line into the country a mile and afterwards to run on a northwest line so as it come not within half a mile of the side line of Mr. Dimmer's farm. Likewise it comes two miles distant of Merrimack. Provided, that if after they have entered by building on otherwise on this part of land so granted them, and leave off from going on with a plantation or a towne between us, that then the grants above-said shall be void to all intents and purposes and to remaine the proprietyes and inheritances of the towne of Newbury in as ample a manner as before the grant hereof in all respects."

In this year 1639, Mr. Coffin, the historian of Newbury, says: "The people having built a ministry house, a meeting-house which was soon used as a school-house, had a ferry established at Carr's Island and became an orderly community, and began not only to lay out new roads, but as they were rapidly extending their settlement farther North, to take special care of the town's timber by prescribing a penalty of five shillings for every tree cut down on the town's land without permission. Nearly the whole of what is now called West Newbury, or that part above Attichoke River, was called the 'upper woods.' In this year, also, Anthony Somerby, Henry Somerby, John Lowle, Richard Lowle, Percival Lowle, Wm. Gerrish and Richard Dole, all ancestors of long lines of Newbury descendants, were admitted inhabitants of the town. Anthony Somerby was the first schoolmaster in the town, and in the year of his arrival, 1639, the town granted to him for his encouragement to keepe schoole for one yeare, foure akers of upland over the great river in the necke, also six akers of salt marsh next to Abraham Toppan's twenty akers."

In 1640 the town of Salisbury was incorporated and shortly after that town granted to George Carr the island which still bears his name. Mr. Carr was appointed ferryman by the court held at Ipswich, and thus Newbury, which had been the border town on the east, became connected with a new town, which

now enjoyed that distinction. The natural tendency of this new state of things was to draw the Newbury people away from their first settlement on the banks of the river Parker, and attract them farther towards the Merrimack. The result was the laying out of what was called the new town farther to the north, and the removal of the meeting-house to a new site. The lots of land in the new town were laid out, and the town records under date of January 11, 1644, say:

"It is hereby ordered and determined by the orderers of the town affairs that the plan of the new town is and shall be laid out by the lot layers, as the house lots were determined by their choice, beginning from the farthestmost house lot in the South Street, thence running through the pine swamp, thence up the High Street, numbering the lots in the East Street to John Bartlett's lot, the 27th, then through the west side of the High Street to Mr. Lowell's, the 28th, and so to the end of that street, then Field Street to Mr. Woodman's, the forty-first, thence to the end of that street John Cheney's, the 50th, then turning to the first cross-street to John Emery's, the 51st, thence coming up from the river side on the east side of the same street to the other street, the west side to Daniel Pierce's, the 57th, and so to the river side on the side the street to Mr. Clarke and others, to Francis Plummer the 66th, as hereinafter by names and figures appear:

Thomas Parker	33	Anthony Somerby	44
James Noyes	32	Richard Bartlett	24
Edward Woodman	11	John Bartlett	25
John Knight	9	Wm. Titcombe	21
Richard King	10	Nicholas Batt	47
John Pike, Jr.	55	Robert Coker	49
Archibald Woodman	42	Thomas Dole	24
John Pemberton	46	Richard Badger	4
Richard Littleale	49	John Cheney	50
Richard Fitts	50	Edward Greenleaf	7
Henry Travers	1	John Oliver	17
John Emery	51	Et. John Lowle	28
Henry Palmer	3	Anthony Short	8
Richard Kent, Sr.	3	John Hutchinson	31
Wm. Palmer	3	John Clark	60
Thomas Cromwell	3	Edward Rawson	31
Samuel Scullard	43	Widow Goffe	3
Thomas Silver	3	Thomas Browne	56
Walter Allen	3	Wm. Hsley	3
Francis Plummer	66	Nicholas Noyes	6
Abraham Toppan	20	Henry Lunt	14
John Muschelwhite	3	Wm. Browne	18
Thomas Hale	3	John Cutting	30
Thomas Coleman	12	Mr. Lowle, Sr.	29
Widow Browne	19	Samuel Plummer	65
John Pike, Sr.	2	Anthony Morse	34
Daniel Pearce	3	Wm. Morse	3
Thomas Blunfield	3	Henry Rolfe	11
Nathaniel Badger	38	Daniel Thurston	58
John Bond	3	Able Hues	24
John Swett	26	John Poore	54
Wm. Hilton	3	James Merrill	49
Robert Lewis	3	Abraham Merrill	36
Gyles Badger	63	John Frye	3
Widow Stevens	138	The Ferry Lot	3
John Stevens	14	John Indian	61

At an earlier date, on the 17th of March, 1642, it was

"declared and ordered, according to the former intention of the town, that the following persons be acknowledged to be freeholders by the town, and to have a proportionable right in all waste lands, commons and rivers undisposed, and such as buy from or under them, or any of their heirs, have bought, granted and purchased from them or any of them their right and title thereunto and none else, provided, also, that no freeholder shall bring in any cattle of other men's or towns on the town's commons, above and beyond their proportions, otherwise than the freemen shall permit.



Richard Dummer.	Thomas Hale.
Henry Sewall.	Joseph Peasly.
Edward Rawson.	William Mors.
John Lowle.	John Goff.
Henry Short.	John Stevens.
Thomas Cromwell.	Arthur Short.
Richard Holt.	John Penberton.
Henry Rolf.	John Pike, Sr.
John Merrill.	John Mussellwhite.
John Emery.	Thomas Browne.
Anthony Somerby.	John Hutchins.
Richard Bartlett.	Daniel Huxton.
William Moody.	John Poor.
William Frankling.	John Pike, Jr.
Abraham Toppin.	Henry Palmer.
Henry Somerby.	William Titcomb.
Thomas Silver.	Nicholas Batt.
Henry Travers.	Thomas Smith.
Richard Lattide.	William White.
Giles Barger.	Thomas Davis.
Thomas Parker.	William Hiley.
James Noyes.	Samuel Gible.
Percevall Lowle.	Thomas Dow.
Stephen Dummer.	Archelus Woodman.
Richard Kent, Jr.	John Sweet.
Samuel Southard.	Christopher Bartlett.
Edward Greenleaf.	Mrs. Miller.
John Osgood.	John Russ.
Abel Huse.	John Spencer.
Joseph Carter.	John Clark.
John Knight.	John Woodbridge.
Henry Hunt.	John Cutting.
Richard Knight.	James Browne.
Richard Browne.	Francis Plummer.
Mrs. Oliver.	William Palmer.
Stephen Kent.	John Bartlett.
John Cheney.	Robert Coker.
Richard Barger.	Richard Pitt.
Anthony Mase.	Thomas Blumfield.
William Thomas.	Thomas Colman.
Nicholas Noyes.	George Browne.
Willow Stevens.	Nathaniel Bicket.
Nathaniel Wyer.	John Bond.
John Kelley.	William Berry.
Mr. Woodman.	Walter Allen.
John Hly.	

Counting the above ninety-one freeholders and the probable average number in their families, together with such as may not have been freeholders, the population of Newbury may be estimated to have been in 1642, seven years after its settlement, at between three and four hundred. Among these freeholders are found the names of Bond, Browne, Pearse, Mors, Franklin, Morrell, Smith, White, Knight, Allen, Hutchins, Clark, Kent and Poor, all of which may be found in various lists of residents of English Newbury at the same period. It is not improbable that many immigrants from that town to New England who followed Rev. Thomas Parker, were attracted by the name to make the American Newbury their permanent home. Descendants of the early settlers of Newbury seeking the home of their ancestors on the other side of the ocean, and their family connections in the old country, would probably find a genealogical mine in the old English town which has not yet been to any great extent explored.

In 1645 a second grist-mill was built, but whether in addition to or in place of the old Dummer and Spencer mill the records do not state. A committee

was appointed on the 18th of December in that year "to procure a water mill for to be built and set up in said towne," and it was agreed to give John Emery and Samuel Scullard twenty pounds and ten acres of upland and six acres of meadow, said mill to be free from all rates for seven years, and to be a freehold to them and their heirs, they on their part agreeing to set up the mill between Holt's Point and Woodman's Bridge.

Early in the year 1647 the removal of the meeting-house farther north, into or near what was called the new town, became necessary in consequence of the desertion of the old settlement by a majority of the members of the church. On the 2d of January, 1646-47, the following order was issued by James Noyes, Edward Woodman, John Cutting, John Lowle, Richard Knight and Henry Short, six of the seven men having charge of the affairs of the town:

"Wee, whose names are in the margent expressed for the settling the disturbances that yett remaine about the planting and setting the meeting house that all men may cheerfully goe on to improve their lands at the new towne doe determine that the meeting house shall be placed and sett up at or before the twentieth of October next in, or upon a knowle of upland by Abraham Toppin's lorne within a five or sixteen rodd of the side of the gate posts, that are sett up in the high way by the said Abraham Toppin's lorne."

This knowle of land is understood to have been on the northwest corner of the present burial-ground. Edward Rawson, one of the town committee or selectmen, as they may as well be called, dissented from the decision of his associates, and a petition was sent to the General Court signed by those opposed to the removal, asking for such interference and aid as the court might feel itself able to interpose and render. The following extract will show the motive and reasons actuating the petitioners:

"To come to the last passages which stir and set on the great of our sorrows. Descend on it last was had of taking down ye meeting house. These (as well as we can guess) that paid two parts of three to the building of it, consented not, many strongly opposed it, yet the voices of many, that were the servants, and never paid a penny to it, prevailed, down it is taken without any satisfaction given us, and besides what we are forced to pay toward it. The highway in part that served both town and country and the very places assigned to bury the dead and where many dead bodies have been sold away (as we are informed, though all things are secretly carried) to sett up againe, where both old and new towne judge it unmeet for both, but especially for us of the old. The present and already seen inconveniences in respect of enjoying the ordinances, which we came so many miles to be partakers of, hath caused us oft to sigh in secret and forcibly put us on thought to provide for ourselves and not to betray the blood of our poor innocents, which cannot (or exceeding rarely) be partakers of the ordinary means of salvation; nor we ourselves, but uncomfortably and with great distractions, which they of the new towne can experience to us by that little they have already felt. Diver propositions we have made. At the beginning of these motions we promised the elders, both of you, their maintenance (which must needs be to our great charge) if they would engage themselves to abide with us. We were rejected in this. Since, we have made several propositions. The towne being continued and stretched out neare five miles, if not upwards, besides the inconveniences of a great river at the old towne, whereby it cannot be imagined that we, old, feeble men, women and children of all sorts can possibly goe above three miles to meeting, besides the necessary occasions in the winter time of attendance of cattell, which require will divers to be nearer, most men having small help, but by themselves, and ye two ends of ye towne being most populous, wee have therefore desired either first that one of the elders might be resident with





us, though the other be there, the church and maintenance still continuing one and the same, or secondly, that there might be two churches, and one elder might be ours, or thirdly, if neither of the former might be obtained, then to let us be a church of ourselves."

This extract not only exhibits the feeling which the removal of the meeting-house occasioned, but throws also side-lights on the extent and character and condition of the settlement. The allusion in the extract to the sale of a part of the highway and the burial-place is woven by an intelligent writer in the *Newburyport Herald* into an argument tending to show that Fishermen's Green, and not the lower green, was the location of the first meeting-house. He says:

"The common belief that this building first stood upon the lower Green rests entirely on traditional grounds, while there is considerable evidence which decidedly indicates that its site was about one third of a mile to the northward and adjoined the old burial ground, now in the next opposite the residence of Joseph Haley, but on what was then called 'fishermen's green.' The tower records show that this burial ground was reserved from the sale of the green to John Lavery in May, 1647, eight months after the house had been removed. It is hardly possible that such reservation would have been made except that the dead were already there, and tends strongly to establish the fact that this was the first and only place of burials of the early settlers up to this time. As soon as one starts from a land where it was a common custom to include the grounds for the meeting-house and burials in one lot, a custom continued by them when they relocated at the New Town, it is but reasonable to believe that when at Old Town they had set apart grounds for the same uses, they had connected them in the same manner."

His argument is, in a few words, that the old burial-place was at Fishermen's Green, and that it is probable that, in accordance with the English custom, the burial-place was the churchyard. So far as the Plymouth colony was concerned, the English custom was invariably followed; but the writer of this sketch has heard it stated by a learned antiquary of Essex County, that in that county, except in Ipswich, it did not prevail. It certainly was not followed in Salem, but the settlers of Newbury, having remained long enough in Ipswich to observe its ways, may have adopted them in their future home.

There is no record of any vessel up to this time having crossed the bar at the mouth of the Merrimack. It is probable that at the time of the settlement of Newbury the bar was considered practically impassable, while the river Parker was easily accessible and to a certain point navigable for the class of vessels at that time used. Hubbard says in his history: "Merrimack is another gallant river, the entrance into which, though a mile over in breadth, is barred with shoals of sand, having two passages that lead thereunto at either end of a sandy island that lieth over against the mouth of sayde river. Near the mouth of that are two other lesser ones, about which are seated two considerable townes, the one called Newberry, the other Ipswich, either of which have fayre channels wherein vessels of fifty or sixty tons may pass up safely to the doores of the inhabitants whose habitations are pitched near the banks on either side." And there is no doubt that the first vessels built in Newbury were built on the river

Parker. But there is some reason to suspect that the movement of the settlement towards the Merrimack River was owing to the discovery that the bar was not such a hindrance to navigation as had been supposed.

The settlement of Salisbury, in 1640, must have been not only the result of this discovery, but the cause of a further dissipation of previously entertained fears concerning the river obstructions; and it is not unlikely that the Newbury people began at this early day to take advantage of the deeper water, the more advantageous shore and the better connection with the sea which the Merrimack afforded. It is a matter of record that as early as 1655 the town granted to Captain Paul White a half of an acre of land on the Merrimack "for the purpose and on condition that he build a dock and warehouse there." Previously to that time, however, trade on the river had been carried on, which demanded the convenience of a wharf to supplant the prevailing method of loading and unloading vessels by means of small boats.

In 1649 the business of tanning was begun in Newbury by Nicholas Easton, in a yard north of the Parker River Bridge, on the east side of the road, and in the same year John Bartlett appears to have been engaged in the same business. In 1658 a movement was made towards the erection of a new meeting-house, as is indicated by the appointment of a committee of the town to sell to Edward Woodman twelve acres of marsh, and take pay in boards or nails for the meeting-house. It was probably finished some time in 1661, as under the date of January 28th, in that year, it is recorded that the selectmen agreed with Henry Jaques "to build a gallery in the new meeting-house at both ends and all along on the west side with three substantial seats all along both sides and ends; the said Henry Jaques shall fell the timber and provide all the stuff, both planks, boards, rayles, and joyces and nayles, and to bring the stuff all in place and make it for three payre of stayres and whatever else is requisite to compleate the said gallery, for which he is to have thirty pounds in good current pay or provisions. Also that Henry Jaques shall have all the old stuffe of the old gallery in the old meeting-house. The said Henry Jaques is also to lay a floure all over the meeting-house from beame to beame, and the towne doth engage to provide joyces, boards and nayles and so forth and so forth." The new house stood south of the old one, and the old one appears to have remained in use until the new one was completed. The first house was probably not only unsubstantial in its character, but too small for the increasing number of its congregation. Under date of 1651 Johnson, in his "Wonder-working Providence," said that the town consisted of about seventy families, and that "the soules in church fellowship were about one hundred." Before 1660 the number had doubtless increased to such a number as would render such a building as they would have been likely to erect at





the time of the first settlement altogether too small for convenient use.

In 1663 the Newbury meeting-house was the scene of that extraordinary exhibition by Lydia Wardwell of her naked person during divine service. For this offense she was carried before the court at Salem and sentenced to be whipped and to pay the costs of court, amounting to twelve shillings and sixpence. Her maiden name was Perkins, and she was the wife of Eliakim Wardwell, of Hampton. This fanatical act was justified by George Bishop in his "New England Judged" as follows:

"His wife, Lydia, being a young and tender chaste woman, seeing the wickedness of your priests and rulers to her husband, was not at all offended with the truth, but as your wickedness abounded, so she withdrew and separated from your church at Newbury, of which she was sometimes a member, and being given up to the leading of the Lord, after she had been often sent for to come thither, to give a reason for such a separation, it being at length upon her, in the consideration of their miserable condition, who were thus blinded with ignorance and persecution, to go to them, and as a sign to them she went in (though it was exceeding hard to her modest and shame-faced disposition) naked amongst them, which put them into such a rage, instead of consideration, they soon had hands on her, and to the court at Ipswich led her, where, without law, they condemned her to be tied to the fence post of the tavern, where they sat, and there sorely lashed her with twenty or thirty cruel stripes. And this is the discipline of the church of Newbury, in New England, and this is their religion, and their usage of the handmaid of the Lord, who, in a great cross to her natural temper, came thus among them, a sign, indeed, signifiatory enough to them, and suitable to their state, who, under the vision of religion, were thus blinded into cruel persecution."

Rev. James Noyes, the assistant of Rev. Thomas Parker, having died October 22, 1656, Rev. John Woodbridge was engaged in his place, the town agreeing to pay him thirty pounds for the half-year beginning on the 25th of September, 1663. Mr. Noyes was born in Choulderton, England, in 1608, and was a cousin of Rev. Thomas Parker, his mother having been a sister of Rev. Robert Parker, the father of Thomas. He studied at Oxford, and after preaching a short time came to New England in the same ship with his cousin, and was settled in Newbury as his assistant in 1635. Mr. Parker said of him,—

"My worthy colleague in the ministry of the Gospel was a man of singular qualifications, in piety excelling, an implacable enemy to all heresy and schism, and a most able warrior against the same. He was of a reaching and ready apprehension, a large invention, a most profound judgment, a rare and tenacious and comprehensive memory, fixed and unmovable in his grounded conceptions, sure in words and speech without hesitations gentle and mild in all his expressions, without all passion or provoking language. And as he was a notable disputant, so he would never provoke his adversary, saving by the short knocks and heavy weight of argument. He was of so loving and compassionate and humble a nature that I believe never were any acquainted with him but did not desire the continuance of his society and acquaintance. He was zealous for truth, and in defence thereof had no respect to any persons. He was a most excellent counsellor in doubts, and could strike at a hare's breadth like the Benjamites, and expedite the entangled out of the tangle. He was outrageous in dangers, and still was apt to believe the best, and make fair weather in a storm. He was much honored and esteemed in the country, and his death was much bewailed. I think he may be reckoned among the greatest worthies of the age."

Not long after the death of Mr. Noyes serious difficulties arose in the church, owing to differences of opinion concerning church government. Mr. Parker

was strongly inclined towards the Presbyterian form and his opinions were approved by many of the leading men among his people. On the other hand, quite as many of the church opposed his views, and the result was a controversy which threw a cloud over the later years of Mr. Parker's ministry. It is not necessary in this narrative to give a full history of the controversy, which did not come to a termination until 1672. Both Mr. Parker and Mr. Noyes had entertained the same views for many years, and it is not a violent presumption that only the sweet and loving spirit of Mr. Noyes prevented the outbreak during his life. It was not until after Mr. Woodbridge had become the assistant of Mr. Parker that the real trouble began. Mr. Woodbridge entertained the same views as Mr. Parker, and, having been engaged from year to year, it was voted by the town, May 21, 1670, that "the order in the town-book that gives Mr. Woodbridge sixty pounds a year for his preaching is made void."

Mr. Woodbridge was the son of Rev. John Woodbridge, of Stanton, in England, and was born in 1613. His mother was a sister of Rev. Thomas Parker, and he came with his uncle and his younger brother, Benjamin, to New England in 1634, and married, in 1639, Mercy, daughter of Governor Thomas Dudley, and was ordained September 16, 1644, the first minister of Andover. He was the first town clerk of Newbury, and served until 1638. In 1647 he returned to England. He had eleven children, who grew to manhood and womanhood, three of whom—John, Timothy and Benjamin—became clergymen, the two former being graduates of Harvard. In 1663 he returned to New England, and preached, as already stated, in Newbury seven years. He continued to live in Newbury, acting as magistrate of the Massachusetts colony and justice of the peace, and there died, March 17, 1695. Woodbridge's Island takes its name from him, and in 1665 a town in New Jersey, settled by emigrants from Newbury, was called Woodbridge in his honor.

Mr. Woodbridge had eleven children: Sarah, born in Newbury, June 7, 1640, and died in 1690, probably unmarried; Lucy, born in Newbury, March 13, 1642, and married first Simon, son of Governor Bradstreet, and afterwards Capt. Daniel Epps, of Ipswich, and died June 18, 1710, at the house of her son, John Bradstreet, in Medford; John, born in Newbury in 1644, graduated at Harvard in 1664, settled in the ministry at Killingworth, Conn., 1666, ordained in 1669, installed at Weathersfield in 1679, married Abigail, daughter of Gov. Wm. Leete, of Connecticut, and died Nov. 13, 1691; Benjamin, born probably in Andover, in 1645, married first, June 3, 1672, Mary, daughter of Rev. John Ward, of Haverhill, and second, in August, 1686, Deborah, widow of Henry Tarleton, and daughter of Daniel Cushing, of Hingham, settled in the ministry at New Castle, N. H., Bristol, R. I., Windsor, Conn., and Medford Mass., at which last



place he died January 15, 1709-10; Thomas, born in England in 1648, who married a daughter of Paul White, and died March 30, 1691; Mary, born in England, married Samuel Appleton, of Ipswich, and died June 9, 1712; Timothy, born in England January 13, 1656, a graduate of Harvard in 1675; Dorothy, born in England in 1650, and died in New England, in 1723; Anne, born in England in 1653, and died in Massachusetts, February 28, 1701; Joseph, born in England in 1657, married Miss Martha Rogers, May 20, 1686, and died Sept. 17, 1726; Martha, born in England 1660, married, probably, Thomas Ruggles, and died in 1738.

On the 20th of October, 1675, Rev. John Richardson was ordained as assistant to Mr. Parker, in the place of Mr. Woodbridge. His salary was to be "one hundred pounds a year, and each person was to pay one-half of his share in merchantable barley, and the rest in merchantable pork, wheat, butter or Indian corn, or such pay paid unto Mr. Richardson to his satisfaction, as every person may understand upon inquiry of Tristram Coffin, who was chosen in April the town's attorney to gather Mr. Richardson's rates, and in case the said Tristram Coffin shall neglect his trust herein, he shall pay forty shillings fine to the selectmen."

But Mr. Richardson was not long associated with Mr. Parker, for the latter died on the 24th of April, 1677, in his eighty-second year. Mr. Parker, was, as has been stated in an earlier part of this narrative, the son of Robert Parker, and born in Wiltshire, England in 1595. Rev. Robert Parker was one of the chief dissenting clergymen in the time of Bishop Bancroft, whose writings were especially feared. In the year 1595 Bishop Bilson published a work entitled, "A survey of Christ's suffering and descent into Hell," in which he maintained that Christ at His death actually visited the regions of the damned. Mr. Parker in 1604, in answer to the Bishop, published a learned work, entitled "De Descensu Christi ad Infernos." In 1607 he published another learned work against symbolizing with Antichrist in the ceremonies, but especially against the sign of the cross. In consequence of this publication he was driven into exile to avoid arrest, and went to Holland, carrying with him his son Thomas, who had been obliged to leave Oxford in consequence of his father's troubles. Mr. Parker went first to Amsterdam and then to Dyesburg, a fortified town of the Netherlands, where he died in 1614, leaving his son nineteen years of age. In looking over the career of this man, it is not difficult to discover the source of those views of church government entertained by his son. Nor is it easy to believe that the son experienced any change in those views, or that they were not entertained from the first day of his settlement. It is quite likely that if Mr. Noyes had lived until the close of Mr. Parker's pastorate, the unfortunate controversy which for a time alienated pastor and people would not have

occurred. Mr. Parker was an old man at the time, suffering from a loss of eyesight and from an impairment of all those qualities of mind and heart which had made him a skillful manager of church affairs, and more than all from the loss of the guiding hand of Mr. Noyes, so long his wise and moderate counselor. With the advent of Mr. Woodbridge, who, though he was declared by Cotton Mather "a great reader, a great scholar, a Christian and a pattern of goodness," was more pronounced and emphatic in the statement of his convictions, the difficulty which had long been kept slumbering came to an inevitable head.

In 1678 trade on the Merrimac River was enlarging, and Richard Dole, of Newbury, was granted lands for a wharf. In 1679 a third grist-mill was provided for, and the town granted to John Emery, Jr., "twelve acres of land on the west side of Artichoke River, provided he build and maintain a corn-mill to grind the town's corn from time to time, and to build it within one year and a half after the date hereof." In the same year the selectmen chose fourteen tithingmen, who for certain purposes were to have charge of a certain number of families. These purposes are designated in the following copy of instructions to Abraham Merrill, a tithingman, taken from Coffin's "History of Newbury":

"To Deacon Abraham Merrill:

"At a meeting of the Selectmen, March 31st, 1679, you are hereby required to take notice that you are chosen according to court order by the Selectmen to be a tithing man, to have inspection into and look over these families, that they attend the publick worship of God, and do not break the Sabbath, and, further, you are to attend as the court order directs. The names of the families are Edward Woodman, Junior, Samuel Bartlet, Richard Bartlet, Abel Pittsbury, John Stevens, Christopher Bartlet, Thomas Chase, Goodman Bailey, John Chase.

"By order of the Selectmen.

"ANTHONY SOFERRI, Recorder."

The law under which these appointments were made was passed at the session of the General Court held on the 23d of May, 1677, and is as follows:

"This court, being desirous to prevent all occasions of Complaint referring to the Profanation of the Sabbath, and as an Addition to former Laws,

"Do Order and Enact that all the Lawes for Sanctification of the Sabbath, and preventing the profaning thereof, be twice in the year, viz., in March and September, publicly Read by the Minister or Ministers on the Lord's days in their severall respective Assemblies within this jurisdiction, and all people by him cautioned to take heed to the observance thereof. And the Selectmen are hereby Ordered to see to it there be one man appointed to inspect the ten Families of their Neighbourhood, which Tithing man or men shall and hereby have power, in the absence of the Constable, to apprehend all Sabbath-breakers, disorderly Tipplers, or such as keep Licensed Houses, or others that shall suffer any disorder in their Houses on the Sabbath day or evening after, or at any other time, and to carry them before a Magistrate or other Authority, or commit to Prison, whany Constable may do, to be proceeded with according to Law.

"And for the better putting a restraint and securing Offenders that shall in any way transgress against the Lawes on the Sabbath, either in the Meeting-House, by any abusive carriage or misbehaviour, by making any noise, or otherwise, or during the day time, being laid hold on by any of the Inhabitants, shall, by the said person appointed to inspect the Law, be forthwith carried forth and put into a Cage in Boston, which is appointed to be forthwith by the Select Men set up in the Market place, and in such other Towns as the County Courts shall appoint, there to remain till Authority shall examine the person offending, and give order





for his punishment, as the matter may require according to the Laws relating to the Sabbath."

This law and the appointment under it are quoted at length for the purpose of correcting a popular misconception concerning the word "tithingman," and explaining its true meaning. The word took its name rather from the manner in which the tithingman was selected than from the nature of his office. Indeed, the precise functions of the office, as exercised in this country, have never been satisfactorily defined. In the Plymouth Colony the office was first mentioned in the laws of 1682 "with reference to the Indians for their better regulating and that they may be brought to live orderly, soberly and diligently." One of the provisions of these laws was that, in addition to a general overseer, "each towne where Indians doe reside every tenth Indian shall be chosen by the Court of Assistants, or said overseer yearly, whose shall take the inspection, care and oversight of his nine men and present their faults, etc." A tithingman was simply a tenth man. A Saxon tithing consisted of ten families, and ten tithings made up the "hundred." In the Plymouth Colony in the management of the Indians, and in the Massachusetts Colony in enforcing an observance of the Sabbath, it was found convenient to give every tenth man the oversight of the other nine, and consequently he was called a tithingman. After the union of the Plymouth and Massachusetts Colonies, laws were passed requiring the election of tithingmen and making them practically constables to inspect and regulate licensed houses as well as to preserve the peace and good order on the Sabbath. After a lapse of years the office gradually lapsed into that of a sort of ecclesiastical constable with jurisdiction and powers limited to Saturday evening and the Sabbath. Thus the name was retained after the method of election was changed and the popular mind became confused as to its real significance.

The few next years, up to the close of the year 1686, were characterized by important and stirring events. The trials of Caleb Powell and Elizabeth Morse for witchcraft cover the only instances in which the people of Newbury are recorded as having been drawn into the prevailing extraordinary delusion. William Morse, the husband of Elizabeth, was the supposed victim, but Powell was acquitted, and Mrs. Morse, after condemnation to death, was reprieved. The Rev. John Hale, of Beverly, states that:

"She being reprieved, was carried to her own home, and her husband (who was esteemed a sincere and understanding Christian by those that knew him), desired some neighbourly assistance of whom I was one to discourage his wife, which we did, and her discourse was very Christian and still pleaded her innocence as to that which was laid to her charge. We did not esteem it prudence for us to pass any definitive sentence upon one under her circumstances, yet we inclined to the more charitable side. In her last sickness she was in much trouble and darkness of spirit, which occasioned a judicious friend to examine her strictly, whether she had been guilty of witchcraft, but she said no, but the ground of her trouble was somnolent and passionate speeches and actions of her while in prison, upon account of her suffering wrongfully, whereby she had provoked the Lord by putting contempt upon

his word. And in time she sought her pardon and comfort from God in Christ and dyed, so far as I understand, praying to and resting upon God in Christ for salvation."

In reviewing the terrible delusion of witchcraft, of which so many innocent persons were the victims, the only consoling reflection is that the persons condemned so thoroughly shared the universal belief that they may themselves have come to the conviction at last that they were the unconscious instruments of the devil, and, in accordance with the command of the Scriptures, "thou shalt not suffer a witch to live," deserved the punishment they were about to suffer.

In 1682, a Baptist Church was formed in Newbury, of which George Little, Philip Squire, Nathaniel Cheney, William Sayer, Benjamin Morse, Edward Woodman, John Sayer and Abel Merrill were members, but how long it lived and when it died does not appear. In this and succeeding years additional grants of lands for the construction of wharves on the Merrimac were made, and the business interests along the banks of that river steadily increased. In 1686 a division of common lands was made. The order of the town passed in 1642, which has been quoted, declared the ownership of the commons to be possessed by the ninety-one freeholders of the town at that time and their heirs and assigns. All other inhabitants of the town were excluded, and in the proposed division those who were not included within the scope of the order now claimed a right. After a prolonged agitation on the subject, on the 5th of May, 1686, a committee of seventeen was chosen to consider and report a proper method of division, and on the 20th of October the committee made a report, which was adopted by the town:

"That the upper commons be divided in manner following, namely, the six thousand acres, one-half of them in quantity and quality, be divided among the freeholders; to every freeholder a like share, and the other half of said commons be divided among all such inhabitants of this town and freeholders as have paid rates two years last past, proportionable to what each man paid by rate to the minister's rate in the year 1685.

"And that about eleven hundred acres of the lower commons be divided according to the above said and laid out into five general pastures and so forth, and the rest of the commons to be divided and laid into wood lots according to the above division and same rule."

A committee, consisting of Daniel Pierce, Stephen Greenleaf, John Emery, Joseph Pike, Tristram Coffin, Nathaniel Clark and Henry Short, was chosen to divide the lots. Before the division was made it was agreed that Indian River should be free as far as the tide flows for the passage of boats, and that every freeholder shall draw his lot as his name was entered in the town-book. It was further agreed:

"That the persons concerned in the rate division of the upper commons shall be drawne into four companies, then one man of each company shall draw in the name and for the said company, and he that draweth first that company shall have their proportions first. Then every man's name of every company and the names of the four companies shall be putt into four several bagges, and the committee chosen to lay out the said rate proportion shall take a paper out of the bagg belonging to the first company, and that man's name that first comes to hand shall have



his lot first laid out, and so all the rest successively, until the whole be laid out and so for the rest of the companies."

The division began next to the farm of John Gerish, at the line of the town of Bradford, and the land was laid out by Tristram Coffin and Henry Short. Afterwards a committee was chosen to divide the eleven hundred acres of the lower commons into five general pastures, and "to measure the old towne common and proportion it to the old towne men, and proportion the rest of the land adjacent to the rest of the inhabitants in the same proportion."

In 1687 a committee was appointed "to treat with Peter Cheney about setting up a corne-mill and a fulling-mill upon the Falls River." Both in the Massachusetts and Plymouth Colonies this seems to have been about the date of the introduction of the domestic manufacture of cloth and consequently the erection of fulling-mills. It is believed that before that time English cloth was chiefly used, a belief somewhat confirmed by the absence of spinning-wheels in the early inventories, and by the mention of large supplies of English materials for clothing and other domestic uses.

In all these years the town had been gradually extending to the westward until in 1685 a very considerable part of its population occupied that section. Its interests had become so distinct from those of the older part of the town, and the distance from the church was so great, that on the 10th of March, 1684, its inhabitants sent the following petition to the town:

"To the town of Newbury the humble request of some of the inhabitants of this town doe desire and entreat that you would be pleased to grant us your consent, approbation and assistance in setting some help in the industry amongst us, by reason that we see live soe remote from the meate, great part of us, that we cannot with any comfort or convenience come to the publick worship of God; neither can our families be brought up under the meates of grace as Christians ought to be, and which is absolutely necessary unto salvation, therefore we will humbly crave your loving compliance with us in this our request."

No definite action appears to have been taken by the town on this petition, but the motives which inspired it became only the stronger with the lapse of time, as will be seen hereafter in this narrative. In 1690 a second request was made of the town, and a committee of eight persons was chosen to consider the subject, who reported:

"That considering the times as troublesome, and the towne being so much behind with Mr. Richardson's salary, the farmers and the neck-men being under greater disadvantages upon many accounts, doe desire and expect it such a thing be granted, that they should have the same privilege to provide for themselves, which we think cannot conduce to peace, therefore desire the new towne to rest satisfied for the present."

In 1692 another petition was presented to the town requesting aid in the support of the ministry in a meeting-house which had been built at Belleville. It is not proposed to enter into a history of the formation of the new parish in this narrative, as it may be found in detail in the history of West Newbury. It is sufficient to say that on the 3d of January, 1695, Tristram Coffin, Henry Short and Abraham Merrill divided the town into two parishes, and that on the

26th of October, 1698, a church was gathered in the West Precinct and the Rev. Samuel Belcher was ordained their minister. Nor is it necessary to follow the career of this church, as the history of West Newbury, to which it more properly belongs, contains it in full.

On the 27th of April, 1696, Rev. John Richardson terminated his pastorate by death. Little is known of the career of Mr. Richardson before he entered on his ministry in Newbury. He graduated at Harvard in 1666, and married Mary Pierson, of Cambridge, October 28, 1673. It was at a critical period of the Newbury Church that he received a call to settle as its pastor. He accepted it on condition:

"1<sup>st</sup>, so long as the people of God here do continue in the true faith and peace of the Gospel as in Acts 11: 22.

"2<sup>d</sup>, so long as I have the liberty of my ministry.

"3<sup>d</sup>, Discharge my duty to my family; thus I say I do express myself willing to settle among you with a true intention and a true affection."

During his pastorate he exerted a conciliatory influence and did much to heal the differences which, for many years, had divided the church. His monument bears the following inscription:

"Resurrection to immortality—is here expected from what was mortal of the Reverend Mr. John Richardson (once Fellow of Harvard College, afterwards Teacher to the Church in Newbury), putt off Apr. 27, 1696, in the fiftieth year of his age.

"When Preachers dy the Rules the pulpit gave,  
To live well, are still preached from the grave.  
The Faith & Life, which your dead Pastor taught,  
In one grave with him, Sirs, bury not.

Ala victor,

A mortuo discit vivere mortuus  
E Terris discit cognitare de Cælis."

On the 9th of September, 1696, Rev. Christopher Toppan was ordained as the successor of Mr. Richardson, and two years later, on the 5th of July, 1698, the "town voted that they would build a new meeting-house and for that purpose chose the worshipful Colonel Daniel Pierce, Captain Thomas Noyes and Sergeant Stephen Jaques a committee." On the 21st of December the town voted "that Sergeant Stephen Jaques should build a meeting-house sixty feet in length, fifty feet in breadth and twenty feet in the stud, for five hundred and thirty pounds," and in the next February voted "to have the meeting-house twenty-four feet post instead of twenty, and to pay Sergeant Jaques twenty pounds more." The meeting-house was finished in 1699, and on the 18th of December in that year Colonel Daniel Pierce and Colonel Thomas Noyes were deputed to employ "ye honorable Captain Samuel Sewall to procure a good and sufficient meeting-house bell." The new meeting-house was erected near the old one, and on the 17th of March, 1703, the town voted "that the old meeting-house be repaired and fitted for a court-house, school-house, and town-house."

Having brought this narrative up to the beginning of a new century, it will not be out of place to close this first chapter with a reference to some of the





representative men of Newbury in the first period of its history.

Edwin Rawson was one of the early settlers of Newbury, having made his appearance there in 1636. He was born in Gillingham, Dorsetshire, England, April 16, 1615, and was connected by marriage with the two distinguished New England clergymen Hooker and Wilson. It is stated in the town records that on the 19th of November, 1638, "it was ordered that Edward Rawson shall supply the place of Mr. Woodbridge and be the publick notary and register for the towne of Newbury, and whilst he so remains to be allowed by the towne after the rate of five pounds per annum for his paynes." In the same year he was appointed, with John Woodbridge and Edward Newman, commissioners to try inferior causes. His farm, which extended up towards Turkey Hill, was sold in 1647, when he removed to Boston to occupy the position of secretary of the Massachusetts Colony, to which he was appointed and which he held until 1686. One of his sons, William, settled in Braintree, and another, Grindall, graduated at Harvard in 1678, and was pastor of the church in Mendon from 1680 to 1715. A daughter Rebecca married an Englishman named Thomas Ramsey, who claimed to be Sir Thomas Hale, nephew of the Lord Chief Justice of England, and who carried her to England and there deserted her after securing all her rich dresses for the benefit of his real wife at Canterbury. Rebecca supported herself in England for a time by painting on glass, and was finally killed by an earthquake at Port Royal, S. C., where the ship in which she sailed for home had touched. Mr. Rawson was the author of several works, among which were "The Revolution in New England Justified," published in 1691, which was issued by him in conjunction with another author, who signed himself S. S.; and "The General Laws and Liberties Concerning the Inhabitants of the Ms." published in 1660. He died in Boston August 27, 1693.

John Spencer was one of the company who landed at Newbury with Rev. Thomas Parker in 1635. With Richard Dummer he built the first corn-mill in the town, represented Newbury in the General Court and in 1636 was chosen a magistrate. In 1637 he was discharged from the office of captain in the Pequot War, owing to his religious opinions, he being an adherent of Mrs. Hutchinson, and in the same year was disarmed by the General Court for the same cause. If he went to England he must have returned, as he died in Newbury in 1637, the year of the date of his will, and his name does not appear in the records after his disarmament. The Pettingell place now or recently owned by Edward H. Little, was his, and tradition states that the old stone house on the place was built by him. In his will he gave the place to his nephew, John Spencer, who in 1651 sold it to Daniel Pierce, and gave him possession by the old common law ceremony of turf and twig. The files

of the court for 1679 contain the following deposition of Anthony Somerby, aged seventy:

"This deponent saith about ye years 1651 or 52 I was at the farm yt Mr. John Spencer sold to Mr. Daniel Pierce, in Newbury, and Mr. Spencer and Mr. Pierce, with myself and another, I suppose it was Mr. William Thomas, and as we were going through ye land of y<sup>e</sup> said farm, Mr. Pierce said to Mr. Spencer you promised to give me possession of turle and twigge. Mr. Spencer said and so I will if you please to cut a turle and twigge; and Mr. Pierce cut a twigge off a tree and cut up a turle, and Mr. Spencer took the twigge and stuck it into the turle and bid us bear witness that he gave Mr. Pierce possession thereby of the house and land and farm that he had bought of him and gave ye turle and twigge to Mr. Pierce, and farther saith not."

Messrs. Tracy, Boardman, Pettingell and Little have owned the place since.

There were four persons by the name of Kent among the early settlers in 1635—Richard and Stephen, brothers, who had wives, and Richard, Jr., and James, sons of Richard, Sr. It is possible that they emigrated from Newbury in England, as the name appears about that time on the records of that town. Richard, Sr., was one of the seven men chosen in the first year to manage the affairs of the town. He was a prominent man, often mentioned in the records, and lived during the latter part of his life on or near the street that afterwards received his name.

Kent's Island was granted on the 7th of February, 1647, to Richard Kent, Jr. At the time of the laying out of the new town the record speaks of his being in possession of ten acres of upland and sixty-four acres of marsh, and afterwards he received by grant and purchase the whole island, which comprised about six hundred and forty acres. The estate was kept in the family for many years by the will of Richard Kent, Jr., who bequeathed it to his oldest male descendant. In process of time a Mrs. Kent had twins, and through the carelessness of the nurse it was impossible to prove the precedence of either, and consequently a John and a Stephen each claimed, as the oldest son, the whole estate. There was another brother, Moses, who took no part in the quarrel, but finally the General Court annulled the proceedings and the property was divided among the three. The island remained divided until the time of the father of the late Paul Kent, who became possessed of the whole, and from him it finally passed into the hands of Joshua N. Kent.

Anthony Somerby appeared in Newbury in 1639, and was the first schoolmaster in the town. In April, 1647, on the death of John Lowle, he was appointed "clerk of the writs at Newbury and to record births, deaths and marriages, in the place of John Lowle deceased." He was from Little Bytham, Lincolnshire, England, and was a man of education and learning. He continued in office as town clerk until his death in 1685.

John Lowle was a native of Bristol, England, and appeared in Newbury in 1639. After the appointment of Edward Rawson as secretary of the Massachusetts colony, he was chosen his successor as town clerk in April, 1647, and died on the 29th of the following June. He was the ancestor of the Lowell family,





of which, during the last three generations, there have been so many distinguished members, in law, literature and divinity.

Henry Lunt, one of the early though not the earliest settlers, was a substantial farmer, and came from England in the "Mary and John." He acquired a considerable amount of real estate, and left a family from which have come a large number of descendants. Indeed, there were so many bearing the name in the southerly part of Newbury, at one time, that it was called by many Lunt's Town. After the death of Mr. Lunt his widow, Ann, married Captain Joseph Hills, Speaker of the first House of Representatives, whose first wife was Rose Dunsten, sister of Rev. Henry Dunsten, the first president of Harvard College, who died in Scituate in 1659. The late Rev. Wm. Parsons Lunt, D.D., of Quincy, and the late Hon. George Lunt were descendants of Henry Lunt.

Richard Dummer appeared in Newbury in 1635, and in May of that year the General Court ordered Mr. John Humphrey, Mr. John Endicott, Captain Nathaniel Turner and Captain Wm. Trask to set out a farm for him about the falls of Newbury. He seems to have been thought to have some erroneous views on theological matters, and on account of them was disarmed by order of the court. He was a prominent man in the town, and with Edward Woodman took a leading part in the controversy with Rev. Mr. Parker. Mr. Dummer's farm extended from Oyster Point, the junction of Rowley Mill River with the River Parker, to the old county road, and fell to his son Jeremiah, who was a silversmith in Boston and who occupied the farm as a summer residence. Governor Dummer will be referred to more fully in connection with the Dummer Academy, in the next chapter.

Benjamin Woodbridge was the younger brother of John Woodbridge, already referred to. He was probably born at Stanton, England, about 1620, and was entered at Magdalen Hall, Oxford, where he remained under the instruction of William Eyre until he came to New England with his brother John and uncle Thomas Parker, in 1634. After his arrival here he entered Harvard, and his name stands at the head of the list of members of the first graduating class in 1642. He was an ambitious man and sought a broader field of action than New England at that time afforded. Consequently he returned to England and re-entered Magdalen Hall, receiving the degree of Master of Arts in 1648. He soon became a preacher at Salisbury in England, and before 1653 was appointed to the rectory of St. Nicholas, at the English Newbury, an old and large parish which is still flourishing in that ancient town. On the 23d of April, 1655, the High Court of Chancery issued an order for a survey of church livings, and the following report, as stated by Mr. Thomas W. Silloway, was returned concerning this parish:

"Nubery is a Parsonage worth £77 16s. 6d., formerly in the gift of ye late King. Mr. Benjamin Woodbridge is ye present Incumbent, being a godly, able and pious minister. The parish is at present large, being a greate Market Towne. And we conceive it may be fitt for another church to be built in some parte of ye Towne, and that a parte of ye parish of Speene, called Speenham, Land adjoyning Nubery, together with the chappelle of Sandeford, with a hamlet called Greenham in the parish of Thatcham, be annexed thereto."

Mr. Woodbridge was the friend of Rev. John Cotton, the vicar of St. Botolph's, in Boston, and wrote the epitaph inscribed on his gravestone, in Boston, in New England, as follows:

"A living Breathing Bible; Tables where  
Both Covenants at large engraven were;  
Gospel and Law, in's Heart, had each its column;  
His Head an Index to the sacred volume;  
His very name a Title Page; and next,  
His life a Commentary on the Text,  
O, what a Monument of glorious worth,  
When in a New Edition he comes forth  
Without Erratas may we think he'll be  
In Leaves and Covers of Eternity!"

After the restoration of Charles II., Mr. Silloway says that he became popular with the King, who made him one of his "Chaplains in ordinary," and offered him the position of Canon of Windsor. Though a minister in the English Church, fond of its ceremonies and attracted by its fascinating forms, he nevertheless had more or less Presbyterian blood in his veins and was forced to decline the canonry. He finally left St. Nicholas' Church, and after for a time following his non-conforming instincts, was again attracted into the church, and in 1665 took holy orders from the Bishop of Salisbury in the church of "St. Peter in the East," in Oxford. But again he was disappointed and once more fell back into the ranks of the dissenting brethren, where he remained until the breaking out of the Presbyterian plot in 1683, when he returned to Ingfield and died unmarried in November, 1684.

It is impossible in the space allowed for this narrative to do justice, even by a casual reference, to all the men who made their mark in Newbury during the first century of its life. In the words of Hon. George Lunt:

"Familiar names they bore, no less,  
Kent, Parker, May, Page,  
Franklin and Tracy, Noyes and Lunt,  
Sons of immortal hope.  
  
But why recall the crumbled roll,  
Short, Woodbridge, Spencer, West,  
Bartlett and Osgood, all their throng,  
Beneath their dustiest rest."

## CHAPTER CXLII.

### NEWBURY—(Continued).

THE new century opened with an increasing and still more scattered population. The people living on the borders of Newbury and Rowley built a meeting-house in 1702, and combining the names of the two towns at first called the parish "Rowlbury."



In 1704 the parish was incorporated as "Byfield Parish." As the story goes, the name owes its origin to a rivalry between the Sewall and Dummer families. Henry Sewall, the settler, selected his farm along the north side of the river Parker, while Richard Dummer selected his along the south side. Though the families had for generations lived harmoniously, when that section of the town became a parish there was quite a sharp contention between them about the name. Both families claimed the honor of the name, and when the contest was carried into the General Assembly it was finally settled by Judge Byfield, a member, who rose and offered to make the parish a present if they would name it for him. His proposal was at once agreed to and he presented to the church the plate for the communion service and also a bell. The silver tankards were afterwards burned with the church, but other pieces of the service are still in use. Judge Nathaniel Byfield was born in Long Ditten, Sussex, England, in 1653, and was the son of Richard Byfield, one of the Westminster Assembly divines. He came to New England in 1674, and after a short residence in Boston as a merchant he removed to Bristol, then the shire-town of Bristol County in Massachusetts, where he occupied for thirty-eight years the position of judge of the Court of Common Pleas. In 1724 he returned to Boston, where he also served as judge in the same court. He was also at various times Speaker of the House of Representatives, member of the Council and judge of the Admiralty Court.

The first minister of the Byfield Parish was Rev. Moses Hale, who was ordained November 17, 1706. He was the grandson of Thomas and Thomasini Hale, who came from Hertfordshire in England and settled in Newbury in 1635. He was born in Newbury, July 10, 1678, and graduated at Harvard in 1699. His ministry closed with his death, in January, 1743.

In 1705 the town voted to grant the old meeting-house of the First Parish to Richard Brown, with liberty to remove it. Thus the plan to convert it into a court-house and school-house was abandoned. In 1706 Henry Short, one of the first settlers, died while holding the office of town clerk, as its fifth incumbent. Up to the present time that office has been held by the following persons:

John Wadsworth, appointed in 1675.  
 Leonard Emerson, appointed November 19, 1698.  
 John Lowe, appointed April 1, 1647.  
 Anthony Somersby, appointed June 29, 1647.  
 Henry Short, appointed March 29, 1689.  
 Richard Buxton, Jr., appointed October 30, 1706.  
 Nathaniel Allen, appointed October 3, 1711.  
 Joseph Colton, appointed March 11, 1718-19.  
 Isahay Colman, appointed September 25, 1773.  
 Edmund Sawyer, appointed April 9, 1776.  
 John Atkinson, appointed March 14, 1786.  
 Ezra Hale, appointed April 6, 1807.  
 Stuart Chase, appointed March 12, 1811.  
 Joshua Colton, appointed March 12, 1830.  
 William Little, appointed March 2, 1857.

The present clerk, Frank Ferguson, of Byfield,

the successor of Mr. Little, was first chosen in 1881. In 1725, the Third Parish in Newbury, now the First in Newburyport, was organized, and on the 25th of June their meeting-house was dedicated. On the 19th of the following January, Rev. John Lowell was ordained as the pastor. It is not the purpose of the writer to trace the history of this church, as it will be found where it more properly belongs, in the sketch of Newburyport.

In 1731 the town voted to build a town-house, in Chandler's Lane, now Federal Street, and in the same year the Second Parish was divided, and the Fourth formed, an account of which may be found in the sketch of West Newbury. The town-house was finished in 1735, and deeded to the county on the 19th of February in that year, on the condition that it should revert to the town and parish if no court should be held in it for nine months. Instead of Chandler's Lane, its first proposed location, it was erected at a cost of £530 10*sh.* on land given by Benjamin Morse, opposite the head of Marlborough Street, where it remained until March 5th, 1789, when it was sold by auction to John Mycall. While in the possession of the town and county it was occupied as a town-house, court-house and school-house.

In 1744 the Society of Friends in Newbury built a meeting-house in what was afterwards called Belleville, but it was finally occupied by the Congregational Church in the West Parish as a vestry, and the Friends built another house near Turkey Hill.

In 1743 a controversy arose between Rev. Christopher Toppan and some of the members of his church, which for a time disturbed and excited the town. In the course of the controversy Mr. Toppan wrote to his disaffected church members the following letter:

"TO CHURCH MEMBERS, ESQUIRE, IN NEWBURY:

SIR: I have been informed that some yt are called schemers, by others new-right men (for Satan being now especially transformed into an angel of light, they pretend unto), have drawn up some articles against me, some respecting my doctrine taught in publick, some respecting my belief in several articles of religion, and some respecting my practices, and I have been told you have the original by you. I have long desired to see it, but could never yet obtain it. This is, therefore, a desire of you to send me the original, or a copy of it, attested, for I am obliged to go to York Superior Court ye next week, and would carry it with me to show to the superior judges for their judgment upon the whole as to my doctrines, whether they be right or no, for which I propose to carry my sermons reflected upon, as to my principles, whether they be right or no (though in the paper before mentioned I believe there are many things false, for I never yet knew a scheme that would not lie). As to my practices, whether right or no, I shall leave them to judge and determine. I purpose to carry with me a copy of what I now send to you, to shew it to them, if you answer not my request in sending me the original or an attested copy.

"SIR I am yours to serve in what I may,

"CHRISTOPHER TOPPAN."

In the next year the aggrieved brethren called an *ex parte* council of eight churches, which met at Newbury on the 24th of July, and examined nine charges made against their pastor. The council justified the brethren and condemned Mr. Toppan, advising them, however, "to hearken to any reasonable method whereby their final separation from the





church and parish might be prevented," and concluding by saying that "however, we utterly disapprove of unnecessary separation as partaking of great guilt and accompanied with great scandal, yet looking upon your circumstances as extraordinary and deplorable, we cannot think you blameworthy, if, with good advice, you seek more wholesome food for your souls and put yourselves under the watch of a shepherd in whom you can confide."

On the 31st of August an *ex parte* council, called by the friends of Mr. Toppan, met at Newbury, and after an examination of the charges, acquitted Mr. Toppan of nearly all the charges and censured his opponents for their "disorderly walking," advising them to return "to the bosom of the church and to the pastoral care of him who had been so faithful and useful a pastor for near fifty years."

The result of the difficulty was that the aggrieved brethren joined with some disaffected members of the Rev. Mr. Lowell's church and formed, in 1746, what is now the First Presbyterian Church in Newburyport, and settled in March, Rev. Jonathan Parsons as their pastor. A further reference to this church also will be found in the sketch of Newburyport. The following is the covenant which was signed by nineteen seceding members of the First Church:

"We, the subscribing brethren, who were members of the First Church in Newbury, and have thought it our duty to withdraw therefrom, do also look upon it our duty to enter into a church estate; specially as we apprehend this may be for the glory of God, and the interest of the Redeemer's Kingdom, as well as for our own mutual edification and comfort.

"We do therefore, as we trust, in the fear of God, mutually covenant and agree to walk together as members of Christ, according to the rules and order of the Gospel.

"In testimony whereof we have hereunto set our hands and seals this 23d day of January, 1746.

Charles Pearson.	Thomas Pike.
Moses Broadstreet.	Daniel Wells.
Edward Presbury.	Joseph Holden.
John Brown.	Nathaniel Ackerson, Jr.
Samuel Hall.	Jonathan Plummer.
Benjamin Knight.	Daniel Goodwin.
William Brown.	Silvanus Plumer.
Benjamin Pierce.	Samuel Hall.
Daniel Noyes.	Cutting, Pettingill.
Major G. Town.	

On the 14th of January, 1746, the parish of Byfield voted to build a new meeting-house, fifty-six feet long and forty-five feet wide, which was completed during the following summer. In 1748 the town granted to John Crocker liberty to build a rope-walk "along by the windmill" and to improve the place for ten years for the manufacture of rope and no other purpose. The windmill stood near the frog pond and was erected in 1703. On the 10th of November, 1745, Rev. John Tucker was settled as a colleague with Rev. Mr. Toppan. In January, 1743, Rev. Moses Hale, pastor of the Byfield Church, died and Rev. Moses Parsons, of Gloucester, was settled June 21, 1744, in his place.

After the death of Rev. Mr. Toppan, on the 23d of July, 1747, Mr. Tucker entered into the full charge

of the pastorate. Mr. Toppan was a native of Newbury and a graduate of Harvard in 1691. His monument bears the following inscription:

"Here lyes the Body of the Rev. Mr. Christopher Toppan, Master of Arts, fourth Pastor of the First Church in Newbury; a Gentleman of good Learning, conspicuous Piety and Virtue, shining both by his Doctrine and Life, skilled and greatly improved in the Practice of Physick and Surgery, who deceased July 23, 1747, in the 76th year of his age and the 51st of his Pastoral office."

In 1761 the Fifth Parish in Newbury was incorporated, and settled Rev. Oliver Noble as their pastor. Mr. Noble was born in Coventry, Conn., in 1736 and graduated at Yale College in 1757. He was settled in Newbury September 1, 1762, and resigned April 7, 1784, being afterwards settled in New Castle, N. H., where he died December 15, 1792. This church is now within the limits of Newburyport, and has been known in later years as the Belleville Congregational Church, to which further reference may be found in the sketch of Newburyport.

The year 1763 was made memorable by the opening of Dummer Academy, on Monday, February 27th in that year. William Dummer, the founder of the academy, was the grandson of Richard Dummer, who came from the small parish of Bishopstoke, near Southampton, in 1632, and after a four years' residence in Boston and Roxbury, settled in Newbury. His brother, Stephen, came to New England in 1638, but returned with his family ten years after, one of his daughters, Jane, marrying Henry Sewall, one of the early settlers of Newbury and progenitor of the family of which Judge Samuel was a distinguished member. Richard Dummer became a large landholder and probably the richest man in the province. Having been a magistrate, after Winthrop had completed his victory over Harry Vane, with whom Dummer took sides, he was dropped from the magistracy and lost his gun and sword under the disarming act. He lived on his farm, imported cattle and fruit-trees from England, built a mill at the river, and steadily increased his estate. Of his five sons, Jeremiah, the silversmith of Boston, has already been referred to.

Jeremiah was the father of two sons, Jeremy and William the founder of the academy. William was born in Boston in 1677, and the first we know of him was his living in Plymouth, England, and acting as commissioner for the Massachusetts Colony. While thus employed he received from government the appointment of Lieutenant-Governor of his native province. He returned home in 1716, on the retirement of Governor Joseph Dudley, whose daughter Katherine was his wife. Samuel Shute came from England at the same time as the successor of Governor Dudley. Governor Shute, by carrying out the instructions of the King to insist upon a fixed annual salary, made himself unpopular with the colonists, and after a contest of six years he gave up the battle and suddenly embarked for England. Though nominally Governor, he never returned, and William Dummer during that time acted in his place. After a service



of six years, in 1728, William Burnet was transferred from the chief magistracy of New York and New Jersey to that of Massachusetts, and served one year until his death, in September, 1729, when Mr. Dummer was re-instated, to be supplanted by Wm. Tailer as Lieutenant-Governor in the following year, who acted as Governor until the accession of Jonathan Belcher, August 8, 1730. During the thirty-nine remaining years of his life he lived in Newbury, for the most part in retirement, but always dispensing a generous hospitality, and indulging his generous instincts by benefactions, of which the foundation of the Byfield Academy was the most important and lasting. His wife was born in England in 1690, and brought up with all the social advantages which the position of her father as member of Parliament and Lieutenant-Governor of the Isle of Wight necessarily afforded. She died in Boston, in 1752, where he also died October 10, 1761. By his will, made seven years before, he gave to Rev. Messrs. Foxcroft and Chauncey, of Boston, and Nathaniel Dummer, of Newbury, trustees, his dwelling-house and a farm in Newbury, the rents and profits to be employed in erecting a school-house and in support of a master. The appointment of master was placed in the hands of a committee of five Byfield freeholders to be chosen annually at the regular parish meeting, and to act with the minister of the parish for the time being.

The master was to be chosen for life, unless, on the ground of incompetency or immorality, the overseers of Harvard College should see fit to remove him. The ability to read English was the only qualification for admission.

The trustees erected a small building in 1762, which is represented to have been a common one-story building, about twenty feet square, which stood nearly on the site of the present academy. The first master chosen by a committee, whose names have been lost, was Samuel Moody, a descendant of William Moody, one of the first settlers of Newbury. William had three sons,—Samuel, Joshua and Caleb. Caleb was the father of another Samuel, minister of the parish in York, who had a son Joseph, a graduate of Harvard in 1718, town clerk of York, register of deeds, county judge and finally a preacher in Upper York. Joseph was the father of Samuel, the first master of Dummer Academy.

Samuel, the master, graduated at Harvard in 1746, and afterwards took charge of the York Grammar School, which he taught about sixteen years, until his election to the preceptorship of the academy.

Under Master Moody the institution met with unexpected success. It was established at a time when the people of New England were beginning to feel ambitious for the attainment of a higher education than the common schools were able to furnish, and Dummer Academy precisely met their wants. In the twenty-seven years closing with the year 1790, there were five hundred and twenty-five students in

the academy; from 1790 to 1809, two hundred and ninety-four; from 1809 to 1819, one hundred and four; from 1819 to 1821, sixty-one; and from 1821 to 1843, inclusive, five hundred and thirty-three; or for the seventy years of its life, the records of which are accessible to the writer, an average of twenty-one per year. Among these may be found the names of Hon. Theophilus Bradbury, of Portland; Hon. Richard Cutts, of Kittery; Hon. Moses Davenport, of Newburyport; Hon. Elias Hasket Derby, of Salem; Hon. Edward Dowse, of Charlestown; Hon. Jonathan Freeman, of Boston; Hon. Nathaniel Gorham, of Charlestown; Hon. Rufus King, of Scarborough; Hon. Jeremiah Nelson, of Rowley; Hon. Samuel Osgood, Hon. Theophilus Parsons, of Byfield; Hon. Oliver Peabody, of Andover; Hon. Benjamin Pickman, of Salem; Hon. Samuel Phillips, of Andover; Commodore Edward Preble, of Portland; Hon. William Prescott, of Pepperell; Hon. Samuel Sewall, of Boston; Rev. Samuel Webber, of Cambridge; Hon. John Wentworth, of Somersworth, N. H., and Hon. Phillips White, of Newburyport. The above were all before 1790. There may be found on the lists since then the names of Parker and Nehemiah Cleaveland, of Byfield and Topsfield; Nathaniel Cogswell, of Rowley; Patrick T. Jackson, of Newburyport; Alfred Johnson, of Freeport, Maine; Edward S. Rand, of Newburyport; Joseph Hale Abbott, of Wilton, N. H.; Benjamin Apthorp Gould, of Newburyport; Rev. Ephraim Peabody, of Wilton, N. H.; Nathaniel J. Lord, of Ipswich; Rev. Chandler Robbins, of Roxbury; Otis P. Lord, of Ipswich; Ebenezer Bradbury, of Newburyport; William D. Northend, of Byfield, and Rev. George D. Wildes, of Newburyport.

In 1782 the academy was incorporated and the entire charge of the institution, including the selection of teachers, was placed in the hands of fifteen trustees. Mr. Moody resigned March 25, 1790, and died at Exeter on the 17th of December, 1790.

His gravestone in an old graveyard in York, Maine, where he was buried, bears the following inscription:

"Integer vixit, sacrospectus, pius."

Here lies the remains of Samuel Moody, Esq., Preceptor of Dummer Academy, the first institution of the kind in Massachusetts. He left no children to mourn his sudden death, for he died a bachelor, yet his numerous pupils in the United States will ever retain a lively sense of the sociability, industry, integrity and piety he possessed in an unusual degree, as well as the disinterested, zealous, faithful and useful manner he discharged the duties of the Academy for 30 years. He died at Exeter, N. H., December 17th, 1790, aged 70 years."

Dummer Academy, called in its earlier years Dummer School, is still a flourishing and useful institution. The trustees under the act of incorporation were Hon. Jeremiah Powell, Hon. Benjamin Greenleaf, Hon. Jonathan Greenleaf, Rev. Joseph Willard, Rev. Charles Chauncey, Rev. Moses Parsons, Rev. John Tucker, Rev. Thomas Carey, Samuel Moody, William Powell, Micajah Sawyer, Dummer Jewett, Samuel Osgood, Nathaniel Tracey and Richard Dummer, and among their successors have been Theophilus Par-





sons, Daniel Appleton White, John Pickering, Timothy Pickering, Samuel S. Wilde, Rev. Thomas B. Fox and Leverett Saltonstall.

Rev. Isaac Smith, of Boston, and a graduate of Harvard in 1767, succeeded Mr. Moody and served until 1809, when he returned to Boston, where he died in 1827. In 1797, during the administration of Mr. Smith, the academy received from the State a grant of half a township of land. Mr. Smith was followed by Benjamin Allen, a graduate of Brown University in 1797, who held the office only two years, being appointed, in 1811, Professor of Ancient Languages in the Pennsylvania University. After leaving the professorship he taught an academy in Hyde Park, New York, where he died. Rev. Abiel Abbott, a native of Wilton, N. H., succeeded Mr. Allen in 1811, and served until 1819. He graduated at Harvard in 1787 and before going to Byfield was a tutor at Harvard and pastor of a church in Coventry, Conn. After leaving the academy he lived for a time on his farm in Andover, after which he was settled over a church in Peterboro', N. H., and died in 1859.

The successor of Mr. Abbott, in 1819, was Samuel Adams, a native of Georgetown and a graduate at Harvard in 1806. He taught school in Salem and was a member of the State Senate before going to Byfield. He resigned in 1821 and died in the same year.

Mr. Adams was followed in 1821 by Nehemiah Cleaveland, a native of Topsfield, who had been a student in the academy, and who graduated at Bowdoin College in 1813. Before going to Byfield he was a tutor at Bowdoin, and after a service as principal of nineteen years he resigned in 1849, and was appointed principal of the High School of Lowell. He subsequently received the appointment of principal of a female seminary in Brooklyn, N. Y.

The successor of Mr. Cleaveland was Rev. Frederick A. Adams, a native of New Ipswich, New Hampshire, and a graduate at Dartmouth College in 1834. When appointed principal, in 1840, he was a settled minister in Amherst, New Hampshire. The recent history of the Academy is too well known to be traced in this narrative.

In 1763 two hundred and six of the "water-side people," as they were called, petitioned the General Court to be set off from Newbury and incorporated as a town. In 1764 the prayer of the petitioners was granted and Newburyport was incorporated. The circumstances attending the incorporation will be found more fully referred to in their appropriate place in the sketch of Newburyport.

Until the breaking out of the Revolution little occurred specially deserving mention in a narrative necessarily confined to the more prominent features in the town's history. Nor is it proposed to allude to the causes which led to that event in our national career. It will be sufficient to state in a few words the part which Newbury took and record the names of the men it furnished in that memorable struggle.

In the various wars which had affected the colony and province of Massachusetts, Newbury had been always inspired with patriotic sentiments, and had borne its full share of the burdens.

The settlement on the river Parker had been scarcely made before the Pequot War confronted the colonies, and Newbury was called on to furnish eight of the one hundred and sixty men included in the Massachusetts quota. In King Philip's Wars, between August 5, 1675, and January 28, 1676, Newbury furnished forty-eight men and forty six horses, and had thirty-seven men impressed, making eighty-five men out of one hundred and fifty-nine ratable polls.

In the French and Indian War, which not long after followed, Newbury was at the front, and Captain Stephen Greenleaf, Lieutenant James Smith, Ensign Wm. Longfellow, Sergeant Increase Pillsbury, Wm. Mitchell and Jabez Musgrave were cast away and lost on an expedition against Cape Breton.

In the expedition against Louisbourg in 1745 many Newbury soldiers were engaged, among whom was Major Moses Titcomb, a descendant of William Titcomb, one of the early settlers. In the expedition against Crown Point, in 1754, Major Titcomb was prominent, and was killed in the battle of Lake George, September 8, 1755. On the plains of Quebec, with General Wolfe, Newbury had its representatives, among whom was William Davenport, who established the tavern which bore the name of his fallen commander.

William Davenport was born in Boston in 1717, and went to Newbury, where he married, in 1740, Sarah, the daughter of Moses Gerrish. In 1759 he was living in a house on the corner of Liberty Street and Market Square, and before the expedition against Quebec, under General Wolfe, he received a captain's commission, and, recruiting a company, marched to join the army, and was present with his men at the surrender of the French stronghold. When Capt. Davenport left home and wife and five children he gave his wife a guinea, all the money he had, and told her she must make that answer while he was gone. After an absence of seven months, he asked her, on his return, how "she had got along," and she answered by producing the guinea and presenting it to him. He shortly after established the "Wolfe Hotel," on the corner of Threadneedle Avenue and State Street, which was burned in the fire of 1811. A sign bearing a portrait of Gen. Wolfe, painted by Moses Cole, a French refugee, hung over the door, and is now in the museum of relics and curiosities at the home of the late Major Ben: Perley Poore, at Indian Hill.

The following is a roll of Capt. Davenport's company, most of whom were probably residents in Newbury:

Wm. Davenport, Capt.	Jonathan Merrill, Ensign.
Thomas Sweet, Lieut.	Moses George, Sergt.
Gershom Burbank, Lieut.	John Moody, Sergt.





Daniel Pike, Sergt.  
Matthew Pettingell, Sergt.  
Joshua Colby, Corp.  
Theodore Ford, Corp.  
Stephen Morse, Corp.  
Daniel Poor, Corp.  
Wm. Stevens, Drum.

*Privates.*

Luke Swett.  
Stephen Colby.  
Theodore Barnard.  
John Brock.  
Wm. Matthews.  
James Ward.  
John Caswell.  
Daniel Knight.  
Nathaniel Roby.  
Richard Pierce.  
Theodore Moody.  
Andrew Hilton.  
Paul Pearson.  
Nathan Peabody.  
Wm. Clarke.

Zebediah Hunt.  
Michael Short.  
John Currier.  
Joseph Woodman.  
Ezra Cluff.  
Daniel Pillsbury.  
Joshua Morse.  
Eben Burbank.  
Enoch Bailey.  
Zachariah Bad.  
Wm. Griffin.  
Jeteriah Pearson.  
Enoch Chase.  
Edmund Bailey, Jr.  
John Stevens.  
Samuel Wyatt.  
Wm. Cheney.  
Nathaniel Brown.  
Richard Sanborn.  
Sherborn Tinton.  
Jacob Burdell.  
Samuel Huse.

After the passage of the Stamp Act, in 1765, a town-meeting was held in Newbury, on the 21st of October in that year, at which instructions were given to Joseph Gerrish, the Representative of Newbury, concerning his proper action in the premises. In the spring of 1770, by a vote of the town, a committee of sixteen was appointed to circulate a written agreement to be signed by persons agreeing not to purchase any goods of certain importers, and not to purchase or use any tea. The following is the agreement circulated by the committee:

"Whereas it evidently appears to be absolutely necessary for ye Political welfare of the Provinces to Discourage and by all Lawful Means Enjoin to prevent ye Transportation of Goods from Great Britain and Linnage Industry, and many and Manufactures amongst ourselves;

"We, therefore, ye Subscribers being Willing to Contribute our mite for the Publick Good, do hereby promise and Engage to and with each other, That we will, as much as lies in us, promote and Encourage ye Use and Consumption of all useful Articles Manufactured in this Province, and that we will not knowingly, on any pretence whatever, purchase any goods of, or have any Concerns, by way of Trade, with, John Bernard, James McMaster, Patrick McMaster, John Mott, Nathaniel Rogers, William Jackson, Theophilus Laffie, John Taylor and Anne and Elizabeth Cummin, all of Boston, or Israel Williams, Esquire, and son, of Hatfield, or Henry Barns, of Marlborough, or any Person whether he consider himself as yet, or any other person, persons whomsoever that shall or may import Goods from Great Britain contrary to ye Agreement of ye United Body of Merchants, or of any Persons that purchase of or Trade with them, or any of them ye sd Importers before a General Importation takes place (Debts before Contracted only excepted).

"And if it doth or may hereafter appear that there is any Ship Builder in Newbury Port, or any other Town whosoever in New England, that has to little regard for ye Publick welfare as to undertake to Build any Ship, Schooner or Seafaring Vessel for any Foreign or any other Person, And take ye pay for ye same, or any part thereof, in Goods Imported Contrary to ye Agreement of sd Merchants, We promise and Engage not to have any Connection by way of Trade and Commerce (Debts before Contracted only excepted) with any such Ship Builder, nor sell them any materials for Building any Such Vessels. But we will look up all Such Ship Builders (as well as Importers and Traders with Importers) as persons Destitute of ye principles of Common Humanity (swayed down by their own Private Interest), Enemies to their Country and worthy of Contempt. And whereas a great part of ye Revenue arising by virtue of ye Acts of Parliament is produc'd from the duty paid on Tea, We do, therefore, Solemnly Promise not to purchase any Foreign Tea or Suffer it to be us'd in our Families upon any Account until ye sd Revenue Acts are Repeal'd or a General Importa-

tion takes place, and we will each one of us, as we have proper opportunity, Recommend to all persons to do ye same. And we do hereby of Our own free will and Accord Solemnly promise to and with Each other, That we will, without Evasion or Equivocation, Faithfully and truly keep and observe all that is above written, And whosoever shall or may sign these Articles, And afterwards (knowingly) break ye same shall by us be esteem'd as a Covenant Breaker and Enemy to his Country, a Friend to slavery, Deserving Contempt. All and Singular of these Articles to Continue and Remain in Force until ye sd Acts be Repeal'd or a General Importation takes place. As witness our Hands."

On the 29th of December, 1772, a committee of sixteen was appointed by the town "to take under consideration our publick grievances" and "the infringement of our rights and liberties and report forthwith." The committee reported on the 4th of January, 1772, and it was voted "to accept the report of their committee and that it be entered among the reports of the town, there to stand as a lasting memorial of the sense they have of their invaluable rights and of their steady determination to defend them in every lawful way as occasion may require."

On the 22d of December, 1773, it was voted by the town unanimously:

"Not to receive the tea sent by the East India Company to America upon the terms we are informed it is now sent upon, and that this town will use their utmost endeavours to hinder the importation of tea in America, so long as the duty shall remain thereon, either by the East India Company or in any other way whatever."

On the 4th of January, 1774, a report and resolutions were adopted by the town, which closed with the following admonition:

"Beloved brethren, let us stand fast in the liberty, wherewith God and the British Constitution, in conjunction with our own, have made us free, that neither we nor our posterity after us (through any faults of ours) be entangled with the yoke of bondage."

The time having now arrived for actual hostilities to begin, Newbury entered into the patriot cause with ardent zeal, and at once set about furnishing men and means to make it successful. On the night after the battle of Lexington, soldiers were forwarded to Cambridge, and these were followed by a steady stream of recruits running through the seven years of the war. The following is a list of soldiers furnished by Newbury, as correct as it can be made up from the State archives.

Soldiers from Newbury who marched April 19, 1775, and formed a part of a company in the Second Regiment, commanded by Col. Samuel Gerrish, serving six days,—

Jonathan Poor, Capt.  
Moses Halsey, 1st Lieut.  
Simon Halsey, 2d Lieut.  
Benj. Todd, Sergt.  
Paul Plumer, Sergt.

*Privates.*

Stephen Dole.  
Henry Dole.  
David Dole.  
Samuel Gerrish.

John Hale.  
Daniel Hale, Jr.  
Anthony Halsey.  
John Noyes.  
Wm. Plumer.  
Mark Plumer.  
Stephen Poor.  
John Thurston.  
Benj. Thurston.  
John Nichols.

Soldiers in the company of Wm. Rogers, who marched to Cambridge, April 19, 1775, serving nine days,—



Wm. Rogers, Capt.  
Samuel Carr, Lieut.  
Wadleigh Noyes, Sergt.  
Joseph Newell, Sergt.  
Nathaniel Hills, Sergt.  
Joshua Brown, Sergt.  
Samuel Pillsbury, Corp.  
Ezekiel Merrill, Corp.  
Nathan Emery, Corp.  
Moses Moody, Corp.  
Daniel Pillsbury, Drummer.  
Ephraim Emery, Fifer.

*Privates.*

Joseph Noyes.  
Joshua Chase.  
John Chase.  
John Edist.  
Thomas Follansbee.  
Nehemiah Follansbee.  
Aaron Noyes.  
John Flanders.

Soldiers in the company of Gideon Woodwell which marched to Cambridge, April 19, 1775, serving six days,—

Gideon Woodwell, Capt.  
Henry Sumner, Sergt.  
Patt. Garinish, Sergt.  
John Dole, Corp.

*Privates.*

Daniel Knight.  
Andrew Stickney.  
Joseph Allen.

Soldiers in the company of Thomas Noyes, who marched to Cambridge, April 20, 1775, serving four days,—

Thomas Noyes, Capt.  
Lancel Long, Lieut.  
Abner Bayley, Ens.  
Moses Brickett, Ens.

*Privates.*

Joseph Adams.  
Joseph Brown, Jr.  
Thomas Chase.  
Abel Chase.  
Joseph Chase, Jr.  
John Chase.  
Parker Chase.  
Daniel Cheney.  
Winthrop Colby.  
Nathan Chase.  
Ezekiel Davis.  
Robert Davis.

Soldiers in the company of Stephen Kent in the service of Massachusetts, stationed at Newbury in 1775,—

Stephen Kent, Capt.  
Dudley Cushman, Lieut.  
Richard Pettengell, Lieut.  
Daniel Knight, Sergt.  
John Pearson, Sergt.  
Joshua Goodrich, Sergt.  
Hazenah Goodrich, Sergt.  
Parker James, Corp.  
John Hadden, Corp.  
Eben Brown, Corp.  
Edward Swazey, Corp.  
Samuel Pearson, Drum.  
George Blunt, Fifer.

*Privates.*

Joseph Lunt.

Joseph Goodridge.  
Obadiah Hills.  
Samuel Hills.  
Thomas Hills.  
Samuel Japish.  
Jacob Merrick.  
Parker Noyes.  
Benj. Pettengell.  
Moody Smith.  
Jonathan Thurston.  
Wm. White.  
Francis Dean.  
Moses Chase.  
Mark Washman.  
Samuel Sawyer.  
John Merrill.  
Parker Smith.  
Ass Bayley.  
John Smith.  
Zebulon Eingersol.  
John Emery.  
Abel Washman.

David Stickney.  
John Bly.  
James Safford.  
Parker Knight.  
Peter Stanwood.  
John Smith.  
Wm. Hale.

Nathl. Emery.  
Wm. Foster.  
Joseph Goodridge.  
Wm. Hills.  
Benj. Hills, Jr.  
Thomas Huse.  
Lancel Long, Jr.  
John March.  
Moody Moore.  
Peter Rogers.  
Thomas Rogers.  
Stas Rogers.  
John Rowling, Jr.  
Bernes Short.  
Joshua Sawyer.  
Daniel Thurston.

Ezekiel Hale.  
Andrew Stickney.  
James Safford.  
Moses Adams.  
Isaac Tilton.  
Eben Moody.  
Joseph Poor.  
John Sweet.  
David Boynton.  
Samuel Pettengell.  
Isaac Adams.  
Josiah Pettengell.  
Joseph Allen.  
Wm. Bayley.  
Richard Flanders.

Stephen Mitchell.  
Daniel Knight, Jr.  
John Dole.  
Caleb James.  
John Cheever.  
Daniel Stickney.  
John Bly.

Benj. Woodwell.  
Elias Cook.  
Amos Stickney.  
Benj. Jackson, Jr.  
Benj. Maine.  
Cutting Pettengell, Jr.  
Amos Morse.

Soldiers in the company of Captain Gideon Parker, and Colonel Moses Little's regiment, who enlisted in 1775, for eight months,—

John Halliday.  
Chase Rogers.

John Silboway.  
Jonathan Buswell.

Soldiers in the company of Jacob Gerrish, in the same regiment, and enlisted in 1775, for eight months,—

Jacob Gerrish, Capt.  
Silas Adams, Lieut.  
Amos Atkinson, Lieut.  
Nathl. Pearson, Sergt.  
Stephen Lunt, Sergt.  
Wm. Searl, Sergt.  
Nathl. Adams, Sergt.  
Jacob Hale, Corp.  
Wm. Morgeridge, Corp.  
Eliphalet Kilburn, Corp.  
Joseph Carr, Corp.  
Benj. Newman, Drum. & Fifer.  
John Kenney, Drum. & Fifer.

*Privates.*

Ezekiel Adams.  
Mark Anthony.  
Edward Poverish Burke.  
John Burbank.  
Jacob Chazamora.  
Benj. Goodrich.  
John Carrier.  
Jedediah Carrier.  
William Carrier.  
Benj. Carr.

John Choat.  
Eben Choat.  
John Cheney.  
Ezekiel Flood.  
Wm. Flood.  
Daniel Goodridge.  
Oliver Goodridge.  
John Lunt.  
Amos Merrill.  
Christopher Merrill.  
Richard Martin.  
Peter Ordway.  
Moses Pettengell.  
Samuel Place.  
Benj. Poor.  
Amos Poor.  
Eliphalet Poor.  
Joseph Rogers.  
Richard Rolfe.  
Moses Rollins.  
Stephen Smith.  
John Sawyer.  
Absalom Thorla.  
Joshua Tappan.

Soldiers in Captain Barnard's company, same regiment, same date of enlistment, and same service,—

Thomas Brown, Lieut.  
Nicholas Tricomb, Sergt.  
Edmund Colba, Sergt.  
Willoughby Holt, Corp.  
John Cook, Corp.  
John Brown, Corp.  
Isaac Howard Drum. & Fifer.

*Privates.*

John Brazier.  
Benj. Cotton.  
Jacob Cooper.  
Makepeace Colby.  
Aaron Davis.  
Nathl. Godfrey.

There were scattering enlistments in various companies and regiments in 1775 for eight months, as follows:

In the company of Captain Jonathan Evans, Colonel James Frye's regiment, private Peer Hall; in the company of Captain Gleason, Colonel Nixon's regiment, private Samuel Leacoren; in the company of Captain Daniel Gallusher, Colonel Ruggles Woodbridge's regiment, Lieutenant Daniel Pillsbury; in the company of Captain William Scott, Colonel Paul Dudley Sargent's regiment, private John Tucker; in the company of Captain Nailer Hatch, Lieutenant-Colonel William Bond's regiment, private Moses Woodward; and in the company of Captain John Papkin, Colonel Richard Gridley's regiment, private Abraham Waldron.

Soldiers in the company of Captain Joshua Prence, in Colonel Edward Wigglesworth's regiment, enlisted in 1776,—





Nathl. Adams, Lieut.  
 Eliphalet Kimball, Sergt.  
 John Flanders, Sergt.  
 Joseph Myers, Sergt.  
 John Brown, Corp.  
 Nathl. Chase, Drum.

*Picquets.*

Nehemiah Follansbee.  
 Benjamin Woodbury.  
 Jacob Pettengell.  
 Daniel Bradley.  
 Samuel Lankister.  
 Abel Greenleaf.

Jonathan Thurston.  
 Timothy Saunders.  
 Moody Morse.  
 Abner Kimball.  
 Samuel Jaquish.  
 James Barker.  
 David Hale.  
 John Copp.  
 Tristram Thurlley.  
 Stephen Thurston.  
 Thomas Bolton.  
 Silas Rogers.

Soldiers drafted in 1776 for the company of Captain Robert Dodge in the regiment of Colonel Francis,—

Lieut. Hsley.  
 Ensign Pillsbury.  
 Oliver Clark, Lieut.

*Picquets.*

Jonathan Plummer.  
 Joshua Mosby.  
 Thomas Follansbee.  
 Richard Martin.  
 Jonathan Carlton.  
 Moses Felt.  
 Nathan Jaquish.  
 David Emery.  
 David Dustin.  
 George Thompson.  
 Peter Hall.  
 Enoch Baynton.  
 Oliver Martin.  
 Amos Carleton.

Wm. Murray.  
 Parker Knight.  
 Samuel Rankin.  
 Wm. Nichols.  
 James Scott.  
 James Follansbee.  
 Isaac Plummer.  
 Benjamin Chase.  
 Jonathan Hazeltine.  
 John Emery.  
 John Bennett.  
 Moses Rogers.  
 Amos Merrill.  
 Hosea Usly.  
 Parker Chase.  
 John Bayley.  
 Charles Walker.  
 Eliphalet Rollins.

Soldiers enlisted 1777 in the Continental army for three years,—

John Catten.  
 Jedediah Adams.  
 Prena Brown.  
 Charles Cassady.  
 Benjamin Chase.  
 Eliphalet Chase.  
 Joshua Chase.  
 Joshua Chase, Jr.  
 Joseph Dewry.  
 Amos Dwinells.  
 Edward Deason.  
 Wm. Duggins.  
 Thomas Emerson.  
 John Eliot.  
 Samuel Eliot.  
 Ephraim Emery.  
 Stephen England.

Benjamin Flanders.  
 Benjamin Fellows.  
 Wm. Goodrich.  
 Daniel Goodridge.  
 John Graham.  
 Richard Goodwin.  
 John Nichols.  
 Eliphalet Noyce.  
 Joseph Noyce.  
 Obadiah Nut.  
 Cutting Pettengell, Jr.  
 Chase Pillsbury.  
 James Page.  
 Samuel Wright.  
 William White.  
 William Wilkins.  
 Jonathan Warrmouth.

Moses Woodman enlisted in 1777 in the company of Captain Samuel Page, Colonel Eben Frances' regiment, for the expedition to Bennington, and Abijah Kenney enlisted in the same year in the company of Captain David Reed, on service unknown.

Soldiers enlisted in 1778, for six months, in the company of Captain Richard Rogers, regiment of Colonel Gerrish,—

Stephen Whitney.  
 Wm. Gould.  
 Aaron Rollins.  
 Jonathan Stickney.  
 Joseph Welch.  
 John Hall.  
 Samuel Bragdon.  
 Thomas Rogers.  
 Benj. Burbank.

Jonathan Stone.  
 George Moody.  
 John Nason.  
 Samuel Smith.  
 Thomas Brown.  
 James Bartlett.  
 Ezekiel Eastman.  
 Joseph Hodgdon.  
 Jeremiah Lord.

Jonathan Horsam.  
 Ephraim Tibbetts.  
 Samuel Fitts.  
 Nathaniel Ramsdell.

Theodore Barker.  
 Daniel Grant.  
 Moses Row.  
 Landras Grant.

Soldiers drafted in 1778, for eight and nine months' service,—

Caleb Parsons.  
 Wm. Reed.  
 David Marston.  
 Eliphalet Canley.  
 Jacob Smith.  
 Jeremiah Smith.  
 Daniel Gale.  
 Nathaniel Wadleigh.  
 Enoch Adams.  
 Isaac Plummer.  
 Simon Lull.

Samuel Beavertly.  
 Jacob Freese.  
 Jonathan Goodwin.  
 Wm. Parker.  
 Wm. Chambers.  
 Josiah Maloone.  
 Enoch Adams.  
 Wm. Abid.  
 Philip Barker.  
 James Sullivan.

William Duggins also enlisted in 1778 in the company of Captain Nicholas Blaisdel, Colonel Edward Wigglesworth's regiment.

Soldiers enlisted in 1779, for nine months,—

James Follansbee.  
 Benj. Chase.  
 John Bayley.  
 Charles Walker.

Eliphalet Rollins.  
 James Scott.  
 Wm. Nicholas.

Soldiers on the county rolls in 1779,—

Thomas Eliot.  
 John Welch.  
 Andrew Labenta.  
 John Mullins.  
 Thomas Wood.  
 James Kavan.  
 Thomas Wood, Jr.

Wm. Follansbee.  
 Nathan Haskell.  
 Wm. Noyes.  
 Benj. Dresser.  
 John Newman.  
 Joseph Filton.  
 Peter Haskell.

Soldiers enlisted in 1780, in the Continental army for three years,—

Wm. Conter.  
 Richard Little.  
 Joseph Hancock.  
 Daniel Cockran.  
 Boston Pickering.  
 Wm. Conly.  
 John Rhoads.  
 Sando Carlton.  
 James Cavanaugh.  
 Peter Hall.  
 Jube Merrill.  
 John Duncan.  
 Stephen England.  
 Joseph Noyce.  
 Silas Noyce.  
 Wm. Perry.  
 Thomas Churchill.  
 Levi Hall.  
 Theodore Atkinson.  
 Joseph Conner.  
 Joseph Holmes.  
 Jacob Annis.  
 Joseph Lambert.  
 Joseph Leroche.  
 Robert Rumlles.

Patrick Rowland.  
 Joshua Rodwell.  
 John May.  
 Elisha Lake.  
 Wm. Goulin.  
 Nathaniel Davis.  
 Ichabod Twilight.  
 Samuel Carrier.  
 Oliver Martin.  
 Henry Bickford.  
 Daniel Kimham.  
 Peter Bab.  
 Fortune Freeman.  
 Cates ward.  
 John Richards.  
 Jonathan Gadywell.  
 Samuel Chase, Jr.  
 John Stone.  
 James Varnum.  
 John Lewis.  
 Joseph Winter.  
 Elijah K. Roy.  
 Jack Warner.  
 Cesar Hodgdon.  
 Moses Fessenden.

Soldiers who enlisted in 1780 for six months, —

Benoni Eaton Knapp.  
 Richard Shay.  
 John Harris.  
 James Cordy.  
 Eliphalet Poor.  
 Enoch Dole.  
 Wm. Currier.  
 John Burbank.  
 John Dow.

Isaac Plummer.  
 Benj. Willet.  
 Wm. Plummer.  
 Seth Plummer.  
 John Thomson.  
 Aaron Rogers.  
 Moses Rogers.  
 Richard Martin.  
 Wm. Read.



Micajah Lunt.  
Jonathan Martin.  
James Martin.  
Jacob Buttol.  
Jonathan Morse.  
John Carter.  
Moses Sonachy.  
John Lunt.  
Moses Read.  
John Thurston.  
Prince Brown.  
Jonathan Bartlett.  
Stephen Davis.  
Cuth Donney.

Simeon Chase.  
John Harvey.  
Jonathan Lyford.  
John Bean.  
London Rogers.  
Samuel Randall.  
Joseph Pillsbury.  
Paul McPherson.  
John Archer.  
Josiah Corner.  
Lancaster Brodie.  
James Scott.  
James Huntress.  
John Randall.

Soldiers who enlisted in 1780 for three years, for the Continental army,—

Aaron Mellen.  
Stephen Mitchell.  
James Penson.  
Daniel Goodrich.  
John Stockman.  
Ephraim Noyes, Sergt.  
Samuel Stock, Drum.  
Oliver Lunt.

Benj. Murray.  
Wm. White.  
Roger Lord, Sergt.  
Thomas Emerson.  
Wm. Poor, Corp.  
Pomp Jackson.  
Robert Cretton.  
John Tucker, Sergt.

New levies for six months in 1782,—

John Thompson.  
Richard Martin.  
Jonathan Martin.  
James Martin.  
Moses Read.  
Michael Lunt.  
John Burbank.  
Samuel Randall.  
John Archer.  
Isaiah Melton.  
David Malson.  
Paul McPherson.  
Nathl. Hunt.  
Eben Haynes.  
James Smith.  
Oliver Richards.  
Benj. Woodbury.  
Elisha Tool.  
Moses Gage.  
Benj. Cotton.

Ezekiel Sterns.  
Jonathan Calley.  
Elephes Calley.  
Jeremiah Smith.  
Stephen Sniffle.  
Benj. Smith.  
Caleb Tolt.  
Geo. Sanders.  
Daniel Gable.  
Samuel Dudley.  
Jonathan Steward.  
John Woodbury.  
John Harris.  
David Bowman.  
Benoni Knapp.  
Richard Shoy.  
Moses Titcomb.  
Samuel Colby.  
Moses Gage, Jr.  
James Thomas.

Miscellaneous enlistments at unknown dates,—

Thomas Clark.  
Harris Hunkins.  
Wm. Fletcher.

Reuben Canale.  
Jonah Hunt.

Thus it will be seen that, including field officers, Newbury furnished at various times five hundred and forty-three men during the war. Few towns can show a better record. From the time of the first exhibition of a spirit of resistance among the men of Massachusetts to the exactions and tyranny of England, when not a single voice was raised in Newbury in support of the crown, until the surrender of Yorktown, the men of Newbury responded to every call and kept well the promise made to the merchants of Boston, to sacrifice their lives and fortunes in defense of the public cause. In 1790 the population of Newbury was three thousand nine hundred and seventy-two, probably not much larger than during the Revolution, about one-seventh of which (with no allowance for re-enlistments) braved the perils of war.

On the 11th of December, 1783, Rev. Moses Parsons, the second pastor of the Byfield Church, closed

his pastorate and his life. He was born in Gloucester in 1715 and graduated at Harvard in 1736. He was one of the trustees named in the act of incorporation of the Dummer Academy in 1682, and Hon. Theophilus Parsons, of distinguished memory, was his third son.

Rev. John Tucker, the sixth pastor of the First Parish, died March 22, 1792. He was born in Amesbury in 1720 and graduated at Harvard in 1741. His epitaph furnishes the best description of his character and life:

"Beneath are the remains of the Rev. John Tucker, D.D., Pastor of the first Church and Congregation in this town, who died March 22d, 1792, Aetat. 73. Blessed with strong mental powers, a liberal education and an uncommon mildness of Temper, all directed and improved by that faith which purifies the heart, rendered him deeply beloved in every Relation in which he was placed, and more especially made him conspicuously useful as a minister of the Gospel. When meeting with peculiar Difficulties, he eminently complied with that direction of his Master to the first Preachers of the Gospel, 'Be ye wise as serpents and harmless as doves.' As he lived a life of piety, he met death with serenity. By his doctrine and example he taught the humility, and at his death he exhibited the dignity and triumph of the real Christian. To perpetuate the memory of so excellent a character, and as a testimony of their affectionate regard, the beloved flock have erected this Sepulchral Stone."

On the 19th of December, 1787, Rev. Elijah Parish was settled over the Byfield Parish as the successor of Rev. Moses Parsons, and on the 23d of March, 1796, Rev. Abraham Moore was settled over the First Parish as the successor of Rev. Mr. Tucker. Mr. Moore died June 24, 1801. He was born in Londonderry, N. H., in 1769 and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1789. Rev. John S. Popkin was settled as his successor, September 19, 1804, and resigned in 1815. Mr. Popkin was born in Boston in 1771 and graduated at Harvard in 1792 with the highest honors. He was ordained in Boston in July, 1799, having preached for a time at Wenham, Mass., and Londonderry, N. H. In 1815 he accepted the position of Greek Professor at Harvard, which he held until 1826, when he was appointed to the Professorship of Greek Literature as the successor of Edward Everett. In 1833 he resigned, but continued to reside in Cambridge until his death, in 1852.

On the 4th of May, 1806, Rev. Mr. Popkin preached for the last time in the meeting-house of the First Parish, which was built in the year 1700, and on the 6th of May the house was taken down. A new meeting-house was raised near the same site on the 17th of June, and dedicated on the 17th of September. This meeting-house was burned on the 25th of June, 1868, and the present one was built immediately after, and dedicated March 4, 1869.

After the resignation of Mr. Popkin the Rev. Leonard Withington was settled October 31, 1816 and continued to perform the duties of his office until October 31, 1859, when his resignation was reluctantly accepted. He was born in Dorchester August 9, 1789, and graduated at Yale in 1814.

He was followed by the Rev. John R. Thurston,





who was ordained January 20, 1860, and the Rev. Francis W. Sanborn.

Rev. Elijah Parish, the third minister in the Byfield Church, closed his pastorate with his life October 15, 1825. He was born in Lebanon, Conn., November 7, 1762, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1785. He was succeeded by Rev. Isaac R. Barbour, a native of Bridgeport, Vermont, and a graduate of Middlebury College in 1819, who was installed December 20, 1827, and resigned in April, 1833. Rev. Henry Durant succeeded Mr. Barbour and was ordained December 25, 1833. His pastorate continued until his resignation, in 1848. He was born in Acton, Mass., June 18, 1802, and graduated at Yale in 1827, serving as tutor in the college after his graduation and previous to his settlement in Newbury. Rev. Francis V. Tenney followed Mr. Durant and was settled in 1850, serving until 1857, when he resigned to take charge of a parish in Manchester. Mr. Tenney was followed by Rev. Charles Brooks in 1858, who resigned in 1863, and was afterwards settled in Unionville, Conn., where he died in 1866. Rev. James H. Childs was ordained October 7, 1875.

The Methodist Episcopal Church, at Byfield was organized or rather received its first inspiration in 1827. In the spring of that year Rev. William French, of Sandown, N. H., while traveling on business, visited West Newbury, and by his conversation on matters of religion so far interested some of the people living near the "Great Rock" as to induce them to form a class in April, 1828. This class consisted of David Clifford (leader), Simeon Pillsbury, James Burrill, Jerusha Burrill, Alice Pillsbury, Eleanor Perry, Amos Pillsbury, Sally Clifford, Hannah England, Wm. W. Perry, Abner Rogers and Betsey Poor. Mr. French continued to visit his flock until 1830, at which time the class had been enlarged by the addition of John Bailey, (a local preacher,) Myra Bailey, Abigail Rogers, Samuel Stickney, Judith Gould, Betsey Rogers, Eunice Stickney, Mary Rogers and Lydia Rogers. In that year a small chapel was built near the Great Rock. It was very small and not furnished with seats, the women during service sitting on stones brought in from the outside, and the men standing outside and looking in through the open windows.

For a time the Sabbath services were carried on by local preachers, among whom were Messrs. Beebe, Marsh, Flanders, Peaslee, Gile and Barrett. In April, 1831, the church asked for a Conference preacher and received from the New England Conference Rev. Philo Bronson. During this year the chapel was finished and furnished, and further additions were made to the class. In 1832 an attempt was made by the society, for the first time, to support a preacher, but the scant sum of \$92.15 was all that could be raised. In that year Rev. Joseph Brown was sent to the society by the Conference, but remained only one quarter and was succeeded by Rev. Thomas W. Gile, who supplied the pulpit during the

remainder of the year. In the same year a church proper was formed, and also a parish, under the name of "The First Parish of the Methodist Episcopal Church for the towns of West Newbury and Newbury." Micajah Poor was chosen clerk of the parish and served many years.

In 1833 Rev. Samuel W. Coggeshall was appointed preacher in charge of the station, and the classes were newly organized. In April, 1834, Mr. Coggeshall left and was succeeded by Rev. Hezekiah Thatcher. During the pastorate of Mr. Thatcher a movement was made to remove the chapel to the Mills village of Byfield, which caused much bitterness of feeling and resulted in a change of the classes, the resignation of two of the trustees and the continuance of the chapel in its original location. Mr. Thatcher continued his service until 1838, and after that time, until 1846, the church was supplied by local preachers, among whom were E. K. Colby and Wm. Giddings. In 1846 the station was connected with the Newburyport charge, and until 1852 was without a pastor. Among the preachers supplying the church during this time were Messrs. Heath, Chase, Eastman, Witham, Dalton, Fay, Hutchings, Pillsbury and McKinley.

In 1852, through the influence of Elder D. P. Pike, of Newburyport, Rev. Mr. Bartlett, of the Christian denomination, took charge of the pulpit for a short time, and was succeeded by Rev. John L. Trefren, a local preacher from Newburyport, who remained with the church two years. During his pastorate, in 1853, the chapel was removed to its present location in Byfield, at the Mills village, and repaired and enlarged.

During the years 1855-56 the church was supplied by Mr. Higgins, a local preacher from Chelsea, who was followed by Messrs. Mudge and Peaslee in 1856-57, and in April, 1858, by Rev. O. S. Butler, during whose pastorate the chapel was again enlarged. Mr. Butler remained three years and was followed by Rev. Daniel Wait in 1861, who remained two years, and by Rev. George Washington Green in 1863, who withdrew shortly after his settlement. Rev. Mr. Butler again came to the church and remained until 1866, when Rev. Wm. D. Bridge took charge and remained one year. In 1867 Rev. Wm. Sullivan came to the church, but was obliged by ill health to withdraw. He was followed by Rev. A. Moore, who preached a year and was succeeded by Rev. Garret Beckman, during whose service the chapel was moved to its present site and much enlarged. In 1873-74 Rev. C. T. Johnson had charge of the church, and was succeeded by Rev. Henry Mathers in 1874, and by Rev. W. A. Nottage in 1877. Since the withdrawal of Mr. Nottage the succession of ministers up to the present time has been: Rev. Wm. Pentecost in 1881, Rev. C. M. Melvin in 1882-83, Rev. Ivens A. Mesler in 1884, Rev. F. B. Graves in 1885-86, and the present pastor, Rev. H. G. Buckingham.

In 1877 a society bearing the name of "The Plym-





outh Brethren" was formed by seceders from the Methodist society and others, and continues to hold services on the Sabbath in a hall over the present post-office in the Mills village of Byfield. This is a sect of Christians which, chiefly under the leadership of John Darby, an Anglican clergyman, was organized in London in 1838. Its members were at first called Darbyites, but its doctrines attracted so large a number of adherents in Plymouth, England, where a society of fifteen hundred members was formed, that the name of Plymouth Brethren was adopted. In England there are at present more than one hundred and fifty places of worship belonging to the sect.

As in Newburyport, the enforcement of the embargo act in 1807 met with great opposition, and a large majority of the people in the town were opposed to the policy of the government. On the 2d of August, 1808, a town-meeting was held to take into consideration the distressing situation of the country occasioned by the cessation of trade, and on the 23d of January, 1809, resolutions were passed and a memorial to the General Court adopted protesting against the unnecessary and severe embargo measures.

The War of 1812 was as unpopular as the embargo, and resolutions were adopted in town-meeting condemnatory of its declaration. Peace was hailed with joy and the memory of its suffering and disasters was only sweetened by the intense relief which peace and its cessation of pain furnished.

In 1819 the town of West Newbury was incorporated. The circumstances attending and causing this second division of the town will be found sufficiently narrated in the sketch of that town contained in these volumes. The loss of the territory and population contained within the limits of the new town was natural, and in the order of things to be expected. An ample territory and a sufficient population remained, the old town still had its foothold on the Merrimac, its ship-building industry was intact and the town was content. But a sad disappointment was in store for the ancient settlement, which had once extended from river to river, and from Rowley village on the Merrimac to the sea. In 1851 a third division of the town was made, and the town of Newburyport, ambitious to become a city, sought and obtained from the mother town the necessary population and territory and wealth which it lacked within its own borders. For an account of the annexation of 1851 and its extent, the reader is referred to the sketch of Newburyport.

For the performance of its duties in the War of the Rebellion, Newbury was not unprepared. On the 22d of April, 1861, the Board of Selectmen, consisting of Paul Titcomb, Edward H. Little and Eben P. Ferguson issued a warrant for a town-meeting to be held on the 30th. At that meeting resolutions were passed pledging the faith of the town to the comfortable maintenance of the families of those who should enlist. The sum of \$300 was appropriated to

place the company of riflemen then in existence in the town in better condition for service, and the treasurer was authorized to borrow the sum of \$3000 for contingent war expenses. In July, 1862, a bounty of \$150 was offered to soldiers enlisting to fill the quota at that time required of the town, and the requisite number of men was at once obtained. In August 1862, a bounty of \$250 was offered to those enlisting for nine months under the President's call for 300,000 men. At a later period of the war men were obtained on the payment of various bounties, which were raised as occasion required by the addition of private subscriptions to the amounts appropriated by the town. The following roll contains the names and rank of the soldiers of Newbury during the war:

Wm. H. Foster, capt., 3 yrs.....40th	Henry P. Gridlith, 3 yrs.....35th
Nathan Longfellow, 3 yrs.....2d	Joseph W. Lunt, 3 yrs.....35th
Nathan W. Withington, sergt., 3 yrs.....11th	Jacob G. Clarkson, 3 yrs.....35th
George H. Northend, 3 yrs.....11th	Amos M. Little, 3 yrs.....38th
Richard Withington, corp., 3 yrs.....17th	George Burrell, corp., 3 yrs. 4th N. Y.
Paul A. Perkin, 3 yrs.....17th	Charles H. Bray, 3 yrs.....1st Cav.
Joseph Perkins, Jr., 3 yrs.....17th	Seth Young, corp., 3 yrs.....1st Cav.
Benjamin P. Rogers, 3 yrs.....17th	Charles Caldwell, 3 mos.
John H. Willis, 3 yrs.....17th	Ezra Hale, Jr., corp., 9 mos.....48th
Wm. C. Haynes, 3 yrs.....14th	Lewis H. Hale, 9 mos.....48th
George E. Carleton, 3 yrs.....19th	George E. Young, mus., 9 mos. 4th.
John Carr, 3 yrs.....19th	Moses Young, sergt., 9 mos.....48th
Leander S. Falls, 3 yrs.....19th	Harrison W. Dearborn, 9 mos. 4th.
Samuel L. Johnson, 3 yrs.....19th	Eben H. Dearborn, 9 mos.....48th
James Fen, 3 yrs.....19th	Eben Bray, Jr., 9 mos.....48th
Benjamin W. Johnson, lieut., 3 yrs. 10th.	Francis M. Pillsbury, sergt., 9 mos. 4th.
Micajah Rogers, Jr., 3 yrs.....19th	Charles Little, corp., 9 mos.....48th
Wm. E. Northend, 3 yrs.....19th	James N. Frost, corp., 9 mos. 4th.
Varnum Roger, 3 yrs.....19th	Edward L. Rogers, 9 mos.....48th
Daniel E. Rogers, 3 yrs.....19th	Gorham P. Rogers, 9 mos.....48th
Albert Rogers, 3 yrs.....19th	Lewis B. Rogers, sergt., 9 mos. 4th.
Benjamin F. Stephens, 3 yrs.....19th	Philip Rogers, 9 mos.....48th
Joseph H. Pearson, 3 yrs.....19th	Melvin B. Rogers, 9 mos.....48th
Edward W. Barthol., 3 yrs.....19th	Enoch S. Rogers, sergt., 9 mos.....48th
Elijah T. Rogers, lieut., 3 yrs. 10th.	Christopher Rogers, 9 mos.....48th
John H. Brown, 3 yrs.....19th	Philip D. Rogers, mus., 9 mos.....48th
Joseph Floyd, 3 yrs.....19th	Wm. T. Sauborn, wage, 9 mos. 4th.
Lawrence M. Massury, 3 yrs.....19th	Andrew F. Smith, 9 mos.....48th
Frederick Osborne, 3 yrs.....19th	Charles H. Prince, 9 mos.....48th
Thomas B. Robins, 3 yrs.....19th	Horace K. Pillsbury, 9 mos.....48th
Wm. H. G. Rogers, 3 yrs.....19th	Leonard Pillsbury, 9 mos.....48th
George W. Gibson, 3 yrs.....19th	Lorenzo B. Blissell, 9 mos.....48th
Mighill A. Rogers, 3 yrs.....19th	Benjamin S. Bailey, 9 mos.....48th
John Davis, 3 yrs.....19th	Henry Bailey, 9 mos.....48th
Augustus Koss, 3 yrs.....19th	Phineas B. Gould, 9 mos.....48th
George M. Kimball, 3 yrs.....19th	Walter Noyes, 9 mos.....48th
Abraham A. Dow, corp., 3 yrs. 19th.	Nathl. Noyes, sergt., 9 mos.....48th
Sidney M. Smith, 3 yrs.....19th	Benjamin F. Noyes, capt., 9 mos. 4th.
Joseph Gould, 3 yrs.....33d	Isaac F. Tenton, 9 mos.....48th
Isaac Rogers, 3 yrs.....33d	Mighill A. Rogers, 9 mos.....48th
Eben Rogers, 3 yrs.....33d	John W. Kelly, 9 mos.....48th
Woodbridge A. Rogers, sergt., 3 yrs., 33d.	Isaac F. Porter, 9 mos.....48th
George P. Goodwin, 3 yrs.....35th	Joseph E. Willard, 3 yrs.....20th
Nathl. M. Hsley, 3 yrs.....35th	Timothy Conway, 3 yrs.....20th
Walter G. Peckham, 3 yrs.....35th	Adam Simpson, 3 yrs.....20th
Charles C. Day, 3 yrs.....35th	John Monzan, 3 yrs.....20th
Charles L. Cole, 3 yrs.....35th	Thomas Williams, 3 yrs.....20th
Ira H. Allen, 3 yrs.....35th	
Richard W. Swan, 3 yrs.....35th	



Joseph Young, 3 yrs.....20th	Stephen W. Goodrich, 3 yrs., 1st H. Art.
Wm. H. Barney, 3 yrs. ....20th	Jowett Rogers, Jr., 3 yrs., 2d H. Art.
John Brennan, 3 yrs.....20th	Charles W. Sargent, 3 yrs., 3d H. Art.
Benney Robbins, 3 yrs.....20th	Eben P. Davis, sergt., 1 yr., 4th H. Art.
Wm. Edwards, 3 yrs.....20th	Greene Adams, 1 yr.....4th H. Art.
Thomas Brady, 3 yrs.....20th	Benjamin S. Baily, 1 yr., 4th H. Art.
George H. Shaw, 3 yrs.....20th	Samuel R. Bailey, 1 yr., 10th H. A.
John C. Foss, corp., 5 yrs.....23d	Joseph P. Bassett, 1 yr., 10th H. A.
Sheldon P. Rogers, 3 yrs.....32d	Silas F. Benn, 1 yr.....4th H. A.
Thomas P. Lunt, 3 yrs.....32d	John N. Bray, 1 yr.....4th H. A.
James H. Pickering, 3 yrs.....32d	Eben Bray, Jr., 1 yr.....4th H. A.
Hiram K. Poore, 9 mos.....50th	John D. Floyd, 1 yr.....4th H. A.
Francis A. Winey, 9 mos.....50th	John M. Horsch, 1 yr.....4th H. A.
Charles W. Rundlett, 9 mos.....50th	Charles B. Rogers, 1 yr.....4th H. A.
John Parsons, 9 mos.....50th	George Cannott, 3 yrs., 1st Bat. H. Art.
Thomas P. Lunt, 3 yrs.....50th	Daniel Rogers, 3 yrs., 1st Bat. H. Art.
Lyman Floyd, 9 mos.....50th	Ira Rogers, 3 yrs., 1st Bat. H. Art.
Charles E. Fenney, 9 mos.....50th	David Kent, 3 yrs., 1st Bat. H. A.
John G. Tenney, 9 mos.....50th	Jacob Kent, 3 yrs., 1st Bat. H. A.
Wm. P. Bailey, corp., 9 mos.....50th	Wm. H. Kent, 3 yrs., 1st Bat. H. A.
James P. Greeley, sergt., 100 days, 60th.	Charles Roberts, 3 yrs.....2d Cav.
Justin N. Adams, 100 days.....60th	Dudley Ward, 3 yrs.....2d Cav.
John A. Bann, 100 days.....60th	Wm. A. Dudley, 3 yrs.....2d Cav.
Thomas Noyes, 100 days.....60th	Gilbert Tye, 3 yrs.....2d Cav.
Charles E. Rogers, 100 days, 17th Un.	Robert R. Minchin, 3 yrs.....2d Cav.
George W. Pearson, 100 days, 17th Un.	Calvin S. Warner, 3 yrs.....2d Cav.
Edgar Pearson, 100 days, 17th Un.	George H. Minchin, 3 yrs.....1st Cav.
Orin T. Pearson, 100 days, 17th Un.	Jonathan Lunt, 3 yrs.....2d
Leonard Pinbury, 100 days, 17th Un.	Joseph Steele, 3 yrs.....2d
Asa Rogers, Jr., 100 days, 17th Un.	Patrick Kelley, 3 yrs.....9th
Charles H. Woodman, 100 days, 17th Un.	Reuben Record, 3 yrs.....11th
Wm. Woodman, 100 days.....Un.	Reuben Record, re-en., 3 yrs.....10th
Daniel D. Bailey, 1 yr.....17th Un.	Richard Rowe, 3 yrs.....18th
Wm. P. Bailey, corp.	George W. Carlson, 3 yrs.....23d
Albert M. Currier, 1 yr.....17th Un.	Eme Walker, 5 yrs.....28th
Levi B. Brantell, 1 yr., 17th Un.	Thomas Lane, 3 yrs.....50th
John B. Edmunds, 1 yr., 17th Un.	James Dunlap, lieut., 3 yrs.....60th
Hiram K. Poore, 1 yr.....17th Un.	John D. Butler, 3 yrs.....50th
Wm. H. Gould, 1 yr.....17th Un.	Hewace S. Woodman, 3 yrs.....60th
Thomas B. Larkin, 1 yr.....17th Un.	Mignill W. Rogers, 3 yrs.....60th
Phineas B. Gould, 1 yr.....17th Un.	Timothy W. Rogers, 3 yrs.....59th
Wm. F. Larkin, 1 yr.....17th Un.	Hugh M. Osborn, vet. res.
Charles A. Newton, 1 yr.....17th Un.	Joseph Gould, vet. reserv.
Moses T. Pearson, 1 yr.....17th Un.	Andrew F. Smith, vet. res.
Wm. P. Pearson, 1 yr.....17th Un.	Nathan K. Withington, vet. res.
James Howe, 1 yr.....17th Un.	Elisha Beane, Jr., 3 yrs.....14th
James H. Johnson, 90 days, 2d Un.	Stephen Hsley, 1 year.
Joseph Knight, 90 days, 2d Un.	George D. Knight, 1 year.
John Pringle, 3 yrs.....10th Bat.	
George A. Noyes, 3 yrs.....14th Bat.	

The above list contains 195 enlistments—ten more than are entered on the war record of the town, those ten being found on the rolls of the State. Of these, Joseph H. Pearson was killed at the battle of Antietam, Samuel T. Jellison at Turkey Bend, Benjamin F. Stevens at Glendale, Thomas P. Lunt at Chancellorsville, John H. Brown May 24, 1864, and James Dunlap July 30, 1864, Sidney M. Smith died August 26, 1864, Robert R. Minchin at date unknown, Henry P. Griffith November 3, 1862, Joseph W. Lunt at New York March 30, 1865, Jacob G. Clarkson at Falmouth, Virginia, January 19, 1863, Harrison W. Dearborn at Baton Rouge at date unknown, Walter Noyes January 4, 1863, and Nathaniel Noyes at Baton Rouge.

The town came out of the war with a heavy debt,

which, by prudent and skillful management on the part of the officers of the town, has been so far reduced as to promise its entire liquidation within the next two or three years.

The settlers of Newbury began at a very early date to give their attention to the education of their youth. In Newbury, as elsewhere in the Massachusetts and Plymouth Colonies, the main reliance of the people was for a time on private instruction, that of the family and of the pastor of the parish. In the Plymouth Colony, where the number of adventurers was large and of mechanics and hired men was small, the demand for public schools was not urgent until a comparatively late day. The number of children, as compared with intelligent heads of families capable of educating them, was small, and little necessity existed for public instruction until the wave of population crossed its borders from the sister colony. But in Massachusetts private instruction soon failed to suffice. Winthrop came with fifteen hundred men, a large portion of whom were uneducated, and had children with them whom they were unable themselves to educate, and so numerous, that in self-defense the General Court was obliged at an early date to make some provision for the establishment of public schools.

In Newbury, the Rev. Mr. Parker and his colleague, Rev. Mr. Noyes, were both educated men, and with their knowledge of Latin and Greek undoubtedly rendered valuable service in the cause of education, but probably in the direction chiefly of fitting young men for the new college at Cambridge. It is probable that Rev. James Bailey, a Harvard graduate of 1669, Rev. Shubael Dummer, a graduate of 1656, Rev. Joseph Gerrish, a graduate of 1669, Rev. James Noyes, Jr., a graduate of 1659, Judge Samuel Sewall, a graduate of 1671, Rev. Timothy Woodbridge, a graduate of 1674, and Rev. John Woodbridge, a graduate of 1664, were qualified for admission to college by one or the other of the first two pastors of Newbury.

In 1639, however, Anthony Somerby appeared in Newbury and was appointed schoolmaster by the town, with a grant of "four acres of land near the river Parker and some meadow land," as an inducement to keep school for a year. Mr. O. B. Merrill thinks it possible that he kept a part of the time near Frog Pond, as in the laying out of the lots in the new town "frog meadow" was assigned to Master Somerby. In 1652 it was voted to build a school-house, and £20 a year was appropriated for the support of the school. This school, like all others in Newbury before 1719, was supported partly by tuition charged to all the scholars, and not until the above date were the schools of Newbury made absolutely free. In 1658 Newbury was admonished for not maintaining a "latten scule," and fined £5, to be paid to the Ipswich Latin School, "if bye the next courte they do not provide a latten scule master according to law." In 1675 Henry Short was employed as a teacher and was promised £5 for his first half-year, and sixpence a week from each





scholar. The next year he was hired also, and if there were twenty boys the school was to be kept in the watch-house. The number of scholars was only seventeen, and Mr. Short taught them at his own house.

After Newbury became divided into three villages—the old town, the new town and the West District—it was for a long time a contested question where the school of the town should be kept. Up to 1691 the school was kept in the neighborhood of the old town settlement, but in that year a vote was passed requiring it to be kept one-third of the year in each village. Mr. Seth Shove, a graduate of Harvard in 1687, was hired as a teacher, and it was stipulated that he should teach “readers” free, Latin scholars at sixpence a week and “cipherers” fourpence a week. In 1695 Rev. Christopher Toppan, a graduate of Harvard in 1691, and afterwards the pastor of the First Parish, was employed, with the promise of “£20 in money and £300 in good country pay so long as he shall carry on half the ministry, and £30 in good country pay as long as he shall keep the writing and grammar school.” The next year his salary was raised to £300 in country pay and £50 in money. Nicholas Webster, a graduate of Harvard in 1695, was the next teacher, with a salary of £30 in country pay, fourpence a week for Latin scholars and nothing from “readers, writers and cipherers.” In 1700 Richard Brown, a graduate of Harvard in 1697, was employed and taught until 1711, when he was ordained as minister at Reading. Mr. Brown was also town clerk from October 30, 1706, to October 9, 1711, and at his resignation said:

“I have served Newbury as school-master eleven years, and as Town Clerk five and a half years, and have been repaid with abuse, ingratitude and contempt. I have sent high as many to college as all the masters before since the Reverend and learned Parker. Those I bred think themselves better than their master (God make them better still), and yet they may remember the foundation of all their growing greatness was laid in the sweat of my brow. I pray that from unknownizing Newbury may get them that may serve them better and bid thanks when they have done. If to find a house for the school two years when the town had none, if to take the scholars to my own fire when there was no wood at school as frequently; if to give records to the poor and record their births and deaths gratis deserves a knowledge at then it is my due, but hard to come by.”

In 1713 John Woodbridge, a graduate of Harvard in 1694, was employed at twenty-five pounds per year and kept the school eighteen years, with a salary at no time exceeding forty pounds. In 1728 the town voted thirty pounds for each of the three parishes and the Third Parish, which included substantially the territory which was incorporated as Newburyport in 1764, added thirty pounds to its share and established a school near the head of Market Street. In 1731 this parish voted sixty pounds for the support of a school and also voted that no children should attend unless they could read in a psalter. In 1732 Stephen Sewall, a graduate of Harvard in 1731, succeeded Mr. Woodbridge and taught for nearly fifty years. The town appropriated one hundred and sixty pounds, and what remained after supporting the Grammar School was

to be divided *pro rata* between the parishes for the education of their youth. In 1733 the Third Parish voted to support a school at its own expense, and in the same year the town voted forty-pounds for the support of a grammar school on the west side of the Artichoke River. In 1736 the General Court authorized the Third Parish to raise money for its own school, and exempted it from paying for the support of any other school, and in 1740 this parish raised one hundred and twenty pounds for a grammar school, to be taught by Samuel Moody, and a writing school, under the instruction of Leonard Cotton.

In 1753 the town voted that a writing school be kept one year in each parish “until it has served the whole town.” In 1763 the town voted to build a grammar school house near the head of Fish Street, and in 1774, fifteen years after the incorporation of Newburyport, Samuel Moody made a donation of one hundred pounds to the town in addition to a previous gift of twenty pounds for the purpose of creating a fund for a grammar school.

But it is useless to go further into details concerning the schools. It is sufficient to say that the school system after the Revolution grew rapidly in favor with the people and steadily advanced in usefulness. In 1821 the town was divided into nine school districts, each of which had its school, though the territory, population and wealth of the town had been only two years before largely diminished by the incorporation of West Newbury. At present there are the following schools in the town: the Lower Green, the Ridge, the Upper Green, the Farm, the South Byfield, the Byfield Primary and the Byfield Grammar Schools, with a total attendance of about two hundred and forty scholars.

The early industries of Newbury were chiefly those connected with saw-mills and grist-mills and fulling-mills. Some of the earliest of these have been referred to. At a later day tan-yards were established and rope-walks were built; but in recent years, since the incorporation of Newburyport and West Newbury and the further annexation of territory to Newburyport, its old industries have either, with few exceptions, died out or, as in the case of the chief industry of ship-building, been transferred by legislative acts to the newly-formed municipalities. Those still remaining are at the Mill village in the Byfield Parish. In 1794 the first incorporated woolen company in the State built a factory at Dummer's Falls, the machinery for which was made by Guppy & Armstrong, of Newburyport.

The early history of this mill is not without its interest. In 1793, John and Arthur Schofield, sons of Arthur Schofield, who lived at Standish-foot, in Saddleworth, Yorkshire, came to New England and settled first in Charlestown. There they began to make patterns for the machinery of a woolen-mill, and Rev. Jedediah Morse, of Charlestown, became interested in their work. Mr. Morse was then engaged with Rev. Elijah Parish, of Byfield, in writing a “History of



New England," and through the two clergymen the Schofields became acquainted with capitalists in Newburyport. The result was that William Bartlett and Benjamin Greenleaf and others became sufficiently interested in the enterprise proposed by them, to procure an act of incorporation as the "Proprietors of the Newburyport Woolen Company." The persons named in the act were Benjamin Greenleaf, Philip Auben, Wm. Bartlett, Olin Boardman, Jr., Moses Brown, David Coffin, Wm. Coombs, John Coombs, Mark Fitz, Abel Greenleaf, John Greenleaf, Andrew Frothingham, Jonathan Gage, Michael Hodge, Wm. Pierce Johnson, Nicholas Johnson, James Kittell, Nathaniel Knapp, James Knight, Peter Le Briton, Joseph Moulton, Wm. Noyes, John P. Bryan, Theophilus Parsons, James Prince, Wm. Welstead Prout, Edward Rand, Joseph Stanwood, Ebenezer Wheelwright and Edward Wigglesworth.

In the same year Paul Moody, of Newbury, sold to the corporation six acres of land, partly covered with water, for four hundred and fifty pounds, and also his grist-mill, "together with the stream of water commonly called the Falls River, with the right of flowage," etc. This land was a part of that granted by the town to John Spencer and Richard Dummer to build a mill upon in 1636, and was sold by Nathaniel Dummer, in 1710, to William Moody, the grandfather of the grantor to the woolen company, in 1794. In the mean time the Schofields had removed, in December, 1793, to Newburyport, and at once began to construct a carding-machine, which was put together in a room of the stable of Timothy Dexter. This was the first carding-machine made in this country. This and other experiments proving satisfactory, the Byfield factory was built and finished in 1795, when the Schofields, who had been for a few months engaged in Newburyport in the manufacture of woolen cloth by hand, sold their machines to the corporation and removed to Byfield to superintend the mill. They remained in Byfield about five years, when John removed to Montville, Connecticut, and Arthur to Pittsfield, Massachusetts.

In 1804 William Bartlett, who had obtained possession of the mill, sold it to John Lees for eight thousand five hundred dollars, who converted it into a cotton factory, and for a time was successful. Reverses, however, came to him, and in 1824 the mill was sold by Deputy-Sheriff Philip Bayley to Gorham Parsons. Mr. Parsons repaired and rearranged the mill, and about the year 1830 leased it to Wm. Cleaveland, who for several years was engaged in the manufacture of cotton cloth. Mr. Gorham Parsons subsequently sold it to Theophilus Parsons, who again sold it to M. E. Hale, of Newburyport. By Mr. Hale it was sold to Dr. Francis V. Noyes, who leased it as a bedstead and cabinet-shop. It was afterwards owned by Alfred Durant, with his brother, Rev. Henry Durant, and finally by Charles Hold, during whose ownership it was burned. After the fire the land and

privilege were bought by Leonard Morrison, who rebuilt it for a fancy yarn mill, and at the present time, under the ownership of H. U. Ewing and others of Boston, it is employed in the manufacture of blankets.

Besides the woolen-mill there are on the river two snuff-mills, and near the railroad station at Byfield a shoe-factory, carried on by Mr. J. O. Rogers, with a product of about one thousand cases a year.

The business of ship-building in Newbury was first carried on on the river Parker. The vessels built there were probably small sloops of light draught, and no positive record exists concerning them. Hon. John J. Currier, in his valuable pamphlet on ship-building on the Merrimac, adduces evidence to show that on that river vessels were built as early as 1652. In the year 1652 mention is made of "an old building yard" on Carr's Island, and Mr. Currier furnishes a list of vessels built in Newbury for English owners between 1698 and 1713. From those early times down to 1851, when Newbury was cut off from the upper shore of the river by the annexation of a portion of its territory to Newburyport, ship-building continued to be its leading industry. The following vessels were built in Newbury and registered by the authority of the government of the province of Massachusetts Bay:

	Tons.		Tons.
1698. Sloop Unity.....	40	1706. Ship Mary Fortune.....	55
1698. Bark Tryal.....	20	1706. Brigantine Expectation.....	100
1698. Brigantine Neptune.....	35	1706. " Sarah.....	60
1698. Sloop Dolphin.....	30	1706. " Richard.....	60
1698. Brigantine Endeavor.....	20	1706. Ketch Hopewell.....	20
1698. Sloop Anna.....	40	1707. Sloop Dove.....	30
1698. Bark Elizabeth.....	50	1707. " Tryal.....	30
1698. Sloop Elizabeth.....	30	1708. " Speedwell.....	40
1698. Ketch Edford.....	35	1708. " Union.....	55
1698. Sloop Dolphin.....	25	1708. " Susanna.....	25
1699. " Sea Flower.....	20	1708. Ship John.....	120
1699. " Unity.....	30	1709. " Bond.....	310
1699. Bark Hopewell.....	30	1709. " Leopard Galley.....	70
1699. Ketch Endeavor.....	30	1709. Sloop Friendship.....	40
1699. Sloop Sterling.....	25	1709. Ship Prince Eugene.....	100
1700. " Edward and Elizabeth.....	35	1709. Sloop Sarah and Mary.....	20
1700. Brigantine William.....	40	1709. Brigantine Bradford.....	45
1701. Ketch Merrimack.....	30	1710. Sloop Review.....	25
1702. Sloop Adventure.....	30	1710. " Betty and Mary.....	25
1702. Bark Abigail and Margaret.....	40	1710. " Adventure.....	50
1703. Ship Samuel and David.....	100	1710. " Rebecca.....	30
1703. Ketch Adventure.....	25	1710. Ship Abigail and Rebecca.....	200
1703. Sloop Lamb.....	25	1710. Brigantine Katharine.....	30
1703. Brigantine Elizabeth.....	50	1710. " Newbury.....	60
1703. Sloop Dolphin.....	25	1710. Sloop Anne.....	25
1703. Ketch Hopewell.....	20	1710. " Greyhound.....	40
1704. Sloop Neptune.....	30	1711. Bark Sea Flower.....	20
1704. " Swallow.....	75	1711. Ship Strawberry.....	70
1704. Ketch Endeavor.....	25	1711. Sloop Mary and Abigail.....	30
1704. Sloop Endeavor.....	40	1711. " Hannah and Elizabeth.....	60
1704. " Hopewell.....	40	1711. Bark Samuel.....	40
1705. Ketch Merrimack.....	50	1711. Sloop Hannah and Mary.....	30
1705. Brigantine Welcome.....	60	1712. " Fisher.....	25
1705. " Dove.....	35	1712. " Ann and Mary.....	70
1705. Sloop John and Mary.....	—	1712. " Thistle.....	40
1705. " None Such.....	30	1712. Ship Nathaniel.....	60
1706. " Friend's Adventure.....	28	1712. " Rowlandson.....	150
		1712. " Content.....	90





Tons.		Tons.		Tons.		Tons.	
1712. Brigantine Swan.....	45	1713. Sloop Thomas.....	30	1837. Schooner Ellen.....	66	1846. Schooner Harp.....	23
1712. Sloop Sea Flower.....	39	1713. " Adventure.....	15	1847. " Forest.....	65	1846. " Fleemont.....	69
1713. Brigantine Success.....	45	1713. Brigantine Elizabeth		1837. " Atlantic.....	61	1847. " Far West.....	57
1713. Sloop Greyhound.....	40	and Hannah.....	70	1837. " Union.....	39	1848. " Harbinger.....	65
1713. " Pellegani.....	25	1713. Brigantine Sarah.....	70	1840. " Mary Clark.....	97	1848. " Ada.....	63
1713. " Ganateo.....	25	1713. ————.....	50	1845. " Mary C. Ames.....	108	1848. " Thistle.....	64
1713. Bark Panhope.....	50	1713. Sloop William and		1845. " Oregon.....	122	1848. " Empire.....	93
1713. Sloop Elizabeth.....	30	James.....	40	1846. " Har vest Home.....	67	1848. " Alce Parker.....	61
1713. " Mary and Sarah.....	20	1714. Ship Sea Flower.....	50	1846. Steamboat Ohio.....	225	1850. " Edm'd Burke.....	54
1713. Brigantine John and		1714. Sloop Adventure.....	30				
Mary.....	40	1714. Ship Marlborough Gal-					
1713. Ship Samuel.....	36	ley.....	130				
1713. Brigantine Lomb.....	40	1714. Sloop Flower de Luce.....	40				
1713. Sloop Daniel.....	40	1714. " Burlington.....	35				
1713. " Content.....	25	1714. Brigantine Adventure.....	40				
1713. " Peter and Mary.....	10	1714. " George.....	50				

The following record contains the names of vessels built in Newbury, and enrolled at the Custom-House in Newburyport from 1789 to 1851 :

Tons.		Tons.		Tons.		Tons.	
1781. Sloop Lydia.....	54	1817. Schooner Wasp.....	49	1784. Brig Pomona.....	127	1803. Ship Restitution.....	248
1782. Schooner Haydon.....	20	1817. " Lively.....	43	1785. Schooner Nancy.....	51	1803. Brig Elizabeth.....	120
1783. " Port Packet.....	46	1817. " Three Friends.....	43	1786. " Hope.....	83	1803. " Elizabeth.....	135
1783. " Adams.....	56	1818. " Java.....	49	1786. " Hawk.....	63	1803. Ship Edwin.....	277
1784. " Hope.....	60	1818. " Luteprise.....	30	1786. " Hope.....	65	1803. " Washington.....	197
1785. " Hope.....	59	1818. " Washington.....	39	1787. Brig Mary.....	166	1804. " Reward.....	242
1785. " Blossom.....	22	1818. " Essex.....	43	1788. Schooner John.....	90	1804. Bark Packet.....	169
1787. " Betsey.....	22	1818. " Volant.....	52	1789. Brig William.....	277	1804. Brig Mary and Ellen.....	136
1788. " Sally.....	22	1819. Schooner Sylph.....	54	1791. Schooner Dolphin.....	19	1804. Ship Wm. P. Johnson.....	292
1788. " William.....	65	1820. " Blossom.....	41	1792. Brig Hannah.....	113	1804. " Elizabeth.....	279
1789. " Peggy & Polly.....	79	1820. " Constellation.....	45	1792. Brig Mary.....	185	1804. " Hercules.....	300
1792. " Sentinel.....	21	1821. " Albert.....	60	1793. Schooner Lucy.....	77	1804. Brig Commerce.....	129
1792. " Lydia.....	27	1821. " Citizen.....	130	1793. " Betsey.....	76	1805. " Ann.....	187
1792. " Lydia.....	32	1821. " Mercy & Hope.....	56	1793. " William.....	92	1805. " Ruby.....	111
1793. " Industry.....	59	1825. " Mary Buntin.....	76	1794. Brig William and Eliza.....	123	1805. Ship Moses Brown.....	337
1793. " Polly.....	63	1825. " Brilliant.....	76	1794. Ship Columbia.....	296	1805. Ship Romulus.....	337
1793. " William.....	62	1825. " Wasp.....	51	1794. " Charles.....	225	1805. Brig Commerce.....	138
1793. " Lucy.....	77	1826. " Belleville.....	81	1795. Ship Hibernia.....	186	1806. Brig George.....	104
1794. " Rising Sun.....	22	1826. " Minerva.....	67	1795. Brig Swann.....	130	1806. Schooner Hannah.....	85
1794. " Raven.....	21	1827. " Temple.....	71	1795. " Diana.....	125	1806. Ship Arrow.....	275
1794. " Mary.....	32	1827. " Warren.....	55	1795. " Union.....	124	1807. Ship Edward.....	216
1799. Brig Sally.....	102	1828. " Battie.....	86	1795. " Hannah.....	128	1807. Ship Mayland.....	395
1800. " Fame.....	83	1828. " Caspian.....	60	1795. " Fanny.....	186	1807. Brig Topaz.....	243
1800. Schooner Mary Ann.....	101	1828. " Statesman.....	47	1796. Schooner Hannah and		1807. Brig Saphira.....	181
1800. " Amazon.....	110	1828. " Joppa.....	86	Eliza.....	262	1807. Ship George Planter.....	345
1800. Ship Branch.....	78	1828. " Eunice.....	74	1796. Brig Sally.....	102	1807. Brig Adze.....	111
1801. Schooner Samuel.....	88	1828. " Pacific.....	37	1797. " Eliza.....	151	1808. " Otter.....	239
1801. " Lewis.....	47	1829. " Luther.....	54	1797. Ship Packet.....	288	1808. " Pomona.....	138
1801. Brig Fame.....	24	1829. " Cyrus.....	58	1797. Brig Joseph.....	146	1808. " Pilgrim.....	269
1801. Schooner Regulus.....	91	1829. " York.....	74	1797. " Ranger.....	137	1808. " Ellen Maria.....	168
1804. " Two Sons.....	107	1829. " Fulcrum.....	74	1797. Ship Heindl.....	250	1808. Schooner Betsey.....	89
1804. " Jane.....	60	1829. " America.....	43	1798. " Rufus.....	112	1808. Brig Latona.....	178
1804. " Jane.....	50	1829. " Mermaid.....	71	1798. " William.....	140	1809. Ship Ceres.....	279
1807. Sloop John.....	19	1829. " Nautilus.....	52	1799. " Joanna.....	121	1809. Schooner Abigail.....	87
1807. Brig Helen.....	201	1830. " Inez.....	53	1799. Ship Alligator.....	196	1809. Brig Martha.....	113
1809. Schooner Phebe.....	49	1830. " Penelope.....	81	1799. Brig Humming Bird.....	81	1809. Brig Concha.....	340
1810. Brig Leo.....	125	1831. " Augustin.....	50	1800. Brig Edwin.....	129	1809. Bark Ida.....	189
1811. " Emily.....	127	1831. " Laurel.....	48	1800. Brig Constellation.....	112	1809. Ship Hope.....	70
1811. " Abby.....	139	1831. " Charles.....	37	1800. Ship Calhoun.....	201	1810. Brig Lloyd.....	220
1812. Schooner Rella.....	98	1831. " Phebe.....	44	1800. Brig Ann.....	172	1810. Ship Harriet.....	275
1813. " Green.....	81	1832. " George.....	49	1801. Schooner Joseph.....	72	1810. Ship Ocean.....	274
1813. " Scorpion.....	28	1832. " Palm.....	49	1801. Brig Star.....	156	1810. " Neptune.....	351
1813. " Harriet.....	32	1833. " Pilot.....	74	1801. Scow America.....	158	1810. " Fingal.....	382
1814. " Juno.....	41	1834. " Emerald.....	41	1801. Brig Tiger.....	148	1810. " Volant.....	457
1814. " Malvina.....	34	1834. " Mary Ann.....	46	1801. Ship Grand Sachem.....	250	1810. Brig Leiber.....	246
1814. " Comet.....	24	1834. " Go Ahead.....	48	1801. Ship Essex.....	236	1810. Ship Oscar.....	346
1814. " Platiff.....	43	1834. " Patriot.....	47	1801. Brig Mary.....	204	1810. " Hercules.....	309
1814. " Atlas.....	40	1834. " Ivy.....	46	1802. Schooner Regulator.....	91	1810. Brig Leo.....	156
1814. " Swift.....	30	1835. " Stoic.....	60	1802. Sloop Eliza.....	31	1810. " Abigail.....	255
1814. " Emily.....	26	1835. " Gem.....	44	1802. Brig John.....	168	1810. Ship Packet.....	281
1815. " Phoenix.....	72	1835. " Magnet.....	44	1802. Ship Nancy.....	235	1810. Brig Gosamer.....	224
1815. " Mary.....	196	1835. " Ruby.....	44	1802. Brig Mary.....	180	1810. Ship Salus.....	292
1815. " Speed.....	21	1835. " Columbus.....	62	1802. " Nancy.....	134	1810. " Virginia.....	399
1817. " Tom Bowlin.....	55	1836. " Albion.....	52	1802. Ship Hunter.....	189	1811. Brig America.....	341
				1802. Brig Eliza.....	159	1811. Schooner Go On.....	15
				1803. Sloop Susan.....	72	1811. Ship Agawan.....	328
				1803. Ship Mary.....	235	1811. " Milo.....	395
				1803. Ship Sally.....	220	1811. Brig Start.....	174
						1811. " Pickering.....	256
						1811. Ship Wallace.....	244





Tons.	Tons.	Tons.	Tons.
1811. Brig Dolphin..... 198	1825. Schooner Herald..... 74	1840. Brig Zetoff ..... 220	1846. Ship Far West..... 598
1811. " Gen. Stark..... 230	1826. Ship Meridian..... 398	1849. Ship Rosalind..... 398	1846. " Annie..... 572
1812. Sloop Angemoria..... 62	1826. Schooner Minerva..... 67	1840. " Deba Walker..... 427	1846. Bark Gypsy..... 295
1812. Brig Essex..... 294	1826. " Rufus..... 128	1840. " Virginia..... 400	1846. " Laura..... 249
1812. Schooner Yankee..... 77	1826. " Duck..... 62	1841. Brig Athen..... 360	1846. " Wenham..... 521
1812. Brig Ives..... 196	1827. Ship Fredonia..... 466	1841. Bark Apollo ..... 319	1846. Ship John Carter..... 697
1813. Schooner Mary..... 108	1827. " Science..... 388	1841. " Chusa..... 241	1847. Schooner Maria Theresia..... 119
1814. " Sally..... 264	1827. " Parachute..... 331	1841. Brig Massachusetts..... 300	1847. Ship Naomi..... 547
1814. " Happy Jack..... 17	1827. Schooner Mans..... 106	1841. Bark Wessacumcon..... 321	1847. " Capital..... 687
1814. Boat Maria..... 20	1827. Brig Elizabeth..... 218	1841. " Mary Broughton..... 325	1847. " Fanchon..... 969
1814. Brig Hope..... 136	1827. Ship Louisa..... 367	1841. Brig Chenamus..... 292	1847. Bark Chilton..... 278
1814. " Indus..... 262	1827. " Vesper..... 321	1841. Ship Hannah Sprague..... 110	1847. " Kate Hastings..... 418
1814. Schooner Essex..... 106	1827. Schooner Caroline..... 84	1842. " James D. Farwell..... 609	1847. Ship Richard Cobden..... 655
1815. Ship Aristides..... 278	1828. Brig Wayland..... 217	1842. Bark John Caskie..... 349	1847. " Lebanon..... 697
1815. Schooner Peace..... 110	1828. Schooner Convoy..... 81	1842. Brig James Gray..... 300	1847. Bark Francis..... 460
1815. Brig Alert..... 262	1829. Brig Carina..... 218	1842. Ship Ashburton..... 449	1847. Ship Ocean Queen..... 824
1815. Schooner John..... 87	1829. " Powhattan..... 265	1842. " Courier..... 380	1847. " Amaranth..... 666
1815. Brig Copernican..... 119	1830. Schooner Nile..... 89	1842. " Euphrates..... 487	1848. " Nestorian..... 698
1815. Schooner Success..... 75	1830. Brig Pouchontas..... 282	1843. " Augustine Heard..... 491	1848. " Raduga..... 587
1815. Brig Olive..... 157	1830. " Alice..... 281	1843. Schooner Wm. C. Ellison..... 43	1848. " Buena Vista..... 547
1815. " New Leader..... 271	1831. Schooner Herald..... 49	1843. Ship St. George..... 815	1848. Steamboat Lawrence..... 142
1815. " Syren..... 182	1831. Brig Aquila..... 288	1843. " Pacific..... 531	1848. Brig Elizabeth Ann..... 128
1815. " Brahmen..... 242	1831. Ship Loxant..... 382	1843. Schooner Nassau..... 107	1848. Ship Massachusetta..... 824
1815. Ship Caroline..... 322	1831. Brig Angola..... 137	1843. Bark Talisman..... 347	1848. " Franchise..... 709
1815. Brig Ann..... 134	1831. Bark Tasso..... 286	1843. Ship Amity..... 499	1848. Bark Henry Bangs..... 197
1816. Schooner Paragon..... 83	1832. Ship Brenda..... 313	1844. " Amazon..... 741	1848. " Tyringham..... 609
1816. " Strong..... 82	1832. " Concord..... 391	1844. " Radius..... 517	1848. Schooner Margaret Ann..... 100
1816. Sloop Harvard..... 93	1832. Brig Palos..... 277	1844. " Rambler..... 399	1849. Bark Crusoe..... 342
1816. Ship Draper..... 291	1832. Ship Franklin..... 302	1844. " Java..... 538	1849. " Helen Augusta..... 242
1816. Brig Caspar..... 134	1832. Schooner Leo..... 58	1844. " John R. Skiddy..... 980	1849. " Lyman..... 369
1817. Schooner Constitution..... 86	1832. " Wave..... 58	1844. Brig Salisbury..... 296	1849. " Domingo..... 230
1817. " Alexander..... 193	1832. Ship Medora..... 314	1844. Ship St. Patrick..... 896	1849. Ship Charles Hill..... 700
1817. Brig Packet..... 128	1832. Brig James Caskie..... 283	1844. " Brutus..... 560	1849. " Teague..... 578
1817. " Dove..... 145	1832. Ship Caravan..... 330	1844. " Joshua Bates..... 629	1849. " Florida..... 697
1817. Ship Atlantic..... 323	1832. " Republic..... 399	1845. Bark Edward Koppach..... 250	1849. Bark Hollander..... 499
1817. Schooner Wasp..... 40	1833. Bark Thalia..... 291	1845. Ship Nebraska..... 516	1849. Ship Castilian..... 1000
1817. " Democrat..... 47	1833. Brig Carthage..... 296	1845. Schooner Wave..... 40	1850. Bark Annie Blackman..... 630
1818. Brig Rajah..... 250	1833. Ship Merrimac..... 414	1845. Ship Hugonot..... 935	1850. " Dragon..... 290
1818. Schooner Gen. Putnam..... 113	1833. " Emerald..... 435	1845. " Howard..... 493	1850. Schooner Pearl..... 31
1818. Ship Herald..... 302	1833. Brig Oberlin..... 331	1845. Brig Keying..... 390	1850. Bark Sand Ben Sultan..... 302
1818. Brig Demax..... 110	1833. Ship Jacob Perkins..... 379	1845. " Mouscotte..... 170	1851. Ship Edward..... 675
1819. Ship Meteor..... 325	1833. " Satehontas..... 256	1846. Bark Fredonia..... 800	1851. " Carissa Carrier..... 1600
1819. Ship Gible..... 282	1833. " Surat..... 346	1846. Brig Almira..... 176	1851. " Racer..... 1669
1819. Schooner Planet..... 123	1833. Brig Ark..... 298	1846. Ship Gen. Taylor..... 597	1851. " Astron..... 719
1819. " Tom..... 59	1834. Ship Newburyport..... 341	1846. " Roman..... 649	
1819. Ship Henry..... 259	1834. " Spartan..... 475		
1819. Schooner Essex..... 43	1834. Brig Cometh..... 299		
1819. " Constellation..... 46	1834. Ship St. Clair..... 414		
1820. " Hannah and..... 4	1835. " Persia..... 332		
1820. " Susan..... 67	1835. " Mary Kniball..... 373		
1821. " Berries..... 82	1835. " Leonora..... 370		
1821. " Maid of the..... 76	1835. Schooner Columbia..... 62		
1821. Ship Delta..... 314	1836. " Hammet..... 94		
1821. Schooner Ann..... 61	1836. Bark Allioth..... 330		
1821. " Haytian..... 38	1836. Ship Angelo..... 417		
1821. Ship Florida..... 300	1836. " Columbus..... 591		
1821. Schooner Dennis..... 35	1837. Brig Palus..... 102		
1822. Brig Argus..... 156	1837. " Nathaniel Hooper..... 427		
1822. Ship Pioneer..... 319	1837. Schooner Peru..... 69		
1822. " Clifford Wayne..... 305	1837. Ship Talbot..... 624		
1823. Schooner Mechanic..... 59	1837. Brig Shawmut..... 205		
1823. Ship Francis..... 328	1838. " Geneva..... 458		
1823. Brig Mars..... 270	1838. Bark Byron..... 346		
1823. Schooner Falcon..... 60	1839. Ship Washington..... 372		
1823. Brig Hampton..... 221	1839. " Forester..... 428		
1823. Ship Tally Ho..... 429	1839. " Flavio..... 698		
1823. " Bowditch..... 399	1839. " Navigator..... 417		
1824. " Shylack..... 278	1839. " Hzards..... 411		
1824. " Plutarch..... 357	1839. Schooner Burlington..... 57		
1824. Schooner Lady Howard..... 61	1839. " Brighton..... 90		
1825. Brig Henry..... 151	1839. Ship Huntress..... 547		
1825. Schooner La Fayette..... 76	1839. Bark Strabo..... 420		
1825. " Fairy..... 82	1840. " Essex..... 273		
1825. Ship Goleonda..... 359	1840. Schooner Petrel..... 83		
	1840. Ship Gen. Harrison..... 410		

After the year 1851, when the territory on the river between Newburyport and West Newbury was annexed to Newburyport, the Newbury ship-yards were within the city limits and ship-building in Newbury ceased.

In connection with the industries of Newbury may be mentioned the inventive skill of its people. At the factory at the Falls Jacob Perkins first set up the machine for cutting nails, which, though adding little to the prosperity of the town, made its inventor one of the benefactors of the industrial world. In Newbury, too, Paul Pillsbury lived at the old Pillsbury homestead in Byfield, the inventor, among other things, of shoe pegs and the revolutionizer of the business of making shoes. Mr. Pillsbury was born in what is now West Newbury in 1780 and died in 1868. He was one of seven brothers, of whom Enoch and Phineas were clergymen, Parker a blacksmith, Oliver a mechanic, and Samuel and John farmers. Oliver was the father of the late Abolitionist, Parker Pillsbury. Paul, the subject of this sketch, went, when a boy, to live with Paul Lunt, of Newbury. As he grew to manhood he established himself at Ames-







George Henry Lewes,  
Leicester Square





bury as a shuttle-maker, but after a short time he returned to Byfield, taking possession of the homestead bequeathed to him by his uncle, and made shuttles and machines for the cotton factory there.

His first invention was a corn-sheller, for which he received a patent in 1803, and which was the first advance made on the old style of hand-work. In 1808 he received a patent on the bark-mill which was the prototype of all the bark, cob, coffee and spice-mills now in use. The old method of preparing bark for the vats, which his mill superseded, was by rolling it with a grind-stone fitted to an axle and drawn by a horse.

His next and chief invention was that of shoe pegs, and the machinery for their manufacture. The manufacture of pegged boots and shoes at once began and Mr. Pillsbury had the monopoly of the peg trade. He ran his mill with closed doors, and carried on for a time a profitable business. His profits, however, were soon reduced by competition, which he had no patent to prevent, and only a portion of the trade at reduced prices was retained by him.

Among other inventions of his were a rotary fire-engine, a seed-sower, churn, a gold-washer and sifter, coffee-burner, coffee-mill, window-fastener, bee-hive, and others too numerous to mention.

But this imperfect sketch of the old town of Newbury must be brought to a close. The story, though half told, must yield to the necessary limitations of space. The semi-centennial celebration of 1885 has not been alluded to, nor the mineral regions, nor the historical society; and the various rich and historic farms, occupied generation after generation by descendants of the first settlers, have been passed by unnoticed. Nor have the historic families of the town received the attention they deserve. The Parsons, Longfellow, Sewall, Moody, Noyes, Coffin, Plummer, Gerrish, Tenney and Pierce families, with others equally distinguished, must find their historian and eulogist in one who has ampler space at his command, and who is better equipped for the performance of his task. Of individual lives which have distinguished Newbury, including those of Chief Justices Sewall and Parsons, and some of lesser fame, sketches may be found in the chapter on the "Bench and Bar," and in the "History of Newburyport," in another place in these volumes.

NOTE.—The writer wishes to express his indebtedness to the valuable files of the *Newburyport Herald*, to the scrap-books of the late Ben. Percy Poore, to the "History of Ship-Building on the Merrimac," by Hon. John J. Carrier, to Coffin's "History of Newbury," and to Mr. Ferguson, the town clerk of Newbury, for materials which have rendered even this imperfect sketch possible at his hands. W. T. D.

## BIOGRAPHICAL.

### LEONARD WITHINGTON.<sup>1</sup>

Leonard Withington was born in Dorchester (now

a part of Boston), August 9, 1789. His parents were Joseph Weeks and Elizabeth (White) Withington, the family having been of the original settlers of the town, respectable and respected, holding offices in the town and in the church, his great-grandfather, Ebenezer Withington, having had a commission from the King as a captain in the French War. His mother was a woman of genius and force of character, though of little book-learning, except what she had read after her marriage, which occurred while she was very young, and she had much influence over her eldest son, who was so near her own age that they were frequently taken by strangers to be brother and sister. The father was considerably older, had served as a soldier in the War for Independence, and was a man of solid sense, but not of brilliant talents.

The schools of those days were not very good, and in after-years Mr. Withington told the story of how he inquired of the mistress of the Dame school as to the meaning of a punctuation mark, and was told by her that if he looked at all the fly-dirts in the book, he would never learn to read. He did, however, learn with extraordinary facility, and from a very early age displayed a great avidity for books. One of the first which fell into his hands, as was to be expected in a Puritan family, was Bunyan's wonderful allegory of "The Pilgrim's Progress," which took such a powerful hold upon his imagination that he set out on a pilgrimage when a very small boy, and contriving a burden for his back, like that of Christian, took the gate of a pasture for the wicket gate at which Bunyan's hero sought admission. It was a characteristic of his life, the vividness of imagination which transformed the homely realities into poetic dreams, and made him see more in sensible objects than appeared on the retina of the eye.

Though the schools were poor, and the springs of learning ran low in them at that time, he was aided in his struggle to gain instruction by an uncle, who was rather a bookish man for that community, and he had read a good deal for a boy in his circumstances, when, at the age of fifteen, he was apprenticed to the late Joseph T. Buckingham, of Boston, to learn the printer's trade. This part of his life he thoroughly enjoyed. It opened to him a new world. He had greatly larger opportunities for reading, the association with men of culture and education, the company of aspiring young men, the advantage of a debating society, in which there were several youths of talent, and the theatres of Boston, which opened to him a new world, and where he witnessed the performances of the great lights of the stage at that time. He was a favorite with Mr. Buckingham, who gave him the best opportunities and printed some of his writings in the later years of his apprenticeship, and a regard grew up which ripened into a friendship which continued as long as the master lived.

The young man became ambitious of a literary

<sup>1</sup> By Nathan N. Withington.



career, and especially of becoming editor of a magazine or review, and to this end was desirous of a liberal education. Mr. Buckingham gave him most of the last year of his apprenticeship, and Mr. Withington attended Phillips Academy at Andover for one year, fitting for college in that time. The next year he studied at home, and he then was admitted to the sophomore class at Yale, having been induced by Rev. John Codman, D.D., of Dorchester, to enter at the orthodox college, rather than at Harvard, which was nearer home. The family had attended the church of which Rev. Dr. Harris was pastor; but it was at a time when the division was taking place in the churches, and Dr. Harris' church was liberal, and they left it for Dr. Codman's, the orthodox church, with which Mr. Withington united in 1810.

From the beginning he took a high stand in his class at Yale, and was expected to take the highest honors; but a serious illness interrupted his studies, and for a while his life was despaired of, so that he took the second place at graduation, and as a writer he was considered the first in college of his time. During the college course, through the influence of Dr. Codman and President Dwight, of Yale, Mr. Withington changed his plan of a literary career, and decided to study theology. Accordingly, after graduation in the class of 1814, he studied first with President Dwight, and afterwards with Dr. Codman, and was approbated to preach in 1816 by the Union Association of Boston and vicinity, at the house of Rev. Dr. Morse, in Charlestown, and before his death he was the oldest surviving graduate of Yale and the oldest Congregational minister in the United States.

Soon after he was licensed to preach he received two simultaneous invitations from churches to become their pastor. One was from the First Church in Newbury, and although the salary was but one-third of that offered by the other, the larger salary being from the income of a fund, he felt that there would be little interest on the part of the parish which did not pay for its own preaching. Accordingly, he accepted the call from the church in Newbury, and was ordained its pastor on the 31st of October, 1816, and remained with it until his death, on Wednesday, April 22, 1885, a pastorate of over sixty-eight years, the longest of any in the record of a church remarkable for the long life of its ministers, and the long continuance of their service with the same church.

Mr. Withington, as a pupil of President Dwight and of Dr. Codman, was a Calvinist, and the parish to which he was called was ranked among the liberal, or Arminians, and his first sermons were not such as to disturb the people who had been accustomed to the preaching of Rev. Dr. Tucker and Dr. Popkin, who resigned to accept the Professorship of Greek in Harvard University. But many of the Calvinists were drawn into the society, and the association with liberal churches was gradually dropped, and under

the pastorate of Mr. Withington the church became thoroughly identified with the orthodox Congregationalists, the covenant was changed into a creed, and while at the ordination Rev. Dr. Andrews, pastor of the Unitarian Church in Newburyport took part, fellowship with that church was discontinued.

From the first of his pastorate Mr. Withington made himself felt as an active force in the vicinity. He was a scholar, and he inspired the Essex North Association of Congregational Ministers with the contagion of scholarship. They read the Scriptures in the original Hebrew and Greek, so that throughout New England this body became noted among the clergymen of the denomination as a scholarly body of men. He interested himself in the first libraries, in the first lyceum, in schools and academies, and was made a trustee and officer of several of these institutions.

Very soon after his ordination, January 17, 1817, he was married to Sophia, youngest daughter of William Sherburne, Esq., of Boston, and he established his family in the home where all his children were born, in the house built by a predecessor in the pastorate, Rev. Abraham Moore, and which still stands on High Street, opposite the head of Marlborough Street. His first wife died April 1, 1826, leaving three sons, one of whom died in infancy soon after his mother, and the other two dying before their father, in young manhood, the second, bearing his father's name, leaving issue of daughters. On May 28, 1827, he was married to his second wife, Caroline, daughter of Hon. Nathan Noyes, M.D., of Newburyport, by whom he had five sons and four daughters, of whom the daughters and two sons survive. The second wife died in August, 1860, and from that time he remained a widower till the close of his life.

Mr. Withington had a dislike for college titles of honor, which was understood at Yale, so that such were not offered him from that college, but in 1850 he received the degree of Doctor of Divinity from Bowdoin, an honor which he deserved by his scholarship and his writings, which were numerous. Among his published addresses were the election sermon, preached before the Massachusetts Legislature in 1831; a poem before the Phi Beta Kappa at Yale, September 11, 1821; an address to the alumni at Yale in 1846; an address to a society in Dartmouth College in 1837, besides numerous lectures before lyceums, and addresses to various bodies. He contributed to newspapers and magazines until nearly the close of his life, and published many sermons and pamphlets upon public topics, and to the *Bibliotheca Sacra* he contributed after he was considerably past eighty years old. He published two books. One of these was "The Puritan," a collection of essays and sketches with a slight thread of narrative running through the whole. This book was published in 1836. The other book was "Solomon's Song," translated and explained in three parts, and







*Moses C. Colman*





published in 1861, of which one of the theological reviews said it was "the ablest exposition ever published of the wrong theory of explanation of Solomon's Song." Dr. Withington's own estimate of his work after it was published was always extremely modest, and he did not like to hear his books mentioned. The publishers wished to issue a second edition of the "Puritan," but, though there was a good demand for it, he positively refused to consent.

Dr. Withington was a preacher, a scholar, a wit, a brilliant conversationalist and a vigorous though unequal writer. He had a critical knowledge of English literature, and was thoroughly familiar with the best writers. Literature was his delight, and it was that he might devote himself to it that he preferred to remain in a country parish on a small salary, where he had leisure for study, and for such writing as he liked, though he had many calls to more lucrative positions. As a preacher he was striking and impressive, though not elegant nor eloquent. He was original in thought and in speech, and his sermons and addresses were characterized by force of expression and aptness of illustration. This was especially to be noticed in his extemporary Tuesday evening lectures to his people, which were illustrated by the freshest readings and observations of the speaker, who would often be carried away from his subject and carry his people with him. At these lectures the chapel was always filled, and they were an intellectual stimulus which was felt by all who heard them. They were not formal discourses, and often the speaker did not know when he began where the inspiration would lead him, but they were delightful talks of a pious scholar, wit and humorist, which attracted many besides the members of the parish. In his faith he described himself as "a modified Calvinist."

In conversation Dr. Withington excelled, and in his family he delighted in relating stories to his children of pathos or terror which he wove out of his fertile imagination, and in composing for them little poems on events in the family. He was an indulgent father, who desired that his children should read and think for themselves, and he had a habit of asking them questions in order to set them to studying to find the answers, which he did not give. His learning and brilliant conversation attracted many distinguished men and women to the house, so that there was always intellectual entertainment for the household.

Dr. Withington's life was a complete whole, and it can hardly be said that he died, but his life was finished after nearly ninety-six years' continuance, and its close was a gradual failure of the vital forces, bodily and mental, like a fire which had burnt out the material upon which it fed. Although not of a robust frame, and in early life of rather feeble health, he grew to be more healthy as life advanced, and his

old age was one of calm happiness. Indeed, his life was a happy one. He had become convinced that it was his duty to become a minister, and the duties, not disagreeable to him in the beginning, became his pleasure. He was contented in the country parish in which he had settled, and he had there the leisure for the literary labors which were his delight. He retired from the pastorate while his mental powers were in full vigor, leaving no impression upon his people of their decline, so that they would gladly have retained his active services, and his serene old age was passed in the companionship of children, grandchildren and great-grandchildren, who admired his genius and were devoted to his comfort. At the last his only desire was to be at rest, and his only complaint that he remained, while others, younger than he, had laid down the burden of life, and he laid it down as one falls asleep, peacefully and unconsciously.

#### MOSES COLMAN.<sup>1</sup>

Moses Colman has sprung from one of the oldest families of the town of Newbury, or the county of Essex, and a family that has lost nothing of the vigor of heart and mind in the lapse of years.

He is now seventy years old, showing no more marks of age than he did at fifty. The first of the family in America was Thomas Colman, a native of Marlboro', England. He arrived in Boston in 1635, and at once joined the first settlers of the town, whose piety did not prevent their appreciating the beauties of the location, the fertility of its uplands and the ability of its widespread meadows and marshes to furnish support to horses, cattle and sheep.

Religious liberty and civil rights they desired, but the Dummers, Sewalls, Saltonstalls and other wealthy men did not lose sight of this grand emigration to and colonization of this section of the New World. Thomas Colman was a very valuable man, for at home he had gained a reputation for knowledge in the breeding of horses and cattle, which was as much their object as to-day it is of the settlers in Montana, Colorado and Texas, or the men locating on the wide prairies and vast plains of the West.

He had come over the seas on their invitation,—they needed his skill, and he at once entered upon the duties for which he had been engaged. He became one of the proprietors of the town, of which the whole number was one hundred and thirteen, and had lands assigned him in Byfield, which, in part, are in the possession of Mr. Moses Colman to-day, for there upon the ancient homestead dwelt Thomas Colman for seven years. Then he removed to Hampton, N. H., and finally, in 1680, with a part of his children, he made a new home on Nantucket, more desirable on account of the milder climate; and

<sup>1</sup> By George J. L. Colby.



hence we hear of the Nantucket as well as of the Newbury branch of the family. Five years later Thomas died at the ripe age of eighty-three years, and four-score years or more, barring accidents, may be counted upon as the Colman inheritance.

Thomas Colman married three wives, who bore him five sons and one daughter.

Benjamin was the oldest, and possibly it was he whom tradition says "owned a parcel of land extending from near the Meeting-House to where the Glen Mills now are," some two miles or so.

It was, however, his last child, Tobias, the son of his old age, by his third wife, Margery, who was the great ancestor of the Byfield Colmans. Later on Benjamin, born in 1724, who married Anne Brown, living at Brown's Springs, in West Newbury, was the most distinguished member of the family in its early days, by his long controversy with his pastor, Rev. Moses Parsons, on the slavery question. He has become historical,—one of the way-marks along the line of human progress, showing how fast the world moves.

He seems to have been a logical, well-educated, strong-minded man; if not the William Lloyd Garrison of that day, certainly the fore-runner of him who was to come and "the voice crying in the wilderness, 'Prepare ye the way.'" He was deacon of the church, and thought it his duty to arraign the pastor as a "man-stealer" for keeping a person in slavery.

And this reminds us that the Lexington and Bunker Hill of the anti-slavery revolution were not at or near Boston, but in Byfield. Thence came the tribes that overran the land, and there was the preliminary contest between Deacon Benjamin Colman and Rev. Moses Parsons.

Looking along the line of the Colman family we find that Moses (born in 1755) inherited the paternal acres, which descended to his son, Colonel Jeremiah, and from him became the property of the subject of this sketch, who has greatly improved the estate and made it one of the finest rural summer residences of this county.

In process of time the area has been reduced to one hundred acres. Moses, of 1755, married two wives; the first became the mother of Jeremiah, and the second, the Widow Emery, was the mother of David Emery, and afterwards of Daniel Colman, so that the three boys who became prominent citizens, lived under the same roof-tree as brothers, though no two of them had the same mother and father.

Colonel Jeremiah, like the first Thomas, had knowledge of and love for a horse. He was the best rider ever seen on our streets, and when young he paid no attention to roads, but would leap every fence or stone wall in a five-mile ride. He was for many years a colonel of a cavalry regiment, in one company of which every man could dismount and regain his saddle with his horse at a canter.

In 1810 he became general agent of the Eastern

Stage Company, with his headquarters in Newburyport, and he retained that position twenty-nine years, to 1839, when the corporation retired, dissolved before the Eastern Railroad Company.

Seldom has a man lived having the confidence of the public to so great a degree, or his popularity so deep and well-grounded, as Colonel Colman.

He was one of the founders of the Essex Agricultural Society and an officer as long as he lived. For twenty-five years he was marshal at the annual fairs. He was one of the founders of the Ocean Bank, a director from its incorporation till his death, thirty-three years, and was the last of the original board. So he was an officer of the Institution for Savings, a trustee of Dunmer Academy, thirty-two years deacon of the First Church in Newbury, for many years chairman of the Board of Selectmen of Newburyport, and for fifteen years a Representative to the Legislature. This unprecedented record was no accident, but was founded on the merits of the man as a Christian gentleman, guileless and unspotted.

Moses Colman, whose portrait we give, indicating in his face and appearance the manner of the man, is the eldest son of Colonel Jeremiah. He was born in Newburyport and educated by her best teachers—Alfred W. Pike, David P. Page, Roger S. Howard and Preceptor Cleveland, of Dunmer Academy, all of high rank in their profession.

At seventeen he became the clerk, accountant and paymaster of the Eastern Stage Company, one of the greatest institutions of Newburyport in the last generation of men, which furnished quick and cheap travel from Boston to Bangor, and by its branches reached to the centre of New Hampshire and the back towns of Maine.

Oh! what a rush of people in any exciting time to the Wolfe Tavern as the coach, drawn by four or six horses, dashed down the street with Forbes, Akerman, Shaw or Annable on the box, blowing the horn when High Street was reached. Then came the scramble for newspapers, "only five hours from Boston!" We believe that all but three or four of the drivers have passed away; the oldest now living is, we think, Esek Saunders, of Worcester. One of the most famous was Stephen B. Marshall, who always had "room for one more inside."

About 1859 Moses Colman removed to Boston, where, keeping up with the times and the demands of the people for improved modes of travel, he began a brilliant career on street railroads. First he became superintendent of the Metropolitan road, the first horse railroad in Massachusetts. His previous experience with stages, which were run by time-tables as the railroads now are, and were as true to their time of starting, amply fitted him for his new position, and at once he became a popular and energetic manager, and no small part of the prosperity of the Metropolitan at that date and since was due to his skill and the impetus which he gave to it.





He remained there three years, then for five years he owned and operated with much success the South Boston Horse Railroad, and sold it only when it seemed more profitable to sell at his own price than to keep it. We believe this is the only case in any large city of this Commonwealth where one individual has been sole proprietor and manager of a road of much magnitude, but there was not a man in the State better qualified for the duties. He was at home in every department of the work, active, industrious, vigilant.

In 1866, in connection with his son E. C., he established the auction and commission house where it now is, on Portland and Friend Streets, in Boston, for the sale of horses and their furnishings of every description. In this business, not before established at the North End, he has remained for twenty-four years, during which time it has constantly increased. There is not a man in this county, if there is in any other, that knows a horse better than he, can quicker see his good points or detect his "outs."

The number of horses and carriages that have passed through his hands is beyond our calculation. At the opening of the late war, Andrew, the Governor of this Commonwealth, availed himself of Mr. Colman's knowledge and experience in this business, and gave him large orders for cavalry supplies.

The simple name of the firm conveys no idea to the average mind of the extent or importance of the business, but when we say that it reaches more than one hundred thousand dollars per annum, something may be learned.

Being a man of orderly habits, the business is as well arranged and systematized as that of any other house dealing in dry-goods, groceries, leather or shoes. Moses Colman is a man of much personal intelligence; by constant reading since he left school he has formed scholarly habits and kept up with the times in literature, but has had little leisure for political life. He has held a seat in the City Council of Boston, and while there took a prominent part in its actions, but he could not neglect the demands of his enormous business, and the adherence to the rule of fully attending to the one iron in the fire has given him success.

He has the leading traits of the family, is free, generous, hospitable, is firm in his opinions, but urbane in his manners; follows in the footsteps of his fathers in the religious principles that lie at the bottom of New England society.

For many years he has been a worthy member of the Congregational Church. He has his winter home in Boston, but spends his summers in Newbury, of which town he is still a citizen, warmly interested in its prosperity.

Mr. Colman has been twice married,—first, to Elizabeth L., daughter of Edmund Coffin, of Newbury, by whom he had nine children, six of them now living,—three sons and three daughters; no children by the second marriage.

## CHAPTER CXLIII.

## NEWBURYPORT.

BY WILLIAM T. DAVIS.

## FIRST PERIOD.

*From the Incorporation of the Town to the Close of the Revolution.*

IN 1642 the inhabitants of Newbury granted authority to Thomas Parker, James Noyes, John Woodbridge, Edward Rawson, John Cutting, Edward Woodman, John Lowle and John Clark to lay out a new town. This town, or rather district of the old town, included what afterwards became the "Port" of Newbury, and in later times, Newburyport. This new section or district of the old town, lying as it did on the banks of the Merrimac River and not far from the ocean, eventually gained more rapidly in population, and became more thickly settled than the districts remote from the river, which were cut up into farms, and whose people retained the characteristics of an agricultural population. As early as 1725 a part of the First Parish in Newbury, living near the "water side," as the district lying on the river was sometimes called, was incorporated as a separate religious society, and in 1738 a Protestant Episcopal Church was built on the site of the present St. Paul's Church, by the "water side" members of the old Queen Anne's Chapel, the church on Newbury Plains, which had been built at the time of the organization of its society, in 1711. In 1725 the First Church in Newburyport was organized, and on the 3d of January, 1746, another society was formed at the water side by seceders from the old First Parish at Newbury, which is now known as the First Presbyterian Society of Newburyport. The formation of these societies at the "Port" could not fail to draw, still more distinctly than it had before existed, the line between the two sections of Newbury. As long as on the Sabbath those whose worldly interests were separate, met together in worship at the same altar, there was a tie binding them as one community, which, after the establishment of different societies and the erection of new places of worship, was irretrievably broken. By the enterprise of the "water side" people a new feature was added to their settlement by the erection, at their own charge, of a new town-house, and in 1752 the old one on High Street, built in 1735, was abandoned. The location of the new town-house, sought as it was by each section, was a contested problem which the liberality and public spirit of the "new town" people speedily solved. But with the possession of these elements of a distinct community, the municipal tie which bound the two sections together was gradually becoming a

<sup>1</sup> Owing to the death of MASON BEN: PERLEY POORE, with whom arrangements had been made to write the history of Newburyport, the material gathered by him was placed at the disposal of the writer and has been freely used in the preparation of the following history—W. T. D.



serious inconvenience to the inhabitants of the new town and an obstacle in the way of their welfare and progress. Not the least of the annoyances which they keenly felt related to the education of their children.

The public-school system had been planted with a firm root in the minds of New England people, but while thickly-settled communities, with the culture and refinement and growing wealth which were more and more characterizing them, greedily sought its advantages and liberally supported it, the more thinly-populated farming districts had not been aroused to its importance, and were reluctant to afford it adequate pecuniary aid. Thus the people of the "Port" were obliged to establish private schools, in order that their children might receive such instructions as a well-organized public-school system ought to furnish, but from which, by the votes of those outside of their immediate boundaries, they were precluded. And aside from all other considerations, seeds of jealousies had been sown and were rapidly growing, and the fruits of these were feelings of hostility and dissension, which could not fail to be fatal to a continuance of municipal sympathies and ties.

Such was the condition of things in 1763, when two hundred and six of the "water side" people presented a petition to the General Court, headed by William Atkins, Daniel Farnham, Michael Dalton, Thomas Woodbridge and Patrick Tracy, to "be set off from Newbury and incorporated a town by themselves." In the following year the General Court passed the following act:

*"Anno Regis Regis Georgii Terti Quinto."*

"An Act For Erecting Part of The Town of Newbury into A New Town By The Name of Newburyport."

"Whereas, The town of Newbury is very large, and the inhabitants of that part of it who dwell by the water side there, as it is commonly called, are mostly merchants, traders and artificers, and the inhabitants of the other part of the town are chiefly husbandmen, by means whereof many difficulties and disputes have arisen in managing their public affairs.

"Be it enacted by the Governor, Council and House of Representatives, That that part of the said town of Newbury and the inhabitants thereof, included within the following lines, viz:

"Beginning at the Merrimack river, against the northeastern end of the town way, commonly called Cattle's Lane, and running as the said Lane doth, on the eastwardly side of it, to the highway commonly called the High Street and so westwardly, as the said highway runs, on the northwardly side thereof, till it comes to a highway known by the name of Fish Street, and thence southwestwardly as the way goes, and on the eastwardly side thereof, leading by Benjamin Moody's to a place called the West Indies, until it intersects a straight line drawn from the southwestwardly side of the highway, against Cattle's Lane, as aforesaid, to a rock in the great pasture, near the dividing line between the third and fifth parishes there, and so as the straight line goes, until it comes to the dividing line aforesaid, from thence as the said dividing line runs by the said fifth parish down to Merrimack river, and thence along said river to the place first mentioned, be, and hereby are constituted and made a separate and distinct town by the name of Newburyport, vested and endowed with all the powers, privileges and immunities that the inhabitants of any of the towns within this province do, or ought by law to enjoy.

"FRANCIS BERNARD, GOVERNOR.

"The twenty-eighth day of January, one thousand seven hundred and sixty-four, *Anno Domini.*"

At the date of its incorporation Newburyport contained a population of twenty-two hundred and eighty-two, and the territory set off by act from Newbury included six hundred and forty-seven acres. The town of Newbury had previously included about thirty thousand acres, and was one of the largest towns in Massachusetts, being about thirteen miles long and about six miles broad in the widest place. But though Newbury was so large, the new incorporated town was the smallest in the State. Of course, as is the case in the division of all towns, there were equitable settlements of privileges and expenses to be made; but these, with the exception of those relating to common lands, which were not affected for many years, were all satisfactorily and speedily adjusted. It is needless in this narrative to enter into the details of the vexed questions concerning these lingering settlements, as they are sufficiently explained in the various published histories, to which the reader has access.

Immediately after the passage of the act of incorporation a warrant was issued, dated Ipswich, January 31, 1764, by John Choat, one of His Majesty's justices of the peace, directed to Daniel Farnham, one of the principal inhabitants, requiring him to call a meeting at the Court-House, on Wednesday, the 8th of February next ensuing at ten o'clock, for the choice of a moderator, town clerk, selectman, treasurer, assessors, overseers of the poor and all other officers. The notification of the meeting was given February 1st, and at the meeting held in pursuance thereof the following officers were chosen:

Moderator, Michael Dalton.  
Selectmen, Stephen Cross, Enoch Titcomb, Jr., Timothy Pike, Daniel Farnham.  
Treasurer, Nathaniel Carter.  
Clerk, Stephen Sewell.  
Assessors, Jonathan Greenleaf, Dudley Atkins, Samuel Greenleaf.  
Overseers of the Poor, Captain Patrick Tracy, Joseph Cottle, Ebenezer Little, Captain Henry Titcomb.  
Constables, John Wyat, Edmund Morse, Jr., Stephen Wyat.  
Fire wards, Edmund Bartlett, Richard Greenleaf, Cutting Bartlett, Jonathan Titcomb, Samuel Gerrish.  
Collectors of Staves and Hoops, Captain Cutting Moody, John Stone, Joseph Stickney.  
Surveyors of Lumber, Isaac Johnson, Francis Hollister, Samuel Gerrish, Ehabel Woodman, Samuel Roff, Samuel Greenleaf, William Harvey, Moses Rogers.  
Collectors of Fish, Jacob Giddins, Caleb Haskell.  
Wardens, Ralph Cross, Cutting Moody, Cutting Bartlett.  
Clerks of Market, Samuel Tuff, Ebenezer Greenleaf, Jeremiah Pearson, Cutting Moody, Captain Wm. Davenport.  
Scalers of Leather, Edmund Bartlett, John Kent.  
Hay-ward, John Harris.  
Surveyors of Highways, Samuel Titcomb, William McHard, Deacon Thomas Moody.  
Hog-receivers, Thomas Bartlett, Enoch Pillsbury, Samuel Toppan, Samuel Roff.  
Fence-viewers, Deacon John Kent, William Price.  
Seder of Weights and Measures, Captain Jeremiah Pearson.  
Informers of Deer, John Hidden.  
To consider Schools and School-houses and Report in March, Nathaniel Carter, Captain Robert Roberts, Captain Cutting Moody, Benjamin Greenleaf, Ralph Cross.

It may not be without interest to present at this point in the narrative lists of those who were chosen





at annual meetings to the various offices of moderator, town clerk, treasurer and selectmen from the date of the above election until the organization of the city government, in 1851. Such lists are often valuable for reference, and need no excuse for their insertion.

### Moderators.

Michael Dalton .....	Feb. 1761	Nicholas Pike .....	1807
Daniel Farnam .....	Mar. 1761	Jonathan Gage .....	1808
Daniel Farnam .....	1765-66	William Bartlett .....	1809
Dudley Atkins .....	1767	Nicholas Pike .....	1810
Daniel Farnam .....	1768-70	Jonathan Gage .....	1811
Jonathan Greenleaf .....	1771	William Bartlett .....	1812
Tristram Dalton .....	1772-73	Daniel A. White .....	1813-14-15-16
Daniel Farnam .....	1774	Ebenezer Mosely .....	1817-18-19
Stephen Cross .....	1775	William B. Brewster .....	1820
John Lowell .....	1776	Ebenezer Mosely .....	1821
Theophilus Parsons .....	1777	Asa W. Wildes .....	1822
Jonathan Titcomb .....	1778-79	Ebenezer Mosely .....	1823
Stephen Cross .....	1780	William Bartlett .....	1824
Jonathan Titcomb .....	1781	Ebenezer Mosely .....	1825
Enoch Titcomb .....	1782	John Merrill .....	1826
Nicholas Pike .....	1783	Ebenezer Bradbury .....	1827
Enoch Titcomb .....	1784	Caleb Cushing .....	1828-29
John Tracy .....	1785	Ebenezer Bradbury .....	1830
Jonathan Titcomb .....	1786-87	Eliaser Johnson .....	1831
John Tracy .....	1788	Caleb Cushing .....	1832
Jonathan Greenleaf .....	1789-91-92	Ebenezer Bradbury .....	1833-84
Nicholas Pike .....	1793-94	Caleb Cushing .....	1835
Jonathan Greenleaf .....	1795	John Merrill .....	1836
John Tracy .....	1796	Caleb Cushing .....	1837
Stephen Cross .....	1797	John Merrill .....	1838-39
Nicholas Pike .....	1798-99	Ebenezer Bradbury .....	1840-41-42
John Tracy .....	1800-01-02	Henry W. Kinsman .....	1843-48-49-50
Enoch Titcomb .....	1803-04	Philip K. Hills .....	1851
Nicholas Pike .....	1805		
William Bartlett .....	1806		

### Town Clerks.

Stephen Sewall .....	1764-75	John Fitz .....	1806-12
Nicholas Pike .....	1776-79	William Work .....	1813-15
Michael Hodge .....	1780-89	Samuel Cutler .....	1816-20
Enoch Titcomb .....	1790-99	Eliaser Johnson .....	1831-34
Robert Long .....	1797-1805		

### Treasurers.

Nathaniel Carter .....	1761-65	Samuel Tenney .....	1811
Daniel Dole .....	1766-67-68	Benjamin Whitmore .....	1812-16
Cutting Moody .....	1768-74	Samuel H. Currier .....	1817-22
David Moody .....	1776-81	John Potter .....	1823-31
Moses Frazier .....	1782	Isaac Stone .....	1832-34
David Moody .....	1784	Moses Merrill .....	1835-36
Enoch Titcomb .....	1784-1810	Jonathan C. Hodge .....	1844-51

### Selectmen.

1764. Stephen Cross.	1767. Dudley Atkins.
Enoch Titcomb, Jr.	Moses Bradstreet.
Timothy Pike.	Benjamin Greenleaf.
Daniel Farnam.	Samuel Greenleaf.
Stephen Cross.	Robert Roberts.
Enoch Titcomb, Jr.	1768. Ralph Cross.
Timothy Pike.	Benjamin Greenleaf.
Daniel Farnam.	John Berry.
William Atkins.	Daniel Farnam.
Benjamin Greenleaf.	Robert Roberts.
1765. John Berry.	1769. Daniel Farnam.
Robert Roberts.	Ralph Cross.
Cutting Moody.	John Berry.
Ebenezer Little.	William Atkins.
1766. Daniel Farnam.	Edmund Bartlett.
Robert Roberts.	1770. Ebenezer Greenleaf.
Benjamin Greenleaf.	Daniel Dole.
John Sprague.	Cutting Bartlett.
John Berry.	1771. Tristram Dalton.

John Lowell.	1789. Thomas Thompson.
Matthew Perkins.	Benjamin Balch.
John Stickney.	Wm. P. Johnson.
David Moody.	Edward Rand.
1772. Benjamin Greenleaf.	Joseph Noyes.
Tristram Dalton.	1790. Joseph Noyes.
John Lowell.	Edward Rand.
Stephen Cross.	Wm. Pierce Johnson.
Abel Greenleaf.	John O'Brien.
1773. John Stickney.	Nicholas Johnson.
Richard Smith.	1791. Joseph Noyes.
Jonathan Titcomb.	J. O'Brien.
Matthew Perkins.	Nicholas Johnson.
1774. Tristram Dalton.	Anthony Davenport.
Benjamin Greenleaf.	Henry Hudson.
Jonathan Titcomb.	1792. Moses Hoyt.
Stephen Cross.	Anthony Davenport.
John Lowell.	Henry Hudson.
1775. Richard Smith.	J. O'Brien.
Benjamin Greenleaf.	Nathaniel Carter.
Stephen Cross.	1793. John Mycail.
Jonathan Titcomb.	Moses Hoyt.
John Lowell.	Bishop Norton.
1776. John Lowell.	Thomas Thompson.
Tristram Dalton.	Joshua Carter.
Abel Greenleaf.	1794. Nathan Hoyt.
Jonathan Marsh.	John Pettingel.
Moses Little.	John Mycail.
1777. Jonathan Titcomb.	Bishop Norton.
Abel Greenleaf.	Joshua Carter.
Moses Little.	1795. John Mycail.
Samuel Tufts.	Joshua Carter.
Jacob Boardman.	Wm. Noyes.
1778. Jonathan Titcomb.	John Pettingel.
Abel Greenleaf.	Theophilus Bradbury, Jr.
Moses Little.	1796. John Pettingel.
Samuel Tufts.	Theophilus Bradbury.
Moses Frazier.	Daniel Horton.
1779. Same.	Ebenezer Stocker.
1780. Jonathan Titcomb.	Gilman White.
Abel Greenleaf.	1797. Theophilus Bradbury.
Nathaniel Tracy.	John Pettingel.
Samuel Tufts.	Abraham Wheelright.
Moses Frazier.	Gilman White.
1781. Same.	Eben Stocker.
1782. Enoch Titcomb.	1798. Abraham Wheelright.
Nathaniel Tracy.	Leonard Smith.
Moses Brown.	Samuel A. Otis.
Nicholas Pike.	John Pearson, Jr.
Jonathan Mullikin.	Charles C. Raboteau.
1783. Joseph Moulton.	1799. Charles C. Raboteau.
Edward Wigglesworth.	Jonathan Gage.
David Coats.	Wm. Weyer, Jr.
Michael Hodge.	Thomas M. Clark.
Wm. Coombs.	James Prace.
1784. Edward Wigglesworth.	1800. Nehemiah Haskell.
David Coats.	John B. Titcomb.
Wm. Coombs.	John Fitz.
Michael Hodge.	Alexander Caldwell.
Wm. Bartlett.	Moses Hoyt.
1785. Same.	1801. Moses Brown.
1786. Jonathan Titcomb.	Wm. Bartlett.
Moses Frazier.	Nicholas Johnson.
David Moody.	Abner Wood.
John Fletcher.	Benjamin Balch.
Joseph Huse.	1802. Abner Wood.
1787. Joseph Huse.	Israel Young.
Joshua Titcomb.	Jonathan Gage.
Benjamin Balch.	Anthony Davenport.
Henry Hudson.	John Greenleaf.
Stephen Cross.	1803. Same.
1788. Jonathan Titcomb.	1804. Samuel French.
Stephen Cross.	Joshua Toppin.
John Tracy.	Benjamin Wyatt.
Moses Brown.	Gilman White.
Josiah Smith.	Edward Little.





1805. Same.	1821. Stephen W. Marston. Daniel Swett. Wm. Cross. Philip Coombs. James Prince.	1837. Nathaniel Horton. John N. Cushing. Chas. H. Balch. Henry Merrill. Jeremiah Colburn.	Wm. Nichols. Edward Tappan, Jr. John Pearson.
1806. Zebedee Cook. John Peabody. David Collin, Jr. Samuel Foster, Jr. Robert Foster.	1822. Stephen W. Marston. Philip Coombs. Ebenezer Wheelright. John Wood. Anthony Smith.	1838. Nathaniel Foster. John Burrill, Jr. John Pearson. Wm. D. Lankester. John M. Cooper.	1841. John Pearson. Edward Tappan. Wm. Nichols. Moses Davenport. John Burrill, Jr.
1807. Abraham Perkins. Samuel H. Foster. Zebedee Cook. John Peabody. Robert Foster.	1823. Philip Coombs. Ebenezer Wheelright. Anthony Smith. Ebenezer Mosely. Wm. Davis.	1839. John Merrill. Stephen Caldwell. Isaac Pearson. Anthony Knap. Jacob Horton.	1845. Wm. Nichols. John Pearson. Edward Tappan, Jr. John Burrill. John Huse.
1808. Zebedee Cook. Abraham Perkins. Daniel A. White. Stephen Holland. Amos Tappan.	1824. Ebenezer Mosely. Ebenezer Wheelright. Philip Coombs. Anthony Smith. Wm. Davis.	1840. Thos. Buntin. Moses Merrill. Isaac H. Boardman. Wm. Moody. Moses Davenport, Jr.	1846. Chas. French. Henry Johnson. John Stone. Nathaniel Horton. Isaac Stevens.
1809. Jeremiah Nelson. Amos Tappan. Sewall Tappan. Daniel A. White. Stephen Holland.	1825. John Wells, Jr. Samuel S. Plummer. Asa W. Wildes. Whittingham Gilman. Green Sanborn.	1841. Thos. Buntin. Moses Merrill. Isaac H. Boardman. Ezra Hunt. Moses Davenport, Jr.	1847. Same. 1848. Thos. Davis. Albert Currier. Henry Johnson. Robert Bayley, Jr. Nathaniel Horton
1810. Jeremiah Nelson. Sewall Tappan. Stephen Holland. Wm. Warr. Jacob Stone.	1826. Samuel S. Plummer. Asa W. Wildes. Whittingham Gilman. Green Sanborn. John Cook, Jr.	1842. Moses Merrill. Geo. Emery. Samuel Currier. Edward Tappan, Jr. John Pearson.	1849. Same. 1850. Same. 1851. Nathaniel Horton Henry Johnson. John M. Cooper. Samuel Phillips. Samuel T. Payson.
1811. Jeremiah Nelson. Jacob Stone. Isaac Adams. Eliaser Johnson. Nicholas Johnson, Jr.	1827. Asa W. Wildes. John Cook, Jr. Thomas Buntin. John S. Pearson. Moses Merrill.	1843. Moses Merrill. Geo. Emery.	
1812. Isaac Adams. Nicholas Johnson. Eliaser Johnson. Ebenezer Mosely. George Jenkins.	1828. John Cook, Jr. Thomas Buntin. Moses Merrill. Charles H. Balch. Caleb Cushing.		
1813. Ebenezer Mosely. George Jenkins. Isaac Stone. Edward S. Rand. Joshua Greenleaf.	1829. Charles H. Balch. Eben Stone. Samuel T. DeFord. Henry Frothingham. Henry Merrill.		
1814. Joshua Greenleaf. Isaac Stone. Edward S. Rand. Wm. B. Bonmister. Allen Dodge.	1830. Charles H. Balch. Eben Stone. Samuel T. DeFord. Henry Frothingham. Henry Merrill.		
1815. Joshua Greenleaf. John Wood. Edward S. Rand. Wm. B. Bonmister. Allen Dodge.	1831. Charles H. Balch. Eben Stone. Henry Johnson. Nathaniel Horton. Tristram Collin (3d).		
1816. Wm. B. Bonmister. Richard Bartlett. Philip Coombs. Edwara Bartlett. Othnah Horton.	1832. Chas. H. Balch. Stephen Tilton. Henry Johnson. Nathaniel Horton. Tristram Collin (3d).		
1817. Ebenezer Mosely. Abraham Williams. Robert Clark. Thomas M. Clark. Jacob Stone.	1833. Chas. H. Balch. Stephen Tilton. Richard Stone. Jos. George. Ebenezer Bradbury.		
1818. Richard Bartlett. Stephen Howard. Arthur Gilman. Samuel Emerson. John Swett.	1834. Jos. George. Moses Merrill. Collin Boardman. Stephen Frothingham. Nathaniel Jackson.		
1819. Samuel Emerson. Arthur Gilman. Prescott Spalding. Stephen W. Marston. Daniel Swett.	1835. Eben Stone. John N. Cushing. Chas. H. Balch. Henry Merrill. Jeremiah Colburn.		
1820. Stephen W. Marston. Daniel Swett. Wm. Cross. Joseph O'Brien. James Prince.	1836. Same.		
		1764. Daniel Larnham. 1765. Dudley Atkins. 1766. Benj. Greenleaf. 1767. Benj. Greenleaf. 1768. Benj. Greenleaf. 1769. Jonathan Greenleaf. 1770. Benj. Greenleaf. 1771. Jonathan Greenleaf. 1772. Jonathan Greenleaf. 1773. Jonathan Greenleaf. 1774. Jonathan Greenleaf. 1775. Jonathan Greenleaf. Stephen Cross. Benj. Greenleaf, excused. 1776. Jonathan Jackson. Tristram Dalton. John Lowell. Moses Little. 1777. Jonathan Greenleaf. Jonathan Jackson. Stephen Cross. Moses Frazier. Jacob Boardman. 1778. Jonathan Greenleaf. Stephen Cross. Jonathan Titcomb. Moses Frazier. Wm. Coombs.	1779. Jonathan Greenleaf. Jonathan Titcomb. Stephen Cross. Theophilus Parsons. 1780. Jonathan Greenleaf. Jonathan Titcomb. 1781. Jonathan Titcomb. Nathaniel Tracy. Moses Frazier. 1782. Nathaniel Tracy. Jonathan Titcomb. Tristram Dalton. 1783. Jonathan Titcomb. Stephen Cross. 1784. Tristram Dalton. Rufus King. Edward Wigglesworth. Rufus King. Tristram Dalton. 1786. Jonathan Titcomb. Stephen Cross. 1787. Daniel Kilham. 1788. Jonathan Greenleaf. Theophilus Parsons. Wm. Coombs. Jonathan Marsh. 1789. Wm. Coombs. Theophilus Parsons.

The following is a list of Newburyport members of the General Court and of the Provincial Congress, chosen in the years set against their names. From 1858 to 1867 Newburyport formed parts of three Representative Districts,—Amesbury, Salisbury and Ward 6 formed the First Essex District, Wards 1 and 2 the Eighteenth Essex District and Wards 3, 4 and 5 the Nineteenth Essex District. From 1867 to 1877 Newburyport and Newbury formed the Sixth Essex District, and since 1877 they have formed the Sixteenth Essex District:



Jonathan Marsh.	Wm. B. Bannister.	Solomon H. Currier.	1835. ———
1790. Jonathan Greenleaf.	Isaac Adams.	1836. Isaac Stone.	1860. Frederick J. Coffin.
Thasophilus Parsons.	Samuel Newman	Charles H. Balch.	George Goodwin.
Jonathan Marsh.	Wm. Chase.	George Lunt	Joshua Hale.
1791. Same.	Samuel L. Knapp.	1837. Joseph B. Morse.	181. Albert Currier.
1792. Enoch Titcomb.	1813. Same, without Mr. Gunnison.	1838. Joseph B. Morse.	Caleb Cushing.
Stephen Cross.	1814. Same, without Mr. Bannister.	Henry W. Kinsman.	1862. John D. Pike.
Josiah Smith.	1815. Jonathan Gage.	Thomas M. Clark.	Caleb Cushing.
1793. Enoch Titcomb.	Stephen Howard.	Samuel L. Plummer.	George J. George.
1794. Same.	Isaac Adams.	1839. Joseph B. Morse.	1863. George Goodwin.
1795. Same.	Samuel L. Knapp.	James Blood.	Albert W. Stevens.
1796. Same.	Wm. Chase, Jr.	Joseph Couch.	1864. Henry W. Moulton.
1797. Same.	Ebenezer Mosely.	1840. Ebenezer Bradbury.	Thomas C. Goodwin.
1798. Same.	Edward S. Rand.	Frederick I. Coffin.	Albert W. Stevens.
1799. Enoch Titcomb.	1816. Same, with Wm. Chase in	George Lunt	1865. Thomas C. Goodwin.
Wm. Coombs.	place of Wm. Chase, Jr.	1841. Wm. Davis.	Richard S. Spofford, Jr.
Jonathan Marsh.	1817. Ebenezer Mosely.	Isaac H. Boardman.	1866. Eben F. Stone.
Joshua Carter.	Stephen Howard.	Henry C. Perkins.	Rufus Adams.
1800. Same.	1818. Same.	1842. John M. Cooper.	George W. Woodwell.
1801. Enoch Titcomb.	1819. Abner Wood.	Edward Toppau, Jr.	George W. Woodwell.
Wm. Coombs.	Ebenezer Mosely.	Nathaniel Foster.	Rufus Adams.
Jonathan Marsh.	George Jenkins.	1843. Isaac H. Boardman.	1868. David T. Woodwell.
Wm. Bartlett.	Stephen Howard.	Ebenezer Bradbury.	Horace Chaate.
1802. William Coombs.	Stephen W. Marston.	Charles H. Balch.	Joseph N. Roffo.
Jonathan Marsh.	Edward S. Rand.	1844. Frederick I. Coffin.	David T. Woodwell.
William Bartlett.	1820. Stephen Howard.	John Coombs.	Horace Chaate.
George Bradbury.	Stephen W. Marston.	Benjamin R. Knapp.	George J. L. Colby.
1803. Jonathan Marsh.	1821. Stephen W. Marston.	1845. None.	1870. George J. L. Colby.
Jeremiah Nelson.	Abner Wood.	1846. Ebenezer Bradbury.	Nathaniel Pierce.
Nicholas Johnson.	1822. Same.	Caleb Cushing.	Moses H. Fowler.
Thomas Carter.	1823. John Merrill.	1847. Ebenezer Bradbury.	1871. Robert Couch.
Thos. M. Clark.	John Coffin.	1848. Ebenezer Bradbury.	George W. Clark.
Mark Fitz.	1824. Same.	Henry W. Kinsman.	Wm. Cushing.
1804. Same.	1825. Ebenezer Shillaber.	Ralph C. Huse.	1872. Robert Couch.
1805. Jonathan Marsh.	John Coffin.	1849. Jeremiah Colman.	George W. Clark.
Nicholas Pike.	Caleb Cushing.	Ralph C. Huse.	Benjamin C. Currier.
Andrew Frothingham.	1826. John Toppau.	Mark Symons.	1873. Benjamin C. Currier.
Bishop Norton.	Robert Cross.	1850. Jeremiah Colman.	Joseph B. Morse.
Ed. St. Lee Livermore.	1827. Wm. Farris.	Edward Toppau, Jr.	Edbridge G. Kelley.
Edward Little.	Stephen W. Marston.	Isaac Stevens.	1874. Benjamin C. Currier.
Jonathan Gage.	1828. Wm. Farris.	1851. Isaac H. Boardman.	Michael Atkisson.
1806. Jonathan Gage.	Caleb Cushing.	Moses Davenport.	1875. Caleb B. Huse.
Edward Little.	Ebenezer Bradbury.	Amos Wood.	Michael Atkisson.
Ed. St. Lee Livermore.	Stephen W. Marston.	1852. Wm. E. Currier.	1876. Eben F. Stone.
Mark Fitz.	Whittingham Gilman.	Moses Davenport.	Caleb B. Huse.
Andrew Frothingham.	1829. Wm. Farris.	Amos Wood.	1877. Eben F. Stone.
Stephen Howard.	Charles H. Balch.	1853. Wm. E. Currier.	John W. Ricker.
John Pearson.	Stephen W. Marston.	Henry W. Kinsman.	1878. Benjamin F. Atkisson.
1807. Same, without Mr. Livermore.	Abner Wood.	Amos Wood.	Samson Levy.
1808. Mark Fitz.	Henry Frothingham.	1854. Wm. H. Huse.	1879. Eben F. Stone.
Jonathan Gage.	Wm. S. Allen.	Daniel M. Reed.	Amos Coffin.
Andrew Frothingham.	1830. Same, with George Lunt	Joshua D. Robinson.	1880. Amos Coffin.
John Pearson.	and Ebenezer Bradbury in	1855. Joshua D. Robinson.	Edward P. Shaw.
Stephen Howard.	place of Wm. S. Allen and	Daniel M. Reed.	1881. John P. Coombs.
Thos. M. Clark.	Abner Wood.	Wm. H. Huse.	Edward P. Shaw.
Abner Wood.	1831. Charles H. Balch.	1856. Thomas Atwood.	1882. John P. Coombs.
John Peabody.	Wm. Farris.	Harvey Kimball.	Thomas C. Simpson.
1809. Same, with Joseph Dana in	Thos. M. Clark.	David Wood.	1883. Henry M. Cross.
place of Mr. Clark.	William Davis.	1857. Caleb Cushing.	George P. Bishop.
1810. Mark Fitz.	Wm. S. Allen.	R. S. Spofford, Jr.	1884. Henry M. Cross.
Andrew Frothingham.	1832. Caleb Cushing.	Wm. S. Allen.	Willard J. Hale.
Jonathan Gage.	Charles H. Balch.	Winthrop O. Evans.	1885. Edward A. Mosely.
Stephen Howard.	Wm. S. Allen.	R. S. Spofford, Jr.	Daniel M. Felch.
John Peabody.	Wm. Davis.	1859. Enoch S. Williams.	1886. Daniel M. Felch.
Joseph Dana.	Moses P. Patish.	John Woodwell.	Edward A. Mosely.
Ebenezer Gunnison.	Wm. Farris.		
Samuel H. Foster.	1833. Same, with Ebenezer Mosely		
Wm. B. Bannister.	in place of Mr. Parish.		
1811. Same, with Isaac Stone and	1834. Ebenezer Mosely.		
Isaac Adams in place of	Charles H. Balch.		
Mr. Dana and Mr. Peabody.	Wm. S. Allen.		
1812. Jonathan Gage.	Wm. Davis.		
Stephen Howard.	Tristram Coffin.		
Ebenezer Gunnison.			

Newburyport entered its municipal life at a critical period. The committee chosen at the meeting in February, 1764, to consider the question of public schools, reported recommendations to the town in March, and these were no sooner adopted and the machinery of town government put in motion, than the popular mind became absorbed by anxiety con-





cerning the condition of public affairs. The spark of liberty, which was kindled by the unfriendly attitude and acts of Parliament and the crown, was destined to burst into a consuming flame. No small part of the capital of the merchants was invested in trade with the French and Spanish West Indies, and large importations of sugar and molasses were constantly received, giving occupation to many mechanics and laborers and adding wealth and prosperity to the town. During the first year after the incorporation of Newburyport, heavy duties were imposed on these articles, and British naval officers were made officers of revenue to enforce with vigor the revenue laws. Thus a serious check was given to a trade before large and prosperous, and the first of a series of misfortunes was experienced, which only the close of a long and disheartening war partially terminated. In the next year the Stamp Act was passed. Under the provisions of this act no writing was valid which did not bear a stamp on its face. Every deed, ship's clearance, will, contract and other papers entering into the business of every-day life required a stamp varying in price from a half-penny to six pounds. The indignation of the colonies at this infringement on their rights was so strong, that before any stamps were paid for or used in Newburyport, the obnoxious act was repealed. The bitter opposition of the citizens of the young town to this act was displayed to a marked degree. By the more excited it manifested itself in noisy demonstrations and in hanging and burning the effigy of the stamp distributor. By the wiser and more calm efforts were made, through legitimate channels, to convince the government of the inexpediency and injustice of the act and the necessity of its immediate abrogation. A town-meeting was held on the 21st of October, 1765, and an address to Dudley Atkins, the representative of Newburyport to the General Court, was adopted, with instructions as to his course of action in the premises, of which the following are extracts:

"We have the most loyal sentiments of our gracious King and his illustrious family; we have the highest reverence and esteem for that most august body, the Parliament of Great Britain; and we have an ardent affection for our brethren at home; we have always regarded their interests as our own, and esteemed our own prosperity as necessarily united with theirs. Hence it is that we have the greatest concern that those measures adopted by the late ministry and some late acts of Parliament, which we apprehend in their tendency will deprive us of some of our essential and high-prized liberties. The Stamp Act, in a peculiar manner, we esteem a grievance, as by it we are subjected to a heavy tax to which are annexed very severe penalties, and the recovery of forfeitures, incurred by the breach of it, is in a manner which the English constitution abhors, that is, without a trial by jury, and in a court of admiralty. That a people should be taxed at the will of another, whether of one man or many, without their consent in person or by representative, is rank slavery. . . . The embarrassments on our trade are great, and the scarcity of cash arising therefrom is such that by the execution of the Stamp Act we should be drained in a very little time of that medium, the consequence of which is, that our commerce must stagnate and our laborers starve.

"These, sir, are our sentiments on this occasion; nor can we think that the distresses we have painted are the creatures of our imagination. . . . We, therefore, the freeholders and other inhabitants of this town, being legally assembled, take this opportunity to declare our just

expectations from you, which are—That you will, to the utmost of your ability, use your influence in the General Assembly that the rights and privileges of this Province may be preserved inviolate; and that the sacred deposit we have received from our ancestors may be handed down, without infringement, to our posterity of the latest generations; That you endeavor that all measures, consistent with our loyalty to the best of Kings, may be taken to prevent the execution of the above grievous innovations, and that the repeal of the Stamp Act may be obtained by a most dutiful and, at the same time, most spirited remonstrance against it; That you do not consent to any new or unprecedented grants, but endeavor that the greatest frugality and economy may take place on the distribution of the public monies, remembering the great expense this war has involved us in, and the debt incurred thereby which remains undischarged; That you will consult and promote such measures as may be necessary, in this difficult time, to prevent the course of justice from being stayed and the commerce of the Province standing still; That, if occasion shall offer, you bear testimony in behalf of this town against all seditious and mobbish insurrections and express our abhorrence of all breaches of the peace, and that you will readily concur in any constitutional measures that may be necessary to secure the public tranquillity."

But confidence and peace of mind did not long continue after the repeal of the Stamp Act. The government at home had learned nothing from the lesson which the history of that act should have taught. In 1767 a tax was laid by Parliament on paper, glass, painters' colors, tea and other merchandise, and the old spirit of opposition to injustice and oppression was again aroused in the province. The tax on tea was especially obnoxious, as that was an article of every day household use, and was felt by every man and woman in every town alike. It is a story of tradition, though not of definite history, that the first destruction of tea took place in Newburyport, and that a considerable quantity was seized and burned in Market Square under the direction of Eleazer Johnson, a prominent ship-builder of the time.

But neither did the cupidity for the importation of tea cease nor its continued destruction, as the following protest from the Committee of Safety, presented to the town in 1775, will show:

"To the Inhabitants of Newburyport in Town meeting assembled.

"Gentlemen,—Your Committee of Safety, who are also appointed a Committee of Inspection to see that the Resolves of the Continental Congress are carried into execution, have, with constancy and cheerfulness, attended on the duties of their appointment, being sensible of the importance of the Trust reposed in them, and they hope the Town in general have approved of their conduct. They have met with only one obstruction in their proceedings, which they think needful to lay before you, as their future influence and determination depend on the sentiments of the Town thereon. Some time ago a small quantity of tea was brought in here in violation of the Continental Association, which the Committee took into their custody and had deposited in the Powder House in order that it might be kept secure until the Town or the Committee should determine something further respecting it, but before there was an opportunity therefore, some of our inhabitants, in a very sudden and hasty manner, laid hands on it and destroyed it. Now, your Committee apprehend that it will be very unsafe for them to take into their care any kind of goods that may in future be introduced in the like disorderly manner, provided they must be exposed to the same fate. Wherefore they desire the opinion of the Town upon the matter.

"By order of the Committee.

"EDW. HARRIS, Clerk."

In response to the imposition of these new taxes the Boston merchants proposed, in a circular sent to the various seaport towns, a non-importation agreement. An answer to this circular, written by



John Lowell, was adopted at a town-meeting held March 10, 1768, of which the following is a copy:

"The Committee beg leave to report, that they are of opinion that the subjects therein contained deserve the most serious attention of the town in particular, as well as of the public in general. This town has been in a great measure supported for many years past by the building of ships, which have been purchased mostly by the inhabitants, and for the use of Great Britain. The manner in which we have been paid for our ships has been mainly by British manufactures. So that the importation and purchase of these, and our staple business, if we may so express it, have been almost inseparably united. It is with the greatest difficulty that a number of people, who have for the most part of their lives been used to a particular employment, can suddenly strike into a new channel, and carry on a business to which they have always been strangers.

"Hence, though we highly respect the town of Boston for its zealous attachment to the liberties of the country, and are ready to assist them in all measures to which prudence may direct, we cannot think it can consist with the prudence and policy of this town to join in their particular resolutions respecting the importation and purchase of the enumerated articles of British manufacture. And not only from this principle, but from one less selfish, we cannot wish that the frequent and mutual intercourse which has hitherto subsisted between Great Britain and us should abate. 'Tis but of late that we regarded Great Britain with all the respectful affection of a child to its parent, and though by some late measures, which we conceive to be highly misjudged, there seems to have arisen a cloud, which obscures the true interests of the nation from the eyes of those at the helm, we cannot but expect as well as impatiently desire, that it will be soon removed, and a mutual confidence be established on the firmest foundation.

"In the meantime, as jealousy, in a constitution like the British, is the great preserving principle, we think it necessary to be watchful against any encroachments on our rights as Englishmen and freemen, and to be uniformly and resolutely determined that these shall not be infringed, while our fortunes, or even our lives continue."

The tone of both the instructions to Dudley Atkins concerning the Stamp Act and the above answer to the circular of the Boston merchants concerning non-importation displays the cautious, conservative spirit prevailing in Newburyport. This spirit no doubt had its root in the large material interests whose welfare or ruin depended on the solution of the great question of the time. But the vital importance of those interests to the prosperity of the town and the comfort of its people emphasizes the unselfish patriotism which finally settled the question, by the sacrifice of business and wealth to the great principle of popular freedom.

As in every great crisis, there was a tide which seemed to have a power and will of its own, and the tide which was now at the flood was setting with resistless force and breaking down all barriers which prudence or conservatism might impose. The Home Government, performing unconsciously its part in the great movement which Providence was directing, towards the establishment of a free popular government, persisted in its policy, and in the autumn of 1768 non-importation was agreed on by the merchants of the province. At a meeting held on the 4th of September, 1769, the town approved of the agreement, and voted to further and maintain the same and to consider any person who should evade it an enemy to his country. In March, 1770, it was voted by the town not to buy or use any foreign tea; in January, 1773, Jonathan Greenleaf, the representative to the General Court, was instructed "to use his utmost endeavors

to procure a full and complete redress of all our public grievances;" in December, 1775, a letter to the Boston Committee of Correspondence was adopted in town meeting, assuring them of assistance and support, and finally in May, 1776, the town voted "That if the honorable Congress should, for the safety of the United Colonies, declare them independent of the Kingdom of Great Britain, this town will with their lives and fortunes support them in the measure."

Thus Newburyport and its people floated with the tide. Along the seaboard of Massachusetts, notwithstanding the great interests which needed to be sacrificed, there was no town so free from Loyalists or Tories, as they were called. Indeed, Newburyport was a striking exception to the rule, so far as seaports were concerned. Boston and Salem and Ipswich had their numerous Loyalists, and it is said that in Plymouth, where the business of its merchants was very similar to that of those in Newburyport, James Warren was almost the only man of social standing who was an outspoken and active supporter of the Revolutionary movement. In Marshfield the loyal feeling was sufficiently strong at first to control the actions and votes of its town-meetings, and on the 20th of February, 1775, it was voted "not to adhere to or be bound by the resolves and recommendations of the Concord Provincial Congress or any illegal assemblies whatever."

But in Newburyport it has never been claimed that more than four persons were tainted with loyalty, and neither of these was a merchant. These were Daniel Farnam, Bishop Edward Bass, Dr. Jones and a man by the name of Frye. Frye left the country and went to Scotland; the bishop and Dr. Jones took the oath of allegiance, or gave satisfaction to the Committee of Correspondence, and Col. Farnam remained the only prominent and confessed Loyalist in the town. The charge of loyalty against Bishop Edward Bass has never been proved. Hon. Eben F. Stone has discovered in a collection of old papers, which he has had an opportunity to examine, evidence both for and against the charge. In an old letter written by Henry Atkins, an officer of the Newburyport Custom-House, in the service of the crown, his loyalty is strongly claimed; on the other hand, a letter dated May 24, 1783, from Col. Peter Frye, a graduate of Harvard, and for many years a resident of Ipswich, then living as a refugee Loyalist at the Middlesex Hospital, Suffolk County, England, states that it was said by the people of Newburyport, after the death of Col. Farnam, that the town was purified and had not a Loyalist in it. A letter from Samuel Peters, dated June 19, 1783, says that Messerve, collector of Portsmouth, and Samuel Porter, a lawyer of Salem, "agree that there never was known to be in Newburyport more than four loyal subjects, one of whom went off to Scotland, Col. Farnam was killed by the rebels, Mr. Bass and Dr. Jones gave satisfaction to the rebels and remained there."

At any rate, Edward Bass, the bishop was, suspected. He was at that time, however, not a bishop, but





rector of St. Paul's Church. He was born in Dorchester, November 23, 1726, and graduated at Harvard in 1744. He taught school after his graduation until 1747, and then pursued the study of theology until 1751. In 1752 he became the associate of Rev. Matthias Plant at St. Paul's, and went to London, where he was ordained by Dr. Sherlock, then bishop of London, and returned at once to begin his pastoral work. In 1789 the University of Pennsylvania conferred on him the degree of Doctor of Divinity, and in 1796 he was unanimously chosen at a convention of the Protestant Episcopal Churches of Massachusetts to be their bishop. He was consecrated May 7, 1797, by the bishops of Pennsylvania, New York and Maryland, and at a later date was chosen also bishop of the Episcopal Churches of Rhode Island and New Hampshire. He died in Newburyport September 10, 1803, having served as rector of St. Paul's fifty-one years.

Daniel Farnham or Farnham, the only unqualified Loyalist in the town, was born in York, Maine, in 1719. He was a son of Daniel Farnham, a native of Andover, Massachusetts, and was fitted for college by Rev. Samuel Moody, of York, who was a lineal descendant of Caleb Moody, of Newburyport. Mr. Farnham graduated at Harvard in 1739 and studied law with Edmund Trowbridge, who was considered the best lawyer of his time, and who held a seat on the bench of the Superior Court of Judicature from 1767 until his resignation, in 1775. In July, 1740, soon after his graduation, he married Sybil, daughter of Rev. Samuel Angier, of Watertown, and granddaughter of Rev. Urian Oakes, president of Harvard College from April 5, 1675, to July 2, 1681. After his admission to practice he removed to Newburyport, or, as it then was, the "Port" of Newbury, and began his professional life. It is believed that at that time there was no lawyer east of Salem. He was a man of great industry and boundless activity, both controlling a large professional business and taking a leading part in the direction and management of public affairs. About 1750 he bought a lot of land of Abiel Somerby, where the Kelley school-house now stands, and there erected a large square dwelling-house in the style of the colonial period. It stood a little back from the street, with three fine elm-trees in front, and the garden was inclosed by a solid brick wall, which gave a substantial appearance to the whole estate.

Col. Farnham was a public-spirited man, and was at the head of every important improvement in and about his adopted town. He was one of the leading signers to the petition for the incorporation of Newburyport, the person to whom the warrant for its first town-meeting was directed, the moderator of its first annual meeting, and the chairman of its first Board of Selectmen. Hon. Eben F. Stone, from whose manuscript sketch of Col. Farnham the writer has already freely drawn, says that,

"In the early special meetings of the town relating to the stamp act

and other measures of England to extort a revenue from the colonies, before all hope of a peaceable adjustment of the controversy was abandoned, he took an active and important part. But when the opposition of the Province to the policy of the Crown had passed the point consistent with loyalty, and every citizen was compelled to choose between two courses, neither of which was free from doubt and peril, Col. Farnham, like the great majority of those who were well situated under the subsisting relations between the Colonies and the Government of England, and who could find in the alleged grievances no sufficient excuse for disloyalty or rebellion, remained true to his principles and stood by the King. Ardent, high-spirited and impetuous, he disdained to yield to the suggestions of prudence, which controlled the conduct of some of his friends, and boldly denounced the leading wings and liberty men as law-breakers and rebels."

He died at his home in May, 1776. The suggestion that he was killed by the rebels is sufficiently silenced by the following letter written by his son-in-law, Dr. Micajah Sawyer, to another son-in-law, Rev. Mr. Weld, of Braintree:

"NEWBURYPORT, 18 May, 1777.

"DEAR SIR,—By this I am to inform you of the dreadful news of the death of your late honored father, Col. Farnham, after a short sickness, in which the symptoms were violent and the progress irresistibly rapid; for a more particular account I must refer you to Dr. Smith.

\* \* \* \* \*

"M. SAWYER."

Before the exigencies of the Revolutionary period had actually arisen, the town had gone on perfecting the operations of its municipal machinery and was in a good condition to meet the storm. A little dissatisfaction, however, with the new state of things, had occasionally existed and several feeble attempts were made to bring about a re-union with Newbury. On one of the trials of the question in town-meeting, fifty-two were found to vote in the affirmative out of a total of three hundred and fourteen. It is a singular fact that, at a town-meeting held in January, 1773, it was voted to change the name of the town to "Portland," what is now "Portland" being then "Falmouth," and that the vote has never been either taken any notice of nor repealed. In 1774 the first stage-coach in the country, drawn by four horses, was established by Ezra Lunt, connecting with Boston by the way of Salem and making three trips per week.

On the 23d of September, 1774, a Committee of Safety and Correspondence was appointed by the town, consisting of the following gentlemen:

Hon. Benjamin Greenleaf.	Capt. Jonathan Greenleaf.
Patrick Tracy, Esquire.	Dr. Micajah Sawyer.
Dr. John Sprague.	Mr. David Moody.
William Atkins, Esquire.	Mr. John Bromfield.
Capt. James Hudson.	Mr. John Stone.
Mr. Edmund Bartlett.	Major William Coffin.
Mr. Ralph Cross, Jr.	Capt. Thomas Thomas.
Tristram Dalton, Esq.	Capt. Joseph Huse.
Mr. Edward Harris.	Capt. Samuel Batchelor.
Mr. Enoch Titcomb, Jr.	Mr. Moses Nowell.
Capt. Jacob Boardman.	Mr. Jonathan Jackson.
Mr. William Teel.	Mr. Richard Titcomb.
Mr. Samuel Tufts.	Mr. John Herbert.
Capt. Moses Rogers.	Mr. Moses Frazier.
Mr. Jonathan Marsh.	Capt. Nicholas Tracy.

The seizure of the public stores at Concord by the British troops and the battle of Lexington were finally the signal for action. On the receipt of the





news at Newburyport, Capt. Moses Nowell at once mustered his company of militia and started at eleven o'clock at night to render assistance. Their service was probably only for a few days. The members of this company were as follows:

Moses Nowell, capt.  
Benjamin Perkins, lieutenant.  
Elias Davis, sergeant.  
Stephen Jenkins, lieutenant.  
Paul Lunt, sergeant.  
Timothy Earl, sergeant.  
William Auer, sergeant.  
Samuel Clark, sergeant.

Moses Pike, corp.  
Nathaniel Tilton, corp.  
Nathaniel Montgomery, corp.  
Samuel Foster, corp.  
Benjamin Pearson, drum, and fife.  
Richard Hale, drum, and fife.  
Caleb Haskell, drum, and fife.

*Privates.*

Joseph Cross.  
John Somerby.  
John Wyatt.  
Wm. Shackford.  
Ethan Pittingel.  
Timothy Palmer.  
Michael Tappan.  
Moses Kimball.  
Thomas Haynes.  
Moses Pidgeon.  
John Brett.  
John Chase.  
John Buckland.  
Wm. Merritt.  
Joseph Teel.  
Thomas Gould.  
Joseph Somerby.  
Samuel Davis.  
Thomas Merrill.  
David Rogers.  
Moses Newman.  
Edward Tappan.  
Benjamin Perkins, Jr.  
John Adams.  
Ethan Morse.  
Richard Titcomb.  
Samuel Wyatt.  
Wm. Holladay.  
Hazen Greenleaf.  
Moses Greenleaf.  
John Little.  
Nathaniel Mitchell.  
William Hazeltine.  
Thomas Boardman.  
John C. Roberts.  
Joseph Somerby, Jr.  
Enoch Moody.  
Benjamin Eaton.  
Silas Parker.  
John Cook.  
Amos Pearson.  
Wm. Stickney.  
Stephen Morse.  
John Sleeper.  
Thomas Hammond.  
Thomas Merrill.  
Jonathan Dole.  
Wm. Damon.  
Jesse Amory.  
John Perry.  
Henry W. Times.  
Thomas Frothingham.  
Samuel Nowell.  
John Pittingel.  
Thomas Leigh.  
Jacob Knapp.  
Benjamin Greenleaf.  
Thomas Gardner.

John Kettle.  
Joseph Teel.  
Stephen Giddins.  
John Stickney.  
Joshua Mitchell.  
John Hammond.  
Nathaniel Warner.  
Isaac Frothingham.  
Zebulon Titcomb.  
Jonathan Carter.  
John Ward Brown.  
Jonathan Plumer.  
Michael Titcomb.  
Isaac Marble.  
Samuel Huse.  
Paul Hayes.  
John Brown.  
John Cheever.  
Nicholas Moody.  
Thomas Wescomb.  
Joseph McHard.  
Wm. Gannet.  
Joseph Herbert.  
Jacob Fane.  
Joseph Smith.  
Mayo Greenleaf.  
David Pearson.  
Samuel Swazy.  
Asa Dickson.  
Joseph Stickney.  
Philip Johnson.  
John Greenleaf.  
Amos F. Hanstee.  
Nathaniel Smith.  
Leander Collin.  
Tristram Plumer.  
Isaac Gannet.  
Richard Stockman.  
Samuel Hall.  
Wm. Eastham.  
Lewis Gay.  
John Holladay.  
Moses Cross.  
Joseph Davis.  
Moses Morse.  
Francis Rogers.  
Daniel Somerby.  
James Brown.  
Caleb James.  
James Porth.  
Amos French.  
Roger Lord.  
Enoch Plumer.  
John Little.  
Nehemiah Haskell.  
Joseph Pearson.  
Moses Fessenden.  
Luke Webster.

to the adjoining towns, as it hardly seems probable that Newburyport could have sent in one company fifteen officers and one hundred and fifteen men. They are called, however, on the rolls at the State-House, Newburyport men.

On the 9th of May, 1775, a volunteer company was provided with accoutrements by the town and marched to join Colonel Moses Little's regiment in the Continental army, the members of which were as follows:

Ezra Lunt, capt.  
Paul Lunt, lieutenant.  
Nathl. Montgomery, lieutenant.  
Robert Fowler, sergeant.  
Nathl. Mitchell, sergeant.  
John McLary, sergeant.  
Edmund Morse, sergeant.  
Timothy Palmer, corp.  
Wm. Holladay, corp.  
Moses Kimball, corp.  
Ephraim Pidgeon, corp.  
Ben. Pearson, drummer.  
Benj. Newman, drummer.  
Bishop Norton, fife.  
Caleb Haskell, fife.

*Privates.*

Wm. Coker.  
Wm. Shackford.  
Daniel Ela.  
Thomas Gould.  
Enoch Pierce.  
Enoch Chase.  
Michael Cogswell.  
Enoch Richardson.  
Moses Cross.  
John Brown.  
Nathaniel Stevens Butson.  
John Stickney.  
John Sleeper.  
Moses George.  
Moses Morse.

Nathan Smith.  
John Perry.  
Robert Haskell.  
John Smith.  
Thomas Bolton.  
Samuel Stickney.  
Joseph Woods.  
Moses Rogers.  
Joseph Carr.  
John Goodhue.  
Abraham Knowton.  
Jacob True.  
Timothy Condrew.  
Mayo Greenleaf.  
David Pearson.  
John C. Roberts.  
David Rogers.  
Nathan Warren.  
Samuel Lankester.  
Enoch Fort.  
Jesse Emory.  
Thomas Hammond.  
Bart. L. Spooner.  
John Matchett.  
Richard Shoy.  
Benj. Davis.  
Scupper Lunt.  
Moses Nowell.  
John Shackford.  
James Fisher.  
Richard Goodwin.  
John Chase.

Another volunteer company marched for Cambridge in the latter part of May to join the Continental army, and, with the company of Captain Lunt, was at the battle of Bunker Hill. The members of the company were as follows:

Benj. Perkins, Capt.  
Jos. Whittemore, Lieut.  
Stephen Jenkins, Lieut.  
Wm. Stickney, Lieut.  
Samuel Foster, Sergt.  
Amos Pearson, Sergt.  
Thomas Frothingham, Sergt.  
Thomas Wescomb, Sergt.  
John Brazier, Drummer.  
Richard Hale, Drummer.  
Isaac Howard, Fife.  
John W. Folsom, Fife.

*Privates.*

Jonathan Carter.  
Edward Swain.  
Jeremiah Smith.  
Moses Wickes.  
Isaac Frothingham.  
John Dilaway.  
Charles Jarvis.  
Stephen Wyatt.  
John Kettle.  
Josiah Teel.  
Paul Stevens.

Joseph Davis.  
Thomas Merrill.  
Benj. Eaton.  
Joseph Stickney.  
Wm. Coner.  
Solomon Aubin.  
Joseph Somerby (2d).  
Nicholas Titcomb.  
Silas Parker.  
Moses Carr.  
Amos Hale.  
John Brett.  
Jonathan Norton.  
Moses Newman.  
Thomas Haynes.  
Aaron Davis.  
Benj. E. Knapp.  
Benj. Perkins.  
Moses Pidgeon.  
Daniel Pike.  
Ethan Rogers.  
Nathl. Godfrey.  
Thos. Boardman.  
Samuel Collin.  
Zebulon Titcomb.

It is possible that some of the above men belonged



Joseph Somerby,  
Samuel Harris,  
Jacob Knapp  
John Cook,  
Timo. Wyatt,  
Abraham Toppam,  
Philip Johnston,  
Abiel Kent,  
Joseph Mitchell,  
Patrick Harrington,  
Joseph Noyes,  
Charles Butler,  
John Coffin,  
Joseph Knight,  
John Murray.

Joseph Pettingel,  
Makepeace Colby,  
Jacob Foss,  
Jacob Willard,  
Simcon Noyes,  
Patrick Tracy,  
Wm. Page,  
Benj. Cotton,  
Daniel Lane,  
Shadrack Ireland,  
Daniel Somerby,  
Benj. R. Toppam,  
Benj. McKenning,  
Michael Titcomb,  
Wm. Elliot,  
Samuel Nelson.

Of this company at the battle of Bunker Hill, Jonathan Norton, Amos Pearson and Joseph Whittemore were wounded, and Samuel Nelson was killed.

Another company was raised and marched to Cambridge in 1775, of which the following were the Newburyport members:

Samuel Gerrish, Capt.  
Silas Adams, Lieut.  
Benj. Stockman, Lieut.  
Paul Moody, Sergt.

*Privates.*

Joseph Danforth,  
Jedediah Stickney,  
John Noyes,  
Nathaniel Adams,  
John Currier,  
Jedediah Currier,  
John Cheney,  
Joseph Christ,  
Wm. Fossel,  
Oliver Goodridge,  
John Lamb,  
David Child,  
James Child,  
Timothy Denham,  
Daniel Hale,  
Abner Woodman.

Enoch Boynton,  
Nathaniel Pearson,  
Wm. Searl,  
Jacob Low, Jr.,  
Richard Martin,  
Benj. Poor,  
Amos Poor,  
Elihuah Poor,  
Stephen Smith,  
John Sawyer,  
Abraham Thiele,  
Nathan Adams,  
Jacob Hale,  
Jacob Low,  
Enoch Adams,  
John Turner,  
Thomas Smith,  
Enoch Adams, Jr.,  
Amos Stickney,  
Stephen Lamb,  
Stephen Gerrish.

Members of the Newburyport company commanded by Captain Moses Nowell, stationed at Newburyport from November, 1775, to January, 1776,—

Moses Nowell, Capt.  
Elias Davis, Lieut.  
Moses Goodland, Lieut.  
George Carlton, Sergt.  
Moses Pike, Sergt.  
John Adams, Sergt.  
John Wills, Corp.  
Zachariah Farnham, Corp.  
Richard Cross, Corp.  
Isaac Johnson, Corp.  
Jacob Kuhn, Drummer.  
Joseph Cross, Fifer.

*Privates.*

Nathaniel Tilton,  
Samuel Buzan,  
Tristram Turner,  
Moses Davenport,  
Roland Stockman,  
John Butman,  
Enoch Greenleaf,  
Samuel Sweazy,  
Jacob Brown,  
James Merrill,  
John Butten,  
Joseph Davis.

Orlando Brown,  
Moses Davis,  
John Rickford,  
Moses Wills,  
Enoch Pike,  
Nathaniel Drummer,  
John Stanwood,  
Wm. Stickney,  
Lewis Gray,  
Somerby Chase,  
David Pettingel,  
Joseph Chase,  
John Powell,  
Joseph McHard,  
Samuel Bartell,  
Oliver Putnam,  
Thomas Lakeman,  
Enoch Sweet,  
John Stickney,  
Wm. Johnson,  
Jonathan Titcomb,  
Richardson Norton,  
Moody Stickney,  
Enoch Moody,  
Samuel Nowell.

Other enlistments in 1775 were for the company of Captain Jacob Gerrish, in Colonel Moses Little's regiment,—

John Choat,  
Eben Choat,  
Samuel Place,  
Michael Stockman.

John Stockman,  
Benj. Newman, Drummer.  
John Spanney, Fifer.

The following were miscellaneous enlistments:

Benj. Marriner,  
John Foster,  
Patrick Harrington,  
Shedrick Ireland,  
John Murray,  
Solomon Olin,  
Wm. Pottle,  
Daniel Pike,  
Joseph Harbott,  
William Ray.

Samuel Phipps,  
Richard Swan,  
John Smith,  
John Stone,  
Patrick Tracy,  
John York,  
Benj. Clannan,  
Charles Butler,  
William Farnham.

Enlistments in 1776 for three years,—

Wm. Noyes,  
Obadiah Robertson,  
Stephen Kent, drummer,  
John Flung,  
Cato Shaded, fifer.

Wm. Duggins,  
John Lamb,  
John Stockman, Jr.,  
John Brown,  
Chas. Jarvis.

Detachment of Captain Moses Nowell's company stationed at Plum Island from November 20, 1776, to January, 1777,—

Moses Nowell, Capt.  
Jas. Whittemore, Lieut.  
Nicholas Titcomb, Lieut.  
Moses Pike, Sergt.  
Enoch Moody, Sergt.  
Daniel Knight, Sergt.  
Moses Cross, Sergt.  
Isaac Knapp, Corp.  
Benj. Newman, Corp.  
Stephen Bartlett, Corp.  
Wm. Shackford, Corp.  
Theodore Pearson, Corp.  
Samuel Newman, drummer.  
Jonathan Kettel, fifer.

*Privates.*

Annis Merrill,  
Richardson Norton,  
Joshua Davis,  
Jas. McDonald,  
Enoch Sweet.

Mayo Greenleaf,  
Benj. Toppam,  
Moses Cleary,  
Richard Jackman,  
Tristram Pilbury,  
Isaac Adams,  
Christopher Merrill,  
Wm. Ramsdell,  
David Lall,  
John Low,  
Peterson Roby,  
Joseph Pike,  
Enoch Rogers,  
Joseph Poor,  
Stephen Stickney,  
Daniel Somerby,  
Samuel Long,  
Moses Davis,  
Simcon Pearson,  
Jonathan Lowell.

Enlistments of Newburyport men in the company of Captain Timothy Barnard, of Ipswich, in Colonel Moses Little's regiment in 1776 for two months,—

Moses Kent, Lieut.  
Nicholas Titcomb, Sergt.  
John Cook, Corp.  
John Brown, Corp.  
Isaac Howard, fifer.

Patrick Harrington,  
Shadrack Ireland,  
Richard Swan,  
John Smith,  
John Stone,  
Josiah Tool,  
Patrick Tracy,  
Wm. Young,  
John York,  
Benj. Clannan,  
Chas. Butler.

*Privates.*

Benj. Colton,  
Makepeace Colby,  
Aaron Davis,  
Jeremiah Farnham,  
Thos. Giles,  
Nathan Godfrey.

Enlistments of Newburyport men in the company of Captain Moses Greenleaf in battalion of Colonel Eben Francis for the expedition to Bennington in 1776,—





Morrill Whittier, sergt.  
Thos. Hollibaig, drummer.  
*Privates.*

John Flynn.  
John Stickney.  
John Kauger.  
Eliphalet Graham.  
John Connelly.  
John White.  
John Ellis.  
Chas. Jarvis.  
Samuel Lowell.  
Daniel Price.  
James Summers.

James Donnelly.  
James Landsey.  
James Ward.  
John Dexter.  
John Askin.  
Oliver Cromwell.  
Wm. Williamson.  
Jonathan Baswell.  
Richard Lowell.  
Makepeace Colby.  
Leonard Cotton.  
Robert Pembroke.  
David Roberts.  
Wm. Lewis.

Newburyport members of the company of Captain John Peabody, of Andover, in the regiment of Colonel Eben Francis, drafted in 1776,—

Moses Greenleaf, lieutenant.  
Jacob Kuhn, drummer.  
*Privates.*  
James Chase.  
Jas. Somerby.  
Jonathan Noyes.  
Jas. Brown.  
John Chivers.  
Enoch Hale.

Jas. Jewet.  
Christopher Merrill.  
Wm. Pidgeon.  
John Ham.  
Richard Smith.  
Jes. Topping.  
John Willard.  
Moses Woodman.

Enlistments of Newburyport men in 1777 for two months in Rhode Island in the company of Captain Moses Nowell in Titcomb's regiment,—

Moses Nowell, capt.  
Dana Pike, lieutenant.  
Samuel Stickney, lieut.  
Amos Poor, corp.  
William Emmott, corp.  
Joseph Pike, sergt.  
Thomas Green, sergt.

*Privates.*  
Hugh Thompson.  
Hugh Thompson, Jr.  
Benjamin Pike, Jr.  
Isaac Frothingham.  
Caleb Foot.  
Joseph Rollings.  
Eliphalet Rollings.  
Israel Hareley.

Thomas Cheney.  
Jonathan Emerson.  
Joseph Wright.  
Hosea Percy H. Richards.  
Nehemiah Chast.  
Nathaniel Bradstreet.  
Nathaniel Johnson.  
Moses Holson.  
Jeremiah Holson.  
Benjamin Whipple.  
Joseph Dodge.  
Joseph Brown.  
Benjamin Pike.  
Joseph Annable.  
Nathaniel Dunham.  
Joseph Wright, Jr.

Newburyport men enlisted in 1777 for three years and members of various regiments,—

John Bailey.  
John Atkins.  
Makepeace Colby.  
Daniel Childs.  
Leonard Cotton.  
Paul Collin.  
John Colaney.  
John Carsey.  
George Collin.  
Michael Crosby.  
Eben Chast.  
James Delaney.  
David Dunning.  
Jonathan Day.  
John Davis.  
John Ellis.  
Moses George.  
Eliphalet Grilth.  
Thomas Goodale.  
Thomas Giles.  
Solomon Aubin.  
Jonathan Baswell.  
Thomas Goss.

Jeremiah Goldsmith.  
Henry Greenleaf.  
John Nason.  
Wm. Ray.  
Wm. Poor.  
Daniel Pierce.  
Robert Pembroke.  
James Pinder.  
Oxford Tash.  
Peter Thomas.  
Benjamin H. Toppan.  
Morrill Whicken.  
Wm. Williamson.  
Moses Whicken.  
John White.  
Nathaniel Willet.  
James Ward.  
Moses Woodman.  
Nathan Whitney.  
Stephen Wyatt.  
Joseph Willes.  
Benjamin Willet.

Enlistments of Newburyport men in the Continental army in 1778 for various regiments,—

Samuel Davis.  
Joseph Little.  
Anthony Boston.

Charity Kittout.  
Timothy Farrar.

Enlistments in 1778 for nine months,—

Benjamin Webster.  
Samuel Davis.  
Jonathan Hunteon.

James Bulford.  
John Rowe.  
Joseph Little.

Nine months' men enlisted for the Continental army in 1779,—

Thomas Elliot.  
Benjamin Bagley.  
John Welch.  
Andrew Labonta.  
John Mullins.  
Thomas Wood.  
Thomas Wood, Jr.  
James Kavan.  
Wm. Follansbee.  
Nathan Haskell.  
Wm. Noyes, Jr.

Benjamin Draper.  
Samuel Newman.  
Hugh Felton.  
Cicero Haskell.  
Isaac Johnson.  
Thomas Beck.  
Samuel Ober.  
Abraham Dodge.  
Joshua Pittingall.  
John Thompson.  
John Batman.

Six months' men enlisted for the Continental army 1780,—

Jonathan Beck.  
Thomas Beck.  
Moses George.  
Stephen Smith.  
Josiah Melvon.  
David Melvon.  
Benjamin Smith.  
Jeremiah Smith.  
Daniel Gale.  
Ezekiel Sterns.  
Eliphalet Galley.  
Caleb Fogg.  
George Saunders.  
Samuel Dudley.  
Moses Titcomb.  
Wm. Murray.  
David Childs.  
John Stone.  
Jeremiah Spencer.  
Jonathan Prescott.  
Samuel Cram.  
Jonathan Sayward.  
John Woodbury.  
Michael Pike.  
Eben Hatties.  
Enoch Foot.  
Benjamin Woodbury.  
James Woodbury.  
Samuel Webster.  
Oliver Richards.  
Nath'l Hunt.

James Smith.  
John Mann.  
Moses George, Jr.  
David Dunning.  
Wm. Stoneman.  
Levi Davis.  
Nath'l Howard.  
Jeremy South.  
Benoni Knapp.  
Enoch Trott.  
Eben Sterns.  
Lancaster Beck.  
Moody Stickney.  
John Parker Wilson.  
Nathan Chapman.  
Cicero Haskell.  
Oxford Task.  
Leonard Cotton.  
Isaac Prickson.  
John Hames.  
James Norris.  
Jonathan Galley.  
Benjamin Cotton.  
James Thomas.  
Richard Slay.  
James Cony.  
Paul McFarland.  
John Archer.  
James Neal.  
John Mullins.

Enlistments in the company of Capt. John Robinson, of Boxford, and regiment of Col. William Turner for five months' service in Rhode Island, in 1781,—

Lieut. Daniel Cotton.  
Corp. Samuel Barker.  
John Riley.

Joseph Mitchell.  
Jonathan Greenough.  
Edward Milbkin.

Levies for the Continental army in 1782 in the company of Capt. Joshua French, of Salisbury, and regiment of Lieut.-Col. Enoch Putnam,—

Lieut. Joshua Davis.  
Sergt. Timothy Roff.  
Sergt. Samuel Noyes.  
Corp. Annis Merrill.  
Corp. James Jackson.

Prifer Jesse Spoford.  
John Simson.  
Simon Chase.  
Wm. Perry.  
Stephen Carlton.



John Ferguson.  
Jacob Marsh.  
John Butler.  
John Murray.  
George Poor.  
Benjamin Bishop.  
Isaac Frothingham.  
James Ferguson.  
David Hyde.  
Edward Tenney.  
Josiah Coburn.  
Paul McPherson.

Wm. McFarland.  
James McFarland.  
Wm. Malloon.  
Benjamin Davis.  
John Castello.  
Wm. Tapley.  
Benjamin Mullikin.  
John Dow.  
Amos Kemp.  
Daniel Cole.  
Jesse Cole.  
Samuel Parker.

### Three years' men enlisted in 1782,—

Joseph Tarr.  
Wm. White.  
John Ellis.

Wm. Shepard.  
Adventer Kent.  
Roger Bendl.

Thus Newburyport furnished during the seven years of the Revolutionary War seven hundred and seventeen enlistments. It is true that some of the soldiers enlisted more than once, for different terms of service; but, after all due allowance is made for these, the fact remains that few towns drew more heavily on their resources to carry the war to a successful termination. It is manifest that such a contribution of men to the army could not have been made without the imposition of a serious pecuniary burden on the treasury of the town and the purses of its people. At one time it was voted to pay a bounty of twenty pounds to every soldier enlisting for three years or the war; at another, to give each man seven pounds ten shillings per month, in addition to the State and Continental wages. Still later it was voted to give nine pounds per month, including State and Continental wages, and six pounds per month advance to soldiers enlisting as a guard to the troops of General Burgoyne. It was again voted to give one hundred shillings per month to each man enlisting within twenty-four hours; and, again, to give four hundred and fifty pounds advance to each soldier enlisting for three months' service. In 1780 the town voted to raise seventy-five thousand pounds by tax, to be paid before the 1st of September, to procure and equip the town's proportion of the militia required by the resolve of the General Court, dated June 8th in that year. These are a few only of the votes of the town assuming onerous pecuniary burdens, and in addition to the expenditures of money which they involved, others were incurred in preparing and sinking piers in the channel of the river, in building forts at Salisbury and on Plum Island, and in constructing floating batteries and other defenses against possible attacks from British fleets. For the eight years which elapsed from the battle of Lexington to the proclamation of peace Newburyport appropriated the sum of five hundred and four thousand five hundred pounds, of which it was estimated that four hundred and ninety-eight thousand five hundred pounds was expended for purposes connected with the war.

Nor was this all. Men of Newburyport were found on the ocean wherever the new flag flew in the face of

the cross of St. George, and wherever a gun was fired in defense of liberty. The first privateer fitted out in the colonies sailed from Newburyport in August, 1775, and was owned by Nathaniel Tracy, a prominent merchant. She was the pioneer of a fleet equipped by Newburyport merchants, among whom, besides Mr. Tracy, Mr. Joseph Marquand was specially conspicuous. Nor should the names of the commanders be omitted. Capt. James Tracy of the "Yankee Hero," Cutting Lant of the "America," Captain William Russell of the "General Ward," Captain William Springer of the "Hornet," Capt. Jack Lee of the "Hawk," Capt. John O'Brien of the "Hibernia," Capt. Moses Brown of the "General Arnold," Capt. Wingate Newman of the "Vengeance," Capt. William Knapp of the "Pallas," and others too numerous to mention, for a time struck terror into the hearts of British seamen, and reaped rich harvests for their owners. It is stated that the cruisers in which Mr. Tracy was interested captured one hundred and twenty English vessels, amounting to twenty-three thousand three hundred and sixty tons, and carrying twenty-two hundred and twenty-four men. The cargoes of these vessels were sold for three million nine hundred and fifty thousand dollars in specie, of which sum Mr. Tracy contributed or advanced one hundred and sixty-seven thousand two hundred and nineteen dollars to the public service. Privateering, however, did not prove a permanent success. As convoys were more carefully furnished to English ships, prizes became less frequent, and the usual hazards of the sea, together with energetic efforts on the part of British men-of-war to check the career of these "birds of prey," brought disaster and ruin to many of those that had at first dreamed of wealth and luxury as the fruit of their enterprise. No less than twenty-two vessels fitted out at Newburyport, manned by a thousand men, were either wrecked or destroyed, leaving no record of their fate.

Nathaniel Tracy, the leader in privateering enterprises, was born in 1749, in that part of Newbury which was in 1764 incorporated as Newburyport. He was the son of Patrick Tracy, a prominent merchant of that town, and graduated at Harvard in 1769. After leaving college he very soon entered into business with Jonathan Jackson, and at the beginning of the Revolution was conducting a large and profitable foreign trade. His rapidly-acquired wealth enabled him to live surrounded by all the comforts and luxuries harmonizing with his refined tastes, and in his town house in Newburyport, and at his country house in Salisbury, he dispensed boundless hospitality. At one time he was the owner of the Cragie mansion in Cambridge, in which Washington had his headquarters, and which received its final consecration from the life and death of Longfellow within its walls. By the final misfortunes of the war, among which was the failure of the government to reimburse him for





expenditures in the public service, he was reduced to a bankruptcy from which he found it impossible to recuperate. The brick mansion-house on State Street built and occupied by him has been somewhat remodeled for the use of the Public Library, which now occupies it. The alterations, however, which it was necessary to make, have not obliterated or concealed the elegance which once characterized it. In 1789, on the occasion of the visit of Washington to Newburyport, the house of Mr. Tracy was his home, and there he spent the night of Friday, November 1st, previous to his departure for New Hampshire the next day. There he was welcomed by an address written by John Quincy Adams, then a student in the office of Theophilus Parsons, to which Washington replied that in visiting Newburyport he had obeyed a favorite inclination, and was gratified by its indulgence, that in expressing a sincere wish for its prosperity and the happiness of its inhabitants he did but justice to his own sentiments and their merits.

The house afterwards came into the possession of James Prince, and while occupied by him was the home of Lafayette during his visit to Newburyport in August, 1824. The bed and furniture of the chamber in which Washington had slept had been retained, notwithstanding the change in their ownership, and were now, thirty-five years later, at the service of Washington's distinguished friend.

Jonathan Jackson, Mr. Tracy's partner in business, was born in Boston and was a graduate of Harvard in 1761. He was a member of the Continental Congress in 1780, marshal of the district of Massachusetts under Washington, treasurer of Harvard College, and also treasurer of the Commonwealth. His wife was a Miss Barnard, of Salem, and the distinction which he won by a life of activity, integrity and usefulness was fully maintained by his sons,—Charles, a graduate of Harvard in 1793, and a lawyer, who became in 1813 Judge of the Supreme Judicial Court; James, a Harvard graduate of 1796, and for many years the honored head of the medical profession in Boston; Henry, an eminent shipmaster; and Patrick Tracy Jackson, the distinguished merchant, who, by his consummate skill and business enterprise, conjoined to the inventive genius and mathematical powers of his partner and friend, Francis C. Lowell, laid the foundations of the cotton manufacture of New England, and finally conceived and created the city of Lowell.

There were other citizens of Newburyport to whom some reference should be made before this narrative leaves the Revolutionary period of its history. The members of the bar of that period, as well as of all other periods covered by this history,—Theophilus Parsons, Rufus King, Tristram Dalton, Daniel Farnham, Charles Jackson, John Lowell, Benjamin Greenleaf, Stephen Sewall, Theophilus Bradbury and many others,—are sketched in the chapter on the Bench and

Bar in this work, and require no further mention here. There were others in various walks of life, who performed their full share in giving character to the generation in which they lived. Without any attempt to classify these, they will be mentioned in the order in which they suggest themselves.

Newburyport has been able to boast of few men more distinguished than Jacob Perkins. Though he won his chief distinction after the close of the war, his business life began while it was in progress, and gives the Revolutionary period a right to claim him as its own. He was born in Newburyport, July 9, 1766, two years after its incorporation. His father, Matthew Perkins, removed in early life from Ipswich to Newburyport, and was descended from Abraham Perkins, who appeared in Hampton as early as 1639. The family seems to have inherited from its ancestors a fondness for Biblical names, to which the Matthews and Marks and Lukes and Johns and Isaacs and Jacobs in various generations have abundantly testified. The only education which Jacob Perkins received was that of the common schools of his native city, the welfare and perfection of which the separation from Newbury was sought to promote, and it is possible therefore that to that separation may have been due the display of the mechanical powers which he afterwards so remarkably exhibited. At the age of twelve he was apprenticed to a goldsmith of Newburyport by the name of Davis, who died three years afterwards, and left him in the management of his business. He won his earliest reputation in the manufacture of gold beads, then in fashion, from the Portuguese joes, in circulation at that time, and shoe-buckles, a new method of plating which, discovered by him, enabled him to undersell all competitors. He next turned his attention to machinery. Under the old confederation, the State of Massachusetts established a mint for striking copper coins. Perkins, then at the age of twenty-one, was employed by the government to make a suitable die, and the old Massachusetts cents stamped with the eagle and the Indian were the work of his skill. At the age of twenty-four he invented a machine for cutting and heading nails by one operation,—a machine which, with later improvements, has carried the daily product of one man's labor from one thousand nails to ten kegs of one hundred pounds each. He next invented the stereotype check-plate for the prevention of counterfeit bank-bills, and thus imposed an important obstacle in the way of frauds, from which the community were daily suffering. During the War of 1812 he was employed in constructing machinery for boring out old honey-combed cannon, and in perfecting the science of gunnery. He discovered the method of softening and hardening steel, by which the process of engraving on that metal was made more easy. He demonstrated the compressibility of water, and, in connection with this discovery, invented the bathometer to measure the





depth of the sea by the pressure of water, and the pleometer to measure a ship's speed.

After leaving Newburyport in 1816 he lived for a time in Philadelphia, and there devoted himself to experiments on the power of steam, by which he invented a new method of generating it by suddenly letting a small quantity of water into a heated vessel and it is said that he succeeded in employing steam at a pressure of sixty-five atmospheres, or 975 pounds to the square inch. After a short residence in Philadelphia he removed to London, where the steam gun, which he had patented in the United States in 1819, attracted the notice of the government, and which he exhibited with trials of its operation before the Duke of Wellington, in 1823. At a distance of thirty-five yards the gun sent its balls through eleven planks, each an inch thick and placed an inch apart, and was capable of discharging one thousand balls per minute. Notwithstanding his unremitting and useful labors in the cause of science, he never acquired a fortune, and died in London, July 13, 1849, leaving behind him in the country of his adoption a well-earned fame and the title of the "American Inventor."

Michael Hodge was a man who filled a large space in Revolutionary days. Previous to the Revolution he was a captain in the merchant marine, and in 1776 was appointed naval officer of the port of Newburyport. It is probable that previous to that time, since about the year 1750, the revenues had been collected by a collector appointed by the King. But in 1776 an act was passed by the General Assembly of the State of Massachusetts entitled an "Act for establishing a naval office and for ascertaining the fees," which provided that in the "several seaports of Boston, Salem, Marblehead, Gloucester, Newburyport, York, Pepperellborough, Falmouth on Casco Bay, Townsend (Boothbay), Penobscot, Goldsboro', Machias, Plymouth, Barnstable, Dartmouth and Nantucket, within this State, there be an office kept, to be called and known by the name of the Naval Office, for the purpose of entering and clearing of all ships and other vessels trading to or from this State, to take bonds in adequate penalty for observing the regulations made, or which shall be made by the General Congress or the General Assembly of this State concerning trade, take manifests upon oath of all cargoes exported or imported and keep fair accounts and entries thereof, give bills of health when desired, and sign certificates that the requisites for qualifying vessels to trade have been complied with, and the fees to be demanded and received in said office shall be these following and no greater, that is to say :

	s.	d.
For entering any ship and vessel from any part of the state.....	2	0
For clearing any ship and vessel to any part of the state.....	2	0
For entering any ship and vessel from any other of the United States.....	6	0
For clearing any ship and vessel to any other of the United States.....	6	0
For entering any ship and vessel from a foreign voyage.....	6	0
For clearing any ship and vessel for a foreign voyage.....	6	0

For a Register.....	6	0
For Indorsing a Register.....	1	0
For Recording Indorsement.....	1	6
For any Bond.....	2	0
For a certificate to Cancel Bond.....	1	0
For a bill of health.....	2	0
For permit to unload.....	1	0
For a cockpit.....	0	3
For a let pass.....	0	8

Under this act, on the 22d of November, 1776, Capt. Michael Hodge was appointed naval officer, and it is believed continued in the office until 1789. In that year Newburyport was made by Congress a port of entry, and the district included Salisbury, Amesbury and Haverhill. The first appointments under the act of Congress were made shortly after the visit of Washington to Newburyport, in 1789, and Stephen Cross was made collector, Jonathan Titcomb naval officer and Michael Hodge surveyor. In 1792 Mr. Cross was superseded by Edward Wigglesworth, who was succeeded in 1795 by Dudley A. Tyng. In 1803 Ralph Cross, succeeded Mr. Tyng, and remained in office until his death, in 1811, when he was succeeded by Joseph Marquand, who also held the office until his death, in 1820. James Prince held the office from 1821 until his death, in February, 1829, when Solomon H. Currier, the deputy collector, held a temporary appointment until the following July, giving way to Samuel Philips, who was appointed by President Jackson, and remained in office until the accession to power of the Whig administration in 1841. Henry W. Kinsman followed in 1841, William Nichols in 1845, Henry Kinsman again in 1849, James Blood in 1853, Enoch G. Currier in 1861, Wm. H. Huse in 1870, and George W. Jackman August 1, 1886.

In the naval office Jonathan Titcomb, the first incumbent, remained only three years, and was succeeded by Daniel Swett, who again in 1825 was superseded by Thomas Carter, who died in office in 1828. Daniel Foster was appointed in 1825, and at his death, in 1833, he was succeeded by Benjamin Stickney. Thomas M. Clark followed in 1841, Enoch Fowler in 1845, Thomas L. Clark in 1849, Nicholas Brown in 1853, George J. L. Colby in 1861, under whose administration the office was abolished in 1864.

Michael Little, the first deputy-collector, appointed in 1789, held office until 1821, when he was succeeded by Solomon H. Currier. Charles Titcomb followed in 1829, Thomas W. Burnham in 1841, Daniel P. Pike in 1861, and Charles W. Davenport, September 1, 1886.

Captain Hodge, who was appointed surveyor in 1789, as has been before stated, continued in office until his death, June 24, 1816. He was succeeded by William Cross, who was the father of Robert Cross, attorney-at-law, and his brother, George Cross. It is said the name of Cross was so well known in Washington and so identified with Newburyport, on



account of the war service and later civil service of many members of the family bearing it, that when the President received the application for an appointment to office of one of the Crosses, he asked if there were no persons of some other name in the town capable of filling a public station. Nathaniel Jackson succeeded William Cross in 1832, and was followed by William Pritchard in December, 1860, who was appointed to fill the vacancy occasioned by Mr. Jackson's death. In May, 1861, Henry Stover was appointed and held the office until it was abolished in 1874.

From 1780 to 1789 Captain Hodge was the town clerk, chosen by the town at its annual meetings, and in 1783-84-85 one of the Board of Selectmen.

\* In 1772 an association was formed in Newburyport called the Marine Society. It had its origin in the voluntary association of six individuals who met on the 5th of November, 1772, and agreed to form a society to promote the interests of shipmasters and to create a fund for the assistance of needy masters and their families. These six persons were Thomas Jones, William Wyer, Benjamin Rogers, Samuel Newhall, Edward Wigglesworth and Michael Hodge. The society was incorporated in 1777 and is now in the possession of a building and a fund of about \$52,000, the income of which, enlarged by annual increments, enables the corporation to carry out with fidelity the purposes for which it was created. The following persons were members of the society at the time of its incorporation:

James Hudson,	Thomas Jones.
Jonathan Parsons.	Wm. Friend.
Samuel Newhall.	Michael Hodge.
David Coates.	Wm. Stickney.
William Rogers.	Moses Hale.
Joseph Standwood.	Joseph Noyes.
Wm. P. Johnson.	Nathl. Nowell.
Henry Friend.	Joseph Newman.
Nicholas Johnson.	Moses Brown.
James Johnson.	Wm. Wyer.
Wm. Nichols.	Wm. Coombs.
Joseph Rowe.	Thomas Thomas.
Benjamin Rogers.	Anthony Knapp.
Edward Wigglesworth.	Frederick Johnson.
Jeremiah Pearson.	Joseph Chute.
John Barnard.	James Nichols.
Robert Jenkins.	Peter Roberts.
Joshua Hill.	Andrew Goldings.
John Fletcher.	Amos Tappan.

The society has been legatee under the wills of Captain Joseph P. Russell to the amount of \$2000; Micajah Lunt, \$2000; Lucy M. Follansbee, \$2000; and John Mussey, \$500. The first board of officers consisted of Jonathan Parsons, Jr., president; Henry Friend, vice-president; Samuel Newhall, secretary; and William Coombs, treasurer. The present officers are Robert Couch, president; Albert Cheever, vice-president; William H. Bayley, secretary; and William H. Lunt, treasurer. Mr. Parsons held office from November 13, 1772, to November 20, 1772, and was succeeded by James Hudson November 20, 1772;

Samuel Newhall, November 29, 1781; William Coombs, November 28, 1782; Michael Hodge, November 29, 1804; Nicholas Johnson, November 25, 1814; Abraham Wheelwright, November 25, 1824; Eleazar Johnson, November 26, 1829; Micajah Lunt, November 24, 1842; Gyles P. Stone, November 27, 1862; William Graves, November 29, 1876; Nathaniel S. Osgood, November 29, 1877; Stephen P. Bray, November 27, 1879; Henry Cook, November 27, 1883, and Robert Couch, the present incumbent, November 27, 1884.

During the Revolution the Marine Society performed effective service in the national cause. It was through the influence of its members, if not of the organized body itself, that measures were conceived and executed to put the town in a state of defence. They were active and conspicuous in efforts to organize and equip a military force by dividing the town into districts. Coates, Newhall, Hodge, Coombs, Thomas and Wigglesworth, all members of the society, were among the most active in sinking piers in the river and planting fortifications about its mouth.

When the military forces of the town were organized in 1775, six captains of guns were appointed,—Thomas Thomas, William Coombs, Joshua Titecomb, David Coates, William Friend and Michael Hodge,—with squads of six or eight men attached to each gun. It is not improbable that the Newburyport Artillery Company was a company which crystallized round these squads as the nucleus of its organization. There was formed in the first years of the life of the Marine Society an independent marine company, of which James Hudson, the president of that society, was captain, and it has been thought by some that this company grew into the Artillery Company. It is more probable, however, that while the artillery company was so far related to the Independent Marine Company as to owe its origin to the same source, the old company disappeared and the new one was organized in 1778. The first officers of this company were Thomas Thomas, captain; David Coates, captain-lieutenant; Michael Hodge, first lieutenant; Samuel Newhall, second lieutenant. The immediate cause of the enlistment of this company seems to have been a circular sent by the President of the Council to the various independent companies of the State,—

"COUNCIL CHAMBER, Boston, July 26, 1778.

"GENTLEMEN:—General Sullivan has signified to this Board his design of making a sudden attack on Rhode Island by General Washington's express command, and has called upon this state to aid his design, with three thousand of her militia, and to communicate his requests to the several Independent Companies and Gentlemen volunteers in this state to co-operate with the French fleet in the reduction of that Island. In compliance with such earnest requests of the General, and from the idea of the glory of such a conquest, we invite you and the worthy gentlemen under your command to march immediately to Providence to share largely in the honor of banishing forever, from the New England States and from America, the remnant of a British army, too long suffered to deal in blood and rapine in these sovereign Independent States. The gloom dissipates and we have reason to expect, from every appearance, that our exertion once more will close the scene of blood, and fix





you and your offspring forever free and independent of a tyrant, and place you at the greatest remove from connection with that hell of blood, the British Isle.

"Gentlemen, you will signify to us as soon as may be your determination on this important enterprise, that General Sullivan may be immediately made acquainted with the force designed him from this state.

"Gentlemen, we are your most obedient, very humble servant.

"JEREMIAH POWELL, President.

"Commanding officer of the Independent Company Newburyport."

The following was sent in reply :

"NEWBURYPORT, 31 July, 1778.

"Your much esteemed favor of the 26th and 27th of July this moment came to hand; am happy to have it in my power to inform the Honorable Board that the Independent company under my command do, with the utmost cheerfulness accept of their invitation, and will be ready to march by Tuesday morning next, at earliest, and flatter themselves that they will be joined by numbers of the good people of this town, as we are now beating around for volunteers.

"Am, Sir, with due regards, your most obedient, humble servant,

"THOMAS THOMAS.

"To the Honorable Jeremiah Powell, President of the Council."

This company, the rolls of which seem to be wanting in the State archives, is to be added to the list already given of soldiers furnished by Newburyport. In the expedition for which it was enlisted the town was well represented. General Jonathan Titcomb, of Newburyport, was in command of the troops from the four counties of Essex, Plymouth, Worcester and Bristol, and in the order of battle had command of the brigade on the left wing of the second line. John Tracy; son of Patrick Tracy and a graduate of Harvard in 1771; Stephen Sewall, a graduate of Harvard in 1761 and town clerk from 1764 to 1775; Michael Hodge, and Rufus King, a graduate of Harvard in the previous year, and afterwards the distinguished United States Senator from the State of New York, then a resident of Newburyport, were on the staff of General Jonathan Glover, of Marblehead, who commanded the brigade on the left of the first line. Enoch Titcomb acted on the staff of General Titcomb, while the ranks of the Artillery Company contained many men prominent in various walks of life. The expedition, as is well known, was a failure, and after a short absence the company returned as a distinct organization from the only service in the field which it was called on to perform during the war.

Hon. Eben F. Stone, in an address delivered May 16, 1877, before the veteran Artillery Company, already freely used in this narrative, says that in "the first year of the existence of the Artillery Company Michael Hodge was its life and soul." He was the son of Charles and Elizabeth (Titcomb) Hodge, and married Sarah, daughter of Stephen Sewall, one of his predecessors in the office of town clerk. He was engaged in commerce and shipping for many years, and was secretary of the first insurance company established in Newburyport. He died June 24, 1816, leaving a son, Michael, a graduate of Harvard in 1799, a lawyer and a man of unusual culture, who married, in 1805, Mary Johnson, of Newburyport, and in 1814, Betsey Hayward, daughter of Dr. James Thacher, of Plymouth, and widow of Daniel Elliott, of Savannah, Georgia.

Captain Thomas Thomas, the first commander of the Artillery Company, who commanded it in the Rhode Island expedition, was a Welshman, who, before the war, was in the merchant service in the employ of Michael Dalton, the father of Hon. Tristram Dalton, the United States Senator. He was one of nine merchants to furnish four vessels of war for the disastrous Penobscot expedition—the ship "Monmouth," Capt. Alexander Ross; the ship "Sky Rocket," Capt. Burke; the brigantine "Pallas," Capt. James Johnson; and the ship "Vengeance," commanded by himself. After the failure of Jonathan Jackson, the partner of Nathaniel Tracy, who built the house in later times known as the Dexter house, Captain Thomas purchased the house and there died in 1796. He was a man "of great spirit and courage, full of daring and adventure," and in the early part of the war, in command of the "Yankee Hero," met with great success as a privateersman.

David Coates, another officer of the artillery, was a native of Gloucester and before the war sailed as master in the employ of Nathaniel Tracy and Jonathan Jackson. He served his adopted town in the Legislature, and in 1783-84-85 was a member of the Board of Selectmen. Samuel Newhall, the second lieutenant of the artillery, so far as is known, held no public office and died soon after the war.

Samuel Allyn Otis, for some time a member of the firm of Collin & Otis, whose place of business was on Summer Street, was a brother of Harrison Gray Otis, of Boston. He came to Newburyport in early manhood and made that place his residence until his death, October 27, 1814. The widow of Mr. Otis married Arthur Gilman, the father of the late well-known Arthur Gilman, the architect, of Boston. He was descended from John Otis, of Barnstable, England, who settled in Hingham, Massachusetts, in 1635. A grandson of John bearing the same name removed to Barnstable, Mass., and had a son James, who married Mary, daughter of Joseph Allyn, of Wethersfield, Conn., and was the grandfather of Samuel Allyn. He was born in Boston in 1773 and died in 1817. He was on the Board of Selectmen in 1798.

Nicholas Pike should be remembered as a prominent man of this period. He was the son of Rev. James Pike, of Somersworth, where he was born in 1743. He graduated at Harvard in 1766, and was principal of the grammar school in Newburyport for many years. He published, in 1788, an arithmetic which had for a long time a place in the public schools of New England and was the first publication of the kind in America. He acted as moderator of annual town-meetings in 1783, '93, '94, '98, '99, 1805, '07, '10; was town clerk from 1776 to 1779 and a member of the Board of Selectmen in 1782. He died December 9, 1819.

Of Stephen and Ralph Cross nothing more fitting can be said than the following, taken from Cushing's "History of Newburyport." "Stephen was born in 1731



and Ralph in 1738. They were both brought up shipwrights in the building yard of their father, Ralph Cross, opposite the bottom of Lime Street. Stephen was one of a number of his trade who went to the lakes in 1756, to construct a flotilla. He and his associates were made prisoners at the fall of Fort Oswego, and carried to Quebec and thence to France. On his return he formed a co-partnership with his brother Ralph. The business of the firm was extensive. In addition to their ship-building, the partners were engaged in trade at home and abroad, and at the commencement of the Revolution were fast becoming affluent. . . . Stephen was chosen one of the delegates to the First Provincial Congress. He died March 30, 1809. At the commencement of the Revolution Ralph was a captain in the militia, commissioned by the Royal Governor in 1772. In 1777 he joined the army as lieutenant-colonel of the regiment commanded by Colonel Johnson, of Andover. He was in the battle which occasioned the surrender of Burgoyne. "The brothers, with others, contracted with the State and built the frigates 'Hancock,' 'Boston' and 'Protector' and several other vessels of war. The 'Hancock' was built in the yard of Jonathan Greenleaf, between Bartlett's and Johnson's wharves, and the two others at the yard of Stephen Cross, afterwards occupied by Titcomb & Lunt as a mast-yard." Stephen was a member of the first Board of Selectmen and served in the same capacity in 1772, '74, '87, '88. He also served as moderator in 1775, '80 and '97. He was also the first collector of the port, having been appointed by Washington to that office in 1780. Ralph was a member of the Board of Selectmen in 1768, a member of the first School Committee, a member of the Committee of Safety and Correspondence and collector of the port from 1803 until his death, September 4, 1811. He was also, from 1790 to 1796, brigadier-general of the militia and for a time commissioner under the bankrupt law.

Jonathan Greenleaf was born in that part of Newbury which is now Newburyport, in 1723. He was a cousin of Benjamin Greenleaf, who was Probate judge. He was apprenticed when young to Edward Presbury, a prosperous ship-builder, and afterwards married his daughter. He rose to wealth and influence, and was a member of the Continental Congress and in both branches of the State Legislature. From 1799 until his death, May 25, 1807, he was president of the board of trustees of Byfield Academy, and during his whole life commanded the confidence and respect of his townsmen. In the organization of the town, in February, 1764, he was chosen one of the assessors and presided at the annual town-meetings of 1771, '90, '91, '92, '95, and was a member of the Committee of Safety and Correspondence. Benjamin Greenleaf, his cousin, was born in Newburyport in March, 1732, and died in January, 1799. He was a graduate of Harvard in 1751, a member of the Executive Council during the war, a member of the

Committee of Safety, a member of the Massachusetts Senate, chief justice of the Court of Common Pleas, and judge of Probate for the county of Essex. He was also president of the trustees of Byfield Academy from 1781 to his death, in 1799. He was one of the town committee chosen in 1761 to organize the school system of the town, and a member of the Board of Selectmen in 1764, '66, '67, '68, '72, '74, '75.

Micajah Sawyer was an eminent physician, who was born in Newbury in 1737 and graduated at Harvard in 1756. He was a member of the Committee of Safety and the treasurer of Dummer Academy from 1784 to 1809. He married a daughter of Daniel Farnham and died September 29, 1815.

Patrick Tracy came from Ireland as a young sailor, and making Newburyport his home, became first an enterprising ship-master and finally a prosperous merchant. He was the father of Nathaniel Tracy, of whom mention has already been made. At the time of the organization of the town he was chosen one of the overseers of the poor, and he was one of the Committee of Safety and Correspondence.

Colonel Moses Titcomb is worthy of mention in connection with this period. He was descended from William Titcomb, one of the original settlers in Newbury. He was a blacksmith by trade and a man of gigantic strength. In 1747, by order of Brigadier-General Waldo, he took command of the troops stationed at Falmouth (now Portland), where he remained from May to October of that year. He was a member of the Third Church in Newbury, within the limits of what afterwards became Newburyport, and though he died a few years before the incorporation of that town, the military spirit which he displayed, and which was afterwards, during the Revolution, repeated by many of his kinsmen in Newburyport, deserves a place in this record. He was killed in the battle at Lake George, September 8, 1755, by one of the Indian allies of the French, who had gained the flank of his regiment unperceived.

Enoch Titcomb was a prominent citizen in the earlier days of the town. At its first meeting, in February, 1764, he was chosen one of the Board of Selectmen and served again in that capacity in 1782. He was town clerk from 1790 to 1796 and presided at the annual town-meetings of 1782-84, 1803-04. He served as an officer under General Sullivan in Rhode Island, and after the war was many years either Senator or Representative in the State Legislature. He died August 13, 1814, at the age of sixty-two.

Jonathan Titcomb was also prominent in the early days of the town. He was moderator at the annual town-meetings in 1778, '79, '81, '86, '87, and a selectman in 1773, '74, '75, '77, '78, '80, '86, '88. He commanded a regiment under General Sullivan, was a member of the convention to form the State Constitution and a member of the first General Court of the Commonwealth. He was also appointed naval





officer of the district of Newburyport by Washington in 1789. He died March 10, 1817.

Ezra Lunt was born in Newburyport and enlisted and commanded a company which was raised after the battle of Lexington, and marched to Cambridge in time to participate in the battle of Bunker Hill. In that battle his company formed the rear-guard, which protected the retreat. Capt. Lunt saw much service during the war and at its close opened a tavern in Federal Street, but soon removed to Ohio, where he died in 1803. His brothers Henry and Daniel were both active in their country's service—as daring and fearless on the sea as their brother on the land. Their cousin, Cutting Lunt, was also engaged in sea service and added his share to the well-earned fame of the family to which he belonged. Henry first sailed, in 1776 in the privateer "Dalton," owned by Stephen Hooper and commanded by Eleazer Johnson. She was captured and her officers and crew were sent to Mill Prison. In the spring of 1779 he was released and went to France, where, as midshipman, he shipped on board the "Bon Homme Richard," commanded by J. Paul Jones. He was soon promoted to a second lieutenant and remained with Jones in the "Richard," "Alliance" and "Ariel" until his arrival in Philadelphia in 1781. He then became first lieutenant of the ship "Intrepid," a letter of marque, owned by Nathaniel Tracy and commanded by Moses Brown. After the war Mr. Lunt continued in the employ of Mr. Tracy in the merchant service until his failure, and afterwards in the employ of Brown & Bartlett and Farris & Stocker and others, and died in 1805. Daniel Lunt was with his brother in the "Dalton" and his fellow-prisoner in Mill Prison and died in 1787. Cutting Lunt was also an officer on board the "Bon Homme Richard" and a prisoner in Mill Prison. Afterwards, while on a cruise in the privateer "America," owned by Joseph Marquand, he was lost with all on board. Richard Lunt, a brother of Cutting, was also in Mill Prison, and it is presumed that he was on board the "Bon Homme Richard," and captured with his brother while in a boat pursuing in the fog a boat's crew of deserters. The following letter, the original of which is temporarily in possession of the writer, was written by Richard Lunt to his brother Paul while in prison:

"PLYMOUTH, Mill Prison, September 24, 1778.

"LOVING BROTHER,—I embrace this opportunity to let you know that I am in good health by the blessing of Almighty God and hope these few lines will find you in good health. I was taken the 24th of December after I left Newbury by the 'Reasonable' ship of war off Cape Finistere, and carried into Plymouth and kept on board the ships till the 7th of June following, and then committed to this prison for high treason and see no more likelihoods of having my liberty than there was the first day I was committed, only time brings all things in this world to an end and whether they desire to hang us or not I cannot tell. Our friends have raised a donation for the prisoners in England, that we are comfortable for food and raiment, and I desire to be content with the allotment of providence. I live in hopes of see home again, but am afraid it will be a long parting. I hear that Dr. Franklin have been trying for an exchange, but as we are committed for treason I do not think of being exchanged before the war is over, and when that will be nobody in this world knows. So no more at present, but remains

"Your Loving Brother till Death,

"RICHARD LUNT.

"P. S. I remember my kind love to you and to your wife and my duty to my parents, and likewise my love to my wife and children, and to brothers and sisters, hoping they are in good health.

"Brother Cutting is in good health and desires to be remembered to all friends. Ebenezer Brown likewise. The Newbury people are in health."

Edward Wigglesworth was a native of Ipswich and, after graduating at Harvard in 1761, removed to Newburyport and entered the employ of Nathaniel Tracy and Jonathan Jackson as supercargo and shipmaster. In 1776, as colonel, he commanded a regiment raised in the counties of Essex, York and Cumberland under General Gates. Under instructions from General Gates, he went on board the fleet on Lake Champlain the third in command, General Arnold and General Waterbury being first and second. In 1777 his regiment took part in the battle of Monmouth, and in 1778 he was appointed by Washington president of a court of inquiry to investigate the loss of Forts Montgomery and Clinton, which were surrendered by Governor Clinton. In 1779 he resigned his commission and retired to private life. He was a member of the Board of Selectmen of Newburyport in 1783 and 1784, and in 1792 was appointed by Washington collector of the port, which office he held until 1795. He died December 8, 1826.

Moses Brown was born in Salisbury, January 23, 1742. At the age of fifteen he began a sea life with Capt. William Coffin; at eighteen was mate, and at twenty-five was in command of the schooner "Phebe," of Newburyport, which place continued afterwards to be his residence. In 1777, while he was in command of the brig "Hannah," he was captured and held a short time on board a prison-ship at Rhode Island. In 1778 he commanded the privateer "General Arnold," and in one of his cruises in her was captured by the British ship "Experiment." After his release he was in command of the "Intrepid," twenty guns, and the "Hercules," and a letter of marque of twenty-two guns, for which he was commissioned by the Continental Congress. In 1798 he was appointed to the command of the "Merrimac," mounting twenty nine-pounders and eight six-pounders, and joined the squadron at the West Indies. While in this command he captured the brig "Brillante," sixteen guns; the "Magiciene," fourteen guns; the "Phoenix" and "Bonaparte," each fourteen guns, and retook a number of English and American vessels that had been captured by the French. Under the administration of Jefferson, Capt. Brown left the service and once more engaged in the merchant marine, and while on a voyage home died, January 2, 1804.

In the enumeration of those who were active in the Revolutionary period, the Rev. Jonathan Parsons, of the old South Church, must not be forgotten. He made patriotism a part of his religion, and to his inspiring words much of the spirit which characterized the people of Newburyport was due. After the news of the battle of Lexington was received, he made an appeal to his hearers at the close of the ser-





men on the next Sunday, to form volunteer companies at once, and invited those who wished to aid to step into the aisle. Capt. Ezra Lunt stepped out, and enough with him, and then and there the first volunteer company in Newburyport was formed. He was born in West Springfield in 1705, and graduated at Yale College in 1729. He was first settled in the ministry at Lyme, Conn., and was there living when Rev. George Whitefield made his first visit to America, in 1728. In 1746, on the 3d of January, the First Presbyterian Church was formed by nineteen persons who had seceded from the old First Parish of Newbury. During the few first years of its life Rev. Joseph Adams, a graduate of Harvard in 1742, presided over its ministrations in a small building situated on High Street. In 1756 the society was incorporated, and the present venerable place of worship, at the corner of Federal and School Streets, was erected. It is indicative of the habits of that time that it was noted and has always been remembered that the frame of the meeting-house was raised without the utterance of an oath by the workmen and without the occurrence of an accident. The probable explanation of so remarkable a fact is, that no intoxicating liquors were drunk during the performance. While Mr. Parsons was at Lyme, he and Mr. Whitefield had formed a strong friendship, and by the advice of the latter, Mr. Parsons was invited to settle over the young society. In 1756 he was installed, and remained with the society until his death, July 19, 1776. He was buried under the pulpit of his church, by the side of his distinguished friend.

In the eastern corner of the church is erected a cenotaph to the memory of Whitefield, who, in a ministry of eight years, preached more than ten thousand sermons and crossed the Atlantic thirteen times. He preached his first sermon in Newburyport, September 30, 1740, and September 30, 1870, he there died, and was buried under the pulpit of the church in whose welfare he had felt a lively interest. Mr. Whitefield was born in Gloucester, England, where his mother kept the Bell Inn, in 1714. From the school of his native town he entered as servitor at Pembroke College, Oxford, and was ordained for the ministry by the Bishop of Gloucester. He preached in prisons and the open fields, and multitudes followed to hear him exhibit his persuasive eloquence. He first came to America in 1738, making occasional visits afterwards, as he could be spared from his labors at home, until death cut short his career. Many years ago some of the bones of Whitefield were stolen from the coffin and carried to England, but in 1849, many years after, the pastor of the church received a box, which, on being opened, was found to contain the missing members.

Rev. John Lowell was a descendant of John Lowle, a Welshman, who was one of the earliest settlers of Newbury. He was born in Boston in 1702, and graduated at Harvard in 1721. In 1725 the First Church

of Newburyport was established by seceders from the First Parish of Newbury, and in the following year, on the 19th of January, Mr. Lowell was settled as its pastor. He was a man of culture and refinement, and to his example and influence was due much of that elevation of character for which Newburyport became distinguished. His library, large for those days, his scholarly attainments, his wide knowledge, together with a free and liberal use of his powers, could not fail to stamp and give tone to the community in which he lived. He died in 1767, leaving one son, John Lowell, born in Newbury, June 17, 1743, and a graduate of Harvard in 1760, who, besides many other honors, received the appointment in 1801 of justice of the United States Circuit Court for Maine, New Hampshire, Massachusetts and Rhode Island. Indeed, few men have been more distinguished, both for their own attainments and for those transmitted to their descendants, than the Rev. Mr. Lowell. Three of his grandsons, sons of Judge John Lowell, maintained the reputation of the family. John Lowell, born at Newburyport, October 6, 1769, graduated at Harvard in 1786, and was admitted to the bar in 1789. He received a degree of LL.D. from his *alma mater* in 1814, and became distinguished as a writer on politics, agriculture, theology and other topics. He was one of the founders of the Massachusetts General Hospital, the Boston Athenæum and the Hospital Life Insurance Company. Francis Cabot Lowell, born in Newburyport, April 7, 1775, graduated at Harvard in 1793, was influential in introducing the cotton manufacture into the United States, and the city of Lowell, named for him, stands as a monument to his memory. Charles Lowell, born in Boston, August 15, 1782, graduated at Harvard in 1800, and became the well-known minister of the West Church in Cambridge Street, Boston. Nor did this generation exhaust the energies of the family blood. John Lowell, son of Francis Cabot, and great-grandson of Rev. John Lowell, of Newburyport, was born in Boston, May 11, 1799, and at his death, in 1836, bequeathed the sum of two hundred and fifty thousand dollars to maintain forever in Boston, his native city, annual courses of free lectures on natural and revealed religion, physics and chemistry, botany, zoology, geology and mineralogy, philology, literature and eloquence. This establishment, known as the Lowell Institute, went into operation in the winter of 1839-40. James Russell Lowell the poet, son of Rev. Charles Lowell, is too well-known to be mentioned here. John Amory Lowell, of Boston, son of John, the founder of the hospital, graduated at Harvard in 1815, and became one of Boston's most distinguished merchants. Nor was the family blood exhausted in this generation. John Lowell, son of John Amory Lowell, a Harvard graduate of 1843, and, until his recent resignation, judge of the United States District Court, and Charles Russell Lowell, a graduate of Harvard in 1864, who, from a captaincy of the



Sixth Cavalry, in 1860, rose to be brigadier-general in 1864, and died soon after from wounds received at Cedar Creek, in Virginia, have borne ample testimony to the purity and vigor of the blood which flowed in the veins of Rev. John Lowell, of Newburyport.

Dudley Atkins Tyng, though a member of the bar, is believed to have neither studied nor practiced law in Essex County, and may therefore be more properly mentioned in this narrative than in the chapter on the Bench and Bar. He was born in Newburyport, September 3, 1760, and grew into manhood while the Revolution was going on. He was the fifth child of Dudley Atkins, who died at the age of thirty-seven. He received his early education at Dummer Academy, and by the liberality of Tristram Dalton, Jonathan Jackson, Nathaniel Tracy and John Tracy was enabled to reap the advantages of a college education. He owed his name to his grandmother, Mary, daughter of Governor Joseph Dudley, who married his grandfather, Joseph Atkins, an officer in the British navy, who settled in Newbury, and died in 1773, at the age of ninety-three. He graduated from Harvard in 1781, and in his senior year while the war was in progress, when the government obtained from the British commander then in possession of Penobscot Bay permission to send Dr. Williams, Professor of Astronomy at Harvard, to that bay for the purpose of observing a total eclipse of the sun, expected in October, 1780, the professor selected John Davis, of Plymouth, and Dudley Atkins, members of the graduating class, as his assistants in the expedition.

After leaving college he became teacher in the family of Mrs. Selden, sister of Judge Mercer, one of the judges of the highest court in Virginia, and also entered his name in the office of the judge for the study of law. He was admitted to practice in Virginia, and on his return to Newburyport was admitted to the bar of Essex County in 1791. About the time of his return an event occurred which, for a time at least, imposed a check to his career in his chosen profession. Mrs. Winslow, of Tyngsborough, Massachusetts, sister of James Tyng, then recently deceased, and the last male heir to a considerable landed estate in that town, feeling a pride in the continuance of the property, in at least the family name, selected him, a distant relative, as its possessor, and bequeathed to him a thousand acres of land on the condition, (which he accepted) that he would add Tyng to his name. After a few years of unsuccessful experiment on his farm he returned to Newburyport, and was appointed by Washington, in 1795, collector of that port. In 1803 he was removed from office by Jefferson, and at once took up his residence in Boston with the determination of pursuing his profession. Not long after his arrival in Boston, Ephraim Williams, the first reporter of the decisions of the Supreme Judicial Court, resigned his office, and Mr. Tyng was appointed in his place. His exactness and

thoroughness as a reporter have always been recognized by members of the bar. His Reports cover the period from September, 1804, to March, 1822, and are contained in seventeen volumes. In the summer of 1822 he returned to Newburyport, and as a graduate of Dummer Academy, he organized an association of its alumni, and gave not a little of his time and thought in his declining years to the institution where his early instruction was acquired. In 1823 he received a degree of LL.D. from his *alma mater*. He married, about 1792, Sarah, eldest daughter of Stephen Higginson, and had a number of children, among whom were Rev. Stephen Higginson Tyng, a graduate of Harvard in 1817, who died in New York in 1885, at the age of eighty-five, and Dr. Atkins, of Newburyport, who resumed the old family name. He died in Newburyport, August 1, 1839.

There are others among the representative men of the Revolutionary period who might be mentioned, if the space allotted to this narrative permitted. Enough, however, has been said to illustrate the patriotic spirit which actuated the people of Newburyport in the trying times of the war, and the energy and liberality with which it was exhibited.

## CHAPTER CXLIV.

### NEWBURYPORT—(Continued).

#### SECOND PERIOD.

*From the Revolution to the Close of the War of 1812.*

AFTER the close of the war the old industries and trade of the town at once revived. The activity which once characterized it had not died; it had, by the necessities of the time, been drawn into new channels, where it lost none of its vigor. As the necessities disappeared and these new channels were closed, it resumed its wonted course in the ordinary pursuits of peace. Like the ship after a storm, whose tattered sails and broken spars must be first repaired before the voyage can be successfully pursued, there was much in the condition of the town's municipal affairs to be examined and readjusted before the people could with an easy mind enter into the race for personal gain. The debts of the war must be paid or secured; the schools must be once more carefully supervised and improved; long-neglected streets must be renovated, and all those interests which, during the seven years of war, had been overlooked, must once more claim aid and support. With these at last properly cared for, Newburyport entered again on a career of prosperity and wealth. The fisheries, foreign trade and ship-building rapidly grew, while the business of distilleries, which had never very much languished, largely increased in volume. So far as the fisheries are concerned, they cannot be said to





have been at any time identified with Newburyport, though at times one of its chief pursuits. In the first quarter of the present century there were employed in the district of Newburyport probably about forty vessels in the cod fishery and seventy-five in the mackerel fishery. The latter fishery had its beginning after the War of 1812. The fur seal and whale fisheries, both at one time carried on with varied success, have been long since abandoned. At the present time the fishery business has entirely disappeared, Messrs. Boardman and Sanborn having been the last to be engaged in it. The trade with foreign ports seems to have reached its maximum at the very beginning of this century. The stimulus given to business by the return of peace carried the navigation of the town before 1789 up to 99 vessels of 11,607 tons; in 1796 to 19,752 tons, and in 1806 to 29,713 tons. Of this amount, 25,291 was the amount of registered tonnage engaged in foreign trade. At the same time the duties on imports received in the district amounted to nearly \$200,000. In 1805 there belonged to Newburyport alone, 41 ships, 62 brigs, 2 snows, 2 barques and 66 schooners.

There is no industry so thoroughly identified with Newburyport, and so creditable to its people, as that of ship-building. There are certain occupations and enterprises which seem indigenous to certain localities. They can neither be transplanted to new soils, nor be replaced by those which belong to other localities. A business to be successful must grow with the place, as the boy and his trade, the farmer and his farm, the merchant and his commerce. Nantucket has attempted in vain to introduce the cod-fishery; Newburyport and Plymouth have failed in their efforts to introduce the whale-fishery. We see all along our seaboard today, in ports which have languished with the decline of their navigation, what we cannot help looking upon as unnatural efforts to transform them into manufacturing towns, and thus divert them from their true destiny. It is perhaps, not too much to hope, that when the process of centralization which, during the last sixty or seventy years, has been drawing foreign trade from the smaller outposts to Portland and Boston and New York shall cease, the full waters of commerce will flow back to these depleted harbors, and restore the level which, in the natural order of things, must at last everywhere exist.

To Newburyport ship-building has always been an indigenous growth. The river along its front, reaching into the timber lands of New Hampshire, furnished at the lowest cost the best materials for ships. The ribs, planking, ceiling, beams and knees cut from oak timber, were floated from the forests directly to the building-yards, and enabled the builders to successfully compete with those in other less-favored places, where more costly transportation was necessary.

The building of vessels on the Merrimac was probably carried on at a date much earlier than any date which positive evidence can fix. On the 5th of

January, 1680, the town of Newbury voted "To grant the petition of Benjamin Rolfe, Doctor John Dole and Richard Dole, for four or five rods on the flats from Watts' cellar spring to Ensign Greenleaf's, for a place to build a wharf, and a place to build vessels upon, provided they come not within ten or twelve feet of the spring, and make up said wharf within three years." Here seems to be tangible evidence that as early as 1680 ship-building was carried on on the river. According to Mr. John J. Currier, from whose valuable pamphlet, entitled an "Historical Sketch of Ship-Building on the Merrimac River," the writer has freely drawn, Watts' cellar was near the spot where the market-house now stands. In 1698, Ezra Cottle "began to build ships where Mr. Johnson did," just below Chandler's Lane (now Federal Street). Mr. Johnson seems to have been engaged in the business in 1695. Between 1681 and 1714 one hundred and thirty vessels were built on the river, one hundred of which were built in Newbury. The industry was recognized by the town as so important that it was fostered as one of its most valuable interests. For many years most of the building-yards were the property of the town, and leased for longer or shorter terms, in whole or in part, according to the wishes of the lessees. In 1711 a building-yard near Watts' cellar was let to Colonel Partridge, Mr. Clement and Mr. Hodges. In 1734 other leases are recorded, either made by the town or by the "Proprietors," who owned a strip along the river, intersected by the landing places and the building-yards belonging to the town. Mr. Currier states that in 1723 there was a ship-yard at Thurlo's Bridge over the Parker River, and that ships were built there that year. In the middle of the last century Gideon Woodwell built fifty-two vessels on the lower side of Water Street, near the foot of Marlboro' Street. Farther up the river Samuel Moggaridge was engaged in ship-building in 1730, and it is said that in 1766, two years after the incorporation of Newburyport, seventy-two vessels were on the stocks, between Pierce's farm and Moggaridge's Point.

Mr. Currier says, "All the vessels built at this period were doubtless duly registered, but no trace of them can be found among the colonial records at the State-House in Boston; and the papers and documents at the Custom-House in Newburyport do not extend further back than the year 1789, so that information in regard to them can be obtained from neither of these sources." It would be interesting to know something of the size, ownership and general construction of these vessels. It is worthy of remark, however, that many of them were built for merchants in England, and when completed they sailed from Newbury loaded with timber and agricultural products. The "Jew's Rafts," so called, were built in Moggaridge's yard for a Mr. Levi, a Jew. An English paper of 1770 announces the arrival of one of them as follows:

"The 'Newbury,' Capt. Rose, from Newbury in New England, lies at



the Orchard House, Blackwell. The above is a raft of timber in the form of a ship, which came from Newbury to soundings, in twenty six days, and is worthy the attention of the curious."

Among the leading builders before the Revolution, were Ralph Cross, who was born in Ipswich in 1706, and was the father of Stephen and Ralph Cross, already mentioned in this narrative; and William Gerrish, a descendant of William Gerrish, an early settler of Newbury. At a later day, during the Revolution, the construction of privateers was largely carried on, and in 1777 a sixteen-gun ship, called the "Neptune," was built, and when leaving port capized and sunk in sixteen fathoms of water. After the Revolution Elias Jackman established a yard and carried it on thirty years, and Orlando B. Merrill, who in 1798 built the brig "Pickering," fourteen guns, for the United States. In the same year William Bartlett, William Coombs, Dudley A. Tyng, Moses Brown, W. P. Johnson, Nicholas Johnson, William Farris, Ebenezer Stocker and Samuel A. Otis, Jr., and other citizens built and loaned to the government the ship "Merri-mack," of about three hundred and fifty tons burden, which was commanded by Capt. Moses Brown, and during her five years' service captured a number of French vessels and recaptured many English and American prizes. She was built by Major Cross, under the direction of William Hackett, in seventy-five days. Her cost was \$46,170, and at the end of five years she was sold in Boston for \$21,154, when, with her name changed to the "Monticello" she was soon after wrecked on Cape Cod.

In 1799 the ship "Warren," eighteen guns, was built in Mr. Webster's yard in Salisbury, under the direction of Nicholas Johnson, of Newburyport, by contract with the United States, and commanded by Capt. Timothy Newman, of Newburyport. In 1819, the year after the embargo, which was so disastrous to shipping interests, was repealed, there were built on the Merrimack River twenty-one ships, thirteen brigs, one schooner and seven small craft, with a combined tonnage of twelve thousand tons. In 1813, during the War of 1812, the United States sloop-of-war, "Wasp," was built by Orlando B. Merrill, and about the same time two gun-boats were built by Stephen Coffin, in Newbury.

Among the later builders have been Joseph Collin, Elisha Briggs, Stephen Dutton, Jonathan and Thomas Merrill, Joseph Jackman, William Currier, James L. Townsend, George E. Currier, Charles H. Currier, John Currier, John W. S. Colby, Enoch P. Lunt, Stephen Jackman, Jr., George W. Jackman, Jr., Eben Manson, Fillmore & McQuillen, Atkinson & Fillmore, Donald McKay, Joseph Pickett, W. B. Coffin, and Cyrus Burnham. The following vessels have been built in Newburyport since the Revolution, most of which are either enrolled or registered in the Newburyport Custom-House.

	Tons.		Tons.
1781. Brig Hibernia.....	108	1783. Schooner Hibernia.....	78
1783. Schooner Hope.....	95	1784. Brig Success.....	147

	Tons.		Tons.
1784. Ship Thomas.....	230	1814. Schooner Peace.....	56
1784. Brig Vulture.....	172	1814. " Crocodile.....	40
1785. " Sally.....	157	1814. Brig Hesper.....	157
1785. Sloop Washington.....	67	1815. Schooner Frances.....	72
1785. Schooner Edmy.....	118	1816. " Dolphin.....	80
1786. " Two Brothers.....	52	1816. " Caleb.....	81
1786. " Abigail.....	73	1816. " Four Sisters.....	115
1787. " Success.....	48	1817. " New Packet.....	75
1788. " Polly.....	44	1817. " Eagle.....	97
1788. " Betsey.....	21	1817. " Governor.....	58
1789. Sloop Nancy.....	84	1817. " Lady Brooks.....	109
1789. Ship Industry.....	206	1817. " Pickrel.....	41
1789. Schooner Hannah.....	82	1817. " Anglet.....	54
1789. Schooner Pilgrim.....	58	1817. " William.....	35
1790. Brig Olive Branch.....	140	1817. " Dispatch.....	118
1790. Brig Mary.....	206	1817. " Hornet.....	38
1791. Schooner Martha.....	34	1818. " Perch.....	43
1791. Ship Mary.....	163	1818. Brig William.....	138
1791. " Henry.....	262	1818. Schooner Success.....	58
1791. Schooner Martha.....	33	1818. " Driver.....	83
1792. " Dove.....	28	1818. " Sea Serpent.....	65
1792. Brig Nymph.....	35	1818. " Chas. Sydney.....	103
1792. Sloop Three Brothers.....	77	1818. " Teazer.....	61
1792. Brig Nancy.....	81	1819. " Franklin.....	45
1792. Schooner Nymph.....	97	1819. " John Howard.....	51
1792. Brig Sally.....	122	1819. " John.....	41
1792. Schooner Sally.....	89	1819. " Peacock.....	41
1793. Schooner Stork.....	70	1819. " Peacock.....	51
1793. Brig Minerva.....	143	1819. Brig Hannah.....	154
1793. " Union.....	146	1820. " Ohio.....	129
1793. Ship Peggy.....	214	1820. Schooner Robert.....	17
1794. Brig Minerva.....	150	1820. " Oscar.....	54
1794. Brig Peter.....	98	1821. Brig Rapid.....	234
1794. " Win. and Mary.....	172	1825. Schooner Sarah Atkins.....	66
1794. Schooner Mary.....	130	1825. " Enterprise.....	47
1795. " Three Sisters.....	69	1827. Brig Patron.....	177
1795. Brig Minerva.....	115	1827. Schooner Harriet.....	55
1795. Schooner Harmony.....	89	1828. " Essex.....	50
1795. Brig Friendship.....	145	1828. " Maize.....	72
1795. " Harriet.....	119	1828. " John.....	21
1795. Schooner Three Sisters.....	90	1828. " Francis.....	60
1796. Ship Wm. and Henry.....	251	1829. " Bounty.....	60
1796. Schooner Sally.....	74	1830. " Globe.....	48
1796. Ship Commerce.....	173	1830. " Harkness.....	71
1796. Brig Mary.....	135	1831. " Triton.....	56
1796. Schooner Bee.....	76	1832. " Fame.....	48
1796. " Alexander.....	81	1832. " Mechanic.....	48
1799. Brig Mary.....	134	1833. " Glide.....	74
1800. Ship Angelina.....	238	1835. " Regulator.....	16
1800. Brig Salem.....	137	1835. " Warren.....	46
1800. " Amazon.....	119	1836. " Sea Flower.....	54
1800. Schooner Cyrus.....	111	1837. " Asia.....	69
1801. " Triton.....	108	1837. " Unicorn.....	68
1801. Sloop Mary.....	85	1837. " Ikenia.....	66
1801. Brig Jefferson.....	138	1837. " Equator.....	61
1801. " Triton.....	43	1838. " Angola.....	30
1801. Sloop Mary.....	88	1838. " Harriet.....	23
1803. Brig Mae.....	114	1835. " Alert.....	21
1804. Schooner Ann.....	76	1845. Brig Merrimack.....	118
1804. Ship Angus.....	270	1846. " Ansonia.....	199
1804. Brig Geo. Washington.....	152	1846. Brig Lancelot.....	299
1805. Schooner Eleanor.....	103	1847. Schooner Factory Girl.....	20
1805. " Rebecca.....	18	1847. " Hannah Grant.....	104
1806. Brig Unity.....	176	1847. Ship Joshua Mansion.....	546
1806. Ship Boaz.....	304	1848. Schooner Margaret Ann.....	100
1807. Brig Adeline.....	133	1849. " Alice.....	21
1807. Bark Circle.....	145	1849. " Antelope.....	75
1807. Sloop John.....	73	1850. " Pearl.....	31
1809. Schooner Alexander.....	47	1850. " America.....	50
1811. Brig St. Paul.....	266	1850. Ship Arab.....	525
1811. " Juno.....	196	1851. " Inez.....	709
1813. Schooner Traveller.....	77	1851. Bark Falcon.....	510
1813. " Little Duck.....	42	1851. " Hesper.....	392
1813. " Mink.....	32	1851. Ship Victory.....	679
1813. " Lark.....	41	1851. " Huzzar.....	725
1814. " Union.....	38	1851. Schooner Gen. Cushing.....	98





Tons.	Tons.	Tons.	Tons.
1851, Schooner Mary Felker..... 109	1858, Schooner Tada Montez..... 105	1866, Brig Mary Plummer..... 317	1874, Steamboat Everett..... 25
1851, " Herald..... 94	1858, " Bucephalus..... 106	1866, Ship Montana..... 1209	1874, Bark Edward Kildere..... 1615
1852, " Arctic..... 115	1858, " Ihawatha..... 106	1866, Bark Warren Ordway..... 181	1874, Schooner Jordan L. Matt..... 139
1852, " Abby Yale..... 22	1858, " R. B. Sumner..... 134	1866, Ship Nomanum..... 1150	1874, Ship Exporter..... 150
1852, " Catharine Knight..... 121	1858, " Lachantress..... 109	1866, " Ellmore..... 688	1874, " Susan Gilmore..... 1294
1852, " Lydia..... 94	1858, Ship Black Hawk..... 941	1866, Steamship Ontario..... 3000	1874, " Radiant..... 1608
1852, " Huntress..... 99	1858, " Star of Peace..... 941	1866, Ship Timour..... 3000	1874, Schooner Anson Shinson..... 221
1852, " Flash..... 125	1858, " Caspee..... 860	1866, Bark John H. Pearson..... 422	1874, Ship G. C. Traftant..... 1502
1852, " Golden West..... 141	1858, Bark Heroine..... 416	1866, Schooner Matchless..... 39	1874, " Pyrola..... 135
1852, Ship Jonah Perry..... 430	1858, Ship Renown..... 1040	1867, " Carrie E. Butler..... 92	1874, " Reporter..... 1450
1852, Bark Flash..... 514	1859, Schooner Lizzie Williams..... 86	1867, Steamship Erie..... 3000	1874, " Landseer..... 1419
1852, Schooner Rival..... 125	1859, Schooner Prioresse..... 36	1867, Ship Garden Beach..... 974	1874, " Harmonia..... 1497
1852, Ship Parthenia..... 840	1859, " Hado..... 163	1867, " United States..... 1315	1874, Schooner Willie H. Lord..... 131
1852, " Russell Sturgis..... 1000	1859, Ship Lucretia..... 896	1867, Schooner Crown Point..... 103	1874, " W. H. Lewis..... 625
1852, " Antione..... 890	1859, " John Porter..... 997	1867, Brig Lizzie H. Knibball..... 230	1874, " Wm. B. Hurlock..... 650
1852, Ship Howland..... 930	1859, " Charles H. Lunt..... 998	1867, Schooner Commence..... 107	1874, " Henry Withington..... 69
1853, Schooner Golden Eagle..... 42	1859, Schooner Carrie Huse..... 138	1867, " Lizzie Thompson..... 71	1875, Bark Albert Russell..... 762
1853, " Tekoa..... 141	1859, " Edward L. Meyer..... 161	1867, Scht. Lottie E. Cook..... 82	1875, Ship Big Bonanza..... 1173
1853, Ship Hightyer..... 1135	1859, Bark Germantown..... 309	1868, " Martha T. Pike..... 81	1875, " Daniel J. Tenney..... 1687
1853, Bark Naud Queen..... 549	1859, " Gelu..... 555	1868, " Harvest..... 64	1875, " Brown Brothers..... 1133
1853, Ship Guiding Star..... 300	1859, " Persia..... 509	1868, Bark Signal..... 375	1875, Bark John Shepard..... 615
1853, " Constitution..... 1188	1859, Schooner Merrimack..... 85	1868, Ship Augusta..... 1326	1875, Schooner Hattie S. Newman..... 115
1853, " John N. Cushing..... 633	1860, Ship Fear Not..... 1012	1868, Brig Tula..... 181	1875, " Phantom..... 50
1853, " Jabez Snow..... 1073	1860, Bark Abel Kaser..... 140	1868, Bark Agate..... 626	1876, " Ella M. Johnson..... 28
1853, " Dreamaught..... 1144	1860, Ship Albert Carrier..... 1060	1868, Ship Monte Rosa..... 1348	1876, Bark Haydon Brown..... 906
1853, Schooner Fearless..... 132	1860, Schooner Henry Perkins..... 195	1868, Schooner David J. Adams..... 103	1876, Ship Farragut..... 1549
1853, Ship Volant..... 900	1860, Ship Sarah Chase..... 368	1868, Schooner Charles A. Ropes..... 103	1876, Schooner Ellie F. Long..... 150
1853, Schooner Amelia..... 120	1860, " Jacob Horton..... 1411	1868, Bark Metis..... 629	1876, Bark Obed Baxter..... 90
1853, Ship Whistler..... 824	1860, " Glendower..... 1063	1869, " S. E. Kingsbury..... 520	1876, Scow New Era..... 200
1854, " Star King..... 1170	1860, " Athol Edward..... 849	1869, " Esott..... 636	1877, Bark Wilham Hale..... 808
1854, " Black Prince..... 1050	1860, Schooner Chatter..... 116	1869, Scht. Annie Hooper..... 103	1877, Schooner Josie Johnson..... 27
1854, Schooner Flying Cloud..... 40	1861, Ship Kenmore..... 1000	1869, " Ben Perley Poore..... 120	1877, " San Blas..... 601
1854, Ship Sora..... 708	1861, " Whampoa..... 1144	1869, Schooner Edw. Burnett..... 192	1877, Bark H. G. Johnson..... 1080
1854, " Trunkadour..... 1200	1861, Bark Schanoyl..... 416	1869, Ship Whittier..... 1295	1877, " Abbie Carter..... 35
1854, " Merrimack..... 108	1861, " Nabob..... 534	1869, Schooner D. A. Wilson..... 19	1877, Ship Jabez Howe..... 1648
1854, " Commonwealth..... 1245	1861, " Star of Peace..... 120	1869, Bark Envy..... 599	1877, Schooner Forest Mud..... 12
1854, Scht. E. N. Williams..... 75	1861, " Gunnside..... 156	1869, Scht. Hattie E. Smith..... 160	1877, " Mary E. Smith..... 33
1854, Bark Rapid..... 331	1862, Gunboat Marblehead..... 520	1870, Schooner Nettie Adams..... 25	1878, " Gerrie Freeman..... 15
1854, Ship Free Trade..... 1284	1862, Ship Mary Warren..... 925	1870, Scht. Rebecca J. Adams..... 78	1878, Bark Harvard..... 1033
1854, " Mercury..... 840	1862, " Ringoon..... 1144	1870, " Mary Bardett..... 196	1878, Schooner Genevieve..... 8
1854, " Driver..... 1595	1862, " Winona..... 1102	1870, Ship Importer..... 1270	1878, " O. T. Baley..... 68
1854, " Oliver Putnam..... 1074	1862, Bark Sarah..... 436	1870, Schooner Victor..... 166	1878, " M. A. Barstow..... 47
1854, " Gleamer..... 1000	1863, " A. W. Stevens..... 475	1870, Bark Essex..... 709	1878, " Ernest M. Snow..... 9
1855, Schooner Edward Hall..... 276	1863, Ship Valparaiso..... 1159	1870, Schooner Spring Bird..... 124	1878, Ship Frank N. Thayer..... 1647
1855, Ship Moses, Davenport..... 899	1863, Brig Newbury..... 291	1871, " Nellie C. Foster..... 120	1880, Schooner Jennie Stevens..... 112
1855, " Brewster..... 985	1863, Gunboat Ascutney..... 1010	1871, " Fannie Byrnes..... 10	1880, Steamer City of Havre..... 174
1855, " Lawrence Brown..... 795	1863, Bark A. N. Franklin..... 426	1871, " I. H. Osborne..... 270	1880, Schooner Promenade..... 8
1855, " Old Colony..... 880	1863, Ship George Warren..... 970	1871, " Mary Bradford..... 8	1881, " Cox & Green..... 591
1855, " Lyra..... 842	1863, " Longwood..... 1170	1871, Bark Harvester..... 780	1881, " Ezra L. Ferris..... 590
1855, " Grace Gordon..... 781	1864, " Edith..... 1116	1872, Scht. Miantonomah..... 77	1881, Ship W. H. Lincoln..... 1727
1855, " George West..... 1123	1864, " Winged Raven..... 1228	1872, Ship Franconia..... 1313	1882, Bark B. F. Hunt, Jr..... 1190
1855, Brig Palestine..... 212	1864, Bark Calypso..... 500	1872, Bark Jas. G. Pendleton..... 908	1882, Schooner Benj. Hale..... 597
1855, Ship Caberzo..... 610	1864, " Eugenia..... 583	1872, Scht. Frank G. Dowse..... 411	1882, " Ida L. Hull..... 498
1855, " Charmer..... 1000	1864, " Mary Alice..... 710	1872, Schooner Cayenne..... 88	1882, Ship John Carrier..... 1995
1855, " War Hawk..... 900	1864, Schooner Eustace..... 236	1872, " Jacob Houseman..... 150	1882, Steamer Merrimack..... 263
1855, " Venter..... 551	1864, Ship Sapphira..... 1205	1873, " W. S. Jordan..... 460	1883, Schooner Chas. C. Dame..... 597
1855, " Darling..... 1070	1864, Schooner Samuel E. Fabens..... 155	1873, Bark Wakefield..... 901	1883, " Albert H. Cross..... 358
1855, " Blandina Dudley..... 873	1864, Ship Naples..... 826	1873, Schooner South Shore..... 390	1883, " Albert T. Stearns..... 508
1855, " John Wells..... 841	1864, " Elcano..... 1210	1873, Ship Neanchus..... 1288	1883, Ship Mary L. Cushing..... 1658
1855, " Blundell..... 630	1864, Schooner Mary Lunt..... 178	1873, Schooner Cecile..... 174	1883, Schooner Maude Shorewood..... 524
1855, " East Indian..... 897	1865, Ship Herald..... 773	1873, Ship Victoria..... 1349	1883, " William C. French..... 496
1855, " Indus..... 819	1865, " Tennyson..... 1247	1873, Schooner Edith L. Steacie..... 265	
1855, Bark Algonquin..... 650	1865, " Cadmus..... 912	1873, Bark John J. Marsh..... 410	
1855, " Orlando..... 270	1865, Brig Sally Brown..... 426	1873, Ship Thomas Dant..... 1145	
1855, Ship Polydore..... 950	1865, Schooner Oliver A. Lewis..... 23	1874, Schooner Annie C. Quiner..... 97	
1855, " Crown Point..... 1099	1865, Bark George Kingman..... 412		
1857, Ship Victory..... 1214	1865, Ship John Harvey..... 756		
1857, " Sarah Newman..... 909	1865, Brig Isis..... 538		
1857, " Riena del Sano..... 1033	1866, Schooner G. W. Brown..... 60		
1857, Schooner Sarah Woodbury..... 222	1866, " Ocean Pearl..... 125		
1857, Ship Josiah L. Hale..... 1994			
1857, " Reynard..... 1051			
1857, Brig Timandra..... 174			
1857, Ship Elizabeth Cushing..... 886			





1881. Schooner Warner Moore 444	1884. Schooner Maggie A n-
1883. " James B. Page 612	draws, ..... 615
1884. " Rose Ester- brook..... 657	1885. " Mary A. Tremby 425
1884. " Leander F. Gould..... 70	1887. " Senator Morgan.
1884. " John C. Greg- ory..... 373	1887. " Surprise..... 15
	1887. Steamer Josie M..... 23
	1887. Sloop Timent..... 9
	1887. Steamer Minnesota..... 43

The ship "Mary L. Cushing," built in 1883, was the last ship built in Massachusetts.

It will be noticed in the above list that the class of vessels materially changed in 1851. This was owing partly to the demand for larger vessels after the discovery of California gold, but chiefly to the annexation to Newburyport, in April, 1851, of a part of Newbury containing building yards, in which vessels of a large tonnage had previously been built.

The prosperity of Newburyport continued, with no other check than that imposed by European complications, in the last years of the last century, until the embargo in 1807. The population, which at its birth in 1764 was 2282, had increased to 4837 in 1790, to 5946 in 1800, and about 7500 in 1807. The registered tonnage, which was about 9000 at the close of the war, had increased to 14,819 in 1794, to 15,412 in 1800, and in 1807 to 26,799. This amount of registered tonnage has never since been exceeded, except in the years 1809 and 1810, immediately after the repeal of the embargo, when in the former of these years it amounted to 29,571 tons, and in the latter to 29,897. In 1808, during the embargo, it was reduced to 22,191 tons. The enrolled tonnage which, at the close of the war, was about 2500 tons, found its maximum in 1828, when it amounted to 14,707 tons. The tonnage employed in the fisheries was the largest in 1838, when it amounted to 7709 tons. In 1851 it amounted to 7435 tons, and since then has been steadily declining.

In the First Congress, after the adoption of the Constitution an appropriation was made for the support of the Plum Island Lights, and the light houses, with a certain amount of land, were ceded to the government. Previous to that time such coast lights as there were, were maintained by the States or by local authorities. Those at Plum Island had been maintained by the Marine Society. In 1790 Abner Lowell was appointed by the government "light tender," under the following commission:

"*GEORGE WASHINGTON, President of the United States of America.*

"To all who shall see these presents know ye, that I have appointed and do appoint Abner Lowell keeper of the light houses on Plum Island, Massachusetts, to exercise and fulfil the powers and duties of that office, and hold the same, with three-quarters of a mile of sand island on the north, and with all the authorities and privileges and emoluments thereunto appertaining during the pleasure of the President of the United States for the time being.

"Given under my hand at the City of New York the tenth day of March, A.D. 1790.

"*GEORGE WASHINGTON*"

The fleet at that time sailing from Newburyport consisted of six ships, forty-five brigs, thirty-nine schooners and twenty-eight sloops, making probably as many as two or three arrivals per day during the year. Mr. Lowell was succeeded by his

son Lewis Lowell, who held the position until 1823, and will, perhaps, be remembered by some readers. He was a remarkable man, and united the performance of his light duties with those of a pilot and a life-saving service. The families of Newburyport whose husbands or fathers or brothers were on the sea, slept more in peace, knowing that the watchful eye of Lewis Lowell was open and ready to guide them into the river, or warn them of the dangers of a storm-beaten shore. He died at his post. On a wintry night he placed a basin of burning charcoal in one of the lanterns to keep his oil from chilling, and remaining too long under the influence of its fumes, was overcome, and found dead in the morning.

He was succeeded in 1823 by his son, Joseph Lowell, who served ten years, and was followed in 1833 by Phineas George, who served until 1866. Succeeding Mr. George were Francis D. Carlton, who served until 1861; Solomon Park, who served from 1861 to 1866; Joseph Lowell, from 1866 to 1870, and Henry Hunt, from 1870 to 1882. Since 1882 appointments to light-houses have been made by the Light-House Board by promotions in the service without regard to the claims of localities. When, by such promotions, a vacancy in Massachusetts is created, as is the case when a death or resignation occurs, the vacancy is reported to the collector of Boston and is filled by him.

A temporary ripple on the surface of public affairs, exciting an interest in the minds of the people of Newburyport, was caused by the efforts to form a State Constitution. In 1776 the Legislature voted that the Council and House "should enact such a Constitution for the State as they shall think best for the well-being of the country," and that it previously be made public for the perusal and approbation of the people. The old Assembly, which had existed under royal authority, was dissolved by Governor Gage in June, 1775. Until July of the next year Massachusetts had no legally organized government, and was for five years without a Governor. In July, 1776, a House of Representatives was chosen, in accordance with writs issued in the name of James Warren, the president of Provincial Congress, and was summoned to meet at Watertown. The new Legislature was substantially like that of the province, but was dependent upon the co-operation of the towns for the maintenance of its authority. As stated by Mr. Cushing, "the General Court was rather the Congress of these little corporations than the Legislature of an individual Commonwealth. When the General Court desired to ascertain the sense of the people it was usual to propose the subject in town-meetings."

The draft of a Constitution prepared by the General Court and then submitted to the town was not satisfactory to the people of Newburyport. At a meeting held March 26, 1778, it was voted:

"That this town are of opinion that the mode of representation contained in the constitution lately proposed by the convention of this date



is unequal and unjust, as thereby all the inhabitants of this state are not equally represented, and that some other parts of the same constitution are not founded on the true principles of government; and that a convention of the several towns of this county by their delegates, will have a probable tendency to reform the same, agreeably to the natural rights of mankind and the true principles of government."

It was also voted:

"That the selectmen be desired in behalf and in the name of the town, to write circular letters to the several towns within the county proposing a convention of those towns by their delegates to be holden at such time and place as the selectmen shall think proper; in said circular letters to propose to each of the towns aforesaid, to send the like number of delegates to said convention as the same towns have by law right to send representatives to the General Court."

In accordance with the proposition contained in these votes, a convention was held at Ipswich, in which Theophilus Parsons, then in the second year of his law practice, was a delegate from Newburyport. After a full consideration of the Constitution a committee was appointed to draw up a report, of which Mr. Parsons was a member, and his report, known as the "Essex Result," so satisfied the public mind of the unsatisfactory terms and provisions of the submitted Constitution as to lead to a convention to draft a new one in the winter of 1779-80, of which Mr. Parsons was a member and the final adoption of the Constitution under which, with its amendments, the people of Massachusetts have lived and prospered. In the Massachusetts Convention of 1789, to consult on the adoption of the Federal Constitution, Mr. Parsons and Rufus King were delegates from Newburyport, and it is perhaps not too much to say that the town they represented was largely influential in the final adoption of that instrument.

In 1789 the burdens of taxation had become so heavy on the people of the Commonwealth that an insurrection broke out in some of the counties, which has gone into history under the name of "Shay's Rebellion." A company was raised in Newburyport to join the expedition against Shay, the leader of the disturbance, and in March, 1789, the town voted "to grant to the soldiers that went against Shay a sum sufficient to make up their pay to forty-eight shillings per month." Capt. Ezra Lunt, who raised the first company in the War of the Revolution, took command of the company, but before he reached the scene of the insurrection news was received that it had been successfully quelled.

In the same year, as has been already mentioned, Washington visited Newburyport, and spent the night of Friday, the 1st of November, at the house of Nathaniel Tracy.

The troubles of the United States with France may be said to have begun with the commencement of the French Revolution in 1792. During the American Revolution our government and France entered into a treaty dated February 6, 1778, by the eleventh article of which France guaranteed our independence, and our government in return promised assistance in protecting the interests and possessions of France. The article was as follows:

"The two parties guarantee, mutually, from the present time and forever, against all other powers, to wit; The United States to His Most Christian Majesty, the present possession of the Crown of France in America, as well as those which it may acquire by the future treaty of peace. And His Most Christian Majesty guarantees, on his part, to the United States their liberty, sovereignty and independence, absolute and unlimited, as well in matters of government as commerce, and also their possessions, and the acquisitions or conquests that their confederation may obtain during the war."

At the date of the treaty the islands of Martinique and Guadeloupe belonged to the French. The latter island, discovered by Columbus in 1493 was settled by the French in 1635, and continued a French possession until 1794, when it was taken by the English. After that date, during the next half-century, it was captured and recaptured and finally ceded to France in 1814. At the time of the French and American treaty, in 1778, it was in the hands of the French. The island of Martinique, also discovered by Columbus in 1493, was settled by the French in 1635, and continued a French possession until 1794, when it was taken by the English and restored in 1802, to be again taken in 1809, and finally given up to France in 1814. This island also, at the time of the French and American treaty, was in the hands of the French.

During our Revolutionary War, France faithfully met all her obligations under the treaty. During her own revolution her possessions in the West Indies were threatened by the English; but our government not only failed to meet its treaty obligations, but in 1793 issued, through President Washington, a proclamation of neutrality. The town of Newburyport supported the President in his proclamation, and in town-meeting unanimously voted:

"That in the opinion of this town the neutrality of the United States during the war now waged by the several belligerent powers in Europe, is consistent with the honor and good faith of our government, and not repugnant to any treaties existing between the United States and any of those powers."

It was also voted unanimously:

"That in the opinion of this town a strict and uniform adherence to that neutrality is of the utmost importance to the best interests and happiness of our Country; That in the opinion of this town the late proclamation of the President declaring that neutrality was a constitutional and wise measure, resulting from his ardent attention to his public duties, his knowledge of, and vigilant attention to, their just rights and interests; That in the opinion of this town any infraction of the laws of neutrality by any of the citizens of the United States fitting out, or being interested in, armed vessels to cruise against the citizens or subjects of either of the belligerent powers, or personally engaged in such cruise, will naturally tend to injure essentially the agricultural, manufacturing and commercial interests of this Country."

The United States government was placed in a peculiar attitude. The eleventh article of the treaty of 1778 could not be carried out without violating its "treaty of peace and amity" with Great Britain. A severe pressure, however, was brought to bear upon the government and people by those having, at the time, authority in France; and Citizen Genet was sent to America, commissioned to make the observance of the article a condition of our free commerce with the West Indies. Through the ingenious machinations of Genet a party sprang up among our people in favor of the French claim and in hostility to the neutral





policy of Washington. His influence extended so far as to cause the House of Representatives to refuse to vote the necessary supplies for carrying out the treaty with England. There seemed to be danger of a new war with the mother country, and alarm spread far and wide. At this juncture the inhabitants of Newburyport, ever on the alert to maintain the national peace and honor, met at the town-house and unanimously voted to present a petition to the House of Representatives, praying that the treaty concluded between Great Britain and the United States might be carried into operation, which they considered "essential to preserve the faith, honor and interest of our young and rising Republic."

Neutrality was sustained, and the treaty of peace and amity with England was observed. But new complications arose. English cruisers, on the one hand, claimed the right to seize goods of France found on board American vessels, and France, indignant at our failure to observe the treaty of 1778, adopted measures of retaliation and made our merchantmen the prizes of her privateers. Again, England, with the allied powers, agreed to prevent neutral ships from supplying France directly or indirectly with the necessities of life. In accordance with this agreement, seizures or detentions of many vessels belonging to Newburyport occurred, causing great annoyance and serious loss. The annoyances of French cruisers and privateers were especially distressing, and the government of the United States at last issued letters of marque and ordered the construction of cruisers of its own to protect its commerce. At this time and for this purpose the frigates "Hancock," and "Boston," and "Protector" were built for the State by Stephen and Ralph Cross, and the brig "Pickering" by Orlando B. Morrell, for the general government. At this juncture, also, the "Merrimack" was built, as has already been stated, by the merchants of Newburyport and loaned to the government. It looked again like war, but this time with France. The people of Newburyport, however, were ready to meet the emergency and make the needful sacrifice. At a town-meeting held on the 30th of April, 1798, a committee, consisting of Benjamin Greenleaf, Charles Jackson, Theophilus Parsons, Samuel A. Otis, Jr., and Jonathan Boardman was chosen, and by direction of the town sent the following address to President Adams:

"To the President of the United States:

"SIR—The inhabitants of the town of Newburyport, fully impressed with the present important crisis of public affairs, are prompted, no less by a sense of duty than by their own feelings, to express those sentiments which the occasion so naturally inspires in the breast of every American. From the long experience of your conduct in the many public offices to which you have been called by your own country, they feel the most perfect confidence in your wisdom, integrity and patriotism; and they with cheerfulness declare their entire approbation of your attempt to adjust all existing disputes with the French Republic by an amicable negotiation of that spirit of conciliation which dictated your instructions to our ministers, and of the principles of justice on which they were founded. They learn, with equal indignation and astonishment, that this spirit of conciliation has been repelled with contempt, that those principles of justice have been disregarded, and that a heavy tribute,

with humiliating concessions on our part, have been proposed to us in a manner arbitrary and unfriendly, as the price at which we must purchase the right of being heard. The inhabitants of this town duly appreciate the blessings of peace and neutrality, but they will never complain at the loss of these blessings when constrained them, to the honor, the dignity and the essential interests of the country. They consider the present interesting state of public affairs as a solemn appeal to the hearts of all independent Americans, and a call on them to come forward with unanimity and firmness in support of the government and the men of their choice, to resist with becoming dignity any vain attempt to derogate from our common sovereignty, or to derogate our national character from the rank it now justly holds among nations, to convince the world that we are alike uninfluenced by corruption and by fear, and that we will not be a divided people, the miserable slaves of a foreign power, or the despicable tools of foreign influence.

"Impressed with these sentiments, and relying with full confidence on the wisdom and patriotism of every branch of government, they take this occasion solemnly to pledge their lives and fortunes to support the measures judged necessary by the President and Congress, to preserve and secure the happiness, the dignity and the essential interests of the United States."

President Adams replied as follows:

"To the Inhabitants of Newburyport:

"GENTLEMEN—The address of the inhabitants of the ancient, populous and wealthy town of Newburyport, passed without a dissentient voice, at a late meeting, as certified by your selectmen, and presented to me by your representative in Congress, Mr. Bartlett, does me great honor.

"The astonishment and indignation you express at the contempt with which a spirit of conciliation has been repelled to; your resolution never to complain at the loss of the blessings of peace and neutrality, when constrained to sacrifice them to the honor, dignity and essential interests of your country; to resist, with becoming dignity, any vain attempt to derogate from our common sovereignty, or to degrade our national character from the rank it now justly holds among nations; to convince the world that you are alike uninfluenced by corruption and by fear; that you are not a divided people, the miserable slaves of foreign influence, do equal honor to your hearts and judgment.

"Your reliance, with full confidence, on the wisdom and patriotism of every branch of the government, and the solemn pledge of your lives and fortunes to support the measures of the legislature and the administration to preserve and secure the happiness, dignity and essential interests of the United States, are all the assurances which the best of governments could desire from the best of citizens.

"Philadelphia, May 8, 1798."

"JOHN ADAMS.

But not until the year 1800 were the complications of our government with France settled. In the mean time those losses occurred which formed the basis of what are now called the "French Claims." Of these losses Newburyport had its full share. After 1793, whenever either Martinique or Gaudaloupe was in the possession of the English, French vessels of war, under orders from their government, captured all vessels bound to such port with supplies, whether neutral vessels or vessels flying the flag of an enemy. Among the neutral vessels were many belonging to the United States. On the 30th of September, 1800, in order to be released from the embarrassing entanglements of the treaty of 1778, our government entered into a new treaty with France, by which it was released from its obligations on the condition that it would assume and pay all claims which American citizens had at that time against France for the capture and condemnation of their vessels and cargoes. These are what are called the French Claims, and only those are valid which are based on losses before the ratification of the treaty, September 30, 1800. There were losses occurring after that date, but in 1803, at the time of the purchase of Louisiana from the



French, the claims for these were denominated in the treaty of purchase a debt, and for the liquidation of this debt our government retained twenty millions of francs out of the eighty millions of the purchase money, and paid the claims to the claimants. There were still other losses occasioned by the French, and at the time of the purchase of Florida from Spain, in 1819, a part of the purchase money was retained for the payment of claims by American citizens for losses by the capture by the French of vessels in Spanish waters. These claims, called "Spanish Claims," were also duly paid by our government to the claimants. In 1831, during the administration of President Jackson, representations having been made that other captures had occurred after September 30, 1800, a schedule of these losses, amounting to nearly a million of dollars, was prepared and a peremptory demand made for the payment. These claims also were allowed by the French government, and the claimants have been reimbursed by the government. It is hoped that by recent legislation the claims which have been so long pending for losses, of which \$682,608.05 were incurred by the merchants of Newburyport, will at last, before many months have expired, reach a final settlement.

The invasions of American commerce continued to be carried on. Not only England and France, but Holland and Naples and Denmark, joined in the depredations, and were rapidly sweeping American ships from the seas. Without either the ability or desire to check these ravages, our government entered upon a series of restrictive measures which changed the method of the destruction of our commerce, but did not avert it. In 1805 Congress passed a law forbidding armed vessels to leave the United States—adopting the policy of avoiding collisions instead of that of defending our rights. In 1807 a second law was passed forbidding vessels to go to foreign ports. Wherever this law was obeyed foreign trade was killed at a blow. In 1802 the duties on imports received at Newburyport amounted to two hundred thousand six hundred and ninety-five dollars, and in 1812 had fallen to forty-six thousand one hundred and ninety-one dollars. But when it was found that this law was successfully evaded, additional restrictions were imposed, and, in 1808, even the coasting trade was forbidden. Against this last act of the government the merchants of New England zealously remonstrated, and the merchants of Newburyport were not less zealous in their remonstrances than those of other towns along the seaboard. In 1809 the embargo was repealed, and once more trade and commerce revived. The non-intercourse act followed, prohibiting trade with Great Britain and France, and hung for a time like a cloud over the sea—but the restrictions which it imposed soon gave way before the concessions of these powers.

The next event touching the interests of Newburyport was the War of 1812. It is unnecessary to

rehearse its causes and the long list of aggressions which led to it. It is sufficient to say that in that year war was declared with Great Britain. At that time the navy of that power comprised 254 ships of the line, 247 frigates, 183 brigs and enough other smaller vessels to make up the number to 1982 vessels. The United States had ten frigates, ten sloops and 165 gun-boats. Private enterprise must be invoked to enlarge and strengthen the resources of the government. At that time the population of Newburyport was about 8000; its tonnage was 22,933 tons; its duty on imports \$46,181; its total property valuation \$6,074,600. The war was no more popular in Newburyport than in other parts of New England, and spirited addresses were adopted by the town; and in anticipation of requisitions for troops, a general disinclination was felt to go beyond the lines of the State to fight. Votes were passed refusing to pay bounties to stimulate enlistments, and the almost universal feeling among the Federalists was opposed to any participation in the war. There were, however, many who not only obeyed the dictates of patriotism, but were inclined to follow where the hope of profit led, and there were soon fitted out privateers to engage in the struggle. The early capture of the "Guerriere" by the "Constitution," of the "Frolic" by the "Wasp," of the "Macedonian" by the "United States" and the "Java" by the "Constitution," excited national pride and tended to blunt the edge of opposition in the minds of some, but the Peace party continued strong and persistent. It is not certain that the heat of party feeling did not serve to stimulate the supporters of the government and induce greater activity in its behalf than would have otherwise prevailed. At any rate, before the summer of 1812 had passed, Newburyport had a busy fleet of privateers on the sea. The town, through a committee, on the declaration of war, in June uttered its protest to the Legislature, declaring that its people would march to the war only under the orders of the Governor and Council, and while they would defend their soil, they would "not stir an inch beyond." This committee was composed of Jeremiah Nelson, John Pierpont, Joseph Dana, William Bartlett and William Farris. But, nevertheless, troops were raised, armed men were sent to Plum Island and Cape Ann for coast defense, and a company of artillery served in the battles in Canada.

The first privateer to sail from Newburyport was the "Manhattan," and she was followed by the "Yankee," and the "Decatur," and the "Bunker Hill." Before the summer had passed, the United States sloop-of-war "Wasp," after capturing the "Frolic," had herself been taken, and another United States sloop bearing the same name was built by Orlando B. Merrill and launched in September. The "Argus" and "Antelope" letters of marque were soon at sea and all did good service in thinning out the merchant fleets of the enemy. The career of





Captain Wm. Nichols, of the "Decatur," deserves a more extended mention. He was the son of Captain William Nichols and was born in Newburyport in 1781. In 1796 he began his sea life, and at the age of nineteen he had been taken twice by the French—once in the "Fox," in 1798, and again in the "Rose" in the following year. After the last capture he was sent into Guadeloupe, from which place he escaped in a Swedish vessel and finally reached New York. Before the War of 1812 he was placed in command of the brig "Alert," owned by Captain Benjamin Pierce, one of the prominent ship-owners of Newburyport of that day. Captain Pierce gave the vessel to the government, and in the Smithsonian Institute at Washington a picture of the brig is preserved. While in command of the "Alert," Captain Nichols was chased by the British frigate "Vestal," soon after leaving Bordeaux and obliged to surrender. A prize crew was placed on board, and Captain Nichols and his mate and three sailors were left in her. Soon after the departure of the "Vestal" Captain Nichols, watching his opportunity, with the assistance of his mate, regained possession of the brig, putting the Englishmen in a boat with provisions and a compass and setting them adrift. Shortly after the recapture he was overhauled by another British frigate, and although he claimed that he had already been searched, he was taken prisoner and carried into Portsmouth, England, where the "Alert" was condemned and sold. This was one of those outrages which finally led to the War of 1812. Captain Nichols managed to escape his captors at a public inn, where, with prudence in drinking on his part, he induced imprudence on theirs, and gave them the slip. After many trials he succeeded in reaching Liverpool and securing a passage home.

Soon after his return, on the declaration of war, he was placed in command of the brig "Decatur," of one hundred and ninety-seven tons burthen, costing twenty thousand dollars and mounting fourteen guns, with one hundred and fifty men. Her principal owner was the owner of the "Alert," Benjamin Pierce. Soon after leaving Newburyport, by his courage and good judgment, he quelled a mutiny among his men and only a few hours after, so completely had he made himself the leader of his crew, he captured the bark "Duke of Savoy" and the next day the brig "Pomona." Within a week from leaving port he had taken one bark and four brigs. His prizes had so far depleted his crew that he decided to return to the United States. On the way he was overhauled by the English ship "Commerce," carrying fourteen guns, and a desperate fight ensued, in which Captain Nichols, by giving orders to shoot every man at the wheel, rendered his antagonist unmanageable and won a signal victory. The cargo of the "Commerce" consisted of 325 hogsheads of sugar, 118 puncheons of rum, 77 bales of cotton, 225 bags of

coffee and some other general cargo. The "Decatur" arrived safely in port, having in fifty days captured ten prizes.

After refitting, Captain Nichols started on a second cruise in the "Decatur" capturing several prizes, whose prize-crews had so reduced the number of her men, that, when overtaken, on the 18th of January, 1813, by the British frigate "Surprise," of thirty-eight guns, he was, after a desperate struggle, obliged to haul down his flag. He was carried into Barbadoes, where he was recognized by the captain of the "Vestal," from whom he had recaptured the "Alert," and placed in close confinement on board the prison ship. His place of imprisonment was a cage built on the quarter-deck, five feet wide and seven feet long, and after thirty-four days confinement, he was taken on board the frigate "Tribune," and carried to England. Upon his arrival there he was subjected to the same severe treatment, heavily ironed and refused all parole. A remonstrance of the United States government was followed by the close confinement of Captains Woodworth and Barrs, two British privateer masters, with the same treatment as that under which Captain Nichols was suffering. After a sharp correspondence between the two governments, the English authorities yielded and issued the following, for a copy of which the writer of this narrative is indebted to the files of the *Newburyport Herald*, from which also this sketch of Capt. Nichols is almost literally drawn:

"By the Commissioners for conducting His Majesty's transport service, for taking care of sick and wounded seamen, and for the care and custody of prisoners of war.

"These are to certify that Mr. William Nichols, as described on the back hereof, an American prisoner of war, late master of the 'Decatur,' American merchant vessel or privateer, has been released from Chatham, and permitted to return to the United States of America in exchange for Mr. W. Barrs, taken when master of the 'Liverpool Packet,' British privateer, late a prisoner of war. And whereas the said Mr. Nichols is permitted to proceed direct and without delay from Chatham to Dartmouth, where immediately on his arrival he is to present himself to Mr. Jno. Puddecombe, the board's agent, for the purpose of being embarked on the 'Saratoga' cartel for America. All and singular, His Majesty's officers, civil and military, are hereby desired and requested to suffer him to pass accordingly, without any hindrance or molestation whatever, provided he leaves the kingdom within fourteen days from the date hereof, but if he should deviate from the route hereby pointed out, or be found in this country after the time allowed to him, he will be liable to immediate apprehension and imprisonment. Given under hand and seal of office at London this twenty-fourth day of June, 1813.

"GEORGE N. GEORGE.

"J. DOUGLAS.

"JOHN FORMIS."

Soon after the return of Capt. Nichols he was placed in command of the brig "Harpy," of Baltimore. She was fitted out in Portsmouth, New Hampshire, and sailed Oct. 1, 1814. While in command of that vessel he captured the ship "Amazon," Oct. 10th; the ship "Bridget," Oct. 15th; the brig "Halifax Packet," Oct. 16th; the ship "Garland" and schooner "Britannia," Oct. 19th; the ship "Jane," Oct. 29th; the brig "William Nielson," Nov. 13th; the schooner "Nine Sisters," Dec. 24th; the ships "William and Alfred," and "Jane," and the





brig "Louisa," January 3, 1815, making eleven vessels in eighty-five days. One of these prizes sent home was valued at \$300,000, and among his prisoners were a major-general and other officers of the British army.

During the war, though many months a prisoner and inactive, he captured twenty-eight prizes and six hundred prisoners, making up a record which cannot probably be excelled by any in the naval annals of our own or any other nation.

After the close of the war Captain Nichols was engaged in the merchant service from Newburyport, principally with Russian ports, and retired from the sea in the year 1830. A Democrat in politics, he was appointed collector of the port by President Polk in 1845, and, notwithstanding his eminent services in behalf of his country, was succeeded by a Whig on the change of the administration in 1849. He died at his home on Harris Street, February 12, 1863, and beside the imperishable record of his heroism, there were only left of his possessions two swords, a barometer, a silver tea service and a few papers to tell the story of his life.

In this record Captain Harry Parsons must not be overlooked. He commanded the letter of marque "Argus," and met with success far inferior to that of Captain Nichols, but yet large and creditable. Besides these two, there were few whose cruises were not either failures or only slightly profitable. On the other hand, there were many who were either captured or lost or returned to port with nothing of adventure or gain. On the whole, it is doubtful whether the returns from privateering equaled the outlay. Though the captures by that branch of the American naval service were small, considering the number of vessels along the seaboard employed, its very existence threatened such injury to British commerce, that the means adopted by Great Britain to prevent it, by either keeping her vessels at home or diverting her ships of war from hostile cruises to the services of convoying her fleets, as to give it an importance and value which no tangible results could estimate or measure.

With peace came congratulations and joy, qualified, however, by the burdens of debt and taxation which rested heavily on every member of the community. But before entering upon the third period of our narrative, which opened on the restoration of peace, some further mention must be made of the prominent men during the period which that event terminated. As the town had advanced in population and education and business, the number of such men had been steadily increasing, and it will, therefore, be impossible, within the prescribed limits of this sketch, to do justice to all.

The most notorious man of this period, of course, was Timothy Dexter. It is entirely unnecessary to enter into details concerning his character and life.

It is only necessary to say concerning them that his folly was merely the mask of wisdom and that

often, when the object of ridicule, he was disguising sagacious investments and enterprises. He tolerated the popular belief that his shipment of warming-pans to the West Indies was made in ignorance of the climate of that latitude, and indeed encouraged that belief in order that the real purpose of his speculation might not be known, and that he might be alone in the market. He was born in Malden, January 22, 1747, and died at Newburyport October 22, 1806, giving in his will to that town \$2000, the income of which was to be given to the poor of the town outside of the poor-house.

One of the eminent sons of Newburyport, born within the period, but better known in other localities, was Gardiner Spring. He was the son of Rev. Samuel Spring, chaplain in the army under Arnold in the expedition against Quebec. After the death of Rev. Christopher Bridges Marsh, the pastor of the Second Congregational Church (died in 1773), the church was without a minister for four years. An invitation was sent to Rev. Samuel Spring to preach as a candidate. His answer was dated Ticonderoga, August 12th, in which he declined the invitation as incompatible with his engagement as chaplain in the army. At a later date he accepted the invitation, and was finally ordained in August, 1777, remaining as the pastor of the church until his death, in 1819. His son Gardiner was born in Newburyport, February 24, 1785. At an early age his parents determined to prepare him for the legal profession, and after receiving a grammar school education, he fitted for college under the direction of Theophilus Parsons, and graduated at Yale in 1805. The next three years he spent in teaching school in Bermuda and reading law with Judge Daggett, of New Haven, and in 1808 was admitted to the bar. Soon after beginning practice he abandoned law and entered the Theological Seminary at Andover. In 1809 he was licensed to preach, and August 10, 1810, he was settled over the society worshipping in the Brick Church on Beckman Street, in New York. In 1861 the society removed to their new edifice on Murray Hill, and though repeatedly urged to accept professorships in Hamilton and Dartmouth Colleges, he remained with the society in the faithful performance of his pastoral work until his death, in 1874. During the last twelve years of his ministry the Rev. William G. T. Shedd was his assistant. He was the author of many works, among which are "The Attraction of the Cross," 1845; "The Mercy-Seat," 1849; "First Things," 1851; "The Glory of Christ," 1852; "The Power of the Pulpit," 1848; "The Obligations of the World to the Bible," 1844; "Memoirs of Rev. S. J. Wells," 1820; "Pulpit Ministrations," 1864; and "Personal Reminiscences," 1866.

John Pierpont, one of the town committee in 1812 to protest against the war, was born in Litchfield, Conn., April 6, 1785. In early life he was an assistant in the academy of Dr. Backus, at Bethlehem, and



in 1805 took the position of tutor in the family of Colonel William Alston, in South Carolina, which he retained four years. He afterwards studied law at the Litchfield school, and when admitted to the bar, settled in Newburyport in the practice of his profession. After a few years he abandoned law and entered mercantile life in Boston and Baltimore. This, too, he abandoned in 1816, and studied theology preparatory to his ordination as pastor of the Hollis Street Unitarian church, April 14, 1819. During his pastorate his pronounced views on the temperance question, which he did not hesitate to declare, caused dissensions among his people, and in 1845 he asked for his dismission. He was then pastor of the Unitarian Society in Troy, New York, until 1849, when he took a settlement over the Medford Unitarian Society, which he terminated by his resignation April 6, 1856. He was active in the anti-slavery as well as the temperance cause, and was the candidate at one time of the Liberty party of Massachusetts for Governor, and in 1850 the candidate of the Free Soil party in his district for Congress. At the age of seventy-six he took the position of chaplain of a Massachusetts regiment in the Rebellion, but soon left the field for a position in the Treasury Department at Washington. He published a volume of poetry in 1849, and was the compiler of the American First Class Book, which for a long time held its place in the schools of New England, and though superseded by others, has never been equaled. He was a man more than six feet high, erect in figure, quick and firm in step, with a face exhibiting unusual firmness and strength, with a spirit as bold and undaunted as it was sympathetic and gentle. Many of his poetical pieces were beautiful in the extreme, combining, as did their author, tenderest beauty with fervid fire. Many readers of this sketch will remember the following striking passage in the oration delivered at the laying of the corner-stone of Bunker Hill monument in 1825:

"Let it rise till it meet the sun in his coming; let the earliest light of the morning gild it, and parting day linger and play on its summit."

Let those who would learn the source from which Mr. Webster received the inspiration for this sentiment turn to the "Pilgrim Ode," written by Mr. Pierpont for the celebration of the anniversary of the landing of the Pilgrims, December 22, 1824, in which they will find the following stanza, unsurpassed for its brilliant imagery:

"The Pilgrim fathers are at rest;  
When Summer's throned on high,  
And the world's warm breast is in verdure dressed,  
Go, stand on the hill where they lie,  
The earliest ray of the golden day  
On that hallowed spot be cast;  
And O, evening sun, as he leaves the world,  
Looks kindly on that spot last."

Mr. Pierpont died in Medford, Massachusetts, August 27, 1866.

Moses Brown was born in 1743, in that part of Newbury which is now the town of West Newbury. His birthplace, as stated by O. B. Merrell in the *Newburyport Herald*, from the files of which this sketch of Mr. Brown is taken, was the farm known as Brown's Springs. His education was limited to that which the common schools could furnish, and in his neighborhood the school was a movable one, often far away from his home. At an early age he was bound out to serve his time with a chaise-maker, whose shop was on Prospect Street, in what is now Newburyport. Young Brown was faithful, both to himself and his master, and when of age set up a shop on his own account for making and repairing carriages. He was a hard worker, and as he accumulated a little money, as was the custom in those days, when there were no savings banks, nor small stocks to invest in, he secured opportunities of sending small ventures to one or more of the foreign ports to which Newburyport vessels might be bound. These ventures consisted of small articles of merchandise, or hats or shoes, or dried cod and pickled fish or any other articles which he thought would sell at a profit. Sometimes a small box of fish costing five shillings would sell for forty shillings, and perhaps oranges taken in pay at two cents a dozen would bring at home five or six times as much. If the venture were a larger one, perhaps a barrel of molasses or a box of sugar would be taken in return, and readily sold in the Newburyport market. In this way the fortunes of many men found their foundations soon laid, and Mr. Brown was one of them.

It was not long before the carriage business was given up, and the purchase made of the wharf at the foot of Green Street, then called Hooper's wharf. Other investments in real estate were not long after made, of which the square, called Brown's Square given by him to the town, was a part. At the close of his career he was probably the largest owner of real estate in Newburyport. During the earliest part of his business life he lived in a house which stood on the corner of State and Charter Streets, but in his later days bought and occupied the house on State Street, which had been occupied by Tristram Dalton in his palmy days.

It affords some indication of the foreign trade carried on in Newburyport, to state that Mr. Brown, only one of its many merchants, at one time owned twenty brigs and schooners sailing to ports in the West Indies and Russia. A portion of the molasses received from the West Indies was used in the distillery which, in connection with other branches of business, was carried on by him. During the embargo and the War of 1812 Mr. Brown suffered heavy losses, but they were nothing compared with the deprivations of the poor mechanic and laborer, and to those, in the midst of his losses, he was a father and friend. He was one of the merchants who built the "Merrimac" in 1798, and loaned her to the govern-





ment, and all through the troubles which that vessel was built to assist in removing, he was always active and useful in his patriotic efforts to uphold and aid the government.

The Andover Theological Seminary, of which he was one of the associate founders, received from him a gift of \$10,000, and the town of Newburyport owes much to his liberality. Besides the gift of Brown's Square to the town, he made a bequest to the town, which the following clause in his will will explain:

"I give and bequeath to the inhabitants of the town of Newburyport aforesaid, the sum of six thousand dollars, as a fund for the use and support of a grammar school in said town forever. And I do hereby direct that a special committee shall be annually chosen at the meeting of the said inhabitants to hold in the month of March annually, for the purpose of managing and taking care of the said fund until a Board of Trustees may be established for that purpose."

"And I do expressly direct that the said principal sum of six thousand dollars shall be kept at interest, and that interest and produce thereof shall be applied and added to the said principal sum of six thousand dollars until the sum shall amount to the sum of ten thousand dollars; and that before any part of the said interest or produce shall be applied and appropriated towards the support of said school, and when the said principal sum shall amount to the sum of ten thousand dollars then the annual interest and produce of the same shall be applied for and towards the support of a grammar school in the said town of Newburyport forever."

The will was dated October 2, 1824, but by a codicil dated April 2, 1827, the fund was required to accumulate until it reached fifteen thousand dollars before its income could be used. "And if," says the codicil, "the inhabitants of said town shall discontinue or neglect to maintain a grammar school in said town for the space of one full year, at any one time in continuance, then the said bequests shall become forfeited thereby."

Mr. Brown died February 9, 1827, leaving a large estate. By the death, in 1880, of his granddaughter, Sarah White Hale, widow of Dr. Ebenezer Hale and daughter of William B. Bannister, a considerable amount of entailed property in Newburyport was released from an entail which was a serious obstacle in the way of public improvements. Mr. Brown was a member of the Board of Selectmen in 1782, '88, 1801.

William Bartlett, descended from one of the earliest settlers of Newbury, was born in Newburyport, January 31, 1748. He received his education in the common schools and was apprenticed to a trade. At the age of twenty-one he had accumulated a small amount of money, and with this he bought a small piece of a vessel, which made a successful voyage and laid the foundation of his wealth. For more than fifty years he was an active merchant, passing through the storms of the Revolution, the complications with France, the embargo and the War of 1812, without any serious check to his career. He was one of the selectmen in 1784, '85, 1801, and was always relied upon in emergencies by his fellow-citizens for judicious advice. He was one of the associate founders of the Theological Seminary at Andover and gave \$30,000 towards its establishment. He subsequently endowed a professorship and erected a dwell-

ing-house for its incumbent. His total benefactions to this institution are said to have reached \$250,000. He died at Newburyport, February 8, 1841.

John Barnard Swett was descended from John Swett, one of the original settlers of Newbury. He was born in Marblehead in 1752 and graduated at Harvard in 1767. He studied medicine in Edinburgh under Dr. William Allen and afterwards attended the hospitals in Paris, returning home in 1778. He joined the army as surgeon and took part in the expeditions to Rhode Island and the Penobscot. After his return he became eminent in his profession and died in 1796 from yellow fever, on its visitation to Newburyport in that year.

Nathaniel Bradstreet was born in Topsfield Oct. 4, 1771. He graduated at Harvard in 1795 and taught school in Plymouth immediately after leaving college. While teaching he was a student in medicine with James Thacher, of Plymouth, and a fellow-student was Benjamin Shurtliff, a graduate of Brown in 1796, and the recipient of an honorary degree from Harvard in 1802. Both married Plymouth ladies,—Dr. Bradstreet, Anna, daughter of William Crombie, and Dr. Shurtliff, Sally, daughter of Ichabod Shaw. The late Dr. Nathaniel Bradstreet Shurtliff, at one time mayor of Boston, was the son of Dr. Benjamin Shurtliff and was named after his fellow-student and friend. Dr. Bradstreet was the son of Henry and Abigail (Porter) Bradstreet, of Topsfield, and was the fifth in descent from Gov. Simon Bradstreet, through his son John, grandson Simon, great-grandson Simon and the last Simon's son Henry. He died in Newburyport October 6, 1828.

Jeremiah Nelson was born in Rowley, Mass., September 14, 1769, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1790. He afterwards engaged in mercantile pursuits in Newburyport and became a prominent man there during the troubles with France and the last war with England. He was an active and uncompromising Federalist, and as such was chosen a member of the Ninth Congress and served from December 2, 1805, to March 3, 1807. He was again chosen a member of the Fourteenth, Fifteenth, Sixteenth, Seventeenth and Eighteenth Congresses, and served from December 4, 1815, to March 3, 1825, and again a member of the Twenty-Second Congress, serving from December 6, 1832, to March 2, 1833. He was conspicuous in town affairs, having been a member of the Board of Selectmen in 1809, '10, '11, and died at Newburyport October 2, 1838.

Of Oliver Putnam there is little to record concerning his career. He was born of humble origin in 1778 and thrown on his own resources in early life. By good fortune in business he acquired a fortune at an early age and then devoted himself to the culture of his mind and tastes. He died in 1827, leaving a will, with Aaron Baldwin, of Boston, and Edward S. Rand and Caleb Cushing its executors. He bequeathed a sum of money for the support of a free



school, which is explained by the following clause in his will: "The residue of my property I give and bequeath for the establishment of a free English school in Newburyport, for the instruction of youth, wherever they may belong, and the executors will, if at the final payment of the foregoing legacies it should amount to fifty thousand dollars, pay it over as hereafter provided; but if at that time it should not amount to that sum the executors will retain it to accumulate till it does, and then pay it over to trustees for that purpose, to be elected by the selectmen of Newburyport. After the appointment of the first trustees, vacancies in their board to be filled by nomination from them, subject to the approval of said selectmen, who, besides, are always and at all times to have and exercise the right of visitation, for the purpose of looking to the security of the funds, and that the interest or income of them is applied according to the bequest.

"In the selection of trustees no reference is to be had to their places of residence, but only to their qualifications for the trust. The trustees are to invest the principal in good and sufficient securities, bearing interest or producing income to the satisfaction of the said selectmen, to be and remain a permanent fund, the interest or income only of which to be applied to the establishment and support of the school. The youth to be instructed in reading, writing and arithmetic, and particularly in the English language and in those branches of knowledge necessary to the correct management of the ordinary affairs of life, whether public or private, but not in the dead languages. The monitorial system of instruction to be introduced and used so far as it may be found on experience that it can be done with advantage."

A further allusion to this bequest and the school established under it will be made in the chapter relating to the schools of the town.

Jacob Little was a native of Newburyport, and born in 1797. At the age of twenty years he went to New York to seek his fortune. He there secured a clerkship in the counting-room of Jacob Barker, one of the earliest of the large merchants of that city. He remained with Mr. Barker about five years, when he began business on his own account as an exchange and specie broker. It was his habit to attend closely to his office business during the day and to visit the retail houses in the evening for the purchase of uncurrent money. In 1834 he was well known in Wall Street as an energetic, industrious, honest business man. He gave his whole time to his business until his annual income amounted to one hundred thousand dollars. On the introduction of railroads he identified himself with their construction and thus added to his accumulations until his wealth was measured by millions. But disasters finally fell upon him. After his first failure he paid finally his debts in full, and had a large fortune left. He continued in business with varying fortunes until his

death, March 28, 1865. He was a bachelor until 1844, when he married Miss Augusta McCarthy, sister of Madame de Dion, and at his death left one son.

Robert Treat Paine, though not a native of Newburyport, was a resident during a part of this period and may, therefore, properly be mentioned. He was a son of Robert Treat Paine, the signer of the Declaration of Independence, and was born in Taunton, Mass., December 9, 1773. He graduated at Harvard in 1792, and entered soon after upon a mercantile life. Finding this uncongenial to his tastes, he turned to literature and politics, and established a paper called the *Federal Orrery*. In 1795 he published a poem entitled "Invention of Letters," which attracted widespread notice, and soon after another, entitled "Ruling Passion" which added to his reputation. In 1798 he wrote the national song of "Adams and Liberty," and in 1799 delivered an oration on the first anniversary of the dissolution of the French alliance. At this time, inclining to the study of law, he entered the office of Theophilus Parsons and was admitted to the bar in 1802. He remained in Newburyport several years, gaining, however, more reputation as an orator and poet than as a lawyer. While there he delivered a eulogy on Washington, in January, 1800, and in 1801, by permission of the Legislature, changed his baptismal name of Thomas to that by which he has since been known. He gave as a justification for the change his reluctance to be confounded with the author of the "Age of Reason," and his consequent desire to bear a "Christian" name.

Nor must John Andrews be omitted, who, though a native of another town, was long a resident in Newburyport, and an example before its people of the highest virtues of a Christian life. He was born in Hingham, Massachusetts, in March, 1764, and graduated at Harvard in 1786, receiving a degree of Doctor of Theology from his *alma mater* in 1821. Two years afterwards, on the 10th of December, 1788, when only twenty-four years of age, he went to Newburyport, and was settled as colleague pastor with Rev. Thomas Cary over the First Church in that town. Mr. Cary died November 24, 1808, and from that time until his resignation, May 1, 1830, Dr. Andrews remained the sole pastor of the parish. He was succeeded in the ministry by Rev. Thomas B. Fox, and the *Christian Register* in a notice of his death said: "One trial which Dr. Andrews was called upon to meet, which none but his brethren in the ministry, and perhaps only the elders among them, can fully understand, was the voluntary dissolution of his connection with the society of which he had been so long the pastor—a trial which he met without jealousy or repining, giving with a truly Christian spirit a kind welcome to his successor, becoming his friend, extending to him an affection almost parental and thus showing that as he had been a faithful minister, so he could see another occupy the pulpit in which he had himself stood for years, and he was one of the most charitable





of hearers and one of the best of parishioners." He died in Newburyport, August 17, 1845, at the age of eighty-one years.

Edward Sprague Rand was the oldest son of Edward Rand, and Ruth Sprague, daughter of Dr. John Sprague. Edward Rand, the father, was the brother of Dr. Isaac Rand, of Boston, and both were sons of Dr. Isaac Rand, who, before the battle of Bunker Hill, lived in Charlestown, and afterwards in Cambridge. Edward, the father, removed in early life to Newburyport, and was largely engaged in business as an importer of English goods and hardware. Edward Sprague Rand, the son, was born in Newburyport, June 23, 1782, and at the age of seven years became a pupil at Dummer Academy, under Master Moody. After leaving the academy he entered his father's store, and remained there until he was eighteen years of age, when he was sent to Europe as supercargo. After two or three voyages, in 1801, before he was twenty-one years of age, he established himself as a commission merchant in Amsterdam, and continued in business there several years. After his return home he made a voyage to Russia, and on his passage home, in 1810, was wrecked on the coast of Norway, and finding no opportunity of leaving, was obliged to remain in Norway during the winter, thus causing the belief among his friends that he had been lost at sea.

After this voyage, previous to which he had been married to Hannah, daughter of John Pettingel, he remained at home until the peace of 1815, when he resumed business and for many years was engaged in the East India trade and a general freighting business. In 1821 he bought a woolen-mill in Salisbury, in company with George Jenkins, John Wells and James Horton, which, afterwards enlarged, became first the Salisbury Manufacturing Company and later the Salisbury Mills, of which he was for many years the president. From 1825 to 1827 he was president of the Mechanics' Bank, and was for several years Senator and Representative in the State Legislature. Mr. Rand died in Newburyport, October 22, 1863, leaving two children, the late Edward S. Rand, of Boston, who was lost at Martha's Vineyard, on board the "City of Columbus," and the wife of Dr. E. G. Kelley, of Newburyport. Another daughter, not living at the time of his death, married Dr. S. A. Arnold, of Providence, Rhode Island.

Francis Todd was born in Newburyport, February 6, 1779, and began business in the dry-goods line at the age of twenty years. He early engaged in the West India and Southern carrying trade, and gradually extended his business, and enlarged his fleet of vessels to carry it on. The tobacco, cotton and sugar trade with the South and the West Indies, and trade with Russia, South America and the Northern Pacific came within his grasp and brought him into intimate relations with the leading bankers of the world. He made the first consignment of merchan-

dise to George Peabody when he began business in Baltimore, and always retained his warm friendship. An obituary in the Boston *Daily Advertiser* of December 2, 1861, from which this sketch is chiefly drawn, says: "Mr. Todd was over half a century in active commercial business without interruption, enjoying perfect health, from his uniform regular and temperate habits of life. He was punctilious in the fulfillment of all his engagements and expected others to be the same with him, liberal to all who were unable from misfortune to fulfill their contracts, and ever ready to aid and assist the young merchant commencing life. His charities were freely bestowed upon the poor and worthy, without display, and known only to himself and the recipients. Modest and retiring in his habits, having no tastes for public life, he ever refused to allow his name to be used for public office, considering his sphere was especially intended for mercantile pursuits." He died in Newburyport, on Thursday, November 28, 1861, in the eighty-third year of his age.

Nathaniel Horton was born and entered upon active life within the period now under consideration. He was born in 1786 and early in life engaged with his brother, Capt. James Horton, in the satinet manufacture, in which industry he was among the earliest in the country to embark. He was afterwards in the shoe trade. In the exciting political years of the administration of Jefferson and Madison he was an ardent Democrat, and with all his energies sustained the measures which the government thought it necessary to adopt. He was a member of the Board of Selectmen in 1831, '32, '37, '46, '48, '49, '50, '51, and as its chairman introduced President Polk to the people on his visit to Newburyport in 1847. Upon the organization of the city government in 1851, he was chosen alderman for Ward 4 and continued in office three years. He died Saturday, December 28, 1861, and on the following Monday the *Newburyport Herald*, in noticing his death, said: "He was a faithful officer as he was a true man; he was a good officer as he was a good citizen. Strong-willed and sometimes hasty, he was manly, high-minded and strictly honest. He did business for the city as he did it for himself, and his integrity was so indisputable that no one thought of obtaining from the town or city through him what they would not have expected for doing the same services for himself as a private man. This stern integrity of the olden time, and this iron conscientiousness that was as unbending as his own firm will, were the distinguishing traits of his character, and are worthy of the more notice as they are less common now than they were in the generation to which he belonged. It is grand to see a man so stand up intellectually and morally in his own sphere and strength; to go bravely through the world without shrinking from duty, and at last lie down at the end of so many days and fall asleep."

Before closing this list of sketches it will not be





out of place to make a brief mention of George Peabody, of London, who began his business career in Newburyport. He was born February 18, 1795, in that part of Danvers which in 1855 was incorporated as South Danvers and in 1868 named Peabody. He there received his early education, and in 1811, at the age of sixteen, left school and entered as clerk the store of his uncle, David Peabody, in Newburyport. His companions there in social life were Charles Storey, Abner Caldwell and Francis B. Somerby, and it was on the evening of the last of May, 1811, that these young men started for home from Hart's tavern, where they had been bowling, and young Peabody, leaving Storey and Caldwell near the foot of Kent Street and Somerby at Market Street, proceeded on alone. On reaching Inn Street he saw flames bursting out from Lawrence's stable and gave the alarm. This was the beginning of the great fire, as it is always called, which swept over sixteen and a half acres of the most compactly built and the busiest part of the town. More than two hundred buildings were consumed between half-past nine o'clock in the evening and sunrise the next morning. Nearly all the shops for the sale of dry-goods, four printing-offices, the custom-house, the post-office, two insurance offices, four book-stores, one meeting-house and a hundred dwellings were consumed, and suffering and privation ensued which the warm-hearted liberality of Boston and other towns only partially alleviated.

Mr. Peabody remained with his uncle until some time after the fire, when he made arrangements to go into business in Baltimore. So well had he performed his duties as clerk, that he obtained from his uncle and Prescott Spaulding and others a joint letter to James Reed, a large wholesale dry-goods dealer in Boston, offering to be security for Peabody in the aggregate sum of \$2500 for goods which Mr. Reed might furnish to establish his store. The signers of the letter were all customers of Mr. Reed, who believing that he could trust the person in whom they put their faith, told him that \$2500 would be rather a small amount to start a dry-goods store in Baltimore, and offered him goods to the amount of \$2000 more to sell on commission for him, so that not only did Mr. Peabody learn his first business lessons in Newburyport, but to the merchants of that town he owed also that timely aid without which that career of prosperity and wealth upon which he afterwards entered may never have been begun.

Not long after he became a partner of Elisha Riggs in the dry-goods trade in New York, and afterwards again in Baltimore. During all this period he made occasional visits to Newburyport, and always remembered with pleasure his old friends in that town. A writer in the Newburyport *Herald* remembers hearing Frank Somerby on a morning in the summer of 1826 or '27 shout to Spaulding, "Here comes George Peabody." "I looked," says the writer, "and saw coming down the street a tall, fresh-looking, well-dressed man of

about thirty years of age. He was swinging his right arm and shouting, 'Hello! Frank.' In a few moments there were a dozen old friends gathered about him, and the warmth of the greeting gave ample evidence of the estimation in which he was held." This was his first visit to Newburyport since he left it twelve or thirteen years before.

In 1813, or thereabouts, Riggs and Peabody separated, and their business, which had expanded and largely changed its character, was divided. Riggs took the Baltimore business, Peabody the London and Mr. Corcoran, who had been some time also a partner, took the Washington. His career in London is too well known to be restated. Out of his abundant wealth, without waiting for that separation from his riches which death must eventually cause, he preferred the bestowment of benefactions during his life. In 1852 he gave to his native town \$20,000 for the foundation of an institute, and afterwards increased the amount to \$200,000. He contributed \$10,000 to the first Grinnell Arctic Expedition, and in 1857 gave \$300,000 to found an institute of science, literature and the fine arts in Baltimore, afterwards increasing it to \$1,400,000. For the benefit of the poor of London he gave in 1862 £500,000, in recognition of which the Queen presented him with her portrait, and the city of London presented him with the freedom of the city in a gold box, and after his death the citizens erected a statue to his memory. In 1866 he gave to Harvard College \$150,000 to establish a museum and professorship of American archaeology and ethnology, and afterwards \$150,000 to found a geological professorship in Yale College, and \$2,000,000 to the Southern Educational Fund.

On the 20th of February, 1867, two years before his death, he gave to "Edward S. Mosely, Caleb Cushing, Henry C. Perkins, Eben F. Stone and Joshua Hale, and their successors, the sum of \$15,000 to be held by them in trust and kept permanently invested, and the income thereof used and applied in their discretion to the enlargement of the public library of the city of Newburyport."

During the mayoralty of Moses Davenport he again visited Newburyport and was introduced by him to the people. Among the crowd was a gray-haired veteran who, on taking him by the hand, said: "You do not remember me, Mr. Peabody." He at once replied: "You are Prescott Spaulding, and were a clerk in the store next to ours at the time of the fire in 1811, which drove me away from this good old town." An old lady said: "Let me shake hands with you, Mr. Peabody; you do not certainly remember me." "Yes, I do," said he, after a moment; "I think you are 'Becca Tracy, and I am glad to see you. We will not tell these gentlemen about our playing whist forty years ago."

Mr. Peabody was said to have had a love-affair in Newburyport, and it was further said that the father of the lady said: "George is a very good young man,



but he has no money and can never support you in the style you must live in." He died in London, November 4, 1869.

William Moulton was born in State Street, Newburyport, August 19, 1872. His ancestors were among the early settlers of Newbury. On his mother's side they went there in 1635, and on his father's in 1637. The Moultons were among the pioneers in Eastern and Central New Hampshire, and the town of Moultonborough derives its name from them. Mr. Moulton always lived in Newburyport, and for a half a century was in business and familiarly called the honest goldsmith. No man enjoyed or deserved a higher reputation for those noble qualities which make up a manly character. As was said in a notice of him after his death, by the late Daniel N. Haskell, he was inflexibly honest, cheerful in his disposition, kind in his feelings, reliable in every relation of life, respected by the community and beloved by his kindred. He was not ambitious for political honors, though he was public-spirited, and when in the full vigor of manhood took an active part in all movements of general interest. He was for many years the only original occupant of any of those fine mansion-houses erected on the "Ridge" of High Street sixty years ago. He died in Newburyport, February 14, 1861.

William Faris, or Farris, was born in Belfast, Ireland, about 1759 and came to Newburyport when he was twelve years of age. He early engaged as an officer in the United States navy during the Revolution. He was a midshipman in the frigate "Boston," and afterwards served as lieutenant and commander in the privateer service. At the close of the war, after a brief employment by Jackson & Tracey, he began business on his own account as a member of the banking firm of Faris & Stocker. This firm were bankers for the French refugees, and he is known to have stated that Louis Philippe and Chateaubriand, on their arrival in this country, went to Newburyport, *incoognito*, and had an interview with Talleyrand, then living in the house next the Dexter house, in his counting-room, and that he furnished them with additional funds for their western journey. He further stated that they visited the Dalton house, in Newbury, while they were in town.

Mr. Faris was for some time president of the Marine Insurance Company of Newburyport and for several years was a member of the Legislature. He died about 1835, at the age of eighty-four years.

There were many others belonging to the period, beginning with the close of the Revolution and ending with the peace of 1815, whose names are worthy of mention, but who can receive only a passing notice. These were David Peabody (the uncle of George Peabody), James Caldwell, Prescott Spaulding, Arthur Gilman, Joseph Marquand, James Prince, Nicholas Johnson, John Cook, Benjamin Pierce, Micajah Lunt, Eben Stocker, Eben Wheelwright, Charles Story, John Wells, Sr., Peter Le Breton, Stephen

Holland, Jacob and Isaac Stone, Abraham Wheelwright, John Collin, Timothy Pilsbury, David Wood and others too numerous to mention, all of whom performed their part in the history of their town. Indeed, there are few towns in whose career so many of their citizens are found to have performed deeds and lived lives worthy of a lasting record.

## CHAPTER CXLV.

### NEWBURYPORT—(Continued).

#### THIRD PERIOD.

*From the War of 1812 to the Incorporation of the City.*

THE next period in the history of Newburyport, extending from the peace of 1815 to the annexation of a portion of Newbury and the incorporation of the city in 1851, was not especially eventful. It began with a population of about seven thousand—a valuation in round numbers of about three million five hundred thousand dollars, and a tonnage of about twenty-three thousand tons. All three of these items had, of course, fallen off during the war. The town had gone through the experiences of the disastrous French and English complications and the embargo. Between the two, and as if these were not enough to break the courage of its people, the ravages of fire had been added, and yet their hearts were not dismayed nor their hopes entirely clouded. In the winter of 1816-17 a mercantile company was formed for the purpose of pursuing the cod fisheries, and in the following summer sixty vessels, with a tonnage of two thousand eight hundred and seventy-four, were employed with profit in the business. But what the town gained in this branch of its marine interests it more than lost in others. With the peace of 1815 with England, came also peace in Europe, and the American neutral ship was no longer the monopolist of the ocean. Thus when, in 1819, the coasting and fishery tonnage had increased to ten thousand three hundred and thirty-five tons from five thousand three hundred and ninety-eight tons in 1810, the registered tonnage, or the tonnage engaged in foreign trade, had fallen in the same time from twenty-nine thousand eight hundred and ninety-seven tons to fourteen thousand eight hundred and ninety-three. In the same time the population had fallen from seven thousand six hundred and thirty-four to about six thousand eight hundred, and the assessor's valuation from seven millions sixty-nine thousand dollars to three millions forty-four thousand nine hundred dollars.

Nor was the peace of Europe the only cause of the decline in the shipping interests of the town. As has already been stated, the centralizing process had set in, and the seaboard towns were reluctantly yielding





the trade they once enjoyed to Boston, the growing capital of New England. The effect, however, of this decline of commerce would have been less disastrous had the capital it had employed been at once diverted into other channels of industry. But while wharves and warehouses gradually fell into disuse and decay, while the trades of the cooper, the blacksmith, the sail-maker and the caulker and graver languished, and laborers were seeking employment where little was to be found, the capitalists still held their ownership in navigation, which, though hailing from Newburyport, never touched its wharves, and yielded dividends no part of which found its way into the pockets of the laborer or mechanic. Except so far as bare household expenses were concerned and the taxes paid, the capitalist might, with equal benefit to the town, have held his residence in Boston or New York.

And again, besides the centralizing process which was naturally going on, there was a cause of its hastened movement to be found in the gradually increasing size of vessels and the difficulty, amounting at last to an impossibility, of their entrance into the harbor across the bar.

Up to 1810 only two vessels had been built on the Merrimac exceeding 350 tons. These were the ship "Caledonian," 357 tons, built at Amesbury in 1805 for Thomas Thomas and others, and the ship "Maryland," 395 tons, built at Newbury in 1807 for Thomas Thomas and G. Brown. The first vessel of over 400 tons was the ship "Tally-Ho," 420 tons, built in Newbury in 1823 for Russell Glover, of Boston; and the first of over 500 tons was the ship "Flavio," 698 tons, built in Newbury in 1833 for Eben Stone and others. While the average tonnage of registered vessels built during the ten years from 1800 to 1809, inclusive, was 124½, that during the ten years from 1830 to 1839, inclusive, was 274. Of course the ten following years, beginning with 1840, would show a much higher average even than that.

How soon this process of centralization will cease it is of course difficult to foresee. That it will at some time cease is as sure as the fact that we are as yet a young nation, with its resources not yet fully developed, and that the changes of the next fifty years will be as sudden and startling as those of the last. The conditions of trade will be controlled by the same law which controls all tributary streams which, when they have filled the central reservoir, will flow back to the sources from whence they came. The grain and cattle trades with Europe, now in their infancy, but destined to be gigantic in their proportions, cannot long be conducted along the shore-fronts of populous cities and must seek the cheaper vacant lands of the outports for their successful pursuit. With the policy of our government growing more liberal from year to year to improve our rivers and harbors by the removal of bars and the deepening of tide-water basins, the ports of New

England, now comparatively deserted by navigation, must in time become the recipients of the overflow from the harbors of Boston and New York, and once more be the scenes of active commercial life. In our rapidly growing country, no harbor that can be deepened and made accessible by the use of money in the hands of scientific skill, can long remain idle.

In the summer of 1817, President Monroe visited Newburyport. A Committee of Reception was appointed of which Ebenezer Mosely was chairman and the town of Newbury was invited to join in the ceremonies. The President was received at Ipswich by a deputation of Military Officers and at the lower green in Newbury a Company of Cavalry under Colonel Jeremiah Coleman, with the Sheriff of the County, the Committee of Arrangements and a large body of citizens took him in charge and escorted him into the town. After the ceremonies of reception he was conducted to the Wolfe Tavern, where a dinner was provided at which General Swift presided. After dinner the President proceeded on his journey into New Hampshire.

In 1820 the "Institution for Savings in Newburyport and its vicinity" was incorporated, and rapidly grew into favor with the people who in the increasing depression of business felt the necessity of lessening their expenditures and laying up something to meet the uncertain days of the future. This institution has been conducted with prudence, and commands the confidence of the people.

Its present officers are Edward S. Mosely, President; Isaac H. Boardman, and Eben F. Stone, Vice Presidents; Philip V. Hill, Treasurer; Lawrence W. Piper, Secretary; and George W. Piper, Auditor. Its deposits are about \$1,500,000.

In 1854 the Newburyport Five Cents Savings Bank was incorporated, and is also a prosperous institution. Its Treasurer is John A. Maynard, and its deposits are more than \$1,000,000.

During this period also, the Merrimac Bank was incorporated June 25, 1795, its charter terminating July 1, 1805, and William Bartlett was its President. The Newburyport Bank was incorporated March 8, 1803, and Dudley A. Tyng was its President. The Newburyport Bank on the expiration of the charter of the Merrimac in 1805 was united with that Bank and continued business under its old name until the expiration of its charter in 1812, William Bartlett being President and its capital being \$550,000. At the expiration of the charter in 1812 a new Act of Incorporation was obtained under the same name with a capital of \$210,000, which expired in 1831. The successor of this Bank is the present Merchants National, which was incorporated as the Merchants' Bank March 18, 1831, and has a capital of \$120,000. In 1861 it became the Merchants' National Bank.

Another Bank bearing the name of the Newburyport Bank was incorporated in 1836, with a capital of \$100,000 which was wound up in 1845.



The Mechanics' Bank was incorporated in 1813, and has a capital of \$250,000. In 1864 it became the Mechanics' National Bank.

The Ocean Bank was incorporated March 20, 1833, and has a capital of \$250,000. In 1865 it became the Ocean National Bank.

The First National Bank was organized in 1864, and has a capital of \$300,000.

In 1826 a charter was obtained for the bridge known as the Newburyport Bridge, crossing the Merrimac from the foot of Summer Street to the Salisbury shore, and finished in 1827, at a cost of \$70,000 and opened on the 1st of September in that year. The Essex Merrimac Bridge connecting what was Newbury with Salisbury being now within the limits of Newburyport may be properly referred to in this narrative. It was projected in 1791, and a subscription was at once started for its construction, of which the following is a copy taken from the original:

"No. 1.

NEWBURYPORT, May 30th, 1791.

"*Whereas*, a Bridge over Merrimack River, from the land of the Hon-ble Jonathan Greenleaf, Esquire, in Newbury, to Deer Island, and from the said Island to Salisbury, would be of very extensive utility, by admitting a safe Conveyance to Carriages, Teams and Travellers at all seasons of the year, and at all Times of Tide.

"We, the subscribers, do agree, that as soon as a convenient Number of Persons have subscribed to this, or a similar Writing, We will present a petition to the Hon-ble General Court of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, praying for an Act incorporating into a Body politic the subscribers to such Writing, with Liberty to build said Bridge, and a Right to demand a Toll equal to that received at Maiden Bridge and on line Tolls, and if such an Act shall be obtained, then we severally agree each with the others, that we will hold in the said Bridge the several shares set against our respective Names, the whole into two hundred shares being divided, and that we will pay such sums of Money at such Times and in such Manners as, by the said proposed Corporation, shall be directed and required.

Names.	Place of abode.	Shares.
Edward Katal, Newburyport.....		10
George Sattle, Newburyport.....		10
Joseph Tyler, Newburyport.....		10
Richard Pike, Newburyport.....		1
Joshua Tappan, Newburyport.....		3
Elizabeth Roberts, Newburyport.....		2
Andrew & B. Frothingham, Newburyport.....		6
Moses Hoyt, Newburyport.....		1
Francis Horton, Newburyport.....		1
William East, Newburyport.....		2
Robert Long, Newburyport.....		1
S. Emerson.....		1
E. Wheelwright.....		1
W. Chubb.....		6
M. Brown.....		10
E. Titcomb.....		1
E. Sawyer.....		4
J. Burroughs.....		1
Jere. Pearson.....		1
Jon. Marsh.....		1
James Prince.....		4
Thomas White.....		4
Sam. Bailey.....		4
Joseph Cutter, Newburyport.....		3
William Ingells, Newburyport.....		1
Wm. H. Prout, Newburyport.....		2
Wm. Wye, Newburyport.....		5
Wm. H. Prout, Jr., Newburyport.....		2
Nath. Healey, Hampton Falls.....		2
Hamish Dummer, Newburyport.....		3
John Mycall, Newburyport.....		1

Nathl. Carter, Jr., Newburyport.....	10
Thomas Cory, Newburyport.....	6
Tristram Dalton, Newburyport.....	10
Timothy Dexter, Newburyport.....	10
Tristram Collin, Newburyport.....	2
Steph. Cross, Newburyport.....	2
Dudley A. Tyng, Newburyport.....	15
Stephen Hooper for Miss Sarah Roberts, Newbury.....	10
Stephen Hooper as guardian to Thomas W. Hooper, Newbury.....	5
Joseph Swazey, Newburyport.....	4
True Kimball, Newbury.....	2
Sam. Gerrish, Newbury.....	2
Jacob Brown.....	2
S. L. Tyler.....	20
Total.....	200

After the subscription for the necessary number of shares, a petition was sent to the General Court, and on the 13th of June, 1791, notice was served on the town of Newbury. On the 4th of November that town voted to oppose the building of the bridge, and on the 30th of November reconsidered the vote. Finally, on the 15th of December, the reconsideration was reconsidered, and the representative from Newbury was instructed to oppose it. On the 9th of January, 1792, a strong remonstrance, numerously signed, was sent to the General Court, but the charter was granted, and on the 26th of November, 1792, the completed bridge was opened. It was built in seven months under the direction of Timothy Palmer, of Newburyport, a native of Boxford. On the 4th of July, 1793, the *Essex Journal* says that "Timothy Dexter delivered an oration on the bridge, which for elegance of style, propriety of speech and force of argument, was truly Ciceronian."

Until 1868 these two bridges were toll bridges. On the 5th of June, in that year, an act was passed by the legislature directing the county commissioners, within sixty days, to lay out as highways the several bridges over the Merrimac River, known as Andover Bridge and Lawrence Bridge, in the City of Lawrence; Haverhill Bridge, between Haverhill and Bradford; Rock Bridge, between West Newbury and Haverhill; Essex Merrimac Bridge, between Salisbury and Newburyport; Newburyport Bridge, between Salisbury and Newburyport; and the Essex Bridge, over North River between Beverly and Salem; and to determine what proportion of the amount of damages shall be paid by the county of Essex, and by the several cities and towns benefited by the laying out.

Under this act the County Commissioners gave notice of the laying out of these bridges on the 4th of August, 1868. The charter of the Newburyport Bridge, having expired no damage was awarded to its proprietors, and it was decreed "that so much of said bridge as lies southerly of a line drawn three quarters of the whole distance from the southern end of said bridge, being three-fourths of said bridge next adjoining to said Newburyport, shall be maintained, kept in repair and supported, and the expense thereof and of raising the draw in said bridge, shall be paid





by said city of Newburyport; and that the remainder of said bridge, being one-fourth part thereof lying next to Salisbury, aforesaid, shall be maintained, kept in repair and supported, and the expense thereof shall be paid by said town of Salisbury."

With regard to the Essex Merrimac Bridge, the commissioners decreed that the damages sustained by its proprietors amounted to thirty thousand dollars, of which the county should pay ten thousand, the city of Newburyport ten thousand, the town of Salisbury five thousand, and the town of Amesbury five thousand dollars. They also decreed, "that so much of said Essex Merrimac Bridge as lies within the city of Newburyport, shall be maintained, kept in repair and supported, and the expense thereof shall be paid by said city of Newburyport; and that so much of said bridge as lies within the town of Salisbury, shall be maintained, kept in repair and supported by said town of Salisbury; but the expense thereof and of raising the draw in said bridge, shall be paid in equal moieties by said town of Salisbury and said town of Amesbury; and said town of Amesbury shall reimburse to said town of Salisbury, one-half the expense thereof."

In 1824, as has been already incidentally stated, Lafayette visited Newburyport. He came to the United States as the guest of the nation, and was welcomed with the most gratifying testimonials of respect wherever he went. A town-meeting was called at which the selectmen with ten other gentlemen were appointed a committee to make necessary arrangements for his reception. The 31st of August was the day arranged for the visit, and it was expected he would reach the town early enough in the day to enable the programme, which included a procession in the afternoon, and bonfires and fireworks in the evening, to be fully carried out. A long detention, however, at Salem, where he was honored by a public dinner at which Judge Joseph Story presided, and later detentions at Beverly, where he was addressed by Robert Rantoul, at Ipswich, where Nathaniel Lord addressed him, with halts at Hamilton and Rowley, delayed his arrival until after ten o'clock in the night. During a heavy rain he was escorted into the town and conducted to the mansion of James Prince, now the Public Library Building, where, as stated in the earlier part of this narrative, he occupied the room, and bed in which Washington had slept during his visit in 1789. Prince Stetson, the landlord of the "Wolf tavern," supplied his table and Charles Stetson his son, afterwards one of the proprietors of the Astor House in New York, was detailed for special attendance to his wants. The next day was too inclement to permit the parade of school-children which had been intended, and Lafayette went on his way to Portsmouth, where he was entertained by a ball, and from whence he returned to Boston, passing though Newburyport in the early morning without ceremony or even the knowledge of the inhabitants.

We are brought now to what was the darkest period in the history of Newburyport. To all other causes which had operated to depress its commerce, the Navigation Laws of 1820 had been added, serving still more to discourage capitalists and trade. From 1810 to 1820, the population had fallen from 7634 to 6852, and in 1830 it had fallen still further down to 6741. The tonnage of the town had been also reduced from 35,296 tons in 1810 to 16,577 in 1830, a reduction of more than one-half. The tide was at its lowest ebb. The market, which in earlier days had been filled with country teams, was almost deserted; the East and West Indies and Mediterranean commerce had well-nigh disappeared, and masters of vessels, once active on the sea, were spending their time in the Reading Room and Insurance office, hoping against hope, for a revival of the good old times. An intelligent antiquary in a series of articles written for the *Herald* of Newburyport, says "that everything grew old and rusty and dead; nobody thought of painting a building and there were so many of them empty, that rent was nothing, and the purchase price of anything was less than that. If an old fence blew down, there it lay unless it was picked up to burn, and when a pump-handle broke no more water came from that well."

But it is as true of municipalities and of men as of the order of nature, that the darkest time is just before morning. Capital, as closely attracted by the hope of profit as the needle by the magnet, began to feel that there were other channels than those of navigation open to it. Lowell had been incorporated in 1826, and the cotton manufacture was everywhere attracting the attention of enterprising men. A new wave of industry and enterprise was sweeping over New England, and Newburyport felt it and rejoiced that the tide had turned. The Essex mill was built in 1833, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars, and though it was neither long-lived nor largely profitable, it served, before it was finally burned on the 8th of March, 1856, to lead the way for others to follow, with surer steps and a better success. Several years after the erection of the Essex mill, as the Newburyport antiquary already referred to states, "a new man appeared among us, a well-formed, noble-looking person, such a man as you do not often meet, full of power, energy and enterprise, who had studied machinery till he was himself one of the most powerful machines; who had been among steam-engines till he was a perfect steam-engine himself; thinking nothing of what to others seemed mountains of difficulties, and having an influence over the opinions and purses of our staid old capitalists that no other man had possessed for a long time. He could wake up some that had been sleeping since the great fire; he could talk his projects into them; he could set them to work and make them do something."

This man was Charles Tillinghast James, of Providence, R. I., then about thirty years of age, and by his skill and energy, aided by the capital of William





Bartlett, then eighty-nine years of age, and others, the Bartlett mills were incorporated in 1837 and put in operation in 1838, under the name of the Wescamcon Mills. Two years afterwards, mill No. 2 of this corporation was built, and the name changed to the Bartlett Mills. The capital of the mills was three hundred and fifty thousand dollars, and with four hundred and forty-eight looms and twenty-two thousand spindles, their product was seventy-five thousand yards of fine sheetings and shirtings per week. These mills, situated on Pleasant Street, were burned on the morning of March 1, 1881, and were not rebuilt.

Through the exertions of Mr. James, another mill was incorporated in 1842 and named after its enterprising projector, the "James Steam Mills." The original capital was one hundred and fifty thousand dollars—but in 1871 a new company was formed, with a capital of two hundred and fifty thousand dollars, and the name changed to the "Masconomet Mills." The property of this mill was sold in 1876 to a new company, now called the "Victoria." It has three hundred and fifty looms, seventeen thousand two hundred and sixteen spindles, and its product of brown and bleached sheetings and shirtings is forty-eight thousand yards per week.

In 1845 the Globe Steam Mills were incorporated, but reorganized, and changed its name in 1868 to the "Peabody Mills," with a capital of three hundred thousand dollars;—four hundred looms, nineteen thousand spindles, and a product of ninety thousand yards of print cloths and sheetings per week.

The Ocean Mill was incorporated in 1846, and enlarged in 1868. In 1871 a new company was formed, with a capital of three hundred thousand dollars. In 1886 a new company was organized, and the name of the "Whitfield Mills" adopted. It has five hundred and seventy-three looms, twenty-seven thousand spindles, and produces one hundred thousand yards of print cloths and fine sheetings per week.

These three mills give employment to nearly a thousand persons, who represent probably a population of twenty-five hundred. It is quite doubtful whether they alone do not furnish more labor and disburse more money among the people than the entire commerce of Newburyport in its most prosperous days. Their effect on the population was immediate. From sixty-seven hundred and forty-one in 1830, it rose to seven thousand one hundred and sixty-one in 1840, and to nine thousand five hundred and thirty-four in 1850.

Nor was this all. In 1840 railroad connection with Boston was completed, and not only infused new spirit into the people, but afforded ready opportunities for its exercise. Inland commerce by rail has taken the place of the commerce by sea and is ten-fold larger. It can only be said that new industries have taken the place of old, and with a full adjustment of the people and business to new conditions, it will be

found that the depression which attended the transition has gone forever. The stage driver mourns over the old days on the box, but he is made station agent or conductor, and settles down to his new vocation, happier and better paid than before. The shipmaster groans over the departed glories of the sea, and while he groans, he is remembered by the capitalist whose ship he sailed, and called to better and more satisfying posts. The lumber on the wharves, kicks the cap log with his heels, believing the country is doomed to destruction because his accustomed work has failed, but the factory, the gas-house, the freight station or horse railroad wins him at last into better opportunities of developing himself, of educating his children, of giving him a happier home.

On the 25th of December, 1847, the telegraph between Boston and Newburyport was opened and in the same year a company was raised for the Mexican War to be attached to the regiment of which Caleb Cushing was commissioned colonel. In 1850 the Newburyport Railroad connecting with the Boston and Maine was opened and this brings us to a point in the history of Newburyport when it was soon to throw off its old municipal garb and assume the dignity of a city. Its people had never been satisfied with the territorial lines drawn at the time of their incorporation as a town in 1764. In May of that year a petition was presented to the General Court praying that the limits of the town might be enlarged. In 1794 a committee was appointed to prepare a petition to enlarge the bounds of the town. In 1821, 1827 and 1835 the subject was again agitated, and again in 1843 and 1846. At the Annual Meeting in March, 1850, it was voted to build a new Town Hall at a cost not exceeding thirty thousand dollars, and the building now occupied as the City Hall was erected and opened on the 4th of March, 1851. In that year efforts for enlargement, which had been so long ineffectual, were brought to a successful issue and the following Act of Annexation was passed by the General Court:

"In the year one thousand eight hundred and fifty-one an act to annex a part of the town of Newbury to the town of Newburyport.

"Be enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives, in General Court assembled, and by the authority of the same, as follows:—

"Section 1. So much of the town of Newbury, in the County of Essex, as lies within the following lines, to wit: beginning at the northerly boundary of Newburyport, on the Merrimac River, thence running by the Newbury line on the said river to the line of West Newbury, at the mouth of Artichoke River, thence up the said last-named River and through the middle thereof about five hundred and seventy-two rods and twenty-two links, to a place in the said stream known as the 'New Log,' thence south about twenty-five degrees east, about three hundred and sixty rods to the most easterly corner of Newburyport, thence by the line of Newburyport to the southerly side of a stream called Little River, thence by the southerly side of the said last-mentioned stream to the southeasterly side of the road at Clarke's Bridge, so-called, thence on a straight line to an elm tree near the Newburyport turnpike, on land of Daniel Colman, southerly of said Colman's house, thence to the northerly side of Marlborough street, on High street, thence to the most southerly bend of the Plum Island turnpike, thence on a straight line to the ocean, four rods southerly of the light-keeper's house, on Plum Island, thence by the ocean to Salisbury line, thence by the line of Salisbury to Newburyport, with all the inhabitants and estates thereon, is hereby set off from the town of New-



bury and annexed to the town of Newburyport; and the said inhabitants shall hereafter be considered as inhabitants of Newburyport, and shall enjoy all the rights and privileges, and be subject to all the taxes and liabilities of the inhabitants of the said town. Provided, however, that for the purpose of electing the representatives to the General Court, to which the said town of Newbury is entitled until the next decennial census shall be taken, in pursuance of the thirteenth article of amendments to the Constitution, the said territory shall remain and continue to be a part of the town of Newbury, and the inhabitants resident therein shall be entitled to vote in the choice of such representatives, and shall be eligible to the office of representative in the town of Newbury, in the same manner as if this act had not been passed.

"Section 2. The said inhabitants and estates set off shall be liable to pay all taxes that may have been legally assessed on them by the town of Newbury, in the same manner as if this act had not been passed, and the town of Newburyport shall be held to pay their just and equitable share of the debts of Newbury, and shall also be entitled to receive their just and equitable portion of all the property owned by the town of Newbury, the said portions to be ascertained by the taxes paid by the inhabitants, and upon the property annexed in the part set off and the part remaining the past year.

"Section 3. The said towns of Newbury and Newburyport shall be respectively liable for the support of all persons who now do, or shall hereafter, stand in need of relief as paupers whose settlements were gained by, or derived from, residence on their respective territories.

"Section 4. In case the said towns shall not agree on a division of property, debts, paupers, and all other existing town liabilities, the Court of Common Pleas for the County of Essex shall, upon the petition of either of the said towns, appoint three competent and disinterested persons to hear the parties and award taxes, and their award, accepted by the Court, shall be final. Provided, however, that until the division of the said property, as aforesaid, the same shall be and remain under the control of the town of Newbury, and the inhabitants of Newbury may hold their town meetings in the town-house as heretofore.

"Section 5. The Selectmen of Newburyport shall annually, fourteen days at least before the second Monday of November, furnish the Selectmen of Newbury a correct list, so far as may be ascertained from the records of the town of Newburyport or any of its officers, of all persons resident on the territory hereby set off, who shall be entitled to vote for representatives as aforesaid in Newbury; and if every resident by the said Selectmen so to furnish such list, the town of Newburyport shall forfeit the sum of one hundred dollars; and for the making of any false return in respect to any part of such list, shall forfeit the sum of twenty dollars for every name in respect to which a false return shall have been made, to be recovered in the same manner as is provided by the fourth section of the third chapter of the Revised Statutes, in respect to penalties in respect of false returns of collectors of taxes.

"Section 6. The said towns of Newbury and Newburyport may at town meetings, duly notified within seven days after the passage of this act, grant and vote such sums of money as they may respectively judge necessary for debt purposes authorized by law, and amend, modify and change any votes on that subject passed at their annual meeting the present year.

"Section 7. This act shall have effect from and after its passage.

"THOMAS H. B. REPRESENTATIVE, April 16, 1851.

"PASE 1 to be enacted.

"S. P. BYRKS, JR., Speaker.

"HOUSE, April 17, 1851.

"Passed to be enacted.

"HENRY WILSON, President.

"April 17, 1851.

"Approved. GEORGE S. BARTWELL."

The allusion to the town-house, at the end of the fourth section, refers to the fact that the Newbury town-house then in use was located on the annexed territory. By this Act the territory of Newburyport was enlarged from six hundred and forty-seven acres to more than six thousand, and the population from 9534 to 12,866. At a town meeting held on the 24th of April, 1851, a committee was appointed, consisting of Caleb Cushing, Henry W. Kinsman, Joseph Roberts, E. S. Williams, Joshua Hale, Samuel Phillips,

Thomas Huse, E. F. Stone, Henry Frothingham and Moses Davenport, to prepare and present to the Legislature a petition for a city charter. In pursuance of this petition an act of incorporation was passed May 21, 1851. The act provided that the selectmen should, as soon as might be, after its passage and its acceptance by the people, proceed to divide the city into six wards; the wards to contain, as nearly as practicable, an equal number of inhabitants, the same to be subject to revision once in five years.

At a town meeting held on the 3d of June, 1851, the selectmen presiding, the whole number of votes cast upon the acceptance of the act was five hundred and ninety-four, of which four hundred and eighty-four were in the affirmative. In the election for city officers the following were chosen ward officers:

Ward 1. Major Goodwin, Mathew Merriam, David T. Woodwell, Cutting Pittingell, Jr. Henry A. Lander.	Ward 4. Wm. Thurston, Daniel Granger, Leazer R. Walker, William A. Marston, John Burlin.
Ward 2. Phillip Johnson, John B. Goodwin, Charles M. Bayley, Rufus Smith, Nicholas Brown.	Ward 5. Edward Burdell, Moses H. Hale, William H. Brewster, Henry Stover, Robert Sherman.
Ward 3. Amos Toppam, Joseph H. Bragdon, D. S. Blake, Nathaniel S. Osgood, Rufus S. Griffith.	Ward 6. John Merrill, Abraham Toppam, Amos Wood, Samuel C. Currier, Daniel T. Colman.

The mayor, aldermen and councilman were subsequently chosen as follows:

#### Mayor.

Caleb Cushing.

#### Aldermen.

Ward 1. Thomas Huse, " 2. John Porter, " 3. Moses Davenport.	Ward 4. Nathaniel Horton, " 5. John M. Cooper, " 6. Joseph Roberts.
--	---

#### Common Council.

Ward 1. Zachens P. Thurlb. John Woodwell, George W. Knight.	Ward 1. Phillip K. Hills, William C. Balch, Edwin T. Stone.
Ward 2. Phillip Johnson, Frederick Knight, Jacob Stone.	Ward 5. Albert Kimball, Jacob Horton, Jacob Hale.
Ward 3. Isaac H. Boardman, Charles T. Brockway, Moses Hale.	Ward 6. John Currier, Jr., John Colby, Joseph Newell.

#### School Committee.

Ward 1. George J. L. Colby, Harvey Kimball.	Ward 4. Daniel P. Pike, J. H. Sawyer.
Ward 2. William Graves, Mack Seymour.	Ward 5. H. W. Kinsman, E. Lawrence.
Ward 3. Randolph Campbell, Newman Brown.	Ward 6. A. L. Merrill, Henry Merrill, Jr.

#### Overseers of the Poor.

Ward 1. Charles H. Ireland, " 2. Elazer Johnson, " 3. Daniel Colman.	Ward 4. Daniel P. Pike, " 5. Richard Stone, " 6. John Colby.
--	--

The following gentlemen have served as mayors during the years specified with their names:





- |                                     |                              |
|-------------------------------------|------------------------------|
| 1851. Caleb Cushing.                | 1868. Nathaniel Pierce.      |
| 1852 (part). Caleb Cushing.         | 1869. Nathaniel Pierce.      |
| 1852 (part). Henry Johnson.         | 1870. Robert Couch.          |
| 1853. Henry Johnson.                | 1871. Elbridge G. Kelley.    |
| 1854. Moses Davenport.              | 1872. Elbridge G. Kelley.    |
| 1855. Moses Davenport.              | 1873. Warren Currier.        |
| 1856. William Cushing.              | 1874. Warren Currier.        |
| 1857. William Cushing.              | 1875. Benjamin F. Atkinson.  |
| 1858. William Cushing.              | 1876. Benjamin F. Atkinson.  |
| 1859. Albert Currier.               | 1877. George W. Jackman, Jr. |
| 1860. Albert Currier.               | 1878. Jonathan Smith.        |
| 1861 (part). Moses Davenport.       | 1879. John James Currier.    |
| 1861 (part). George W. Jackman, Jr. | 1880. John James Currier.    |
| 1862. George W. Jackman, Jr.        | 1881. Robert Couch.          |
| 1863. Isaac H. Boardman.            | 1882. Benjamin Hale.         |
| 1864. George W. Jackman, Jr.        | 1883. Wm. A. Johnson.        |
| 1865. George W. Jackman, Jr.        | 1884. Wm. A. Johnson.        |
| 1866. William Graves.               | 1885. Thomas Simpson.        |
| 1867. Eben F. Stone.                | 1886. Charles C. Dune.       |
|                                     | 1887. Job Otis Windley.      |

The following persons may be mentioned as associated with Newburyport in the third period of its existence:

WILLIAM WHEELWRIGHT was born in Newburyport in 1798. He was the son of Capt. Ebenezer Wheelwright, a prominent merchant of that town, and he began life as a sailor before the mast in the employ of Wm. Bartlett. At the age of nineteen he was placed in command of the ship "Rising Sun" of two hundred and eighty-four tons, and made several voyages to South America, in one of which he was wrecked near the mouth of the river La Platte. After his safe arrival at Montevideo he crossed the continent to Guayaquil, and engaged in the coasting trade in a vessel which he named the "Fourth of July." In this business he accumulated a moderate fortune and returned to Newburyport, where he married the granddaughter of his early employer, who returned with him to South America. Soon after 1830 he went to England and organized a company which built two steamers, the "Peru" and "Chili," which were the first steamers to double Cape Horn, and which became the nucleus of what is now known as the British Pacific Steamship Company. His next enterprise was the introduction of gas street lights in Valparaiso which was soon followed by the construction of aqueducts.

Mr. Wheelwright built the first railway on the west coast of South America from Caldera to Copocho, and afterwards turning his attention to the eastern coast constructed the Argentine railroad from Buenos Ayres to Cordova, and was engaged in building a railroad from Buenos Ayres to Ensenada with the view of a final connection with the harbor of Valparaiso.

In the execution of these enterprises he exhibited great business capacity united with patience, power of endurance, tact and knowledge of men. In 1873, he went to London where he died on the 26th of September, 1873, leaving a widow and an only child, the wife of Paul Krell, both of whom were with him at the time of his death. He left a large fortune, two-ninths of which he bequeathed to trustees for the

purpose of founding a scientific school in his native city, for the education of young men of the Protestant faith. The trustees were Robert Codman and Charles C. Wood, of Boston, and Wm. B. Atkinson, Lavinia B. Cushing and Eben F. Stone, of Newburyport. His remains were brought from England in the steamship "City of Paris," and after private funeral services at his late residence in High Street, Newburyport, on the 15th of October, his body was conveyed to the old South Presbyterian Church, where public obsequies took place. The flags on the public buildings were hung at half mast, and during the passage of the funeral procession the church bells of the city were tolled.

JACOB NEWMAN KNAPP was born in Newburyport November 7, 1773, and was the second of nine children of Isaac and Susan (Newman) Knapp, of that town. His parents were poor, and, though their whole library consisted of a Bible and hymn book, "Paradise Lost," a few odd volumes of Shakespeare, Josephus and a few printed sermons, they were unwearied in their efforts to secure for their children the full advantages of the public and Sunday-schools. Samuel Lorenzo Knapp was one of the children, and his career, sketched in the chapter on the bench and bar, as well as that of Jacob, attests the success of their efforts. Joseph Knapp, another brother, practiced medicine in North Carolina many years, and there died after a successful professional career.

The subject of this sketch at the age of five years entered the common schools of his native town, and for ten years reaped the benefits of an instruction under the care of Masters Sewall, Norton and Nicholas Pike. He remembered well and often spoke of the visit of Washington to Newburyport in 1789, the last year of his attendance at school. He said that "the children of the schools were drawn up in lines to receive the Father of his Country. The children were badged according to their proficiency, the elders carrying a slate and pencil in token of their having attained to cyphering. Those who had mastered spelling carried a primer, while those that could write held each a sheet of paper and a pen in hand."

When about sixteen years of age he taught school in London, New Hampshire, having forty pupils of boys and girls. He said that most of the children under ten years of age wore leather aprons, reaching from their chins to their ankles, and that many of the girls took snuff in accordance with the fashion of the day. The next year he tied up his worldly goods in a handkerchief, and walked to Sanbornton, in the same State, where he taught four years. Notwithstanding the low wages of a teacher—six dollars a month and board—he was able before entering upon the second step of his career to purchase for his father fifty acres of woodland, and to clear up ten of them for cultivation.

He next entered Phillips Academy of Andover, of which Professor Mark Newman, a cousin of his



mother, was principal. On leaving the academy he sought a school in which he might earn enough to enter college, but at this very time his schoolmate, Cassius Lee, son of Richard Henry Lee, of Virginia, who was about entering Princeton, died and bequeathed to him fifty guineas. With this money he entered Harvard, and by the aid of teaching in winter, transcribing college documents, hiring two hundred dollars, and further gifts from the family of his former friend Lee, graduated with high honors in 1802.

After graduation he taught the town-school of Charlestown, Mass., and at the same time studied theology with Rev. Dr. Jedediah Morse, the author of the old geography. After a three-years' course of teaching and study he preached in Boston and Salem, but, being afflicted with a serious trouble in his eyes, was obliged to relinquish all hope of a settlement.

In 1805 he opened a private school for boys in Salem, where he remained about ten years, having Wm. H. Prescott, Francis Peabody and others who afterwards became well-known, among his pupils. While in Salem he was urged to become a candidate for Congress, but declined, and was asked by Mr. Webster to permit his name to be presented to the trustees of Dartmouth College for the presidency of that institution. The state of his eyes was, in his opinion, such as to disqualify him for either of these positions.

After leaving Salem he soon opened a home school for boys in Brighton, which he afterwards removed to Jamaica Plains, where he taught until 1824. During his career as a teacher he fitted about two hundred young men for college, all of whom were admitted without conditions. On the 3d of June, 1819, he married Louisa, daughter of Colonel Joseph Bellows, of Walpole, New Hampshire, and in 1824 bought a farm in Walpole, and ever afterwards made it his home.

Rev. Dr. Bellows, after seeing him at the age of ninety-three, said:

"I had great pleasure in my last visit to this venerable man and from Mr. Knapp I have learned the date of his birth. I remember he came to see me there. It is forty-five years ago—when he was forty-nine years of age, and has anybody ever thought to beget or to die after that? I could conceive myself as ever becoming. Since then nearly a half century had passed and here a few weeks ago he still was, his body bent, his limbs shrunken, his flesh nearly dried up in the skin of almost a century, his hair as white as snow, and his voice quivering with age, but with his intellect active and keen, his imagination lively and playful, his interest in events as natural and eager as ever, full of humor and jest, apt at quotations from classic and from English poetry; his affections tender and warm, but, above all, with a religious confidence and aspiration as firm and soaring as when his blood was in its fullest tide, and his experience of weakness and bodily decay had not begun."

Mr. Knapp died in Walpole, July 27, 1868, at the age of ninety-five, leaving two sons, Francis Bellows Knapp and Rev. Frederick Newman Knapp, both graduates of Harvard in 1843, and now living in Plymouth.

WILLIAM INGALLS, a descendant of Edmund Ingalls, who came from England in 1629, and finally

settled in Lynn, was born in Newburyport, May 3, 1769. He graduated at Harvard in 1790, studied medicine, was professor of anatomy in Brown University and afterwards an eminent physician of Boston. He published several medical works and died at Wrentham, Massachusetts, September 8, 1851.

EBENEZER BRADBURY.—Was born in Newburyport, July 31, 1793. He was the sixth in descent from Thomas Bradbury, the agent of Sir Ferdinand Gorges who came to New England, in 1634, and after a short stay at Agamenticus, now York, settled in Salisbury. Thomas married Mary, daughter of John Perkins, of Ipswich, and had Wymond, born in 1637, who married Sarah Pike. Wymond's son Wymond born in 1669, married Maria Cotton, and had Theophilus 1706, who married Ann Woodman. Jonathan son of Theophilus born in 1734, married Abigail Smith, and had Theophilus, the distinguished lawyer of Newburyport, whose sketch may be found in the second chapter of this work, relating to the Bench and Bar of Essex County. Theophilus married Lois Pillsbury, and Ebenezer, the subject of this sketch, was his son.

Ebenezer received only a common school education and then learned the trade of silversmith, which in the days when nearly every well-trained boy was taught some trade was thought, perhaps of all the trades, the most respectable. His education was not completed, however, with his graduation from school. He possessed an elasticity of mind which rendered it more and more susceptible of knowledge, and from his youth he continued to grow in intellectual capacity and strength. He early interested himself in town affairs, and at town-meetings learned that art of oratory and that knowledge of parliamentary affairs which proved a means of advancement in his later career. He was selected as moderator of the annual meeting of the town in 1827, and acted in that capacity again in 1830, '34, '40, '44, '42, '43, '44, '45, '46. In 1828, he represented Newburyport in the House of Representatives and again in 1830, '41, '44, '47, '48, '49, and in 1847, he served as speaker. In 1845, he was a member of the Executive Council, and from 1849 to 1851 he was treasurer and receiver general of the commonwealth.

While holding the office of treasurer he removed to Newton, and was a delegate from that town to the Constitutional Convention, in 1853. In June, 1859, he removed to Milford, where he was appointed judge of the Police Court of the town of Milford, to succeed Sullivan Thayer, who resigned June 30, 1859. He held that office until the court was abolished in June, 1861, and in November, 1861, removed to East Salisbury where he died June 19, 1864.

ROBERT BAYLEY was for many years an enterprising and honorable merchant in Newburyport, and contributed largely to the reputation which that town acquired for commercial activity and wealth. He was the son of Robert Bayley, and at the age of





twenty-two he entered into business with his father under the firm name of Robert Bayley & Son, and continued in business until January 1, 1879. The firm was largely engaged in the importation of sugar and molasses and coffee, and its dealings in these articles were the largest ever carried on in Newburyport. For many years the house paid customs duties to the amount of fifty thousand dollars a year, and for several years exceeding one hundred thousand dollars. During his business career he was highly respected, and as a citizen was public-spirited, and always ready to encourage and aid in whatever was for the benefit of the community. He was married July 6, 1830, and after fifty-three years of married life the death of his wife in August, 1883, was followed by his own on Sunday, November 4th, in the same year.

DANIEL DANA was born in Ipswich, July 23, 1771, and was the son of Rev. Joseph Dana, who for sixty-three years was pastor of the Congregational Church in that town. At the age of six he entered the public school and remained two years. At the age of eight he began the study of Latin, and the next year Greek, and at the age of fourteen commenced a school for girls, associated with his brother Joseph. In 1785 he entered Dartmouth College, and at his graduation in 1789 delivered the Greek oration. After leaving college he was appointed preceptor of Moore's charity school at Andover, and shortly afterwards accepted the preceptorship of Phillips Academy at Exeter. After two years' connection with the academy, he returned to Ipswich, and pursued his theological studies with his father.

On the 19th of June, 1794, he received a call to become pastor of the Federal Street Church, in Newburyport, and on the 19th of November he was ordained. In 1814, he received the degree of D.D. from his *alma mater*, and in 1820, assumed the position of president of that institution. He resigned the presidency at the end of one year on account of ill health, and was settled at Londonderry, New Hampshire, in February, 1822. In March, 1826, he received a call from the Harris Street Church, in Newburyport, and was installed May 24, 1826. Thus after an interval of six years he returned to a former field of labor, though in another church and pulpit. The Harris Street Church contained some members who had seceded from the Federal Street Church at the time of his first settlement, and were not long in discovering that their distrust of his soundness in doctrine had been unfounded. Dr. Dana died in 1859, and on the 4th of September, a funeral discourse was delivered in the Federal Street Church, by Rev. Heman R. Timlow, pastor of the church over which he was last settled.

THOMAS HUSE was born in that part of Newbury which was annexed to Newburyport in 1851, on the 30th of January, 1813. He was descended from Abel Huse, who was born in London in 1602 and was among the earliest settlers of Newbury. It is said

that the family to which he belonged can be traced to the old Norman Barons who went into England with the Conqueror. He was the son of Samuel Huse and grandson of Captain Samuel Huse, who, with his brother, Colonel Joseph Huse, was among the most devoted patriots of 1776. He had ten brothers and sisters. Of six brothers, including Thomas, one was lost at sea, four died more than sixty-three years of age, one was seventy-three at the time of the death of Thomas; and of the three sisters who survived infancy, one died at seventy-three and two at the time of their brother's death were seventy and eighty-two. He married Hannah L. Poor, whom he left a widow with a son and daughter.

Mr. Huse had seen something of public life, having served Newbury in the General Court, and the city as Alderman from Ward 1 in 1851-52. For twenty years he was in business at the head of Coffin Wharf, and died on Thursday, December 18, 1879, in the sixty-seventh year of his age.

CHARLES TOPPAN was born in Newburyport in 1796, and was a descendant from Abraham Toppan, who settled in Newbury in 1637. Edward Toppan, the father of Charles, after serving in the Revolutionary Army with his uncle, Colonel Moses Little, was a partner in the mercantile house of Hoyt, Coolidge & Toppan. As a boy, Mr. Toppan displayed artistic talent, and while yet young he was placed under the instruction of Jacob Perkins, the inventor, with whom he remained until 1814, when, at the age of eighteen years, he went to Philadelphia to enter the house of Draper, Murray & Fairman. In the early days of the Republic, the bank-notes used were generally printed from type, on poor paper and without any safeguards against the operations of the counterfeiter. Among the early pioneers, as is stated in a paper read before the Antiquarian and Historical Society of old Newbury, which is freely used in this sketch, who led the way in the path of improvement, was Gideon Fairman, of Connecticut, who established himself in Philadelphia as an engraver, and in 1811 formed a partnership with Draper and Murray. In 1816 Jacob Perkins, also of Newburyport, went to Philadelphia and entered the employment of the firm.

The engraving of bank-notes was carried by the firm to such a state of perfection that in 1819 Mr. Perkins and Mr. Fairman went to England, in the expectation of obtaining the work of the Bank of England. Mr. Toppan, then only twenty-three years of age, but already skilled in his profession, was taken with them. In a letter dated September 3, 1819, Mr. Toppan wrote from London that

"The engravers and amateurs in the arts are one and all extravagant in their eulogiums upon the beauty of the work and the merits of the plan, and are willing to recommend it for adoption. . . . Some of my specimens have been shown and I was pleased to hear them well-spoken of. My large plate of Washington's farewell address, the title of which I have just completed, has astonished them. There has never been a plate of anything near the size engraved here, and there are at this time no engravers in the city who will attempt any large piece."





Upon the failure of the firm to sell its patent to the Bank of England, Messrs. Perkins and Fairman remained in London, where they established a house in Fleet Street, and Mr. Toppan returned to the United States in 1825. The next year he married Laura A., daughter of Dr. Robert Noxon, of Poughkeepsie, N. Y., and granddaughter of General Lazarus Ruggles, a Revolutionary officer from Connecticut. In 1828 he began business again as a bank-note engraver in Philadelphia, and was finally joined by Mr. Draper of the old firm and Mr. Carpenter, when the name of the house became Toppan, Carpenter & Co. In 1858 all the bank-note firms in the country were consolidated under the name of the "American Bank Note Company," and Mr. Toppan was chosen President. After organizing branches of the company in Philadelphia, Boston, Cincinnati, New Orleans and Montreal, with a principal office in New York, Mr. Toppan resigned after two years' service. Work is now done by this company not only for our own government, but for Russia, the Swiss Cantons, Canada, Greece, Italy, Spain, Japan and the South American States. Mr. Toppan died in Florence in October, 1874, leaving a widow and two children, Harriette Rogers Toppan and Robert Noxon.

JOHN NEWMARCH CUSHING was born in Salisbury, May 8, 1779. He was the sixth in descent from Matthew Cushing, who came to New England in 1638 with his wife Nazareth, and settled in Hingham. The ancestry of the family is easily traced back to the middle of the fifteenth century. Matthew, the immigrant, was son of Peter Cushing, of Hingham, England, who married Susan Hawes in 1585, and Peter was son of Thomas whose father, John, was son of Thomas, of Hardingham, who lived in 1450. John Newmarch was son of Benjamin and Hannah Hazeltine Cushing, and married Lydia Dowe, by whom he had two children—Caleb, born in Salisbury, January 17, 1800, who died January 2, 1879, and Lydia, born in Newburyport in 1806, who died in April, 1851. He removed to Newburyport in 1802, and, after the loss of his first wife, married Elizabeth, daughter of Nicholas Johnson of that town, by whom he had four children,—Phillip L., born in December, 1817, who died in 1846; John Newmarch, born October 20, 1820, now living; William, born August 10, 1823, who died October 15, 1875; and Mary Anna, born in March, 1816, who died in August, 1831.

His father, Benjamin, was in slender circumstances and unable to give his son a better education than the common schools of Salisbury afforded. Nor did he enjoy that long, for at about the age of ten or eleven years he began a sea life, and his preparatory instruction for a business career was the result of his native power of observation, applied to the various incidents and events going on under his eyes on ship-board and in the different parts to which he sailed. While learning the sailor's profession he looked beyond its narrow horizon into the field of commerce in which the

vessels he sailed in were engaged, taking a note of the cargoes out and the cargoes home, the wants of the people in foreign lands, the methods of dealing with them, and all the formula of trade, and thus, in a higher and better school than cities and towns could devise, laid the foundation of a mercantile career.

At about the age of twenty-one he became master, and, not long after, part owner of the vessel he commanded. In 1806 the ship "Hesper," of 303 tons, was built in Amesbury for Samuel Toppan and John N. Cushing, and it is not unlikely that this was his first venture in ownership and that he commanded the vessel of which he owned a part. In 1814 the brig "Hesper," of 187 tons, was built in Newburyport, of which he was the chief owner, and it is probable that before that date he had abandoned the sea and as a merchant had begun to make use of his acquired knowledge. In 1815, with Nicholas Johnson, Jr., whose sister he about that time married, he built at Newbury the schooner "Success," of 75 tons, and in 1823, with the same associate, at Newburyport, the brig "Rapid," of 223 tons. In these two vessels Mr. Johnson was the chief owner, but after 1823 Capt. Cushing seems to have accumulated sufficient capital to stand alone and to extend more widely the business in which for many years he was prominent and successful.

Beginning with the West Indies trade, he soon added to that a trade with Russia, Holland and other north of Europe countries, and was among the first to reap the benefits of the trade on the northwest coast of America, in which Astor, of New York, and Bryant and Sturgis, of Boston, took a prominent part. In 1828 he built the "Czarina," of 218 tons; in 1830 the brig "Pocahontas," in which Henry Johnson was a part owner; in 1832 the brig "Palos," of 277 tons, of which his son Caleb owned a part; in the same year, with Henry Johnson as part owner, the brig "James Caskie," of 283 tons; in 1833, with Mr. Johnson, the brig "Carthage," of 296 tons; in 1833, alone, the brig "Ark," of 298 tons; in 1834, with his son Philip, the brig "Corinth," of 414 tons; in 1837, with Mr. Johnson, the brig "Pallas," of 102 tons; 1840, with Mr. Johnson, the brig "Essex," of 273 tons; in 1841, with the same, the brig "Athens," of 300 tons, the brig "Massachusetts," of 308 tons, and the brig "Chenamus," of 202 tons; in 1842, alone, the brig "James Gray," of 300 tons; in 1844, alone, the brig "Salisbury," of 296 tons; and in 1845 the brig "Key-ling," of 300 tons. No other vessel appears to have been built by him on the Merrimac before his death, which occurred at Newburyport, January 5, 1849. His son, bearing his name, has, however, added largely to the fleet of which Newburyport has in the past been able to boast, and among the vessels built under his chief ownership may be mentioned the brig "Hesper," 1851, of 392 tons; the ship "John N. Cushing," 1853, of 633 tons; the ship "Sonora," 1854, of 708 tons; the ship "Lawrence Brown," 1855,



of 795 tons; the ship "Lyra," 1855, of 812 tons; the ship "Elizabeth Cushing," 1857, of 888 tons; the ship "Elcano," 1864, of 1210 tons; the ship "Whittier," 1869, of 1295 tons; the ship "Nearchus," 1872, of 1288 tons; and the ship "Mary L. Cushing," 1883, of 1658 tons.

To the qualities of quick perception, keen observation, knowledge of human nature, active industry, indomitable energy and promptness of decision, indicated by the career here outlined, Mr. Cushing added a dignity of character and a sterling integrity which commanded the confidence and respect of his fellow-citizens.

DANIEL INGALLS TENNEY was the son of Richard and Ruth (Ingalls) Tenney, and was born in Newburyport, May 2, 1800. His father was a carpenter, who lived at one time on Federal Street and at a later date on the corner of Orange and Fair Streets. Percy Tenney, a brother of his father, kept a store on Market Square, and in this store Daniel, at the age of twelve years, was entered as a boy or clerk. During the business depression caused by the War of 1812 he left his uncle and went on foot to Boston to seek employment. He there entered the office of his uncle, Dr. William Ingalls, a distinguished physician, who furnished him with occupation until he obtained a situation as an apprentice in mercantile life. After a few years' residence in Boston he removed to the city of New York to serve as a clerk for his brother, William I. Tenney, who was carrying on a jewelry store at the corner of Murray Street and Broadway.

It was not long before his aptitude for business made him sufficiently useful to his brother to be taken into partnership with him, a connection which continued until his brother's death, in 1848. The business was carried on after that date under his sole management until May 1, 1856, when he withdrew from active business life, with a well-deserved fortune. Though leaving Newburyport when a young man and forming absorbing interests, surrounded by the bustle and activity of city life, he never permitted his attachment to his native town to wither and fade.

In 1863 he subscribed the sum of four hundred dollars to aid in the purchase of the building now used for a Public Library. This was his first benefaction in behalf of the city. His second was a new year's gift, in 1877, of the lamp-posts and lanterns which light the entrance to the City Hall. Previous to this last gift his sister, Mrs. Eliza Hanaford, who died in Brooklyn in 1872, leaving Mr. Tenney the only survivor of the family, made a bequest of five thousand dollars to the Society for the Relief of Aged Females in Newburyport. On the 7th of October, 1878, the city government received the following communication.

*To His Honor the Mayor and City Council of the City of Newburyport:*

"GENTLEMEN,—I have the honor to announce to you that Daniel I. Tenney, of New York City, a native of Newburyport, feeling a very deep interest in his birthplace, has contracted with the celebrated artist, J. G. A. Ward, for a bronze statue of Washington, which, when completed, he proposes to present to this city.

"As his representative, I would respectfully petition your honorable body for leave to locate the statue in the triangular spot at the east end of the Bartlett Mall, and for permission to occupy the ground during its erection.

"Respectfully Yours,

"EDWARD F. COLLIN."

The request of Mr. Collin was, of course, granted, and on the 8th of November following a committee of the city government was appointed "to make the necessary arrangements for the reception and unveiling of the munificent gift." A committee was duly appointed, but in consequence of unavoidable delays a new city government came into office before the reception of the statue, and a new committee, consisting of His Honor, John J. Currier, Aldermen Charles L. Ayers and William H. Noyes and Councilmen Joseph Hall, Thomas Huse, Jr., and Thomas H. Boardman, was appointed to take charge of the ceremonies.

The statue was cast in bronze by George Fischer & Brother, of New York City, and the pedestal was wrought of granite by M. T. Jameson, of Rockland, Maine, from designs drawn by Rufus Sargent, of Newburyport. The reception and unveiling took place on the 22d of February, 1879, the former, in consequence of the inclemency of the weather, in the City Hall.

The ceremonies of the reception were in accordance with the following programme:

Grand Fantasia.....	Bosquet.
Haverhill Cornet Band.	
Introductory Prayer.....	Rev. Samuel J. Spalding, D.D.
"Angel of Peace".....	To the music of Keller's American Hymn.
Sung by a chorus of sixteen voices.	
Address of Rev. Stephen H. Tyng, D.D., to the sons of Newburyport in New York City, with accompanying resolutions presented by Rev. Geo. D. Wildes, D.D.	
Original Hymn.....	By a son of Newburyport.
"Washington": an original sonnet.....	By Hon. George Hunt.
Read by Rev. George D. Wildes, D.D.	
Selections from "Martha".....	Arranged by Hartman.
Haverhill Cornet Band.	
Address.....	Right Rev. Thomas M. Clark, D.D.
"Freedom, God and Right".....	J. Barnby
Sung by a chorus of sixteen voices.	
Presentation of Statue.....	By Edward F. Collin, Esq.
Acceptance of Statue.....	By John J. Currier, Mayor.
Musical Selections.....	Haverhill Cornet Band.

At the close of the exercises in City Hall a procession was formed under the direction of Lieutenant-Colonel Charles L. Ayers, chief marshal, escorted by Company M of Lawrence (Sherman Cadets), Capt. Lawrence Duchesney; Company A (Cushing Guard), of Newburyport, Capt. David L. Withington; Company F (Haverhill City Guards), of Haverhill, Capt. Marshall Alden; and Company B (City Cadets), of Newburyport, Capt. Samuel W. Tuck,—four companies of the Eighth Regiment, forming a battalion under the command of Major Edward F. Bartlett,—and marched from Brown Square to the Mall, where the statue was unveiled without further ceremony. Mr. Tenney died at the Metropolitan Hotel, in New York, where he had lived for many years, on Wednesday, November 23, 1881, and was buried on Friday, the 25th, in Greenwood Cemetery.





ELEAZER JOHNSON was born in Newburyport on the 12th of November, 1790. He was educated first at Dummer Academy, and afterwards entered Harvard College, but did not remain. His brother, Jonathan Greenleaf Johnson, named after his grandfather, who died in September, 1868, entered college at the same time, and graduated in 1810. After leaving Cambridge, Mr. Johnson made Newburyport his permanent place of residence, and few men within its limits have been more conspicuous in town affairs and more generally popular. As early as 1811 he was chosen selectman and served in that capacity two years. In 1831 he was moderator of the annual town-meeting, and in the same year was chosen town clerk, continuing in office until the incorporation of the city, in 1851. On the organization of the city government he was chosen city clerk, and remained in office until his death, February 25, 1869. Upon the announcement of his death, the church bells were tolled and the flag on City Hall was displayed at half-mast.

Funeral services were held at the house of Mr. Johnson at half-past one on Wednesday, March 2d, followed by public services in the Pleasant Street Church, attended by the Masonic societies of the city, the city government and the living ex-mayors. A large concourse attended the exercises and followed the remains to the grave.

JOHN J. SPRAGUE was born in Newburyport in 1810, and in early manhood was private secretary of Lewis Cass. In 1834 he received an appointment as second lieutenant in the Marine Corps. He served through the Florida War under General Worth, and in 1844 married the general's oldest daughter. When the war broke out in 1861 he was in Texas, in command of a part of the troops surrendered by General Twiggs. He was released on his parole and appointed adjutant-general of the State of New York by Governor Seymour. In 1865, he was appointed colonel of the Seventh Regular Infantry, and was made military governor of Florida. When the army was reduced he was placed on the retired list and settled in St. Augustine. He died in New York Hospital, in New York, on Friday, September 6, 1878, at the age of sixty-eight.

WILLIAM LLOYD GARRISON was born in a little frame house, believed to be still standing on School Street in Newburyport, December 19, 1805. His father was Abijah Garrison, a master of a vessel who had settled in Newburyport in the spring of that year. Abijah Garrison was born on the Jemseg, a tributary of St. John's River in 1773, and was the son of Joseph Garrison, who was a farmer and is believed to have been an Englishman, found there by grantees of lands, who emigrated there from Essex County in 1763. Joseph Garrison married, August 14, 1764, Mary, daughter of Daniel Palmer, one of the Essex emigrants, who was great-grandson of Sergeant John Palmer, who settled in Rowley in 1639. The wife of

Abijah Garrison was Frances Maria, daughter of Andrew Lloyd, of Deer Island, in Passamaquoddy Bay, whom he met while in port on one of his coasting voyages. In 1804 Abijah removed to St. John, and subsequently to Granville, Nova Scotia, from which place the migration to Newburyport was made. His children were Mary Ann, born on the Jemseg, who died in infancy; James Holley, born in St. John, July 10, 1801; Caroline Eliza, 1803; William Lloyd, Dec. 1, 1805; Maria Elizabeth, July, 1808. Not long after this last date Abijah Garrison left his family and never returned. He went to New Brunswick, where he is known to have been living in 1814, and is believed to have died in Canada. Mrs. Garrison, left poor, managed, by the aid of friends and by her services as nurse, to support her family, and when William Lloyd was old enough, he would be sent out on election and other public days to earn a few pennies to add to the family store.

During the War of 1812, Mrs. Garrison removed to Lynn, taking James with her to learn the shoemaker's trade, and William went to live with Deacon Ezekiel Bartlett, who lived at the corner of Water and Summer Streets. His earliest instruction was obtained at a primary school in School Street, and his later education at the grammar school on the Mall for three months, at the end of which he was taken from school to do chores for Mr. Bartlett. Being fond of music, he joined, while yet a boy, the choir of the Baptist Church and sometimes acted as chorister.

At the age of nine years he was apprenticed to Gamaliel W. Oliver, of Lynn, to learn shoemaking, but the work proved too hard for his delicate frame and constitution. In October, 1815, he went with his mother and brother to Baltimore, in company with Paul Newhall, a shoe manufacturer, who was removing his business to that city. The experiment, however, proved a failure, and Mr. Newhall returned to Lynn, followed soon after by William, whom, at his own earnest solicitation, his mother sent to Newburyport. Soon after he was apprenticed to Moses Short, of Haverhill, cabinet-maker, but, becoming home-sick, was permitted to return to his old friend, Mr. Bartlett, in Newburyport, where, in the autumn of 1818, he was apprenticed to Ephraim W. Allen, editor and proprietor of the *Newburyport Herald*, to learn the printer's trade. On the 18th of October he entered on an apprenticeship of seven years, during which his mind rapidly strengthened and improved in the literary atmosphere about him. He wrote not only for the *Herald*, on which he was employed, but for the *Salem Gazette* and other papers. In 1825, at the close of his apprenticeship, he established the *Free Press* in Newburyport, which proved a failure, and in 1827 he became editor of a total abstinence paper in Boston, called the *National Philanthropist*. The next year he went to Bennington, Vermont, as editor of the *Journal of the Times*, and from thence to Baltimore, in 1829, to edit the *Genius of Universal Eman-*





*Wm. Lloyd Garrison.*





*M. N. Simpson*





cipation. His mother had previously died in Baltimore on the 3d of September, 1823. In 1830, in Baltimore, he was convicted of libel for denouncing Francis Todd, of Newburyport, for domestic piracy, and for non-payment of a fine of fifty dollars and costs was confined in jail forty-nine days.

On the 1st of January, 1831, he established the *Liberator* in Boston, and on Wednesday, the 21st of October, he was the victim of a mob, from whose violence he was with difficulty rescued. In 1865 the *Liberator* was discontinued, the purpose for which it was established, the freedom of the slave, having been accomplished.

The anniversary of the completion of his apprenticeship, October 18, 1875, he spent in the office of the *Newburyport Herald* in setting up a poem by Whittier, and again in 1878 he visited the office and set up some sonnets of his own, which are copied below from the impression made by the types set by his hand.

Mr. Garrison married, September 4, 1834, Helen Eliza, daughter of George Benson, of Brooklyn, who was born in Providence, February 23, 1811, and removed with her father to Brooklyn in 1824. He died in New York, at the house of his daughter, Mrs. Willard, at a quarter before eleven o'clock on the evening of Saturday, May 24, 1879, and the memory of the man whom Boston mobbed, Boston has honored by the erection of a bronze statue in the park of Commonwealth Avenue.

## SONNETS.

BY WM. LEEVO-SARGENT.

## I.

High walls and huge the many may confine,  
And iron grates obstruct the prisoners' gaze,  
And massive bolts may baffle his design,  
And watchful keepers mark his devious ways;  
Yet some th' immortal sound thus base control!  
No chains can find it, and no cell enclose  
Swifter than light, it flies from pole to pole,  
And in a flash from earth to heaven it goes!  
It leaps from mount to mount—from vale to vale  
It wanders, plucking honeyed fruits and flowers;  
It visits home to hear the bedside tale,  
Or in sweet converse pass the joyous hours  
'Tis up before the sun, 'tis down at night,  
And in its watch it wears every star!

## II.

They tell me, LIBERTY, that in thy name  
I may not plead for all the human race;  
That some are born to bondage and disgrace,  
Some to a heritage of woe and shame,  
And some to power supreme and world-wide fame;  
With my whole heart I root the doctrine base,  
And as a paid brotherhood embrace  
All peoples, and for all the freedom claim.  
Know this, O man! whatever thy rank or state,  
God never made a tyrant or a slave!  
Wee then to those who dare to desecrate  
His glorious image! for to all he gave  
Eternal rights, which none may violate,  
And by a mighty hand th' oppress'd he yet shall save

## III.

(Written at the half-way stage.)

If to the age of threescore years and ten,  
God of all life, thou shalt my term prolong,

Still be it mine to reprobate all wrong,  
And save from woe my suffering fellow-men.  
Whether in freedom's cause my voice or pen  
Be used by Thee, who art my joy and song,  
To vindicate the weak against the strong,  
Upon my labors rest Thy benison!  
O! not for Afric's race alone I plead  
Or her descendants; but for all who sigh  
In servile chains, whatever their caste or creed.  
They not in vain to Heaven send up their cry;  
For all mankind from bondage shall be freed,  
And from the earth be chased all forms of tyranny.

MICHAEL HODGE SIMPSON was born in Newburyport, November 15, 1809. He was the son of Paul Simpson, a prosperous ship-master and ship-owner in the most prosperous days of Newburyport. His father married the widow of John Hodge, son of Michael Hodge, and thus the son acquired his name. Mr. Simpson attended the Newburyport Academy, and at the age of fourteen was placed in the commission house of Adams & Emery, of Boston. Soon after, however, he was employed by Jonathan Emery & Son. This firm was engaged in mercantile business, and young Simpson was permitted to send ventures to foreign parts, and so was enabled to lay the foundations of a business on his own account. His partner in these ventures was Charles H. Collin, of Newburyport, who afterwards became his partner also in business on India Street, in Boston, in company with George Otis, a son of Harrison Gray Otis. It is said that before the young men were of age they sent a ship and cargo to Calcutta, of which they, with the captain, were the sole owners.

By the connection of the firm with the wool trade of South America the attention of Mr. Simpson was drawn to the necessity of freeing Buenos Ayres wool from burs, and thus enhancing its value in the market. After long study his native ingenuity perfected machinery for the purpose, which he sold to Whitwell & Bond, who were the proprietors of the Saxonville Woolen Mills. The failure of this firm in 1837, of whose creditors Mr. Simpson was one, forced the sale of the mills, and he became the agent of the purchasers. Mr. Simpson, however, soon became their chief owner, and so continued up to his death, and the chief owner as well of the Roxbury Carpet Co., an outgrowth of the Saxonville Mills.

During his whole active career he never forgot his native town, for which, by various benefactions, he manifested his love. For the enlargement of the Public Library building he contributed \$18,000; for the improvement of the Mall he gave \$2500; at Plum Island he laid a plank-drive from the hotel to the beach, a quarter of a mile in length, and at his death bequeathed the sum of \$20,000 to the city, the income of which was to be devoted to sprinkling the streets. Mr. Simpson married, early in life, Elizabeth, daughter of Jeremiah Kilham, of Boston, by whom he had several children, and later in life Evangeline Marrs, of Saxonville, whom he left a widow. He died at his residence in Boston, on Sunday, December 22, 1884, aged seventy-five years.



REV. DANIEL P. PIKE died at Newburyport, December 4, 1887. He was born at Hampton Falls, N. H., March 1, 1815. His father, Sewall Pike, was a United States detective during the War of 1812, and dying in 1816, the son was taken to Kensington, N. H., where he lived with his grandfather, Robert Prescott. His early life was spent in farm labor. He studied three and one-half years at Hampton Academy, and about the same length of time at Phillips (Exeter) Academy, and on completing his academical course he taught school for several years in New Hampshire and Massachusetts.

The devoted piety of his mother led him early to make a public profession of religion, and he united with the Christian Church at Kensington, N. H., in April, 1831, retaining his membership to his death. He began his ministerial labors five years later, preaching his first sermon in March, 1836, and was ordained July 5, 1837. His first pastorate at Hampton Falls was short, but successful, and he left there to accept the pastorate of the Christian Church at Salisbury Point, Mass. Many families from the north end of Newburyport attended services at the neighboring town, and May 7, 1840, a Christian Church was organized in Newburyport, and Elder Pike accepted unanimous invitation to become its pastor, entering Nov. 1st on duties which continued for nearly half a century. His sermons averaged more than two each week, making nearly 5000 preached; married more than 1000 couples; attended fully 1000 funerals, and baptized by immersion nearly 1100 persons. April 4, 1858, the elder baptized 97 candidates on the banks of the Merrimac, in the presence of 10000 persons, many of whom came many miles to witness the ceremony. After the baptism he gave the right hand of fellowship to 107 new members in the Unitarian Church (the largest in the city), which was crowded to its utmost capacity, and many hundreds were turned away, so great was the interest. In 1844-45, his society built a church on Court Street, and for a series of years one of the largest societies worshipped therein. Outside of his parish his work has not been limited. He became an active participant in the anti-slavery cause in 1833, and continued until Lincoln's emancipation. He has been engaged in temperance work from boyhood, has given hundreds of temperance addresses, and has secured thousands of signatures to his total abstinence pledge.

The deceased was an active citizen, as well as minister, and was several times honored by his fellow-citizens,—nine years on the School Board, two years as overseer of the poor, one year an alderman, several times a candidate for mayor, and in 1856 a member of the Governor's Council. In May, 1861, he was appointed by President Lincoln deputy collector of customs at Newburyport, holding the position through the different administrations till August, 1886. During his life he published many tracts and sermons, and for many years was associate editor of

the *Herald of Gospel Liberty*, the oldest religious paper in the country. This paper for twenty years was published at Newburyport (prior to 1867), when he was sole proprietor and editor. He also edited and published, from 1867 to 1872, the *Weekly Christian Herald*, and his labor of sixteen hours per day was too much, even for his iron constitution, and in 1873 he was confined to his bed for about four months. He slowly rallied, and during the past few years had regained much of his old-time vigor.

He was twice married, his first wife being Sophia P. Morrill, of Salisbury Point, who died in 1879. His second wife, who survives him, is a daughter of Rev. Israel Chesley, of Rochester, N. H. Three children survive—Mrs. B. F. Greely and Mrs. F. P. Craig, of Marlboro', in this State, and Benjamin S. Pike, of Washington, D. C.

DANIEL N. HASKELL was born in Newburyport January 1, 1818. He went to Boston early in life, and entered as clerk the fancy goods store of Elisha V. Ashton, on Washington Street a little north of School Street, where he remained seventeen years. Mr. Ashton having accumulated a fortune, spent much of his time in Europe, leaving Mr. Haskell the sole manager of his business. The further accumulation of his wealth was due to the care and business sagacity of his clerk. At an early period in his Boston life Mr. Haskell took an active interest in politics, and in the last years of the old Whig party, in 1849 and 1850, he was chosen a member of the City Council. He was an active member also of the Mercantile Library Association, and in 1848 delivered an address on the occasion of the dedication of its new hall in Summer Street, Boston. He became also a correspondent of the *Newburyport Herald*, a contributor to the *Boston Transcript* and the *Saturday Evening Gazette*, and thus laid the foundation for the editorial career which he afterwards pursued. In 1853 he took editorial charge of the *Boston Transcript*, and for twenty-one years administered his editorial duties with ability and success. He died in Boston Friday, February 10, 1871.

EBENEZER STONE was the son of Capt. Ebenezer and Sarah (Moody) Stone. He was born September 4, 1785, and was brought up in the counting-room of his uncle, Major David Coffin, a large and enterprising merchant and ship-owner of Newburyport. He was for a considerable part of his life engaged in shipping, but for some years before his death was the treasurer of the Bartlett Mills. He was a man of stern integrity and correct business habits, to whom projectors of new enterprises looked when they sought an officer who would command the confidence of capitalists and the community. When it was proposed to build the second mill of the Bartlett corporation, William Bartlett, when asked to subscribe, said that he would put in \$100,000 if Mr. Stone was appointed treasurer. Mr. Stone was appointed and the mill was built. He









was the father of Hon. Eben F. Stone, and died January 2, 1855.

**RICHARD S. SPOFFORD, M.D.**—The name of Spofford is of Saxon origin, and appears in "Domesday Book" as the name of a domain parceled out under William the Norman to William, Earl Percy, at the time of the Conquest in 1061. The town of Spofforth still occupies the locality, and its castle, one of the most ancient in England, whose ruins cover nearly an acre of ground, still bears the name.

The chief representatives of the name were connected with the ecclesiastical hierarchy in the earlier epoch of English history. From John Spofford, Vicar of Silkston, in the West Riding of Yorkshire, whose church is known, on account of its beautiful structure, as the Minster of the Moors, and who was ejected for non-conformity in 1663, all branches of the name in the United States are directly descended.

John Spofford, the first settler of the name in America, a son of the non-conforming vicar, came over with a group of families, about twenty in number, who accompanied the Rev. Ezekiel Rogers, their pastor, and who settled between Newbury and Ipswich, in Massachusetts. His name appears in the record of the first division of land or household lots in 1643, in the town of Rowley, where he lived for about thirty years, until he removed to what was then a frontier of the wilderness, known since that time as Spofford Hill, a farm of broad proportions still owned and occupied largely by his descendants.

Richard S. Spofford, of Newburyport, the subject of this sketch, was born at Rowley, in the county of Essex, in the sixth generation from the pioneer emigrant, John Spofford. He was the son of Dr. Amos Spofford, an eminent physician and one of the original members of the Massachusetts Medical Society, who was likewise an extensive farmer and respected citizen. His grandfather was Colonel Daniel Spofford, of Rowley, who was present at the Lexington fight and commanded a regiment in the Revolutionary War; having previously acted as chairman of Committee of Correspondence of the town of Rowley, a tried and trusted citizen, a representative in the Legislature, and a member of the convention which formed the Constitution of Massachusetts. The mother of Dr. Spofford was Irene, daughter of Captain Moses Dole and Ruth, daughter of Deacon Nathan Peabody, of Boxford; by another tie of relationship he was a cousin of the philanthropist, George Peabody, whose grandmother was Judith Spofford, a daughter of Colonel Daniel Spofford.

While quite a youth, his father being engaged in a wide practice, as was also an older brother, he had familiarized himself with many secrets of the healing art, read many medical works, and gained no inconsiderable skill in the compounding of medicines. Through all the generations the family have been distinguished by eminent practitioners in the medical profession, and in adopting that profession Dr.

Spofford, of Newburyport, followed in an hereditary track. He was fitted for college at Phillips Academy, Andover, and entered Harvard College in the class which graduated in 1812. While in college he was pre-eminent as a mathematical scholar, carrying off the "Great Slate," which in those days was accorded to the best mathematician of the class, passing from hand to hand as a college heir-loom. The contest in this case was between himself and the late learned Judge Peleg Sprague, as the latter once informed the writer of this sketch.

Dr. Spofford pursued the studies of his profession with his father and with his brother, finishing his course at the Philadelphia College. On receiving his diploma he joined his brother in practice at Rowley, but in 1816 he removed to Newburyport, where he remained in active practice for a period of more than fifty years, having withdrawn therefrom only a few years before his death, which occurred at his home in Newburyport, January 19, 1872.

To speak of Dr. Spofford's skill and attainments in his profession is simply to rehearse a universally admitted fact while he was living, one which will long have a traditional verification in all the country-side where his arduous practice lay, including Newburyport and the adjacent towns. Called often in consultation with other leading physicians of the metropolis and of other States, and having had the care of many illustrious patients, there was that just appreciation of his wisdom and learning, of his zeal and fidelity, his quick perceptions and intuitive resolutions, which made his name known and respected far beyond the local limits of his professional arena. Always a student and lover of scientific inquiry, he brought to the augmentation of his efficiency as a physician great knowledge in all the departments of natural science, a mind balanced with that equipoise derived from mathematical studies and the tender feelings of a sympathetic nature.

The following are the words of a notice published in the *Newburyport Herald* at the time of his death: "He was generous and unselfish, and where he was called by distress he went to its relief without asking whence the fee was to come. Indeed, his benevolence leaned to the side of a fault in his character. He was a kind friend, witty and entertaining in conversation, his memory stored with extensive reading of ancient and modern literature and science. He was equally ready with a quotation from Homer, a discussion of Huxley and Tyndall and Darwin, or a problem of the higher mathematics. Dr. Spofford had a wonderful quickness of insight. Those great eyes of his saw everything within the range of their vision and saw through it at once. Accordingly, he was great in the diagnosis of disease."

Dr. Spofford's activity as a citizen was in nowise limited by his professional life. There was nothing concerning the public interest to which he was indifferent, although personally he was never moved by



political aspirations. He was an early friend and admirer of his fellow-townsmen, Mr. Caleb Cushing, and a strong and enthusiastic supporter of that distinguished statesman in the memorable contests of his early manhood. He co-operated with Mr. William Bartlet in the introduction of the cotton manufacture at Newburyport, acting as one of the building committee and directors of the Bartlet Mills. He was a member and one of the founders of the "Merrimack Humane Society," and connected with other societies of local interest. For a number of years he was one of the overseers of Harvard University. Becoming interested in early life in Free-masonry, its charms and philosophies continued to enlist his study and to command his devotion to the hour of his death. He had risen to the highest of its degrees and brought to their illustration, as he advanced from one position to another, the wealth of his research and learning.

At his decease Dr. Spofford left a widow surviving him (Mrs. Frances Spofford, an accomplished and intelligent woman, since deceased), two children (Richard S. Spofford and Frances H. Spofford), and a step-daughter (Mrs. Georgiana Hall, the child of Mrs. Spofford by a previous marriage).

The impressive character of the services at Dr. Spofford's funeral bore witness to the popular respect in which he was held, and to his public and private worth. All classes, rich and poor, learned and unlearned of the professions, without distinction of school or creed, the Masonic orders, the community indeed as a whole, withdrew from their accustomed employments to pay the last tribute of respect to his memory—a memorable incident occurring as the remains were followed to their last resting-place in Oak Hill Cemetery, and one showing the depth and tenderness of the public feeling, when, with a spontaneous impulse, the schoolboys of the Turnpike School stood with uncovered heads as the funeral procession passed by. On his burial casket was the following inscription: "Richard S. Spofford, M.D., May 24, 1787, Jan'y 19, 1872. *Hominis non accidunt propriis* *bona quam salutem hominibus dando.*" These words may be translated, "Men never approach nearer to gods than when giving health to their fellow-men."

JOHN CURRIER, JR., was born April 14, 1802, in that part of Newbury called Belleville, which was annexed to Newburyport in 1851. He was descended from Richard Currier, one of the early settlers in Salisbury, Mass., and an inhabitant of that town at the time of its incorporation in 1649. Richard Currier was among the first who went from Salisbury to Amesbury and signed the eight articles of agreement between the two towns, January 14, 1651. He was one of the Board of Selectmen from 1669 to 1683, and died February 22, 1687. He had a son Thomas born March 8, 1646, whose son Richard, born April 12, 1653, had a son John, born April 5, 1704. John had a son John, born June 6, 1752, whose son John, born November 26, 1771, married, December 31, 1795,

Hannah Collin, of Newbury. John and Hannah had eight children, four boys and four girls, among whom was the subject of this sketch, who always retained, after his father's death, the name of John Currier, Jr. Only one of these children, Samuel C. Currier, born February 3, 1814, is now living.

The subject of this sketch received his education at the common schools, and at an early age began work in the ship-yard of Elisha Briggs, at the foot of Ashland Street, in what was then Newbury. Elisha Briggs was a master carpenter, who came from Pembroke, Mass., and was the son of Seth Briggs, of that town. During a temporary depression in the ship-building industry on the Merrimack he went, in company with a number of other ship-carpenters, to New Brunswick and found employment in the yards on the St. John's River.

Returning home after a brief stay, he began work as a ship-builder in the yard then owned by Nathan Merrill, just below Moggardige's Point, and there built the ship "Brenda" three hundred and seventy-five tons, in 1831; the ship "Republic," three hundred and ninety-seven tons, in 1832; the bark "Oberlin," three hundred and fifty tons, in 1833; the ship "Newburyport," three hundred and thirty tons, in 1834; and the ship "St. Clair," four hundred and twenty-two tons, in 1834. It is possible that in the construction of the first three he may have had other carpenters associated with him in the contracts.

In 1834 he bought land on the banks of the Merrimack, which he fitted for a ship-yard, and where, until 1884, he carried on business on his sole account. During the fifty-three years from 1831 to 1884 he built ninety-seven vessels, of which ninety-two were ships, four barks and one was a schooner, the whole amounting to ninety thousand and thirty-two tons, making an average of a fraction over nine hundred and twenty-eight tons to a vessel. During an unusually active period between 1854 and 1856 he launched six ships, averaging eight hundred tons, in twelve months. In 1883 he built the ship "Mary L. Cushing," of one thousand five hundred and seventy-five tons register, which was the last ship built within the limits of Massachusetts.

Previous to 1850 it was the custom of builders to contract with owners to deliver the ship with hull and spars only. After that date it was customary with Mr. Currier to furnish the ship complete and ready for sea, with sails, anchors, rigging, boats, cabin furniture, crockery, bedding, ballast, etc. During the last thirty years of his business life his son, John J. Currier, was associated with him, though not as a partner, and during most of the time had charge of the financial department and made purchases of materials for construction and outfit. During those thirty years, too, Samuel C. Currier, his brother, had charge of the planking and raising department, but was in no way interested as a partner. Another brother, William Currier (now dead), was at one time





associated as a master-builder with James L. Townsend. A list of vessels built by Mr. Currier may be found below.

Mr. Currier married, in December, 1830, Clarissa, daughter of Levi Carr, and had two children—Mary Putnam, who died March 26, 1845, aged seven years, and John J. Currier, born October 22, 1834, who was mayor of Newburyport in 1879 and 1880, and now holds many responsible offices of trust in that city. After the year 1884 he was engaged in no active business, but occupied his time with his domestic cares and with the management of vessels, in which he was largely interested up to his death, September 2, 1887. He was a man of a reserved and retiring disposition, too much absorbed in the business engagements which pressed upon him to seek political or other public preferment, but nevertheless seeking at all times, and while bearing the heaviest burdens, the happiness and welfare of his home, and never permitting his attachment to the church of which he was a member to languish or fade. Though surrounded by worldly cares and the possessor of that increasing wealth which too often binds men to earth and earthly things, he remembered always that life was but probation, and walked humbly and reverently before his God. In his last hours, not forgetful of the ties which bound him to his fellows, he instructed his son to give to the Society for the Relief of Aged Men, the Society for the Relief of Old Ladies, the Ann Jacques Hospital, the Hale Fund for the Care of Disabled Firemen, and to the Baptist Society, each, the sum of five hundred dollars.

It was said by his pastor at the funeral ceremonies:

"I have known but few men, if any, in whom the highest virtues were more perfectly united. He fills out Cowper's measure in a most remarkable degree: 'I venerate the man whose heart is warm, whose hands are pure, whose doctrine and whose life command alike the truest proof that he is honest in the sacred cause.'"

*List of vessels built by John Currier, Jr.*

	Tons.		Tons.
1831. Ship Branda.....	375	1846. Ship John Currier ..	684
1832. " Republic.....	397	1847. " Lebanon.....	682
1833. Bark Orion.....	39	1848. " Larchon.....	924
1834. Ship Nevanport.....	339	1849. " Nestor.....	690
1835. " St. Clair.....	422	1848. " Francis.....	705
1836. " Leonore.....	375	1849. " Charles Hill.....	705
1836. " Columbus.....	597	1849. " Castilian.....	993
1837. " Talbot.....	622	1850. " Clarissa Currier.....	993
1838. " Flavia.....	635	1851. " Inez.....	705
1838. " Navigator.....	414	1851. Bark Hesper.....	411
1839. " Mistress.....	543	1852. Ship Parthenia.....	857
1839. " Straloe.....	457	1852. " Howeij.....	650
1840. " Rosalind.....	492	1853. " Guiding Star.....	904
1840. Schooner Petrel.....	72	1853. " John N. Cushing.....	671
1840. Ship Virginia.....	409	1853. " Volant.....	896
1841 Bark Wessacumoon.....	425	1853. " Senora.....	708
1841. Ship Jas. D. Fawell.....	709	1854. " Merimac.....	598
1842. " Augustine Heard.....	497	1854. " Mercury.....	849
1843. " Pacific.....	517	1854. " Oliver Putnam.....	1074
1843. " Amity.....	502	1854. " Gleaner.....	1000
1844. " Java.....	543	1854. " Moses Davenport.....	839
1844. " Brutus.....	546	1855. " Lawrence Brown.....	795
1845. Bark Fredonia.....	855	1855. " Lyra.....	812
1845. Ship Hugonot.....	899	1855. " George West.....	1123
1846. " Roman.....	642	1855. " Blondel.....	630

	Tons.		Tons.
1856. Ship Indus.....	849	1869. Ship Tennyson.....	1247
1856. " Blandina Dudley.....	873	1869. " Montana.....	1269
1856. " Crown Point.....	1099	1869. " United States.....	1315
1857. " Sarah Newman.....	909	1867. " Garden Reach.....	974
1857. " Josiah L. Hale.....	1004	1868. " Augusta.....	1326
1857. " Eliza Cushing.....	888	1868. " Montrose.....	1348
1857. " Black Hawk.....	911	1869. " Whittier.....	1295
1858. " Star of Peace.....	911	1869. " Importer.....	1270
1858. " Gaspee.....	856	1871. " Franconia.....	1313
1859. " John Porter.....	997	1872. " Nearchus.....	1238
1859. " Lucretia.....	896	1873. " Victoria.....	1349
1859. " Charles H. Hunt.....	998	1873. " Thomas Dana.....	1115
1859. " Albert Currier.....	1000	1871. " Reliant.....	1603
1860. " Jacob Horton.....	1141	1871. " G. C. Trufant.....	1502
1860. " Glendower.....	1093	1871. " Harmonia.....	1498
1861. " Kenmore.....	1100	1875. " Big Bonanza.....	1172
1861. " Whampoa.....	1144	1875. " Daniel F. Tenney.....	1686
1862. " Ringoon.....	1144	1876. " Farragut.....	1648
1862. " Winona.....	1162	1877. " Jabez Howe.....	1648
1863. " Valparaiso.....	1159	1878. " Frank N. Thayer.....	1647
1863. " Longwood.....	1179	1881. " W. H. Lincoln.....	1727
1864. " Winged Hunter.....	1228	1882. " John Currier.....	1915
1864. " Sapphire.....	1265	1883. " Mary L. Cushing.....	1658
1864. " Elcano.....	1210		

There are other ship-builders, who, though belonging to a later period, may properly be referred to here.

B. F. Atkinson and J. T. Filmore, as partners or separately, have built, since 1869, at the ship-yard on Merrimac Street at the foot of Titcomb Street, the following vessels:

	Tons.		Tons.
1869. Bark Sarah E. Kings-		1877. Bark Abbie Carter.....	984
bury.....	520	1878. " Harvard.....	1033
1879. Bark Escott.....	636	1881. Schooner Cox & Green.....	591
1871. " Harvester.....	780	1881. " E. L. Ferris.....	590
1872. " James G. Pendle-		1882. " Benj. Hall.....	597
ton.....	938	1883. " C. C. Dame.....	597
1873. Bark Wakefield.....	904	1883. " A. H. Cross.....	578
1871. " Susan Gilmore.....	1294	1883. " W. C. French.....	498
1874. " Edward Kibbel.....	1911	1883. " W. Moore.....	443
1875. " Albert Russell.....	762	1881. " J. C. Gregory.....	379
1875. Ship Brown Brothers.....	1193	1885. " M. A. Trundy.....	425
1876. Bark Haydn Brown.....	861	1887. " Sen. Morgan.....	—
1877. " William Hales.....	865	1887. Steamer Minnesota.....	43

C. H. Currier, George E. Currier and John Currier (3d), as partners, and George E. Currier alone, have built, since 1857, at the ship-yard at the foot of Ashland Street, the following vessels.

The last seventeen were built by George E. Currier alone.

	Tons.		Tons.
1857. Schr. S. Woodbridge.....	250	1872. Schooner F. G. Dow.....	111
1857. Brig Timandra.....	173	1873. " W. S. Jordan.....	509
1859. Bark Germantown.....	390	1873. " South Shore.....	455
1859. Schooner Charmer.....	116	1873. Bark John J. Marsh.....	425
1860. Bark Persia.....	565	1871. Schooner W. H. Lewis.....	525
1860. " Abdel Kader.....	420	1874. " W. B. Herrick.....	—
1860. Schooner Hortensia.....	98	1874. " H. Withington.....	550
1861. Bark Schanay.....	417	1875. Bark John Shepard.....	475
1861. Schooner E. H. Hatfield.....	170	1876. " Obed Baxter.....	915
1862. Ship Mary Warren.....	925	1876. Scow New Era.....	200
1863. " George Warren.....	970	1877. Bark H. G. Johnson.....	1080
1865. Bark J. H. Pearson.....	420	1882. " B. F. Hunt, Jr.....	1190
1866. Ship Timour.....	900	1882. Schooner Ida L. Hull.....	495
1867. Bark Signal.....	424	1883. " A. T. Stearns.....	598
1868. " Metis.....	620	1883. " M. Sherwood.....	524
1868. " Agate.....	649	1883. " Jas. B. Pace.....	642
1870. " Essex.....	755	1884. " R. Esterbrook.....	637
1871. Schooner F. J. Odiorno.....	283	1884. " M. Andrews.....	615



J. W. S. Colby and E. P. Lunt have built, since 1866, at the ship-yard on Merrimac Street at the foot of Ashland Street, the following vessels:

	Tons.		Tons.
1866. Schooner Matchless.....	99	1872. Schooner J. J. Hausman.....	170
1867. " Pyrela.....	135	1873. " Wilhelmina.....	134
1867. " C. F. Butler.....	92	1874. " F. F. Nickerson.....	90
1868. " D. J. Adams.....	103	1874. " J. L. Mott.....	191
1868. " C. A. Ropes.....	103	1875. " H. L. Newman.....	115
1869. " Annie Hooper.....	105	1876. " E. F. Long.....	150
1869. " F. A. Smith.....	117	1876. " E. M. Johnson.....	51
1869. " B. P. Poore.....	127	1877. " J. Johnson.....	150
1870. " Spring Bird.....	124	1877. " San Blas.....	101
1871. " F. M. Byrnes.....	103	1877. " K. Boynton.....	45
1871. " N. C. Foster.....	125	1880. " J. Seaverns.....	112
1872. " Cayenne.....	130		

George W. Jackman, Jr., has built, since 1850, at the ship-yard on Merrimac Street at the foot of Forester Street, the following vessels:

	Tons.		Tons.
1850. Bark Hollander.....	525	1858. Bark Said Ben Sultan.....	330
1850. Ship Arab.....	525	1861. " Nabob.....	330
1850. Bark Anne Buckman.....	550	1862. U. S. Gunboat Marblehead.....	529
1851. Ship Hussar.....	725	1863. U. S. Steamer Ascutney.....	1010
1851. Schooner Lydia.....	100	1863. Bark A. N. Franklin.....	425
1852. Bark Falcon.....	520	1863. Brig Newbury.....	220
1853. Ship Whistler.....	820	1864. Ship Fear Not.....	1012
1854. " Storm King.....	1170	1864. " Menantum.....	1075
1854. " Black Prince.....	1000	1866. Steamship Ontario.....	3000
1855. " Chammer.....	1000	1867. Steamship Erie.....	3000
1855. " War Hawk.....	1000	1873. Ship Exporter.....	1370
1856. " Darting.....	1070	1874. " Reporter.....	1352
1857. " Reynard.....	1001	1874. " Landseer.....	1421
1858. " Renoron.....	1040		

Mr. James L. Townsend, in connection with his early partner, Wm. Currier, built the following vessels before 1862, in a ship-yard on Merrimac Street at the foot of Ashland Street, which was in Newbury before 1851:

	Tons.		Tons.
— Ship Menomon.....	115	1849. Ship Searge.....	578
— " Lanceer.....	420	1849. " Florida.....	697
— " Tear.....	460	1850. Bark Dragon.....	290
— " Harvard.....	406	1851. Ship Racer.....	1669
— " Ariel.....	560	1852. " Jirah Perry.....	435
— " Elouse.....	700	1852. " Russell Sturges.....	1000
— Bark Augusta.....	265	1853. " Highflyer.....	1195
— " May Queen.....	360	1853. " Constitution.....	1188
— " Aurora.....	300	1854. " Jacob S. W. ....	1573
— " Swallow.....	300	1854. " Firemanlight.....	1414
— " Albatross.....	570	1854. " Tinsbackour.....	1200
— Schooner Mary C. Ames.....	105	1854. " Commonwealth.....	1215
— Propeller Denatur.....	142	1854. " Driver.....	1795
1843. Bark Lashman.....	347	1854. " Free Trade.....	1281
1844. Ship Rambler.....	309	1855. " Brewster.....	965
1844. " St. Patrick.....	896	1855. " Courier.....	554
1845. Bark Edward Keppas.....	250	1855. " Old Colony.....	809
1845. Brig Monserat.....	170	1855. " Grace Gordon.....	781
1846. " Abouira.....	170	1855. " Gallego.....	610
1846. Ship Fort West.....	598	1856. " East Indian.....	807
1847. " Richard Golden.....	605	1860. Bark Algonquith.....	650
1847. " Nautil.....	547	1857. Ship Eddystone.....	950
1847. " Ameranth.....	606	1857. " Victory.....	1211
1848. " Redoga.....	587	1857. " Reina del Oceano.....	1023
1848. " Buenavista.....	547	1861. " Name unknown.....	950
1849. Bark Crusoe.....	312		

## CHAPTER CXLVI.

## NEWBURYPORT—(Continued).

## FOURTH PERIOD.

From the Incorporation of the City to 1857.

THE ward lines of the city were established as they now are by the Board of Aldermen and City Council on the 10th of November, 1876.

*Ward One* contains all the territory southeasterly of a line beginning between 129 and 131 Water Street, and thence running on the west side of Salem to Purchase Street, thence between numbers 10 and 12 Purchase, crossing Milk between 33 and 35, and 38 and 40 to Newbury Street, between numbers 12 and 13, and thence on the east side of Parsons to High Street, and thence on a straight line to the southwest boundary of the city, leaving all of the inhabitants on Salem Street in Ward One and those on Parsons Street in Ward Two.

*Ward Two* contains all the territory northwesterly of the last-named line to Federal Street, including all the houses bounded on said street, and pursuing a line southwesterly from the northwest side of said street to the bounds of the city.

*Ward Three* contains all the territory from the northwesterly line of Ward Two to a line commencing on the northwest side of Market Hall building, to include both sides of Inn Street and Tracy's Court, continuing through the centre of Park Street, crossing High and the Mall into Pond Street, taking in the south side of Pond Street, both sides of Hill Street to Parker Street, thence running on the same course to the southerly bounds of the city.

*Ward Four* contains all the territory from the northwest boundary of Ward Three to a line beginning between numbers 146 and 148 Merrimac Street, thence continuing on the northwest of Boardman Street, including all the houses bounding on said street, including the house on the southwest corner of said street and High Street, crossing High Street between numbers 191 and 195, and continuing on a straight line to the bounds of the city.

*Ward Five* contains all the territory from the northwest line of Ward Four to a line commencing at the Merrimac River on the southeast corner of the wharf at the foot of Broad Street, through the centre of Broad Street, crossing High Street and continuing in a straight line southeast of Toppan Street, touching and continuing the ward line of 1866 at the house of Wm. T. Colman, leaving said Colman's house in Ward Five.

*Ward Six* contains all the territory northwest of the last-mentioned line.

Until the war of 1861 the life of Newburyport was comparatively uneventful. In its new garb of a





manufacturing town it was gradually assuming a more prosperous expression, and increasing in both population and wealth. In 1852 gas was introduced into the city, and the Gas Company, of which Eben F. Stone is treasurer, meets both the wants of the people and the expectations of its projectors. Other enterprises have, one after another, been undertaken, to which reference must here be made, though not in the order of their initiation. The Newburyport Mutual Fire Insurance Company, the Newburyport and Amesbury Horse Railroad, the Plum Island Street Railroad, the Newburyport City Railroad, connecting tide-water with the Boston and Maine Railroad, the coal pocket of the Philadelphia Coal and Iron Company, furnishing storage for coal destined for inland markets, the Newburyport Water Company, with a capital of three hundred thousand dollars, the Harvard Brush Company, the Towle Manufacturing Company, the A. F. Towle & Son Co., for the manufacture of silver and silver-plated goods, the Victor Manufacturing Company, the Chrolithion Manufacturing Company, with a capital of one hundred and fifty thousand dollars, the Newburyport Quarry Company, the Merrimac River Towing Company furnish means of employing labor, most of which were unknown in the palmy days of navigation.

In addition to these are the Bayley Hat Company, incorporated in 1863, with a capital of seventy-five thousand dollars, of which Benjamin Hale is president and John James Currier, treasurer, and the daily product of which is one hundred and fifty dozen fur and wool hats, amounting to two hundred and fifty thousand dollars per year; and the shoe factories of E. P. Dodge and Nathan Dodge, which employ nearly one thousand hands, and under the management of their enterprising and skilful owners have, within a very limited period, advanced from small beginnings to large and profitable industries.

In 1859 the death of Henry Johnson, one of the earliest mayors of the city, occurred. He was chosen mayor in 1852, to fill the vacancy occasioned by the death of Caleb Cushing, and he again served in 1853. Mr. Johnson was the son of Capt. Nicholas Johnson, and was born in Newburyport October 4, 1796. His mother was Mary Perkins, sister of Jacob Perkins, the inventor, who has been referred to in this narrative. He was a member of the Board of Selectmen in 1831 and '32, '46, '47, '48, '49, '50, '51, and during the last years of life was president of the Merchants' Bank. He was extensively engaged in navigation, and was often an associate of John N. Cushing, Sr., in the ownership of vessels. He died March 13, 1859.

In 1861 the death of Moses Davenport, another ex-mayor of the city, occurred. Mr. Davenport belonged to a family long associated with Newburyport. William Davenport was born in Boston in 1717, removed to that town in early life and married, in 1740, Sarah Gerrish. He was captain of a company under Gen. Wolfe at the capture of Quebec, in 1759. Upon his

return he established the Wolfe Tavern, in 1762, where he died and was succeeded by his son Anthony, who was the grandfather of Moses. Anthony finally went into business at the head of Ferry wharf and took his son John, the father of Moses, into partnership. Moses was born February 14, 1806, and was brought up in the dry-goods business, in which he continued until about 1848, when, having become extensively engaged in navigation, he devoted himself almost exclusively to commercial affairs. He was one of the chief owners of the ship "Gen. Harrison," 410 tons, built in 1840; the ship "Ocean Queen," 824 tons, built in 1847; the ship "Charles Hill," 700 tons, built in 1849; the ship "Parthenia," 849 tons, built in 1852; the ship "Moses Davenport," 899 tons, built in 1855; and the ship "Star of Peace," 941 tons, built in 1858. He was active, prompt, methodical and bore a stainless reputation as a merchant and a man. He was president of the Mechanics' Bank, a Representative in the Legislature in 1852 and '53, a member of the Board of Selectmen in 1841 and '44, and mayor of the city in 1854 and '55, and in 1861 his death, February 18th of that year.

William Cushing, another ex-mayor, died in 1875. He was the son of John N. Cushing and half-brother of the late Caleb Cushing. He was born in August, 1823, and fitted for college at the school kept by Elias Nason in the Newburyport Academy building, now a dwelling-house opposite the head of Fair Street. He graduated at Harvard in 1843, and afterwards visited the Sandwich Islands and Oregon. On his return he became associated in business with his father and his brother, John N. Cushing, and after the death of his father continued in mercantile business with his brother. Mr. Cushing was president of the Ocean Bank, and was four times elected mayor of the city, serving in 1856, '57, '58, and the fourth time declining to serve. In 1871 he was a member of the Legislature. He was universally beloved and respected by his fellow-townsmen, who were always ready to support him for any public position he was willing to accept. He died at Newburyport Friday, October 15, 1875.

Capt. William Graves, another ex-mayor, died about 1877. He was a shipmaster in early life and afterwards became an owner and manager of vessels. At a still later period he became interested in manufacturing, and at the time of his death had been many years treasurer of the Bartlett Mills. At the organization of the city, in 1851, he was chosen a member of the School Board, and in 1866 served as mayor. He was an agreeable and affable man, popular with his fellow-citizens, and worthy of the confidence and respect which he possessed.

The death of Eldridge G. Kelley, another ex-mayor, occurred about five years since. Dr. Kelley married the daughter of Edward S. Rand, and lived while mayor, in the house formerly of Timothy Dexter. The house was remodeled by him, and the grounds were improved. In early life he was a dentist.



but relinquished professional business and devoted much of his time to the gratification of horticultural tastes. He was a member of the Legislature in 1873 and mayor in 1871. After the expiration of his term of office he went to Europe and there died.

The death of Isaac H. Boardman, another ex-mayor, occurred during the year 1887. He was at one time extensively engaged in the cod fisheries, and is believed to have been the last owner of a Bank fisherman in Newburyport. He was a member of the Board of Selectmen in 1840 and 1841, a member of the House of Representatives in 1842, 1844 and 1852. He was also at one time a member of the State Senate, and served as mayor in 1863. At the time of his death he was president of the Merchants' National Bank.

A sketch of Caleb Cushing, the first mayor of the city, whose death occurred at Newburyport, on Thursday, January 2, 1879, may be found in the second chapter of this work, relating to the Bench and Bar of Essex County, and of course needs no repetition here.

Few towns or cities are in the enjoyment of more benefactions than Newburyport. It is not so much a matter of special note that so many of its sons at home and abroad acquired wealth. But while in many towns, those who have gone out and acquired higher social position as well as large fortunes, are often reluctant to revive memories of poorer days, the sons of Newburyport seem to have always retained their affection for their early home and to have remembered it with substantial gifts in their dying hours. Some of these benefactions have already been mentioned in sketches of the benefactors. There are others which ought to be referred to.

Moses Atkinson, of Newburyport, who died in 1814, made the following provision in his will:

"I give to the school district to which I belong, toward the support of a school for reading, writing, arithmetic and English grammar, after the payment of the several legacies herein above bequeathed, all the money and notes which my said wife shall leave unexpended, except the last article in the last clause of this instrument; also about ten acres of salt marsh, situate in Salisbury in said county, also about six acres and a half of land in said Newbury, being part of my homestead, also three and three-fourths cow rights in the general pasture in said Newbury, also about four acres of pasture land in said Newbury. . . . All the said bequests to be under the direction of a committee to be chosen by a majority of the legally qualified voters in said district in the month of April, annually forever."

By the will of Margaret Atwood, who died in 1832, "an annual legacy" of twenty dollars was left in aid of the infant-school of Newburyport.

By the will of John Bromfield, of Boston, who died in 1849, it was provided that

"The sum of \$10,000 be invested at interest in the Hospital Life Insurance Company in the city of Boston, so and in such manner as that the selectmen or other duly authorized agents of the town of Newburyport for the time being may annually receive the interest which shall accrue or become payable for or in respect of said deposit; and I direct that by or in behalf of said town, the interest so received shall be annually expended, one-half in keeping the side-walks in the public streets of said town in good order, and the other half in the planting and pro-

serving trees in said streets, for the embellishing and ornamenting of said streets for the pleasure and comfort of the inhabitants."

By the will of Rev. William Horton, who died in 1863, it was provided that after the death of his wife and mother the city of Newburyport should be his residuary legatee to the extent of one-quarter for the purchase of land and for the erection of a commodious almshouse.

Under the provisions of the will of Mathias Plant Sawyer, of Boston, the sum of five thousand dollars was paid to the municipal authorities of Newburyport, of which the income was directed to be paid annually to persons having the control of the public Library.

By the will of John M. Bradbury, of Ipswich, son of Ebenezer Bradbury, of Newburyport, who died in 1876, a further sum of one thousand dollars was given to the Public Library.

In 1865 a number of public-spirited citizens and former residents subscribed a sum of money, and purchasing the Tracy mansion, on State Street, at a cost of sixteen thousand dollars, conveyed it to the city for a public library building. The sum of five thousand dollars remaining of the subscription after the purchase of the estate was paid over to Edward S. Moseley, Caleb Cushing and Henry C. Perkins, trustees, the income thereof to be expended in the repair of the library building or its general maintenance.

On the 26th of March, 1870, William C. Todd gave to the Public Library the sum of three hundred dollars annually, for a term of years, to be expended in the maintenance of a public reading-room in the library building.

By the will of Mrs. Lucy M. Follansbee, of Salem, daughter of Thomas M. Follansbee, of Newburyport, the sum of three thousand dollars was given to the city, the income to be expended in the purchase of fuel for distribution among the worthy poor.

By the generosity of John S. Toppan, of New York, son of Jerry Toppan, of Newburyport, the handsome gateway to Oak Hill Cemetery was furnished.

By the will of Joseph A. Frothingham, of Newburyport, who died in 1880, the sum of one thousand dollars was given to the Public Library, the income to be used in the purchase of books.

The following clause in the will of Mrs. Eunice Atkinson Carrier, who died June 17, 1873, explains the conditions upon which the property now known as "Atkinson Common," was devised to the city of Newburyport:

"And whereas I desire to leave some testimonial of my regard for my native place, and to have as a monument to the memory of my father, the late Matthew Atkinson, the last of whose family I am, a piece of land in the city of Newburyport to be used as a 'Common' public and free to all the inhabitants of said city, and to be known forever as the 'Atkinson Common'; therefore upon the express condition that my wishes in regard to said Common are fully carried out by the city council of Newburyport, I do give and devise to the city of Newburyport a lot of land, infield and pasture, situate in said city, between High street and Merrimac street, and between land of the late Wm. C. Merrill on High street and Moses L. Chase on Dexter street, and adjoining





ing land of Thomas Merrell, Jr., on Merrimac street, so long as the same shall be used as a common, as aforesaid; and I do also with intentions as aforesaid give and devise to the said city of Newburyport, so long as the same shall be used as a Common, as aforesaid another lot of land, situated on High street in said city and nearly opposite the afore mentioned field and pasture lots, and described as lying between land of the late Robert Dodge and land of George Root; and I further will and declare with the intention of creating a Common, as aforesaid, that my executor, with the advice and consent of the board of mayor and aldermen of Newburyport may sell this last-named lot (and in this case my wish is that it first be offered at private sale to the heirs of the late Robert Dodge for a reasonable sum) and with the proceeds of said sale may purchase a lot now owned by heirs of the late Wm. C. Merrill on High street and contiguous to the afore-named field and pasture lot, to be added thereto as a part of said common, or in the event said lot of said heirs of Merrill cannot be purchased at a reasonable sum, then the said proceeds, or any surplus remaining after said purchase, shall be paid to the city treasurer in trust, to be applied to the general improvement of said common. And the above devises of land to the city of Newburyport are upon the express condition that the said city council shall formally accept the same within one year after my decease, agreeing to comply with the conditions, wishes and requests herein made and expressed. It is my wish and request that no hospital, almshouse, asylum, school-house, or any building that may be offensive to the neighborhood, shall be erected on said common, and that no public street be laid out or cause to pass through the same; and in case the city council of Newburyport shall fail to comply with all the afore-named conditions, wishes and requests, then and from that time the aforesaid lots of land shall revert to Joseph Atkinson, of Newbury, in the state of Vermont, and I further will and devise the same, in that event, to him, his heirs and assigns forever."

After this digression from the current of this narrative, we come to the War of the Rebellion, in which the record of Newburyport was no less patriotic than in the War of the Revolution.

As is well known, on Monday, the 15th of April, 1861, after the surrender of Fort Sumter, the President issued a call for seventy-five thousand troops to suppress the insurrection. The Third, Fourth, Sixth and Eighth Massachusetts Regiments were ordered from headquarters in Boston, to muster forthwith on Boston Common. The Eighth was an Essex County regiment, under the command of Colonel Munroe. The Cushing Guards, of Newburyport, under the command of Captain Albert W. Bartlett, was Company A in that regiment. Captain Bartlett received his orders by telegraph at 3.30 P.M. on Monday, and at once ordering his carriage, served before dark a summons upon his entire command to meet that evening in the armory. All necessary arrangements were made for departure the next morning, and on Tuesday the company left Boston with its regiment for Washington. Its service expired at the end of three months. The experiences of this regiment are well known. Its journey to Perryville, in Maryland, its passage by steamer to Annapolis, after the discovery that the railroad to Baltimore had been destroyed, its rescue of the "Constitution," its occupation of the railroad station, and its repair of engines and tracks of the railroad leading to Annapolis Junction have all become parts of imperishable history. On the return of this company it was received by the Veteran Artillery Association and a salute was fired on the arrival of the train. The following ode, in honor of the occasion, was written by Anne G. Hale, of Newburyport:

"Go forth with shout and song to meet  
The patriots home returning!  
Be every star upon our flag  
With brightest lustre burning,  
To honor those whose noble hearts,  
Fair Freedom's weal embowing,  
Their life-blood offered for the blot  
Its ruddy stripes defacing!"

"And vie we proudly to extend  
A welcome rich and royal  
To greet the kindly souls who sped,  
With a devotion loyal,  
When ne'er our dangers threatened us,  
The nation's cry obeying;  
Their young lives—all that life holds dear—  
Upon her altar laying."

"No timid dastards, hurried they,—  
Awaiting calls to glory  
Till bright the cloud of battle hung  
O'er fields of victory gory;  
But, first and foremost hastened on,  
Nor once from duty swerving,—  
Then courage high, their prowess bold,  
Less valiant brothers neiving."

"Brave, generous, just and true we know  
Our country's first defenders—  
A Massachusetts soldier now  
Her good name ne'er surrenders!  
The same upon her laureled heights,  
The blue Potomac warding,  
As were our grandfathers, years ago,  
Our bays and rivers guarding."

"So lift our banner high to-day,  
Made brighter by their story,  
And cry 'God bless them one and all—  
Redeemers of its glory!'—  
The soldier-lads of sixty-one,—  
We will their memory treasure,  
And pray 'where'er their fortunes lead,  
God bless them without measure!'"

The next company which left Newburyport for the war was the McClellan Guard, which, under the command of Captain Luther Dune, left Massachusetts June 27, 1861, and was assigned to the Eleventh Regiment. It took part in the engagements at Bull Run, Yorktown, Williamsburg, Fair Oaks, Savage Station, Glendale, Malvern Hill, Bristoe Station, Second Bull Run, Chantilly, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Wilderness, Kelly's Ford, Locust Grove, Spottsylvania, Petersburg, Strawberry Plains, Deep Bottom, Poplar Spring Church, Boydton Road, North Anna and Cold Harbor—twenty-four battles in all.

The next company entering the service was Company B, of the Thirty-fifth Regiment, under the command of Captain Albert W. Bartlett. It was mustered into the service August 21, 1862, and was mustered out June 9, 1865. It was in the engagements of Antietam, Fredericksburg, Jackson, Campbell Station, Knoxville, Spottsylvania, North Anna, Cold Harbor, Weldon Railroad, South Mountain, Vicksburg, Poplar Spring Church, Hatcher's Run, Fort Sedgwick, Fort Mahone and Petersburg.

The next company was Company A, of the Forty-eighth Regiment, under the command of Captain C. M. Woodward. The regiment was commanded by





Colonel Eben F. Stone, of Newburyport, and was enlisted for nine months' service. It left the State December 27, 1862, and served in the assaults on Fort Hudson and Donaldsonville. Other companies and individual enlistments followed, furnishing Newburyport men for the Eighth Regiment, Third Battalion of Riflemen and Third Unattached Company, all for three months; the Sixtieth Regiment, for one hundred days; the Eighth Regiment, Forty-fifth and Forty-eighth Regiments for nine months; the Sixty-first and Sixty-second Regiments for one year; the Ninth, Eleventh, Twelfth, Seventeenth, Eighteenth, Nineteenth, Twentieth, Twenty-second, Twenty-third, Twenty-fourth, Twenty-sixth, Twenty-eighth, Twentyninth, Thirtieth, Thirty-first, Thirty-second, Thirty-fifth, Fortieth, Fifty-fourth, Fifty-sixth, Fifty-seventh and Fifty-ninth Regiments for three years; the Fourth, Fifth, Ninth, Thirteenth and Fourteenth Batteries of light artillery for three years; the First, Second, Third and Fourth Regiments of heavy artillery for three years; the First Battalion of heavy artillery for three years; the First, Second, Third, Fourth and Fifth Regiments of cavalry for three years; the Fortieth and Forty-eighth New York, the First Company of sharpshooters for three years; and the Veteran Reserve Corps, the Regular Army, the United States Veteran Volunteers and the United States Colored Troops.

The whole number of enlistments in the army credited to Newburyport was thirteen hundred and forty-three, including two colonels, one chaplain, one adjutant, fifteen captains, twenty-three lieutenants, one sergeant-major, sixty-eight sergeants, one commissary-sergeant, eighty-eight corporals, eighteen musicians, one artificer, one blacksmith, one saddler, one wagoner, and eleven hundred and twenty-one privates. Besides these there were two hundred and forty-two enlistments in the navy credited to Newburyport, making the total number of credits fifteen hundred and eighty-five.

Immediately after the departure of the first volunteers, sewing and knitting circles were formed by the ladies, and these, with other associations subsequently formed, did much to relieve the soldiers from discomfort. One of the circles was formed in the south part of the city, under the direction of Mrs. Samuel Pettin-gell, and another by the Misses Aubin and her friends. A knitting circle was formed in October, 1861, under whose direction, before the 15th of that month, two hundred pairs of socks and fifty blankets were sent to Dr. Elliott, of St. Louis, in response to an appeal sent by him to New England. The Rev. S. J. Spalding, in an interesting series of articles on Newburyport in the Rebellion, published in the *Newburyport Herald*, says, that "parish sewing circles turned their activity to the aid of the soldiers, and from Chain Bridge to the Oldtown Church our women were busy in the preparation of articles for the boys in the army."

He also says that "on Tuesday, August 16, 1862, a public meeting of the ladies was called at the City Hall, and the Soldiers' Relief Association was formed, and Mrs. John C. March was elected president. This society collected in cash during the three years of its existence, \$12,714.21, and the boxes sent to the army between August 14, 1862, and July 28, 1865, contained 3222 cotton shirts, 1589 flannel shirts, 2522 pairs of woolen socks, 781 pairs of drawers, 286 dressing gowns, 2700 handkerchiefs, 5258 handkerchiefs, 3100 towels, 562 pairs of slippers, 1666 comfort bags, 1120 packages of farina, etc., 1859 boxes of condensed milk, cocoa and broma, 238 pounds of tea and sugar, 2031 bottles of wine, and 287 bottles of cologne. It is estimated that the total amount of money and articles appropriated was about \$30,000." At the close of the war an unexpended balance of about \$1500 remained, which has been distributed in charities to the needy children of soldiers.

Nor was the city in its municipal capacity backward in its efforts to furnish soldiers, by the payment of bounties, and by promised protection and care of soldiers' families. The war debt of the city reached the sum of one hundred and twenty-three thousand dollars, and no man murmured at the increased taxation which it involved. The following is a list of Newburyport men who were killed or who died in the war, taken from the files of the *Newburyport Herald*:

- Capt. Albert W. Bartlett, Co. A, 8th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.  
 Capt. Goodwin A. Stone, 2d Mass. Cav.; died at Washington from wounds July 18, 1864.  
 Lieut. John L. Perley, 4th Mass. Cav.; died of yellow fever at Charleston, S. C., while prisoner, November 15, 1864.  
 Capt. Oscar R. Livingston, 11th U. S. Col. H. A.; lost at sea Nov. 14, '65.  
 Lieut. John Dunn, Co. A, 17th Regt.; died June 3, 1865.  
 Lieut. Dean R. Martin, Co. B, 3d Mass. Cav.; killed at Sabine Cross-Roads Apr. 8, 1864.  
 Sergt. Moses C. Bartlett, Co. B, 35th Regt.; killed at Petersburg July 30, 1864.  
 Sergt. James W. Bartlett, Co. A, 35th Regt.; died of wounds June 6, 1864.  
 Edward T. Bennett, Co. B, 48th Regt.; killed at Donaldsonville June 13, 1864.  
 James L. Barnes, Co. A, 18th Regt.; killed at Fredericksburg Dec. 13, '62.  
 Capt. P. B. Boring, Co. B, 4th N. Y. Regt.; killed at Fort Mifflin Aug. 16, 1864.  
 Wm. H. Bricher, Co. B, 40th N. Y. Regt.; killed at Spottsylvania May 12, 1864.  
 John Black, Co. C, 11th Regt.; died at Newburyport Aug. 29, 1862.  
 Corp. Wm. C. Colby, Co. B, 35th Regt.; died of wounds Sept. 17, 1862.  
 Ezra Currier, Co. B, 35th Regt.; died March 9, 1864.  
 Albert E. Cressy, Co. B, 40th N. Y. Regt.; killed at Fair Oaks May 31, '62.  
 Joseph Cossar, Co. B, 35th Regt.; died of wounds Sept. 17, 1862.  
 Corp. Ebenezer Cressy, Co. A, 17th Regt.; died at Newbern Nov. 30, 1862.  
 Charles A. Chesley, Co. D, 17th Regt.; died in North Carolina May 28, '63.  
 George W. Colby, Co. B, 10th Regt.; died of wounds Oct. 5, 1862.  
 James M. Collyer, Co. B, 11th Regt.; died Nov. 18, 1862.  
 Leonard W. Colman, Co. A, 1st Mass. Cav. (grave No. 10); died a prisoner at Andersonville Nov. 6, 1864.  
 Christopher C. Conklin, Co. A, 40th Regt.; killed Feb. 10, 1864.  
 Rufus W. Chandler, Co. H, 32d Regt.; died at Washington Jan. 10, '63.  
 John Cotton, Co. I, 39th Regt.; died of wounds Oct. 22, 1864.  
 Evans Covington, Co. A, 54th Regt.; died Sept. 25, 1864.  
 Joseph Couillard, Co. B, 40th N. Y. Regt.; killed at Gettysburg July, '63.  
 Albert W. Davenport, Co. B, 35th Regt.; drowned at Fredericksburg Jan. 22, 1863.  
 Corp. Edward D. Dodge, Co. B, 35th Regt.; died at Crab Orchard Dec. '63.



Jacob F. Dove, Co. A, 35th Regt.; died of wounds April 15, 1861.  
 Albert Drown, Co. A, 17th Regt.; died at Matchless City Feb. 14, 1861.  
 Michael F. Devine, Co. B, 11th Regt.; died of wounds June 5, 1862.  
 Amos Dove, Co. C, 11th Regt.; died of wounds March 4, 1861.  
 Sewell Dennett, Co. D, 4th Mass. Cav.; died at Annapolis April 1, 1865.  
 Corp. Wm. Doyle, Co. D, 28th Regt.; died at Hilton Head Feb. 28, 1862.  
 Charles Delanty, Co. I, 30th Regt.; died Dec. 5, 1862.  
 John Devereux, Jr., navy, "Coleridge"; died at New Orleans Oct. 13, 1862.  
 J. W. Dockman, Co. B, 40th N. Y. Regt.; killed at Bull Run July 21, 61.  
 Corp. Charles T. Emery, Co. G, 48th N. Y. Regt.; died at Andersonville Sept. 29, 1864.  
 John L. Fess, Co. B, 10th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.  
 John L. Foulis, Co. A, 11th Regt.; died prisoner at Augusta April 30, 61.  
 Wm. C. Forbes, Co. H, 3d Mass. H. A.; died at Newburyport Nov. 9, 61.  
 Samuel Fowler, Co. J, 7th Regt.; died Oct. 29, 1861.  
 Elias Floyd, Co. C, 17th Regt.; died at Greenstone, N. C., June 29, 1863.  
 James Gray, Co. A, 35th Regt.; died of wounds Sept. 29, 1861.  
 Elizabeth Graves, Co. A, 10th Regt.; died of wounds Dec. 16, 1862.  
 John M. T. Goodwin, Co. M, 2d Mass. H. A.; died at Newbern Jan. 17, 1865.  
 George S. Hewlett, Co. H, 11th Regt.; died of wounds May 9, 1862.  
 Corp. Whittam Holmes, Co. B, 4th N. Y. Regt.; died at Falmouth, Va., June 10, 1863.  
 Daniel P. Howard, Co. B, 10th Regt.; killed at Fredericksburg Dec. 13, 1862.  
 David R. Hinkley, Co. B, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.  
 George W. Hodgdon, Co. B, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 62.  
 Theobald Houston, Co. A, 18th Regt.; died at Baton Rouge April 22, 63.  
 George H. Jackman, Co. I, 2nd Regt.; killed at Drury's Bluff May, 1861.  
 Corp. Wm. H. Jackman, Co. B 48th Regt.; died at Baton Rouge April 28, 1863.  
 Joseph A. Jewett, Co. I, 30th Regt.; died at New Orleans Aug. 1, 1862.  
 Patrick Kallon, Co. M, 2d Mass. H. A.; died at Newbern Oct. 3, 1861.  
 Jere Long, Co. B, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.  
 Corp. Joseph W. Lunt, Co. B, 35th Regt.; died May 30, 1865.  
 Richard K. Lunt, Co. A, 48th Regt.; killed at Port Hudson June 14, 1863.  
 Alfred Lee, Co. A, 2d Mass. Cav.; died at Vienna, Va., April 7, 1864.  
 Charles M. Littlefield, sergt., Co. L, 4th Mass. Cav.; died at Portsmouth, Va., August 2, 1864.  
 Wallace B. Littlefield, Co. M, 4th Mass. H. A.; died at Fort William, Va., Feb. 26, 1865.  
 Jeremiah Lynch, Co. C, 22d Regt.; died at Andersonville Sept. 15, 1864.  
 Frederick G. Lunt, corp., Co. H, 60th Regt.; died at Indianapolis Oct. 3, 1864.  
 Wm. D. Lee, Co. E, 11th Regt.; died at City Point, Va., Dec. 28, 1861.  
 Michael H. Leary, Co. H, 11th Regt.; died at Newburyport Sept. 5, 1861.  
 George W. Littlefield, Co. I, 30th Regt.; died April 16, 1862.  
 Dennis Leary, navy, "Brooklyn"; lost at sea, 1862.  
 George W. Mason, Co. C, 10th Regt.; killed at White Oak Swamp, June 29, 1862.  
 Patrick Mandon, Co. F, 10th Regt.; killed at White Oak Swamp June 29, 1862.  
 Benj. L. McLaughlin, 1st Co. Sharpshooters; supposed to have died of wounds, 1862.  
 Bernard Mullin, Co. D, 28th Regt.; died of wounds Nov. 1, 1862.  
 Cornwall Merritt, Co. B, 19th Regt.; killed at Fredericksburg Dec. 13, 1862.  
 Lawrence Morrison, Co. B, 25th Regt.; killed at Fredericksburg Dec. 13, 1862.  
 John P. Neal, Co. H, 3d Mass. H. A.; died Aug. 28, 1861.  
 Francis J. Nash, Co. B, 35th Regt.; died at Middleton, Md., Dec. 15, 1862.  
 Andrew Nash, Co. B, 35th Regt.; killed at South Mountain Sept. 14, 1862.  
 Thomas Nolan, Co. I, 2d Mass. H. A.; died at Annapolis Dec. 22, 1861.  
 Wm. O'Grady, Co. D, 28th Regt.; killed at Gettysburg July 2, 1862.  
 Caleb C. Pike, Co. B, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.  
 Nicholas P. Peabody, Co. A, 18th Regt.; died of wounds June 17, 1863.  
 Wm. F. Perkins, Co. A, 48th Regt.; died at Baton Rouge May 21, 1863.  
 Charles W. Poole, Co. A, 48th Regt.; killed at Port Hudson May 27, 1863.  
 Wm. C. Pressay, Co. M, 4th Mass. H. A.; died at Fort William, Va., March 12, 1865.

Walter W. Pingree, 1st Co. Sharpshooters; died Sept. 11, 1861.  
 Solomon Park, Jr., Co. A, 2d Regt.; died at Newbern, Dec., 1861.  
 Stephen C. Pearson, Co. B, 10th N. Y. Regt.; died at Andersonville.  
 Benjamin H. Rogers, musician, Co. B, 30th Regt.; died of wounds Oct., 1862.  
 Alphonso P. Read, Co. B, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.  
 Windiel Rappell, Co. B, 10th Regt.; killed at Fredericksburg Dec. 13, 1862.  
 Charles N. Rogers, Co. F, 11th Regt.; died Aug. 29, 1862.  
 Jason S. Rines, 1st Co. Sharpshooters; killed at Petersburg, Va., Sept. 28, 1861.  
 George Robinson, Co. B, 10th N. Y. Regt.; killed at Four Oaks Dec. 10, 1862.  
 Samuel Smith, Co. A, 17th Regt.; died in New York May 27, 1863.  
 Moses Short, Co. B, 10th Regt.; died of wounds June 29, 1862.  
 Dennis Sexton, Co. H, 11th Regt.; died at Alexandria, Va., grave 1721, April 29, 1864.  
 John S. Sayward, Co. F, 10th Mass. Cav.; died at sea Sept. 4, 1861.  
 Louis D. B. Somerby, musician, Co. M, 2d Mass. H. A.; died at Portsmouth, Va., March 24, 1861.  
 Addison Tarr, Co. A, 35th Regt.; killed at South Mountain Sept. 14, 1862.  
 John Twombly, Co. E, 28th Regt.; died July 18, 1861.  
 John H. W. Talbot, Co. B, 11th Regt.; died of wounds Nov. 1, 1862.  
 Richard A. Van Moll, 1st Co. Sharpshooters; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.  
 Louis Vought, Co. B, 40th N. Y. Regt.; died at Falmouth, Va., June 1863.  
 Henry P. Wetherby, Co. D, 4th Mass. Cav.; died at Gainesville, Fla., August 17, 1864.  
 F. Elphalet Winter, sergt., Co. H, 32d Regt.; killed at Fredericksburg Dec. 13, 1862.  
 Charles O. White, Co. C, 2d Mass. H. A.; died at Andersonville, July 4, 1864.

#### Newburyport men credited to other places,—

Henry P. Gullith, Co. A, 35th Regt.; quota Newbury, died Nov. 3, 1862.  
 Jacob G. Clarkson, Co. A, 35th Regt.; quota Newbury, died Jan. 9, 1863.  
 Thomas P. Lunt, sergt., Co. H, 32d Regt.; quota Newbury, killed at Chancellorsville May 5, 1863.  
 Hezekiah Colby, color sergt., Co. K, 12th Regt.; quota Gloucester, killed at Bull Run Aug. 30, 1862.  
 C. Lyman Cole, Co. F, 40th Regt.; quota Newbury, died in New York, March 7, 1864.  
 Horatio Hackett, Co. A, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.  
 George S. Tapley, Co. D, 10th Ohio Regt.; quota Ohio, killed at Antietam, Sept. 17, 1862.  
 Henry W. Windley, 10th N. H. Regt.; quota New Hampshire, killed at Beaufort, S. C.  
 James Coffin, Co. B, 11th N. H. Regt.; quota New Hampshire, died in prison.

The last event in the history of Newburyport remaining to be referred to is the arrival of Lieutenant Adolphus Washington Greely, a native of the city, followed by the public reception which was accorded him. As heroic and daring as were the deeds of the sons of Newburyport during the Revolution and the War of 1842, none exceeded the exploits of this young man, who illustrated by his patience, his fidelity, his indomitable courage in the frozen regions of the North, the lines of the poet, that

"Peace hath her victories  
 No less renowned, than war."

It is doubtful whether, in all the trying scenes through which our country has passed, of fire and battle and flood, the hearts of the American people have been touched by a tenderer sympathy or a sweeter joy than the discovery of that little band of





heroic men, of which he was the devoted leader, and their gallant rescue excited.

Adolphus Washington Greely was born in Newburyport March 27, 1844. His early education was obtained at the public schools. Though fond of study and ambitious to receive a collegiate education, he was precluded from his wished-for career by circumstances which it was impossible for him to control, and at the age of seventeen he entered as clerk the jewelry store of Fairbanks & Paul, in his native city, and seemed likely to pursue the devious and uncertain path of a business life. Six months later, however, the war broke out, and among the volunteers for three years' service he was one of the earliest to subscribe his name. He enlisted as private in the Byfield Rifle Rangers, who were afterwards assigned as Company B, to the Nineteenth Regiment of Massachusetts Volunteers, under the command of Colonel Edward W. Hincks. Having speedily reached the position of orderly-sergeant, he felt that he was worthy of a commission. He was as brave as the bravest, and never thought of danger in the performance of his duty. Though immersed in the surroundings of war life, it is significant, both of his literary taste and utter fearlessness, that on one occasion, when going into a battle, he was more concerned about the fate of a scrap cut from a newspaper, laid aside to be read, than about the dangers of the contest which he was about to enter.

In some way Governor Andrew became interested in him and wrote to Colonel Hincks concerning him. Colonel Hincks promptly replied, "There is no man in the army who deserves promotion more than A. W. Greely, and if I had a regiment like him I could whip the whole South." In consequence of this recommendation Governor Andrew appointed him second lieutenant in the regiment commanded by Colonel Robert G. Shaw. Another appointment, however, awaited him, and was accepted, of a second lieutenancy in a colored regiment, destined for New Orleans, under General Ullman. Lieutenant Greely was at the surrender of Fort Hudson, and afterwards at New Orleans, where he had command of his regiment, as acting major. He was afterwards examined for admission into the regular army, and received a commission as second lieutenant, from which position he was afterwards promoted to be first lieutenant, and detailed into the Signal Corps. While in the service of this corps he was sent into Texas to build a government telegraph line, fifteen hundred miles in length, which was constructed, under great difficulties, in a manner entirely satisfactory to General Ullman, under whose directions he was acting. He was attached to the Signal Service when he undertook his expedition into the Arctic seas. The details of this expedition are a part of history, and need no reference to them in this narrative to perpetuate their memory. His rescue and return also rather illumine than borrow light from the historic page, and as long as the human heart is

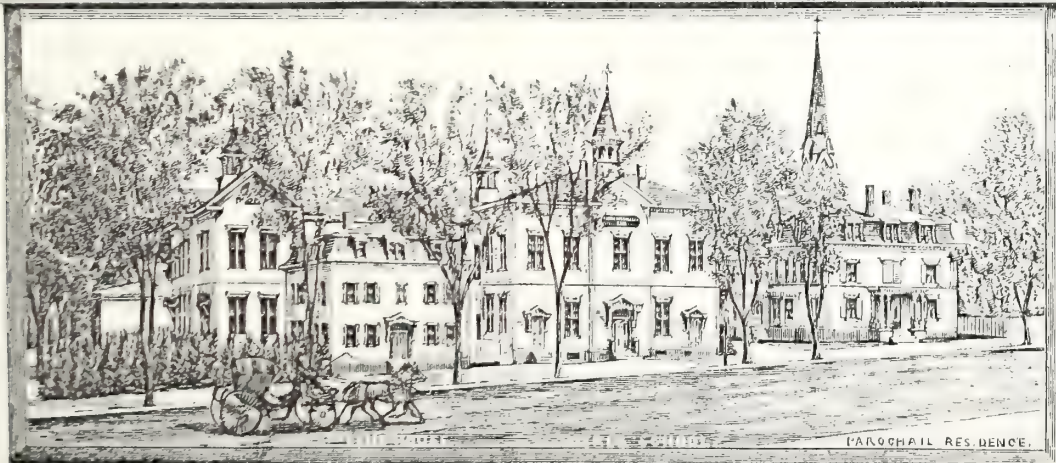
capable of sympathizing with hardship and suffering, and admiring fidelity and heroism, these incidents will be again and again recalled and applauded.

By an arrangement with the government Newburyport was assigned as his landing-place. On Thursday, the 14th of August, as the guest of the city, he was accorded a public reception. The order of exercises for the day included a procession, a formal welcome by Mayor W. A. Johnson, a response by Lieut. Greely, followed by a State welcome by Gov. John D. Robinson, collations for military and other organizations, speeches in the afternoon from the grand-stand in Brown Square, and fireworks in the evening. The procession, under the direction of Col. Charles L. Ayers, chief marshal, marched under escort of the Eighth Massachusetts Regiment of Volunteer Militia, Lieut.-Colonel Francis A. Osgood commanding, and included the A. W. Bartlett Post 49, of Newburyport; the Major How Post 47, of Haverhill; Post 122, of Amesbury; the Everett Peabody Post 108, of Georgetown; the Charles Sumner Post 101, of Groveland; the Col. C. R. Mudge Post 111, of Merrimac; the Sons of Veterans, and Father Lennon Benevolent Association, of Newburyport; the Newburyport Commandery Knights Templar; the mayor and Lieut. Greely, and invited guests; the Fire Department, of Newburyport, with their guests—Merrimac No. 1, of Merrimac; the Volunteer Company, of Salisbury; and the Hook-and-Ladder Company No. 1, of Amesbury. The music was furnished by the Salem Brass Band, the Newburyport Cadet Band and Drum Corps, the Reading Brass Band, Carter's Band of Boston, the Georgetown Cornet Band, the National Band of Lynn, the Rowley Brass Band, and the First Regiment Drum and Fife Corps. In the afternoon a band concert by Carter's Band was followed by speeches by Hon. Eben F. Stone, Major Ben: Perley Poore, Richard S. Spofford, Esq., Rev. H. M. Mott, James Parton, Esq., and Hon. E. M. Boynton. The commandery, with guests, dined in their hall; the mayor and guests dined in Fraternity Hall; the Eighth Regiment dined in City Hall, and the other organizations were provided for in various places. In the evening, fireworks at March's Hill and band concerts closed the exercises of a reception both well deserved and admirably conceived and carried out.

ST. PAUL'S CHURCH is an outgrowth of Queen Anne's Chapel at the Plains. The first Church of England minister to settle over the chapel was Rev. John Lambton, who came from England and assumed his duties November 12, 1712. In 1715 he returned to England, and was succeeded by Rev. Henry Lucas, who committed suicide August 23, 1720. Rev. Matthias Plant followed in 1722, and remained until his death, April 2, 1753. These three ministers were sent from England by the "Venerable Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts." About the year 1740 St. Paul's Church, on the site of







REV. ARTHUR J. TEELING, RECTOR.  
R. C. CHURCH AND SCHOOL PROPERTY,  
NEWBURYPORT, MASS.



the present church, was opened, and Mr. Plant officiated in both St. Paul's and Queen Anne's. In 1751 Rev. Edward Bass, afterwards bishop, a Harvard graduate of 1744, became his assistant, and after his death succeeded to the full pastorate. In 1766 Queen Anne's Chapel was abandoned, and during the Revolution was blown down. Mr. Bass was rector until 1803, and was succeeded after his death by Rev. Dr. James Morse (Harvard, 1800), who remained in the pastorate until his death, April 2, 1842. Rev. John S. Davenport followed in 1845, remaining a year, and followed by Rev. Edward A. Washburn (Harvard, 1838) until 1852, who was succeeded by Rev. William Horton (Harvard, 1824), in 1853. Mr. Horton served until his death in 1863. Rev. John C. White followed with a service of seven years, resigning in 1870 to take the rectorship of St. Andrew's Church at Pittsburgh, Pa. The next rector was Rev. George D. Johnson, who served until 1875, and is now rector of Christ Church, New Brighton, S. I. Rev. Edward L. Drown became rector in 1876, resigning in 1883, and followed by the present incumbent, Rev. James H. Van Buren. The present church edifice was built in 1890.

CHURCH OF THE IMMACULATE CONCEPTION.—Of the establishment and history of the Catholic Church in Newburyport the following interesting sketch has been furnished to the writer by Miss Katherine A. O'Keefe, of that city.

Among the twenty-three first settlers of Newburyport who built their simple homes on the River Parker, over two centuries and a half ago, there was, probably, no representative of Catholicity. It is even doubtful if there was one open Catholic in all of what is now Massachusetts; for in that colony Puritan intolerance against Roman Catholics had full sway. Indeed, in all New England there were but few Catholics, those few being French missionaries, mostly Jesuit, who came in the hope of converting the Indians. As early as 1650, however, although the Massachusetts General Court of 1647 had enacted that "Jesuits entering the colony should be expelled, and, if they returned, hanged," we find one of that order, Rev. and Father Druillettes, received as an envoy from Canada, and hospitably entertained by the Governors of Plymouth, Massachusetts and New Haven, while another, Rev. John Pierron (the latter, however, disguised), traversed New England twenty years later, administering to the spiritual wants of the Catholics he found there.

The Revolution of 1688, and events resulting from it, drove many Catholics from Great Britain and Ireland to Massachusetts and other parts of this country in a vain search for religious freedom. Debarred from the consolation of their religion in this colony, they sought it as far away as Canada and New Brunswick, as we learn from a letter written in 1698 by the French commander, who asked for an Irish priest at St. John's for Catholics from Boston and vi-

cinity, who had to go to French settlements in order to attend to their religious duties.

The first considerable body of Catholics that came to New England were the Acadians, who were cast from their homes in 1755, and, to the number of two thousand, landed in various sea-ports of Massachusetts in 1756. As Newburyport was then one of the most important of these ports, it is probable that not a few of these exiles sought refuge there; and some of the many Newburyport names, clearly of French origin, may have been imported then as well as later, when they are supposed to have come as the results of the French Revolution.

The first tolerance given to Catholics in Massachusetts was during the Revolutionary War, when, in November, 1775, while Washington was in Boston as commander-in-chief, he forbade his soldiers celebrating what was known as "Pope's Day," on the ground that the custom was offensive to the many Catholics in the American army and to Catholic France, their faithful ally. A still greater encouragement was given to Catholicity three years later, in 1778, when, Count D'Estaing and his Catholic soldiers being in Boston harbor, divine services were openly celebrated on the French fleet, and frequently attended by some of the most influential of Boston's Protestant citizens.

The records of the Revolutionary War show the important part taken on the side of liberty by Catholics in all departments; but so bitter had been the feeling against them in New England, that few of the many Catholic Revolutionary heroes went forth from our vicinity. At the close of the struggle, we, accordingly, find only a small number here; the history of Boston showing only a few French and Spanish, and about thirty Irish Catholics. These few were allowed the use of a school-house for religious services, and had for their first pastor Father de la Porterie, who had been chaplain in the French Navy. He left Boston in 1789, and was succeeded for a brief period by another French priest, Father Rousselet, after whom the Catholics of Massachusetts were fortunate enough to have for their next pastor Rev. John Thayer, a native of Boston, who joined the Catholic Church while visiting Rome in 1783. Having studied for the priesthood and been ordained, he returned to this country and, in January, 1790, was given charge of the Boston Catholic Mission by Very Reverend Dr. Carroll, who, about the close of the Revolution, had been appointed prefect apostolic, and who soon after, August 15, 1790, was appointed first bishop of the United States.

The French Revolution of 1790 sent out another detachment of Catholics, priests and laymen, and that several came to Newburyport may be seen by a collection of graves on the old burying hill, where those who died between 1792 and 1812 were buried. Of these, Mrs. Emery, a venerable old resident of Newburyport, in her "Reminiscences of a Nonagena-





rian," says: "Doubtless the whole number were Catholics, and, as at that period no ground had been consecrated in the Puritan town, this quiet spot was chosen in a Protestant burial-ground." Amongst the priests who came were Rev. Francis Matignon, who was sent by Bishop Carroll to Boston in 1792. This last event had quite an intimate connection with Newburyport, as Father Matignon's coming enabled Father Thayer to visit every large town and village then settled in Massachusetts. The year of this visitation is not certainly known, but it was between 1792 and 1796. Within these dates, then, we may surely place the first visit of a priest to Newburyport—a noteworthy fact in a history of its Catholicity.

October, 1796, marked another date of some importance to Catholics in Newburyport,—the coming of Rev. John de Cheverus to Boston. There were thus three priests there, so that Father Cheverus was able to annually visit Salem, Newburyport, Portsmouth, etc. It is not probable that there are any now living in Newburyport who remember these visits, but there are several who remember to have heard their parents speak of them and always with pleasure. Amongst these is Mrs. Alsar, a highly respected lady of Newburyport, whose father, the late Captain Brown, was an intimate friend of Father Cheverus. From her we learn that there were several French Catholic refugees there at the close of the last and the beginning of the present century, to whose spiritual wants, we may be sure he attended, as, also, to those of the Irish Catholics, of whose presence here about that time we get an idea from the many undoubtedly Irish Catholic names on Newburyport's records—names, for instance, like O'Brien, who, if, as we are told, they belong to the Maine O'Briens must have been originally Catholics, as the heroes of Machias Bay, the "Lexington of the Seas," were certainly members of that church.

The number of Catholics in the United States having so greatly increased, that Baltimore was made an arch-diocese in 1808, Boston was made an episcopal see, with Rev. Dr. Cheverus as the first bishop, his diocese being all New England. Concerning this period, we again quote Mrs. Emery: "Captain William Cutler, of Newburyport, married a French lady, a member of the Roman Catholic Church. To baptize her infant and perform [administer] other sacraments, Bishop Cheveraux, of Boston, occasionally visited Mrs. Cutler, of Newburyport, at her residence. There were some half-dozen French exiles and other foreigners in the place, also Catholics, who would assemble on these visits, in a chamber which Mrs. Cutler had fitted up for an oratory. These were the first Catholic services ever held in Newburyport."

After Bishop Cheverus' departure for France, where he was appointed cardinal, Very Rev. Benedict Fenwick was consecrated his successor at Boston, and he, at that time, found at his disposal, in all New England, only three priests. Of these, the one in Boston

was Father Byrne, and there are still Catholics in Newburyport who remember persons going to Boston to be married by him, and carrying children there to be baptized.

We learn from a sketch of Bishop Fenwick that in 1827 he visited Newburyport, and other places in the eastern part of his diocese, administering the sacraments and preaching wherever it was practicable; and learning from Mr. Colby, a well-known resident of Newburyport, that he remembers his father's going about that time to hear a Catholic clergyman speak at the old court-house on the Mall—the hearers being mostly Protestants—we conclude that Bishop Fenwick must have been the one. Father Wiley, of Salem, who was ordained 1827, is also remembered to have preached at the court-house, and was one of the first to celebrate divine service in the town, which he did at the residence of Mr. Hugh McGlew and others, at intervals until about 1840. From an address delivered on the occasion of Newburyport's two hundred and fiftieth anniversary by its present Catholic pastor, we learn that, "as far back as 1839, Father French [afterwards pastor of a church in Lawrence from 1846 to 1851], on his way from Portland to Boston, stayed over and collecting the few Catholics, offered for them the Holy Sacrifice of the Mass in the house of one of the Catholic residents." About 1841 the number of Catholics was found to have somewhat increased by the building of the railroad and the cotton factory. The number of Catholic families in the town at that time was ten. Of these, the older members, the parents, are all now dead except Mrs. Michael Murphy, who still lives on Middle Street. The members of these ten families having appealed to Bishop Fenwick for a priest, the first one especially appointed to take charge of the Catholics of Newburyport was Rev. Patrick Canavan, then the resident pastor of Dover, N. H. At first Father Canavan's visits were quarterly, then once a month, on which occasions he, at first, celebrated Mass at private houses. Some time about 1844, however, there was a sufficient number to warrant the purchase of a building to be used as a chapel. The vestry of the Old South Church, at the corner of Federal and School Streets, was, accordingly, bought by Mr. Hugh McGlew, representing the Catholics, and moved to a lot already purchased on Charles Street. Here Father Canavan officiated until the spring of 1848, when, Bishop Fenwick having commissioned Rev. John O'Brien, the late respected and beloved pastor of St. Patrick's Church at Lowell, to take charge of the faithful in Chelsea, Newburyport and other eastern sections, the desire of the Newburyport Catholics was at length gratified. Father O'Brien selected their town as the headquarters of his mission.

Father O'Brien's first visit is well and pleasantly remembered by many persons still in Newburyport. He spent his first night at the Merrimac House, and the following day, accompanied by two of his prospective parishioners, took a survey of the place and



hired a tenement, the present No. 6 in a block on Tremont Street. Afterwards, in order to be nearer to the little church, he moved to another tenement in a block on Charles Street.

During Father O'Brien's stay in Newburyport he did everything possible to advance the cause of religion; his genial manner, cultured mind, pious zeal and interest for the good of the general public, both Catholic and Protestant, being very powerful in softening the asperities with which those who differ from them in religion are apt to look upon the first Catholic priest that takes up his residence amongst them. His superior abilities and marked success in Newburyport led to his being called to a broader field. He was accordingly appointed to the pastorate of St. Patrick's Church at Lowell, where he remained until the 31st of October, 1874, when he departed to his reward, leaving a memory that will be long revered.

Father O'Brien's successor was one who was also much loved and respected by all who knew him, Rev. Henry Lennon. Father Lennon was ordained in May, 1848, after which he went for a few months to St. Albans, Vt., as assistant to Father Hamilton; whence he went to Newburyport Christmas eve, 1848. Soon the little church on Charles Street became too small for the congregation, and from deeds kept on file by the present pastor we learn that land for the church on Green Street was bought from Moses E. Hale and John Osgood by John H. Nichols, of Salem, and conveyed by the latter to Bishop Fitzpatrick, of Boston, for the Catholics of Newburyport. The last deed was dated May 10, 1851, and the price paid was \$1800.

The corner-stone of the church erected on this land—the present Church of the Immaculate Conception—was laid, with the usual impressive ceremonies, Tuesday, April 27, 1852, by Rt. Rev. Bishop Fitzpatrick, attended by twenty priests, in the presence of about two thousand people; and the sermon was delivered by Rev. Father McElroy, a learned and eloquent Jesuit priest, who had, a few years previous, served as chaplain in the American army during the Mexican War. The *Newburyport Herald* of April 30, 1852, thus concludes its synopsis of this sermon: "The speaker paid a deserved compliment to the pastor of the church for his labors, for his self-denial, his modest and retiring character and the signal success that had attended his ministrations; and concluded by thanking the citizens of this city for their liberality and good feeling towards the society and the city authorities for the use of the City Hall on the occasion." This last refers to the fact that the City Hall was placed at the disposal of the Catholics that morning. It was there the priests vested themselves, and thence they and the members of the congregation passed to Green Street.

The architect of the church was Mr. P. C. Keely, of Brooklyn, N. Y., this being the first church in the

diocese built under his direction. Work progressed so rapidly that it was ready for dedication in a little less than a year. The cost of the building, including altar and pews, was \$20,000. The dedication took place St. Patrick's Day, 1853, the ceremony being performed by Rt. Rev. Bishop Fitzpatrick, and the sermon preached by Rev. Father Boyce, of Worcester.

Over a score of years the Catholics of Newburyport were blessed with the ministrations of Rev. Father Lennon, and disturbed by little, save a trifling and transient cloud of intolerance which attended the formation of the "Know-Nothing" party in 1854. During that long period Father Lennon won for himself and, through his good influence upon his people, for them also, the good will and confidence of the community. The beneficial result of this was strikingly manifest during the financial crisis of 1857, when, by the good advice he gave his people, he prevented a "run" on the Institution of Savings, and thus, probably, saved it from financial difficulty. His health, however, was precarious, and his labors in attending not only to the Catholics in Newburyport, but to those in Ipswich, Rowley, Newbury, West Newbury, Salisbury and Amesbury were so great that he was obliged to procure an assistant, the first being Rev. M. Carragher, during whose term of service Father Lennon took a short vacation, soon after the dedication of the church. While he was absent Father Carragher, acting for the parishioners, purchased from a minister of the Baptist Church, for a parochial residence, the one long used for that purpose on Court Street, and they agreeably surprised Father Lennon with it on his return. Father Carragher having been called to another field of labor, was succeeded by various other assistants, the principal of whom were Rev. John Brady, during whose service the church in Amesbury was built, of which he is now the pastor, having been appointed to that position in the fall of 1867; and Rev. P. J. Halley, who was officiating at the time of Father Lennon's death. This sad event took place about nine o'clock, Thursday evening, July 13, 1871, at which time he was fifty-one years old. His funeral took place the following Saturday, July 15th, and the universal respect in which he was held was particularly manifested on that occasion, when the church was crowded by sincere mourners of all denominations. The funeral Mass was celebrated by Very Rev. P. F. Lyndon, of Boston, and the discourse—a most touching tribute to the virtues of the departed—was by Rev. James A. Healey, then of Boston, now the Right Rev. Bishop of Portland, Me.

At the conclusion of the Mass the remains were borne to the grave prepared for them at the southeast side of the church. And, "Thus," says the *Newburyport Herald*, "was buried a good man and a good pastor, one whose influence on his people is admitted by people of all sects to have been beneficial to them





and for the interest of the community in which he and they lived."

It may be a not uninteresting fact that Newburyport's next and present pastor, Rev. Arthur J. Teeling, was, at that time, and had been for three years, assistant to Rev. John O'Brien, of Lowell, Newburyport's first pastor. Perhaps from the one whose brief sojourn in that town had been so successful, and who had given the good work such a strong impetus on the right road, Father Teeling, in the impressionable days of his early priesthood, imbibed some of the zeal that, during his pastorate, has crowned the church of Newburyport with a success almost unprecedented in the ecclesiastical records of Massachusetts and equal to that of any church in the country similarly situated.

Although Father Lennon had, considering the time of his pastorate and the slow growth, at first, of the number of Catholics, done excellent work, there still remained much to be attended to when Father Teeling, then a young man of twenty-seven, took the heavy burden on his shoulders in August, 1871. The church was still \$9000 in debt, \$4700 of which was a mortgage to the Institute for Savings, the remainder being due mostly to depositors and there was neither bell-deck, bell nor spire upon it. There was no burial-ground for deceased Catholics. There was no parochial residence; for the house on Court Street, which had been in Father Lennon's name, passed, as he had died intestate, to his sister, Miss Margaret Lennon; and, of all the land now covered with fine buildings used for religious purposes, there was none then owned by the Catholics of Newburyport except the lot on which the church stands.

A parochial residence being the most pressing necessity, the one formerly used as such, together with its furniture, was purchased from Miss Lennon by Father Teeling, in the name of the archbishop, for the parishioners, for \$5500, the payment of which sum was completed July 31, 1872.

Just prior to Father Teeling's coming, Father Halley, the late Father Lennon's assistant, had suggested to the people the raising of a monument to the memory of their lamented pastor. The suggestion was most generously acted upon, the sum of \$1825 subscribed, and one of Father Teeling's first acts was to see to the erection of a handsome monument, in front of the church in Green Street, over the remains.

As Father Teeling was for a year without an assistant, he soon found it difficult to attend to Ipswich; so, after about six months, the church in that town was placed under the spiritual care of Rev. Thomas Shahan, then pastor of Beverly, now of Arlington.

After erecting the monument, the next step was to build a bell-deck and spire. Of this work, also, Mr. Keely was architect, the builder Mr. Wigglesworth, of Boston, and the cost was \$5000. The bell, which cost \$1000, came from the famous foundry of Messrs. Meneely & Co., of West Troy, and everything being

in readiness, it was baptized on Sunday, March 15, 1874. Catholics, of course, understand that this "baptism" and bestowal of a name on the bell is not the sacrament of Baptism, but a ceremony which outwardly resembles it in so many respects that it cannot well be designated by any other word. The bell of which we speak was baptized St. Patrick, and the ceremony was performed by Archbishop Williams, attended by about thirty priests and eleven hundred sponsors. After the naming of the bell it is practically taught its mission by its "sponsors," that is, those who have contributed towards its purchase, who, all together, or in the person of one of their number, cause it to send forth its first peal. This was done, on the present occasion, by Rev. Father Teeling at benediction. The bell having been raised to its proper position, the next day, Monday, March 16th, its first service was to toll for that eminent statesman, Charles Sumner, during the time of his funeral services which took place that day. The day following being the feast of St. Patrick, the bell named in his honor, for the first time, called the people to divine service, and rang its most joyful peals afterwards as a grand procession, consisting of all the Catholic and Irish societies in the city, accompanied by the city officials, passed through the principal streets in honor of the spread of Christianity by Ireland's great apostle.

On Father Teeling's appointment to Newburyport, one of the first injunctions placed upon him by Bishop (now Archbishop) Williams was, "Get a burial-place for your dead." In obedience to this, a piece of land, formerly the old training-ground for the militia of Newburyport and vicinity, was purchased from Mr. Jacob A. Balch April 30, 1874. Upon this stood the house and barn ever since used by the superintendent of the cemetery, and the entire property cost two thousand one hundred dollars. This cemetery, which is one of the finest in the county, was surveyed by Mr. John T. Desmond, the present city surveyor of Haverhill; and is laid out in the form of a Celtic cross; the "priests' lot," which is surmounted by a handsome Celtic cross of granite, forming the circle surrounding the junction of the arms and upright. Within the confines of its twenty-three acres are fifteen hundred and thirteen well-defined burial-lots; the length of its avenues is a mile and a half, and of its paths two and two-thirds miles. In its present improved condition it cost ten thousand dollars. In the early summer of 1876 it was solemnly consecrated by Archbishop Williams, soon after which, the remains of nearly seven hundred persons were conveyed by their friends from various neighboring cemeteries, and there deposited. Handsome monuments were then erected, and ever since everything possible has been done to beautify it. With this intention Father Teeling, for the sum of three hundred dollars, had imported ten thousand seedlings of Norway spruce and four hundred of Scotch pine. An unused portion of the cemetery was



set apart as a nursery, and so well did it thrive that, with the young trees, the cemetery and all the church property grounds were decorated; the remainder was sold, and, as a result of the sale, the sum of seven hundred dollars was placed to the credit of the church.

The terrible disaster at Santiago, in which so many lives were lost by the burning of a church that had not adequate means of exit—all its doors opening inward—called the attention of the authorities to the subject, and led to the issuing of an order that all public buildings must have proper egress. In obedience to this order, the front of the church was altered; the two doors were enlarged and opened outward, and another one was added. Articles of agreement for these alterations were signed July 12, 1877, the architect being Mr. James Murphy, of Providence, the builder, Mr. Healey, representing Mr. Batterson, of Hartford, and the sum agreed upon was one thousand two hundred and seventy-five dollars. In order to make these improvements, and to put in front of the church the fine walk at present there, Father Lennon's monument and remains had to be removed to the cemetery. This was done after a Solemn High Mass of Requiem had been offered; and once again the respect of his brother priests and of the community in general for Father Lennon was manifested. Thirty of the former and all the Catholic societies in the city accompanied the remains, and business was quite generally suspended. As the beautiful monument had already been put up, the burial immediately took place and the good priest was laid to rest surrounded in death by those to whom in life he had ministered.

The next want to be filled was a chapel for the meeting of Sunday-schools and various church societies. For this purpose the First Christian Baptist Church—together with its organ and furniture—was purchased from Elder Pike for the sum of seven thousand two hundred dollars in July, 1873.

Soon after this, having in view the establishment of parochial schools at no distant day, the site of the "Female High School," at the corner of Washington and Court Streets, was purchased in August, 1873, for \$1800 from Robert Couch.

Father Teeling having taken, during the summer and fall of 1878, a well-earned vacation, returned in November to his place, which had been filled during his absence by his assistant, now the pastor of the Church of our Lady of the Rosary, South Boston—Rev. John J. McNulty, aided by Rev. James O'Reilly, now pastor at York, Pa. Reference to these reverend gentlemen recalls the fact that, after his first year here, Father Teeling received as assistant Rev. Edward S. Galligan, who remained a year. After an interval of about another year a second assistant, Rev. John McNulty, whom we have already mentioned, was sent to the parish, and remained there until August, 1879. Some time prior to that, however, refreshed and strengthened by his trip, and with

faculties and judgment developed by his travels, Father Teeling set about another great work—the freeing of the church from the debts remaining upon it, and solemnly consecrating it to the divine service: something that cannot be done while there is a cent of debt upon it. The congregation, entering heartily into his great design, responded more generously than ever, and on the 24th of June, 1879, shared with their pastor the joy attendant on the fulfillment of their pious desires,—and the church was solemnly consecrated. The celebrant on this occasion was Most Rev. Archbishop Williams, and the sermon was delivered by Rt. Rev. Bishop O'Reilly, of Springfield. Archbishop Williams also presided at Vespers in the evening, and delivered an address of congratulation to the Catholics of Newburyport for the glorious work accomplished by them—freeing their church from debt, and being thus the first in the present archdiocese of Boston to solemnly consecrate a parish church to the service of God. Next after the congregation, its pastor and its assistant, the archbishop stated that he himself experienced the most heart-felt thrill of joy at the grand success.

After the departure of Father McNulty, Rev. John T. Gormley succeeded, and remained nearly two years. Before his arrival, however, it became evident that the energetic pastor did not yet consider his work complete. July 1, 1879, he bought from George J. L. Colby, Esq., his estate on Court Street, next to the parochial residence, for two thousand three hundred dollars; and we learn from the *Semi-weekly Cleric*, dated November 12, 1879, that "Father Teeling informed his congregation on Sunday last that in a year from that time a Catholic school would be in the full tide of successful operation in the Catholic square on the corner of Court and Washington streets, on the former site of the 'Female High School.'" From another Newburyport paper, the *Merrimac Valley Visitor*, dated December 20, 1879, we copy: "The plans for the Catholic school building have been completed by Rufus Sargent, and the contract for labor will be given out in January." Again, the same paper, bearing date September 15, 1880, under the heading, "Something they may be proud of," reads as follows: "The Catholic Church is paying for their school-house as it is being built, and to this day have no debt upon it. It is the largest wooden building in the city, and will be an elegant structure, costing at least \$40,000." [It cost thirty thousand dollars.] "If they can have it free from debt next September, it will be a monument of their industry and devotion to religious education. The parsonage on Court Street and the infant schools at the north and south ends will also be completed next year. It is not probable that the Catholic Church will long confine Father Teeling's great executive ability to this parish. If he had a broad field in some Western State, he would make his mark upon the country."





For the first year the work went steadily on, but just as everything was most promising, in April, 1881, an event occurred which would have discouraged a less determined and less generous people. This was the destruction by fire of the pastor's former residence, which, though old and dilapidated, would have been made to do duty until the other undertakings that had been commenced could have been completed. Such was not to be, however, and once more the energy of pastor and people met the emergency, and immediate preparations were made for the erection of the present pastoral residence, to which, in August, 1882, the people so gladly welcomed their priests after the latter had been obliged to live for nearly a year and a half at quite an inconvenient distance from the church.

Notwithstanding the unfortunate event we have mentioned, such had been the progress that the Parochial Hall was ready and formally dedicated to religion, patriotism, poetry, music and good cheer on the natal anniversary of Ireland's great poet, Thomas Moore, May 28, 1881, when, at a social gathering there, his genius and patriotism were commemorated.

September, 1881, the beautiful chapel was completed and dedicated. Thenceforward work progressed with no interruption until the completion of all,—school-house, convent and parochial residence. The latter, as we have said, was occupied in August, 1882. Its cost was seven thousand dollars. Nine Sisters of Charity came from Kentucky the following week, and took possession of the house prepared for them by removing the Colby estate to the northeast side of the Parochial Hall, and there making such changes as were necessary to adapt it for a convent. The cost of this was four thousand dollars. The Sisters, who are known as Sisters of Charity of Nazareth, belong to an order founded in Kentucky in the year 1812 by three pious and charitable women, under the inspiration and direction of Catherine Spalding, a near relative of the famous Archbishop Spalding, of Baltimore. This was the first colony of the order that came east of Kentucky; but in the many cities of the West and South, where they have long had charge of schools, they have won an excellent reputation as teachers and disciplinarians. The schools opened under their charge Tuesday, September 5th, after celebration of Mass by Archbishop Williams.

Meanwhile, Father Gormley had been succeeded by another assistant, Rev. William A. Ryan, who came to Newburyport in June, 1881. Still another became necessary the following Christmas, and the present able and zealous priest, Rev. Murtagh E. Twomey, having been just ordained after a collegiate and seminary course, in which he achieved rare distinction, came to Newburyport. His services have been particularly valuable in the schools, the highest grade of the boys' department

being ever since entirely under his care. A depression in business, the closing of the Ocean Mill and consequent departure of some of the residents rendering a retrenchment necessary, Rev. Father Ryan's services had to be reluctantly dispensed with, and another position at the Church of the Assumption, Brookline, was assigned him.

Owing to the unexpectedly large number of pupils that sought the instruction of the Sisters, the number of the latter had to be increased by three, and others have since been added, so that there are now eighteen, having over seven hundred children in charge. For the benefit of the younger children living at the two extreme ends of the city, two of the city school-houses, which had become vacant, were leased September 19, 1883, for ten years, for the sum of fifty dollars a year.

A few months after this, April 28, 1884, the school, convent and parochial house were, under the name of the Immaculate Conception Educational Association, incorporated according to the laws of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts; and August 2d of the same year, under the special act of the Legislature for Roman Catholic Churches, the church and cemetery were incorporated under title of the Immaculate Conception Society of Newburyport.

In the early summer of 1886 the Wills estate, at the corner of Washington and Green Streets, having come into the market, it was deemed advisable to purchase it as a residence for the Sisters, whose number had outgrown the accommodations of the first convent provided for them. This purchase was made July 6, 1886, for the sum of eleven thousand two hundred and fifty dollars, and the Sisters, moved into their new home the next month. A portion of the first convent was then converted into school-rooms, the remainder into apartments for the meeting of a Literary and Musical Club connected with the church.

And thus have the Catholic religion and Catholic education progressed in Newburyport, until now their condition presents a most gratifying recompense to the people who have so earnestly and unselfishly worked for this advancement, and who now rejoice in beholding in them a strong bulwark against immorality and infidelity.

There are two churches in Newburyport which were originally seceders from the First Church in Newbury,—the First Religious Society and the First Presbyterian Church.

THE FIRST RELIGIOUS SOCIETY was organized in 1725, and settled Rev. John Lowell (Harvard 1721) in 1726. In 1735 it was formally set off by an act of the General Court. Mr. Lowell continued in the pastorate until his death, in 1767, and was succeeded by Rev. Thomas Cary (Harvard 1761) in 1768. Mr. Cary served twenty years, when Rev. John Andrews (Harvard 1786) was settled as his colleague, and succeeded him in the full pastorate on his death, which occurred November 24, 1808. Mr. Andrews continued





in the pastorate until 1830, and was succeeded by Rev. Thomas B. Fox (Harvard 1828), whose followers have been Rev. Thomas W. Higginson (Harvard 1841), Rev. Charles Bowen, Rev. A. B. Muzzey (Harvard 1824), Rev. George L. Stowell and Rev. D. W. Morehouse, who resigned in October, 1887. The first meeting-house of the society was in Market Square, and the present edifice on Pleasant Street was built in 1801.

THE FIRST PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH was formed out of the First Newbury Church, January 3, 1746. Nineteen members of that church had seceded, and for two years had worshipped in a small building on what is now High street, with Joseph Adams, a graduate of Harvard in 1742, as its officiating clergyman. On the 19th of March, 1746, Rev. Jonathan Parsons was installed and has been followed by Rev. John Murray, Rev. Daniel Dana, D.D., Rev. S. P. Williams, John Prouditt, D.D., Jonathan F. Stearns (Harvard 1830), A. S. Vermilye, R. H. Richardson, Charles F. Durfee, William W. Newell, Jr. (Harvard 1859), and Rev. Charles C. Wallace. The meeting-house occupied by the society was built in 1756, and Whitefield was buried in a vault under its pulpit.

THE FOURTH RELIGIOUS SOCIETY was incorporated in 1794 and made up of seceders from the First Presbyterian, who were dissatisfied with Rev. John Murray. They had built their present house of worship in 1793, and Rev. Charles W. Melton was installed March 20, 1794. Mr. Melton continued in the pastorate until his death, March 31, 1837, and was succeeded by Rev. Randolph Campbell in the same year whose assistant, I. H. Ross, was settled in 1877, and Rev. P. S. Hurlbert. Their church edifice was remodeled in 1899.

THE SECOND PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH was organized October 29, 1795, by seceders from the First Presbyterian, who were dissatisfied with the settlement of Rev. Daniel Dana. The first pastor was Rev. John Boddely, of Bristol, England, who died November 4, 1802, and was succeeded by Rev. John Giles, also an Englishman, who resigned in 1823. Rev. Wm. Ford followed in 1824 and Rev. Daniel Dana in 1825. In 1845 Dr. Dana resigned, and in 1846 Rev. W. W. Eels was settled, followed by several others, of whom Rev. J. A. Bartlett was settled in 1877, and was succeeded by the present pastor, Rev. Theodore Beigley.

THE NORTH CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH was formed in 1768 and incorporated as the "Third Religious Society of Newburyport." Its first members were persons who left the First Church at the time of the settlement of Rev. Thomas Cary. The secession, which was due to the liberal sentiments of Mr. Cary and of those who supported him, was entirely harmonious, as is shown by the vote of the old church passed January 18, 1768, to divide the church plate and stock between the seceding and remaining brethren. Rev. Christopher Bridge Marsh (Harvard 1761) was settled October 19, 1768, and was followed,

after an interval of four years from his death, which occurred December 3, 1773, by Rev. Samuel Spring, who was ordained in August, 1777. Dr. Spring died March 4, 1819, and was succeeded by Rev. Luther F. Dimmick, D.D., December 8th in the same year. Rev. E. C. Hooker succeeded December 11, 1860, who left at the end of four years and was succeeded by Rev. W. A. McGinly in 1865, by Rev. James Powell in 1869 and by Rev. Charles R. Seymour and Rev. Charles P. Mills. The meeting-house of this society, built in 1769, was burned in 1861, and at once rebuilt on the old site.

THE BELLEVILLE CHURCH was incorporated in 1808 under the name of the "Fourth Religious Society" in Newbury, and was originally set off as a separate parish in 1761. At first this society occupied the old Queen Anne's Chapel, and in 1763 built a place of worship of its own. Rev. Oliver Noble was settled in 1762 and served until 1784. After an interval of twenty-four years without a settled minister, Rev. James Miltimore was settled in 1808. He was succeeded in 1832 by Rev. J. C. March, a native of Newburyport, who remained until his death, in September, 1846. The Rev. Daniel T. Fisk was ordained in 1847 and resigned during the last summer. Rev. Willis A. Hadley has since accepted a call. The house of worship of the society stands on the site occupied by the old one, which was struck by lightning and burned in 1846.

THE GREEN STREET BAPTIST is an outgrowth of the Baptist Church which was formed in 1804 and organized in the next year. Rev. Joshua Chase preached for a short time and was followed late in 1805 by Rev. John Peak. Rev. Hosea Wheeler succeeded Mr. Peak in 1818 and was followed by Nathaniel Williams, Wm. B. Jacobs, Jonathan Aldrich, Albert N. Arnold and Nicholas Medbury, when it ceased to exist. In 1809 a brick meeting-house was built on Liberty Street, which was burned in the fire of 1811. In 1812 the building on Congress Street, afterwards occupied by the Christian Society, was built. The Green Street Society was organized in 1846 with the Rev. Nicholas Medbury, of the old society, as its pastor, and the meeting-house now in use was erected in 1848. There were dissensions and secessions in the old organization, but the present society has closed and healed all former divisions. Its pastors since Mr. Medbury have been Revs. John Richardson, J. R. Lane, J. T. Beckley and Eugene E. Thomas.

THE PURCHASE STREET METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH, called the "People's Church," had its origin in the labors of Rev. John Adams, who in 1819 collected a congregation which, until 1825, was connected with the Salisbury Conference. In 1825 Newburyport was made a station and placed under the charge of Mr. Adams. In the same year a meeting-house was built on Purchase Street. In 1826 Rev. Bartholomew Othman was appointed to the station. The present pastor is Rev. F. K. Stratton.



THE WASHINGTON ST. METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH was organized June 20, 1827, and a meeting-house on Liberty Street was built in the same year. Rev. Bartholomew Othman was its first pastor. Its present house of worship is on Washington Street, and its pastor is Rev. W. A. Manaton.

THE UNIVERSALIST SOCIETY was organized Dec. 26, 1834. Its meeting-house on Middle Street was dedicated in 1840. Its pastors have been William M. Fernold, Darius Forbes, Edwin A. Easton, James Shrigley, A. R. Abbot, Daniel M. Reed, Willard Spaulding and J. H. Hartley.

THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH was organized May 7, 1840, and Rev. Daniel P. Pike was settled as its first minister. In 1845 a meeting-house was built on Court Street, which is now owned by the Catholic Church. The old Baptist Church on Congress Street was afterwards purchased and is now occupied by this society.

THE SECOND ADVENT CHURCH was organized in December, 1848, under Rev. John Pearson, Jr. After meeting several years in Washington Hall, the society built its present handsome edifice on Charter Street.

THE WHITEFIELD CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH was organized January 1, 1850. Rev. John E. Emerson was ordained its first pastor, but died a little more than a year after his settlement. Rev. Samuel J. Spaulding, D.D., succeeded him, followed by Rev. Henry E. Mott. The meeting-house of this society was built in 1852.

THE SEVENTH-DAY ADVENTISTS were organized in 1877.

A more minute history of the churches is impracticable within the limited space to which this narrative must be confined, and after reference has been made to the schools, the Public Library, to other organizations not yet spoken of, and the press, this necessarily incomplete history of Newburyport must be brought to a close.

According to the last report of the School Committee, the number of children in the city of school age was 2513, and the number in the public schools 1783. For the instruction of these children seventeen schools are furnished. These are the Brown and Girls' High School, with one principal and three assistants, and an average attendance of 98; the Kelley School, one principal and seven assistants, with an average attendance of 282; the Jackman Boys' Grammar School, one principal and one assistant and an average attendance of 56; the Johnson Girls' Grammar School, one principal and one assistant and an average attendance of 64; the Bromfield Street Girls' Grammar School, one principal and one assistant, with an average attendance of 52; the Currier Boys' Grammar School, one principal and one assistant and an average attendance of 55; the Forrester Street Girls' Grammar School, one principal and one assistant and an average attendance of 59; the Plains

Mixed Grammar and Primary School, one principal and an average attendance of 25; the Moultonville Mixed Grammar and Primary School, one principal and an average attendance of 28; the Bromfield Street Primary School, one principal and one assistant and an average attendance of 55; the Jackman Boys' Primary School, one principal and one assistant and an average attendance of 56; the Johnson Girls' Primary School, one principal and one assistant and an average attendance of 58; the Temple Street Girls' Primary School, one principal and an average attendance of 23; the Davenport Boys' Primary School, one principal and one assistant and an average attendance of 42; the Davenport Girls' Primary School, one principal and an average attendance of 26; the Kent Street Mixed Primary School, one principal and an average attendance of 29; and the Ashland Street Mixed Primary School, one principal and one assistant and an average attendance of 75.

For the support of these schools an appropriation of twenty thousand dollars was made in 1886, but this sum does not represent the cost of their maintenance, as the income of several funds is devoted to that purpose, among which are the Putnam and Brown funds, already referred to, for the support of the Putnam Free School and the Brown High School, both of which are now merged in the Boys' and Girls' High School.

In 1856 the Public Library was founded by a gift of five thousand dollars from Hon. Josiah Little. This fund has been increased from time to time by gifts already described, and finally the library was established on a permanent basis by the gift of the Tracy mansion, to which reference has been made. The number of books in the library at the time of the last report, in 1886, was twenty-three thousand eight hundred and thirty-three. In connection with the library there is a free public reading-room, which is fully performing its part in making that institution an educating and elevating influence in the community.

The local press of Newburyport consists of the *Weekly Herald*, published on Fridays, the *Daily Herald* and the *Merrimac Valley Visitor*. The first newspaper started here was *The Essex Journal and Merrimac Packet, or the Massachusetts and New Hampshire General Advertiser*, by Thomas & Tinges, of which Isaiah Thomas was the senior partner. The first number was dated December 4th in that year. On Friday, June 30, 1775, its name was changed to *Essex Journal, or the Massachusetts and New Hampshire General Advertiser*. On the 4th of August, 1775, it was changed to *Essex Journal, or New Hampshire Packet*, and November 1, 1776, it was again changed to *Essex Journal, or New Hampshire Packet and the Weekly Advertiser*. The *Impartial Herald*, a Federal paper, was started in 1793 and was the parent of the present *Newburyport Herald*. The first number was issued May 17, 1793, and consisted of four pages of





four narrow columns each, and the price was nine shillings per year. It was published on Saturdays, in Market Square, "opposite the southeast corner of Mr. Andrews' meeting-house." The two proprietors were Edward M. Blunt and Howard S. Robinson. Mr. Blunt was the author of the "Coast Pilot," and served his apprenticeship with John Mycall, the successor of Isaiah Thomas in the *Essex Journal*. Angier March succeeded Mr. Robinson and became a partner of Mr. Blunt in 1794. On the 16th of December in that year the *Herald* became a semi-weekly and continued such until Friday, June 6, 1879, when it became again a weekly. On the 6th of November, 1795, the office was removed to Mr. Blunt's bookstore on State Street. On the 24th of September, 1796, Mr. Blunt retired and left Mr. March the sole proprietor. The price, which since Mr. March joined Mr. Blunt had been twelve shillings, was now fixed at two dollars and fifty cents per year. On the 31st of October, 1797, William Barrett became associated with Mr. March and the paper called the *Political Gazette*, which he had started on the 30th of April in that year, was merged in the *Impartial Herald*, under the name of the *Newburyport Herald and Country Gazette*. On the 22d of December, 1797, the partnership was dissolved and Mr. March returned to his old quarters. On the 29th of November, 1798, he removed again to State Street and there remained until December 31, 1799, when he removed to the north corner of Market Square.

On the 1st of April, 1800, the price was raised to three dollars, and from April 11, 1800, to October 17, 1800, it was published by Chester Stebbins for the proprietor. On the 4th of August, 1801, Mr. March retired, the office having been previously removed to the south side of Market Square. The new proprietors were Ephraim W. Allen and Jeremy Stickney, who had been publishing a paper called the *American Intelligencer*, which was merged in the *Herald*. Their office was on Middle Street until December 4th, when it was moved to No. 7 State Street. On the 15th of June, 1802, Mr. Stickney retired, selling his interest to John Barnard, who remained until July 8, 1803, leaving Mr. Allen the sole proprietor, as he continued during most of the time until 1834. At the time of the fire his office was on Middle Street, and was burned. Until December 13, 1811, Mr. Allen occupied a temporary office on Merrimac Street at Brown's wharf. His next removal was to No. 16 State Street in December, 1811, where the *Herald* has remained up to the present time.

Mr. Allen, at various times, had as associates Henry R. Stickney, his brother William B. Allen and his two sons, William S. Allen and Jeremiah S. Allen. On the 1st of June, 1832, Mr. Allen started the *Daily Herald*. In 1834 the whole establishment was sold to Joseph B. Morse and William H. Brewster, who conducted it until January 1, 1854, when the *Daily Evening Union*, which had for five years

been a competitor of the *Herald*, was united with it, and its proprietor, William H. Huse, became part proprietor of the *Herald*. In 1856 Messrs. Morse and Brewster retired, and William H. Huse & Co. became the sole proprietors. Since 1856 Mr. Huse has had associated with him George J. L. Colby, from 1856 to 1862; J. Q. A. Stone, from 1856 to 1859; George Wood, from 1859 to 1866; John Coombs, from 1862 to 1871, and Arthur L. Huse and Caleb B. Huse from 1859 to the present time, and Arthur L. Huse from 1871 to the present time. In 1880 a *Daily Evening Herald* was started, and the establishment now issues a *Weekly Herald* on Fridays, at \$1.50 per year; a *Daily Herald* at \$6.00 per year, and an *Evening Herald* at one cent for each paper. The *Daily Herald* was the first daily paper in Massachusetts outside of Boston, and has always maintained a reputation for enterprise and for intelligent management.

The *Merrimac Valley Visitor* was established in 1872 and is published every Saturday by Colby & Coombs, with George J. L. Colby as editor. During the life of the *Herald* many papers have appeared and disappeared, but the *Visitor*, under its able management, long since found a firm footing and has established itself as a permanent enterprise.

Of the organizations not yet mentioned, now in existence, there is the Cushing Guard (Company A of the Eighth Regiment). This company was originally organized October 24, 1775, as the Newburyport Artillery Company. In 1844 its name was changed to the Washington Light Guard, and in 1852, in honor of Hon. Caleb Cushing, it was changed to the Cushing Guard. Its service in the war has been already referred to.

There is also Company B of the Eighth Regiment, called the "City Cadets," which did service also during the war.

In addition to the above is the "Newburyport Veteran Artillery Association," composed of men above thirty-five years of age. It was organized August 1, 1854, by ex-members of the Newburyport Artillery Company.

It will be proper to mention also among the organizations, Post 49 of the Grand Army of the Republic, named in honor of Capt. Albert W. Bartlett, who commanded the Cushing Guard in the War of the Rebellion, and also the Newburyport Commandery of Knights Templar, instituted in 1795 and chartered in 1808; the King Cyrus Chapter, Royal Arch Masons, instituted A.L. 5790; the St. Mark's Lodge, instituted A.L. 5803; and the St. John's Lodge, instituted A. L. 5766.

Odd Fellowship was inaugurated in Newburyport, March 7, 1844, and now has the Merrimac Encampment, No. 7, the Quasacacunquen Lodge, No. 39, and the Canton Harmony, No. 47, Patriarch Militant. There are also among the organizations and institutions the Merrimac Humane Society, incorporated in 1804; the Howard Benevolent Society, instituted in



1818; the General Charitable Society, organized in 1850; the Royal Arcanum Council, No. 112; the United Order of the Golden Cross; the Newburyport Lodge, No. 512, Knights of Honor; the Knights and Ladies of Honor, Harbor Lodge, No. 260; the American Legion of Honor; the Ancient Order of United Workmen, Merrimac Lodge, No. 31; the United Order of Pilgrim Fathers, George Whitefield Colony, No. 68; the Improved Order of Red Men; Monomack Tribe, No. 22; the Mountain Hill Lodge, No. 45 (a temperance organization); the Woman's Temperance Union; the Union Division Sons of Temperance; the Young Men's Christian Association; the Newburyport Mutual Benefit Association; the Newburyport Bethel Society; the Old Ladies' Home; the Garfield Associates; the Anne Jacques Hospital; the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals; the Freedman Aid Society; the Merrimac Bible Society; the Women's Christian Association; the Newburyport Female Charitable Society; and the Father Lennon Benevolent Association.

No sketch of Newburyport could make any claim to completeness without a reference to the literary character of its people and to the writers in poetry and prose which it has developed. Few towns have manifested a love of home so strongly as that which characterizes the natives of that city, and the columns of its press show that they never tire of recalling memories of the past and of the men who distinguished it. The out-spring of this love is always and everywhere discovered in a sentiment which finds its most fitting expression in verse, and in the city on the shores of the Merrimac, with a surrounding scenery which lends its inspiring aid, we find no exception to the rule. Though the list of writers and poets is long, it is worthy of a place in this record. Caleb Cushing and George Lunt and John Pierpont have been already referred to; but to these must be added the names of Susie W. Moulton, Hannah F. Gould, William W. Caldwell, Harriet Prescott Spofford, Albert Pike, Robert S. Coffin, Samuel L. Knapp, George D. Wildes, Foster Sweetser, George Bancroft Griffith, Henry C. Knight, Frederick Knight, Anne G. Hale, Ann E. Porter, Lucy Hooper, Anna Cabot Lowell, Mrs. George Lee, Daniel Dana, Thomas Tracy, O. B. Merrill, S. J. Spaulding, Mrs. E. Vale Smith and James Parton, a son of Newburyport by adoption.

The population of Newburyport by the census of 1885 was 13,716, and its valuation in 1886 was \$5,523,113. The expenditures for 1886 were \$167,666.26, and the debt of the city on the 18th of December of that year was \$384,243.46. The city property, at the same date, amounted to \$331,100, made up of the following items: real estate, \$94,400; school-houses, \$97,500; engine-houses, \$12,600; personal property, \$126,600.

With these few statistics, this history of Newburyport must be brought to a close. Its many imperfec-

tions must be attributed to the fact that its author was not to the manor born, and has consequently encountered obstacles which it was by no means easy for a stranger to overcome.

NOTE.—The writer wishes to acknowledge the aid he has received in the preparation of this history from Hon. John James Currier, both personally and as executor of the will of the late Benj. Perley Poore; from William H. Huse, Esq., editor of the *Newburyport Herald*, and from the files of that journal; from Hon. Eben F. Stone and Hon. R. S. Spofford, of Newburyport, and from George H. Stevens, Esq., the city clerk of Newburyport. W. T. D.

Plymouth, November 8, 1887.

## BIOGRAPHICAL.

### HON. WILLIAM BARTLET.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Bartlet spelled his name with one t. He said there was no use in making two letters where one would do as well; but as there have been several ways of spelling it, that is of little consequence. He was a great man and a good man, one of the greatest and best that Newburyport, so rich in distinguished citizens, ever produced. He was great physically; great mentally; great morally; great in his conceptions and his power of executing his designs, having courage where ordinary men would have failed; great in his influence and in his manner of perpetuating that influence to succeeding generations, aye, adown the ages. All this will appear in any sketch of his life that does justice to the man. He was of gigantic form, endurance and strength. Tall, over-topping the average man by half a foot; full-chested, broad shouldered, firm-set, sinewy, weighing—as we call him to mind—about two hundred and fifty pounds. He moved lion-like among the crowd, not arrogant or proud, but seemingly as conscious of his ability as Napoleon was in riding into battle.

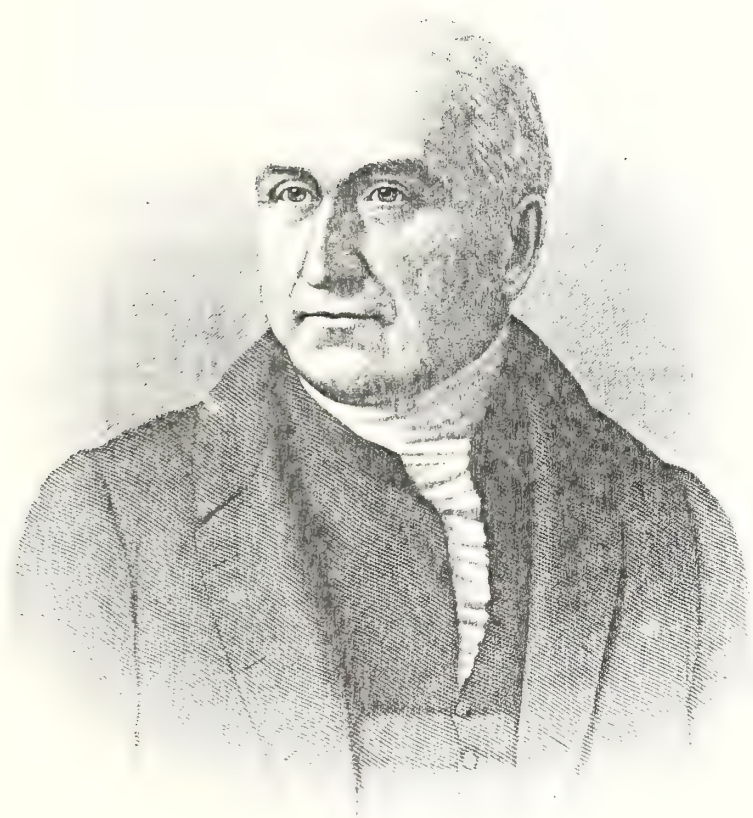
Thus William Bartlet could be and do, since he was born an athlete. Knowing him only in his old age, it seems to us as though he never was an infant, never had seen an hour of weakness. He was descended from the old Norman knights of the era of the Crusades; from the men who followed William the Conqueror into England, to give to that island, to be the cradle of the modern Romans, new life and new laws, new government and a new destiny; creating for them that high place in history they have so nobly filled; moving them on to the empire so vast that the sun never sets upon it, whose morning and evening drum-beat is heard around the globe; which empire may yet, for aught that now appears, hold universal dominion. The grand army that conquered the world under Alexander the Great marched eastward, and have died; the Anglo-Normans marched west to greater victories, for they found other worlds to conquer.

The name Bartlet was originally Bartelot; and the

<sup>1</sup> By George J. L. Colby.











first of the family in England, like the first man in the creation of the world, was named Adam; and as the human race dates not back of Adam, it is not well to go deeper into the mists of antiquity, for this family, than to Adam Bartlet or Bartlett. He, with sixty thousand other followers of the Conqueror, the Norman knights and their vassals, had the promise of the spoils of victory; and from 1066, when the battle of Hastings was fought, the barons of England love to date their honors and names. In the pavement of the old stone church, on the ancestral estate of seven thousand acres, in Sussex County, in England, the Bartlets can trace their genealogy—the foot-prints of a noble family. It is one of the finest estates in Great Britain; has been in their hands more than eight hundred years, and can never be sold or pass from them. Their coat-of-arms witnesses to the heroic deeds of men whose portraits hang in the halls of that ancient castle; whose Christian names are the inherited appellations in our own country and age, as William, Edmund, Richard, John and Thomas—the names they brought over the seas and have transmitted.

The first Bartlet immigrants in America were three,—the sons of Edmund, whose landed estate was in Ernley, which, by the law of primogeniture, passed to their brother Edmund, and left them—Richard, John and Thomas—to inferiority or to make to themselves new homes elsewhere. They came to America in 1634. Thomas settled in Watertown and left no sons. John and Richard came to Newbury in 1635, with the first settlers; and two years later they had left the banks of the Parker and settled at "Bartlet Cove," in a beautiful bend of the Merrimac, nearly opposite the Powow, as it empties into the Merrimac. There they built themselves houses, and there their descendants have lived to this day. John had but one son, and Richard had three, with several daughters. It is with the latter and those of his lineage that we have to do.

Richard Bartlet, the shoemaker, was a man of sterling character and marked piety; and his son, Richard, Jr., was one of the leading men of the town; for several years Representative in the General Court.

A third Richard, son of Richard, Jr., born in 1649, married Hannah Emery; and as the Emerys have always been thrifty, she may have added to his real estate. Certainly she did to his personal estate, for she bore him ten children,—eight sons and two daughters, the latter beginning and ending the brood. Her last son was Thomas, and a grandson of that Thomas was the Hon. William Bartlet, whose portrait we here give. He was born in 1748, and died in his ninety-fourth year; but his "eye was not dim, nor his natural force abated."

Already the Bartlets had become numerous and some of them distinguished. They had learning, energy, piety and patriotism. One of them, Samuel,

on the first intimation of the outbreak against Governor Andros, mounted his horse, started for Boston, and was there in time to participate in the arrest and imprisonment of the obnoxious chief magistrate. It is a tradition that he rode so fast that his long sword, dragging over the ground, left a stream of fire all the way.

Another was the celebrated Josiah Bartlet, from Stephen, the seventh son of Richard and Hannah Emery, a man of varied attainments. He stood in the first rank of his profession as a physician and was the founder of the Medical Society in New Hampshire, where he lived; was a member of the Legislature and of Congress; was the last President and the first Governor of the State; was a signer of the Declaration of Independence and a colonel in the Revolutionary army, serving with General John Starke; was a judge in the Inferior and Supreme Courts and chief justice of the State.

But had the family made no record before, General William F. Bartlet, by his daring in the late inter-State war, would have redeemed them all. A student in Harvard when the bugle sounded, summoning the citizens to defend the Union and its flag, he at once enlisted and became a captain in the Twentieth Massachusetts Regiment. Before Yorktown, Va., a rifle-shot required the amputation of one leg. Six months later he was again in the field, colonel of the Fifty-ninth Regiment, and at Port Hudson, leading the assault, the only man on horseback, and therefore in the most hazardous position, he was again disabled by a shot in the wrist. A truce being declared to bury the dead, the first inquiry of the Confederate officer was, "Who was that man on horseback?" Being told, he said, "He is a gallant fellow; a brave man; the bravest and most daring we have met during the war. We thought him too brave to die, and ordered our men not to fire at him!" Recovering from his wound, he was again in the field, colonel of the Fifty-second Regiment; was promoted to a brigadier-general; captured in assaulting the enemy's works at Petersburg; shut up in Libby Prison three months, and at the close of the war found him in command of the Ninth Corps, in Virginia. He was a soldier, a scholar and an orator; magnetic in word and action.

Having glanced at the heroism of the Bartlets in war, we turn to their acts in peace, and these well prove that "peace hath its victories as well as war." We have stated their leading traits of character, thrift, enterprise, intelligence, piety and personal daring. They have been the accumulators of property. It is their inherited tendency, though, like all transmitted faculties, it may not appear in every individual. Their intelligence comes from the high culture of the family for a thousand years, and beyond that to where the record reaches not. In America more than a hundred of them graduated from our colleges, and seven lineal descendants from Richard Bartlet have been judges



in the courts of New Hampshire alone; and it has been so in all the learned professions. They have always been religiously inclined, and not one of them more than William Bartlet, whose convictions were strong, and who freely gave thousands and hundreds of thousands of dollars for religious purposes. This, too, has come down in the blood, the names of four of them in England, who suffered martyrdom for their faith, being given in Fox's "Book of Martyrs." For personal daring they have done no discredit at any time to him whose name is in the Battle Abbey roll, or those who won the honors indicated by their "coat-of-arms."

And now we come more particularly to William, the merchant, born in the eighteenth century, and living to the full age of ninety-three years. He was of comparatively poor parents, and of little education; but nature had done much for him, giving him what art cannot create—a level head, quick perception, sound judgment, and, what was more and better, a good heart, backed by a predominant will, which secured to him honesty and honor in his dealings.

We find him first with his father, learning the art of making shoes. He served his seven years' apprenticeship, and then, at the demand of his father, six months more to make up any lost time. That was what apprentices then did under strict and "hard" masters. Perhaps it was here that he learned how to treat his own children, in whom he would not permit the least disobedience of orders, and absolutely removed his son William from the command of one of his ships because he went beyond orders, though he thereby made a prosperous voyage. The making or losing was not a question with him, but strict construction of orders and energy in the performance of duty. When he reached manhood "he stuck to his last," his lapstone and his awl, and long years after, when he had done with them, he preserved them as memorials of young and happy days. There was then no discussion of the hours of labor, and the holidays were few and far between.

So great was his industry, in his humble occupation, that the first sunbeams found him on his "seat," the noonday saw him running to and from his dinner, for he could not stop to walk, and the night hours were struck high by the clock before he went to rest. A person of less physical power and a lower ambition might have broken down and died, but he was ever fresh for another day. By his savings at "cobbling" he soon had a little money to invest in small matters, within arm's reach, for trade.

This was the beginning of the man, afterwards the greatest merchant Newburyport ever had, surpassed by none of his time in Massachusetts, unless William Grey, of Salem, and later of Boston, might have been the single exception. He gave away and lost at sea more property than any estate probated in the county of Essex to that date, and still was a millionaire, when there were not so many millionaires in the

whole country as can now be found in San Francisco alone, upon which an American eye had then never rested. So busy was this man, so indefatigable in his labors, that in a hundred years, save seven, he never, but once, was seventy miles from the house in which he was born. He had no time to travel, when his ships were in every quarter of the globe; their cargoes were piled in the stores of the leading seaports of Europe, America, the East and West Indies; and his name so familiar in Amsterdam or London that his credit would have been good with the English and Dutch bankers for a half-million.

But we are running ahead of our story. As soon as he was able, he tried an "adventure" at sea. An "adventure" was a small parcel of goods that a seaman or officer on a ship might carry free. That brought him profit, and he took the return home on a wheel-barrow. There was no "quarter" for a drayman when he could do the work himself. Next he purchased a part of a vessel, and then a whole one, and finally fleets of shipping that were bringing iron and hemp from Russia, carrying tallow from the Baltic to the Thames, coffee by the million pounds and sugar by the cargo from the East Indies to Antwerp, when that was a great centre of trade; salt from Cadiz to America, and molasses, coffee and other merchandise from the West Indies, South America and other parts of the world to his stores, which were first on the Long wharf, which he made longer by building further into the channel, now called Bartlet Wharf, at the foot of Federal Street, and then others below were added, covering the whole river-front, till he included the Coombs Wharf, below Lime Street. At one time he had three full ship-loads of coffee in Holland and two more in Boston, and two of tallow in London. His stores were full of hemp and iron, and other evidences of his great wealth and business. The government decreed non-intercourse, embargoes and war, but they did not check his enterprise, exhaust his funds or shake his credit. Something may be learned of the man and the extent of his business by the depredations made upon his shipping by European belligerents in the last century and early in this, for which he had claims, some of which were paid, and some are held by his heirs to-day. His claims on France, prior to 1800, were \$180,000; on Denmark, before 1812, \$173,000; on England, before the War of 1812-15, \$198,000. Here is a total against three governments for losses of ships and cargoes valued at \$551,000. Other claims he had against Naples, Spain and Norway, which, without counting interest, would swell the whole to \$650,000; but the exact sums against the three last-named countries we cannot give. More or less, they did not daunt him or impede his action.

Mr. Bartlet's largest loss was that of the ship "Rose," Capt. William Chase, on her passage from Surinam for Newburyport, with sugar, cotton, dyewoods and other merchandise—captured by the French privateer "L'Egypt Conquise," after a gal-





lant defense of nearly two hours. That was in 1799. The "Rose" was two hundred and fifty-six tons burden, and carried seven heavy guns. The privateer was larger, with more guns and more men. Capt. Chase was wounded early in the engagement. The mate continued the defense, and even after the enemy had boarded, refused to surrender, and was literally cut to pieces on his own deck. Two seamen were killed, two fatally wounded and thirteen injured before her flag came down. She was sent to Gaudaloupe and confiscated. Her loss was one hundred and three thousand dollars. Another captured was the ship "Hesper," John N. Cushing, master, who later in life was himself the first merchant and the largest ship-owner in town. He was from Russia, loaded with hemp and iron, for Newburyport, and the vessel and cargo were valued at seventy-eight thousand dollars. Many of the names of Mr. Bartlet's captains are still familiar, as Joseph Tyler, who lived on Lime Street; John Goon, on Federal Street; William Chase, on Temple Street; Dennis Condry, on High Street; Israel Young, on Greene Street; Sewall Toppan, at the north end; Hector Coffin, on State Street; Stephen Holland, John Bailey, Friend Dole; John March, father of the late pastor of the Belleville Church; William Wheelwright, in the "Rising Empire," lost near the river La Plata, in South America, which carried him to his great mission in that quarter of the world; and Ambrose White, who sailed the "Potomac," the last ship Mr. Bartlet sent to sea.

Mr. Bartlet by no means confined his operations to the seas. He was greatly interested in agriculture, made it a study, and took delight in his garden and fields in the town, and at one time owned one of the finest farms in Essex County, at Methuen. He was also largely in manufactures; was the proprietor of the mills in Byfield, which manufactured the first cotton cloth in the United States, where every part of the work was done under one roof. Later, in 1794, it had the first act of incorporation in the State for a wooden-mill, and there was made flannels and broad cloth. The capital invested was fifty thousand dollars, and when the other proprietors could no longer sustain the losses in this experiment, he bought out the original holders and sold the property to other parties who would continue it. Later he was an owner in all the cotton-mills built in Newburyport; and it is doubtful if there ever would have been one here, but for his enthusiasm in that direction causing him to invest two hundred thousand dollars in those works. When the Bartlet Mill, No. 1, was erected, he was told that the directors counted upon his subscription for ten thousand dollars. His reply was, "Very well; you can make it twenty thousand." Later when Mill No. 2 was commenced, the work dragged for want of funds, and might have been abandoned had not General James, the superintendent, asked of the directors a delay on the

vote for a half an hour, till he could see Mr. Bartlet, then in his ninety-third year. Within the half-hour he returned with Mr. Bartlet's subscription for fifty thousand dollars, and his check for the money. As old as he was, he had lost none of his mental vigor; and was an example to men of twenty-three or fifty-three, "the noblest Roman of them all;" ever ready, even to the time when other men would have been making preparations for death, to do what he could for the benefit of his town, his country and the world. H. realized that the best preparation for another life was usefulness in this life.

In all public matters he proved himself the man of men, when Newburyport had hosts of other sons and citizens to honor every business and profession. When it was proposed, in 1798, that the town should present the federal government with a ship of war, he was with the foremost in building the frigate "Merrimac;" when piers were needed for the harbor, he loosed his purse strings; when light-houses were called for on Plum Island, before the government had assumed their care, his donation was so large that the town voted "that William Bartlet appoint the light tender." When a bridge was needed over the river, at Deer Island, he was down among the largest subscribers to its stock; and when he saw the value of the Merrimac River to Newburyport, ere the government expended money on it, or the people appreciated the facts, about 1816, William Bartlet, Moses Brown and John Pettingill were incorporated "for clearing the river and locking the falls," to the stock of which he pledged largely. Had he succeeded in making others see the importance of the matter, as he with prophetic eye foresaw, Newburyport to-day would have held the first rank among the cities of Massachusetts, standing next to Boston. To go over all that he did or proposed to do would require a large volume, but he hesitated at nothing which would advance the interests of his native town or the State in which he lived or the country in which he gloried. As to individuals, he was ever ready to help those who would help themselves. The idle, the dissipated, or those who by dishonest means would rob honest labor of its due, he held in contempt, and for them had little money. He closed his heart and his hand to the loafers and vagabonds. If they died, let them die; it would make more room for those who deserved to live.

He had no time for politics, though he was an intense Federalist.

The only office he ever held, that required his attention out of town, was when a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1820. In local affairs he sometimes took an active part, especially on financial questions, and often named the sums voted in the annual assessment. A little incident will illustrate the humorous side of his character. He had complained of the bad condition of Federal Street, on which he lived, which displeased the former sur-



veyor's friends, who nominated William Bartlet surveyor of the highways, not expecting or desiring that he would accept. He turned their joke into a grim reality, when he promptly accepted, and with his usual energy at once entered upon duty, spending every cent of the appropriation on Federal Street. So thorough was the work, that in forty years thereafter it did not require forty dollars for repairs. This, however, was his usual mode of action—to do so well and so strong, that nothing more would be needed in his day. His house in which he lived is a specimen, and his brick store on the wharf cost as much in its foundations as the building above the ground. Time may eat into its walls, but its foundations will surprise the man who strikes them a thousand years hence, should they not be broken up before, as do the underlyings of the ancient ruins of Roman structures.

Economy is a virtue, though the prodigal and thoughtless often mistake it for a crime. William Bartlet, born to labor and never excelled in industry, was for himself economical in all his expenditures; but he was munificent and magnificent in his gifts for public and religious purposes. He never belonged to a church, nor did he rely upon what he could do, or think, or say for salvation hereafter. He held to the Calvinistic creed in all its fullness; was the personal friend of his pastor at the North Church, Rev. Dr. Spring; and afterwards a liberal supporter of worship at the First Presbyterian Church, in which he placed the large, beautiful and costly cenotaph to the famous George Whitefield, whom he had heard preach in his youth. By his religious feelings—a sense of duty that a rich man owes to the world—he donated largely to associations of Christian endeavor and to the spread of virtuous and Christian principles everywhere. In his donations and bequests he surpassed any other man who had preceded him or has succeeded him in the town, as much as he did in wealth or business. He gave to Andover Seminary not less than a quarter of a million of dollars, and his donations were chiefly unsolicited. He suggested, in anticipation, that such and such things be done, and backed his propositions with his money. He was one of the three founders of the Seminary (not one of them, by the way, a member of any church at the time) and made it the object of his care and love. He was its first, oldest and longest-continued friend, its largest benefactor, its most constant supporter. He also made liberal donations to the Harvard Divinity School, to Williams College and to Amherst; was one of the vice-presidents of the American Education Society, and by his own contributions was made a director for life. He was one of the originators of the American Board for Foreign Missions and his name stands alone in the preamble to the act of incorporation. He was present at the first meeting of the prudential committee in 1810; and in 1815 the board voted special thanks to him "for his distinguished liberality." For three years he was the first

vice-president of the American Tract Society and its generous patron. He was likewise a leading temperance man, steadily for the cause, with voice or purse, when it was fashionable for all classes to drink spirituous liquors. In fact, William Bartlet was ready to assist any religious or benevolent institutions that commended themselves to his good judgment, and he did actually expend not less than three hundred thousand dollars for their benefit.

Having carefully considered and studied the life, acts and character of William Bartlet, though no biography of him, we regret to say, has ever been written, we finally conclude that in strength of mind and will for the execution of its purposes, he was not excelled by any man who has lived in the town; that he was more wealthy than any other citizen and more liberal than any other; that from the least means, by his own industry and perseverance, he was the most successful merchant, as he was the most public-spirited; that he was not only pure in his morals, a model of integrity, but if faith in God and love for man be a test of character, he was a Christian as well as a gentleman; that he did not throw around his money loosely in wild endeavors to make everybody as rich as himself may not have satisfied the insane desires of some, but would God that he would vouchsafe more men like William Bartlet, to Newburyport! He sleeps his last sleep in Oak Hill Cemetery.

#### MOSES BROWN.<sup>1</sup>

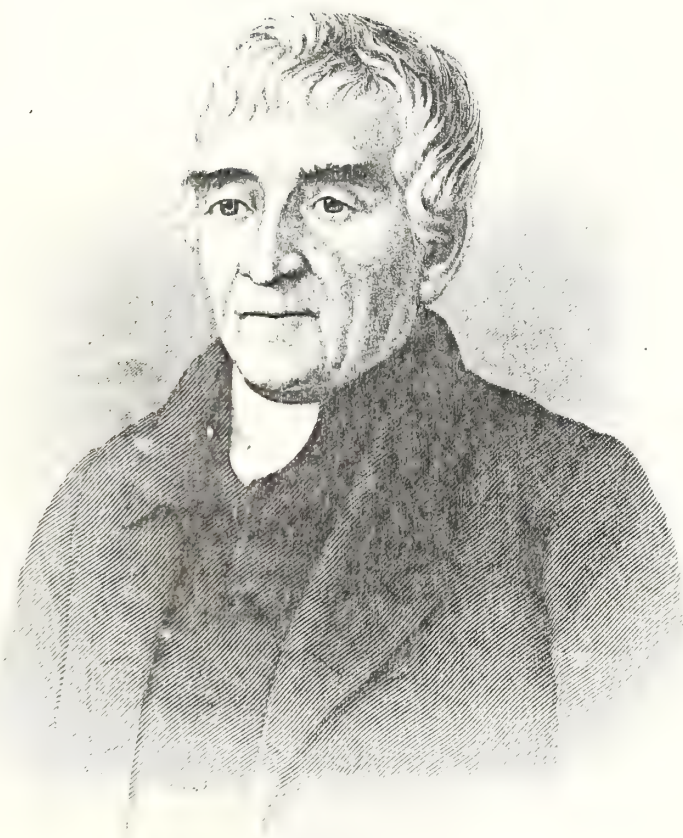
Moses Brown was one of those good men, accumulating and expending as his generous soul prompted, living for the good of others as much as himself. He was born in West Newbury in 1742, one of the five children of Joseph and Abigail (Hill) Brown near Brown's Springs, on the main road from Newburyport to Haverhill. The farm on which he labored in his youth still remains in the possession of the family. The house is a large, old-fashioned frame building,—a farm-house, where for scores of years the country teams from the north as far as Canada, sometimes a hundred a day, passed to Newburyport, then a great port for shipments, and would, more or less, put up. In the next house eastward lived the Feltons, a family which sent three sons into the world seldom equaled in modern times, and who would have given fame to a whole State. One was president of Harvard College; another was the greatest lawyer that ever entered a court-house in California; and the third, still living in Pennsylvania, is a railroad magnate.

At the time of Moses Brown's birth this section was famous for the manufacture of wagons and chaises; and Moses Brown learned the art of carriage-building. On reaching his majority he established himself in that business at Newburyport, and the first work he was called to do, was repairing a

<sup>1</sup> By George J. L. Colby.











carriage for the Hon. Tristram Dalton, living on State Street, opposite the "Wolfe Tavern," in an elegant mansion. Mr. Dalton was a high-toned gentleman of influence, wealth and learning—perhaps the most cultivated man in the town. At a later day he was elected Senator, the first from Massachusetts in the Federal Congress, and became the close and trusted friend of President Washington. Mr. Dalton invited Moses Brown into the house, where he, born of poor parents and to hard work, amazed at the rich furniture, the elegant pictures on the walls, the abundance of books, and other magnificent surroundings, almost lost himself in wonder and delight; nor was he less pleased in going to the carriage-house, at the neatness of the premises, the beauty of the flowers, uttering their morning prayers in their odors rising heavenward, and the acres of fruit and shade-trees imported from Europe. If he ever knew envy at the better condition of another man it was then, when he picked up the shafts of the carriage, and drew it by hand to his work-shop, for he said to a friend: "If I ever have the means and the opportunity, the Dalton house would be the first piece of real estate I would buy." In process of time he had his desire gratified. He did buy it, lived happily in it many years, dispensed a large hospitality, and finally died with the gates of heaven ajar and at hand. Tristram Dalton grew poorer, largely by speculation in Washington, then "the city of magnificent distances," and finally removed from Newburyport, and sold the property. Moses Brown, by diligence in business and fortunate voyages, from small beginnings grew rich, and the Dalton estate passed into his hands. He never forgot, however, that he had been poor; and when God blessed his endeavors, and his wealth abounded on sea or land, he considered the poor in his poverty.

How did Moses Brown become rich? It would be a sufficient answer to say: "By honest industry." Rather than have become so by ways that are dark and means of doubtful morality, he would have preferred poverty, if it had ground him to powder. Having been dead only sixty years, there are those surviving who knew him well, and this is the universal testimony, that he would have held coals of fire in his hands sooner than ill-gotten farthings. All the traditions of him coming down to us declare that he preferred obedience to God rather than great riches. He continued to labor at his trade and to save his moderate earnings, till he acquired enough to try his "ventures" on the sea. As he was sagacious, he was fortunate, for sagacity is the mother of "good luck." To one vessel he added another; to one piece of real estate a second parcel; so that in the prime of his days he was the largest real estate owner in the town, and was second only to William Bartlett in general wealth. About the close of the last century he was taxed on a valuation of more than three hundred thousand dollars.

In real estate he owned all to High Street above his residence, except the Berry Titcomb property. Crossing High Street, he owned an unbroken line on the Turnpike to the "old brick school-house," and we think to Parker Street. He owned other property on the upper side of the Turnpike, and from Greenleaf Street his land ran to High Street, thence through Pond to Lowe Street, and by Greenleaf Street for its whole length—including within these limits what was called the "Brown farm." But, without stopping to describe or identify the different parcels, we may say, he owned on South (now Bromfield) Street, on Lowe, Kent, Franklin, Harris, Buck, Fruit, State, Titcomb, Dove, Beck, Lime, Merrimac, Green, Broad and Pond Streets, all at one time, as the assessors' books show, and at the same time Brown's Square, named for him, on which he built the Brown Square house for the dry-goods trade, and intended to extend it to Green Street; also the Brown Wharves, and all that attaches to them, from the public landing at the foot of Green Street to the Patch Wharf. He extended his domain from his pier-heads to the premises now owned by Rev. Dr. Spalding.

If we take a look down the Brown Wharf, as it was in "ye olden time," we come first to his counting-room, on the right, in which half a dozen of clerks and employees were busy. On the left hand is his distillery, in full blast, changing his molasses to New England rum. That was in accord with the spirit of the time. Moses Brown was a temperance man at heart and in spirit; he would not have a man about him who drank to excess. When the American Temperance Society was formed, he headed the list of donors to the cause in Newburyport, with five hundred dollars—and he continued his annual contributions as long as he lived. And now, as we pass down, we see his blacksmith-shop on one side and his cooper-shop on the other, and farther down, where his riggers, the Pipers, did work, and on the floor above, Sailmaker Haynes is cutting the canvas, and around him the sails that shall waft ships to foreign ports and distant seas are being made up—all of these have employment from Moses Brown. But before we leave the "Long Store," we shall see that it is crooked or "hogged," which was done by overloading it with coffee, as big as it is; and where the thatch is growing and little water is now found in the dock, beside that building, ships from the Baltic and the Mediterranean Seas, and barques and brigs from the West Indies could be seen unloading their cargoes. Within sight there is a full acre of molasses in casks, and along the sides of the piers are ships and brigs and schooners, loading or unloading or waiting in the stream for a chance to reach the wharves. We have no means of reaching the figures of this great business. As a merchant he was second only to William Bartlett, though probably never worth more than half as much, for Mr. Bartlett was among the first merchants of the world, the fore-



most at Newburyport, when this was the third commercial port in the United States. Moses Brown, however, had a large coastwise and foreign trade, in Europe with the principal commercial nations, Russia, Holland, France, Spain and England, but more largely with their colonies in the West Indies and South America. He had a large number of vessels in the fisheries, which were so extended on the Merrimac River that sixty and more have sailed for the Labrador coast in two days. After landing their catch and having them "cured," the same vessels would take them to foreign markets, bringing home their value in the products of the countries where they sold, and making ready at the proper season to sail again. These were what the old people, who can remember when we had a foreign commerce, called "round voyages."

We have spoken of Moses Brown in connection with William Bartlet, though in their general "make up" they were very unlike each other; yet in their energetic business movements, in their readiness to favor private or public enterprises that would tend to the common good and improve the town, they were alike, and still more in this: that back of both of them stood one man of great learning, broad conceptions and an energy not less than their own. That man was their Christian pastor, Rev. Dr. Samuel Spring, who in religious and moral action was their guide. We name this because we find them disposing of large sums of money for religious and benevolent purposes in which he was heartily engaged. Neither of them, nor their wives, was a member of any church, save that Mr. Brown joined the North Congregational a little before his death.

No one, unless informed, would have suspected, from their habits of life and their generous donations for pious purposes, that they had not been baptized in infancy, confirmed at maturity and been at the communion every Sunday. It was Dr. Spring who conceived the idea that ripened into the Andover Theological Seminary. At first it was proposed to locate it in West Newbury, with Rev. Dr. Leonard Woods, then residing there, and afterwards becoming its president, at its head. When the Phillips and Abbott donations were made, this was changed, and Andover was selected. Dr. Spring laid the subject before Moses Brown, who promptly replied: "It is a great object; I will give ten thousand dollars to begin with, and more afterwards." This pledge was kept; to the ten thousand dollars he added, from time to time, and made a final donation of twenty-five thousand dollars. We think his entire aid to the Andover Seminary must have been between forty and fifty thousand dollars. He was equally liberal in all other directions. He gave fifteen thousand—principal and interest—to establish the Latin School that bears his name in Newburyport, one thousand five hundred dollars to relieve the distress occasioned by the "great fire" in 1811, made one donation of a

thousand to the American Education Society, one thousand to the Greenville (Tennessee) College, one thousand to the Howard Benevolent Society, one thousand acres of land in Brownville, Me., which township he owned, to the Bangor Theological Seminary, and was continually giving to missionary, Bible, tract and like societies, to poor churches and poor people. Nobody knows how much he did give. And he did not let one hand know what the other gave. The total would be put low at one hundred thousand dollars; and half as much more he gave to individuals near to or distant from him. To one individual he gave twenty thousand dollars at one time. This was before the era of great fortunes and of millionaires.

But while we may admire Moses Brown for his many donations and bequests, we may the more commend his personal character—the purity of his life, the goodness of his heart, the nobility of his nature. Rev. Dr. Woods, who knew him well, truly said: "The name of Moses Brown cannot be pronounced without respect and love. For more than a half-century, in which he was engaged in acquiring and using his property, his reputation for integrity and honor was unsullied. It was his uniform principle to take no advantage to himself that would prove injurious to his neighbor. He countenanced no vice. He would not deviate a hair's breadth from what he believed the right."

In personal appearance he was modest, diffident, but always dignified; of a kind and benignant look and a very persuasive voice. He was of medium height and spare in person. He seems to have cultivated no worldly ambitions. He sought neither public applause nor public position. He never attempted to conceal the lowness of his origin, but rather gloried in it, as by his experiences he better knew the wants of the poor and was more ready to extend aid to the deserving and comfort to the afflicted. He pursued business as though the gains therefrom were not for his use alone, and he distributed them as a trust for the good of others. The law of rectitude was in his heart, and the balances of equity in his hand.

In his family and personal relations he was agreeable and happy, kind and affectionate; but from his family and those in his employ, whom he had the right to control, he demanded obedience to the rules of the best society and the highest morals. He was quiet, placid, thoughtful and at times serious; but ever he maintained the most absolute confidence in God and cherished a fraternal love for man. His folded hands, when they were not in use, was indicative of his supreme tranquility. He had reached a peace that nothing disturbed and hope that nothing dimmed. He was a model husband, a loving father, a firm friend and an honored citizen.

Moses Brown twice married,—first, to Mary Hall, who died in 1778, leaving no children; and second,







Genl. H. A.



Mary White, of Haverhill, who held a large property in her own right. She was a lady of rare cultivation, esteemed for the sweetness of her temper, her moral serenity, her kindness to all persons and her devout spirit. Seldom are a couple so much alike. She was his mentor, discreet in her counsels; and he, to her death, was her admirer and lover. Years increased their attachment and old age brought them into oneness. Her death was to him an incurable affliction. She bore him two children,—a son who died in infancy and a daughter, his sole heir, who, later on, became the wife of Hon. William B. Bannister, a lawyer of good repute. Mrs. Bannister died, also leaving a daughter, who, as the inheritor of the estates of her grandfather and grandmother, was the greatest heiress then living in the county of Essex. She married Ebenezer Hale, M.D., who died early, leaving her a widow with one son, who did not reach his majority, and, as Mrs. Hale died without issue in 1880, here terminated the family of Moses Brown.

The largest heir to Moses Brown's estate, which reached more than a quarter of a million dollars, was Miss Ellie Brown Moody, who was a grand-niece of his nephew, Moses Brown. The whole generation of his family, including three brothers, had died a half-century before the estate was settled. Their descendants had scattered into many of the States and one of them resided in the Sandwich Islands.

#### BENJAMIN HALE.

Benjamin Hale was born November 23, 1797, in the Belleville Parish of Newbury, Mass., now included in the limits of the city of Newburyport.

He was the eldest son of Thomas Hale, who was the grandson of the fifth Thomas Hale in the series of Thomas Hales, whose first member came to Newbury in the year 1663.

His mother was a daughter of Col. Josiah Little, who was a son of Col. Moses Little, an officer of the Continental army, who served with distinction at Bunker Hill, and during the siege of Boston and on Long Island, and in the battles near New York City. On both sides of the house he came of a race of vigorous, energetic and industrious men, honored by their fellow-citizens, and distinguished for exemplary habits and faithfulness in the discharge of varied trusts and duties.

In childhood he was studious and kind, commencing his education at the age of three years, at the school of Ma'am Fowler, a well-known local teacher, who died in 1854, at the age of ninety-six. Newbury and Newburyport in those days were well supplied with competent and accomplished teachers. Benjamin Hale, who was himself studiously inclined, esteemed Archibald McPhail as the best of those he came in contact with. Speaking of a walk with him, when he was nine years old, to the Boiling Spring, he said "That walk invested the Spring with a good deal of

poetry." He was also at the Newburyport Academy when Mr. Abiel Chandler was the principal, who had not the faculty of making himself very attractive to younger scholars, though a scholarly man and interested in education, which he many years afterwards exhibited by endowing the Chandler Scientific Department of Dartmouth College.

He fitted for college at the Atkinson Academy, in Atkinson, N. H., then under the charge of the Hon. John Vose. He entered Dartmouth College in 1814, and was among the youngest of some thirty members of his class. His health becoming impaired, he left college early in the sophomore year.

He, however, pursued his studies under the directions of Rev. Mr. Abbott, of Dummer Academy, and entered the sophomore class of Bowdoin College early in 1816, then under the presidency of Rev. Dr. Appleton. Here he stood high in a class of uncommon excellence. The class was the largest in the history of the college up to that time. In 1818 he graduated with the second part in his class, giving the salutatory oration. Heeding the advice of his old pastor, Dr. Spring, "that one who meant to be a minister would do well to try his hand at being a school-master," he took charge of the Academy at Saco for one year. In the autumn of 1819 he became a member of the Theological Seminary, at Andover. Here his college classmate became his classmate and room-mate, Dr. Anderson, of the A. B. C. F. M.

Dr. Anderson thus writes of him:

"Our friendship was founded in mutual knowledge and esteem, and continued during his life. The operations of his mind were effective, equally so in nearly every branch of learning. He was quick and accurate in mathematics, in the languages and in music. I knew not in what one branch he was best fitted to excel. While perfect in all his recitations, he was social, always ready for conversation when I desired it. He had, and through his whole life retained, my entire confidence as a man of God, nor was I surprised at the eminent position he afterwards attained in the church of Christ. Pleasant is his memory, and pleasant is the thought of meeting him in a better world."

While at Andover he had leisure for reading, and that part of it which he devoted to ecclesiastical history had an important influence as it turned out, in deciding his future ecclesiastical connection. At the commencement of Bowdoin College in 1820 he was appointed tutor. He taught the junior class in natural philosophy, and Locke's Essay on the Human Understanding, and the sophomore class in geometry and some other parts of mathematics and in logic. At the same time he continued to pursue his theological studies, and in January, 1822, was licensed to preach by the York Association.

In September, 1821, he delivered a Latin valedictory oration, and took his degree of A.M. With regard to this period of his life his fellow-tutor, Professor Packard, thus writes:

"Mr. Hale gave at once the impression of a kind, generous, faithful heart, a clear, acute and rapid intellect, and a vigorous grasp of any subject to which he gave his thought. He was a diligent student. He loved books. Without conceit, he had sufficient self-reliance, which was always of service to him as a teacher and governor. He always had





the good-will of his pupils, and whether with them or with his colleagues, he exerted an influence above rather than below his age and standing. He was a true man, unselfish, of a decidedly social turn, of warm affections, of a genial humor."

After being licensed to preach he performed that duty quite regularly, one-half of the day in the church at Brunswick, President Allen preaching the other half. He was also called upon to preach occasionally in neighboring Episcopal Churches. This shows that denominational lines sixty-five years ago were not always drawn very vigorously.

In the summer of 1822 he received proposals from R. H. Gardiner, Esq., to take charge of a new institution which he had determined to establish for the education of farmers and mechanics in the true principles of science.

Closing his connection with the college at commencement, in the year 1822, he went to Gardiner in the autumn, completing the preliminary arrangements.

January, 1823, he opened the Lyceum, was inaugurated as its principal, and delivered an address on the occasion, which was published. This was one of the earliest of the schools of technology, which have since then won their way to so important a part in the educational systems of the present day.

Having obtained what was a remunerative salary in those days of stricter domestic economy, and a position of consideration, he took to himself a wife, Mary C. King, eldest daughter of Hon. Cyrus King, M.C., of Saco, Me., April 9, 1823. The Lyceum, attracting many students, became a flourishing institution; additional teachers were added. The principal gave lectures in chemistry, and taught mathematics and natural philosophy, and in the winter had classes in architecture and agricultural chemistry, preparing for the former of these classes a book on "The Elementary Principles of Carpentry," in the year 1827. His health having suffered from the confinement and the arduous duties of his position, he decided with many regrets to leave a situation for which he was in every way well suited, and to accept a less arduous one as Professor of Chemistry in Dartmouth College, where he delivered his inaugural address in August, 1827. His colleagues in the medical college were the esteemed and widely-known Professors Reuben D. Mussey, M.D., and Daniel Oliver, M.D.

The importance of physical studies was not then appreciated in the colleges and universities. Dartmouth College had not taken a scientific periodical for half a century. There was no cabinet of minerals. "There was not," writes Dr. Oliver, "a single modern volume in the college library upon either mineralogy or geology, and scarcely one, if one, upon chemistry, later than the days of Fourcroy or Vauquelin. The prevailing taste was decidedly anti-physical. It was directed another way, and not only so, but there was among the college faculty a disposition to undervalue the physical science." Dr. James

F. Dana, the predecessor of Professor Hale, writing of the college in reference to physical science, used this striking illustration: "It was anchored in the stream, and served only to show its velocity."

When Professor Hale was engaged, his duties comprised a course of daily lectures to the medical class, through the lecture term of fourteen or fifteen weeks, to which lectures the members of the senior and junior classes were to be admitted for a small fee, and instruction to the junior class in some chemical textbook, by daily recitations for five or six weeks. *This was all.*

Professor Hale voluntarily, each year, gave to the academic classes a separate course of over thirty lectures, at his own expense. He substituted a larger and more scientific text-book for that in use, and obtained an increase in the number of recitations from thirty to forty.

He laid the foundation of the cabinet of minerals by giving five hundred specimens, classifying and labeling (with some assistance) all additions, leaving the collection in a respectable condition, with twenty-three hundred specimens. He also gave annually about twenty lectures in geology and mineralogy, hoping to excite an interest in those subjects; and for some years was the instructor of the senior class in the philosophy of natural history. For two years also he took charge of the recitations in Hebrew, and also took other recitations. All of the above services were voluntary and gratuitous. It is no wonder that students thus cared for should respond as they did with enthusiasm and regard. Happily, in this department as well as in all others, Dartmouth College is now in motion, and with the foremost in the current of physical studies. Professor Hale's architectural genius and constructive ability were also brought into active exercise during the process of repairing the old college buildings, and erecting new. Of this he writes, December 11, 1827: "I have made out a plan for the repair of the college buildings, and the addition of a building for libraries for the use of the trustees at their next session." Again March 20, 1828: "I have the honor of being half of the building committee, Professor Chamberlain being the other moiety, and we are commencing operations. The prospects of the college are now so bright that the plan I first proposed, and which was adopted by the trustees, is abandoned, and we are preparing to erect two brick buildings, three stories high and fifty by seventy feet in size, one for students' rooms, the other for public rooms. And what is more comforting, our funds are improving so much that the building will not distress us very much if the thirty thousand dollars should not be realized."

During his last three years Professor Hale was president of the Phi Beta Kappa Society. His portrait, presented by the members of the society, hangs, or did hang, in the college library."

Professor Hale's closing experiences at Dartmouth





were not pleasant. Having thought it was his duty to resume preaching, but in the Episcopal Church, he was ordained deacon by Rt. Rev. Dr. Griswold, bishop of the Eastern Diocese, and January 6, 1831, priest by the same. In this course he in no sense violated any provision of the college charter, or any condition connected with any single article of endowment. In fact, some of the most prominent of the early friends of the college were Episcopalians.

He scrupulously attended services at the village church; in the evenings, however, he held a service in his own study for his own family and that of Dr. Oliver, and for such other communicants of that church and other friends as desired to attend. Dr. and Professor Crosby, in a contribution to the Medical History of New Hampshire, briefly refers to the result, saying, "I cannot forbear to recall, for an instant, the name of Professor Hale, who, after serving the college in the chair of chemistry for a few years, lost his connection with the institution in a manner by no means creditable to the trustees. The board determined on his removal, but as it could not legally be accomplished under the college charter, the Alexandrian method of treating this heretical knot was adopted. A vote was passed abolishing the professorship."

Professor Hale, at the request of his colleagues, delivered the course of lectures following, and at the close published his valedictory letter to the trustees.

The same year he published Scriptural illustrations of the liturgy.

In October, 1835, the degree of D.D. was conferred on him by Columbia College, of New York City.

In 1835 he spent the winter in the island of Santa Cruz, on account of a severe attack of bronchitis. His published letters, signed "Valetudinarius," were very pleasant.

August 2, 1836, he was elected president of Geneva College, and entered on his duties the October following, delivering his inaugural address December 21st. The history of that institution for nearly twenty-two years was intimately connected with the history of its president. His labors, thoughts, hopes and prayers were given to it. One of its trustees wrote of its condition: "His presidency embraced a most critical period in the history of the college; life was already nearly extinct, and death would soon have followed had not the president given himself wholly to his work, with a faith that never faltered, a perseverance strengthened with difficulties, and a thorough conviction that his work, if well done, would promote the glory of God, and of his church through all time. Verily, he had a most difficult task. He did it nobly. He saved the college."

"It was an excellent thing for our college," writes Joseph M. Clark, D.D., "that it was able to secure in 1836 the services of Dr. Hale, as its third president. The college had averaged during the ten years of its existence four graduates a year. And up to the begin-

ning of 1836 all the endowments, exclusive of buildings and ground, only yielded \$1500 a year. About as much was given from church sources in 1836," and later some money was granted by the State. "All the faculty lived lives of great self-sacrifice, but I think Dr. Hale was pre-eminent in this respect." Yet in the depth of these trying times he refused an offer of a situation, at a salary which would have placed him at once in luxury. He knew that he must stand by or the ship was lost.

"At last the venerable corporation of Trinity Church, New York City, came to the relief of the institution, and granted an annuity to sustain it." Dr. Hale instructed thoroughly and easily in every department of learning, though most fond of ethical and metaphysical studies. His courses of lectures on civil and ecclesiastical architecture invested those subjects with very great interest.

When the division into Eastern and Western Dioceses was first voted on in 1838, Dr. Hale published a pamphlet advocating the measure, besides making other active efforts in its favor.

He also, a little later, originated the "Society for Educating the Sons of the Clergy." His health beginning to suffer, to secure an entire change for awhile, in December, 1852, he sailed for Europe, to make a brief tour. His health improved, and he thought of home, though he excessively enjoyed and appreciated what he saw. He wrote: "The wealth of Rome absolutely fatigues me in its works of art, especially by its richness in architectural and sculptural decorations. All I see in Europe, so far, makes me glad that I and my children were born in America."

He was welcomed home, on his return June 29, 1853, by the faculty and students, who met him at the railroad station.

His health was so far restored that he could resume his work with vigor. His letters and journal furnish delightful reading, and his mind was full of interesting and attractive reminiscences. His health again beginning to decline in the autumn of 1857, he was obliged to lay aside his work, and on the 19th of January, 1858, presented his letter of resignation to the trustees, which was accepted, and some very just and commendatory resolutions were unanimously adopted. In 1859 Dr. Hale removed again to Newburyport, near to his birth-place, and not far from the graves of his fathers. A valuable service of plate was presented to him by the alumni and friends of the college. Rev. Mr. Van Rensselaer, in presenting it, said: "Your monument will be found in these halls of learning; in the influence of your faithful instructions and paternal counsels upon the minds of the young men who have gone forth into the world from their shadows; in those distinguished names who, either in the church or the republic, will show the fruits of their training here."

In his new abode he met with a cordial reception,—



"he was not alone respected, he was loved." For a few years only was he able to enjoy the earthly rest he had sought. After a short period of sickness he entered his eternal rest the 15th of July, 1863, leaving to mourn his loss four sons and one daughter.

We are much indebted to Dr. Douglas's "Life of Dr. Hale," as well as Dr. Hale's letters to his children, for much information in preparing this short sketch.

#### JOSIAH LITTLE HALE.<sup>1</sup>

Among the early emigrants who settled in "Old Newbury" were George Little and Thomas Hale. In the veins of their descendants has flowed some of the best blood of New England. For two hundred and fifty years the Littles and the Hales have figured largely and honorably in the history of Newbury and Newburyport. Few family names among us have represented more intelligence, enterprise and moral worth than these two. The subject of this sketch fitly bore both these names, as he, in so large a degree, combined in himself the many excellent qualities of mind and heart which these names represent.

Josiah Little Hale was born in that part of Newbury, now included in Newburyport, called Belleville, December 9, 1803. He died February 26, 1875, in the same house in which he was born. His father, Thomas Hale, was of the seventh generation in the direct line of descent from the emigrant, Thomas Hale, who settled in Old Town, Newbury, in 1637. His mother, Alice Little, was of the sixth generation, in the direct line of descent from the emigrant, George Little, who came from London, England, to Newbury, New England, in 1640. He was the fifth born of a family of ten children, only two of whom are now living, viz.: Mrs. Alice Little March, and Dea. Joshua Hale.

Mr. Hale, in his early years, received an excellent religious training, for which he was ever afterwards truly grateful. His childhood and youth were singularly guileless and pure. He even then exhibited those gentle, amiable, winning traits which were so conspicuous in later years; which made him a favorite with his play-mates and fellow-pupils, and won the love and admiration of all who knew him. That filial obedience and devotion which he always delighted to see in children were beautifully illustrated in himself. One day, a short time before his death, alluding to his early life, he said: "I do not remember that I ever did anything which I was not willing my parents should see, or ever said anything I was not willing my parents should hear." The child was father of the man.

Mr. Hale was, in the best and only true sense of the word, a self-made man. Of a quiet, gentle spirit, he yet had great self-reliance and energy of purpose. He was emphatically the architect of his own fortune. Waiving all his rights in the patrimonial inheritance

in favor of his sisters, he resolved to make his own way in the world. At the age of seventeen he left home for Boston and secured a place as office-boy in the Merchants' Insurance Company. By his diligence, fidelity and courteous manners he soon won promotion and was made secretary of the Washington Marine Insurance Company, and such satisfaction did he give in this capacity that when, a few years later, that company decided to open a branch office in New York, Mr. Hale was selected to have charge of it. After a year of marked success in that responsible position, it was proposed to him to unite with the late Walter R. Jones in establishing the Atlantic Mutual Insurance Company of New York. This proposition involved the necessity on the part of Mr. Hale of securing subscriptions to the stock of the new company to the amount of one hundred and fifty thousand dollars. For this purpose he visited Boston and laid the matter before his friends there, and so great was their confidence in his integrity and business ability and in the success of any enterprise in which he might engage, that in one hour twice the required sum was subscribed—no slight tribute to a young man of twenty-five. Mr. Hale was chosen president of the company and Mr. Jones vice-president, and for a long term of years these two men held these offices. Under their wise and efficient management the Atlantic was eminently successful and became the foremost insurance company in the United States.

For more than a quarter of a century Mr. Hale held a prominent place among the leading business men of New York. He had a wide and ever-enlarging circle of friends in that city, and enjoyed the confidence and esteem of all who knew him. One who was intimate with him at that time bears this testimony: "He combined, in a rare degree, great business talent, remarkable fairness, and strict integrity, and never-failing urbanity."

The pressure of business never deadened his sympathies nor repressed his overflowing kindness of heart. He felt a special kindly interest in young men, and was ever ready to encourage and aid them, and even to befriend them, when involved in trouble by their own folly and wrong-doing. More than one young man, through his kind offices, was saved from the consequences of his indiscretions.

When a prominent business gentleman of New York heard of his death, he exclaimed with great feeling: "I owe to Mr. Hale all that I am." He had, when a young man, for some irregularity, been dismissed from his place; but Mr. Hale interested himself in his behalf and secured for him another place, where he could take a new start and retrieve his character, which he did.

To the frequent appeals for charity, which are the annoyance of so many business men, Mr. Hale always had an open ear and a responsive heart. If he knew the pleasure of acquiring, he knew also the greater







*Isiah L. Hall*



pleasure of giving; but his giving was not ostentatious, and often was unknown except to the recipients.

For many years Mr. Hale was a parishioner of Dr. Gardner Spring, and was a constant worshipper at the old Brick Church, and a regular attendant upon the weekly evening meetings conducted by the pastor and members of that church. Afterwards, residing in Brooklyn, he was one of the originators of the enterprise which resulted in the formation of the Congregational Church and Society of the Pilgrims, and the settlement over the same of the Rev. Dr. R. S. Storrs.

In 1854 impaired health compelled Mr. Hale to resign the responsible position he had so honorably and successfully filled, and to retire altogether from active business.

The trustees of the Atlantic Mutual Insurance Company marked the occasion in a manner alike creditable to themselves and to him by passing very complimentary resolutions, and presenting to Mr. Hale a valuable silver service "in testimony of their regard, and for his long, faithful and efficient services."

Leaving New York, he returned to his early home, where the last twenty-one years of his life were happily and usefully spent among kindred and friends. Here he was universally beloved and esteemed, and his presence was a perpetual benediction. He was deeply interested in everything touching the good name and welfare of his native town, now grown to be a city. His public and private charities were numerous, and no one could come in contact with him without knowing what a well-spring of kindness was in his heart. His character was not only attractive when seen at a distance, but closer inspection revealed more clearly its rare and manifold beauties. He was a man of excellent judgment, quick perceptions, great suavity of manners, candid, charitable, sympathetic, cheerful, modest, gentle, peaceable, yet not lacking in firmness of purpose nor in fortitude, either moral or physical. He was in the best sense of the word a Christian gentleman. His love for the Bible was strong, and his faith in its teachings implicit. Without being a bigot or a sectarian, he held with a firm and intelligent conviction what are termed the "Evangelical" doctrines of religion. A member of the Belleville Congregational Church, he lived and died in the faith of his fathers, and in the confident hope of a blessed immortality.

Mr. Hale never married, but he was an object of tender and almost venerating affection to a large circle of relatives, and his name will long be held in grateful and loving remembrance in the community where the last years of his life were spent. His end was peace. The final summons came unexpectedly, but found him all ready to go. His body was laid to rest in the Belleville Cemetery, which he did so much to enlarge and adorn while living.

#### MICHAEL HODGE SIMPSON.

Michael Hodge Simpson was born in Newburyport, November 15, 1809. His father was Captain Paul Simpson, a ship-master and merchant of Newburyport, a man in prosperous circumstances and of influence and highly honorable standing in the town. The name of Michael Hodge was given him in respect to the memory of his mother's first husband, who was also a prominent member of one of the most respected families in town, and from him Mrs. Simpson inherited the house on the corner of Lime and Prospect Streets, where she and Captain Simpson lived during the remainder of their lives and where the subject of this sketch was born.

Michael Simpson attended the public schools and the Newburyport Academy and well improved his time, but having a strong inclination for business, left school at the early age of fourteen for clerkship in the house of Adams & Emery, of Boston, and gave such satisfaction that on the dissolution of the firm, soon afterwards, he was retained by Jonathan Emery & Son, the successors of the old house. He not only ably fulfilled all the duties of his position, but also sent out ventures of his own in his employers' ships to the various ports with which they traded, receiving in exchange the goods of the countries, which he was enabled to dispose of at a profit, thus laying the foundation of his future career as a merchant. The fellow-clerk who joined Mr. Simpson in these ventures was Charles H. Coffin, president at the time of this writing of the First National Bank of Newburyport. By their shrewdness and foresight in selecting the goods for these ventures these young men amassed quite a little capital, which enabled them to start into business for themselves at a very early age, Mr. Simpson being only eighteen at the time. This connection continued quite successfully for several years and then Mr. Simpson went into partnership with George Otis, son of the distinguished Harrison Gray Otis. The new firm sent ships to Calcutta of which they and the masters of the ships were sole and equal owners. The business prospered, enlarged and extended to other parts of the world, the trade with South America in hides, horns and wool becoming before long the most important part of their business. The South American trade developed a new, or rather a hitherto unsuspected, talent in young Simpson—that of an inventor in mechanical appliances, which was as important to his after-success in life as was his sound judgment in commercial affairs. These two talents combined made him successful in business from the outset and enabled him in the end to amass a large fortune.

It often happens that the inventor lacks the balance-wheel, and others profit by his ingenuity, but in Mr. Simpson's case his mechanical genius was combined with practical knowledge and being applied to his business, the profits inured to his own benefit. The wool which they imported from South America was so bulky that it very materially reduced its market





value, as at this time all the burrs had to be removed by hand, thereby entailing a very heavy expense to make it fit for manufacturing purposes. Mr. Simpson's attention was at this time directed to a crude invention for removing the burrs from the wool by machinery, the idea of which to him seemed good, although the mechanism was an absolute failure. Mr. Simpson, by his perseverance and the use of his inventive ability, finally succeeded, after repeated disappointments, discouragements and the expenditure of a large part of his fortune, in bringing the machine to a successful issue. This machine is practically to-day used on every set of cards employed in woolen manufacturing in the world.

It was only by the most persistent efforts and perfect confidence in his ability to succeed in whatever he undertook, united with an obstinate determination never to be beaten, that he succeeded in this, his first and one might almost say his most difficult and important invention.

About this time his partner, Mr. Otis, died, and Mr. Simpson kept on by himself in his mercantile business, to which was added various inventions, all of which were connected with the woolen business. After the burring-machine was perfected and there was a certainty of large profits from its operations, he sold it to Whitwell, Bond & Co., importers of wool and largely interested in the woolen mills at Jacksonville, but the disastrous times of 1837 caused a failure of the firm, who made an assignment in favor of their wool creditors, of whom Mr. Simpson was one, and who also held notes of theirs for the burring-machine which he had sold to them. Owing to this failure, the Saxonville Mills were reorganized under the name of the New England Worsted Company, of which Mr. Simpson became the agent. He continued his mercantile business, importing large quantities of wool for the mills, and keeping his position as agent until 1857, when the wide-spread financial disasters caused the failure of the mills, leaving Mr. Simpson one of the largest creditors. At this time he, in connection with a friend, purchased the mills from the other creditors, from which time, under his sole management, it had a marvelous prosperity. Shortly afterwards he built and started the Roxbury Carpet Mills in connection with the woolen-mills at Saxonville, and continued his active connection with these manufacturing interests until his death.

At the age of twenty-four Mr. Simpson married Miss Elizabeth Kilham, a beautiful girl of sixteen, daughter of Mr. Jonathan Kilham, a Boston merchant, with whom he passed a happy married life of nearly fifty years. She bore him five children, of whom three survived their parents,—a son, Mr. Frank E. Simpson, of Boston, and two daughters, Mrs. W. W. Seely and Miss Grace Simpson.

A few years before his death Mr. Simpson married a second time, taking for his wife Miss Evangeline Marrs, of Saxonville, with whom he lived until his

death, December 21, 1884. He left no children by his second wife.

A man who amassed such a fortune and won the affectionate respect of all who knew him must have been endowed with remarkable qualities of mind and character, and such Mr. Simpson possessed in an abundant degree. In the first place, he had a wonderfully clear intellect; he formed his plans and knew to the minutest detail what needed to be done to carry them out. Even when his business had grown to vast proportions, he was not satisfied with the general supervision, but he looked after every department with assiduity which would have broken down a feeble man at an early age. He had great tenacity of will, as was indicated by his sticking to his invention for wool-cleaning when others were discouraged and wished to give it up. And he required those under him to carry out his plans, although he was a kind and considerate man to all his employees. He had the instinct for business, so that whatever he undertook turned to profit, and while some thought it was luck, in reality it was intelligence, promptness in decision, a careful supervision of the business in all its details and an indomitable will which turned a seeming defeat into victory.

Mr. Simpson was not merely a business man, but he was also one of the most benevolent and kindly of men, attached to his friends and doing acts of beneficence of general benefit to the public, and especially to those in his own employ. An illustration of the care he had for his workmen was furnished in what followed when the mills burned down, about a year before his death. The condition of business at the time did not seem to warrant the rebuilding, but when he saw his people out of work and needing the wages thus lost by the fire, he decided to rebuild at once, and that the people might not suffer in the meanwhile, he made provision to aid those who had families dependent on them for support until there was steady work for them in the rebuilt mill.

The poor man who was willing to work and needed employment was certain to find in Mr. Simpson a kind and sympathizing friend, who would provide something for him to do if possible, and it would almost seem even if it were not possible. As an instance of this, at the time when there were so many unemployed men tramping through the country he purchased large tracts of woodland in the vicinity of his Saxonville home, upon which he employed any man who came to him asking for work. These lands he converted into beautiful parks by clearing, draining and making roads, thus giving employment (and that was his principal motive) to many unemployed men for several years. At one time he had over three hundred men on his private pay-roll employed in this work, and after the parks were completed he threw them open to the public.

The public benefactions of Mr. Simpson were munificent, especially those made to his native town. The







*Aaron A Sargent*



increase of books in the Newburyport Public Library rendered an enlargement of the library building necessary. This need was represented to Mr. Simpson, who very generously contributed \$18,000, which was the greater part of the expenditure of making the enlargements. In commemoration of this gift the addition was named the Simpson Annex. He also contributed largely for the improvement of the Mall in Newburyport and an annuity of a thousand dollars for watering the streets during the summer, which he made perpetual in his will. He also contributed some thirty thousand dollars to a new college building at Wellesley College.

Such a life as his is one of beneficence. His large fortune was won by the application of extraordinary talents to supplying the wants of his fellow-men by inventions and manufactures of general benefit, and it was generously used by its possessor when it was gained. He left a name honored and beloved by all who had had dealings with him and especially by those who had been in his employ. The people of his native town remember him with gratitude, and a few older men who knew him from youth and were most intimately acquainted with him are those who honor and respect him most, and that is saying much, since there are few distinguished men who bear well the test of intimate acquaintance and continue heroes to the friends of their boyhood. That test Mr. Simpson bore, and it is the highest testimonial to his character and ability, not excepting the monuments of his beneficence, public and private, which have been mentioned.

Among the many eminent men produced by Newburyport the name of Michael Hodge Simpson will always bear an honorable place.

#### HON. AARON AUGUSTUS SARGENT.<sup>1</sup>

Hon. Aaron Augustus Sargent, recently deceased in California, in which State he had resided for nearly forty years, and which conferred upon him the highest positions and honors it had to give, was emphatically an Essex County man. Here, in Newburyport, he was born in 1827; here he passed his early life, and here he married his wife. His father was here before him, and for two hundred and fifty years his ancestors had lived on the banks of the Merrimac. William Sargent, the first of the name in Massachusetts, was among the first settlers of Salisbury in 1640, and had his residence only two miles north of Newburyport, in the First Parish, where was located his village lot, and near by were his tillage and woodlands, his pastures and his seaside meadows; and largely his descendants may now be found in Salisbury, Amesbury and Merrimac; but no one of them ever attained the celebrity of Aaron A. Sargent.

He was what "in Yankee land" is called a "self-

made man," rising rapidly through all the grades of public life, to the highest save the Presidency of the Republic, by his own power. Never did he gain one step by accident, wealth, partial friends or any extraneous or fortuitous event. He enjoyed not one advantage that is not to-day within the reach of every boy in the city or county in which he was born and bred; and, therefore, the lesson of his life deserves to be recorded that it may be the study of the youth to whose fathers he was personally known. This one advantage he had: nature had given him a sound, well-balanced mind in a strong and healthy body, and it had endowed him with a will that never failed to carry him through difficulties, wherever and whenever they appeared. He early perceived that his future must be of his own making; and he seemed to have taken from the first this motto: "Whatever man has done is within the possibilities that belong to me, as the inheritance from my fathers." It was therefore given to him to pluck greatness from seeming nothing, and from the humblest beginnings to make an enduring fame. The schools of his native town were open to him, and in them he obtained the rudiments of education, and laid the foundations of a great and noble life, a life which was pure, upright, moral, well-spent and progressive, as will appear in this narrative.

His father, who was a practical man and a mechanic, designed that he should learn some handicraft that would assure him a livelihood on his reaching man's estate, and so placed him in one or two situations where he could have a trade or business; but they were not suited to his tastes, nor to the ambitions, meritorious and honorable, that gave visions to his youth and inspired his later years. Dissatisfied with the labors of a cabinet-maker and the duties of a clerk, though then, as ever, he endeavored to do his best in any situation he might be called to fill, he sought a place in the printing-office of a daily newspaper, the *Courier*, published by the late Enoch Hale, in Newburyport. There he fed his love of knowledge while he learned the art of type-setting, and there were his first efforts at authorship. We call to mind a series of papers, criticisms on "the manners and matter" of the several clergymen of the town, that first attracted public attention, causing general comment. These were followed by well-written essays upon various topics, so that when not more than eighteen years old he had won a local reputation in literature. All the time he was a hard student—reading was his delight, his recreation, his life. He was never known to be idle, and the hours of sleep were shortened at both ends that he might the better be prepared for the work that was before him. Like an athlete in the old Grecian games, he made ready for the race; he prepared for the struggle; he longed for the battle when yet it was afar off.

At the age of twenty he struck out into the deeper waters of the world for himself, to try his chance and

<sup>1</sup> By George J. L. Colby.





bear his burdens. For a time he was at his trade, as a printer, in Philadelphia, "following in the footsteps of that illustrious type-setter, Benjamin Franklin." Thence he moved on to Washington City, where he formed the acquaintance of a Representative in Congress from the State of New York,—a man of strong mind, but limited literary attainments, for whom he acted as private secretary. They were friends and of mutual benefit to each other. This work now was to his liking. He formed an extensive acquaintance with eminent men; the Congressional Library was open to him; he could hear the debates of great men on great questions, and feel the inspiration of the voices and the manners of that trinity of statesmen to whom the world listened,—of Webster, the mighty power, of Clay, the eloquent orator, and of Calhoun, the most splendid logician of that era. He could see and converse with statesmen and scholars such as this country had not seen before or known since,—men who moved the world upward and onward. Perhaps these were the happiest days of his life. He was American thoroughly and fully; every heart-throb was for his country, and every prayer for the glory of the republic, and here was the American government before him. He was a student, thoroughly devoted to literature, morals, politics, and no university in America or Europe could afford him so much instruction for his coming career.

We know not the course of his thoughts, "The wind bloweth where it listeth," but this must have been patent to his sagacious and watchful mind; that for the accomplishment of his purposes he must have means of action. The story of the foolish virgins who were in the dark because they had forgotten their oil; the loss of Bunker Hill to the patriots of 1775 because they were short of ammunition, could not have been lost on him; and, therefore, it was not surprising that, on the first announcement of the discovery of gold in California, he was ready to emigrate to the Pacific coast. Perhaps he had previously anticipated such a migration, since he had made the acquaintance of Fremont, and learned from him of the "goodly land" which waited the advent of those who would possess it. Be that as it may, he started with other Argonauts, from Baltimore, early in 1849, for San Francisco, *via* Cape Horn. Touching at Rio, Don Pedro entertained the Americans by a public reception, and was highly pleased with the manly deportment and general intelligence of Mr. Sargent. This seems to have been his first lesson in diplomacy. Sailing thence, he gave all his time to his books till he reached Valparaiso, Chili, where he left the ship, and spent some time in learning the resources and opportunities opening in South America. He was then on the track of an older townsman, William Wheelwright, whose fame fills that country, and found others from his native town there engaged in commercial operations. Obtaining the position of

supercargo on another ship, he continued his voyage, and passed the Golden Gate in December, ten months from his leaving Baltimore.

Probably never a man landed in California with prospects less promising, who reached any great eminence, and he would have been among the last of whom anybody but a prophet would have said: "In less than forty years this young man, twenty-two years old, without money, without business and without a friend to help him, will be the first man of this great State, and in political honors above them all." But so it was, and so inscrutable are the ways of Providence. What is he to do? Something must be done, and done at once. The country was full of printers, for they ever are in advance of the foremost wave of civilization. His first venture was in lightering ships—receiving the cargoes in scows and transporting the merchandise up the Sacramento and San Joaquin Rivers. This he followed with all the energy that ever attended his labors. Then he plied the pick and the shovel in practical mining; and for a time held a situation on the *San Francisco Courier*, the first Whig paper in the State, and in 1851 he was setting type on the *Nevada Journal*, of which he soon became editor, and the next year he was prominent in politics, which were intensely exciting, in the struggle between Northern and Southern men for dominancy in the State. He carried himself so bravely through that crisis as to win credit and renown.

Two years later, having turned his attention to the law, he was admitted to the bar in Nevada County, and at once entered upon the practice of his profession with marked success, and the very next year he was elected district attorney. It will not, of course, be claimed that he immediately became a great lawyer, for the law is not a profession in which miracles are wrought, and there were learned counselors and attorneys at the Nevada bar; but he had all the elements of a great lawyer to be developed,—industry, without which genius fails and brilliancy grows dim; then, the determination, which was ever his rule, to do his best in every case that came before him, and to know all the facts and the law relating to the cause to be tried. This ever brings success; for, feeling the foundation sure beneath him, he is prepared for his duty, while the unprepared contestant is sure of defeat. He succeeded so well as to gain the approval of his clients and the applause of the people. He was the leading counsel in some of the most important cases ever tried in California; and at the time of his death he had pending in the courts land suits involving millions of dollars.

Leaving him as a lawyer, we notice him next in politics and statemanship. In 1856 he headed the Fremont Presidential ticket, and from the start adhered to the Republican party. In 1860 he was a delegate to the National Convention that nominated Lincoln, and in 1861 was himself elected to Congress. Thus we find him in ten years rising from a scowman



on the Sacramento to represent one of the greatest and richest States in the National Legislature. At the end of the term he returned to the law and to his mining interests demanding his attention.

In 1868 he was re-elected to Congress, and so well served his constituents that a third time he was elected to the House in 1870; and in the same year was chosen by the Legislature for a full term as Senator, which made him twelve years at Washington, devoting all his energies to further the interests of the Pacific coast. He drew the bill for the first Pacific Railroad, and advocated it to its enactment. His action in favor of the mint at San Francisco, and of the navy-yard at Vallejo, and, in fact, of all measures in the interest of the Pacific States, was fully up to the demands of people in that eventful era. He especially met their prejudices and their wishes on the Chinese question, and was the first man to remove this national issue from the "Sand Lots" to Washington, and lift it above the Kearneys to the plane of statesmanship. He saw the evil to his State; investigated, reported and suggested the remedy which was applied. We may not stop to notice the many topics of importance he was compelled to discuss, and on which he was acknowledged to be one of the ablest debaters in the House or Senate; and when he finished his service there, he retired with clean hands and a pure heart. He had not aggrandized himself to the injury of others. He had not enriched himself at the expense of his State or his country. Millions were within his reach, but he touched them not with the point of his finger; indeed, if he had never seen Congress his estate at death would have been many times bigger than it was. He was educated a Puritan, and he lived and died true to his convictions. He was loyal at heart in life, and as patriotic in legislation as was his grandfather in the Continental army.

In 1882 he was appointed minister plenipotentiary to Germany. It was a very good appointment, as he had the qualifications for the place. In addition to his experience at home, and his reputation as a statesman, he was an excellent German scholar, and could converse fluently in French, which is the language of diplomacy in Europe; and better than all, he had a clear head and a brave heart. He had fought the battles of life and overcome every obstacle with a courage that never quailed in human presence. He was to stand before the German Caesar and to meet his prime minister, who thinks himself master of the world. He did it, this printer-boy, presenting his case as he would in the Senate chamber of the United States, defending American rights as became a man. Unfortunately, the government allowed the publication of his private despatches, which occasioned his resignation. The confidence of our government in him, however, was not lost, and President Arthur immediately nominated him minister to Russia, which nomination was confirmed by

the Senate without the usual reference to a committee. He preferred to come home to the more lucrative business of the law, and declined the appointment. It stands, however, to his credit that he was appointed to two first-class foreign missions, which has not fallen to the lot of any other man in the Pacific States, and to but very few in any other State of the Union. It is by no means clear, had his life been prolonged, that even the highest honors of his country would not have been conferred upon him.

We have said that Mr. Sargent was true to his convictions, and had the courage to abide by them through "good or evil report." He was progressive and often proposed action in advance of his time, as in suffrage unlimited by sex, or the enfranchisement of women. When he was a candidate for the Senate an opposing journalist charged this as an offense. He made no reply. Thereupon the journalist exultingly asked: "Will he dare deny it?" Still he was silent. But shortly there was a female suffrage convention held in San Francisco; he attended and made a radical speech in favor of woman suffrage, at the close saying, "They have my views now and can make the most of them; I would not conceal them to be Senator!" This was in 1872; in both houses of Congress he advocated equal suffrage for both sexes.

In his domestic relations Mr. Sargent was fortunate and happy. In 1852 he married Miss Ellen Clark, of Newburyport, an estimable lady, who survives him. To them were born two daughters and a son, all of whom he educated to practical duties and callings, and they have shown that they inherited the abilities of their parents. The son, George, has succeeded to the place of his father in the law-office; Lizzie has been thoroughly educated in the schools of this country and Germany as a physician, and in the treatment of the eye and ear is the highest authority in California; Ella is a popular writer for the newspaper press and magazines.

On the death of Mr. Sargent, in August, 1887, there was universal mourning in California. All personal feeling and political animosities disappeared, and the people vied with each other in their tokens of respect for the dead. The many associations to which he belonged hastened to eulogize his character. At his funeral more than a hundred carriages were in the procession, and the grave in which he was laid was literally filled with flowers. The newspapers overflowed with kindly words, and could have said no more had he died President of the United States. He sleeps his last sleep far from the place of his birth, but where the people had learned to trust, respect and love him. His name passes into the history of his country, and his fame will be more enduring than brass and more pure and white than the marble that will mark his last resting-place.

"Around his grave are quietude and beauty.  
And the sweet heaven above--  
The fitting symbols of a life of duty,  
Transfigured into love."





WILLIAM WHEELWRIGHT.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. William Wheelwright was literally a citizen of the world, and the world wherever he dwelt upon it was made better by his presence. In whatever country he might be, he was there for the improvement of the condition of the people, for their advancement in material prosperity and intelligence. He was a missionary sent abroad by himself, at his own expense, inspired by a spirit of enterprise which communicated itself to all around him. He could say with the old Roman, "*Homo sum et nil humanum a me alienum puto*," for everything that benefited mankind benefited him, because he was, in the noblest sense of the word, himself a man. He never undertook any great work from merely selfish motives. While he accumulated wealth for himself, he added vastly more to the wealth of others, and what he gained he did not employ for the purposes of self-gratification, but for the use of sweet charity. It was a pleasure to him to earn a fortune, simply because it would come into his possession for distribution. That was absolutely the only value he attached to money. His aged parents and his relatives received his first care, but his benevolence did not end there. It went out to hospitals, schools, colleges and to the poor around him, and his early religious training prompted him to contribute to missionary work among the benighted nations of the earth.

He was born in Newburyport, Massachusetts, on the 16th of March, 1798, having descended from that sturdy old Puritan, Rev. John Wheelwright, who emigrated from England in 1629, and after being persecuted and driven from place to place by his fellow-colonists, finally settled at Piscataqua. He was a brother-in-law of Ann Hutchinson and advocated her vagaries, participating in the persecutions she endured. In his youth he and Oliver Cromwell were intimate friends and labored together for the "glory of God," which they desired to spread throughout the world. It was determined that one of them should make the Eastern Continent the theatre of his operations and that the other should evangelize the new continent of the west. To apportion the division of work they drew lots, and thus by the length of a straw the fate of a kingdom was decided, and after the lapse of many years, republics had cause to be grateful.

As certain physical resemblances are transmitted from generation to generation, so moral and intellectual characteristics are often perpetuated in the heart and brain. Even religion may be said to be hereditary. New Englanders generally, as long as their blood was not mixed with the stream of immigration which has flowed in later years from all nations, have been noted for their tenacity of purpose, which it is not unjust to say emanated from what we now term bigotry, but which they regarded as a conscientious acting up to their own ideas of right, causing them to be certain that all

others who did not agree with them were unquestionably wrong. A great injustice has been done to the memory of these men in attributing to them the pretense of expatriating themselves that they might maintain the cause of religious freedom, so that every man should have "the right to worship God, according to the dictates of his own conscience." They never laid any claim to this purpose. They said emphatically that they had come here to worship God in their way, and, as has just been instanced, they intimated very distinctly to those who did not agree with them, that America was a very large country and that there was room enough for them elsewhere. Had they been like the liberal people of the present day, whose temperament is the result of opposing forces that have neutralized each other, they would have had no such fixed principles to transmit to their descendants. The absolute certainty that they were right in their religion made them quite sure that they were right in their politics and in their opinions on other subjects that would elsewhere be discussed, but by them were simply announced.

No boy could be born at the close of the last century without inheriting this trait of his ancestry and being confirmed in it during his childhood. When the subject of this memoir was sent to school at Andover at the age of fourteen it was still more forcibly impressed upon him. But when he emerged from his youthful surroundings and commenced his profession as a seaman, coming in contact with mankind in general and discovering that Massachusetts was not all the world and that all the world did not think exactly like the people of Massachusetts, the genial part of his nature developed itself, and the ocean, his new home, taught him a new theology in its lessons of almighty power and benevolence enforced by its storms, bestowed by its sunshine and breathed into his soul by its poetry. The sun and stars over his head, the universe around him by day and night, told him that God was everywhere, and it was revealed to him that the Father is worshipped in all places of his dominion as well as in Jerusalem or in New England. His views became enlarged and his religion embraced all humanity. Still there remained within him one of the best elements of his inheritance and early training—a stubborn adherence to what he conceived to be right and a determination to succeed in whatever he undertook to perform. This firmness of purpose was his great characteristic. It made him indomitable in all his enterprises, which were first well considered and then carried out regardless of all opposition. In his steps of advancement from the humble position of a cabin-boy to the command of a ship, at which he arrived at the early age of nineteen, he recognized the authority of those under whom he served, and when he was placed over others the youthful commander maintained a discipline that no sailor dared to disobey. Without resorting to severity, he held his crews in check by the mere

<sup>1</sup> By John Codman.







*W. M. M. M.*



force of his character, for they knew that his was a will that at all hazards would be asserted. His father and his maternal grandfather had been ship-masters and afterwards merchants. The last business naturally followed the first in those days, graduating from its preparatory school. The captain of a vessel was not then a mere wagon-driver sent from place to place by telegraphic orders and carrying freight "for whom it may concern." He was entrusted with the cargo as well as with the ship, and cargoes were generally "for owners' account."

The writer of this sketch may be excused for quoting a letter of instruction given him at a much later period, but at a time when this method still prevailed:

"BOSTON, Nov. 1st, 1841.  
 "SIR,—You will proceed around the Cape of Good Hope to such port or ports as you may select, dispose of your cargo, purchase another and return to Boston.  
 Very truly yours,  
 "CURTIS & STEVENSON."

It was this confidence reposed in American ship-masters that made them the superiors in their profession to those of all other nations. From the early days of New England down to the time that our sailing ships were supplanted by foreign steamships this superiority was maintained, and it would have been continued to this day, notwithstanding the changes of trade, if our government, in its anxiety to "protect" the effete industry of wooden ship-building, had not forbidden its citizens to be ship-owners and had not condemned its captains, officers and sailors to abandon a profession of which they were so justly proud.

Mr. Wheelwright rose rapidly through all the grades of seamanship, from that of cabin-boy to master of different vessels, so that while he was yet almost a boy he was entrusted with the command of the fine ship "Rising Empire," owned by William Bartlet, a distinguished merchant of Newburyport. It was not the custom then for merchants who had become moderately successful in small seaports to find themselves dissatisfied with their surroundings and to be stirred by ambition to remove to Boston as a larger and more central point for their operations. Salem and Newburyport were active claimants for their share of the world's commerce, and the Pingrees, Derbys, Peabodys and their associates, who had begun their lives in poverty in Salem, remained there to end them in wealth; and so in Newburyport, Bartlet, Coombs, Wheelwright, Lunt and others of the same character, there began, continued and ended their mercantile career. Mr. Bartlet, next to William Gray, was then the largest ship-owner in New England. He could say with Gray, "I don't care how the wind blows. It is fair for some of my ships." It was not an idle compliment for a youngster like Mr. Wheelwright to be offered without solicitation the command of one of his best ships, and it was a proof of Mr. Bartlet's confidence in him, that when the first apparently great misfortune of his life overtook

him in the loss of the vessel his owner did not attribute it to his fault. He would have conferred another command upon him at once, had circumstances been such that he could have accepted it. Not long afterwards he gave his cheerful assent to his taking from his household a prize which the young captain valued more than all the ships of his fleet and all of his wealth. "Whoso findeth a wife findeth a good thing, and obtaineth favor of the Lord." Mr. Wheelwright was a close student of the Bible, and if there was any text more firmly impressed upon his remembrance than any other it was this. For forty-four years they lived together a life of happiness, which prosperity did not increase nor adversity diminish, interrupted only by the loss of their children, for which no honor or wealth could compensate them. Some of us can remember the bride as, fresh in her youthful beauty, she stood at the altar and gave her hand and her whole heart to the noble man who was so justly entitled to them. Together they went from continent to continent again and again. Together they dwelt sometimes in luxury, sometimes undergoing privations in a land of strangers with no congenial society but their own, and they still live together in spirit, although he has found his haven of rest in another sphere, while she, in the old homestead, serene and cheerful, awaits the reunion with those who have gone before.

The loss of his ship, which would have been discouraging to almost any other young man in the outset of his career, aroused the energy of Mr. Wheelwright instead of abating it. It proved to be a benefit to him and to the South American Continent, which thenceforward became the chief sphere of his operations.

Señor Alberdi, of Buenos Ayres, who, for the instruction of his own people, has written a memoir of Mr. Wheelwright in their language, thus practically and truthfully summarizes them: "It may be said that Wheelwright had two births, two lives, two countries; at least his life may be divided into two parts, which form, as it were, two separate existences. The first of these begins with his birth in 1798 and closes at the age of twenty-five; the other, with his escape from shipwreck in 1823, when he nearly lost his life, in Buenos Ayres, until his death in London, fifty years afterwards. Forty years of his life were spent on the Pacific Coast, and twelve on the banks of the Rio de la Plata. It was a singular but very natural circumstance that this man of the two Americas should have directed his operations from London; for that city is the centre of universal progress; it is the great mine of capital, of freedom and of intelligence for all nations.

"Thus Wheelwright was a gift which the waves of the Rio de la Plata brought to South America, his vessel having gone to pieces on the Bank of Ortiz. A new Hernando de Cortes, he remained in the land of his shipwreck, in order to conquer its soil, not by





arms, but by steam; not for Spain, but for civilization; not for the all-absorbing North America, but to assure South America in the possession of herself."

The late Caleb Cushing, a townsman of Mr. Wheelwright, wrote in the same strain: "Peace has her heroes as well as war. Bolivar and San Martin well earned their titles of 'heroes of the Andes,' by scaling those lofty summits with their cannon; but shall we deny the same title to Wheelwright and Meiggs, his countryman, who have crossed them with iron locomotives? Such an exploit is almost as wonderful as that of Vasco Nuñez de Balboa, who carried over them, three centuries before, the first European vessels ever seen in the Pacific."

This is the warp of the story, and we have only to fill in the threads.

The shipwrecked crew of the "Rising Empire," after an exhausting pull of twenty-four hours in their boats, landed weary and forlorn on an inhospitable shore; but they conciliated the Indians, whom they fortunately met, by presenting them with everything that they had saved from the wreck, in return for a supply of food and for pilotage through the forest to the nearest Spanish settlement. From thence they found their way to Buenos Ayres, and as there were no vessels there in which they could return to the United States, they dispersed to obtain employment in others. It was the good fortune of Mr. Wheelwright to secure the situation of supercargo of a ship bound around Cape Horn to Valparaiso. This voyage gave him a practical knowledge of the southwestern coast, which was afterwards of immense advantage. From Valparaiso, as he could obtain occupation, he still further explored the coast to the north, his errands sometimes leading him into the interior. Twice, in these journeys, he was roughly handled by bandits, who robbed him of everything and severely wounded him. Escaping all the dangers of travel, he at length arrived at Guayaquil, where he found such encouragement to enter into business that he resolved to remain. So scanty were the postal conveniences in those days that two years elapsed before he heard from home in answer to his first letter announcing his shipwreck. He had, however, little reason to complain, since his address was so difficult to find.

He commenced business at once in Guayaquil, and soon the appointment of United States consul was conferred upon him. It was an office of little emolument, but it gave him a social position, and promoted his mercantile interests. Gradually the destitute sailor, who had been thrown a waif on the southeastern shore of the continent, became a prosperous merchant on its northwestern boundary. In five years, the man who had been indebted to the Indians for his bread, could command one hundred thousand dollars of his own. He had triumphed over all his early disappointments, escaped perils of travel by land and by sea, the effects of fevers and attempted

assassination; and he had cause to thank God, as he fervently did, for all His goodness towards him. He had reached the first summit of his ambition, from which he was destined to descend into the depths again, to rise once more to loftier heights.

He was now thirty years of age, in robust health and in the pride of manly beauty. He was rich, too, as wealth counted in those days, and the prosperity that had dawned upon his path, lighting up the shadows of the past, threw its cheering rays far into the future. Long before this he might have claimed his promised bride, but he would not ask her to share his disappointments; he wished her to be the partner of his success. Little did he know what her value would be to him in both conditions that were to follow. He arranged his business in a manner that he deemed secure and left it in the control of an associate. On his way home he made his first journey over the Isthmus, which led him afterwards to institute the earliest surveys, indicating almost exactly the line on which the Panama Canal is being constructed. The joy of the happy meeting after an absence of six years may be imagined, and of his reunion, too, with his parents and his brothers and sisters, who had waited so long to welcome him. He was married to Martha G. Bartlet, daughter of Edmund Bartlet, Esq., on the 9th of February, 1829, and almost immediately they started for the Isthmus.

At the present day the voyage from New York to Guayaquil is a pleasure excursion of fifteen days by steamship and railroad. In 1829, Mr. and Mrs. Wheelwright had a very different experience on their bridal trip. They embarked on a wretched sailing packet at New York for Carthagena, subsisting on salted provisions and hard-tack for a month. After remaining at Carthagena for ten days they came to Chagres in a small schooner in four days. From thence, in alternate heat and pouring rain, they were poled up the river in three days more. It was an absolute relief for them to get upon mule-back and to descend in this manner to Panama. On arrival there they found the port blockaded, so that there was no ingress or egress for nearly two months. At last they escaped in a leaky boat, pumping and bailing continually, stopping along the coast frequently for repairs and provisions, and threatened with mutiny and desertion of the crew. In this way they arrived at their destination, more than three months after their departure. The only alleviation was the hospitality and kindness which they received from the friends of Mr. Wheelwright at Carthagena and Panama, and which never could have been more welcome or more highly appreciated.

But, through all their disappointments and vexations, there loomed up before them in imagination the blessed light of their future home. Happily, they did not know that it had been extinguished by the perfidy of a trusted friend and partner, who, in Mr. Wheelwright's absence, had robbed him of every



dollar that he possessed and left him as poor as when he had landed, a shipwrecked sailor, on the southern coast. He was doubly poor now, for it was poverty for one who was far dearer to him than life. It was a crushing blow, under which few men could have stood. He had capital, however, that he had not in his first experience of misfortune. It was the capital that he had since acquired, and it was one which would not, like riches, take to itself wings and flee away. It was the confidence and friendship that his character had honestly earned. For the whole length of the coast, in all the different republics, and among parties hostile as they might be to each other, there were friends for Mr. Wheelwright.

He wrote to his brother-in-law in New York to send out to him a small schooner, in which he proposed to begin his life anew. Accordingly the little "Fourth of July," of sixty tons, was despatched to Valparaiso, whither he went, and where, for many years, he established his home. The schooner arrived in due time, and, sailing under the American flag, she enjoyed immunity in all ports, and the popularity of Mr. Wheelwright was such that she had a monopoly of the transportation of specie and bullion, the profit upon which was enormous. Fortune smiled once more, and he became a successful merchant in Valparaiso.

Two of his children were born there, and his faithful wife, whose health had suffered in an uncongenial climate, returned in 1835 with her little girls for a visit to her home, making a rapid passage of sixty-five days in a sailing ship around Cape Horn. The younger child succumbed to the rigor of a northern winter, but the elder, with her brother, afterwards born at Newburyport, accompanied her parents in their subsequent voyages from continent to continent, abiding with them for the most part in Valparaiso and Rosario. She afterwards married Mr. Paul Krell, and, having survived her father, settled at Oatlands, in the suburbs of London. Inheriting, with a share of her father's fortune, his amiable disposition and generous impulses, she devoted herself to a life of charity, exemplifying her religious faith by carrying its precepts into practice. She died in 1886, deeply mourned by her surviving parent and lamented by the poor, whose welfare she always had at heart.

Mr. Wheelwright's son, William, died in England, at the age of twenty-two. He was a youth of rare promise, who, having received a thorough education, was preparing to join and succeed his father in the management of his great railroad interests. But the fond hopes of his parents were frustrated by his early death, the only consolation remaining to them being his happy release from the sufferings of a lingering disease.

When we consider the difficulties which the first projectors of steam navigation between England and

the United States had to encounter, we may more fully appreciate the labor of Mr. Wheelwright in convincing people that it was feasible to navigate steamships around Cape Horn and to establish them permanently on the west coast of South America. It was but recently that one of the greatest scientists of the age had demonstrated, to his own satisfaction and to that of the public in general, that it was impossible for a steamship to carry a sufficient supply of coal to take her from Liverpool to New York; and notwithstanding the intelligence of the Anglo-Saxon race and of the desire of that great family who lived under different governments, but who were bound together by so many ties of consanguinity, friendship, literature and trade, they had well-nigh resigned themselves to the impossibility announced by Dr. Lardner.

It was while this despondency prevailed in England and in the United States that Mr. Wheelwright had the audacity to propose to the slow, indolent and easy-going people of the Spanish South American republics, that they should aid him in bringing to them steamships over an ocean expanse of ten thousand miles and should put them in regular communication with each other—changing the time of months and weeks to those of days and hours. "There comes that insane Wheelwright!" exclaimed the president of one of those republics; "tell him I am not at home!" It is doubtful if he, with all his indomitable pluck, would have had the courage to persevere, had not his well-known character enlisted the sympathy of the European residents and particularly of the merchants, who saw the advantages of an enterprise which even they looked upon with doubt. They would not have listened for a moment to any other man. At last an influence was brought to bear on the different governments. This was more difficult to bring about, as they were antagonistic, jealous of each other and not infrequently at war. Here, an admirable resolution of Mr. Wheelwright's was of immense value. In all his intercourse with those nations, from the beginning to the end, he had determined to preserve a strict neutrality. He made friends with them all and even with the "mammon of unrighteousness," whether they fought with each other or among themselves, and he never betrayed the confidence reposed in him by the men who happened to be in power, by revolutionists or pronunciados. To fuse these discordant elements into an appreciation of their common interests was the labor which he undertook and accomplished. But it was not done in a day. Months and years rolled on, sometimes the hands of the dial turned backwards, but gradually they moved forward, until they reached the high-noon of his desires. He never asked for any direct pecuniary aid. All that he demanded was the grant of four "concessions,"—1st. An exclusive steam privilege for ten years. 2d. The liberty to put into all ports for freight and passengers. 3d. The right to establish receiving ships for coal.





4th. No interruption in the speedy despatch of the ships.

It appears strange that there should have been any hesitancy about the first three, when the prospect was regarded as so utterly chimerical. To those of us who are acquainted by experience with the vexations which attend the loading and discharging of ships in South American countries, owing to absurd custom-house regulations, lazy and insolent officials, frequent church holidays and interminable red tape, the opposition to the fourth concession does not excite surprise. In return, Mr. Wheelwright promised to repay them in a hundred-fold more benefit to them than he could possibly count upon for himself. And yet it took three whole years to conclude this simple bargain! It was accomplished as far as South America was concerned, and now it remained to organize a company and to build the steamships, either in the United States or in England. On the former country, the land of his birth, Mr. Wheelwright placed little reliance, but he gave his countrymen the first opportunity. The answer he received was virtually this: "We are a great people among ourselves; we do not understand commerce to mean the exchange of commodities with foreigners. We propose to produce everything; at least a few of us will produce everything at the cost of the others. Consequently, as they will pay more than foreigners will pay for our productions, we care not to sell anything, and we prefer not to buy anything if it can be avoided. Besides, we have no colonies to be indirectly benefited by such a scheme as yours, and we have very few commercial houses in South America. Good-bye; you had better go to England."

He did not waste time in trying to upset our protective policy. It was something that he scorned. He had seen enough of the custom-house cut-throat system in South America to make him an earnest advocate of universal free trade. It was a part of his religion, too, bound up in his heart and soul. So he went to England, the country from which our fathers emancipated themselves, because she forced them to pay a duty on tea to the King, leaving it to their descendants to levy a duty on two thousand articles for the benefit of a few kings of their own.

Mr. Wheelwright arrived in England in 1838. During his sojourn in South America the problem of Atlantic steam navigation had been solved. That bugbear, at the portal of his hopes, had been removed, and the question to which he now addressed himself was not of the possibility of his enterprise, but of its success as a profitable investment. He forthwith enlisted the press in his behalf. The *London Times* and the *Morning Post* joined with some scientific journals of wide influence in its advocacy. His reputation for acquaintance with South American navigation and trade had preceded him, and the honesty of his purpose was made convincing by his agreeable manners and his persuasive eloquence. The *Morning*

*Post* corroborated his argument that "thus would be opened, not only a more expeditious route to the West Indies and the Pacific, but that there would be assured a more rapid communication with the East Indies, China and Australia."

He had not now to deal with capricious and shortsighted South American Spaniards, but with a people whose interest it was to extend their vast commercial empire. Mr. Wheelwright heartily seconded the proposition to establish direct steam communication between England and the Isthmus of Panama, knowing that the benefits would be extended to his own line. Thus both objects were accomplished nearly at the same time, and the result has been the maintenance of British steamship supremacy all over the globe. His steamships, the "*Chili*" and the "*Peru*," were built at Limehouse. Ridiculously small they would be considered at this day, for they were only seven hundred tons burden, and one hundred and fifty horsepower. Mr. Wheelwright accompanied them on their voyage, and they were the first steamships that passed through the Straits of Magellan. The enthusiasm with which they were received at Valparaiso was unbounded. The *Mercurio* astonished its readers with a description of the "ponderous ships which moved without sail or oar," as they were viewed by the inhabitants of the city, who had turned out *en masse* to witness what many of them supposed to be a miracle. For days the cabins and decks were crowded. There was a constant ringing of bells and firing of guns. Speeches laudatory of Mr. Wheelwright were made, and he was, as he deserved to be, the hero of the day. When the first steamer arrived at Callao the same scene was repeated. Nor were the people far wrong in calling it a miracle. It raised them from the dead slumbers of ages, infused into them a new life, brought them into line with the world's civilization, and started them on their march of progress.

In some respects Commodore Vanderbilt and Mr. Wheelwright were alike. Each commenced his ocean career at the lowest step of the ladder. Alike they saw in the future the certain success of steamship enterprise. One was its pioneer on the northern, and the other its pioneer on the southern continent. When they had both successfully accomplished their missions on the sea they left them in other hands and turned their attention to the land. The education and habits of neither of them tended in that direction. They had never studied civil engineering or surveying, but with the wonderful versatility that genius often develops, they adapted themselves instantly to their new calling, and went to their work backed by that great quality they so eminently possessed—determination—a determination which, incubating in brains like theirs, is sure to hatch out success. They both became "railroad kings." Vanderbilt was the king of the north, Wheelwright was the king of the south. They both conferred great good upon the people. This was incidental to the suc-





cess of the one, while it was the main object for which the other strove to succeed.

The steamship line was now fully established, although its continuance had been seriously threatened by the difficulty of obtaining a regular supply of coal, for which it depended upon England. To overcome it, Mr. Wheelwright had instituted searches for this indispensable article, and had found indications of its presence in Southern Chili. These "prospects" were developed into abundantly producing mines, and thus was procured the fuel so much needed by the miraculous steamships and by the future locomotives; of which the popular imagination had not as yet begun to dream.

The products of the copper mines of the interior had hitherto been brought down to the coast with infinite labor and great expense, on mule-back and in native carts. So long as the ocean carriage was done in sailing vessels, the land carriage by mules appeared to be its proper commencement. But the new motive power on the water called for an equal improvement on the land. This led Mr. Wheelwright to the conception of the first South American railroad. He now found no difficulty in obtaining influence and capital for any undertaking.

Accordingly, the eight hundred thousand dollars needed was immediately subscribed by himself and his friends. It was a short road, extending only twenty-four miles; but it became at once very profitable, and, as we shall see, was regarded by Mr. Wheelwright as the first link in the iron chain that is to bind the Pacific to the Atlantic. He next proposed to build a railroad from Santiago to Valparaiso of ninety miles, over a range of mountains. The Chilean government, however, regarded this as an absolute impossibility, and refused to grant him a concession, although he showed them his plans and assured them that it could be accomplished. "You will be convinced of it by-and-bye," he said; "I will leave my plans for some one else to build it, for I cannot wait. I will go to the other side, and from thence you shall see a railroad coming across the Andes to your doors."

Precisely on the plans proposed, the railroad from Santiago to Valparaiso was afterwards built.

On his arrival in the valley of the Plata, in 1850, Mr. Wheelwright had fewer obstacles to encounter than he had surmounted in Chili and Peru. Years had elapsed; the day star had not appeared in the east, but unlike other stars, it had arisen in the west, throwing its light over the Andes. Mr. Wheelwright's name was familiar in the councils and in the newspapers of all the Spanish republics. On his part, his more intimate knowledge of the language and habits of the people, gained by long experience, served greatly to lighten his labors. Still, he had to contend with the same factious opposition and jealousies of States and individuals as before. These he was never able entirely to overcome. His plan

was first to build a railroad from Rosario, at the head waters of river navigation, to Cordova, with the ultimate expectation of pushing it over the Andes, and connecting it with the road he had just completed. For the present the line from Rosario to Cordova of two hundred and forty-seven miles would accomplish the important result of developing the Argentine Republic, increasing its domestic trade and its European commerce. Mr. Wheelwright was fortunate in enjoying the personal friendship and in enlisting the efficient aid of General Mitre, the president of the republic, at the outset of this great undertaking. With his own hands, at Rosario, General Mitre turned the first spadeful of earth, adding his enthusiasm to that of the delighted crowd by energetically continuing the exercise. "Every one must rejoice," he said, "on the opening of this great road, for it will tend to people solitudes, to give riches where there is poverty, and to institute order where anarchy reigns. It will pass over the wide prairies until at length it will scale the mountain summits of the Andes, and thus become the great railway of South America."

Mr. Wheelwright himself, appearing to look upon the line over the plains as an accomplished fact, went on to amaze his semi-barbarous hearers with estimates that would have astonished an American audience in 1863:

"The route to be adopted will be from Cordova to Chañar; from Chañar to Horqueta, a central point in Catamarca; from thence to Rioja and Copacabana, at the foot of the Andes, a distance of seven hundred miles; from whence it will commence the ascent, climbing up the side of the eastern slope of the Cordilleras to the pass of San Francisco, at an elevation of 16,923 feet above the level of the sea, where it culminates and then descends the western slope to the valley of Copiapo and Caldera, by a route already defined and declared practicable."

Since that time we have seen such engineering in Colorado and Utah, where the height of more than twelve thousand feet has been scaled. With us, it is a reality. There it was a dream—a dream that would have come to pass already had its projector's life and strength been spared for its accomplishment.

Mr. Wheelwright, in connection with the well-known and wealthy contractor, Thomas Brassey, had no difficulty in obtaining capital for the Grand Central Argentine in England. It was immediately commenced, and the first ten miles were finished early in 1864, but as the Paraguayan war supervened, interrupting operations, the whole line was not completed until May 17, 1870. Its inauguration was celebrated with an enthusiasm equal to that exhibited at its commencement. The President of the republic, Sarmiento, who had succeeded Mitre, Derqui and Urquiza, was not present, and although other spectators were loud in their praises of Mr. Wheelwright, the Minister of the Interior studiously refrained from the mentioning the name of the man to



whom this great work was due. The motive of this insulting neglect is readily explained. It was the desire of the government to use Mr. Wheelwright as an instrument for negotiating a loan in England, nominally for the purpose of continuing the railway across the Andes, while its intention was to devote the money to the construction of ironclads for a contemplated war with Chili, the nation with which it pretended a wish to unite itself in the bonds of a peaceful commerce. Mr. Wheelwright indignantly refused to aid in this perfidy. He declared his willingness to raise the loan, but on the sole condition of receiving a pledge that the avails should be invested in the work ostensibly but ambiguously set forth as its object. The refusal to embody this promise aroused his suspicion, which was justified by the fact that the enormous amount of thirty million dollars was asked for immediate use, when but a comparatively small sum was needed for present and progressing expenses. Thereupon the government rescinded the concession it had formerly solemnly pledged to Wheelwright and Brassey for the extension of the road, and postponed for years the completion of an enterprise that in their hands would have been carried to a triumphant conclusion.

One more small but important undertaking completed Mr. Wheelwright's railroad operations in South America. Buenos Ayres, on the bank of a great river, had always been the most unapproachable port in the world. The water is so shallow near the shore that vessels were obliged to anchor at the distance of several miles. Their cargoes were taken in lighters to be discharged in their turn into bullock carts, and thus dragged up on to the beach.

Thirty miles towards the sea is the snug little harbor of Ensenada, not capacious, but affording abundance of water for vessels of the heaviest draft, which may there discharge and load their cargoes at the wharf.

When Mr. Wheelwright proposed to make it the receiving port of the city of Buenos Ayres, it will scarcely be believed that he met with the violent opposition of the people who were to derive such an immense advantage from the facilities it would afford. Every possible obstacle was thrown in his way. It is needless to enumerate all the difficulties he encountered in the nine long years occupied in building this short but important road, which is now recognized by the city of Buenos Ayres as the most valuable aid to its commerce.

It was opened on April 18, 1872. There, at the scene of his last triumph, Mr. Wheelwright made his last speech. Before the audience at Quilmes the Governor of Buenos Ayres said that "of the many lines of railway which had been laid in that province, this was the first constructed without subsidy or any kind of aid from the Government. Whenever the company required land, it purchased or obtained it without calling upon the State, a fact which mani-

fested the spirit of progress that was daily being developed, and which had its greatest representative in the person of his friend Wheelwright."

Mr. Wheelwright replied "that grateful as he felt for the compliment of Governor Castro, he had no other ambition than that of honest industry." He recalled the fact "that he had arrived at that place shipwrecked, almost without shoes to his feet, that the inhabitants had received him cordially, and he was proud to be able to present that road, partially inaugurated that day, as a return for their never-to-be-forgotten hospitality."

On what spot could he have more gracefully taken his pathetic adieu of his "second country"? He had finished the work that God had given him to do, and no missionary of the church can claim a brighter crown than this missionary of civilization and humanity.

Besides introducing steamships, building one railroad on the west coast and two on the east, the discovery of coal and the development of the mines, without which the former enterprises would scarcely have been profitable, Mr. Wheelwright contributed important benefits to some of the cities, notably to Valparaiso in the introduction of water and gas.

It was there, at the headquarters of his first great undertaking, that he was most honored and loved. His portrait graces the hall of the Exchange, and a statue of heroic size in bronze represents him in the public square.

As he was about to say farewell forever to the continent of the South, what more fitting tribute could have been offered him than the request that he should send from the East to the West the first congratulatory telegraphic message? The responses he received were the last benedictions of a grateful people. The projector of the telegraph replied:

"VALPARAISO, July 26, 1872.

"William Wheelwright, Buenos Ayres:—I feel proud in receiving your warm congratulations, which I beg you to share with me for the happy success obtained this day. This country, Mr. Wheelwright, is indebted to you for the elements of progress introduced here since 1840. Not only steam navigation, railways, gas and water-works, coal mines and a number of other works introduced by you have flourished in Chili, but the first electric telegraph erected in South America by you in Chili twenty-two years ago, is to day extended to Buenos Ayres, thus enabling the West Coast to salute gratefully the illustrious promoter of progress on both sides of the Andes.

"Accept, therefore, my dear sir, my congratulations.

"JOHN R. CLARKE."

From Señor de Sarratea,—

"CITY OF VALPARAISO.

"Your name and progress are indelibly fixed in the minds of our citizens, and while we celebrate the great event of the day we do not forget how much we owe to your foresight and untiring constancy. I salute you in the name of all friends in Valparaiso."

From the President of the Republic of Chili:

"SANTIAGO, July 30, 1872.

"A thousand thanks for your enthusiastic congratulations. I return my cordial salutations to the man who has so many titles to the love and gratitude of my country.

"F. ECHAZURRIA."

Mr. Wheelwright, with his wife and daughter, embarked for England in May, 1873.







*Isaac W. Wheelwright.*



He well knew that he would never see South America again, and it was even doubtful if his strength would endure until the arrival of the steamship at Southampton.

It was imprudent for him to have continued the cares of business in his condition of health at such an advanced period of life, but his indomitable will sustained him to the last.

He landed in England to die in the house that was his home in that country, on the 26th of September, 1873. His body was taken to the home of his nativity, where he sleeps his long sleep, after a life so fully completed, in the burial-ground which is overlooked from the house in which he was born.

During his life-time Mr. Wheelwright was his own executor. Although he left a large fortune, the fortune that he bestowed upon others before his death exceeded it. When he could give no more, he resigned it into the hands of others to give. Among his bequests to different charities there was a foundation for the "Wheelwright Scientific School in Newburyport." But education does not bestow brains. It may cultivate and sometimes its hot-house training may run them to seed without making their fruit of any value. If Mr. Wheelwright himself had received a "liberal education," and had "taken the first honors of his class," he might doubtless have graced either of the three learned professions, but he never could have acquired at schools, colleges or universities the knowledge of the world and of mankind that he gained from practical experience and from a reliance upon God and upon himself.

#### ISAAC WATTS WHEELWRIGHT.

Isaac Watts, a younger brother of William Wheelwright, was born at Newburyport, September 17, 1891. Sharing the same Puritan ancestry and nurtured in the same traditions, he was endowed with a temperament wholly different from that of his brother, and although they carried on their work to a certain extent in the same country, their spheres of labor were entirely distinct. A shy, retiring boy, he did not mingle in the lively sports of his elder brothers, finding a greater pleasure in books and study. At the age of twelve he was sent to Phillips Academy, Andover, and after four years spent there he entered Bowdoin College, where he was domiciled in the house of president Appleton, and according to a singular custom more or less in vogue in New England at that time, an exchange of children was effected, whereby the president's daughter Jane became an inmate of young Wheelwright's home at Newburyport. This arrangement proved mutually satisfactory, and Miss Appleton endeared herself very much to the family of which she became a member, and which she left to become the wife of Mr. Franklin Pierce, afterwards President of the United States. Meanwhile the young collegian pursued his studies

and graduated in 1821, the very year when those distinguished sons of Bowdoin, Hawthorne and Longfellow, entered college. It had always been a foregone conclusion in the family that this younger son, who had grown up a serious-minded youth, was to be a minister, and it was doubtless with this idea in her mind that his devout mother gave him the name of her favorite hymnologist, Doctor Watts. But, although he had tacitly consented to this decision, he had never felt that he was adapted to the profession, and his subsequent experience convinced him, as well as others, that his true vocation was that of a teacher. On leaving college, therefore, he was very glad to have the final decision deferred for one year and to accept a tutorship at Phillips Academy. At the expiration of that time he decided to enter the Theological Seminary. These were the years in the political history of New England when Webster exerted such a potent influence, and it was not unnatural that the fascination of his brilliant intellectual gifts should have been keenly felt by the rising generation. Our young theologian shared the enthusiasm for the great statesman, and it was with the desire to hear him speak that he and his friend and classmate, Leonard Woods, afterwards president of Bowdoin College, found their way to Bunker Hill on the occasion of the laying of the corner-stone of the monument. It was on a cloudless day of June, 1825, that the two young men pressed through the surging crowds until they found themselves in close proximity to Lafayette, and where they could look into the face of the great orator, whose burning words of eloquence could never be forgotten. "Let it rise till it meet the sun in its coming, let the earliest light of the morning gild it, and the parting day linger and play on its summit!"

On finishing his theological course, in 1826, Mr. Wheelwright returned to his favorite occupation of teaching, going to Dummer Academy as assistant to one of its most distinguished principals, the Hon. Nehemiah Cleveland. After two years he left Dummer to become the principal of the Newburyport Academy. In 1833 he was appointed agent for South America of the American Bible Society and he sailed in that year for Valparaiso, where his brother William was then living. As he familiarized himself with the language and the manners and customs of the people, he became more and more convinced of the utter hopelessness of sowing Bibles broadcast in a ground so totally unprepared. Education was the first requisite in a country where ignorance was exalted into a virtue, and when he was ready to proceed to Guayaquil, his original destination, he had fully resolved to begin operations there by establishing a school. The wisdom of this decision was attested by the fact of his discovering in the Custom-House of Guayaquil, on his arrival there, several large cases of Bibles, which had been sent out months before by the Brit-





ish and Foreign Bible Society. Mr. Wheelwright's school soon found favor in the town, and it was not long before he was invited to go to Quito to establish a similar one there, which he subsequently consented to do, having found some one to take his place at Guayaquil.

Quito is picturesquely situated at an altitude of ten thousand feet above the level of the sea, and is overshadowed by the snow-covered peak of Pichincha, five thousand feet above the level of the town. Here Mr. Wheelwright spent the greater part of the five years—the term of his appointment by the Bible Society—and established higher as well as primary schools, which soon became as popular as the one he had founded at Guayaquil. His first object in both places had been to secure from the government its authority for reading the Bible in these schools, which was finally accomplished, in spite of the opposition of the priests. The President of the Republic of Ecuador at that time was a most enlightened man, and he so appreciated the civilizing influence of Mr. Wheelwright's labors that he made him one of the directors of education. The support of the civil Government, however, did not protect him from the attacks of the ecclesiastical authorities, who finally removed the Bibles and Testaments from the schools. Mr. Wheelwright published a protest and defense of his course, which was followed by a circular letter from the ladies of Quito, endorsing his action and defending him from the charge of proselytism. But it was all of no avail, for neither the civil government nor public opinion had the power to influence the decisions of the Church.

About this time (November, 1836) Mr. Wheelwright at the invitation of the President, accompanied him and his Cabinet to Yaruqui, to visit some monuments erected there just one century previous, by three French academicians,—Louis Godin, Pierre Bouguer and Carlos Maria de la Coudamine. They had been sent out by Louis XV. to mark the line of the Equator and to measure a degree thereon, in order to arrive at the exact circumference of the earth. Their observations, which exiled them for seven years, at length resulted in finding that the line must pass somewhere between the two monuments, which at a later period were destroyed by Charles IV. of Spain, who was jealous of that scientific invasion of his kingdom by representatives of a rival power. The more enlightened President of Ecuador, his country having happily escaped from the tyranny of Spain, and he himself recognizing no national boundaries in the domain of science, had ordered the restoration of the monuments, which, on the occasion above referred to, were dedicated and marked with a suitable inscription.

Shortly after his return to Quito, Mr. Wheelwright was obliged to leave the town on account of the breaking out of a revolution which made residence there unsafe. He had, in fact, remained there all these years at the peril of his life, having received many

threatening letters from his enemies and having been constantly warned by his friends that he was a marked man. At this juncture he received a letter from his brother at Valparaiso urging him to undertake a mission in his behalf to Bogotá, with the object of securing from the Colombian government an exclusive privilege for opening a canal through the Isthmus of Panama, which would complete his plan for steam communication between the west coast of South America and Europe. The journey to Bogotá was a difficult and in many respects a dangerous one, but preparations were finally made to join a party who were crossing the Andes by the Pass of Chimborazo. In light chairs strapped to the backs of sturdy mountaineers, Mr. Wheelwright with his companions made the ascent of the mountains, and, arrived at the other side, he pursued his way northward accompanied by guides. Penetrating the thick forests of the interior, sleeping sometimes under trees, the thick foliage of which protected him from the rain, and sometimes in some deserted hut, which on one occasion proved a dangerous asylum, for, on waking in the morning, he was horrified to find a huge snake coiled about a beam just above his head, he finally reached Bogotá and presented his brother's petition, which was favorably received and the bearer himself treated with great consideration by the President and his ministers. But he waited in vain for a reply, which was put off from day to day and month to month, till, at length, he was privately advised that on account of unsettled questions pending between that government and the United States, the proposal to build a canal could not be entertained. He accordingly left Bogotá, and after another difficult and perilous journey through tropical forests, arrived at Cartagena, on the Atlantic coast, whence he sailed for New York.

His long residence in hot climates, and the hardships encountered in his travels, had undermined his health to such a degree that rest and change of climate were essential before he could undertake any other work. He remained at home for two years, save for a few months spent in England and France, and then, with re-established health, he sailed once more for South America, his destination being Valparaiso, where he had for a long time hoped to organize a school for the higher education of young women. His project having been received with marked favor by the best families of the city, he made all the preliminary arrangements, and then returned to the United States for a short visit. On the 27th of October of that year (1842) he married Sarah Dana, the youngest daughter of the Rev. Daniel Dana, D.D., ex-president of Dartmouth College, and at that time pastor of the Old South Church, at Newburyport. They sailed at once for Valparaiso, where Mr. Wheelwright founded and for nearly ten years carried on the school which still flourishes there. Señor Alberdi, in his "Life of William Wheelwright," makes the following reference to the school and its teacher:







*Joseph B. Morris*



"About this time (1813) a brother of Mr. Wheelwright, a man of liberal education, pleasing manners and refined taste, established a college for young ladies in Valparaiso, and among those who were educated there may be mentioned many who afterwards held a high social position in Chili, and to this day remember with gratitude and hold in veneration the name of their much-beloved principal."

In connection with this period of his life should be mentioned the name of the Rev. David Trumbull, whom Mr. Wheelwright was instrumental in bringing to Valparaiso. Mr. Trumbull had just graduated at the New Haven Theological Seminary when he received a letter from Mr. Wheelwright urging him to come out to South America, where a field was already open to him. After some further correspondence Mr. Trumbull consented to go out for three years, which he spent in Mr. Wheelwright's family, where he found a congenial home. He began his ministrations in a warehouse, preaching to a handful of English and Americans, and so successful has been his work that he now numbers two hundred Chilians among his hearers, in addition to a large congregation of foreigners, consisting of English, Scotch and American residents in Valparaiso.

In 1849 Mrs. Wheelwright's failing health made a visit to the United States an imperative necessity, and as her husband was unable to accompany her, it was arranged that Mr. Trumbull should be her escort. The visit was prolonged on account of continued illness till at length Mr. Wheelwright felt that he must relinquish his duties for a time in order to join his wife, still hoping to return to his work once more and to bring her back with him. These hopes were not destined to be realized, and little as he thought it, he was bidding farewell to his adopted country forever. On arriving at Newburyport he realized for the first time the great change for the worse in his wife's condition and immediately took what measures he could to make her life as comfortable as possible. To this end he purchased the Byfield parsonage, a retreat sheltered from the east winds of their native town and yet sufficiently near to admit of frequent visits to their parents. It was a house of some historic interest, having been the birth-place of Theophilus Parsons, chief justice of Massachusetts, whose mother, Susanna Davis, a direct descendant of the Rev. John Robinson, of Leyden, was a great-great-aunt of Mr. Wheelwright.

At this time Mr. Wheelwright definitely gave up his school at Valparaiso and devoted himself to the care of his wife, who was gradually fading away and at length succumbed to the disease which the milder climate of South America had only kept in abeyance. In 1858 he married Adeline, daughter of Stephen Adams, Esq., of Byfield, and has ever since resided in the old parsonage sacred to the memory of a long line of pastors, who from the early settlement of the country have made it their home. Here, surrounded

by his family and his books, respected and beloved by neighbors and friends, removed from worldly care, an observer only of the stirring events of the day, he can say with his favorite poet,—

" 'Tis pleasant, through the loopholes of retreat  
To peep at such a world, to see the stir  
Of the great Babel, and not feel the crowd;  
To hear the roar she sends through all her gates  
At a safe distance, where the dying sound  
Falls a soft murmur on the uningured ear."

#### JOSEPH BROWN MORSS.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Morss adhered to the original manner of spelling his name, while some other branches of the family spell it Morse. The first of the name were Anthony, William and Robert, who came to America from Marlborough, England, in the ship "James," and settled in Newbury in 1635. Anthony was the oldest, being forty-three when he came here to live, and at that time was married, but shortly his wife must have died, for he married a second time four years later; and himself died in 1678, at sixty years, leaving a large family. He was a shoemaker, as was William, his brother, who came over with him and died in 1683, at sixty-nine, also leaving a family. Robert may have been still younger; at least his children were born later.

From these sprang all the Morsses. All came from the same root in England and were transplanted here in three stalks. Anthony and William were among the original landed proprietors, the acknowledged freeholders, and entitled to their proportionate parts to all the waste lands, commons, rivers, etc. The whole number of "commoners" was one hundred and thirteen. In the second generation Jonathan Morss married Mary Clarke, in 1671. She was of the Clarke family that lived in the house at the corner of High and Marlboro' Streets, then called the Clarke house, and later the Morss house, which name it bears to this day, having ever since remained in whole or part to the Morsses. It was for long years, when that was the "corner,"—that is, the central place for trade and business,—a tavern, and we find the two names, Clarke and Morss, combined in one person, Mr. Clarke Morss, who was the father of Joseph B. Morss, and lived in Middle Street near the head of Centre Street, when his house was burned in the "great fire" of 1811. He was a cabinet-maker.

Joseph Brown Morss was born in 1808, and was in the sixth generation from Anthony and William. His mother, who was left a widow in early life, before her marriage bore the name of Brown, whence it descended to him. He began life under every disadvantage. He had no father, no fortune, no influential friends, and his health was so poor that on account of it he was almost entirely deprived of schooling till he was ten years old, and then had the benefits only of the common schools of the Lancasterian style, in which, by his studiousness, aptness to learn and good

<sup>1</sup> By George J. L. Colby.





behavior, he soon became a "monitor." It was customary in those days for persons who wanted apprentices to consult the school-teachers and select them on their recommendations; so when Ephraim W. Alden inquired, the teacher pointed out to him Joseph B. Morss, said he was industrious, honest, sincere, reliable, and would do honor to himself in whatever situation placed. He took him into the *Herald* office to learn the art of type-setting, and he proved to be all he was recommended and more. That printing-office became his school; he labored; he studied; he attained a full knowledge of his business and was one of the most intelligent and careful of workmen; so that, without ever studying grammar, he was one of the best proof-readers, and seldom failed in the spelling of a word or its proper use; and without studying rhetoric, often wrote, as the occasion called, in the best style of the art of composition. He entered the printing-office a sickly and uneducated, penniless boy; he graduated a robust man, of remarkable powers of endurance, a thorough printer and journalist, knowing the business from bottom to top; a student equipped in knowledge of books and men, and fitted for the brilliant career upon which he was about to enter. As an apprentice and journeyman he remained in the *Herald* office to 1831, when he was twenty-six years old, and, Mr. Allen retiring, he became editor and proprietor of the *Herald*, daily and semi-weekly, with William H. Brewster as a partner, and there remained to 1856, after which he successively and successfully edited, and managed in part, the *Boston Traveller* and the *Boston Courier*.

In his business he put his whole heart and soul. His labors never ended, his studies never ceased. There was no wage-worker in his employ that labored more than half his hours during the year. He was almost sleepless. When all others had left the office his one light burned dimly to the small hours, as he culled the latest news; and there he was found at the case putting matter in type; and so careful was he of the manner of making up the paper, that, without complaining of the work of others, he would often take the form apart and rearrange the whole to suit his taste. He excelled especially as a mercantile editor. He examined the trades reports far and wide, and aimed at having early and reliable news from all the markets, reduced in size to suit this meridian. For years he reported the arrival of every ship at all the ports of the United States; gave special notice of cargoes and the rates of freights paid; and so in the markets every advance and decline that would affect Newburyport in its great products and staple manufactures were noted; and oftentimes his conclusions were quoted by Boston and New York papers as authority. In most of our industries, as he acquired property, he had investments, and often he purchased stocks that he might know more about them and thereby have the avenues of knowledge and acquaintance with men open to him. Thus, he

was a large ship-owner; and not only reported the value of their property, new and old, but he was an oracle that a large number of others, less informed, consulted for the government of their action. So in cotton and woolen manufactures, he not only owned largely in this city and was president of three corporations, but he invested in Maine and New Hampshire as well as Massachusetts, and watched the rise and fall of stocks as closely as Greely's exploring party did the thermometer when there was danger of being frozen to death. In more than three-score years we have never known a man who so carefully informed himself of what pertained to the welfare of our citizens or was more ready to invest in what would advance the interests of the town. If a steamboat, or a steam railroad, or a steam factory was needed, or the introduction of a horse-railroad, or water supply, he was the first to advocate the measure and the first to pay his money. There was no "boodle;" there was no pressing for the advantage over others; there was no selling the columns of his paper. A more honest man did not live. We saw him lose two thousand dollars one day, because the sale of his stock in a corporation in which he was a director, was likely to create a panic among other holders to their injury. As a rule he was successful in business transactions, save in real estate, and there his sympathy with the rent-payers prevented. After a trial of some years he sold all his real estate, save what he occupied, at a loss, because he would not distress the tenants. Nor would he suffer those more favored by fortune to influence his paper in the least against the masses of the people.

An intense excitement was raised in town by parties for and against the division of the "surplus revenue" nearly a half-century ago. It ran so high, virtually between the rich and the poor, that the former sent a committee to demand that one of the latter, favoring distribution, should no longer be employed in the *Herald* office. "Gentlemen," said he, "who runs this office? If I own it, I will never suffer any man to say who shall be employed in it." They went back, reported and returned to say that if the person named was not discharged, they would withdraw their patronage. "Go back," said he, "and say I will endure no dictation in the transaction of my own business." The next day one-third of all the patronage of the office was withdrawn; and near nightfall a very influential and wealthy gentleman called to say: "I am sorry you force us to ruin you." "I hope you will waste no sympathy," was his reply. He handed the gentleman his bill, and with it said, "Mr. —, you see that coat hanging on the wall?" "I do," was the answer. "I have worn that garment," continued Mr. Morss, "seven years. I can wear it seven years more. You can stop your paper; you have a right to; to control my office you have no right, and you never shall do it." Time ran on, and one by one they returned, thinking, in their calmer moments, more of the man who dared to do right.





*Wm. L. Page*



When his rights were invaded or any principle was at issue he was as brave as a lion, as immovable as a mountain, as unyielding as any soldier that ever stood on a battle-field, and as faithful as any martyr that ever died for his religion. At the same time he was one most charitable for the weak or erring; most liberal in opinions, always respecting the rights of others; most tender, sympathetic and self-sacrificing for the poor and the distressed. He would forgive a wrong done to himself, but not a wrong done to his friend or neighbor; and being square and honorable in his own action, if he hated anybody in human form, it was a deceiver and a hypocrite, the man who was selfishly false or the coward who dared not tell and defend the truth. He was very economical; he wasted nothing; but it was not a saving to hoard for himself, for he was generous to a fault. Sitting by his side for years, we never knew him to refuse aid to a charitable cause or repel the needy; and when affliction was upon those near to him there was an exceeding tenderness which we might look for in a woman, but seldom find in a man. No care was too great for him, no watching too long, no expense too lavish. The hard side of his nature turned towards himself; the tender and loving was for others, especially the young, the weak, the defenseless. But here we may not enlarge. We give an extract, not designed for the public eye, addressed to Rev. Dr. Daniel Dana, a better picture of the internal of the man than we could draw:

## AN OLD LETTER.

The following letter was addressed to the late Rev. Daniel Dana, D.D., on occasion of the fiftieth anniversary of his settlement as pastor of the Old South Church. A celebration was held at the house of Dr. Dana on High Street, which Mr. Morss was unable to attend. The letter is characteristic of the writer, whose firmness and lasting gratitude for kindness received from others, is conspicuous throughout, and it is expressed in his plain and limpid style, which was the charm of our friend's writings. The occasion itself will be remembered by many and the letter read with interest:

TUESDAY MORNING, NOV. 19, 1841.

"REV. DR. DANA, Dear Sir:

"The unceasing round of duties which the care of a daily newspaper imposes will prevent me from writing with your friends this evening in person, but I cannot resist saying that in spirit I shall assuredly be with them and you. In the multiplicity of kind offices which you have been busy during a long life in bestowing upon others, you, perhaps, may have forgotten under how much obligation you have laid a humble individual. But, sir, I have never forgotten that from the age of seven to that of twelve years, when poverty and sickness bore heavily upon me, and promised to be my only inheritance in this life, I was indebted to you for much of sympathy and generous aid. The first books which I ever read were in those moments of sorrow and dejection, received from your library, and I never recollect this now without that peculiar thrill which comes over us all, when we recur to moments in the past too ecstatic and too enrapturing to be looked for more than once in a lifetime. They opened to me vast and inexhaustible worlds of mental power and wealth, of which my young imagination had never dreamed. It was then that I acquired that taste for reading and reflection, which a great man has truly said are the greatest gifts that can be bestowed upon a mortal. They came upon me like opulence and liberty upon the tenant of a gloomy dungeon—like all the glories and the wonders of creation upon the newly-opened eyes of the blind. That I have not often acknowledged to you the kindness then shown to a child of sorrow and pain, is not because I had forgotten or was ungrateful for it, but because I knew that such generous devotion was but the ordinary even tenor of your whole life, that your reward would come from that source

whence cometh every good and every perfect gift, and that in the multitude of your able and willing friends I could claim a right to follow only afar off. Since those days to which I have alluded, God has bestowed upon me health, friends and prosperity far beyond not only what I have deserved, but all that I could have expected. In what I have learned of some things, however, I have found only that of immeasurably more I was utterly ignorant; that the mind which would vainly seek to soar into the regions of the empyrean, in the effort only falls like an undledged bird from its nest. In all the earthly blessings which cluster around us—in all the fields of knowledge which lie in the distance around us—and in all the yet unanswered aspirations of the soul—I have been taught by the experience which both adversity and prosperity bring, that humility and kindness are the only attributes to which frail mortality may aspire with the hope of reaching.

"Excuse, my dear sir, this hasty and, I fear, incoherent epistle, for it is written in the midst of my daily avocations and pressing business calls, which are not only unfavorable to philosophical reflection, but prevent me from looking over what the pen has briefly and hastily traced.

"Truly yours,

"REV. DR. DANA."

"JOSEPH B. MORSS.

In politics Mr. Morss was a Liberal Whig, and the *Herald* gave that party support, when Caleb Cushing was our Representative in Congress and Everett and Webster stood for Massachusetts in the Senate, and Henry Clay gave voice to that party in the country. After the dissolution of that party he supported the Democratic side. He was not ambitious of political honors, but was proud of his position as a journalist, believing it the place where he could have the largest influence for good. Still, he was four times a member of the Legislature,—in 1838, '39, '40 and again in '76. He was a delegate to the Constitutional Convention of 1853; two years he was an alderman, a director of the Public Library, and a trustee of the Putnam School. In addition to his being president of three cotton corporations he was president of the Water Company and director and treasurer of the Horse Railroad Company, and of the last two corporations he was the largest stockholder in town.

In religion he was a Unitarian, an active member of the First Church in his young days, during the pastorate of Rev. Thomas B. Fox, who was his near friend. The main points of his faith were the existence of the one God, the universal Providence that rules the world for good, and his firm belief in a future life, of which he had no doubt, and for which his constant effort was to be prepared. Life to him was an unending series of states and conditions, a progressive, onward existence, to which death was a change but not an end. He died in September, 1883, at the age of seventy-five years. Following of his offspring, four boys and one girl,—and leaving a widow and three daughters,—one of whom has since gone to her last rest.

DAVID PERKINS PAGE.<sup>1</sup>

David Perkins Page was born in Newburyport August 13, 1836, and was the son of a father of the same name, and Susan Maria (Lunt) Page. The father was one of the most distinguished teachers of his time, for several years master of the English High

<sup>1</sup> By Nathan N. Withington.





School in Newburyport, and at the time of his death principal of the New York State Normal School at Albany. He was the author of valuable books upon the profession of the teacher and methods of teaching, and a man of untiring industry and zeal in his profession, and of a thoroughness in whatever he undertook, which was an inherited trait of his son. The descent in the paternal line was from John Page, who was born in Dedham, England, in 1586, and who came to New England with Governor Winthrop in 1630, and settled in Dedham, Mass., and the family has from the first been one honored and respected in New England.

On the mother's side, the subject of this sketch came from old Newbury stock, which was noted from the settlement of the town for enterprise and patriotism. A Lunt had fought with John Paul Jones, they had been soldiers in the French and Indian Wars and in the War of the Revolution, and Captain Micajah Lunt, Mrs. Page's father, was one of the merchant princes of New England, a man of ability and integrity, who left children worthy of such a father, and his daughter, who became the wife of the distinguished teacher, and mother of Capt. David P. Page, was a woman of most lovely and estimable character, refined manners and uncommon intelligence, a lady whom it was a privilege to meet in social converse.

Captain Page was worthy of such ancestry. As a youth he was a favorite with his comrades and his teachers, active on the play-ground and assiduous in his studies. He attended the public schools of Newburyport and the Putnam Free School, and finished his studies at Thetford Academy in Vermont, profiting from his schooling by industry and attention, as was shown in his after-life that he had laid a good foundation in youth by reading and observation, and the power of expressing himself by fitting words, which appeared in articles contributed by him to the *Newburyport Herald*, over the signature of "Folium," and in the columns of *Harper's Magazine*. In the latter was also an indication of his artistic talent, as the illustrations were from his own pencil, and were of a high order of merit.

In 1852, when sixteen years of age, the youth went to sea, as was common with intelligent and enterprising young men in those days of commercial prosperity, when a seafaring life opened a promising career to enterprise, and energy, and sobriety. A sober, intelligent and active youth was almost certain to achieve the command of a ship in early manhood, with the prospect of becoming a merchant on his own account before he had arrived at middle-age. Such a career had been common with his relatives on his mother's side, who had first been ship-masters and then merchants. It was a family instinct which he followed, and in 1857, when he was but twenty-one years old, he obtained the position of captain of a ship trading to the East Indies, and as such he sailed until the breaking out of the Civil War, in 1861.

The war opened a new epoch in the life of Captain Page, as he entered the volunteer naval service as acting-master in command of the gunboat "Waterloo," rendering efficient service in protecting the commerce of the United States on the Pacific coast, which was assigned to him as a cruising-ground during the war, and the service was well performed, though it offered small occasion for distinction as a naval officer, the scenes of active operations being upon the other side of the continent; yet it was a no less useful service in the protection it afforded.

At the close of the war he again took command of a merchant ship, the "Sacramento," owned by William F. Weld & Co., of Boston, continuing in this employ successfully for several years. He was a skillful seaman and a good business man, and was highly appreciated by the owners, who were strict in their demands upon the ship-masters in their employ.

On the 5th of December, 1867, Captain Page was married to Miss Emily C. Wills (only daughter of Rufus Wills, Esq.) in St. Paul's Episcopal Church, in Newburyport. The family of the bride for several generations had been of the prosperous merchants of what had been one of the most prosperous commercial towns of the Commonwealth, and who, by their enterprise and business intelligence, had maintained their standing as merchants whose ships whitened every sea, after commerce in Newburyport had fallen into decay; their trade being with the East Indies, where one or the other usually resided. Two days after the marriage, on the 7th of December, 1867, the newly-married pair sailed on the steamship "Ontario" on their wedding tour, which embraced several months' travel, during which they saw the principal countries of Europe.

After the wedding journey Captain Page took command of the ship "Josiah L. Hale," owned by his uncle, Hon. Micajah Lunt, of Newburyport, and others, bound for Calcutta. On this voyage he was accompanied by his young and charming bride, and on the return voyage, on January 4, 1869, a son was born to them, who lived but a few hours. It was a sad loss, occurring, as it did, far from home and sympathizing friends, on the pathless wastes of the deep. They arrived in Boston in the spring of 1869, and this voyage was the last of Captain Page's seafaring life.

Upon his retirement from sea-going, at the early age of thirty-two years, in June, 1869, he commenced the business of ship-brokerage, in company with Mr. Charles H. Coffin, of Newburyport, in which city Captain Page continued his residence. This partnership lasted for three years, when it expired by limitation, and he formed a new partnership in the same business with Mr. E. L. Reed, which continued until the death of Captain Page, which occurred at Newburyport on the 23d of January, 1874, after a painful illness, during which he showed the courage and





*Cha' Toppau*





endurance of a hero and the resignation of a Christian. He left two children, named respectively for their paternal and maternal grandfathers,—David Perkins Page, born August 12, 1870, and Rufus Wills Page, born July 13, 1872, who reside with their widowed mother in Newburyport, giving good promise to be worthy of their parentage.

The death of Captain Page was a shock to a large circle of friends, as it was terrible to his family, as he was not thirty-eight years old, and so shortly before had seemed to be in the full possession of a vigorous manhood. The death of his father had been a like sudden affliction, as he had died at about the same age, the period of life when the mental and physical powers are strongest, and when death is most terrible. He was a man, too, like his father, who had his faculties at command, and made the most of them, and the death of such men before the life's work is done is a public loss, as well as a private grief to their friends.

Captain Page had a large circle of friends and acquaintances by whom he was beloved for his kindly, genial nature, respected for his integrity of life and character, and admired for his courage, energy and intelligence. He was affable and gentlemanly in his manners and inspired confidence in himself by his countenance, open as the day, and by his easy, self-possessed bearing he made others easy in his presence. He was a favorite with all who knew him, and his death was mourned by many besides the family to whom he was so dear.

His life was one of business or in the service of his country during the war, and he held no public office except that of vestryman of St. Paul's Episcopal Church in Newburyport, and the esteem in which he was held is expressed in the following resolutions, which were unanimously adopted at a meeting of the wardens and vestrymen of the church, January 28, 1874:

*Whereas* it has pleased God in his wise Providence to remove from our midst by a short and distressing illness our late associate, Captain David P. Page, therefore,

*Resolved*, That we place upon our records this testimony of our estimation of his character as a member of our board, deeply interested in all that concerned the welfare of this ancient Parish.

*Resolved*, That while we bow with submission to the Divine Will, we cannot but deeply regret the loss to the Parish and to ourselves of an exemplary Christian man, and gentleman, who during the short time he was a fellow-worshipper, won our esteem by his modest, unassuming demeanor and earnest desire to promote the spiritual welfare of his fellow-men.

*Resolved*, That while we extend to his bereaved widow and family our sincere sympathy in their great loss, we would respectfully suggest the comforting assurance, drawn from the teachings of Jesus Christ, that a life passed like his, in earnest endeavors to imitate the Divine Master and savior, has entitled him to a place among the saints made perfect.

#### CHARLES TOPPAN.

Among the early settlers of Newbury, Mass., was Abraham Toppan, who sailed from Yarmouth, Eng-

land, in May, 1637, and who, in October of the same year, was admitted to the rights and duties of a free-man of the infant colony, becoming, soon after his admission, one of the selectmen of the town. He seems to have been a man of education, as his signature, still preserved, is written in a scholarly hand, while his enterprise in business carried him to the West India Islands on several voyages which proved successful financially.

His numerous descendants, some of whom changed the spelling of the name to Tappan, became connected by marriage with many of the old and prominent families of Massachusetts and other States.

How the name was first changed is described by Lewis Tappan in the biography of his brother Arthur, who states that "after the death of Rev. Benjamin Toppan, in 1790, his children at a family meeting agreed to change the spelling to Tappan at the suggestion of the eldest son, who had for some time adopted that way of writing it."

One of the sons of Abraham Toppan, named Jacob, married Hannah Sewall, the sister of the able and widely-known Chief Justice Samuel Sewall, and of this line was born, in Newburyport, Charles, on February 10, 1796. His father, Edward, after serving in the Revolutionary army with his uncle, Colonel Little, of Newbury, became a partner of the mercantile firm of Hoyt, Coolidge & Toppan, whose losses caused by French spoliation have not yet been paid by the national government. His mother, who is described as a beautiful and amiable woman, was a sister of Captain Michael Smith, of the United States navy.

In early boyhood Mr. Toppan evinced great fondness for drawing, his leisure hours being devoted to sketching, and having read an account of the process of etching, he made so successful an attempt at copying an engraving of "Napoleon Crossing the Alps" that he was encouraged to further efforts. He was further stimulated by the approbation bestowed upon one of his drawings by Monroe, then Secretary of State.

His talent becoming known to Messrs. Draper, Murray & Fairman, the only bank-note engraving firm then existing in the country, which was established in Philadelphia, as the most important city of the Union at that time, he was invited by those gentlemen to join their ranks, which he did in 1814.

Applying himself to his profession with great ardor and perseverance, he soon became one of its leaders, being remarkable for the accuracy of his work, and being exceedingly rapid in execution.

In 1819 he went to London, accompanying Mr. Perkins, the inventor, and Mr. Fairman, who crossed the Atlantic with the expectation of being employed by the Bank of England, whose notes had been extensively counterfeited. Mr. Perkins was the inventor of a process which rendered counterfeiting very difficult and which had been successfully used in the



United States. Upon their arrival in England they were cordially received. In a letter to a member of his family, at home, Mr. Toppan writes from London :

"The engravers and amateurs in the arts are, one and all, extravagant in their encomiums upon the beauty of the work and the merits of the plan, and are willing to recommend it for adoption and assist for that purpose in any manner in their power. Heath, Lowry, Warren and many others who rank the highest in engraving have been to see us. They mostly called and introduced themselves, which is an evidence of their wish to form our acquaintance and a proof of the high estimation Messrs. Perkins and Fairman possess in the opinion of the public. We have found them all men possessing all the requisites of gentlemen in appearance and manners, and mental accomplishments corresponding to their rank as artists. Some of my specimens have been shown, and I was pleased to hear well spoken of. My large plate of Washington's farewell address, the title of which I have just completed, has astonished them. There has never been a plate of anything near the size engraved here, and there are at this time no engravers in the city who will attempt any large piece."

The English engravers claimed, however, that they were without rivals in the field of minute and fine letter engraving, as one of their number had engraved the Lord's Prayer in a circle somewhat larger than the space occupied by a ten-cent piece. Mr. Toppan, actuated by a feeling of national emulation, engraved not only the Lord's Prayer, but also the Ten Commandments in a yet smaller space. This is undoubtedly the most minute engraving ever made by hand on steel. By using a strong magnifying glass every letter is seen to be distinctly cut, and with perfect regularity.

In another letter to his family, speaking of the prospects of obtaining the work of the Bank of England, he writes :

"As yet nothing has been decided upon, but the prospects are so favorable as almost to assure us of success. Mr. Perkins dined a few days since with Sir Joseph Banks, who is president of the Bank Committee, and from the opinion he expressed with respect to the beauty, safety and ingenuity of the specimens shown him, there is no doubt of his influence being exerted in favor of their adoption. The specimens that have been presented by the English artists, and on which all their talent has been exerted, fell far short of the American in every respect, in the opinion of all who have seen both of them; and I am pleased to say there does not appear to be the least jealousy or the least hesitation among the artists and citizens in acknowledging the superiority and giving it as their wish that our plan should be adopted."

They were, however, disappointed in their expectations, the Bank Committee deciding not to use Mr. Perkins' patent at that time on account of the large price asked. In the mean time other bank work came to them on account of their acknowledged superiority, and the firm then established still exists in a flourishing condition in London.

After an absence in Europe of six years, during which he witnessed the funeral services of George III., the coronation of George IV. and the rejoicings in Paris over the birth of the Count de Chambord, the heir of the Bourbon line, Mr. Toppan returned to the United States, and in 1826 married Miss Laura A. Noxon, daughter of Dr. Robert Noxon, of Poughkeepsie, and granddaughter of Captain Lazarus Ruggles, who served in the Revolutionary army from Connecticut.

In 1828 he recommenced his career of bank-note engraving in Philadelphia, being joined by Mr. Draper,—Mr. Fairman being no longer living. For thirty years the firm, of which he was head, maintained the highest rank for beauty and excellence of work, until 1858, when the various bank-note engraving houses of the country united under the corporate name of the American Bank-Note Company. Mr. Toppan was chosen unanimously the first president, as his qualifications fitted him eminently for the position. After organizing and harmonizing the different parts of this large corporation, whose principal seat was in New York, with branches in Philadelphia, Boston, Cincinnati, New Orleans and Montreal, he resigned the presidency in 1860.

During his term of office Russia was the first foreign government to give a large order for bank-notes, recognizing the superiority of the American work; although some of the Canadian banks and some of the banks of the Swiss cantons had previously employed Toppan, Carpenter & Co., before the consolidation was effected, in 1858. Other foreign nations soon followed. Greece and Italy had certain series of their national notes engraved and printed in New York, Spain her revenue stamps. All the States of South America, which formerly sent to England for their bank-notes, now have recourse to the United States, while the distant empires of Japan and Australia complete the circuit of the globe.

Mr. Toppan was a member of various societies, a director of the Franklin Institute, of Philadelphia, a director of the Pennsylvania Academy of the Fine Arts and member of the Century Club, of New York. He was on terms of friendship with Irving, Bryant, Leslie, Newton, Marsh, Sully and other *literati* and artists.

In his views he was broad and liberal, conscientious in the discharge of duty, social and cheerful in disposition and was very generous, especially to young artists, many of whom he befriended. Being an excellent judge of art, he gathered around him a choice collection of paintings. His love for the beautiful in nature and art did not diminish with advancing years, as only a few days before his decease he was busy with his pencil sketching the picturesque scenes in the neighborhood of Florence, Italy, where he died in October, 1874.

#### SAMUEL JONES SPALDING.<sup>1</sup>

Samuel Jones Spalding was born in Lyndeborough N. H., December 11, 1820, and was the son of Abijah and Hannah (Eastman) Spalding, of a family of Puritan descent, the first of the direct line being Edmund Spalden, who, for a time, lived in Braintree, Mass., and was made a freeman May 13, 1645, and was one of the original proprietors and one of the officers of the town of Chelmsford, in the same State,

<sup>1</sup> By Nathan N. Withington.





*Prof. Phillips*





which was incorporated May 29, 1655. The family is one which has given leading and educated men to many parts of the Union in every generation.

The early life of the subject of this sketch was like that of many New England boys of that period. In April, 1824, his family removed to Dunstable (now Nashua), where the Nashua Manufacturing Company had begun the excavation of their canal, and were laying the foundation of their factories, and it was the prospect of more remunerative employment which had tempted the father to leave his farm among the hills. The schools which the boy attended were the old district schools, and he has no remembrance of the earlier teachers, as there were new ones each term, and there was only one short term in winter and one in summer.

At the early age of ten he was put into the machine-shop of the cotton-mill, and worked there more or less, each year, until he began to fit for college. He united with the Olive Street Congregational Church February 1, 1835, and the same spring began to fit for college in a select school, taught by George Cook, afterward president of the University of Tennessee; and he studied under several masters until he entered Dartmouth College, in 1838, where his room-mate during the entire course was Milton Mason, now of California, and where he maintained a good standing for scholarship, and was elected to the Phi Beta Kappa Society, which was the only relic of college rank.

During his college term Mr. Spalding taught school during the vacations, and on his graduation, in 1842, he taught a select school at Medway, Mass., and he intended to devote two or three years to teaching, but the opportunity offering, he entered the Theological Seminary at Andover in November, 1842, and teaching during the leisure time of the course, graduated from the seminary September 4, 1845, having been approbated to preach April 8th preceding, by the Andover Association.

On the afternoon of the day of his graduation he was urged by Dr. Toppan, of Augusta, Me., to go into the service of the Maine Home Missionary Society, which invitation he accepted, and engaged in the work for some time. In March, 1846, he was invited to preach by a new congregation, in Salmon Falls, N. H., and he was ordained as pastor of the church October 28, 1846, and under his pastorate a new church edifice was begun in 1849, and was dedicated May 1, 1850.

Mr. Spalding was married at Medway, Mass., June 27, 1848, to Sarah Lydia Metcalf, daughter of Hon. Luther and Sarah (Phipps) Metcalf; but in little more than a year she died, and was buried in Medway with the son she had borne.

Early in the spring of 1851 Mr. Spalding received a call from the Whitefield Church in Newburyport to become its pastor, and two councils were called before he was dismissed from the pastorate of the Sal-

mon Falls Church, and was installed over the Whitefield Church June 30th of the same year, the installation ceremonies being held in the North Church, of which Rev. Luther F. Dimmick was then pastor, the Whitefield Society worshipping in Market Hall. The work of building the Whitefield Church on State Street was begun soon after, and the edifice was dedicated March 2, 1852, when the sermon was by Rev. Lyman Beecher, D.D.

Mr. Spalding had married, for his second wife, Sarah Jane Parker Toppan, daughter of Hon. Edmund and Mary (Chase) Toppan, at Hampton, the residence of the widowed mother of the bride, on September 16, 1851, the marriage ceremony having been performed by Rev. R. D. Hitchcock, D.D.; and after boarding for a while they went to house-keeping, at 28 Green Street, on the 24th of August, 1852, where they have since resided, dispensing a generous hospitality in a home made attractive by a lady of brilliant conversational powers and extensive knowledge of books and men and women worth knowing. In this house Dr. and Mrs. Spalding have entertained many of the notable people of the time, and no hosts in Newburyport could entertain more delightfully than they. It was in the days of lyceums that they began their house-keeping in the fine, old-fashioned house on Green Street, and many of the noted lecturers were invited to partake of their hospitality.

Here came Horace Greeley, founder of the *New York Tribune* and leader of the generous and hopeful youth of America, simple, benevolent and brave. Professor and Mrs. Harriet Beecher Stowe were several times entertained by them; and on one occasion Mr. Stowe was met there by Miss Hannah F. Gould, just after "Uncle Tom's Cabin" had roused the reading world by its dramatic power. Miss Catharine Beecher, Mrs. Stowe's sister, was another guest. Charles Sumner passed a night in their house, and sat up till past midnight, looking over autographs, of which he had one of four of the best collections in the United States. John P. Hale, who went out of the Democratic party on the admission of Texas, and revolutionized the politics of his State, so that he was elected as a Free-Soil Senator, was another guest. Bayard Taylor, the poet, traveler and lyceum lecturer, was so pleased with his reception that in speaking of travel, he said: "New England against all the world for solid comfort! It has all the best of Old England, with the freedom and accommodation that make it set as easy as an old coat." Dr. I. I. Hayes, the Arctic explorer, was here hospitably received. Theologians of all shades and degrees have said grace at their table. Professors Phelps, Shedd, Park, Smyth, Tucker, Gulliver, Churchill, of Andover, and Professor Burrows, formerly of Andover and later of Oberlin, were here hospitably received. Rev. Drs. A. P. Peabody and James Freeman Clarke, Rev. Starr King and Bishop Clarke, of Rhode Island, were



among the guests. On one evening there were assembled at the tea table Rev. Dr. Withington, President White, of Cornell, Professor Vernilyce, of Hartford, and Rev. Dr. Seth Sweetser, of Worcester, and there was a delightfully brilliant discussion. The kindly and considerate poet, John G. Whittier, and his sister Elizabeth, whom he describes so beautifully in "Snow Bound," with her large, sweet, asking eyes, liked to visit this home. Lucy Larcom, the friend of Whittier and his sister, and the poet of kindred muse, is a frequent guest. Miss Mary Abby Dodge (Gail Hamilton) has here had many a merry encounter with other visitors. Miss Harriet W. Preston, author of "Aspendale," Mrs. Adelaide Budd, a poet, and widow of the editor of one of the agricultural papers in California, George William Curtis, the accomplished orator, essayist, critic and editor, and other notabilities have found in Dr. Spalding and his accomplished wife the most agreeable and entertaining hosts, liberal and sympathetic, with all that was profound in thought, brilliant in wit and generous in humanity. Such a home could not but become noted for its hospitality and attractiveness among a wide circle of people worth knowing.

Mr. Spalding was appointed December 29, 1862, chaplain of the Forty-eighth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers by Colonel E. F. Stone, its commander, and sailed from New York for New Orleans on January 17, 1863. This regiment was in active service at the siege of Port Hudson, and at Donaldsonville, and returned to Boston, arriving Sunday morning, August 30, 1863. During his service as chaplain of this regiment Mr. Spalding was given a vacation by the Whitefield Church and Society, by whom the pulpit was filled during his absence.

The degree of Doctor of Divinity was conferred on Mr. Spalding by Ingham University in 1861, and the same degree was conferred by Dartmouth College in 1872. Dr. Spalding has been actively interested in schools and education from early manhood to the present time. He served on the school committees of Somersworth, Rollinsford and Salmon Falls, and was fifteen years prominent and useful as a member of the School Board of the city of Newburyport. He was elected trustee of South Berwick Academy in 1849, and resigned in 1851. November 13, 1856, he was elected trustee of Hampton Academy, and is still a member of that board. He was elected trustee and secretary of Dearborn Academy in Seabrook, N. H., December 5, 1855, and resigned as secretary in 1864, and is still one of the trustees. He became one of the trustees of Dunmer Academy, in 1857, and secretary and treasurer of the board in 1864, but resigned as secretary in 1877, still retaining the office of treasurer of the board. He is also a member of the Massachusetts Historical and Genealogical Society. He has also taken an interest from the first in the Public Library, of which he is one of the permanent directors.

The resignation of Dr. Spalding as pastor was received and acted upon by the Whitefield Church November 2, 1883, to take effect on the first Sunday in January, 1884, unanimously passing resolutions of regret at parting with him as their pastor, of acknowledgment that the success of their church and its power for good in the community had been in a great measure due to the earnest labors and Christian example of their pastor, giving assurances of their confidence in his ability, integrity and piety, and earnestly hoping for his complete restoration to health, and many years of usefulness in the profession to which his life had been devoted. The parish also passed resolutions strongly regretting the separation of pastor and people, and of hopes that Dr. Spalding would retain his connection as a member of the church and society; and the council, also, which dismissed him, January 3, 1884, passed resolutions regretting the retirement of Dr. Spalding, and of high commendation of him, these resolutions having been drawn up by Rev. Charles Smith, of Andover, Rev. R. H. Seeley, D.D., of Haverhill (both since deceased), and Rev. D. T. Fiske, D.D., of Newburyport.

Under Dr. Spalding's ministrations the Whitefield Church was built up and flourished for many years; the membership increased, and additions and improvements were made to the church edifice which was erected on State Street early in his ministry. But it was not to his own church and society that his activities were limited, for Dr. Spalding has been one of the most public-spirited of the citizens of Newburyport, ready for every undertaking which would benefit its people, or make it attractive to strangers, either by beautifying it, or extending his own liberal hospitality, or encouraging merit in young men whose talents were yet untried. Whatever was for the advancement of any true interest of the city, moral, intellectual or material, he has been among the first to raise his voice and give a helping hand. While the lyceum lectures continued to attract audiences, Dr. Spalding was a leader in that enterprise, and entertained many of the lecturers at his own attractive house. He was one of those most active in forming the Tuesday Evening Club, a literary and social organization which has continued since 1870, and is still flourishing and vigorous; and scarcely an enterprise of any kind which promised well for the city of his adoption but has received the hearty support of Dr. Spalding, and he has refused it to none to which his attention has been called.

Dr. Spalding is vigorous in body and mind, having the *mens sana in corpore sano*, sound, wholesome and manly. He is a good preacher, and has remarkable powers as a debater, and writes with facility and force. He has the energy of a man of affairs, and a shrewd common-sense which makes him successful in what he undertakes, and restrains him from undertaking what is impracticable. But his most marked







*Charles C. Darnell*



characteristic is a catholic and tender sympathy, responsive to the intellectual, moral and physical wants and needs of others. It is this trait which has made him in such great demand for conducting funeral services, not only of members of his own congregation, but of very many others in Newburyport and its vicinity. The Episcopal Church has the burial service set down in the prayer-book, but the Congregational minister has the much more difficult and embarrassing task of making remarks and offering a prayer which shall not violate the truth nor the feelings of the surviving friends of the deceased. Dr. Spalding has the uncommon gift of saying enough and not too much, of not omitting what ought to be said, and of adding nothing to the truth, so that he has had calls from those who had no claim upon him but that of his generous nature and sympathetic feelings. It is this trait of sympathy which makes him excel in debate. He knows when he has those whom he addresses with him, and what arguments or appeals will affect each member and the whole body; and in the school committee room, with the trustees of the several academies of whose boards he is and has been a member, or in the association of ministers, or the church conferences, he is always a leader, and he either carries the question he advocates or makes it appear that it ought to succeed. His has been an active and busy life, and yet he has found time to encourage the young who are struggling for an education, and who have found in him a sympathizing friend. His life in Newburyport has been a beneficent one, both as a religious teacher and pastor of a progressive Congregational Church, and as an active citizen ready to raise his voice and employ his hand in every good word and work.

#### HON. CHARLES CHASE DAME.<sup>1</sup>

Hon. Charles Chase Dame rightfully receives an honorable place in this work, not because he is a son of Newburyport, but because, since his young manhood, he has been identified with the interests of this city and because he has here won and preserved a high reputation as a wise counselor, a trustful, public servant and as a man of sterling, irreproachable character.

Charles C. Dame is a descendant of John Dame, (formerly spelled Dam and Damme), who came from England in 1633 with Captain Thomas Wiggin and settled in what is now Dover, N. H. John Dame signed the celebrated protest of 1641; was one of the first deacons of the First Church in Dover (1633) and was prominent in the public affairs of this early colony on the Piscataqua.

Judge Dame, of Rochester, N. H.; Jonathan Dame, for many years a bank cashier in Dover, N. H.; and Harriet F. Dame, who received the thanks of the New Hampshire Legislature for her tender services

to the sick and wounded in the field for four years, 1861-65, are also of this family.

Charles C. Dame<sup>8</sup> is of the eighth generation from John Dame, the original emigrant, viz.: John<sup>1</sup>, John<sup>2</sup>, John<sup>3</sup>, Richard<sup>4</sup>, Benjamin<sup>5</sup>, Samuel<sup>6</sup>, Joseph<sup>7</sup>, Charles C.<sup>8</sup> Samuel<sup>6</sup> and Olive (Tuttle) Dame resided in Wakefield, N. H., where their children were born. Joseph<sup>7</sup>, their eldest son, was born May 1, 1784, who, by his wife, Satira, had eight children, viz.: Mary Ann<sup>8</sup>, born April 10, 1817; Charles C.<sup>8</sup>, born June 5, 1819; Loanmi B.<sup>8</sup>, born November 17, 1821; Joseph Calvin<sup>8</sup>, born March 19, 1824; Luther<sup>8</sup>, born March 3, 1826; Marshall Morrill<sup>8</sup>, born July 9, 1828; Satira A.<sup>8</sup>, born December 20, 1830; and Anna Chase, born May 14, 1833.

Charles Chase Dame<sup>8</sup>, married Frances A. Little of Newbury, Mass., September 1, 1842. They have had four children, two of whom survive, the others having died in childhood.

Mr. Dame was born June 5, 1819, at Kittery Point, District of Maine, Commonwealth of Massachusetts, where his parents resided. His father, born in Wakefield, N. H., was the first person in that town to enlist in the War of 1812, and was stationed at Fort McCleary, Kittery Point. After his military service he settled in Kittery and married, December 2, 1814, Satira, daughter of Joshua T. Chase, of Kittery, who was a man of note and enjoyed the confidence and suffrages of the inhabitants, for representative to the General Court at Boston for the seven successive years previous to the separation, and to the House of Representatives in Maine for the nine years next after the separation.

On the maternal side, Mr. Dame is a direct descendant of Aquila Chase<sup>1</sup>, of Newbury, Mass. He was one of the first settlers of Hampton (1639), but in 1646 removed to Newbury, and received several grants of land there. He was the first pilot on Merrimac River, and was a master mariner. Thomas Chase<sup>2</sup>, son of Aquila<sup>1</sup> and Anne (Wheeler) Chase, a resident of Newbury, was the father of Rev. Josiah Chase<sup>3</sup>, born November 30, 1713 (H. C. 1738), who was ordained as the first minister over Spruce Creek Parish, Kittery, September 19, 1750. He married, in 1743, Sarah Tufts, who was a great-granddaughter of Governor Bradstreet. Joseph Tufts Chase<sup>5</sup>, the maternal grandfather of Charles C. Dame, was a grandson of Rev. Josiah, who for thirty-eight years was the minister at Spruce Creek.

Joseph Dame<sup>7</sup> was a school-master, and taught for several years, prior and subsequent to his marriage, at New Castle, N. H., to which town the family moved when Charles C. was seven years of age. The family returned to Kittery Point four years after, and at the age of eleven years the lad, Charles C., began life for himself. He worked at honorable employment, and attended the usual winter school of that time. He was a student, a boy-farmer, a clerk in a store and a youthful mariner, as opportunity presented. At the

<sup>1</sup> By Oliver Ayer Roberts.



age of fourteen years he attended the High School at Portsmouth, N. H., for one year. The winter after he was sixteen he undertook the profession of his father, and taught school at Kittery Foreside, Maine. His teaching had quickened his own desire for more knowledge, and at the age of eighteen years he entered the South Newmarket Academy and pursued an academic education. He subsequently taught in Brentwood, N. H., and in June, 1839, came by request to Newbury, the home of his ancestors, and took charge of the school at the "Upper Green." Here he remained two years, when he was invited to take charge of a grammar school in Lynn, Mass., which he accepted on the 7th of February, 1841. Another promotion awaited him; for, May 2, 1842, he was elected principal of the South Male Grammar School in Newburyport, Mass. He was soon, however, transferred by the school committee of this city to the Brown High School. His health being somewhat impaired by his continued application to private study and teaching, he resigned on the 22d of February, 1849, and made a voyage to the Pacific shore, stopping for a short time in South America. He was absent two years. Returning to Newburyport, with his health and strength fully restored, he was invited in the fall of 1851 to take charge of the English Department of the Chauncy Hall School, Boston,—then, as now, one of the most noted and successful private schools in the country. Here he taught for nine years, but resigned in 1860, and opened a law-office in Boston, having been admitted in the county of Suffolk to practice in the courts of Massachusetts on the 8th of September, 1859. He was admitted to practice in the Circuit Court of the United States, District of Massachusetts, October 17, 1859, and as an attorney and counselor in the Supreme Court of the United States March 22, 1876. He retained his residence in Newburyport while teaching in Lynn and Boston, and also while practicing law in the latter city. He was appointed by President Andrew Johnson collector of internal revenue for the Fifth District of Massachusetts, a position which he held under the successive administrations of Presidents Johnson, Grant, Hayes, Garfield and Arthur, until August 1, 1883. The field of his official care was greatly enlarged in 1875 by the addition by consolidation to the Fifth District of the Sixth, Seventh and a part of the Fourth Districts of Massachusetts. During his fifteen years of public service as collector of internal revenue, though the average collections were one million of dollars per year, the government did not lose a dollar by his administration, nor were there any discrepancies in his accounts. At the conclusion of his service his accounts were promptly adjusted and settled, Mr. Dame having proved himself a model officer in both method and manner. The great increase in his duties and cares, occasioned by the consolidation of 1875, caused him to entirely forego the

practice of law until 1883, when he opened a law-office in Newburyport, where he still resides and pursues his chosen profession. His residence is on the easterly side of High Street, between Bromfield and Marlboro' Streets. It is a large, comfortable dwelling,—the same in which he established his home in 1842, and the same house in which he tarried when he came to Newburyport in June, 1839. He is a director of the Merchants' National Bank, a trustee of the Institution for Savings and a member of the various educational and philanthropic institutions of the city. He is a member of the Veteran Artillery Company of Newburyport, also of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Boston. He was the commander of the former in 1870, and is at present judge advocate.

Mr. Dame has been interested in national and State politics and especially in the welfare of his adopted city. He has been a member of the School Board of Newburyport, of its Common Council and of its Board of Aldermen. In 1886 he was the mayor of the city. His administration was characterized by conservative action, careful expenditure and a studied attention to the best interests of the people. He was elected to the State Senate in 1868, to represent the Fourth Essex District. Originally he was a Whig, but at the formation of the Republican party he gave it his adhesion and has since been identified with it. He was a member of the Republican State Committee for several years prior to his appointment as collector, but under the order of President Hayes, in regard to officers of the national government identifying themselves with local politics, he resigned that position. He was replaced upon that committee in the year 1886.

Mr. Dame has been prominently identified with the Masonic Fraternity, and has given to its interests his best thought and strength. He became a member of Revere Lodge, in Boston, in 1857; of St. Andrew's Royal Arch Chapter, and of Boston Commandery K. T., in 1858, and of Boston Council of Royal and Select Masters, in 1859. He received the Ineffable Degrees in Raymond Lodge of Perfection, Lowell, Mass., in 1862; in Raymond Council of Princes of Jerusalem, in Mt. Calvary Chapter of Rose Croix, and in Massachusetts Consistory, all in Lowell, Mass., in 1862. On the 22d day of May, 1863, he was made an honorary member of the Supreme Council of Sovereign Grand Inspectors-General of the Thirty-third and last Degree of the Northern Masonic Jurisdiction of the United States of America—an honor to which his valuable services to Freemasonry well entitled him.

He was Worshipful Master of Revere Lodge in 1860 and 1861, High Priest of St. Andrew's Royal Arch Chapter in 1861 and 1862, having served as King in 1860 and as Scribe in 1859, and previously held subordinate offices in that Chapter. He was Grand King of the Grand Royal Arch Chapter of Massachusetts in 1862. Having received the Orders of Knighthood in Boston







*Albert C. Titcomb,*



Commandery K. T. in 1858, he was the Eminent Commander of that Body in 1866-67.

Sir Charles C. Dame was Commander of Hugh De Payens Commandery K. T., of Melrose, while it worked under a dispensation, and by his efforts in its behalf won the esteem and love of all his associates. He is an honorary member of that Body. He is an honorary member of all the Masonic Bodies, Lodge, Chapter and Commandery, in his adopted city, and in 1867, when a new lodge of A. F. and A. M. was constituted in Georgetown, Mass., the Brethren interested gave it the name of Charles C. Dame Lodge. He was the Illustrious Commander of Boston Consistory, A. and A. Rite, in the years 1863, 1864 and 1865. He held the office of Deputy Grand Master in the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts, A. F. and A. M., in 1862, 1863 and 1864, and was elected Grand Master of Masons in Massachusetts in 1865, 1866 and 1867. He became, by unanimous election, in 1881, a member of the Board of Directors of the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts for two years, and has been continued upon that Board until the present time.

December 10, 1884, at the establishment of the Masonic Education and Charity Trust, he was elected a Trustee thereof, for the term of seven years from January 1, 1884, and at the organization of the Board of Trustees he was elected its Secretary, a position which he still occupies.

He has also served on prominent special committees of the Grand Lodge, to whose work he always brought that sound judgment and conservative action for which he is so well known.

In no other position which he has held were his anxieties and responsibilities greater than during his term of three years as Grand Master of Masons in Massachusetts. The Grand Lodge had previously voted that its Temple should be built (the foundation was laid), and that the debt should be paid, but it provided no means with which to do either. M. W. Charles C. Dame continued the building, on the site purchased and on the foundation laid, through two years of business depression and of ceaseless anxiety, when, his own resources being exhausted, nothing but herculean labor and an heroic soul could prevent immediate and absolute disaster. The friends of the Masonic Institution, by the efforts of the Grand Master, gave their assistance, and at his solicitation R. W. Sereno D. Nickerson became a member of the Board of Directors, and entered upon the duty of surmounting the difficulties which embarrassed the Grand Lodge.

The work of building did not cease, and the property of the Grand Lodge did not suffer. It was a long, hard struggle, in which Brethren with brave hearts and ample resources gathered around and supported their Grand Master in this work—the greatest the Fraternity ever undertook in Massachusetts. In 1867 the Temple, on the corner of Tremont and Boylston streets, was dedicated, with elaborate and solemn services, in

the presence of President Andrew Johnson, of distinguished Freemasons from different States, and of an immense concourse of Massachusetts Brethren. M. W. Charles C. Dame triumphed in the completion of the Temple, a triumph second only to that when, in 1883, the entire debt of the Grand Lodge was wiped out.

The character and ability of Hon. Charles Chase Dame are apparent from the foregoing facts.

Of limited opportunities in boyhood, like many others, working his way upward in the world, persistent, studious, honorable, he has attained a place in the esteem of the community which commands respect, veneration and love. Unassuming, and, to some extent, diffident, he possesses powers of execution, as well as of judgment, which cannot be easily baffled. True to his sense of right, calm amidst anxieties, manifold in resources, fearless of opposition, generous and kind, his great rule in life seems to have been, "To do to others as he would be done by." He is respected near and far by all who have met him; he is beloved by all who share an intimate acquaintance with him. In form he is the embodiment of health and strength; of mind, clear and logical; of heart, tender and sympathizing; honorable in every relation, true under every circumstance. Such a man is Charles Chase Dame, and is, therefore, entitled to an honorable place in the history of the city and county.

#### ALBERT CUSHING TITCOMB.<sup>1</sup>

Titcomb is an honorable name in the annals of our town. William was the first, coming from Newbury, England, on the ship "Hercules," in 1634. The next year he was at Newbury, with Rev. Thomas Parker, founding a town bearing the name of their former residence. Many of their associate settlers were from the same neighborhood. His name appears as an original land-holder. He was a farmer; a man of education and means; was a freeman in 1642, selectman in 1646, representative to General Court in 1655 and always influential in church and town affairs. In the long contest between the majority of the First Church and Mr. Parker, on church government, he was active on the popular side—that the people, not the pastor, should rule. Mr. Parker had been willing to *permit* such control; they claimed it of *right*. The Puritans were jealous of all encroachments upon civil or ecclesiastical freedom. Bancroft says: "They asked no absolution; they raised no altar; they invoked no saints; they paid no tithes; they saw in the priest nothing more than a man. The church, as a place of worship, was nothing but a meeting-house. They dug no graves in consecrated ground; they married without a minister and buried their dead without a prayer." Cherishing such ideas, they rebelled against authority not confirmed by the people, and went so far as to notify Mr. Parker that they had

<sup>1</sup>By George J. L. C. Dy.





voted his suspension. The court being appealed to however, sustained the pastor, and William Titcomb, with others, was fined. He died in 1676, leaving children born to him by his wife, Joanna Bartlett. By his will his son Penuel was his heir.

Early the Titcombs owned land in what is now the centre of the town, back of Oak Hill Cemetery, and on Greenleaf street, where the Boston and Maine freight station stands, and in process of time they had estates in other parts of Byfield, West Newbury and Newburyport, as they are now called. When the water-side became the chief place of business, we find them both below and above Market Square, owning wharves and stores. William, many years a revenue officer, was located just below where the Custom-House now stands. Josiah was just above the Market, on Broadway, when it was a broad way, before encroachments had narrowed it. He had a fine mansion at the head of what was then Titcomb's wharf, where he gave the most fashionable parties, the gentlemen wearing wigs and short clothes with silver knee and shoe-buckles; the ladies wearing caps and ruffles, after their fashion; and all drinking punch from the silver cups common in that day. There, too, the servant girls received their lovers at the back-doors, and charmed them in the corners of the big fire-places o' winter nights beside the oak logs on huge andirons. It is only about thirty years since fire devoured the building. Near by was the blacksmith's shop belonging to the gallant Colonel Moses Titcomb, one of the great men of colonial times. On the opposite side of the road still stands the Hodge house, which belonged to Michael Hodge, who married one of Josiah's daughters. Above, near the east corner of Green and Merri-mac Streets, was the residence of the redoubtable General Jonathan Titcomb, one of the heroes of the Revolution, who thought he was entitled to sleep o' nights, and when a company beating a bass-drum heeded not his order to depart in peace, having only his night-clothes about his person, he rushed into the street and thrust his trusty sword through the drum-head, silencing it forever. On Market Street was the home of Master George and Honorable Enoch, the birth-place of generations of Titcombs. Then there was Samuel, after whom Titcomb Street was named, living on State Street, where the John Carr house now stands, who owned the whole square from High to Harris, and from State to Green Street, with the exception of the site of the Wolfe Tavern. Captain John Buntin married his daughter Rebecca, and with the bride received the house-lot on the south corner of the square named, where three generations of Buntins have had a home. Samuel was a rich merchant, and had estates in West Newbury and Pelham, and Salsin, New Hampshire.

We may not stop for all the details. What we have said of William, the root of the prolific tree that has extended its branches to all sections of the country, from Maine to the Pacific, and from the Lakes to the

Gulf of Mexico, is true of them all. They are a race sturdy and strong, excelling in mental culture, furnishing teachers, preachers and business men of high character. They have been eminent in the churches, inclined to godly works and conversation, thrifty and wealthy above the average of families, and as brave and fearless defenders of liberty and right as the country has ever had.

Our space does not admit of the names alone of the many Titcombs who won renown in war, but no one of them stands higher than that of Colonel Moses, who, nevertheless, according to the usage of the times, was a slave-holder. We find under date of 1739, William Johnson, shipwright, "giving, granting, selling and conveying to Moses Titcomb, his heirs and assigns forever, a certain negro man named Cambridge, of twenty-one years," and affirming that the "said Moses Titcomb, his heirs and administrators, shall, by virtue of this deed, have, hold, use and improve the said negro man Cambridge, during the whole of his natural life." Colonel Moses was born in 1700, to William Titcomb, whose wife was Anne Cottle, and she was also a slave-owner, for in the graveyard of the First Church of Newbury can now be seen a head-stone to one of Mrs. Cottle's slaves. The Cottles lived on what is now Bromfield Street, formerly "Cottle's Lane," and were quite rich. Anne was one of the beauties of the town, traditions say. Then Colonel Moses married Merriam Currier, and his daughter became the wife of Nicholas Tracy, whose house was what is now the Public Library building—a man of great wealth, of many estates on the land, of whole fleets of ships on the seas, and also of unbounded liberality, public spirit and patriotism. We see, therefore, how Colonel Moses Titcomb, himself a blacksmith, with his fires burning at the head of the first wharf below Green Street, had a use for men servants and maid servants, and how he could draw funds for his uses in war.

From the portrait of him, as we have seen it, he was a very handsome man, large, stately, with broad shoulders, abundant dark hair, full black eyes and a lovely mouth; he did credit to the pretty Anne Cottle, his mother, and was one of the most popular men and military leaders that Essex County ever produced. He was the best type of those whom nature designs for noblemen. With every muscle developed in the active labors of his business, he stood, towering above the average man like a Greek or Roman athlete of ancient days. When in his military career, his soldiers needed amusement, as they tired in the delays in the siege of Louisbourg, he could beat any man in the regiment in pitching heavy quoits, throw any one in wrestling, excel any in lifting, and was as fearless as he was strong. In that war, under Gen. Pepperell, holding commission as major, from his own means, he furnished a battery of five forty-two pounders, called Titcomb's battery. Hutchinson says: "It did as great execution as any



battery in the reduction of the city;" and his readiness to engage in the most hazardous part of the service "was acknowledged and applauded." He returned from the victorious contest with high honors, bringing as a memorial trophy the bomb-shell that now decorates the stone post at the corner of Middle and Independent Streets. Later, in 1755, he was colonel of a regiment, on the extreme right of Gen. Johnson's line, in the battle of Lake George. As he approached the enemy's breast-works, and was near thereto, for the preservation of his men he ordered them to lie down, where they were covered from view by the bushes, while, the better to direct them, he stood behind a pine tree, an Indian, creeping across a swamp to the rear, fired upon and killed him. As his men retreated, his body was never recovered.

Col. Titcomb was a member of the First Church (now Unitarian), and a close friend of his pastor, Rev. John Lowell, who preached a farewell sermon when the regiment left and a funeral sermon on the return. His language could only be justified by Col. Titcomb's fame as a man and a soldier, for he spoke of his loss as a national calamity which would be mourned by the whole country.

Among other military men of the family we may not forget General Jonathan Titcomb, who was also a Christian soldier—an elder in the Presbyterian Church. He was born in 1727, and greatly distinguished himself in the battle of Rhode Island, under General Sullivan. Lafayette declared it the best-fought battle during the Revolutionary War, and said that the conduct of Generals Lovell and Titcomb, commanding the Massachusetts troops, was deserving of "high praise;" in fact, it was a victory wrung from the very jaws of defeat. General Titcomb was a member of the convention that framed the Constitution; was Representative of the first Legislature after the evacuation of Boston; was first naval officer of this port; and was chief of the committee of reception when Washington was here, in 1790. His death occurred in 1817.

Under General Titcomb in the battle of Rhode Island was Major Litch, born in 1752, who died in 1814, full of honors, for few men were ever held in higher esteem by the town. He was an exemplary Christian—deacon of the First Presbyterian Church, and afterwards of the Second Presbyterian, of which he was one of the founders, almost its father; at least he was its most liberal friend; he gave a thousand dollars towards building the "meeting-house," and ceased his contributions for its support only at his death. It was through him that Timothy Dexter gave the bell that now calls the people to their weekly worship. As a magistrate, which he was for many years, it became his duty to sentence Timothy to the house of correction for "imbibing" too freely; Dexter rode to the prison in his own coach, as Jonathan Plummer, his poet, wrote, his horses "champing their

silver bits." His sentence was soon remitted by the kindly intervention of Esquire Enoch, whom he would gladly have remunerated. When the money was declined, he gave it for the bell, which was cast in England, with Timothy's name on the rim of it as donor. Hon. Enoch held many positions of honor and trust. He was a member of the Constitutional Convention; a Representative and a Senator in the Legislature for a long time; and for twenty-eight successive years town treasurer. He declined further elections only when failing health warned him of approaching dissolution. The profound respect of the people for this man, who had served "his day and generation" in peace and war, in church and state, was indicated at his funeral, when the head of the funeral procession was at the grave on Burying Hill, before the last of the mourners had left the house on Market Street. He died in 1814, aged sixty-two.

Hon. Enoch was the father of Francis, who married Miss Sallie D. Dodd, of Salem. He was a silversmith, learned his trade of William Moulton, and was a long time in his employ. Francis was the father of seven children—five sons and two daughters—all of whom have passed through "the gates ajar" and gone to their final rest, except Albert C. Titcomb, born in 1831, whom we have chosen as the living representative of this family, and herewith present his portrait.

Albert C. obtained the rudiments of a common-school education in his native town, and was left to finish it by intercourse with the people and by travels and observations in this "wide, wide world." He was one of the pupils of Masters Coolidge, Caldwell and Read, who managed the "monitorial" school on the west end of the Mall, from which he graduated to begin life for himself at fourteen, in the dry-goods store of Joseph F. Toppan on State Street. After that he was clerking in Boston, two years, when, in 1849, the California gold fever, which carried off so many of our young men, struck him. He sailed for San Francisco, from this port, in the brig "Charlotte," Captain William Bartlett, paying fifty dollars passage money and working out the remaining fifty dollars before the mast; the voyage was around Cape Horn, and required just six months. He was an argonaut seeking the golden fleece. On the 23d day of July, 1849, he landed in a strange city without money and without friends to help him. He remained in California two years, mining and clerking; then he sailed for Relejo, Central America. Here he invested his funds in the hotel business, and in purchasing coffee and shipping the same to San Francisco. The prospect of success was good, as the expectation was that Relejo would become an important place; but suddenly it was left off "the main road of travel" by the opening of the Port of Virgin Bay, which shortened the distance, *via* Lake Nicaragua, by over one hundred miles. The stampede that followed left Relejo desolate, and the investments Mr. Titcomb had there made worthless. The spring of 1852 found him





twenty years old, at home, somewhat broken in health, but not subdued in spirit.

His next venture was in the machine-shop of the Bartlett Mills, under Herbert A. Ingraham, master mechanic, agreeing to work for six months without compensation, to learn a trade. At the end of two months Mr. John Balch, agent of the corporation, pleased with his industry and skill, put his name on the pay-roll at forty-two cents a day; and when his six months had expired, he was in a machine-shop in Roxbury for one year; and thence went into the shop of the Old Colony and Fall River Railroad till 1855. That ended his career as a machinist. Next he was engaged for a traveling salesman with Robinson, Potter & Co., manufacturing jewelers, at Providence, R. I., for two years. After that he was in the same line of business for himself in the South and West, with a wholesale and retail store, for jewelry and fancy goods, at Mobile, which he regarded as his permanent residence. He did a prosperous business, and made many friends in Alabama and was a member of the Mobile Cadets, which was composed of the *élite* of the city—the flower of Southern chivalry, ready for the fight when the booming shells on Sumter's walls announced the opening of the Rebellion. He had but little time to decide which side he would take; nor did he hesitate. "I am Northern born and Northern bred," he said. "My ancestors were among the first settlers of New England, and every war for American liberty has found them in the field; I go to my kindred." He experienced some difficulty in getting himself and wife out of the country, and a property of more than twenty thousand dollars was abandoned to confiscation. Again he was to begin the world anew; and this time with a debt of many thousands owed in New York. But he was not appalled. An honest purpose and a brave heart remained, and they carried him through. He met his creditors, who knew him, believed and trusted him; and in 1863 he was re-established in the same business in the West Indies—at the Islands of St. Thomas and Curaçoa, the latter a free port, so near the coast as to have a large trade with South America, which was then opened to him. His receipts were in gold, which was at a high premium at home, and he was soon able to redeem his outstanding notes. All the demands of his creditors were paid in gold. "I took your gold from you," he said, "and I return your gold to you with the premium that goes with it." They receipted his bills and sent him complimentary letters, of which he is justly proud, as will be his children after him.

It is with a degree of admiration that we follow him thus far in life; see him a poor boy, steady, industrious, honest; watch him working his passage around Cape Horn; seeking wealth in the golden sands; overcoming difficulties in Central America; resisting Rebellion at the South; retrieving his fortunes in the

West Indies; re-establishing financial credit in New York; and trusting to his own hands, head and heart in making the road to success before he traveled over it. All along he cherished his first love for California, and as soon as circumstances would permit he was away to the State where his hopes and affections centered. For seven years, from 1868, he was of the firm of Titcomb & Williams, wholesale dealers in watches, diamonds and jewelry in San Francisco; and after that for twelve years he was the sole proprietor of the house, the business increasing till his sales reached \$250,000 per annum. He became a leader in his trade, and was president of the Wholesale Jewelry Association of San Francisco. Chiefly his business was along the Pacific Coast, from the Mexican ports on the south to Washington Territory on the north. Over the waters it reached the Sandwich Islands, and in the interior it was known as far as Utah, which he visited himself, making the acquaintance of John W. Young, son of Brigham Young, the late president of the Mormons, and also of H. B. Clawson, the manager of the great central house, "Zion's Co-operative Mercantile Institution."

He employed commercial travelers and personally visited the large cities. Since 1849, Mr. Titcomb has traveled forty times to California. Once he went around the Horn, six times through Central America and *via* Panama, and the remaining trips across the continent overland by rail.

In his business he has visited nearly all the States of the Union.

Twice has he married,—first to Miss Ellen Graves in 1860, a lovely woman who bore him two sons, one of whom died early and the other, William Graves Titcomb, is now employed in the office of the Waltham Watch Company, Boston. She died in 1882.

Two years later he married Hitta Louise, the accomplished daughter of Mr. Amos C. Clement, of Plaistow, New Hampshire, by whom he has one son, Albert Clement, and an infant daughter.

He is now retired from active business, enjoying his vacation in one of the most pleasant homes on High Street, formerly occupied by the late Rev. Dr. Morss, the well-known rector of St. Paul's Episcopal Church.

He is himself, as were his parents, of the same religious faith, and given to Christian benevolence and the propagation of the truth as he has received it. While in San Francisco he was one of the incorporators of the Young Men's Christian Association and one of the foremost of its friends in aiding Evangelist Moody to raise eighty-three thousand dollars to free it from debt.

The activity of his past has unfitted him for a life of indolence, and as heretofore he makes himself of value to the community in which he resides.

He was largely instrumental in the reorganization of the Newburyport Veteran Association.

At the recent municipal election he was elected by







*P. H. Blumpee*



the largest majority as alderman from Ward Four on the Independent Citizens' ticket.

Mr. Titcomb is a thorough sportsman, passionately fond of his dog and gun and the pleasures and excitement of the chase.

In his travels through the length and breadth of this vast continent he has had many and varied opportunities to gratify this taste and has killed nearly every species of game to be found in America.

To the devotees of the gun, whose opportunities for bird-shooting have been limited to the waters of this and surrounding parts, an abstract from an article which appeared in the *San Francisco Chronicle* of January, 1883, will seem remarkable. We quote:—"On Thursday last Mr. A. C. Titcomb bagged one hundred and forty-two ducks in one day that were retrieved, not including a large number that fell in tules and were lost. This bag included seventy-two canvas-backs, fifty-two sprigs, four mallards and fourteen teal. It is doubtful if Mr. Titcomb's record has ever been beaten on this coast."

We know of no man better calculated to enjoy social and domestic life. In the prime of his days, possessed of large means, active, public-spirited, actuated by Christian charity, with an open hand and an open heart, alive to the misfortunes of others and the sufferings of friends, he attaches to himself all within the sphere of his usefulness.

A cleaner, gentler or more kindly nature never man possessed. It is surprising that one could have been so much about the world, seeing the rough and dark as well as the light and sunny sides, and kept his mind so clean and his heart so pure and childlike. Still, there is nothing weak or effeminate about him, for in the defense of an opinion or the honor of a friend he is as bold as a lion. It is true of him that "his flag is white because 'tis pure, but not because his soul is weak."

With an open countenance and a pleasant smile, he wears a modest and unruffled demeanor and is always the same, whatever events befall, ready for every good word and work.

With feminine delicacy and tenderness, he is still the most manly of men. Large and liberal in his views, he exhibits no envy or jealousy; rejoicing with the glad, sympathizing with the sorrowing, he is a man to be loved, one who will sacrifice for a friend or forgive an enemy. He reminds us of the words of Whittier on Joseph Sturge:

"The very gentlest of all human natures,  
He joined to courage strong,  
And bore, outstretching unto all God's creatures  
With sturdy hate of wrong.

"Tender as woman; manliness and meekness  
In him were so allied  
That those who judged him by his strength or weakness,  
Saw but a single side.

"Men failed, betrayed him; but his zeal seemed nourished  
By failure and by fall;  
So large the faith in human kind he cherished,  
And in God's love for all."

#### PHILIP HENRY BLUMPEY.<sup>1</sup>

Philip Henry Blumpey is a merchant, and was apparently born at the place he has filled and does now occupy, than which there is none more honorable or more useful. There is always a ruling class in society—in the world, differing according to the grade of civilization reached. In a barbarous age it is the aristocracy of the soldiers; and the point of the sword writes the law and determines the sovereignty. Next after comes the aristocracy of birth, and men claim to rule simply because they were born; above that is the aristocracy of gold, and money governs. To-day the merchants—the men who buy and sell, collect and distribute—are the most prominent, respectable and powerful class. They include not alone the man of the shop, but the banker, the money-changers, the loaners, the manufacturers, the owners of ships, the builders of cities and the dealers in all sorts of goods and values. The occupation of the merchant is a continued school, and hence in the large cities they are the most distinguished and influential men of the land. Congress may make laws, but they make Congress—which is obedient to this will; and so in the end are the people, the foundation of all. When, therefore, we say a man is a merchant, we say what is most honorable to him; and so we mean to place it in the case of Philip H. Blumpey, who is of French origin, his father coming from those bold and sturdy religionists, the Huguenots, driven out of France by persecutions, who have in themselves and their descendants added materially to the best population in America. They are in all parts of the United States, their names often indicating their origin.

The father of Mr. Blumpey, in the island of Guernsey, in the English Channel, was known as Philip Blanc, the surname being the same as the loftiest peak of the Alps. When eleven years old he left his native island for the life of a seaman on the bounding billows. Shortly he is seen on board of an English ship, where the sailors corrupted the name in its use, and ever since it has been called Blumpey. The father came to Newburyport some eighty years ago, a very handsome young man, with black hair and bright, penetrating black eyes. He stood little less than six feet in height, was strong and wiry. He married Ruth Rowe, of Hampton, N. H., but continued a seaman till well along in life, when he was in the employ of the Pipers, riggers, on Brown's Wharf, and frequently with Moses Brown, in the care and repair of his shipping. He died at eighty-four years.

The family lived at different times on Pond Street, near the hay-scales, then standing to the east of the present railroad station, on the corner of Birch and Summer Streets, and in Temple Street. Here they were when, in 1819, a fire broke out in the stable standing where the present one is, that swept away several buildings, [including the house where the

<sup>1</sup> By George J. L. Colby.





Blumpeys lived, from which the parents escaped, saving the life of their child, Philip H., then an infant. Their little savings were lapped up by the flames, and penniless in the world, it was too late for them to recover their situation in a day when the accumulations of money by hard work were slow.

Philip H. Blumpey, therefore, started life as the child of poor but respectable parents," but destined to overcome his accidents by persevering industry and faithfulness to duty. He had the benefit of our common schools, of the teachings of Master Jonathan Cooledge, in the West Male Grammar School, and of Master George Titcomb in the South Grammar School, on School Street. He left these institutions, educational and correctional, as most boys found them, at the age of thirteen years, to learn the art of making sails with Thomas H. Boardman. The learning of a trade was deemed a good start in life. We have noticed this in the records of old wills, where more was given to one and less of property to another, as they were without a trade or had learned one. They believed with the Arabs that "he who brings up a son without a trade, brings him up to be a thief." So when Mr. Boardman died, at the end of two years, it was deemed so great a misfortune to Philip H. Blumpey, that an old merchant sympathetically asked him: "What will you do now?" The lad had lost a friend, but not his courage, and replied: "There yet remains some place for me in the world." His proper place he soon reached. For two years, or to 1826, he was a clerk in the grocery store of Isaac H. Boardman, in Market Square, at the head of Greenleaf's wharf; and after that, for eight years, he was in the grocery store of John Osgood, on the corner of Liberty street. With the experience of ten years, in 1844, he commenced business for himself on the corner of State and Temple Streets, and there he has remained for forty-four years, quietly earning annually more than he spent, which is the real secret to wealth. Some people predicted evil to him, because the location was away from the centre of trade. They mistook the fact that the man makes the place, not the place the man. The first year his gross sales were \$10,000, third year \$25,000, and later, when prices advanced during the Rebellion, they reached \$60,000, and the average of the whole forty-four years has been \$40,000, which is a very good retail business out of the large cities. His success has been in this: that he was an expert in the quality of his goods, and would sell only the best; then he so established his integrity that his customers believed they were buying what he said he was selling; and their confidence he has never lost. He prospered, therefore, because industry and fair dealing deserves to prosper.

But this has not been his only business, or the most profitable. Twenty-five years ago there was scarcely a rich man in the town who had not become so by investments in shipping; and in 1855 he turned his

attention to navigation, taking an interest in the ship "George West," Robert Couch, master and part owner. She sought a cotton freight in New Orleans. Captain Couch fixed his terms and laid up the ship in the Mississippi till his figures were reached. At Liverpool she was taken for China on French account, and made a very handsome voyage, returning to England, where she sold at a high price, when gold was at from seventy to eighty per cent. premium. It was one of those rare chances where the value of the ship is buried beneath her income. His second venture was with the ship "Josiah L. Hale," sailing first under command of Edward L. Graves, and later under Capt. David P. Page, in cotton carrying. His third was in the ship "Tennyson," which, returning from India, loaded with jute, went down in a storm in the Indian Ocean, and Capt. Graves and his crew, except four or five men, were swallowed in the sea. The saved floated on the cabin-house several days without food or water before they were rescued by a passing ship. His next ship was named "Whittier," for our New England poet, Capt. William Swap in charge. She was lost on a coral reef on the coast of China, in going from one port to another. His last was the ship "Nearehus," Capt. Pierce, named for the famous Greek admiral, who lived in the time of Alexander the Great. She was soon sold, during the Rebellion, to a prominent house in New York. Since that, shipping, before profitable, has been ruinous to those engaged in it.

Mr. Blumpey has never sought office. He has declined flattering political offers, and confined himself entirely to business or what was allied to it. He was some years a director of the Merchants' Bank, and is now its president; and for thirty years he has been a trustee of the Five Cent Savings Bank, and a director of the city railroad ever since it was built. In his own business he has acquired an estate that satisfies an honorable ambition.

His domestic life has been happy, for home has been his heaven. He is a husband devoted to his wife, Anna Maria, daughter of the late Capt. Enoch Gerrish; and no father could be kinder or more affectionate than he to his daughter Anna, who passed away just as she came to mature life, or to his only son, Philip Henry, Jr., now a partner with him in business.

#### REV. ARTHUR J. TEELING,<sup>1</sup>

*Pastor of the Church of the Immaculate Conception, Newburyport.*

The history of the church committed to his care gives necessarily the best biography of a true priest. His best energies are devoted to her. Her success is but the fulfillment of his duty. The most important events then in the life of Rev. Arthur J. Teeling, the pastor of the Church of the Immaculate Conception,

<sup>1</sup> By Miss K. A. O'Keefe.





Arthur J. Telling



Newburyport, have already been recorded in the preceding account of that church, to whose interest the best years of his life have been devoted. There remain now but a few events of his personal history to be mentioned.

Descended from a family which in every way possible had testified its devotion to its suffering mother-land, particularly during the desperate attempt made by the people of Ireland in 1798 for self-government, Rev. Arthur J. Teeling was born in Dublin, Ireland, the 10th of December, 1844, and came to this country in the summer of 1847. From that time until his departure for college he lived in the immediate vicinity of Boston, attending there the public school—most of the time, the Chapman school, at East Boston—until he was twelve years of age, and then the Jesuits' school, which was at first on Hanover Street, Boston, afterwards at the corner of Portland and Traverse Streets. He remained there four years, and displayed an aptitude for learning that led to his being sent to the Lavelle University at Quebec, of which, at that time, the present Cardinal Taschereau was director. During his three years' stay at that institution he won for himself a high rank in scholarship.

The time for the choice of a profession having arrived, he determined—as those who had long known him had always expected—to prepare himself for the priesthood. In September, 1864, he accordingly entered the Provincial Seminary at Troy, which was that year opened, being one of a group of ten from the Boston diocese. This was the first group that entered the seminary, and of the number, Father Teeling is now the only survivor. Here, also, as at Quebec, he won the esteem and affection of his fellow-students, not one of whom was ever in trouble or difficulty without being sure of the sympathy and, if possible, the assistance of Arthur Teeling.

His theological course completed, he was ordained June 6, 1868, by Bishop McFarland, of Hartford, since deceased. His first Mass was celebrated the following Sunday at East Boston, where his parents then resided, after which he was sent for a few months as assistant to Rev. Father Sheridan, at that time the pastor of St. Vincent's Church, on Purchase Street, Boston, now pastor at Taunton, Mass. Toward the close of that year he was sent as assistant to Rev. John O'Brien, then pastor of St. Patrick's Church, Lowell, of whom he cherishes the most pleasant recollections. While in Lowell, Father Teeling, in addition to his other duties, was most active in organizing a Temperance Society, through which much good was accomplished. He remained there until his appointment to the pastorate of the Catholic Church at Newburyport.

The state of the church on his arrival in this city, in August, 1871, and his subsequent course, have already been recorded here, and we need not again refer to them.

Just before assuming the heavy task of freeing the church entirely from debt and consecrating it he took quite an extended trip to Europe, Egypt and the Holy Land. He sailed from New York early in April, 1878, going directly to Liverpool, thence to Paris and to Venice, whence he sailed to Alexandria, in Egypt, arriving there the 30th of May. At Alexandria he was joined by his friend, Rev. John Swift, of Troy, New York, who had gone thither by way of California and the Pacific Ocean, they having agreed at parting, six months before, that they would meet there on that day. Together, they then visited the pyramids of Egypt; and going thence to the Holy Land, paid the homage of their devotions to the places rendered sacred by the life, suffering, death and resurrection of our Saviour; and only those who have listened to the lectures several times since delivered by both gentlemen on their travels there, can judge of the impression these venerated places made upon them. They then visited all the principal cities in Europe, and at Rome had an audience with the present Holy Father, Pope Leo XIII. They also went to the principal places in the British Isles. Ireland, in particular, was most extensively traveled by Father Teeling, who spent eight weeks there, leaving not one of its counties unvisited, and very few of even its most unimportant places, if one might judge by his intimate knowledge of every place there that can be mentioned. In a word, he made an exhaustive study of its condition, the knowledge of which has been since made excellent use of in connection with the present Irish national affairs in this country.

Father Teeling's return in November, 1878, was most enthusiastically welcomed, as may be seen from the following extract from the *Newburyport Herald*, dated Thursday, November 7, 1878:

“A WARM WELCOME TO FATHER TEELING.”

“Certainly the most captious could not find any fault for lack of warmth or enthusiasm in the welcome extended to Father Teeling after his six months' absence in Europe, on his return home, at half past seven on Wednesday evening. Thousands assembled at the Eastern Depot, and it was with difficulty that the police could prevent a rush to greet Father Teeling as he alighted from the train. A grand procession was then formed of all the Catholic societies and prominent citizens, all of whom carried torches, making quite a display, and all along the line of march they were greeted with numerous displays of the works, especially noticeable at the headquarters of the various societies. At 9 o'clock the rush together was so great that one or two persons narrowly escaped being crushed, but the admirable management of Father McNulty prevented anything of this sort in going out. The exercise consisted in an address of welcome by Rev. J. J. McNulty, which was responded to in a very felicitous strain by Father Teeling, who gave some account of his travels, particularly in the Holy Land and in Rome, where he was empowered by the Pontiff, Leo XIII., to extend the Apostolic Benediction to the society at Newburyport. He also spoke of his trip through Ireland in a way that was most entertaining to his hearers. The meeting then broke up with cheers.”

Of Father Teeling's many duties, there is none in which he is more interested than in the proper instruction of the children of his parish. Convinced that education without religion is often but a mighty weapon for evil in the hands of those who, in after-years, may be strong to wield it against God and





country and mankind generally, there seems nothing he is unprepared to do, no sacrifice he is unwilling to make, to advance the interest of his school.

He is also much interested in the Irish question, and has taken a most active part in the present agitation of the subject by the people of the Irish race, and has been one of the public speakers at all the great demonstrations connected with the movement, not only in this city, where he has organized and presided over them, but also in Boston and other places. While in general sympathy with all the Irish leaders, the single-heartedness and devotion of Michael Davitt have won his particular admiration; and in few places was the "Father of the Land League" more enthusiastically received than in Newburyport by Father Teeling and his people. He was much interested in the Parliamentary Fund collected in 1885, and as the *Boston Pilot*, dated March 29, 1885, says:

"The following letter from Father Teeling, the respected pastor of Newburyport, to Mr. John Boyle O'Reilly, tells its own honorable and happy history.

"NEWBURYPORT, MASS., March 15, 1885.

"MY DEAR FRIEND:—By personal solicitation I have collected to the present date \$2,400 for the 2<sup>d</sup> Parliamentary Fund. I have on my list, besides myself, fifty of the most prominent Protestant gentlemen of the city of Newburyport, city officers, bank officers, etc. My list thus far is composed of Protestant gentlemen only. Next Wednesday night (St. Patrick's) I will put the question of subscription to the Parliamentary Fund to the members of my own congregation, as on that evening we are to have an entertainment in our hall for the benefit of the schools. When I will have completed my work for the 2<sup>d</sup> Parliamentary Fund, I will send you all the money and names. I think, from the present outlook, that Newburyport will have the honor of paying for our member in the British House of Commons to advocate Home Rule.

"Yours very truly,

"ARTHUR J. TEELING."

It is not, however, in exclusively Irish or Catholic affairs that Father Teeling is interested. No one could be more American in love for country or in interest in its welfare. Too public-spirited not to be interested in all public matters, he is no blind adherent of any plan or party, but endeavors always to stand himself, and to use his influence for the principles and the men he considers purest, ablest and best. A most devoted Catholic, and intolerant of any interference in his own or his people's religious rights, he is nevertheless on the most friendly terms with his Protestant townspeople; and no public affair is considered complete unless participated in by Father Teeling. He was one of the speakers at Newburyport's two hundred and fiftieth anniversary, June 10, 1885, he and Rev. Dr. Spaulding being the two gentlemen to respond to the toast: "The Clergymen of the three towns." On that occasion Father Teeling was thus introduced by the presiding officer, Hon. John J. Currier:

"*Fellow-citizens:* You are well aware that at the present time a large number of our citizens are earnest and devout members of the Roman Catholic Church. We recognize the power and the influence of its clergy, and today invite the Rev. A. J. Teeling, of the Church of the Immaculate Conception, Newburyport, to speak of the work the clergy of that church have accomplished here."

The remarks that followed were very highly spoken

of, as was also his address at the Grant Memorial the August following. Father Teeling is a ready speaker, a strong and forcible writer, his style being terse and concise, and bespeaking mental strength, sound judgment and intelligence of thought. Firm and decided when decision is necessary, he has not fulfilled his many duties without having made enemies, to whose criticism, however, he appears wholly indifferent; while at the same time his kind, genial disposition has won him many faithful and devoted friends.

His comprehension of the needs of the community is evinced by his membership in nearly every society here designed to ameliorate its ills or advance its interests; such as the Humane Society, the Association for the Establishment of the Old Men's Home, the Corporation of Institution for Savings and several others. He is also a justice of the peace for the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, having been so appointed May 8, 1883, by Governor Benjamin F. Butler, after having been for several years previous justice of the peace for Essex County, through appointment of Governor Alexander H. Rice, May 2, 1876.

Concluding, as we commenced, by asserting that a true priest is best judged by the condition of his church, we quote as a summary of this imperfect sketch of the pastor of the Church of the Immaculate Conception, Newburyport, the following extract from a tribute to him that recently appeared in the *Newburyport Germ*:

"Apart from the labors of the school, the pulpit and the altar, Father Teeling has exercised a kindly care for all the families and persons in the parish of more than four thousand souls, and no other four thousand within our knowledge have so rapidly advanced in wealth, education and public positions and influence. He may well be proud of what he has done, and when invited to offer his reply: 'The cure my people and from them, I cannot be divided.'"

#### ALEXANDER CALDWELL.<sup>1</sup>

Alexander Caldwell, the senior member of the firm of A. & George J. Caldwell, is a well-known and highly-esteemed citizen of Newburyport, the city in which he was born, educated and lived all his days. When a Greek orator, in ancient times, was thrice asked to name the first essential element in eloquence, three times he replied—"action." If we were three times asked what was fundamental to individual brilliancy, virtue, and greatness, we should reply—a good ancestry. This we find with Alexander Caldwell. His ancestors were Scotch-Irish, the Scotch predominating. They were simply born in Ireland, but were Scotch in their industry, frugality, bravery and religion. They were liberal in their ideas of government, as Calvinists ever are; and what theories we may cherish or abstract ideas we may entertain, America has had no better citizens from Europe, and bred none better at home, than the Scotch-Irish and their descendants. In the South they have been of the Andrew Jackson and John C. Calhoun stamp, men of strong minds and brave actions. In the North they have attained

<sup>1</sup> By George J. L. Colby.





*Amos C. Caldwell*





eminence in war and peace, as have the Starkes, the Cilleys, the Butlers, the McNeals, the Millers and others. In the battles for liberty they have been the bravest, as Bunker Hill, Bennington and New Orleans can attest. They have felt the old Scotch blood swelling in their veins and pulsating at their hearts, and proved themselves worthy of the fathers who followed Wallace and Bruce to battle. The history of Calvinism has been the story of freedom. Right or wrong in their faith, the Calvinists have set limits to the authority of kings and to the power of priests. They have had no confessors, no liturgies and no pastors who were above the people.

From such a people, from over the ocean, came to America, in 1650, the ancestors of the Caldwell brothers. One of them, James, was born on the passage, and the other, Alexander, was a child born after their arrival in this country. Their parents first settled in Dunbarton, N.H., probably on the invitation of their kinsfolk, many of whom settled in the valley of the Merrimac above us, where they founded towns, cleared farms and gave us Christian civilization in the place of the wilderness. In the course of time Alexander Caldwell drifted down to Newburyport, then one of the half-dozen chief towns of Massachusetts, having much wealth and an extensive foreign and domestic trade. Indeed, the quarter of a century from 1785 was the golden age of Newburyport; and for the whole country above us to the Canada line this was their principal market, and this the point to which the youth of the interior migrated. Young Caldwell found employment in a distillery, in the manufacture of New England rum, which was then the common drink of the people. There was very little whisky, beer or ale, which have since been substituted. Then everybody drank "new rum." The clergy, the magistrates, the deacons and the people drank it. The battles of the Revolution had been fought on it; the great religious revivals sanctioned it. It was furnished in all the work-shops, on the farms, and on board the ships, at least twice a day; and on the visit of neighbors it was deemed a mark of respect to offer and to drink it. Still, there was no more drunkenness then than now, and no more people died from it, as it is the most healthy of the strong drinks in use. Be that as it will, Alexander Caldwell, the first of that name in the town, learned to distil it; and built the distillery a century ago, which has been owned and operated by the Caddwells ever since. He died in 1832, at the age of eighty-five, full of years, having a good record for industry, sobriety and integrity.

Up to about the time of his death this was a large industry in this town, as it was in the country at large. We had a great fleet of vessels running to and fro between Newburyport and the West Indies—the English, French, Spanish and other islands. We were exporting to them fish, lumber, provisions and agricultural products, and importing coffee, sugar, molasses and

other merchandise. Many persons are living who remember when the wharves for the whole length of the town were covered with molasses casks, which largely went to the distilleries, which then numbered ten or a dozen, equal to the whole number of distilleries in the United States now. To-day there is only one in Newburyport, eight in Massachusetts, and eleven in the whole country; and those are not running to one-half their producing capacity; and of what is produced, one-half or more is exported chiefly to heathen lands, and two-thirds the other half is used for medicinal and mechanical purposes. Very little is used for a beverage. Over sixty-two million people do not drink one-half as much, not one-quarter, as did the population of the country when there were six million. But we are considering now only its historical relations.

Some two years before Alexander Caldwell died, in 1832, the business had passed into the hands of his son John, who was born in 1783, and had previously been a ship-master. He died in 1859, aged seventy-six, and the town lost one of its best citizens. He had quite a number of brothers, most of them engaged more or less in distilling. Joseph was a distiller at Portsmouth, N. H. James, so recently deceased that many will remember him, was in dry-goods on State Street; Alexander, a distiller, at New Orleans, wealthy before the Rebellion, during which he died; Abner, who was a distiller in Dover, N. H., and later in trade and commerce on Ferry wharf; and William, for a time a merchant at New Orleans, and after with his brother-in-law, William Wheelwright, in South America. At one time two of those brothers were engaged in distilling at Norfolk, Va. They have followed the business of the first Alexander Caldwell in five states of the Union. They were such men as we have known them in this city, intelligent, upright, public-spirited, of good repute, some of them eminent for their piety, active in the Presbyterian and Congregational Churches, and more than usually particular in the training and education of their children. We call to mind the regular attendance at the Prospect Street Church of Captain John Caldwell and his liberality in parish contributions. His wife was a devout member of the church and his children were in their seats as regularly as their Scotch ancestors had been at church, back to the days of John Knox.

John Caldwell had five sons and one daughter. The daughter married into one of the first families of Worcester County. William W., the oldest son, is now an *attaché* of the *Boston Press*. He was prepared for college at Dummer Academy, graduated at Bowdoin College; and has a creditable place among American poets. John G. Whittier declared him the best lyric poet in New England. Two volumes of his poetry have been published. Joseph is in business in Philadelphia. John is a grocer in town; and Alexander and George J. are of the third generation



at the old distillery, which has come down in the family and been operated by them for a hundred years, all that time maintaining the reputation of producing the best liquor of its kind in the United States. This, however, is partly, chiefly we suppose, owing to the water used in distillation. The banks of the Merrimac, on the south side, for a long distance, are full of springs, the water tintured by the substances through which it passes; and the well furnishing water is supplied by one of those springs. It is inexhaustible; so much so that a steam fire-engine makes little impression on it. This establishment, covering an acre of land, with a bonded warehouse attached, is not only a source of wealth to its proprietors, but is a valuable auxiliary to the national treasury. Its highest Federal tax bill was in 1873, when it paid over \$300,000—more than a thousand dollars a day for every working day of that year.

But Alexander Caldwell, whose portrait is here given, now sixty-two years old, has not confined himself to one line of business. From his purse and by his personal influence he has invested and generously contributed for the public good—for the growth of the town. By him ships have been built and sailed, and most of the corporate industries have found in him a stockholder and director. We name cotton manufactures, paper manufactures, carpet manufactures, hat-making, the silver-ware business and others there have been, or are, of more or less note. He has been a busy man—twenty-five years a director of the Ocean Bank, not for himself, but that its operations might be useful to young men and encourage trade. His charities have been large and many. The deserving poor have found in him a friend, and needy ones had the benefits of his open hand. He has accumulated a large estate. The firm of Alexander & George J. Caldwell stands first on the list of tax-payers in Newburyport, and that is but a fraction of what they pay through the corporations and by investments beyond the limits of the city. He has a high personal character, unblemished for integrity in business, and his kindness, intelligence, and generosity give him a wide popularity.

#### GEORGE MONTGOMERY, M. D.

Montgomery is a name distinguished in English, Irish and American history. It is a family that has given to the world profound scholars, eminent statesmen, brave warriors, and poets who have done honor to the age in which they lived and the language in which they wrote. Doctor Montgomery is in the same line of descent with General Richard Montgomery, who died on that memorable night of December 31, 1775, when he led an attack at the capture of the city of Quebec, and had victory within his reach, as, with his two aids, he fell before the only gun fired in defense at the second barrier to his progress into the city. An unfortunate place that for great military

chiefs. It was there that the gallant Montcalm fell in 1759, which lost an American empire to France; there that the brave General Wolfe died in the hour of his triumph, and the joy of England was mingled with mourning at the cost of her victory; and there that Montgomery died on the day of his country's greatest need of his services, at the opening of the war for independence. Three braver men seldom, if ever, led the armies of their respective countries.

Doctor George Montgomery was born in Strafford, New Hampshire, in 1834, and is now in the prime of his days and at the meridian of his usefulness, having an extensive and lucrative professional practice in Newburyport. He sprung from one of the oldest settlers in New Hampshire, from the very first at Strafford. The Montgomerys went there and built their log cabin and cleared their farm in the depths of a wilderness gloom. Over the ocean waves they came to better their fortunes, seeking liberty, political and spiritual, under institutions of their own forming, elective and free, where the voice of the people should be the law. They made themselves a home amid the wildest solitudes of nature. They felled the forests with their own strong hands, their trusty shot-guns within reach; for the contest was with nature unsubdued and the savage foe untamed. Their energy, persistency and courage were all put to the severest test. Theirs was the toil of the field and the toil of battle—the protection of their crops and the protection of their hearths and home-roofs. Men and women shared common labors and common perils; these, with the hardships of climate and the newness of life upon a soil unbroken till then, impressing and moulding them and their children, made them heroic. Not a State of the Union has produced a better people than New Hampshire; none more stable in opinion or more determined for their rights. This is especially true of those descended from the Scotch-Irish, and the Montgomerys are not the least among those families.

Dr. Montgomery was the son of John, born on the ancestral acres, where had before been bred men not unknown to fame—men of science and learning, who had filled most of the local or town offices and seen service in both branches of the Legislature. His mother was Eliza, daughter of Joshua Otis, and from that union, Montgomery-Otis, came what might have been expected by hereditary descent, a precocious son, who, at the age of seven years, was admitted to the academy on Strafford Ridge. Then and there he commenced the study of Latin under that eminent preceptor, Dr. Abner Ham, whose fame as a scholar and teacher filled all the region round-about. According to the custom of the times, academy students taught the public schools in the towns within easy distance during the long vacations in the winter, and thus we find George Montgomery, a lad of thirteen, teaching, and perhaps applying the rod—the emblem of authority—in a school of forty-two







*Geo Montgomery M.D.*







*E. F. Shaw*



pupils, some of them men grown, and giving the utmost satisfaction to all parties interested, so much so that he was retained for the next year's school.

In the same year, 1851, he commenced his medical studies with Doctor Charles Palmer, now residing at Ipswich. He attended lectures first at the Bowdoin Medical School, in Brunswick, Maine; was one term at the Jefferson Medical College in Philadelphia and graduated at Bowdoin in May, 1854. Immediately after he further and practically pursued his studies at the Massachusetts General Hospital, where he proved himself an expert in surgery, as he since has a successful practitioner of medicine.

Then he was lacking almost a year of his majority; he was a fine-looking young man, above the average height, straight, well-formed, with an open countenance, mild eyes and a blooming cheek, flushed with youthful beauty. To his splendid physical development and an air of intelligence he added an irreproachable moral character, which most becomes a physician, who must be the confidant of his patients; nor has he lost these general and essential qualities now at fifty-three. Since that, hard labor has slightly bent his form, which has become heavier, more full and bulky as the years have gone by.

His first professional practice commenced at Gilman Iron Works, New Hampshire, in 1855, when he was twenty-one years old, in partnership with Doctor Otis French. His popular manners and success in practice soon built up a large business, which he continued seventeen years, when, succeeded by Doctor John F. Young, he settled in Newburyport. Previously, however, fired by his ardent patriotism, he served his country one year during the Rebellion, with the Twelfth New Hampshire Regiment, in the field. Held in esteem by his professional brothers, he has received from them marks of confidence and respect. In 1884 he was the delegate for Massachusetts to the American Medical Association, which met at Washington, and he is now the delegate sent to the International Medical Congress, which will meet in Washington in September.

Doctor Montgomery has been attached to other fraternal associations. He was made a Free and Accepted Mason by Winnepesaukee Lodge, at Alton, N. H., in 1863, and has been an Odd Fellow of Quasacuncquen Lodge, at Newburyport, since 1873.

In his domestic relations he has been happy. He has been twice married,—first to Miss Frances A., daughter of Hon. Jonathan T. Coffin, of Gilman Iron Works, N. H., by whom he had four children. She died at Newburyport, a beautiful lady, beloved and lamented. In 1880 he married Mrs. Lydia Forbes, who had been a teacher in the public schools, and was a lady of wealth, known in the church for her devotion and liberality. Surrounded with friends, in the fullness of his strength, with patrons who have absolute confidence in his skill, Doctor Montgomery apparently has many years of happiness and usefulness before him.

#### EDWARD PAYSON SHAW.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Shaw stands in the front rank of the business men of Newburyport to-day. He was born here in 1811, and therefore is forty-six years old, though appearing younger. He is a fine-looking man, well formed, above medium height, with light hair and complexion, sunny eyes, a hopeful countenance unruffled by cares or doubts; vigorous and brave, he is one of the most pleasant and agreeable gentlemen to be met with in the whole length of the town. He shows in his every movement the celerity and strength of the mind that has place in his material form. He carries about him a glow of enthusiasm for whatever he undertakes that would illuminate and move to action a whole town, unless it were completely paralyzed or clean gone in the decay of consumption. He was named for the celebrated clergyman of Portland, Me., whose eloquence electrified a generation gone by and left his name in all the churches. His father was Major Samuel Shaw, a man of integrity and piety, one of the best-known drivers of the Eastern Stage Company, which, three-quarters of a century ago, filled the place and performed the uses of the Eastern Railroad to-day. From early boyhood, as long as Samuel Shaw was able to do anything, he was a "Knight of the Whip," and so popular with the traveling public that when he lost his stable by fire, years after he had retired from stage-driving, old friends, some of them graduates of Harvard College, and other men of means, who rode with him long years before, tendered him a purse of money that covered his entire loss. He was major in the militia when General Lowe commanded the citizen-soldiers of Essex, and Colonels Daniel Adams and Jeremiah Colman, and Major David Emery were in service.

Edward P. Shaw, his youngest son, of whom we treat, was born to him by his third wife, Abigail, daughter of Richard Bartlett, who was a brother of Hon. William, vulgarly called "the Jew," because of his great wealth, being a millionaire and at one time the richest man of the State. When we come to his Bartlett blood, we can account for E. P. Shaw's great tact in trade and his ability as a business man. He takes to it as naturally as a duck or Newfoundland dog does to the water.

After he had been trained a time in our public schools, spent a year under "Master" George Titcomb, then a celebrated school-teacher, and passed a couple of terms in the academy at Loudon, N. H., impatient of delays, he tried one season at fishing, but soon discovered that he knew more of horses than of sea-going vessels. At the age of fourteen years we find him mounted on a hack-box, drawing the reins over prancing steeds, following the occupation of his father. The next year, at fifteen, he was licensed by the mayor and aldermen as a suitable person for the business. At eighteen he owned his own horses and

<sup>1</sup> By Geo. J. L. Coffin.





carriages and had a hack-stand at the Merrimac House, which within a few weeks, he has purchased, becoming the proprietor of premises where he began business on his own account, where he used the first horses he ever owned, and where he gave his first note—minor as he was—for the first carriage he ever had.

At twenty-two he made another change—bought out Lovett's Boston Express, which he ran under the name of Shaw's Boston Express, till he was thirty years old. During this time we remember one thing concerning him which elevated him to our highest esteem. His father had grown old, feeble and infirm, but, affectionate and dutiful, the son did not forget his least want or pleasure; and may the gods forget the son who does! He deserves to have his eyes picked out by the young eagles. Edward P. Shaw, was not of that class; mornings, weather permitting, he could be seen leading the almost helpless old gentleman across the street to his office, and there arranging for him a seat, where he could see the passing people and hear the rattling wheels of carriages, the sound of which, reviving the memories of the past, was as sweet music in his ears. After he made his rounds, in attending to business, and was to leave on the cars, again he could be seen carefully assisting his father home. Such was his love and tenderness to his parents; and so long as God holds human destinies in His hand, great will be the reward of such kindness. It was like the man; he makes a little heaven of home, and never forgets or turns back on a friend.

It was during his experiences as an expressman that he made the acquaintance of the Jaques family—two brothers, farmers, and their two sisters, one of whom, Anna, inherited the property of the others, and became the founder of the "Anna Jaques Hospital," the most beneficent institution in the city. They made him their agent to sell the produce of their farm in Boston, and to purchase what goods they required; and so faithful was he in those matters that they depended upon him to invest their spare money and the dividends of stocks owned. He was their trusted financial agent, having absolute power to act on his own judgment, as he would for himself. The total of his business transactions for them exceeded a quarter of a million dollars, running, as it did, through twenty years. So judicious was his action that never a dollar was lost by him; and so wise his investments that never a dividend was passed on any stock he purchased. They grew rich, and when the bachelor brothers died he was appointed administrator of their estates, which were inherited by the maiden survivor, Anna, by whose charities many persons were benefited, and benevolent and religious institutions strengthened.

In 1871 Mr. Shaw sold his express and succeeded William H. Swasey in the firm of Sumner, Swasey & Currier. This was an old, well-established flour and produce house, doing a large business at home,

having favorable connections in other States, and owning shipping engaged in foreign and domestic commerce. In 1879 he purchased and became sole owner of Commercial wharf,—the property with the business there centering,—and was also largely in real estate; owned dwelling-houses, and had erected on the site of the house in which he was born the large block called "Shaw's Hall," most of which has been devoted to the uses of social organizations, no less than nine such societies occupying it to-day. His own residence, where he has lived since 1875, "Woodland Place," is one of the finest estates in the city or county. It is on elevated ground, overlooking the town and the sea, having suitable buildings, and covering twelve acres of level, fertile land, devoted to flowers, vegetables, and fruit to the extent of over a thousand trees.

It was in 1875 that the silver-mining fever broke out in this vicinity, causing wide-spread excitement; and possibly, had the location been amid the crags of the Rocky Mountains or in the river bottom of California, it might have been of enduring benefit. In connection with W. W. Chipman, an experienced miner, and Hon. E. G. Kelley, Mr. Shaw purchased the property since known as the Merrimac Silver Mine, with other tracts of adjacent territory, from which they realized very handsomely. They sold the Merrimac mine to New York parties, the consideration named being the round sum of one million dollars. One hundred thousand was paid in cash. The deed, recorded in the county registry at Salem, is for the largest sum on the records in the lapse of two hundred and fifty years. The fact that silver ore could be obtained in paying quantities was as well established as it has been in nine out of ten of the "rich finds" in the Mountain and Pacific States of the West. But very soon the new operators were short of funds, and divided among themselves. Lawsuits followed, attachments were made, and finally the works were abandoned to the harpies of law and plunder; and now the buildings, machinery, and fifty tons of ore ready for smelting, are going to total destruction.

In 1881, and also in 1882, he was in the Legislature. He had previously served in the City Council, but he inclined to trade more than politics, and about this date he established the People's Line of Steamers, which he has run to good profit ever since. He now has three steamboats—two connecting with the railroads at the mouth of the harbor and one for other uses. He has been heard to say that he never owned a sailing vessel that did not lose money, or a steam craft that did not pay good dividends.

In 1884 he organized the Black Rocks and Salisbury Beach Railroad, which, by steamers, connects with the Newburyport and Amesbury Street Railroad, and with other railroads running east, west or south. This beach road is chiefly owned by him now, and he has a charter for its extension to Hampton, N. H., which





*H. M. Cross,*





will be utilized in 1888, and thence it will probably be continued to Rye Beach and Portsmouth.

Mr. Shaw was the first contractor with the United States government in building the jetties at the mouth of the Merrimac River, to deepen the water on the bar and make Newburyport a harbor of refuge. The work, not completed, is still continued. In 1882, to further this project, he opened a quarry in the upper ward of the city, and has quarried and furnished one hundred thousand tons of stone. The preparation for the work required twenty thousand dollars, and two hundred men were on the contract.

In 1886 Mr. Shaw sold his interest in the Newburyport and Amesbury Railroad to parties in Boston and Salem, and at once proposed to build a similar road to and on Plum Island, which he has completed the present summer. In thirty days he built two miles of road on the island, with a steamboat pier extending into the Merrimac River, and had the cars running, remodeled and enlarged the Plum Island Hotel, reconstructed the bridge and draw connecting the island with the mainland, and prepared for laying the rails, three miles, to Market Square, to connect with the trains to Amesbury. This enterprise required a capital of forty thousand dollars in cash and forty thousand dollars in bonds, of which he holds one-quarter part, and the whole commands a premium in the market. Not satisfied with the above as a full year's work, he purchased the Merrimac House, in this city, formerly called the "Wolfe Tavern," in honor of General Wolfe, who died in the capture of Quebec, under whom was a company from Newburyport, commanded by William Davenport, who was its first landlord, which name he has restored; put forty men at work to repair, repaint and refurnish, and has leased it to Mrs. J. C. Pailbrick & Son, proprietors of the Farragut House, Rye Beach, so popular in years past.

Mr. Shaw was the Republican candidate for Representative to the Legislature at the recent election, and as evidence of his great popularity he received two hundred and fifty more votes than any other nominee of the party.

His latest and most extensive business venture is the organization of the "Newburyport Car Manufacturing Company," with an ample capital and a board of directors, of which he is the president. He has leased extensive property and commenced the erection of new buildings, and designs to make this one of the largest of the city's industries.

We doubt if there is a young man in the county of Essex who can show a better record for enterprise and industry, and all the time he has moved about as placid and apparently as unconcerned as though he had nothing to do and was a simple observer of passing events. Be sure that he has not neglected his home in his busy life, for no man loves his home better or is more devoted to his wife and children. He has an ample fortune, should he retire to-day, and

is surrounded by friends who appreciate him for noble and manly qualities. Industry was born in him, work is his life, and improvement in what surrounds him gives joy to his soul. Hannah F. Gould, the poet, in her famous "Epitaphs," said of Caleb Cushing: "Now he is dead he will be pushing," and these words could as appropriately apply to Edward Payson Shaw.

#### CAPTAIN HENRY M. CROSS.<sup>1</sup>

Henry M. Cross is among the foremost of the young men of Newburyport. He was born in Gorham, Maine, in 1843, son of Doctor Enoch Cross—a much-esteemed citizen, and the oldest practicing physician in the county of Essex—and his wife, Charlotte Pettingell, daughter of Moses Pettingell, of Salisbury, N. H. The Crosses are of good stock and have been noted from the days of the French and Indian Wars for their skill and bravery as soldiers. Originally from Ipswich, the great ancestor of the line to which Henry M. Cross belongs settled on the banks of the Merrimac River, in Methuen, and purchased his land of the Indians, the extent of the purchase being as much as he could walk around in one day, "from sun to sun." There he built his house, there his descendants have dwelt to this day, and there, by the old Cross ferry, Dr. Enoch, now eighty-eight years old, was born. He removed to Newburyport when his youngest son, Henry M., was an infant. It is a family of remarkable longevity, several of them living to the age of ninety and ninety-five years.

Henry M. Cross was well educated in the schools of Newburyport, and was one of their best pupils. In 1858, when fifteen years old, he graduated at the Brown Latin School, prepared for college, and, in 1860, having pursued a higher course of mathematics, with advanced literary and scientific studies, he graduated from the Putnam High School. He came from school well prepared for the study of law, which he had chosen for his profession, and read for a year and more in the offices of Hon. E. F. Stone, recently member of Congress, and Hon. John N. Pike, judge of the Police Court.

In the mean time the War of the Rebellion had burst forth, and in the intense excitement thereby occasioned, Mr. Cross, ardent in his patriotism, would rush to the field of battle. At first he failed to pass the examining board from physical inability. He was very youthful in appearance, slim and light in weight, but he did not perceive his inability to perform a soldier's duty, and upon the raising of the Forty-eighth Massachusetts Regiment, commanded by Colonel Eben F. Stone, he was accepted as a member of Captain Woodward's company, which was largely composed of young men who had been pupils of the captain when he was teacher of the High School. They were at once ordered to the South, and took part in the campaign against Port Hudson, where was seen some of the hardest fighting of the

<sup>1</sup> By George J. L. Colby.





war. We say no more than every member of his regiment will admit—some of them brave to recklessness—that there was not a braver soldier among them than Henry M. Cross. When a call was made for volunteers to storm the rebel fortifications—a most hazardous undertaking—he was among the first to respond. The assault was disastrous, and the dead and wounded, including the lieutenant-colonel of the Forty-eighth, covered the field in front of the Confederate works. Mr. Cross had his cartridge-box shot away, but fortunately escaped all personal injury. The regiment remained in the field till the surrender of Port Hudson, beyond the time of their enlistment, when he returned home in 1863. Immediately after he obtained a lieutenant's commission, re-entered the service in the Fifty-ninth Massachusetts Regiment, and went through the entire series of battles in the early part of the campaign in Virginia, in 1864, from the Wilderness and the severe fighting at Spottsylvania to the battle on the North Anna River, May the 24th, in which engagement he was made a prisoner. That ended his field service. Then followed the hardships, sufferings and dangers of the Confederate prisons, far worse than the hazards of battles, extending over nine months. First he was shut up in Libby Prison, in Richmond, which was a house of death to so many Northern soldiers. They might have written over the door, "Who enters here never returns." Thence he was sent to Macon, then to Savannah, and finally taken to Charleston, S. C., with a large number of others, to be put under the fire of the Federal batteries, with the expectation that this exposure would stop the bombardment of the city. From Charleston he was sent to Columbia, thus making the rounds, not as an inspector of prisons, but as a sufferer at every step. While a prisoner he twice escaped, and was twice recaptured. Finally he was paroled and sent to Wilmington, N. C., in March, 1865, but remained in the Union army till August of that year. His army life was heroic. He won the commendations of every commander under whom he served. He was among the youngest and the best soldiers from this State.

The war ended, and peace once more smiling upon the country, he returned to Newburyport; but not to his law books. He had an inclination for trade—a taste for commercial affairs; and immediately formed a partnership with Mr. Newman Brown, the oldest dealer in coal in the city—giving what leisure time he had to the insurance business. In 1866 he married the eldest daughter of Hon. Albert Currier, of Newburyport. In 1867 he accepted an engagement in Hartford, Ct., as a special agent and adjuster for the North American Fire Insurance Company, in which position he continued two years. Then he purchased the coal business of Mr. Newman Brown, who retired; and selling the property to the Philadelphia and Reading Coal and Iron Company, became the superintendent of their business at Newburyport for ten

years. During that time the coal sales increased from 10,000 tons per annum to 80,000, which was profitable to him and them. Desiring to have more control of his own time, he resigned, continuing the same business with Fred. L. Atkinson, till, outside business continuing to increase, he retired altogether from the trade. Since that he has been engaged in large corporate enterprises, in land, lumber and cotton, at the South. Most of his time is now spent on the Lower Mississippi, at Arkansas City, Ark., and below. He is connected with a Boston corporation which has an extended tract of land, some of the most valuable in the Southwest, on which timber is being felled and dressed for the markets, thus opening a trade important to that section of country. Having visited most of the Southern States, he feels assured of their great prosperity in the near future, from the richness of the soil, their mineral wealth and other natural advantages.

Having his residence in Newburyport, this city has been pleased, as often as circumstances would permit, to avail herself of his abilities and qualifications for public life. Seven years he was a director of the Public Library, for which his fine scholarship and extensive reading fitted him. Five years he served in the City Council; one year an alderman and one president of the Common Council. Two years—1883-84,—he was in the Legislature, actively participating in the debates on the most important questions, being a leading Democrat, and winning the confidence and applause of all parties. The next year he was a candidate for State treasurer, and after a canvass of the State, during which he spoke for the Democrats in all sections of the Commonwealth, he ran more than three thousand votes ahead of his ticket. His friends hold him in reserve now for the Congressional nomination, when an opportunity to elect him shall appear. He has developed a good degree of statesmanship and fine oratorical powers, few men commanding more attention from an audience. He is thoroughly sound in principles, adhering to the platforms of Jefferson, Madison and other fathers of the Republic. He has no tendency to Socialism, which is so rapidly pervading the country; is opposed to a protective tariff; is firm against all unnecessary and unconstitutional taxes; opposes the unlawful interference of the Federal Government with the States; or of the States with the counties and towns; or of the towns with individual rights and duties.

#### ANTHONY STICKNEY JONES.<sup>1</sup>

Anthony Stickney Jones was born in Pembroke, N. H., July 12, 1802, the only child of David Wheeler Jones, of Boston, and Marcy (Stickney) Jones, of Newburyport. Mr. Jones, the senior, was Welsh by the blood of his ancient house, but had been born in





*Anthony S. Jones*





Concord, Mass., to which his mother had fled from contiguity with the English, then in possession of Boston and making her residence their headquarters. After the birth of her son some thirty days, he being born July 4, 1776, the great day in our calendar when the republic was declared, she returned to her home and was admitted to her residence on Bedford Street, which is now owned by her grandson, Dr. Anthony S. Jones. Originally a machine-shop was attached to the rear of the dwelling in which Mr. Jones worked with a relative, Robert Turner, in making cut nails, then first coming into use; and here being injured in lifting iron, he was ordered by his physicians to Vermont, whence he came down to Pembroke, N. H., where he married his wife, Mary Stickney, in 1801. She was in the seventh generation from William Stickney, who emigrated from the parish of Stickney, nine miles from Hull, England, whence he sailed for America. He was at Boston in 1638, and one of the original settlers of Rowley in 1639, of whom Gov. Winthrop wrote: "They are godly men, and most of them of good estate." William Stickney was a man of property and much influence, but of little education.

William's second son was Amos, who was the great-great-grandfather of Dr. Jones. He was a weaver at Rowley, in the first fulling-mill on this continent, in a town which, Winthrop said, "exceeds all others in the manufacture of cloth." Later he set up his business on the Parker, in Newbury, but he owned land in what is now Newburyport.

Amos had a son John, likewise a weaver, on the Artichoke River, where he owned land. He was also a soldier, defending Haverhill against the Indians in 1708. He owned land in Newburyport near the Smith brick-yard and common pasture. John had eight children, the fifth being Joseph, who is styled a mariner and a joiner; owned a part of Long (now Bartlet) Wharf, the lower side adjoining that of Edward Presbury, who was a shipwright living in the court on the upper side of the road, and was father-in-law to Hon. Jonathan Greenleaf. Also he sold five acres of land on High Street to John Lowell and Jonathan Jackson, being the same as that on which the Dexter and Johnson houses were built. He seems to have been wealthy, as were the Stickneys, from the first.

Joseph's eldest son was Anthony, who married Dorcas, the daughter of James Davenport, whose wife was Sarah Franklin, sister of Ben. Franklin, the statesman and philosopher. We find these Christian names, Anthony and Dorcas, often in the records of the Stickney family, and now comes in the surname of Franklin. This Anthony appears to have been a man of high position. He was a member of what is now the Unitarian Church; was a lieutenant of a Newbury company in the State of New York, fighting the French and Indians in 1756; held the same place in an alarm company of 1757; was a captain in the expedition against Canada, under Gen. Amherst, in

1760; he was a chaise-maker when Newbury was the leading town in that business in the country; later he was in Chester, N. H. He was a citizen of marked ability and patriotism, learned and wealthy. From his wife, the daughter of Sarah Franklin, the sister of Ben. Franklin, whose favorite niece she was, her great-grandson, Dr. Anthony S. Jones, has an engraved likeness of the printer-patriot, done in Paris, with his autograph on the back-side: "For Dorcas Stickney, of Newbury."

Anthony Somerby Stickney, son of Anthony, last named, was the grandfather of Dr. Jones by his daughter Marcy. He was a cooper, had a shop on Long Wharf and a house in which he lived on Federal Street. He removed first to Chester, and then to Pembroke, N. H. Franklin thought much of his relatives in Newburyport, and often visited and corresponded with them. He requested Anthony Somerby Stickney to name his first son for him, which, being done, he bequeathed to him a silver tankard of the weight of sixty Spanish dollars, inscribed: "Legacy by will of Benjamin Franklin to Benjamin Franklin Stickney." Anthony Somerby Stickney, by contract, furnished the timber that was wrought into the hull of the famous frigate "Constitution," a part of it coming from Bow, N. H., and another part from the Governor Dummer farm, in Newbury.

Benjamin Franklin Stickney, uncle of Doctor A. S. Jones, was a distinguished man, though peculiar in his "notions." He moved to Pembroke, and then to Bow, N. H., where he had a large landed property. He was a justice of the peace and postmaster at Bow, was a scholar of note, learned in mineralogy, chemistry and natural history. From New Hampshire he went West; was Indian agent at Fort Wayne, where the Indians called him their "white father." He was in the battle of New Orleans, and was complimented by General Jackson for his bravery. He became wealthy, and in 1802 married a daughter of General Starke, of New Hampshire, who told the soldiers at the battle of Bennington,—"We will be victorious or Mollie Starke this day becomes a widow." By Mary Starke he had five children, in whose veins was the blood of Franklin and Starke combined. He named his two sons One S. and Two S., and his three daughters, Maryland, Indiana and Louisiana. He believed in electricity more than even his uncle, Benjamin Franklin, for he held that a man would never die if he kept his animal electricity; but as he did die, though at a great age, he must have lost his electricity.

Tenacity to earth-life is one of the characteristics of the ancestors of Dr. Jones. His mother lived to be ninety years, and many of the family have endured to from eighty to one hundred years. Moses Stickney, who died at Jeffrey, N. H., on his farm, at the foot of the Grand Monadnock, in 1852, was one hundred years, three months and nine days old. Dr. Jones is now eighty-six years, with no ap-



parent cause of death for years to come. He was the only child of his mother, who was a young lady of seventeen years when Washington rode past her residence, on Federal Street, in 1790, and her life, combined with her son's, exceed the life of the Republic by more than five years. The utmost care was taken with his early education, and, on the advice of Professor Francis Brown, of Dartmouth College, who was a relative and frequent visitor of the family, he was put to the study of Latin and Greek, and was quite proficient in the translation, when a mere child, at the school of that celebrated teacher, Michael Walsh, where he was in the same class with Caleb Cushing. Later he had the benefit of instruction by another well-known teacher of that day, "Master McPhail." He did not, however, pursue his studies beyond the public and private schools of Newburyport, which were second to none in the State. He turned his attention chiefly to natural science. He was an expert in geology, and for years Professor Hitchcock, of Amherst College, in his survey of the State, engaged his assistance on his Essex County staff. He also had a love for astronomy, and was invited to join a party of scientific gentlemen, many years ago, in their observations of the annular eclipse of the moon, from the highest peak of the Green Mountains. More than anything else, however, he devoted himself to chemistry, in which he became so proficient as to rank with the best chemists of the country; and he kept up his studies and investigations to a very late period. This fitted him for his profession and business in life, as a druggist and apothecary; and very early he had the honor of receiving a diploma from the College of Pharmacy, and classed with the first men in his business, as David Henshaw, Dr. Lowe and Sampson Reed, of Boston, who were his fast friends. Doctor Jones, in trade, first bought out Dr. Nathaniel Smith, and had his store opposite the "Shambles," on Market Square. He moved from there to the corner of State and Essex Streets, and then to the corner of State and Middle Streets, where he remained many years, till he retired in 1868, with a competency of this world's goods. It was in that store that Oliver Putnam made his will, by which the world has the Putnam Free School. It was afterwards rewritten by Caleb Cushing. Dr. Jones was a witness to it, and presented it to Probate.

Dr. Jones was an active Free Mason in the times that tried Masonic souls, and is to-day the oldest Free Mason in this city; made in St. Peter's Lodge when he was twenty-one years old, or in 1823. He was one of the signers of the well-known "Declaration of the Free Masons of Boston and vicinity," issued in 1831, and was invited to the banquet on the semi-centennial celebration of that declaration, which was signed by fifty-seven Masons in Newburyport, of which number to-day he is the only survivor. Caleb Cushing, Rev. Dr. Morse, Judge Marston, Dr. R. S. Spofford, Hon. Eben Bradbury, Dr. Brickett, William

Woard, and all the rest have passed to the higher degrees of the Supreme Lodge above, and he alone remains to testify to what Masonry was in the days of the fathers.

In his early life Dr. Jones took an active part in public affairs; as in the Fire Department, for which, through Henry Frothingham, then the representative, he obtained the charter for its organization, under which it has acted. Likewise, before he was of age, he obtained the signatures and forwarded the petition for the incorporation of the Institution for Saving, designed to encourage the poor in their small accumulations, it not being foreseen that its deposits would ever reach the millions. In the same way he was one of the founders of the Newburyport Insurance Company. He was ever ready to act for the public good, and to seize upon any new things for the same purpose. He built the first ice-house in town; and he sold the first kerosene oil, which was as much before the whale oil and tallow candle as electricity is before it, for illuminating purposes. Further details might be tiresome.

Trained by a pious mother, Dr. Jones early became a member of the church; and when Sunday-schools were instituted he was secretary of the first organization, at the court-house, that in a very few Sundays numbered over six hundred members, and in his class, as pupils, were William Lloyd Garrison and Isaac Knopp, who soon after led the anti-slavery revolution. A similar school was held in the school-house on Marlboro' Street on Saturdays and Sundays, in which he was a teacher, while he was himself a scholar in Dr. Spring's Saturday evening Bible class, designed to aid the general movement. At first the family attended the Harris Street Church; but offended by political preaching on Sundays, though they were Democrats as strong and stern as Parson Giles himself, they removed to the Old South, and listened to the saintly Dr. Dana; but when the Whitefield society was formed, from personal friendship for its first pastor, the late Rev. John Emerson, Dr. Jones became an earnest worker and liberal contributor to that movement.

He has participated in most of the religious and charitable operations of the day, and following the example of his mother, who was much interested in the Orphans' Asylum of former times, has been especially attentive to the wants of children, having adopted or himself provided for a large number who looked to him as to a father. Thus he has proved his faith by his works and can see and feel that he has not lived in vain.

WILLIAM RICHARD JOHNSON.<sup>1</sup>

Under this head we propose to give a sketch of the Johnson family; an old family, if any can be called such in America, and one of the best and most sub-

<sup>1</sup> By Geo. J. L. Colby.







Mr. R. Johnson





stantial in the county of Essex. How far back they may be traced, we know not. Maurice was a member of Parliament for Stamford in 1523. Abraham had three sons,—Isaac, William and Edward, who came to America in 1630. In that year Isaac was at Salem, a close friend to John Winthrop, and ranking in the class of Winthrop in education and wealth. He was afterwards among the settlers of Boston. His wife, Arabella, was a daughter of the Earl of Lincoln, and the ship in which she came was named "Arabella," in honor of her. He was the wealthiest of the founders of Boston.

Edward was the founder of Woburn, and a man of much importance in the colony. He owned land in Boston, which is now the church-yard of King's Chapel, and he was the first person there interred. He was a man of letters, author of the "Wonder-Working Providence," a history of New England from 1628-52.

William Johnson, from whom those in Newbury sprang, first settled in Charlestown, where he married Elizabeth Story; and thence came to the banks of the Merrimac, where he commenced ship-building near the foot of Ship Street, living in what is called the Johnson house, probably the oldest on Water Street. He was the father of Nathaniel, who was the father of William, born in 1671.

William married Martha Pierce in 1696. She lived on what is now known as the Little farm, originally the Spencer farm, belonging to John Spencer, one of the early settlers of Newbury, a man of much wealth and high character, who returned to his English home, conveying this farm to his kinsman Pierce, the father of Martha. His lands extended from High Street to the river, but northward there was only one house to Ship Street; that was at the foot of Lime Street. A lonely journey must it have been to young Johnson going a-wooing Miss Martha, a two miles' tramp along the river and through the woods, when darkness was upon the earth. The Johnsons and Pierces were among the first families of the new town. To William and Martha Johnson were born six children,—three sons and three daughters. Eleazer, the youngest son, was born in 1697. His eldest son, William, was a clergyman, graduated at Harvard, and became the first pastor of the Second Church in West Newbury; and another was Eleazer, born in 1720.

Eleazer Johnson, the son of Eleazer, continuing the ship-building on the banks of the Merrimac, was a very remarkable man, energetic, intelligent and the strongest man in the town. He could lift a half-ton of iron with his hands, and would carry timber against three ordinary men. He was as patriotic as he was strong, and fitted to be the leader of men. In the exciting times just before the Revolution of 1776 he was to Newburyport what Sam Adams was to Boston. We have heard old men, born before independence, claim that the Revolution was started and nursed in the Johnson ship-yard. It is unquestionably true, and it was on his suggestion and under his leadership

that the ship-carpenters, then the most numerous class of workers in town, twice burned tea—all they could find in town—before the "Mohawks" mixed theirs with the salt water of Boston harbor. He marched at the head of that band of patriots, his broad-axe upon his shoulder, under the blows from which the oaken door fell in. He stood at the head of the "Sons of Liberty" when by his side was his neighbor, Jonathan Greenleaf, whose "silver tongue" fired the public heart, while Rev. Jonathan Parsons, in the "Old South" pulpit, denounced British tyranny, till the people organized their company for Bunker Hill in the broad aisle and in front of the communion table in his church.

To such a father, and to his wife, Elizabeth Pierce, in full sympathy with him, were born nine children, five of them sons of the heroic caste. Philip, born in 1743, was in the battle of Bunker Hill, and later vexing the enemy on board a privateer. William Pierce, master of the "American Hero," in the French West Indies in 1776, hearing that the war had commenced, loaded his vessel with arms and ammunition and made all haste to Boston with such needed supplies for the patriots defending their liberties. Nicholas was in the privateer navy of the country, and at the close of the war was the first man to float the "Stars and Stripes" over the waters of the Thames in London. Eleazer, the third of that name, commanded a privateer during the war, was captured by a British man-of-war, and suffered in the infamous "Old Mill" prison. Joseph, born in 1742, died before the Declaration of Independence, in 1775.

All of these sons partook of the spirit of the times and of the character of their father. They were brought up in the ship-yard, swinging the axe in their youth, and embarked on the seas, commanding the ships they sailed. To be the master of a ship then was also to be a merchant, for they were the buyers and sellers of their cargoes; and most of them, after building ships and sailing ships, retired to their own counting-rooms.

Joseph, whose line we are to follow, had four children, of whom three were sons, and only one, Eleazer (the fourth Eleazer), born in 1773, had children. He married Sarah Newman in 1797, and she bore him nine children. In general character and pursuits he was like his ancestors whom we have described. He was a shipwright, then at sea, and in the War of 1812-15 was captured and confined in Dartmoor prison, which so many Americans entered to die. Later he was a merchant, and finally president of the Mechanics' Bank. He died in 1847, leaving only one son, Richard, born in 1813, of all his nine children, with descendants, to continue the line of his family.

Richard became a master mariner, and among his voyages carried to Charleston, S. C., stone for the foundation of Fort Sumter, since so famous as the point at which the inter-State war of 1861 commenced. Another fact will indicate the commercial difference



of Newburyport now and a half-century ago. Then ships sailed direct to their points of destination in the various nations; and they brought to our wharves their return cargoes from Europe, the East and West Indies, and, in fact, from all parts of the world. So it happened that Richard Johnson, who commenced sea-life at sixteen and continued till he was forty, was at New Orleans, London, and Havre in France, before he had ever seen Boston or New York. He married Mrs. Fannie B. Woodbury, of Beverly, in 1852, and died in 1872, leaving two children,—Caroline Elizabeth and William Richard. The last-named, born in 1855, is now the sole representative of the Johnsons from Joseph through Eleazer and Richard.

We have said that Captain Richard Johnson married Mrs. Woodbury, of Beverly. She was the daughter of Dr. Nathaniel Bradstreet, a very skillful and popular physician at Newburyport, who, two years prior to his settlement here, had served as surgeon on the United States sloop-of-war "Merrimac," commanded by Captain Moses Brown. This was when war was anticipated with France. In 1800 he entered upon professional duties, living in the "Parson Spring" house on Titcomb street, which at that day was an elegant estate, with a large, beautiful garden in the rear. He died in 1828, from yellow-fever taken from a vessel when he was acting as port physician, and from him it was caught by a daughter, who also died therefrom. Now his grandson, William Richard Johnson, the last of the Johnsons of his family line, is also the last of the Bradstreet family, to which his mother belongs, descended from Governor Simon Bradstreet; and as Governor Bradstreet married Anne, daughter of Thomas Dudley, Governor of Massachusetts colony, our young townsman has in his veins the blood of the Earls of Lincoln mingled with that of the heroic Johnson, and also of two Governors who ruled the colony for a score of years. Anne Dudley, the wife of Governor Simon Bradstreet, was the first American poet. Her works were published in London, and became so popular that she was styled the "tenth muse." She was the mother of eight children, to whom she refers in the following lines:

"I have wrought birds hatch-let in the nest,  
Four crows there were, and hens the rest,  
I nursed them up with pains and care,  
Forsoot nor labor did I spare,  
Till at last they left their wing,  
Mounted the trees and learned to sing."

William R. Johnson, whose portrait we present, was born in the mansion-house on High Street, adjoining what is called the Dexter house, where "Lord Timothy" lived and held court. That house was built by Judge Charles Jackson, of the Supreme Court of Massachusetts. By its side is the Johnson house, built by the very distinguished Judge John Lowell, from whom it passed to the Tracys, who there entertained the most distinguished visitors from Europe—Talleyrand, Louis Philippe and Lafayette

among the number partaking of his princely hospitality. From John Tracy, Captain Eleazer Johnson purchased it in 1809, and has transmitted it. William R. Johnson, the present proprietor, was educated in our public schools; graduated at the Putnam, and as he is of studious habits, is a well-educated gentleman. Having the care of a large estate he has engaged less in public affairs than he otherwise might have done, but he has not failed to encourage any business enterprises that would advance the interests of the city. He has been in the shoe business, is a stockholder and director of the Bayley Hat Company, is a director in the Merchants Bank, and a trustee in the Five Cents Savings Bank. He has especially devoted himself to the introduction of the electric lights, and invested his money that the city might have the best street lights yet invented, indicating his desire to keep step with the progress of the age. He has served the city two years in the Common Council and two years as an alderman. He has also been one of the leading members of the Masonic fraternity, was made a Mason in St. John's Lodge in 1877, and has been its Master; is a member of King Cyrus Chapter, and has been its High Priest; belongs to the Newburyport Commandery of the Knights Templar, and has been its Commander. Personally popular in his manners, liberal in opinions, devoted to his native town, having in himself the strong will and courage of the Johnsons combined with the courtly politeness of the Bradstreets, he apparently has a brilliant future before him.

#### GOV. JOSIAH BARTLETT.

Gov. Josiah Bartlett was a man of singular greatness, goodness and simplicity. His ancestry was honorable, brave and generous. The name Bartlett in England is illustrious and titled from the conquest until now. Courage, self-sacrifice and generosity, with great mental activity, have ever been characteristic traits of the family.

In our Indian and colonial wars, as well as in the conflict to preserve the Massachusetts charter by despoising and imprisoning Andros two centuries ago, they have honorable mention, the only soldier going alone from Newbury to Boston in the darkness of the night being Samuel Bartlett, who took part in the overthrow of Andros.

Josiah Bartlett was born at Amesbury, Massachusetts, November 21, 1729. He was the fourth son of Stephen and Hannah Webster Bartlett, whose ancestors came from England to Newbury, Mass., in 1634.

At the age of sixteen he began the study of medicine, having acquired sufficient knowledge of Greek and Latin.

After five years of hard study he commenced practicing at Kingston, N. H., and established a reputation during the prevalence of *angina maligna* in 1754, introducing treatment with Peruvian bark, in opposition to common usage.





In 1765, Dr. Bartlett was elected to the Legislature of New Hampshire from Kingston, during the arbitrary administration of the royalist Governor, Wentworth. He would not submit to the will of a man whose object, next to self-aggrandizement, was the subjection of the people of New Hampshire to British tyranny. Governor Wentworth appointed Dr. Bartlett to judicial office, commissioned him colonel of the New Hampshire regiment and vainly sought by every blandishment of self-interest and honor to attach him to the royal cause, which was still powerful in New Hampshire, as backed by the haughty Wentworth.

The Governor dissolved the Assembly he could not control, but the Committee of Correspondence addressed circulars to the towns, and their delegates assembled at Exeter and elected Dr. Bartlett and John Pickering delegates to the first Continental Convention in 1774, at Philadelphia.

Neither could be spared at this juncture of the New Hampshire conflict. Dr. Bartlett's house, with its contents, was burned, his military and judicial commissions revoked by Wentworth, but in his poverty he was more than a match for the haughty Governor, who was soon after compelled to take refuge on a British man-of-war. Thus ended forever British rule in New Hampshire.

Then Bartlett and Pickering, who, with Sullivan and Starke, had organized the minute-men of New Hampshire, leaving their professions and their families in poverty, mounted their horses and rode to Philadelphia, where they met the Colonial Congress in 1775.

Before leaving, they had established a patriotic colonial government, and framed a test oath to exclude the Tories.

In September, 1775, Dr. Bartlett took his seat in Congress, and applied himself day and night with such energy as seriously to impair his health.

In 1776 he was re-elected, and became the first signer of the Declaration of Independence. He was the first called upon for his vote and his signature.

Rebellion against Great Britain, without an arms factory or powder-mill, with the rich men of our colonies, many of them, Tories; against the most opulent stubborn and warlike nation in the world, whose fleets had shorn France of her colonies, was like the leading a forlorn hope, and required the courage of such men as once held the pass at Thermopylae.

In the autumn of 1777 the terror inspired by Burgoyne's army called for the utmost exertions of Bartlett, Pickering and Starke to protect New England from hostile incursions. Bartlett rode everywhere, rallying troops to the support of Starke, with whom, in his persecution, he deeply sympathized. He had secured the commission as brigadier-general for his associate, Whipple, and both were personally with Starke at the battle of Bennington. The long rides through forests and over rough mountains, and the swift gathering of this little host which at Bennington

first checked the power of Burgoyne, would make a thrilling volume. The Congress of 1778 was the last in which Bartlett took part.

In 1779 he was appointed chief justice of the Court of Common Pleas in New Hampshire; in 1782 associate judge of the Supreme Court, in 1788 chief justice of the Supreme Court of New Hampshire. The same year he was a member of the convention that secured the ratification of the Constitution of the United States.

In 1789 he was elected first United States Senator, which he declined; he was elected President of New Hampshire in 1790 and first Governor under the new constitution in 1793.

In January, 1794, he sent to the Legislature the following farewell address:

*Gentlemen of the Legislature.*—After having served the public for a number of years to the best of my abilities in the various offices to which I have had the honor to be appointed, I think it proper, before your adjournment, to signify to you and through you to my fellow-citizens at large, that I now find myself so far advanced in age, that it will be expedient for me, at the close of the session, to retire from the cares and fatigues of public business, to the repose of a private life, with a grateful sense of the repeated marks of trust and confidence that my fellow-citizens have reposed in me, and with my best wishes for the future peace and prosperity of the State."

Brief indeed was the repose of private life so desirable to a man so actively engaged in the conflicts of the American Revolution.

An attack of paralysis terminated the life of Governor Bartlett on May 19, 1795, in the sixty-sixth year of his age.

Bartlett performed at once the work of the scholar, eminent physician, soldier, bold patriot, organizer of a new State, jurist, Congressman, member of National Naval Committee, chief justice of New Hampshire, its President and its first Governor. Fortunate was he as the first to give his vote and signature to the Declaration of Independence. Not another American name unites all these attributes.

He succeeded in every department, and was universally loved and mourned by all who knew him. As incorruptible as Washington, progressive as Jefferson, courageous as Starke, he was a fit type of the men who sentinelled our northern borders and lighted the beacon-fires of liberty from her mountains to the sea.

No royal Governor in wealth and capacity surpassed Wentworth; no patriot member of the Continental Congress sacrificed more or was more impoverished than Bartlett by the awful conflict. Offered honor ease and affluence by Wentworth, he left his family, in the wilderness, and preferred death on the scaffold, if need be, for the rights of all men,—a hitherto unattained Utopia. Therefore, countless millions in succeeding ages will honor the first signer of the greatest act of man.

Scarcely less grand than his station among the immortal signers is the record of his early life as a physician.

He first introduced Peruvian bark (quinine) in the treatment of disease and first successfully stayed the



malignant throat distemper, a fatal plague that was sweeping all before it. He introduced the modern treatment of fevers, and his successful experiments caused wide-spread comment regarding the old-fashioned, horrible treatment, which denied both food and cooling liquids in fevers.

The New England Medical Society, of which he was a corporate member, for such daring innovations first suspended him from membership, but within a year elected him president.

The multitudes who have since received the benefits of modern treatment, of which he was pioneer, can best appreciate the courage and greatness of these discoveries by a humble country physician.

He achieved greatness by his unaided genius, while the dignity and beauty of his character softened the asperities of the rugged contests in which he was successfully engaged during an entire life devoted to humanity.

As brave as he was tender, as loving as he was daring, as wise as he was skillful, in honor preferring others, resigning the highest office in the gift of a State he had saved, he persisted in declining the office of United States Senator, to which he was immediately unanimously elected, and retired to private life universally beloved.

Contrast the simplicity, courage and usefulness of this great man with the selfish ambitions of those who usually make history—who have slaughtered or enslaved mankind.

The signers of the Declaration completed the greatest act of man. From the darkness of despotism, from the gloom of never-ending failure to realize human aspirations for equal rights, they looked forward through this Declaration, as Galileo through the first telescope, to a new heaven and a new earth of equal rights for man. The extension of suffrage, of free schools, churches, invention, have accomplished more since that period for the moral, intellectual and material advancement of man than all previous history.

The substitution of a government of choice is rapidly superseding governments of force, and the countless millions that shall come after will look upon this act and epoch as the dividing line between these opposite forms of government, and will honor increasingly the immortal signers of what shall prove a universal Magna Charta to man.

Until recently Massachusetts has taken little notice of this, her illustrious son.

The first was the gift to the Andover Theological Seminary, also to the West Newbury Church of Bartlett's honored ancestors, of duplicates of the old Liberty Bell of Philadelphia, that first proclaimed "Liberty throughout all the land, unto all the inhabitants thereof."

These bells, with his name thereon, were cast in honor of Josiah Bartlett by order of Mr. and Mrs. E. M. Boynton, she being a great-granddaughter.

About two acres of land in the village of Amesbury is the house-lot where Bartlett was born. It has been purchased in his honor for a public institution. The Bartlett Home for Old Ladies is nearly completed, where the shields of Massachusetts and New Hampshire will arch above his gentle features in marble, decorated by the flag of a republic he helped create.

A still higher honor is the completion in Europe, at an expense of \$10,000, of a bronze statue presented by Jacob R. Huntington, Esq., an able and enterprising man, the first carriage manufacturer of Amesbury, who is himself descended from a family illustrious in the Revolutionary struggle.

Two were Continental generals, one Governor of Connecticut and signer of the Declaration of Independence, and the list of Huntingtons who have occupied high stations, both civil and military, is too long for insertion here.

J. R. Huntington's public spirit thus associates his name forever with that of Amesbury's greatest son.

The unveiling of the statue will take place on July 4, 1888, in the presence of the New England Governors and other distinguished guests. The oration by Hon. R. S. Spofford, the poem by John G. Whittier, will fittingly crown the greatest celebration of Independence Day in the annals of the ancient, patriotic and goodly town of Amesbury.

#### HON. MICAJAH LUNT.<sup>1</sup>

Hon. Micajah Lunt, whose portrait we give, was born in Newburyport, April 22, 1796. He was a lineal descendant of Henry Lunt who came from England and was one of the original grantees in the settlement of Newbury, in 1635, and who died there in 1662. His grandmother, wife of Abner Lunt, of Newbury, was Mirriam Coffin, a great-great-granddaughter of Tristram Coffin, the elder of that name. His mother was a daughter of Daniel Giddings, of Ipswich, Chebacco. His father was Captain Micajah Lunt, of Newbury, to whom we might apply the trite saying, "Like father, like son," the same in name, the same in action, both merchant ship-masters, both facing their country's foes upon the seas, both merchants after retiring from the quarter-deck, and both eminently successful in their pursuits and lives.

The elder Micajah was one of the patriotic soldiers of the ill-fated expedition sailing from this port, in 1779, to drive the English from their lodgment on the Penobscot River, which ended in the burning of the American ships to prevent their falling into the hands of the enemy, when he, with others, found their way back, on foot, through the untrodden wilderness—a journey of toil and suffering. Immediately afterwards we find him on the armed brig "Pallas," warring upon British commerce; taking or being taken, as the chances of war were; now a prisoner

<sup>1</sup> By George J. L. Colby.







*Michael Smith*  
D.D.





released in Spain, and now a second time a prisoner in the West Indies, and a third time taken and thrust into an English prison in New York, and again on the twenty-gun ship "Intrepid," carrying one hundred and twenty men, which brought a cargo of ammunition and other military supplies from France to Baltimore. Thus he devoted four years to the service of his country in the "volunteer navy" (as the privateers really were) of the War of the Revolution, vexing the enemies of American Independence.

His son Micajah was educated in our common schools and in his father's counting-room. In 1813, when but seventeen years of age, in our second struggle with the "mother country," a war for the freedom of the seas, he shipped on board the "Argus," Captain Parsons, the first letter-of-marque from this port in the War of 1812-15, which took three prizes. He was also on board the brig "Essex," of Newburyport, of twelve guns, commanded by Captain William Nichols, when she captured the British letter-of-marque "Carrisbrook Castle," of sixteen guns, a prize of great value. At the early age of nineteen years, in 1815, he was commander of the brig "Olive," and made his first voyage to Nantz, France. It should be remembered that to be master of a ship then, was not alone to be navigator of the ship, but, also, a merchant trusted to sell the cargo out, and purchase the return cargo. It is the more noticeable, therefore, that such a trust and so much confidence should be placed in a person lacking two years of his majority, but he was found fully competent and was successful.

Micajah Lunt was an apt scholar, was a master as an accountant, and was often called upon by corporations in which he was interested, and individuals, to unravel and make straight their puzzling accounts and records. He never failed to improve an opportunity, at home or abroad, to acquire information that would qualify him for all demands of duty. So when at Nantz, finding it inconvenient not to be able to converse in the French, he learned the language, and became an excellent French scholar. In the same manner he made himself acquainted with the history of the countries he visited, the habits of the people, and especially the commercial possibilities; all this he supplemented by extensive reading, and thereby, with his good taste, strong intellect and retentive memory, his knowledge of men and experience in the world, he became one of the best citizens, useful to the public and very interesting in private life. As a merchant he held a very high rank; he was not long at sea before he acquired a competency for a more extensive sphere of action on the land, and at middle life had his warehouse and his offices as a ship merchant on Ferry wharf, which was also a resort of ship-masters—retired or active—seeking his valued advice. So great was the confidence reposed in his discernment and judgment, that men were ready to join him in any business enter-

prises, and so successful was he, that he was one of a half-dozen men, the most wealthy citizens of Newburyport.

He was a man of large public spirit, ever keeping in view the interests of the town, cherishing a deep love for its prosperity; its great industries found him ever ready to lend a helping hand. He was one of the largest ship-owners and often invested with others to aid that business, which, prior to the Rebellion, was the great one in the town. He was the foremost man in the whaling company which, promised to do for us what it did for New Bedford. When cotton manufactures were introduced, he invested largely in them, and for quarter of a century was president of the Bartlett Steam Mills, a large establishment for those times, giving to it his personal attention. He was for twenty years president of the Merchants' Bank; and for some ten years president of the Savings Institution, holding millions as deposits. He was an early director of the Eastern Railroad, in which Newburyport held much stock. For twenty years he was president of the Marine Society, an institution for the special benefit of sea captains and their families, and donated two thousand dollars to its treasury. So he was called many times to offices of trust and responsibility in corporations in Newburyport and other towns. For politics he evinced no ambition, but he served one year in the Legislature as Senator for Essex County, almost against his wish, and declined a re-election. Still he was a firmly pronounced Whig in the days of that party, but always conservative. In religion he was liberal—an active and generous supporter of the Unitarian Church.

He was twice married—to Hannah Gyles Mulliken, daughter of Samuel Mulliken, in 1826, who died in 1829 without children; and again in 1831 to Mary Johnson Collin, daughter of Edmund Collin, of Newbury, a lineal descendant of Tristram Collin, in the same degree as her husband. She survived him until June 19, 1878.

They had seven children, of whom only two survived him—Edmund Sydney Lunt, of New York, and Mary Collin, wife of E. O. Shepard, of Boston, the well-known lawyer.

Micajah Lunt always resided in Newburyport, and from 1838 dwelt in the residence on High Street, built by Judge Edward St. Loe Livermore, father of Harriet Livermore, and there passed most happily the later days of a well-spent and beautifully rounded life, surrounded by those he loved and who loved him, and there he died in his seventy-eighth year, January 8, 1874.

At his burial service Rev. T. B. Fox, his former pastor and close friend, said "the best tribute to him is his remembered life, which for three-score and more years has been his daily eulogy. His thorough honesty in thought, affection, word and deed made him a true man in all relations. He left no shadow or stain on his memory."



## CHAPTER CXLVII.

## WEST NEWBURY.

BY WILLIAM T. DAVIS.

It is not proposed in the following sketch of West Newbury to go farther back than the incorporation of the town, except in such particulars as may be necessary to show the causes which led to it. Unlike that tendency to centralization which, in later times, has characterized our people, in the early days of Massachusetts towns, when farming interests were predominant, and the possession of lands was eagerly sought, the tendency of new settlements was to scatter over available territory, and here and there to build up new communities, too far from their municipal centre to be long contented with old municipal ties. As Massachusetts has been gradually throwing off its agricultural garb and assuming the character of a trading and manufacturing commonwealth, the tendency to centralization has increased, until many of the small farming townships are losing their population and suffering a depreciation of their estates, which is only in a few instances checked by an overflow, from larger cities and towns, of men of culture and wealth, seeking places of health and retirement, during at least the warmer months of the year.

In the tendency of a population to spread itself over a large territory, the old town of Newbury furnished no exception to the general rule. The many hillsides and valleys, with which the western section of Newbury abounded, with their stately landscapes and sunny slopes, soon tempted the settlers to seek among them their permanent homes. Pipe-Stage, Archelus, Long, Crane-Neck, Meeting-House and Indian Hills, had at an early date attracted about them a population not far inferior to that of the original settlement. As early as 1685 these remote inhabitants of the town of Newbury, began to feel inconveniences which demanded some action for their relief. On the 10th of March in that year they presented the following petition to the town of Newbury:

"The humble request of some of the Inhabitants of this town desire and intreat that you would be pleased to grant us your consent, approbation and assistance in getting some help in the ministry amongst us, by reason that we do live so remote from the means, great part of us, that we cannot, with any comfort or convenience, come to the publick worship of God; neither can our families be brought up under the means of grace, as christians ought to be; and which is absolutely necessary unto salvation; therefore, we will humbly crave your loving compliance with us in this, our request."

This was the first movement in the direction of the formation of a new parish, but the records of the town are silent as to any action taken on the petition. In 1688, however, a meeting-house appears to have been built at the Plains by the people of the West District, regardless of the wishes of the old parish of Newbury. This house was thirty feet square and was built at the charge of sixteen persons. It has been thought by some that this meeting-house was built in 1686, but the following extract from the will of Jo-

seph Moring, a soldier, dated November 5, 1688, seems to be conclusive that at that date the house had not been erected: "I give to the new town in Newbury twenty pounds to help build a meeting-house, if they do build one; if they do not build one, then I give twenty pounds toward a building or repairing the meeting-house now standing in Newbury." Again, in February, 1690, the people of that district asked the town to make some provision for a minister amongst them. The committee of the town to whom the request was referred, reported "that considering the times as troublesome and the town being so much behind with Mr. Richardson's salary, the farmers and the neck men being under greater disadvantages upon many accounts, do desire and expect, if such a thing be granted, that they should have the same privilege to provide for themselves, which we think cannot conduce to peace, therefore desire the new towne to rest satisfied for the present."

At a town-meeting held on the 14th of the following month "fifteen men belonging to the west end of the town, after stating that it was well known how far they had proceeded as to a meeting-house, left two propositions with the town, one that the town would agree to support two ministers, so that one could preach at the west meeting-house, or that the town would consent to have the ministry amongst them upon their own charge, and that the town would lovingly agree upon a dividing line between them, that so they might know what families may now belong to the west meeting-house."

No action appears to have been taken on these propositions, and steps were taken by the parish to settle a minister without further delay. When this movement came to the knowledge of the town, it was voted at a meeting held on the 14th of July, 1691, "that understanding that several of the inhabitants of new towne are about calling Mr. (Edward) Tompson to be their minister, the towne do manifest their dislike against it, or against any other minister whom they should call, until ye church and towne are agreed upon it, looking upon such a thing to be an intrusion upon ye church and towne."

In October of the same year a petition was presented to the General Court by the west end people "to be established a people by themselves for the maintenance of the ministry among them," and in December the town voted against the grant of the petition and chose a committee to oppose it before the General Court. As may be supposed, such a disagreement could not long exist without arousing ill feelings on both sides. So great an excitement prevailed in consequence of the action of the town, that great bitterness of spirit was aroused, and Joseph Bayley, one of the west end men, was indicted for calling the committee appointed to consider their petition devils incarnate. It was neither the first nor the last occasion where a religious quarrel proved to be the most unrelenting and severe.





The first sign of yielding on the part of Newbury was exhibited at a meeting held on the 29th of December, 1692, when a committee was chosen "to enquire after a suitable person to preach to the west end and to keep school." On the 12th of May, 1693, the town voted "that Mr. John Clarke be called to assist Mr. Richardson (the Newbury minister) in the work of the ministry at the west end of the town, to preach to them one year in order to farther settlement and also to keep a grammar school."

The town, in their remonstrance against the petition of the west end people, said:

"That a long difference has existed between the people of Newbury and those in the west end of the town about calling a minister, that the west end people had called Mr. Edward Tomsen to preach to them without acquainting the minister, church or town with their proceedings in that affair, the which, when our town did understand that they were about to bring him into town, the town being met to consider of it by their vote, did declare that they were against his coming, or any other, until the church and town were agreed; yet they persisted in their design, and brought him in, and when he was come in our minister warned him to forbear preaching, till the church and town were agreed; yet he presumed to set up a lecture and preach without any allowance of ministers, church or town, which, when the church did understand, they did call him to account, and declared their dislike of his irregular proceeding, yet he hath persisted in these irregularities to the great disturbance of our peace, and since, upon the request of severall of the inhabitants of the west end of our town, called another minister, Mr. John Clark, who hath accepted of the call, and yet there are severall who refuse to accept of him, pretending they are bound to said Tomsen, which agreement they made when the rest of their neighbors were about to make application to the town, which was since the late law was made to direct the town to call the minister."

The west end people, in their reply, requested

"the governor and council to pity and help them, to ease them of a heavy burden of travel on God's day. We have been they said endeavoring above these five years to have the publick worship of God established among us on the Lord's day for reasons such as these: The bulk of us live four miles from the old meeting house, some six or seven. Our number is about three hundred. Few of us have horses, and if we could get down to the old meeting-house, it is impossible it should receive us with them, so that many lay out of doors, the house is so little. Some of us have groaned under this burden this thirty years, some grown old, some sickly and, although we were favored with the liberty granted by King James the second, and had erected an house to the worship of God on our own cost and charge, and acquainted the two next Justices with our intent before we built the said house, a committee of five were appointed to come on the place, but before they had finished their work, the Governor arrived, which caused them to desert. We complained to the Governor, who granted us a protection from paying to the old meeting-house, then countermanded it. The town had a meeting—they intend to delude us by granting the help of a school-master at sometimes for one year. We believe our neighbors would be glad to see us quite tired out. We beg the honorable court to establish peace among us, a rational dividing line."

On the 5th of July, 1693,

"the town gave in their votes for the choyce of a minister for the west end of the town in order to a full settlement in the work of the ministry, and Mr. John Clarke was then chosen and not one vote against him."

Against this vote twenty-five persons of the west end entered their protest on the ground that they already had a minister. In February, 1694, twenty pounds in money and fifty pounds in grain was voted by the town to Mr. Clark, but Mr. Clark declined, and Mr. Christopher Toppin was invited in his place. Mr. Toppin agreed to preach for a year, and the town

voted to give him forty pounds in money and four contributions annually.

On the 31st of December, 1694, another concession was made by the town, and a committee of five was chosen to "draw up articles and proposals in order to setting off part of the west end of the town as a separate parish," and on the 18th of December, 1695, five acres of land on the east side of Artichoke River and one acre of land near the west meeting-house were granted to the west inhabitants when they saw cause to remove the meeting-house to the place specified by the town. The final result of the long controversy was that, October 26, 1698, a church was gathered and another meeting-house built at Pipe-Stage Hill, and November 10th Samuel Belcher was ordained as its minister. Thus the first step was taken which, more than a hundred years later, led to the formation of a new town. What became of the old meeting-house on the "plain," a locality now within the limits of the city of Newburyport, is doubtful. It is probable, however, that it was sold, and that the tradition that it was used as a barn is correct. Until January 28, 1824, this parish was called the Second Parish of Newbury; but at that date, five years after the incorporation of West Newbury, its name was changed by an act of the General Court to the First Parish of West Newbury.

Mr. Belcher was born in Ipswich in 1638, and graduated at Harvard in 1659. He served until 1714, when he removed to Ipswich, where he died the following March.

John Tufts was ordained June 30, 1714, and served until his dismissal, in 1738. He was a native of Medford, a graduate of Harvard in 1708, and died in Amesbury in August, 1750.

Thomas Barnard, born in Boston in 1716, and a graduate of Harvard in 1732, followed August 31, 1739, and served until January 15, 1751. He afterwards practiced law for a short time, and was a representative to the General Court of Newbury in 1755. He was finally again settled in the ministry in Salem, and there died August 15, 1776.

On the 20th of February, 1751, Moses Hale was ordained, and served until his death, January 15, 1779. He was nephew of Rev. Moses Hale, of the Byfield Church, and graduated at Harvard in 1734.

On the 20th of November, 1782, True Kimball was ordained. He was born in Plaistow, N. H., January 28, 1757, and graduated at Harvard in 1778. His ministry continued until April 4, 1797.

Samuel Tombe, a native of Salem, N. Y., followed, and served seven years. His successor, Ebenezer Hubbard, a native of Marblehead, and a graduate of Harvard in 1805, was ordained May 11, 1809, and served until October 16, 1811.

Gilbert T. Williams, born at Fog's Manor, New Jersey, October 8, 1761, and a graduate of Dartmouth in 1784, was installed June 1, 1814, and dismissed September 26, 1821.



After an interval of five years, Henry C. Wright, a native of Sharon, Connecticut, was settled June 21, 1826, and dismissed July 7, 1833. He died in Pawtucket, R. I., August 16, 1870.

Benjamin Ober, born in Beverly April 4, 1805, and an Amherst graduate, was settled January 1, 1834, and was dismissed December 25, 1835.

After another interval extending seven years, during which Moses Welsh and N. W. Sheldon supplied the pulpit, Henry Augustus Woodman, of Newburyport, was ordained November 30, 1842, and, on account of his ill health, was dismissed March 20, 1844. The present meeting-house was built during the interval between the pastorates of Mr. Ober and Mr. Woodman.

Horatio Merrill, from Maine, a graduate of Dartmouth, was settled May 7, 1845, and dismissed August 11, 1847. During the next nine years the church was without a pastor, and on the 5th of March, 1857, Charles Dickinson Herbert was installed, followed by N. Laselle in 1869. The present pastor is Rev. Mr. Pike.

In 1729 the inhabitants of the upper part of the West Parish in Newbury built a meeting-house on Meeting-House or Silloway's Hill, which is described as being "fifty feet by thirty-eight and twenty foot stud." With the full consent of the Second Parish they were set off as a separate parish and organized September 1, 1731, as the Fourth Church in Newbury. The four churches were the old First Church in the old town of Newbury; the Second Church, established in the West District, on the 26th of October, 1698; the Third Church, organized in 1725, in what is now Newburyport, as its First Church; and the new church at the west end. At the time this meeting-house was built only a single house was standing on the hill, which was occupied by Stephen Morse. Several were built soon after, all of which are now standing, except one which was taken down, and another which was burned in 1884. This meeting-house was built without a chimney and had no means of heating it.

On Meeting-House Hill lived Simeon Chase, a descendant of Aquila Chase, and graduate of Harvard in 1767, who spent his life in teaching both public and private schools, and won great reputation as an instructor. He died in 1829, at the age of eighty-four years.

After the removal of the meeting-house, Daniel Silloway became possessor of the entire hill, and it has in recent times borne his name. Mr. Silloway was a carpenter by trade, but he preferred farming, and the acres cultivated by him secured him more than a competency. He was thrown out of his carriage and killed while riding down the hill, more than twenty years ago, and during the long settlement of his estate the farm suffered from neglect and waste, from which, in the hands of Mr. Jennings, it has only recently recovered.

The first pastor of this church was William John-

son, born in Newbury, May 31, 1706, and a graduate of Harvard in 1727. He was ordained September 15, 1731, and served until his death February 22, 1772. David Toppan, the successor of Mr. Johnson, was ordained April 18, 1774. He was born in Manchester, Massachusetts, April 21, 1752, and graduated at Harvard in 1771. In June, 1792, Mr. Toppan accepted the appointment as Hollis Professor of Divinity at Harvard, and was inaugurated in his professorship December 26, 1792, receiving a degree of Doctor of Divinity in 1794. He performed his new duties with an increasing reputation and died August 27, 1803.

The successor of Mr. Toppan was Leonard Woods, born in Princeton, Mass., June 19, 1774, and ordained over this church December 5, 1798. Mr. Woods was intended by his father to be a farmer; but owing to his feeble constitution, his path was directed to the ministry. He studied first with the pastor of his native town, and, after a short term at the Leicester Academy, finished his preparatory course under Ebenezer Adams, afterwards professor in Dartmouth College. He graduated at Harvard in 1796 with the highest honors, and his oration at commencement, as well as that three years later, when he took the Master's degree, were both published. After leaving college, he taught school at Medford eight months, after which he studied theology, and was approbated by the Cambridge Association in the spring of 1798. The parish voted to give him five hundred dollars at settlement, and four hundred dollars a year, with eight cords of wood annually and the use of the parsonage lands. Permission also was given him to visit his parents two Sundays in each year. His pastorate continued until September 28, 1808, when he was inaugurated Professor of Theology at the Andover Theological Seminary. His professorship closed in 1846, and he died at Andover, August 24, 1854.

After the departure of Dr. Woods, an interval of eight years elapsed, during which the church was without a pastor. At the very close of this interval, in 1815, a new meeting-house was built on its present location. It was dedicated January 3, 1816. On the 12th of June, 1816, John Kirby was settled, born in Middletown, Conn., June 30, 1783, and a graduate of Union College in 1807. In 1818 he sailed for Charleston, S. C., to regain, if possible, his impaired health, and the vessel in which he sailed being wrecked on Ocracoke Bar on the coast of North Carolina, he was washed overboard and drowned on the night of the 5th of December in that year.

Elijah Demond, of Rutland, Mass., where he was born November 1, 1790, was ordained March 7, 1821. He graduated at Dartmouth in 1816, and at the Andover Theological Seminary in 1820. He served about five years, and was dismissed September 3, 1826.

Paul Couch was ordained March 21, 1827. He was born in Newburyport, June 20, 1803, and graduated at Dartmouth in 1823. His ordination followed





soon after his graduation from the Andover Seminary in 1826. He was dismissed at his own request August 18, 1828, and after several short pastorates, he was settled over the First Congregational Society in Stonington, Conn., where in 1885 he had preached for twenty years, and was still in active service.

John Quincy Adams Edgell was ordained September 19, 1832. He was born in Westminster, Vt., August 15, 1802; graduated at the Vermont University in 1827 and at the Andover Theological Seminary in 1831. He was dismissed October 27, 1853, and for some years, until his death, acted as agent and assistant secretary of the Society for Promoting Collegiate and Theological Education at the West.

Davis Foster succeeded Mr. Edgell, and was ordained November 1, 1855, remaining until his resignation, September 1, 1867. He was born in Hanover, N.H., October 26, 1822, and graduated from Dartmouth, in 1849, and from the Andover Seminary in 1855. During his pastorate the removal of the meeting-house to its present position, which has been referred to, was made.

Another interval occurred after the resignation of Mr. Foster, during which the church was without a pastor, and which was not terminated until the installation of Seneca M. Keeler, on the 13th of June, 1872, who was dismissed in 1878, and followed by M. A. Doherty. Rev. Francis H. Boynton is now supplying the pulpit.

These parishes, the only ones which had been organized in what is now West Newbury at the date of its incorporation, have been sketched somewhat in detail because they formed the nucleus round which a population gathered, which in time saw that its property and welfare demanded that the management of its affairs should be entrusted to its own separate municipal government. The first movement towards the incorporation of a new town appears to have been made in 1794, and in that year the town of Newbury voted to set off the three northwesterly parishes into a separate town by themselves, and to choose a committee of nine persons, to see if equitably done, and on April 7th voted to choose a committee to petition the General Court to set them off. This vote was reconsidered on the 23d of April. One of these three parishes was the Fifth Parish, incorporated in 1761, and located on the plains east of Artichoke River, and now a part of Newburyport.

No further action was taken until 1819. At that time the population of the town of Newbury was 4950, of which 1279 were resident within the district proposed to be set off. There was no striking dissimilarity in the occupation of the two parts of the town; most of the people in both were engaged in farming and the industries of both were small. Carriage-building and the manufacture of horn combs were carried on to a certain extent, but the value of the product was much less than at a later period. Many men of substance and character were resident in the westerly section,

whose families in one or another branch have become prominent in the Commonwealth. The Emerys, the Robinsons, Moultons, Pillsburys, Littles, Tenneys, Tukesburys, Smiths, Newells, Bayleys, Poors, Browns, Stanwoods, Kimballs and Ordways were men who knew in what direction to seek the welfare of their community, and were conscious of their capacity to regulate their own concerns. On the 18th of February, 1819, the following act of incorporation was passed by the General Court:

“AN ACT TO INCORPORATE THE TOWN OF PARSONS.

“Sec. 1. Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives in General Court assembled and by the authority of the same: That all that part of the town of Newbury in the county of Essex which lies within the following bounds to wit: Beginning on the river Merrimac where the river Artichoke empties into the same, and thence running up the said river Artichoke and through the middle thereof about 577 rods and 22 links to the New Log so called; thence running south 25 degrees east about 360 rods to the boundary line between the first and fourth parishes in said town of Newbury; thence running south  $52\frac{1}{2}$  west by the said parish line to the southerly side of the road leading from Newburyport to the West Parish of Rowley; thence running on the southerly side of said road to Great Rock so called; and thence by the southerly side of said road to Johnson's corner, 528 rods and 2 links; thence running by the boundary line of the 3d Parish of Newbury 385 rods and 21 links to the boundary line of the town of Bradford; thence by said Bradford line to the said river Merrimac; thence down said river Merrimac to the bound first mentioned; be and the said part of said town of Newbury hereby is incorporated into a town by the name of Parsons, and invested with all the powers, privileges and immunities, and subject to all the duties and liabilities to which other incorporated towns are subject by the constitution and laws of this Commonwealth.

“Sec. 2. Be it further enacted that the said town of Parsons shall be helden to pay one-third of all taxes which have been heretofore assessed by said town of Newbury and remain unpaid at the time of the passage of this act, and also the like proportion of all debts due and owing by said town of Newbury.

“Sec. 3. Be it further enacted that the said towns of Parsons and Newbury shall respectively support and maintain the several persons and their families and all such as shall have a derivative settlement under them or any of them who are now chargeable and mentioned as allotted to said towns respectively in a certain schedule thereof, entitled a statement of the expense of the poor of the town of Newbury agreed to on the 11th day of February, in the year of our Lord one thousand eight hundred and nineteen, and signed by the committee of the said town of Newbury of the one part and by the committee of divers inhabitants of the 2d and 3d Parishes of said Newbury being petitioners for the incorporation of said Parsons of the other part; and all other persons who shall hereafter be found chargeable to said towns shall be supported and maintained by them respectively, according to the general laws in this behalf, provided always that nothing in this act shall be construed to affect any agreement heretofore made between the towns of Newbury and Newburyport respecting the support of paupers; but the said town of Parsons shall contribute its just proportion of all sums of money which said Newbury shall pay by force of such agreement; said proportion to be ascertained by the State valuation from time to time made of the said towns of Parsons and Newbury.

“Sec. 4. Be it further enacted that the inhabitants of the said town of Newbury shall have, hold and enjoy to their own use and benefit forever all the real and personal estate belonging to the said town at the time of the passage of this act, excepting any real estate which may fall within the limits of the town hereby incorporated, and the said town of Parsons shall pay to the said town of Newbury the sum of \$1100 within twelve months from the period last aforesaid.

“Sec. 5. Be it further enacted that the said town of Parsons shall contribute its just proportion to be ascertained as in the third section of this act of the expense of making a certain highway lately laid out in said Newbury and known by the name of Noye's Road whenever the said town of Newbury shall be compelled to make the same.

“Sec. 6. Be it further enacted that any Justice of the Peace of said county of Essex is hereby authorized to issue his warrant, directed to any freeholder in the said town of Parsons, requiring him to warn the inhabitants thereof to meet at the time and place therein appointed for





the purpose of choosing such town officers as towns are by law required to choose at their annual meetings."

The name of the new town specified in the act not proving satisfactory to its people, on the 14th of June, 1820, the General Court passed the following:

"ACT TO CHANGE THE NAME OF THE TOWN OF PARSONS."

"Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives, in General Court assembled and by the authority of the same, That the name of the town of Parsons, in the County of Essex, shall cease, and the said town shall hereafter be called and known by the name of West Newbury, any law to the contrary notwithstanding."

Pursuant to the foregoing act of incorporation sundry inhabitants made application to one of the justices of the peace within the county, as follows:

"To Daniel Emery, Esq., one of the Justices of the Peace within and for the County of Essex:

"We, the subscribers, freeholders and other inhabitants of the town of Parsons, judging a Meeting of said inhabitants to be necessary, do hereby request you to issue a warrant for the calling of a meeting of said inhabitants, to be holden at the East Meeting-House, in said town, on Monday, the 8th day of March next, at one o'clock in the afternoon, to act on the following articles, viz:

"To choose a Moderator to govern said meeting. To choose a Clerk, Selectmen, assessors of the Poor, and other town officers, as the law directs.

"Parsons, February 24, 1819.

"Moses Brown.	John Kimball.
Joseph Bayley, Jr.	Carb Kimball.
Benjamin Merrill.	Charles Kimball.
Edward Hogan.	Benjamin Stanwood.
Joseph Stanwood.	David Ordway, Jr."

The warrant was duly issued, and at the meeting held on the 8th of March, 1819, Daniel Emery called the town to order, and was chosen moderator, and Thomas Hills was chosen clerk.

A board of three selectmen was chosen, and the following list shows who have served on the board from the incorporation of the town to the present town:

1819. Daniel Emery.	1829. Addison Brown.
Joseph Stanwood.	Eliphalet Emery.
Thomas Chase.	David Sawyer.
1820. Joseph Stanwood.	1830. David Sawyer.
Thomas Chase.	Moses Newell.
Wm. Pillsbury.	Samuel Carr.
1821. Joseph Stanwood.	1831. Moses Newell.
Eliphalet Emery.	David Sawyer.
Edmund Little.	Samuel Rogers, Jr.
1822. Eliphalet Emery.	1832. Samuel Rogers, Jr.
Moses Newell.	Daniel Moulton.
Edmund Little.	Otis Little.
1823. Moses Newell.	1833. Moses Newell.
Eliphalet Emery.	Samuel Rogers, Jr.
Joseph Stanwood.	John Coker.
1824. Eliphalet Emery.	1834. Moses Newell.
Samuel Tenney.	Samuel Rogers, Jr.
Thomas Chase.	Otis Little.
1825. Samuel Tenney.	1835. Otis Little.
Eliphalet Emery.	David Sawyer.
David Ordway, Jr.	Eliphalet Emery.
1826. Eliphalet Emery.	1836. Eliphalet Emery.
Samuel Tenney.	Moses Newell.
Moses Newell.	Otis Little.
1827. Samuel Tenney.	1837. George Thurlow.
Eliphalet Emery.	Eliphalet Emery.
David Sawyer.	Hanson Ordway.
1828. Samuel Tenney.	1838. David Sawyer.
Thomas Chase.	George Thurlow.
Eliphalet Emery.	Otis Little.

1839. Otis Little.	Moses Newell.
Eliphalet Emery.	1861. N. F. Emery.
Samuel Rogers, Jr.	Ichabod Titcomb.
1840. Samuel Rogers, Jr.	Eben P. Stanwood.
Otis Little.	1862. Ichabod Titcomb.
Lucien A. Emery.	Moses Newell.
1841. Moses Newell.	N. F. Emery.
Eliphalet Emery.	1863. Wm. Merrill.
Hiram Rogers.	Geo. Emery.
1842. Eliphalet Emery.	Dean R. Stanwood.
Edmund Little.	1864. Geo. Emery.
Moody Brickett.	Wm. Merrill.
1843. Moses Newell.	N. F. Emery.
Moses Carr.	1865. Wm. Merrill.
John Coker.	N. F. Emery.
1844. Thos. S. Ordway.	Dean R. Stanwood.
Moses Newell.	1866. Dean R. Stanwood.
John Bartlett.	Wm. Merrill.
1845. Edmund Little, Jr.	Geo. W. Carr.
Ira Blake.	1867. Samuel Rogers.
Samuel Rogers, Jr.	Wm. Merrill.
1846. Eliphalet Emery.	Jos. Newell.
Moses Newell.	1868. Samuel Rogers.
Edmund Little, Jr.	Dean R. Stanwood.
1847. Moses Newell.	Wm. Merrill.
Eliphalet Emery.	1869. Geo. W. Carr.
Hanson Ordway.	Wm. Merrill.
1848. Moses Newell.	Chas. W. Ordway.
Hanson Ordway.	1870. Geo. W. Carr.
Edmund Little.	Chas. W. Ordway.
1849. Moses Newell.	Edmund Little.
Wm. H. Coffin.	1871. Wm. Merrill.
Moses P. Stanwood.	Chas. W. Ordway.
1850. Thos. S. Ordway.	Geo. W. Carr.
Edmund Little.	1872. Chas. W. Ordway.
Benj. Edwards.	Geo. W. Carr.
1851. Moses Newell.	Edmund Little.
John L. Plumer.	1873. Chas. W. Ordway.
George Emery.	Geo. W. Carr.
1852. Eliphalet Emery.	Edmund Little.
N. F. Emery.	1874. Chas. W. Ordway.
David Smith.	Henry T. Bailey.
1853. Nehemiah F. Emery.	John M. Poor.
Eliphalet Emery.	1875. Chas. W. Ordway.
Ichabod Titcomb.	Henry T. Bailey.
1854. Ichabod Titcomb.	John M. Poor.
N. F. Emery.	1876. Same.
John Moody.	1877. Chas. W. Ordway.
1855. N. F. Emery.	Henry D. Lay.
M. H. Poor.	Henry T. Bailey.
Ichabod Titcomb.	1878. Same.
1856. Ichabod Titcomb.	1879. Chas. W. Ordway.
Moses Newell.	Henry D. Lay.
Stephen C. Noyes.	Richard Newell.
1857. N. F. Emery.	1880. Same.
Ichabod Titcomb.	1881. Same.
Calvin Rogers.	1882. Chas. W. Ordway.
1858. Geo. Emery.	Jos. Watson.
N. F. Emery.	Richard Newell.
Samuel N. Bailey.	1883. Same.
1859. N. F. Emery.	1884. Same.
Ichabod Titcomb.	1885. Same.
Thos. C. Thurlow.	1886. Same.
1860. Ichabod Titcomb.	1887. Same.
N. F. Emery.	

The following persons have presided as moderator of the annual town-meetings:

Daniel Emery.....1819-20	Benj. F. S. Griffin.....1817-48
Dean Robinson.....1821-23	Moses Newell.....1819-51
Samuel Tenney.....1824	Dean Robinson.....1852
Dean Robinson.....1825-29	Moses Newell.....1853
Daniel Emery.....1830-31	Dean Robinson.....1854-55
Dean Robinson.....1832-35	Moses Newell.....1856-57
Otis Little.....1840	Dean Robinson.....1858-60
Moses Newell.....1841-46	Geo. W. Carr.....1861



Nehemiah F. Emery.....1862-65	Moody E. Boynton.....1879
J. Gartner Tewksbury.....1866-70	Moses C. Smith.....1880
Haydn Brown.....1871	Lawrence H. Bailey.....1881
James H. Durgin.....1872	Moses C. Smith.....1882-86
Isaac N. Latner.....1873	Ezekiel G. Nason.....1887
Haydn Brown.....1874-78	

The town clerks have been as follows :

1819-33. Thomas Hills.	1886-87. Eben P. Stanwood.
1834-85. John C. Carr.	

At a town-meeting held on the 18th of March a committee of three, consisting of Daniel Emery, Joseph Stanwood and Thomas Chase, was appointed to meet a committee of the town of Newbury and settle all legal demands under the act of incorporation. At the same meeting the school districts were established and at the two meetings all town officers necessary to perfect the municipal machinery were chosen.

Up to and including 1856 the town system prevailed in the choice of Representatives to the General Court. During that time the following Representatives were chosen in West Newbury in the years set against their names :

1819-21. Daniel Emery.	1838. Benjamin Edwards.
1822. No Representative.	Moses Carr
1823. Joseph Stanwood.	1839. None.
1824-25. Daniel Emery.	1840. George Hosm.
1826. Moses Newell.	1841. Moses Newell.
1827-28. Daniel Emery.	1842. None.
1829. Elphadet Emery.	1843. None.
1830. Daniel Emery.	1844. Enoch Bailey.
1831-32. Elphadet Emery.	1845. Otis Little.
1833. Samuel Carr.	1846. None.
1834. Samuel Carr.	1847. None.
Elphadet Emery.	1848. None.
1835. John E. Bartlett.	1849. None.
Moses Carr.	1850-51. Benjamin Edwards.
1836. Moses Carr.	1852. None.
Moses Emery.	1853. John C. Carr.
1837. Hanson Odway.	1854. None.
John C. Carr.	1855. Joseph Z. Gordon.
	1856. Benjamin Edwards, Jr.

In the election of 1850 a singular state of things existed. The whole number of votes was 246 and 124 was declared necessary for a choice. Mr. Edwards had 123. Three of the 246 votes were for John B. Alley, who was a candidate for Congress, and the meeting voted to throw out these three votes, leaving the whole number 243, of which 122 would be necessary for a choice. The effect of this was the election of Mr. Edwards, and he was declared chosen.

From 1857 to 1866, inclusive, the district system prevailed, and Newbury, West Newbury and Rowley formed the Seventeenth Representative District of Essex County. The Representatives from this district were as follows :

1857.—Benjamin Edwards, Jr., of West Newbury.
1858.—Gerrish P. Sargent, of Newbury.
1859.—Moses T. Whittier, of Rowley.
1860.—Calvin Rogers, of West Newbury.
1861.—Nathan Amos, of Newbury.
1862.—Amos Bishop, of Rowley.
1863.—Eben P. Stanwood, of West Newbury.
1864.—Wm. M. Rogers, of Newbury.
1865.—Edward H. Potter, of Rowley.

From 1866 to 1875, inclusive, Amesbury, West Newbury and Salisbury formed the First District of Essex County, and the following were the Representatives :

1866.—Amos Buswell, of Salisbury; Addison A. Sawyer, of Amesbury.
1867.—J. R. Huntington, of Amesbury; J. G. Tewksbury, of West Newbury.
1868.—Joseph N. Clark, of Salisbury; Wm. H. Haskell, of Amesbury.
1869.—William Merrill, of West Newbury; Wm. H. Ames, of Salisbury.
1870.—John Hume, of Amesbury; Charles L. Allen, of Salisbury.
1871.—B. F. Sargent, of Amesbury; James H. Durgin, of West Newbury.
1872.—Charles W. Merrill, of Salisbury; Richard F. Briggs, of Amesbury.
1873.—Joseph M. Eaton, of Salisbury; Moses Carr, of West Newbury.
1874.—William Chase, of Amesbury; Charles M. Brown, of Salisbury.
1875.—George W. Merrill, of Amesbury; Enoch Sawyer, of Salisbury.

From 1876 up to 1887, inclusive, Amesbury, Salisbury, West Newbury and Merrimac have formed the Eighteenth District of Essex County, and the following Representatives have been chosen :

1876.—Orlando S. Bailey, of Amesbury; Frederick W. Merrill, of Salisbury.
1877.—James D. Pike, of Merrimac; Samuel Colton, of Salisbury.
1878.—Albert S. Adams, of Amesbury; Orin Warren, of West Newbury.
1879.—William Smeath, of Amesbury; Charles P. Collins, of Salisbury.
1880.—Benjamin L. Fitch, of Salisbury; Richard Newell, of West Newbury.
1881.—Albert Sargent, of Merrimac; Oliver A. Roberts, of Salisbury.
1882.—Mark D. T. Steen, of Amesbury; David L. Ambrose, of West Newbury.
1883.—John L. Little, of Salisbury; John B. Judkins, of Merrimac.
1884.—Alexander H. Huntington, of Amesbury; M. C. Smith, of West Newbury.
1885.—Hiram Walker, of Salisbury; George O. Goodwin, of Merrimac.
1886.—Alexander Smart, of Merrimac; John H. Palsand, of Amesbury.
1887.—John C. Risten, of Amesbury; Charles Goss, of Amesbury.

At the time of the incorporation of West Newbury its industries were unimportant, yielding a product of not more than forty thousand dollars per year. They have increased largely since, and consist chiefly of establishments for the manufacture of shoes and combs. The comb manufacture was the earliest perhaps of all, dating back to the year 1770. It originated in an enterprise projected by Enoch Noyes, a farmer, for the manufacture of horn buttons. He worked in the kitchen of his house during the winter, having as his only tools a hatchet, a saw, a bit of glass and a woolen polishing rag. After the battle of Bennington he hired a Hessian comb-maker, who was a deserter from Burgoyne's army, who taught him the use of the grail, the guarrett and other contrivances for the manufacture of combs and their preparation for the market. The business thus begun by Mr. Noyes has been continued by his son, grandsons and great-grandsons. About the year 1830 there were twenty-five or thirty shops in West Newbury in which combs were made, and the manufacturers would take them to Boston and sell them and bring back horns in their one-horse wagons. There are now but two establishments; but these, by the use of steam, turn out a much larger product than all





the older ones combined. These two are those of S. C. Noyes & Co. and H. G. O. & T. M. Chase. The largest of these is that of S. C. Noyes & Co., in which are some machines invented by Haydn Brown, by which horn-combs are made equal to ivory in appearance and beauty of finish.

The manufacture of carriages, once quite extensive, has to a large extent disappeared and become established at Amesbury, on the other side of the river.

The manufacture of shoes is carried on to a moderate extent, the only establishment at present being that of James Durgin & Son, an enterprising and successful firm.

The two parishes existing at the time of the incorporation of the town have been already referred to. At the present time there are other religious societies which should be mentioned. On the 15th of February, 1832, Micajah Poor, Joseph Perry, Jesse Noyes, Samuel Gould, Simeon Pilsbury, William W. Perry, Giles Woodman, Joseph J. Bailey, David Clefford and Samuel Stickney and their associates were incorporated into a society by the name of the First Methodist Episcopal Society in West Newbury and Newbury. This society built a meeting-house in West Newbury, near Great Rock; but the society is now located over the line in Newbury, and the meeting-house was either taken down or moved.

On the 16th of April, 1868, Moses P. Stanwood, Moses H. Poor and James B. Kelley and their associates were incorporated as a religious society under the name of the West Newbury Chapel Association. This association was merely auxiliary to the First Parish, and the chapel is used in connection with its Sunday-school and other parochial services.

A Baptist society was organized not many years ago, which is situated on one of the many pleasant spots on the land formerly owned by the Poore family. Many years ago the trustees of Andover Theological Seminary bought the same lot for the location of their building; but, for some cause, the deeds never passed. The land was presented to the Baptist Society by Sewell S. Chase and the meeting house erected on the lot is creditable to the society and the town. At present the society has no settled minister.

A Catholic Church has also been erected within a few years, and is now presided over by Father Murphy, in connection with other neighboring churches.

The other associations worthy of note are the West Newbury Farmers' Club—an enterprising association which holds annual meetings of great interest—and the West Newbury Mutual Fire Insurance Company, incorporated March 22, 1849, of which William Merrill is president, and Henry T. Bailey secretary.

In the War of the Rebellion West Newbury performed her full part. Soon after the incorporation of the town, a company of infantry was raised and attached to the regiment of which Colonel Samuel Tenney, of that town, was commander. This company

was successively under the command of Captains Bailey, Otis Little, Joseph Goodrich and Hanson Ordway. About the same time, a company of cavalry was organized under Captain Uriah Bailey, and attached to the regiment commanded by Colonel Moses Newell. This company was subsequently commanded by Thomas Chase, John Pearson and Joseph Little. Both of these companies were disbanded long before the war.

In 1852 a battalion of rifles was raised by Ben: Perley Poore, of which Company A, of West Newbury, commanded by Moses P. Stanwood, was a part. Major Poore was made its commander.

On the 29th of April, 1861, the town appropriated ten thousand dollars for a war-emergency fund, and voted to pay to each member of the rifle company belonging to West Newbury ten dollars a month while in active service and ten dollars a month to the family of each. In addition to this appropriation, one hundred and fifty dollars was appropriated for uniforms. The rifle company was afterwards the nucleus of Company A of the Nineteenth Regiment of Massachusetts Volunteers for three years.

In July, 1862, it was voted to pay \$150 to each soldier enlisted for three years, and on the 15th of August it was voted to pay the same bounty to nine months' men. On the 30th of August it was voted to increase the bounty to \$300. During the whole war the number of men furnished by the town was two hundred and sixty-seven, of whom twelve were commissioned officers. The quota of the town was two hundred and thirty-three. The war expenditures, exclusive of State aid, were \$36,240. The amount of State aid paid, which was reimbursed by the State, was \$21,058. The population of the town at the time was two thousand and eighty-eight, and its valuation less than a million dollars. The following is a list of separate enlistments in the town taken from the rolls at the State House and containing only two hundred and thirty enlistments.

It is probable that the remaining thirty-seven covered credits for the town's share of enlistments made by the State,—

Ben: Perley Poore, Major.

Daniel B. Abbott.

George H. Chase.

David Atkinson.

Calvin J. Brown.

Daniel P. Brock.

Francis B. Emery.

Edward Knight.

George H. Merrill.

Lewis F. Morrill.

Charles L. Noyes.

Samuel Oliver.

Roland W. Sawyer.

John W. Stevens.

John McAleer.

Eben P. Stanwood, Lieut.-Col.

Moses B. Merrill, Capt.

Wm. T. Woodburn, Sergt.

John W. Hogg, Sergt.

Ebenezer Carlton, Corp.

Joshua Ordway, Musician.

Hos-a W. Ordway, Wagoner.

Daniel B. Abbott.

Jeremiah M. Adams.

Honace N. Bailey.

Warren Balch.

Daniel P. Brock.

Richard T. Carter.

David W. Clary.

Daniel F. Connell.

John Donovan.

Francis B. Emery.

Charles S. Gilman.

Joshua Hills.

Thomas G. Hills.

Richard Hudson.

Wm. B. Jewett.

Harlan P. Johnson.

Lucius C. Johnson.

James E. Kelley.



Henry G. Marsh.  
John A. Morse.  
Joseph Morse.  
Thomas E. Maylan.  
Wm. H. Nelson.  
Jos. O. Noyes.  
John O'Laughlin.  
Charles E. Prible.  
Elbridge A. Richardson.  
Wm. Ryan.  
Isaac A. Short.  
James H. Short.  
Calvin J. Stevens.  
Charles A. Whiting.  
Julius R. Wilson.  
Luther P. Russell, Sergt.  
Wm. H. Gould.  
George L. Coffin.  
George A. Jewett.  
Henry C. Logan.  
Frank McGuire.  
George Robinson.  
John Ryan.  
Wm. Thompson.  
John Watson.  
Wm. H. Wilson, Jr.  
James Foye, re-enlisted.  
Lambert Bailey, Corp.  
John Donovan.  
Charles W. Gowen.  
Richard Lynch.  
James Potter.  
Edmund T. Pillsbury.  
John G. Coffin.  
George T. Smith.  
Phineas B. Carleton.  
John Cheney.  
Michael Cheney.  
Benj. T. Noyes, Capt.  
Warren A. Galeana.  
Wm. W. Reed.  
Joseph Rhodes.  
Patrick Dunn, Sergt.  
Abner Gould, Sergt.  
Horace Rodick, Sergt.  
Thos. B. Parker, Corp.  
Ira W. Poor, Corp.  
Wm. M. Nichols, Musician.  
Benj. A. Applebee.  
Charles W. Brewster.  
Alfred H. Bennett.  
Benj. W. Edwards.  
Daniel W. Hoyt.  
Nathaniel Rogers.  
Savoy Rogers.  
Augustus H. Spiller.  
Franklin L. Walker.  
George Worsbury.  
John Bradley.  
Jos. W. Gilman.  
Wm. H. Nelson.  
Jos. Elbridge, Corp.  
Wm. Atkinson, Sergt.  
Wm. B. Carleton, Corp.  
Frank W. Bancy.  
Charles C. Bridges.  
Luther C. Bridges.  
Charles S. Gilman.  
Walter J. Pope.  
Robert S. Enson.  
Charles Notting.  
James Flannery.  
Joseph H. Smith.  
Joseph Smith.  
Wm. Henry.  
John Leonard.  
Paul Gillinge.

Charles Culver.  
Patrick Nalty, re-enlisted.  
John M. Brown.  
Daniel Farrington.  
Luke Delan, Corp.  
John Smith.  
Isaac H. Boyd, Major.  
Moses P. Stanwood, Capt.  
Francis Osborne, 1st Lieut.  
Giles D. W. Johnson, 1st Lt.  
Sherman S. Robinson, 2d Lt.  
Samuel A. Bridges, 2d Lieut.  
John McCannon.  
Wm. Atkinson, sergt.  
Edward W. Bartlett.  
Charles Bradley.  
Garham Coffin.  
Patrick Dunn.  
Jules H. Chase, corp.  
Charles P. Coffin, corp.  
Wm. A. Kennett, corp.  
Charles I. Noyes, corp.  
Wm. C. Tison, corp.  
Wm. Young, corp.  
Charles H. Fowler, wagoner.  
Charles F. Appleton.  
Edward B. Bartlett.  
James Booth.  
Osgood Brown.  
Daniel W. Carleton.  
Everett Carleton.  
Samuel Carleton.  
Moses F. Carr.  
Owen Carr.  
John G. Coffin.  
Wm. J. Curtis.  
Nathaniel W. Davis.  
Augustus Grant.  
Isaac G. Hagar.  
Charles Hudson.  
Jonathan Hudson.  
George A. Kennett.  
Stephen D. Kennett.  
John McCannon, re-enlisted.  
James McIntosh.  
Levi C. McKinstry.  
Charles W. Merrill.  
Theron P. Newhall.  
Gilman F. Nichols.  
Stephen Noyes.  
Otis Pearson.  
James Porter.  
John Prible.  
Philip Roth.  
John W. Sargent, Jr.  
Alexander L. Short.  
Ogden H. Smith.  
Samuel Sylvester.  
Irving E. Walker.  
Hugh M. Osborne, corp.  
George Y. Bradley.  
Wm. Fee.  
Wm. Osborne.  
George W. Rogers.  
Shubael D. Rogers.  
Wm. T. George, sergt.  
Wm. C. Foster, corp.  
Eben Colby, re-enlisted.  
Samuel Downer.  
John F. Fowler.  
Henry E. Palmer.  
Edmund H. Jacques, corp.  
John J. Jacques, corp.  
Wm. Dawkins.  
Moses C. Little.  
Abiam A. Dow, corp.  
George E. Coffin.

Simcon S. Steele, unassigned.  
Charles Kelley.  
Henry Curtis, unassigned.  
James Harmon, unassigned.  
Orin Warren, assist. surg.  
John Towser.  
Daniel Farrington.  
Charles F. Appleton, 2d lieut.  
Walter Smeaton.  
Luke Delan, corp.  
John Smith.  
Orin Warren, surg.  
Frank Duggan.  
Wm. Dawkins, Jr.  
Robert Archibald.  
Warren K. Bailey.

Wm. Bohannon.  
Charles S. Brigham.  
Wm. P. Goodwin.  
Peter Johnson.  
George Thompson.  
Lowell S. Bullens.  
Jeremiah Cannon.  
Edward Eriley.  
Edward Greenwood.  
Lyman H. Hardie.  
James Hickey.  
Martin H. Lawless.  
James Robinson.  
Hugh O. Toy.  
James Tracey.  
Edward Turner.

West Newbury is chiefly distinguished as a farming town and few towns in the State can boast of better farms or better methods of tillage. There are so many of these farms that it is difficult to mention any without doing injustice to those which may be omitted. It will be sufficient, in order to show the extent of the farming interest, to mention the farms of Cyrus K. Ordway, George J. Pierce, Richard Newell, Charles S. Bradley, Dean R. Stanwood, Thomas C. Thurlow, Thomas G. Ordway, William Bryant, Horace Moody, E. Moody Boynton, Moses M. Ridgeway, Moses H. Poor, and the Indian Hill farm and the Jennings farm on Silloway Hill.

Among those who were born either in West Newbury or within its territory before its incorporation, there are a few the incidents in whose lives are accessible and may without any invidious distinction be mentioned in this narrative.

REV. JOHN TUFTS, to whom reference has been already made as pastor of the First Church in West Newbury from 1714 to 1738, published during his ministry a small book of tunes, entitled "A very Plain and Easy Introduction to the Art of Singing Psalm Tunes, contrived in such a Manner as that the Learner may attain the skill of singing them with the greatest ease and speed imaginable." This was the first publication of the kind in New England and was severely criticised by those who were wedded to old customs. The singing in the churches at that time was usually by rote and not more than four or five tunes were used. The most common were "York," "Hackney," "St. Mary's," "Windsor" and "Martyrs." The book of Mr. Tufts contained twenty-eight tunes, with rules which made their learning easy, and was looked upon as a daring and unjustifiable innovation. One critic said concerning it, "Truly I have great jealousy that if we once begin to sing by rule the next thing will be to pray by rule and preach by rule, and then comes popery."

DEAN ROBINSON was born at Andover, Mass., on the 18th of April, 1788. He studied in the common schools, in the North Parish Academy at Andover, and finished his classical education under the tuition of Rev. Dr. Peter Eaton, of West Boxford, a graduate of Harvard in 1787. For a time he taught school at Danvers, and then studied medicine with Dr. Thomas Kittridge, of Andover. In April, 1811, he made a per-





manent settlement in the West District of Newbury, and there for fifty years he devoted himself to the practice of his profession. He became a member of the Massachusetts Medical Society in 1815 and was entered as a retired member in 1848. He was a prominent member of the Masonic order and one of the founders of the Essex County Agricultural Society, of which he was for many years an officer.

He continued his practice until he was so feeble in body as to be obliged to be carried to the bedside of his patients, a chronic spinal affection having induced partial paralysis of his limbs. He was looked up to as authority by his brothers in the profession, esteemed by the community and beloved by those who had been cured or solaced by him in their sufferings and pains. He died at his residence on Pipe-Stave Hill, in West Newbury, on Saturday, the 24th of August, 1863, at the age of seventy-five.

SAMUEL MOODY was born in West Newbury in 1837, and through life devoted himself to the cultivation of an inherited estate, on which he died on Wednesday, July 25, 1877. He was one of the leading agriculturists in Essex County, and met with success in his occupation, which his judgment and skill deserved. He was a man of the purest character, a devoted son, a kind friend, an estimable and respected citizen. It was said of him after his death that there was a "daily beauty in his life that dispensed contentment, happiness and joy to all within its reach."

CORNELIUS CONWAY FELTON was born in that part of Newbury which was incorporated in 1819 as West Newbury, November 6, 1807. He was the oldest son of Cornelius and Anna (Morse) Felton. The residence of his father was in the Lower Parish of West Newbury, next to the house in which Moses Brown, a wealthy merchant of Newburyport was born, and not far from the birthplace of Bailey, the author of *Bailey's Algebra*, in the neighborhood of Brown's Springs, and near Pipe-Stave Hill. He attended the Bradford Academy, and afterwards the town school of Saugus, to which place his father removed in his boyhood. In 1822 he was sent to a private school at North Andover, under the charge of Simon Putnam, where he fitted for college. He graduated at Harvard in 1827, having during a portion of his junior year taught mathematics in the Round Hill School, at Northampton. After leaving college he taught in the Livingston County High School, in Geneseo, New York, and occupied the position of tutor in Latin at Harvard in 1829, of tutor in Greek in 1830, and Professor of Greek in 1832. In 1834 he was appointed Eliot Professor of Greek, and occupied that position until 1860, when he was inaugurated president of the college. He received the degree of Doctor of Laws from Amherst in 1848, and from Yale in 1860. He died at the house of his brother in Chester, Penn., February 26, 1862.

His brother, Samuel Morse Felton, a graduate of

Harvard in 1834, at one time president of the Philadelphia, Wilmington and Baltimore Railroad, was his brother, and the latter was the father of Samuel M. Felton, Jr., who, at the age of thirty-one years, was made president of the Erie Railroad corporation.

Mr. Felton was widely known among scholars, not only as a professor, but as an author, editor and translator of foreign literature. In 1833 he published an edition of Homer with notes, in 1840 a translation of Menzel's "German Literature," a Greek reader with notes, in 1841 the "Clouds of Aristophanes," in 1845 the "Panegyricus of Isocrates" and the "Agamemnon of Æschylus," in 1849 a translation from the French—Guyot's "Earth and Man"—and the "Birds of Aristophanes," in 1852 a selection from the writings of Professor Popkin and a volume of selections from the Greek historians, in 1855 a revised edition of Smith's "History of Greece" and an edition of "Lord Carlisle's Diary" in Turkish and Greek waters, in 1856 a selection from modern Greek writers, a compilation of a work on Greek and Roman metres, and a memoir of General Eaton in Sparks' "American Biographies." He was also a prolific writer for the *North American Review*, the *Christian Examiner*, and other magazines.

At the reception of the sons of Newburyport in that city on the Fourth of July 1855, Mr. Felton one of the invited guests, thus alluded to the place of his birth:—

"It is now nearly forty years—how my heart troubles while my tongue relates!"—since, in early childhood, I was borne away from the place of my birth, caring little or nothing to what distant shores the currents of life were drifting me. I have but seldom visited Newbury since; but the scenes which first met my eye were impressed on my memory too deeply to be forgotten. The old training-field, where an ancestor of mine distinguished himself as sergeant in a military company, was to me another Campus Martius; the beautiful Mermaid flowed in my imagination, like the broad and boundless Hellespont of Homer; and Pipe-stave hill rose like the Grecian Olympus to the sky. Indeed, when recently I had the rare pleasure of dashing on board a British steamer through the allied fleets of France and England, as they stretched, in double line from Tenedos to Troy—the most magnificent spectacle the eye of man ever gazed upon—it seemed to me the renowned Hellespont was hardly so broad and boundless as my native river in the memories of my childhood."

LEONARD WOODS was the son of Rev. Leonard Woods, who was settled over the Second Church in Newbury (now the First Church in West Newbury) in 1798, and was born in what is now West Newbury November 24, 1807, in the same month with Professor Felton. He graduated at Union College in 1827, the same year that Mr. Felton graduated from Harvard, and, after acting as tutor at the Andover Theological Seminary and professor of the Bangor Theological Seminary, became president of Bowdoin College in 1839, and, serving until 1866, was occupying the president's chair of one of our leading colleges while Mr. Felton was occupying the chair of another. Like his townsman, he was the author and translator and editor of several works, though in a somewhat different field of literature from that in which Mr. Felton was engaged.





COLONEL DANIEL MOULTON was born in the West District of Newbury in 1792. He died at the old family homestead near Great Rock, in West Newbury, September 13, 1878, having occupied the homestead eighty-four years. He was one of the most prominent, active and enterprising men in that community, and was the last in that neighborhood of the old militia colonels, among whom were Colonel Coleman, Colonel Adams and Colonel Newell. His wife, who was a Spoilord (of Georgetown), died two years before him, and three children survived him—Daniel E. Moulton, of Georgetown; Mrs. H. Sawyer and Mrs. I. Titcomb, of West Newbury.

EBEN CARTER BAILEY was born in the West District of Newbury March 15, 1818, the year before its incorporation as a separate town. After leaving the public schools he was apprenticed to George Hosum, a leading shoe manufacturer, and when he had arrived at his majority he was employed a year by Mr. Hosum, and then taken into partnership. He subsequently married a daughter of Mr. Hosum, and the firm was removed to Boston. After the final dissolution of the partnership Mr. Bailey continued the business in Boston, retaining his residence in his native town.

Aside from the vocation of a busy and successful merchant, Mr. Bailey pursued the avocation of an agriculturist and was deeply interested in the Masonic order, of which he was a prominent member. Major Poore said of him, in the *Newburyport Herald*, after his death, which occurred at West Newbury, that "he was an affectionate husband, a kind brother, a sincere friend and a cheerful giver to the deserving poor." He died April 29, 1881.

JAMES SMITH was born in the West District of Newbury in 1792, and died in the old homestead at Crane Neck April 23, 1882, at the age of ninety years. Mr. Smith was the sixth in direct descent bearing the name of James, and the fourth who lived on the Crane Neck farm, his great-grandfather James having bought it of John Kent, of Kent's Island, in Newbury, about 1720. The first American ancestor of the Newbury family was Thomas Smith, who came in the ship "James," and settled in Ipswich in 1635. Three years later he went to Newbury and located and occupied the farm on which the subject of this sketch died, it having passed in its descent through John Kent, above mentioned. The son of Thomas Smith was James, who was drowned at Anticosti in the expedition against the French at Québec in 1696. James, the son of James, was born in 1670, and married Jane Kent, of Kent's Island. His son James was born in 1696, and inherited from his grandfather, John Kent, one hundred acres of land on Crane Neck Hill in the Upper Woods,—then a hunting-ground of the Indians. The last James built the house which formed the back part of the house which descended to his son James, whose sixth son was the James whose sketch is here written. The father of

the last James married Prudence, daughter of Edmund Little, whose estates also have come down in a line of Edmund Littles, and are now owned by his great-grandson. A sister of the last James Smith married Edward Toppan, of Newburyport, whose children live now, or have until very recently lived, on the same farm to which there has never been a deed. It has remained in the family ever since the first division of lands, and has always borne the name of the Toppan farm.

EBENEZER BAILEY was born in what is now West Newbury June 25, 1795. He was the son of Paul and Emma (Carr) Bailey, and on both his father's and mother's sides belonged to families which had for many generations lived in the valley of the Merrimac. He was the youngest of four children, and was selected by his father, who was a small farmer, for a collegiate education. He graduated at Yale College in 1817, and shortly after opened a private school at New Haven, where he also entered his name for the study of law in the office of Hon. Seth P. Staples. After only a short residence in New Haven he accepted the position of tutor in the family of Colonel Carter, at Sabine Hall, Richmond County, Va., where he remained a year, returning to West Newbury in the winter of 1818 and '19. He then opened a private school at Newburyport, and married Adeline, daughter of Allen Dodge, of that town. In 1823 he was appointed head master of the Franklin Grammar School in Boston, and in 1825, the year of his marriage, was the author of the prize ode read at the Boston Theatre on Washington's birthday. In November, 1825, he was appointed teacher of the Boston High School for girls, and in December, 1827, opened a young ladies' private high school in Spring Lane, in Boston.

In 1830 he was one of a committee to draft a constitution for the organization of the American Institute of Instruction, and about the same time was a member of the Boston City Council and a director of the House of Reformation. While living in Boston he was also a frequent contributor to the *Boston Courier*, and, becoming a popular lecturer, was for a time president of the Boston Lyceum. In 1831 he compiled the "Young Ladies' Class-Book" and "Bakewell's Philosophical Conversations," and in 1833 he published what is known as "Bailey's Algebra," a work on which his fame chiefly rests. In 1838 he opened a private school for boys in Roxbury, which he removed in 1839 to Lynn. He died of lock-jaw in Lynn July 28, 1839.

The native of West Newbury whose name is more familiar to the readers of this sketch than that of any other was Major Ben: Perley Poore. He was born in that town November 2, 1820, and was the son of Col. Benjamin Poore, who was the sixth lineal owner of Indian Hill farm, of which Major Poore was the seventh and last. In 1650 the broad acres of "Great Tom Indian" came into the possession of



John Poore, the first American ancestor of the family, who built the house on the farm, which, with additions and alterations, has been held under the original Indian deed, and has passed from father to son through seven generations. The farm derived its name of Indian Hill from early battles on that spot between the Indians and the settlers. The Poore family is said to have been of Norman origin, and John Poore, the emigrant ancestor, was descended from Philip Poore, a brother of Richard Poore, bishop of Salisbury, who planned and caused to be erected the famous Salisbury Cathedral. The original house on the Indian Hill farm was a copy of an old English manor, and as wing after wing and tower after tower have, from time to time, been added to it, it has assumed a shape and appearance unlike any structure to be seen elsewhere, but strictly in harmony with the broad cosmopolitan and antiquarian tastes of its late proprietor, and suggestive of the rich and rare collection of ancient furniture and relics and curiosities crowded in its rooms and halls. It would be an almost endless task to describe the collection, an adequate idea of which nothing but an exhaustive descriptive catalogue could give. The portraits of his ancestors, their coats-of-arms and the swords they wore, Franklin's printing press, portions of Egyptian mummies, relics of the Pilgrim Fathers, stair-cases and fire-places from historic houses, pulpits and pews from famous meeting-houses, a bedstead on which Napoleon slept, ancient armor, cross-bows of an early age, Masonic emblems and jewels, albums of countless autographs, vases from Herculaneum, old china by Watteau, swords of Bunker Hill, and order-books of the Revolution are but few of the articles making up this rare museum, but are sufficient to suggest its extent and quaintness and value.

Major Poore received his early education in the Dummer Academy, from which he graduated in 1832, at the age of twelve years. In the catalogue of the academy he is mentioned as belonging to New York, as at that time his father was engaged in business in that city. In 1831, while at school, he went to Europe with his father, and while there visited Sir Walter Scott, for whom Major Poore's younger brother, who died in California, was named. After finally leaving school he served a few years' apprenticeship at the printer's trade, which, however, he never pursued. At the age of sixteen he became a newspaper correspondent, and at that time, in 1838, he wrote his first letter to the *Boston Atlas*, a journal to which, as a letter writer, he was attached for many years. From 1838 to 1840 he edited the *Southern Whig*, at Athens, Georgia, and in 1840 was *attache* of legation to H. W. Hilliard, at Brussels. In 1841 he went to Paris, where he remained until 1848, acting as the agent of Massachusetts to collect facts from the marine and colonial departments of France touching the history of the Commonwealth. The results of his labors filled ten folio volumes, and were highly com-

mended by the Legislature. While in Paris he wrote a series of letters for the *Boston Atlas* and the *Hartford Courant*, which at that time, when our people were less familiar than now with European affairs, attracted the attention of intelligent readers, and were considered authoritative upon the subjects of which they treated.

On his return from Europe he edited for a time the *Boston Daily Bee* and the *American Sentinel*, becoming, however, in 1854, the Washington correspondent of the *Boston Journal*, in which capacity, with more or less frequency, he wrote under the signature of "Perley" until his death. In 1854, also, he became secretary of the United States Agricultural Society and the editor of its journal. He was clerk of the Senate Committee on Foreign Relations while Charles Sumner was its chairman, a period of about ten years. Afterwards, for many years until his death, he was clerk of the Printing Records Committee, but all the while keeping up his correspondence and familiarizing himself with everything connected with Washington, Congress, its members and its current business. He published an account of the conspiracy trial in 1865, and in 1867 his invaluable "Congressional Directory." Other works published by him were "The Life of General Taylor" in 1848, "The Rise and Fall of Louis Philippe" in the same year, "The Early Life of Napoleon" in 1851, "The Agricultural History of Essex County" at a later date, and his "Reminiscences." Major Poore died in Washington May 29, 1887, leaving a widow, who was Miss Virginia Dodge, of Georgetown, in the District of Columbia.

Among the residents at various times in West Newbury may be mentioned, in addition to those already referred to, Nathaniel Emery, an old Jeffersonian Democrat, and a fearless and independent man who opposed the division of the town; his two sons, Eliphalet and Nicholas, who moved across the Artichoke in order to keep their residence in Newbury and afterwards returned; Caleb and Joseph Kimball, enterprising farmers; Edward Worth; Nathan Rogers, who lived at Surinam, near the head-waters of the Artichoke; Joshua and David Ordway, grandsons of Hananiah Ordway, who killed the Indian on the Garrison Farm at Zion, near Indian Hill; Joseph Kelly, the tobaccoist, who lived at Mount Misery, between Surinam and Zion; David Morse, the blacksmith, one of whose daughters was the mother of Professor Felton; Thomas Huse Everett, whose mother was a sister of Thomas Huse, who gave his farm in West Newbury to his namesake; Nat Hale, a cabinet-maker; and John Chisemoni, a carpet-weaver, who lived by the road-side in Coker Lane. There was also Major Moses Moody, whose three daughters married Judge Crosby, of Lowell; Dixie Crosby, at one time Professor of Surgery in Dartmouth College; and Professor Smith of the Gilmanton Theological Seminary. His farm was opposite the First







*John Brown*



Parish Church, and has been in later years owned by Moses Moody Ridgway. Daniel Emery and Moses Newell were leading citizens, and for many years were prominent in town affairs.

The schools of West Newbury have always been good and liberally supported. There are now in the town two hundred and ninety-five children between the ages of five and fifteen, and provision for their education has been made by the establishment and maintenance of one high school, one grammar school, seven mixed schools and one primary school, supported at an expense to the town, in 1886, of \$2560.12.

The population of the town in 1885 was eighteen hundred and ninety-nine, and its valuation in 1886 was one million ninety-six thousand eight hundred and fifty-four dollars. While its population has been gradually diminishing, its property has been gradually increasing, and with its good soil, its delightful situation, its existing horse-railroad communication with Haverhill, and a promised communication with Newburyport, it may be safely predicted that from this time forth it will increase in population, prosperity and wealth.

## BIOGRAPHICAL.

### DR. DEAN ROBINSON.<sup>1</sup>

In this day of multiplicity and great variety of doctors (so called) male and female, of different schools of medicine or no school at all, one can hardly imagine the dignified position of a well-instructed, competent physician seventy-five years ago, entering upon the practice of his profession with zeal and enthusiasm. The duties of such an one, especially if located in an agricultural town, were more arduous, in some respects, than would those of a country practitioner now be. At that time there were no railroads, with steam-power, in this State; no telegraphs, no telephones.

Much of the mechanical and agricultural work was done without the aid of labor-saving machinery, now so convenient to lighten the toil of the artisan or farmer.

The country doctor of old time was obliged to be a druggist—to keep on hand a store of medicines, and carry those required for his patients on his professional visits. He had to contend with all sorts of wind and weather, riding or driving over rough roads frequently; neither could he summon his professional brethren for a consultation as rapidly as if the facilities for communication were greater. He also was obliged to work without the help of many agents which the increased discoveries of chemistry have introduced, and with rougher surgical instruments than those now in use.

But if the physician's labors *were* more arduous, with less pecuniary recompense, yet, if he performed them *well*, he was certain to receive more respect and esteem from the community than a good man, of the same profession, can expect in this irreverent generation. Seventy-five years ago the minister and the doctor were looked up to with veneration. And this very consideration served as a stimulus to a man of correct feeling and high principle to "walk worthy" of his "vocation."

A young man of this description, Dean Robinson, M.D., with his family, settled, in 1811, in the western part of the town of Newbury, Mass. (now West Newbury). The first house he occupied is situated about half a mile above the bridge over the Artichoke River, on the road from Newburyport to Haverhill.

A letter in the writer's possession, dated April 22, 1811, written by a lady in the vicinity mentions "our new doctor" as the occupant of the house referred to above.

The opinion of a person who, with a friend, visited the new comers, is given, that they "were elegant and desirable neighbors," who received their visitors with great politeness and entertained them handsomely.

This first impression made upon the neighbors by the doctor and his family was correct, and increased and deepened as years rolled on.

Dean Robinson, the son of John and Sarah Robinson, of Andover, Mass., was born on the 15th of April, 1788. His father was not living when he came to Newbury, but his mother resided in the house with him. The writer remembers her as a gentle and dignified old lady. Her son revered and loved her to an unusual degree. She must have been very careful in training him in habits of industry, truth, and with religious principles.

Dean Robinson attended the common schools in his native town when a boy, and subsequently the academy in North Andover. Afterward he became a pupil of the Rev. P. Eaton, of Boxford, a learned and excellent Congregationalist minister, for whom he always entertained a high esteem. Mr. Robinson was for a time a teacher in Danvers, and was much respected by his pupils. It was customary at that time for young men preparing for a profession to teach school, in order to defray their own expenses for instruction; and in many cases this discipline had a good effect upon their own characters, and gave them much knowledge of human nature.

Mr. Robinson studied medicine with Dr. Thomas Kittredge, of Andover, a celebrated physician in the country.

He married Mrs. Elizabeth F. Farnham, *nee* Lovejoy, of Andover, a young widow, with two children, who found a kind father in Dr. Robinson. One of these, a daughter, was married to Dr. Asa Story, of Manchester, Mass., and died in 1874, beloved and

<sup>1</sup> By Mrs. M. H. Emery.



respected. The son, Mr. Jacob Farnham, always made his home with his mother and step-father, and became an esteemed and useful citizen in the town of West Newbury, which was incorporated as a separate township in 1819.

Mrs. Robinson was truly a helpmeet for her husband. By the wise management of her household and untiring industry she greatly assisted him in acquiring a handsome property. Both Mrs. Robinson and the doctor always were remarkable for hospitality.

The doctor's only child, a daughter, was born in the house near the Artichoke River. Before Dr. Robinson's entrance into West Newbury, Dr. Poore, I think, occupied the whole professional ground. Some other physicians came to the place, but remained but a short time. Though there was enough work for two physicians, it was natural that the old doctor should feel somewhat sensitive at the appearance of a young brother in the profession. But so considerate and courteous was Dr. Robinson towards his senior, that they became, in time, good friends, and the younger attended the elder in his last sickness. The friendship between the two doctors and their families is continued to the present time by their descendants.

The writer is indebted to the late Major Ben Perley Poore's obituary of Dr. Robinson for much of the material for this sketch. Dr. Robinson soon gained a good practice, which constantly increased, and with it his experience and reputation.

After some years of success he purchased a larger house about a mile above his first residence, where he lived many years. Here his daughter was married to Mr. Samuel Moody. While living at this place the doctor probably did the greater part of his professional work. He was now one of the best physicians in the county. He endeavored to keep up with the improvements of the times. He was a very "clear-headed" man, and his advice was often sought by his medical brethren. His practice was not confined to his own town, but extended to Newburyport, Georgetown, Amesbury and other neighboring towns. His patients, many of them, became his warm friends. His presence in a sick-room, as the writer recalls it as a youthful memory, brought hope and promise of relief to his patient. He would, after proper inquiries and examination and a few moments of apparently deep thought, prepare his medicine and give directions in a manner to inspire such confidence that no one would dream of disobeying them. In a serious case he liked one person to take the responsibility. "Who stands nurse?" he has been heard to ask. There were no *trained* nurses at that time. Dr. Robinson was particularly attentive to patients among the poor and needy. If the instances of his gratuitous services and contributions of medicines and delicacies to the destitute had been recorded, the list would probably be long.

Dr. Robinson became a member of the Massachusetts Medical Society in 1815. He was recorded as a retired member in 1849. He also belonged to the Essex North Medical Society, of which he was one of the founders. The increase of mechanical business in the western part of the town brought increase of work for a physician, and Dr. Boyd settled in that locality. He died of consumption after a few years' practice, and Dr. Robinson was a kind friend to him in his last illness.

In 1842, Dr. Robinson purchased the farm on Pipe-Stave Hill, once the residence of Hon. Tristram Dalton.

Dr. and Mrs. Robinson, for a number of years, enjoyed this beautiful estate, and their house was a delightful resort for their friends, who were very numerous. Their hospitality was also extended to strangers. It was not unusual for persons to come from some distance to consult the doctor, and to wait for him if he were absent on his rounds of visits, in which case refreshments were offered them, if the delay were long, no hotel being accessible.

The doctor was fond of agriculture, and superintended the work on his farm with success. He delighted especially in the cultivation of fine fruit. This business, which many would consider laborious, was, to the doctor, a relaxation from his medical work. He was one of those industrious men born in the last century, who made *change of work* recreation.

He kept good horses, and was more careful for their comfort than his own, as he would return after his long drive, leave his tired steed to rest, and soon set off again with a fresh horse. As Major Poore wrote, he "continued to visit his old families, and to consult with the junior members of the profession, until he had to be borne in others' arms to the bedside of the patient."

For some years before his decease he was troubled with a chronic affection of the spine, which increased until he was unable to walk without assistance. He bore the affliction, heavy as it was for one of his active habits, with fortitude and patience. At the same time his wife was becoming very feeble, although she survived him more than two years.

For some time the doctor was confined to his bed. His last illness was cheered by the loving care of his daughter and her husband, his stepson and his grandson, who attended his grandfather with rare and unselfish devotion. \*

His medical brethren were attentive, and his rector, the Rev. Dr. Horton, of St. Paul's, Newburyport, visited him, and, with prayers and administration of the Holy Communion from time to time, brought the consolations of religion to him while deprived of the ability to worship in church.

But the end came at length. In the words of his friend, the late Major Poore: "After devoting half a century of his earthly existence to the wants of the







Faithfully Yours,  
Ben: Perley Poore



sick and suffering, Dr. Robinson's strength gradually faded away, under a chronic spinal affection; but his mind retained its vigor until he gently sank into his last sleep." His death occurred August 22, 1863.

Another friend writes:

"By the death of Dr. Robinson, the community has lost a valuable man. He possessed a very discriminating mind, coupled with an intense common sense, which gave to his judgment a value in most of the ordinary affairs of life, to which but few men attain. He was also a 'Beloved Physician,' as was well attested by the crowd of weeping friends, who assembled . . . at his late residence on Pipe-Stage Hill, to pay the last tribute of respect to his mortal remains, and to sincerely sympathize with a bereaved and heart-stricken family."

From a notice in a local paper:

"At a meeting of Essex North District Medical Society, held at Haverhill, Oct. 1, 1863, the subscribers were chosen a committee with instruction to express through the public papers their high sense of the eminent professional standing and social worth of our late associate, Dr. Dean Robinson, of West Newbury.

"The Committee, in behalf of the Society, adopt and subscribe the following resolutions:

"Resolved, That by the death of our respected friend, Dr. Robinson, the community have sustained the loss of an active and useful citizen, the sick of an intelligent, skillful and excellent physician,—and we, his companions, are deprived of one whose professional opinions we ever respected, and whose long connection with this Society, his devotion to its interest, the ability and zeal with which he discharged his duties, and his cheerful, manly and honorable demeanor has won him the respect and esteem of those who are, and have been, members of this Society, and who demand of us this tribute of regard.

"Resolved, That we express to his family our deep sense of their irreparable loss, and our sympathy with them in their bereavement, and our wish ever to unite with them in cherishing his memory.

"Signed,

"JEREMIAH STODOLSKY.

"KENNETH LING.

"H. PERKINS."

#### MAJOR BEN: PERLEY POORE.

Ben: Perley Poore belonged to one of the oldest families of the town of Newbury, his ancestor, John Poore, having settled on the River Parker in 1635. He came from Wiltshire, England, where his family had been eminent in church and State; Herbert Poore, bishop of Sarum, having assisted at the coronation of King John, and united with the barons in wringing from his unwilling hands the Magna Charta.

By his petition and his influence with King Richard I. his See was removed from Sarum to Salisbury, and his brother, Richard Poore, was his successor; through whose zeal and ability the building of Salisbury Cathedral was commenced. He laid the first stone on April 28, 1220, and preached the first sermon at its consecration, on St. Michaelmas day, 1225.

In Amesbury, England, from which our Amesbury derived its name, lived the great ancestor of the family, Philip le Poer, and from him for more than thirty generations the family has been easily traced.

In 1650 John Poore purchased Indian Hill and the land surrounding it from the Indians. It is one of the finest estates in Essex County, and overlooks the land and sea for a long distance.

The grandfather of Major Poore was Daniel Noyes Poore, an eminent physician, who graduated at Har-

vard in 1777. He was the classmate and friend of Rufus King, and the two assisted in planting the elm tree which now stands on the lawn in front of the house at Indian Hill.

Colonel Benjamin Poore, the father of Ben: Perley, married the daughter of Allen Dodge, of Hamilton, Mass., and from her family came his name of Perley, of which he was proud, since his maternal ancestors were also of English descent, in direct line from Pierre Dodge, of Chester, whose name appears in the "Book of Heraldry" as rewarded with arms by Edward I. for valiant services in 1306.

Colonel Poore resided, during his early married life, in the town of Newburyport, and it was there, in 1820, that his son Ben: Perley was born. He afterwards continued his mercantile business in the city of New York, and he sent his boy alone, at the age of seven years, to Newburyport to visit his relatives, as a test of his precocious self-reliance, and the journey was safely performed.

He afterwards removed to Indian Hill, and became devoted to rural pursuits, making his home a model farm.

He was repeatedly rewarded by the State for his zeal in agriculture and for his own importation of a breed of Short-horn cattle, which were carefully preserved in their purity by his son, and they still adorn the pasture-land of the place.

He removed, with his family, to San Francisco, and was settled there in business; and, being sent as agent for establishing a line of steamers to Hong Kong, he was shipwrecked and drowned on the return voyage.

Major Poore passed his youth at Indian Hill farm, where he also acquired a love of rural life, which never left him. His father was justly proud of him, and in 1831 he accompanied his parents to Europe, where he met many distinguished men of the day, including Walter Scott, in his home at Abbotsford, Thomas Moore and General Lafayette.

The impressions of that journey, made so early in life, were always stamped upon his memory and gave an impetus to his future career.

On his return home he entered Dummer Academy, in which institution he always took great interest, and a few years previous to his death delivered an historical address there upon the dedication of a new dormitory. After leaving there he went to Worcester, Mass., and studied the art of printing for two years, and, acquiring journalistic tastes, he subsequently went to Athens, Ga., and became editor of the *Southern Whig* from 1838 to '40.

In 1841 he accompanied the Hon. H. W. Hilliard, Minister to Belgium, as an attache to the legation, and during his residence abroad he was the agent of the State of Massachusetts to obtain original historical matter for the archives of the State. Ten large folio volumes testify to his industry, and are evidences of his skill as a penman, in which he took





great pride, and his copy has been the joy of every compositor who has been called upon to compose the thousands of columns contributed by him to the public press.

After leaving the legation at Belgium, he went to Paris, by the advice of his father, to perfect himself in the French language, with the intention of practicing law in New Orleans, which project, however, he afterwards abandoned. He traveled in Greece, Asia, Palestine and Egypt, and made two visits to Constantinople, and while in the Holy Land he bathed in the Jordan, sat on the Mount of Olives and broke bread with the pilgrims within the gates of Jerusalem. He crossed the Great Desert of Sahara and lost one attendant during a sirocco. On arriving in Egypt he was disappointed in not receiving an expected draft, and was almost without money. He was very anxious to visit the Nile and the Pyramids, and applied to a banker for assistance, explaining his position; being a Free Mason and having an honest countenance, his appeal was heard, and an answer was promised that evening. The book of "English Heraldry" was consulted, and, finding his story true, there was no delay in advancing the required sum; and on his return from the journey his draft from the Rothschilds was received, and matters were settled to the gratification of all parties.

He managed his travels so as to spend Holy Week in Rome, where he received the blessing of the Pope. He returned from Europe in 1847, and continued his connection with the *Boston Atlas*, and in the winter of that year commenced his career as a "Washington Correspondent" on that paper. In 1848 he entered warmly into the Presidential election, and published a life of General Zachary Taylor, the Whig candidate, and was also editor of the *Boston Bee*.

In 1849 he was married in Georgetown, D. C., to the daughter of Francis Dodge (an uncle of his mother), who was a native of Hamilton, Mass.

In 1850 he edited the *American Sentinel* in Boston, through which he ventilated his passion for native Americanism, as he was intensely patriotic.

The care of a newspaper was irksome, but the correspondence was a delight; and his success on the *Atlas* led to greater fame on the *Boston Journal*.

From 1854 he resided in Washington during the sessions of Congress as correspondent of that paper; and, having unlimited freedom in its columns, added much to its value and importance as an influential journal.

As an evidence of his passion for the art of printing, it may be mentioned that at his home he rejoiced in an amateur printing office, of somewhat pretentious proportions; he was the owner of a Ramage press, with a stone bed and wooden platen, four pulls to a sheet,—once worked by Benjamin Franklin, and he occasionally indulged in "jobs" that were not only creditable, but evinced the perfect compositor and tasteful mechanic.

When he entered upon reporting the proceedings of Congress by telegraph, so that the news should be printed in Boston as early as in Washington, it was soon adopted universally in the larger cities, rendering the Washington reporters a power in the land, and the senior member, Major Poore, was their chief.

Apart from the newspaper he also had a literary career. Soon after his return from France he published the "Rise and Fall of Louis Philippe" and the "Early Life of Louis Napoleon," and later he gave us the lives of Grant, Logan and Burnside.

He was clerk of the Committee on Foreign Affairs in the United States Senate, and was the trusted friend of the committee generally, but was especially appreciated by Senator Charles Sumner, its chairman.

They had many tastes in common, and the Major was always a welcome guest at his table, the invitations to which were generally written "Pot-luck at 6." There, on such occasions, while inspecting his rare volumes and curios, the Senator often remarked that he found Major Poore the most intelligent appreciator of his collection. At the last dinner eaten by Mr. Sumner, Major Poore was one of the few personal friends present, and late that evening he was hastily summoned to the bed-side of his friend, where he remained until the great statesman breathed his last. In 1878 he contributed to the *National Review* a paper on "Sumner's Place in History."

He was clerk of the Printing Committee of the Senate for twenty years, and compiled annually the "Congressional Directory," and also, by order of Congress, "Our Diplomatic Relations," "Federal and State Constitutions," "Colonial Charters and other Organic Laws of the United States" and "The Catalogue of Government Publications." Meanwhile he was writing for the *Agricultural Reports*. He also supervised the indices to the *Congressional Record*, a class of work in which he was an expert. In 1880 he wrote a series of articles for the *Atlantic Monthly* entitled "Reminiscences of Washington Life," and his last work, published in 1886, was "Perley's Reminiscences," in two volumes, of rare interest.

His devotion to agriculture was supreme, and when he was sixteen years of age he planted at Indian Hill, with his father, a row of thirty-nine chestnut trees, which are still in a thriving condition; and at the age of thirty-nine he planted thirty-nine elms, and a tree every year after, for twenty years, making fifty-nine elms, which are now vigorous and beautiful. He continued to add to the beauty of the farm, and received the prize of one thousand dollars offered by the State Agricultural Society for the best ten acres of trees raised from seed. He was always identified with the agricultural interests of the State, and was secretary of the National Agricultural Society for many years.

Few men have lived who have been more uniform-



ly industrious. He had none of those qualifications which adapt a man to idle hours. He had his hours of comparative repose, but they were not hours of idleness. A change of work was his only recreation. He passed from the hurly burly of Washington life, from the turmoil of political dissensions, from the sharp competition of telegraphic correspondence, from the hospitalities of the capital to his home at Indian Hill, but he never reclined under his own roof or beneath the trees of his beautiful home, except when, as a host, he extended agreeable civilities to his many friends. His trees, his farm, his books, his correspondence, his autographs, his collection of Revolutionary relics, his clippings from the newspapers claimed his attention. He was not pressed for time, and while he was not deficient in method, he passed from the consideration of all these different interests so rapidly that, had it not been for his great love for the work he had temporarily in hand, one might have wondered how he found any recuperative effect in his change from the banks of the Potomac to the banks of the Merrimac. The demands made upon him during these vacation seasons, when Congress was not in session, never ceased, for he was so many-sided in his tastes and possessed such a fund of general knowledge that he was not at a loss for information to impart whether the gathering was literary, agricultural, masonic, military or antiquarian in its nature. He was a welcomed guest wherever he went, for he had a fund of anecdotes and volumes of unwritten reminiscences in his mind, which came at his bidding to appropriately illustrate every topic and to enhance the enjoyment of every occasion.

His association with the leading statesmen of the past forty years was more intimate than that ever enjoyed by a Washington correspondent. He was in the best sense a helpful man to even those who were his superiors in special attainments. His retentive memory enabled him, on many important occasions, to prevent misstatements being made by those who consulted him, and he was justly regarded as the best authority upon any subject to which he had given his attention. "The Major never made a speech in the Senate of the United States," said a Senator to us a few years since, "but how many speeches would have been Poore's if quotation marks had covered the facts and points which he contributed." He never betrayed a trust, and in his presence no topic, however important, was discussed in bated breath by the Senators, for his loyalty was unquestioned.

One of the amusing evidences of the Major's eccentricity, and yet characteristic of his entire sincerity in fulfilling his obligations, was manifested by what was known as "The Great Wheelbarrow Feat." In June, 1856, shortly after the nomination of Fremont, the Major made a bet of a barrel of apples with Colonel Robert I. Burbank that Mr. Fillmore would obtain more votes than Colonel Fremont in Massachusetts, it being agreed that the loser should propel the

apples on a wheelbarrow from his own residence to that of the winner. After the election in November the Major, satisfied that he had lost, notified Colonel Burbank that he should pay the bet and perform the task of wheeling the barrel from West Newbury to Boston. Colonel Burbank offered at once to release the Major from his engagement, but he was young and muscular, and he felt that to retire from the field would be ignominious. He occupied a portion of three days in accomplishing his work. He was escorted up State Street by the Boston Fusileers and a crowd which packed the street. He delivered his barrel to Colonel Burbank in front of the Tremont House amid the cheers of thousands, and was the recipient of a dinner in the evening.

Major Poore had a natural love for a military life, and as a student of tactics he acquired great proficiency. He was the commander of a boys' company when quite a youth, and while at the South he gave considerable attention to the militia. He held several staff appointments during his editorial career in Boston.

With much labor and expense he organized and commanded the First Rifle Battalion of Massachusetts, which was the first corps to tender their services to President Lincoln in 1861. He was first major and then lieutenant-colonel of the Sixth Massachusetts Regiment, rendering important services in keeping the way open from the North to the capital. Later he returned to his duties in Washington in poor health, but Governor Andrew declared that his dispatches to the *Boston Journal*, and other services in Washington were worth a regiment in the field, as he was there known as the soldiers' friend.

Prominent among Mr. Poore's characteristics was his devotion to the Masonic Fraternity. It was prior to the year 1860 that he received, at Paris, France, the Thirty-second Degree of the Scottish Rite, and after that time he was an Honorary Member of the Supreme Council, and was promoted to the Thirty-third Degree. He was loved and honored by thousands of Masons who never knew him personally. On the farm, which was his home for so many years, he made a lodge in the open air, among the trees that he had planted when a boy,—a lodge duly proportioned, with seats of stone and an altar of stone, on all sides enclosed by a thick set hedge,—which had, by a regular meeting held there, been duly consecrated. And here, to show how Mr. Poore was appreciated by his fellow Masons, it may be stated, that Albert Pike, the gifted poet, on the 29th day of May, 1887, as Grand Commander of the Masonic Fraternity, issued a manifesto in honor of Mr. Poore, which was exceedingly complimentary to the departed, and full of the noblest sentiments. One of the paragraphs in Mr. Pike's manifesto is as follows: "We who are Masons cannot think of Brother Poore as dead; but only as one gone far away from us, into an unknown realm, from which no return to us is possible; but





into which we shall follow him in a little while, and be happier in the renewed intercourse of affection, because of the temporary separation. Nature must have her way, and we must for a time lament this new loss and deprivation, and speak of him regretfully, and sadly remember him in our lonely self-communings." And again, after alluding to his faith in Masonry, Mr. Pike says: "In that faith our Brother labored here, and firm in that faith he died; no man or woman in all the world being poorer because he had lived, and no one's life made cheerless by loss of faith in God's goodness, or of hope of immortality by any word he ever wrote."

"Twice overwhelmed by anguish in his later years, by the deaths which left him childless, of his daughters grown to womanhood, and beloved by him with an unmeasurable love, he bore with patient courage and resignation these terrible afflictions. Death has mercifully spared him the sharper agony of being left wholly alone in his old home to mourn over another grave, and we offer the desolate widow the sympathy of our brotherly love." Then followed the order that for sixty days all the Brethren should wear the badge of sorrow for an Inspector General deceased.

The last literary work performed by Major Poore was the preparation of a history of the "Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company," of Boston, an organization two hundred years old, of which he was Past Commander, and long an influential member. It was on the day that he delivered, in person, the manuscript to the printer in Washington that he was stricken down with faintness at the National Capital, from whence he was conveyed to the Ebbitt House, which had been his winter home for a great many years. After an illness of two weeks, during which time he received every possible care and attention from his devoted wife and relatives, his sincere friends, Mr. and Mrs. C. C. Willard, as well as from his physicians, Doctors Baxter and Harrison, he breathed away his life in perfect peace on the morning of the 30th of May, 1887, and was buried by the side of his two daughters near Indian Hill.

A leading feature of Mr. Poore's character was his disposition to help his fellow-men, often giving away his money while denying himself comforts that he needed. During his sojourn in Georgia he identified himself with the Methodist Church, but as years progressed he sided with the Protestant Episcopal Church, and at all times and in every place never failed, as occasions occurred, to manifest his regard for the Christian religion.

His survivors are his widow and his two sisters, now living at Indian Hill Farm, and his only grandchild, the son of his younger daughter, who was the wife of Frederick S. Mosely, of Newburyport, Mass.

In the note-book carried by Major Poore was found pasted the following touching verse, which, perhaps, may be appropriately quoted in thus closing the life of one of Essex's faithful sons:

"When I am dead and gone  
And the mould upon my breast,  
Say not that he did ill or well,  
— Only he did his best —"

#### SAMUEL MOODY EMERY.

Samuel Moody Emery was born A.D. 1804, in that part of Newbury, Mass., which in 1819 became a separate town, now called West Newbury. His father, Moody Emery, was a descendant of John Emery, Jr., who with father, mother, sister, uncle and other friends, came to Newbury in 1635.

John Emery, Sr., was one of the "original grantees of land" in the town, "declared, December 7, 1642, to have proportionable rights in all waste lands, commons and rivers undisposed, &c."<sup>1</sup> He also had a portion of land granted him, "called the greene, about three akers, being more or less, &c., only the twenty rods [is] reserved in said land for a burying-place, &c." The price of this land was three pounds.<sup>1</sup> He lived at the old settlement for some years, but in the latter part of his life resided in West Newbury.<sup>1</sup>

At this time, the western part of the town was called the Commons or Upper Woods.<sup>1</sup>

In 1644 "there was laid out unto John Emery, Jun., fourscore akers of upland, bee it more or less, joyneing unto Merrimacke River on the north and running from the mouth of Artichoke River unto a marked tree by a swamp, &c."<sup>1</sup>

John Emery or his father must have had much land added by purchase or grant to this "four-score akers," which was, at one time, deeded by him to his father, and again given back to the son. Before John, Jr.'s death he was a large landed proprietor in West Newbury and owned land in Haverhill.

In the year 1679 "the town," on March 3d, "granted unto John Emery, junior, twelve acres of land on the west side of Artichoke River, provided he build and maintain a corn-mill, to grind the town's corn from time to time, and to build it within one year and a half after the date hereof, and so forth."<sup>2</sup>

He was also granted three acres on the east side of the river to build the mill, on certain conditions.

The "Mill" property was afterwards sold by Stephen Emery, Esq., who married Hannah Rolfe, and built a new house on the old farm.

He was the grandfather of Moody Emery—the father of Samuel M. Emery, whose mother's name was Abigail Prescott, from New Hampshire.

Samuel was a delicate child, requiring much care. When about the age of twelve years he was brought low by a severe illness, from which he slowly recovered.

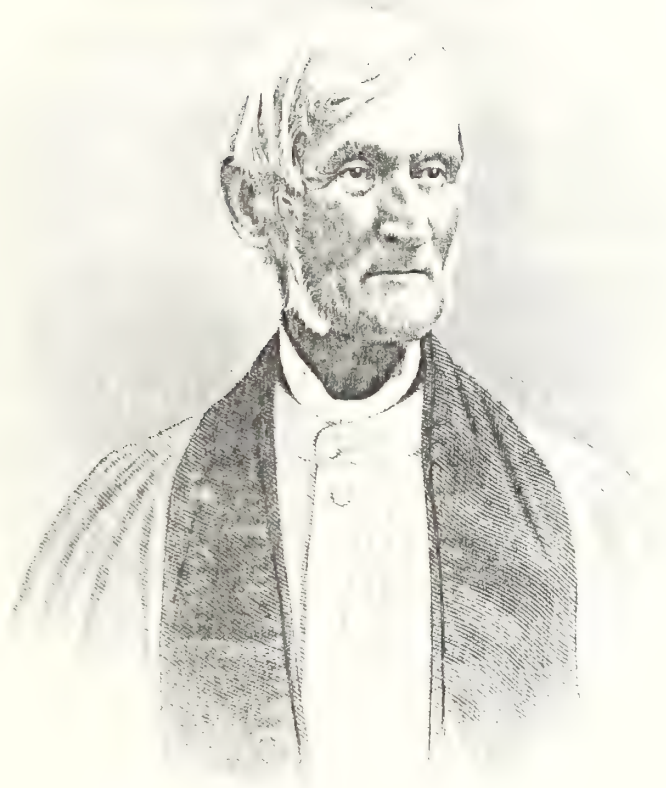
The first school Samuel Emery entered was a very primitive one, presided over by a lady called by her pupils Ma'am Jewett.

<sup>1</sup> See Collin's "History of Newbury," pp. 292, 48, 501, 392, 36, 41.

<sup>2</sup> Collin's Hist., page 121.







*Saml M. Emery*



Some of Miss Jewett's pupils did her much credit in their after-lives. Her school assembled in her bedroom, in a building a little below Brown's Spring, on the opposite side of the road.

After leaving Miss Jewett's, Samuel attended the district school near his home.

Although West Newbury was an agricultural town, with a few mechanical industries, it was not unusual, occasionally, for a boy to seek for a liberal education. Samuel Emery, the son of old John, Jr., was a graduate of Harvard in 1691, probably the first from West Newbury.

There must have been an inclination for reading cherished by some of the people of this town, for there was an old library in the East Parish, where books requiring much perseverance to be thoroughly studied, were found, such as "Rollin's Ancient History," "Tillotson's Sermons," etc.

A few young men, of whom Samuel was one, began to collect a circulating library, to contain more modern and attractive books than the old one. This library lived several years.

Evidently, there was a strong movement in the minds of some West Newbury boys towards a better education than they could obtain at home, between the years 1823 and 1834, with this result: Cornelius C. Felton graduated at Harvard in the class of 1827, Samuel M. Emery in that of 1830, Robert A. Coker in 1831 and Samuel M. Felton in 1834.

Mr. Emery was prepared for college at Phillips Exeter Academy, and always retained a love for that institution. He entered college in 1826. While there he studied as one in earnest.

One of his class-mates wrote of him after his decease: "So early as college life he developed his high-toned character and stainless reputation." He must have stood well as a scholar, to have a "part" at commencement, in a class like that of 1830.

For several years succeeding his graduation Mr. Emery was employed, the greater part of the time, in teaching. On March 8, 1831, he engaged as master of the classical department of the academy at Northfield, Mass., where he remained for two terms. From Northfield, accompanied by a cousin, one of the pupils of the academy, he walked nearly to Boston, finishing the journey to Newburyport by water.

From October, 1831, to August, 1833, he was instructor of the "High School for Young Ladies" at Portsmouth, N. H.

He was baptized in St. John's Church by Dr. Burroughs, September 2, 1832, and confirmed the next Sunday, in the same place, by the Rt. Rev. A. V. Griswold, bishop of the Eastern Diocese.

Mr. Emery was brought up as a Congregationalist, but was, for some time previous to his baptism, dissatisfied with the religious system to which he had been accustomed.

After leaving Portsmouth he took a room at Cambridge, and studied theology under the direction of

the Rev. Dr. Coit, then rector of Christ Church, Cambridge, and subsequently under that of Rev. Dr. Wainwright, rector of Trinity Church, Boston, afterwards provisional bishop of New York.

While preparing for holy orders Mr. Emery continued to instruct pupils.

In the winter of 1835 he was employed by a gentleman in Lancaster, who was obliged by his duties in the Legislature of the State to leave some students from Harvard, who had been placed under his care. President Quincy engaged Mr. Emery to take charge of them during this gentleman's absence. He became much attached to these young men, and one of them became his intimate friend.

He returned to Cambridge, and on July 28, 1835, was admitted to the holy order of deacons, with two other candidates, in (old) Trinity Church, Boston, by the Right Rev. Bishop Griswold. He was presented by the Rev. William Griswell, then rector of Christ Church, Boston, in which church the newly-ordained deacon preached his first sermon.

After officiating occasionally in Boston and neighboring towns, he was engaged, in December, to assist the rector of Trinity Church, Chatham (now Portland), Conn., a beautiful town on the Connecticut River, opposite the city of Middletown.

From Mr. Emery's private journal I extract the following entry, dated Dec. 12th:

"Reached Chatham, after a journey of about three days, and entered upon the duties of 'journeyman,' assistant minister to Rev. William Jarvis, disabled by laryngitis."

Mr. Emery was elected to the rectorship of Trinity Church, Chatham, in April, 1837, and was advanced to the Holy Order of Priests in the same church, on Whitsunday, May 14th, by the Right Rev. T. C. Brownell, bishop of Connecticut.

There was in 1837 but one church (Episcopal) in Middletown, and one in Hartford. The nearest churches were at Middle Haddam and Glastonbury. Meriden was near enough to admit of exchanges between the rector there and the one in Chatham. I notice in Dr. Emery's journal two instances in which he walked home from Meriden, a distance of some ten miles.

There was no livery stable in Chatham at that time, but Mr. Jarvis and other parishioners were very willing to lend horses and vehicles to the rector, and he sometimes rode or drove to distant parts of the parish or to other towns. An old gentleman, a parishioner, favored him so often with his horse, that Mr. Emery was *taxed* for the animal, of which he was supposed to be the owner. Mr. Emery would tell this story with great amusement.

He was very fond of children and young people, and attracted them by his cheerfulness and good humor. But he believed in discipline.

He gave the Sunday-school a large share of his attention. He was usually present at its sessions.





Mr. Emery often preached three times on a Sunday, and occasionally on week-days. He frequently, in the early part of his work, held evening services in private houses, where he had aged or infirm parishioners, or where families resided at a considerable distance from church.

On the 17th of November, 1841, Rev. S. M. Emery was married by the Rev. Dr. Morss, rector of St. Paul's Church, Newburyport, to Mary Hale, only surviving child of Eliphalet and Sarah (Hale) Emery, of West Newbury, Mass.

Eliphalet Emery, Esq., resides on the old farm given to John Emery, Jr., in 1644. He was a prominent citizen of West Newbury, son of Nathaniel and Sarah (Short) Emery, and grandson of Stephen and Hannah (Rolfe) Emery, mentioned above, as grandparents of Moody Emery, the father of Rev. Samuel M. Emery. Consequently Mr. and Mrs. Emery's fathers were own cousins.

On June 2d of this year the name of a part of the town of Chatham was changed to Portland.

Rev. S. M. Emery and his wife were blessed with seven children, six of whom survive their honored and lamented father. Abbie Prescott died in childhood.

He was a "lover of hospitality" in the simple way in which a country clergyman forty years since could show it, and never ceased in after-years to practice it as he had ability. His house was open to his parishioners, his brethren of the clergy, and strangers and friends from out of town.

During the last twenty years of Mr. Emery's residence in Portland the number of the clergy in the vicinity was greatly increased. The Berkeley Divinity School, in Middletown, incorporated in 1854, and the removal of the Rt. Rev. Bishop Williams to the house formerly occupied by the Rev. S. M. Jarvis, D.D., produced great changes.

The chapel of "St. Luke the Beloved Physician," erected by a lady in memory of her husband, for the use of the Berkeley School, was opened to the public.

Christ Church, Middletown, assumed the name of "Holy Trinity," and a church in the southern part of the town was built which bears the name of "Christ Church," South Farms; and chapels followed in various distant parts of the town or neighboring villages, served by professors or students of the Berkeley School.

The Rev. Dr. Goodwin, of Holy Trinity, was an intimate friend of the Portland rector, and they often exchanged pulpits. Dr. Emery was on very pleasant terms with the Middletown clergy and often received a "labor of love" to assist him in his services. He had many warm friends among them—some of them much younger than himself.

He was for some time a trustee of the Berkeley Divinity School, and held the office until he left the State.

During most of his residence in Portland he was

one of the Board of School Visitors for the public schools of the town.

He was very much interested in the education of the young, from children in the primary school to students in college, or divinity school. He prepared a number of young men for college, and instructed one, through the freshman year.

He received the degree, "*ad eundem*," of M.A. from Trinity College in 1838, and of S.T.D. from the same institution in 1864.

Dr. Emery prepared most of his sermons with care. He had not acquired the habit of extemporaneous speaking, and never willingly trusted to his memory, without notes. He was an earnest preacher, and usually commanded the attention of a congregation, sometimes, when roused and excited by his subject, rising to eloquence.

His advice was asked often in regard to secular as well as spiritual matters, and all sorts and conditions of men were represented from time to time in his study.

He had been in the habit of officiating occasionally in the eastern part of the town. He inaugurated a mission there, with the approval of the bishop, and the help of a Berkeley student, son of the late bishop of Mississippi, now the Rev. Stephen H. Greene, of St. Louis.

Before Dr. Emery left Portland he had the satisfaction of seeing the corner-stone of the "Chapel of St. John Baptist" laid by Bishop Williams, and of returning next year to be present at its consecration. This chapel is connected with Trinity Parish, and the rector is expected to celebrate the Holy Communion once a month within its walls. One of the Berkeley students reads service every Sunday when no clergyman is present.

He resigned the rectorship of Trinity Church on Easter Monday, 1870, and preached his "farewell sermon" the first Sunday after Trinity, June 19th.

In the course of the summer the whole family were settled on old John Emery's farm, situated on the Merrimac and Attichoke Rivers, in West Amesbury.

Dr. Emery did not wish to be rector of another parish, but desired to be engaged in the work of the ministry. He assisted other clergymen, and filled vacancies in parishes.

Near the close of this year the Rev. George D. Johnson was elected rector of St. Paul's Church, Newburyport. Dr. Emery, who remembered him as a student in Middletown, enjoyed his society keenly, and was occasionally able to assist him in the parish.

While residing in West Newbury, four miles from St. Paul's Church, Newburyport, when not engaged elsewhere, Dr. Emery usually held a service in the evening, on Sundays, at his house, and often a little congregation of neighbors attended. The rector of St. Paul's approved of this service, and once came out and preached. Occasionally, other clergymen, visiting at the house, would assist by preaching.



Dr. Emery superintended the public schools in West Newbury from 1871 to February, 1874.

Early in November, 1873, the whole family removed to Newburyport.

He had the pastoral care of St. Paul's Church, Newburyport, at one time, while the rector was absent in Europe.

In June, 1880, Dr. Emery was present at the fiftieth anniversary of his class, the survivors of which were invited to a dinner at Judge Warren's in Boston, one of their number. He also attended commencement and the commencement dinner at Cambridge, and seemed to renew his youth amid old scenes.

He was minister in charge at St. James' Church, Amesbury, for about two years, while residing in Newburyport.

In the spring of 1882, Dr. Emery and family returned to their West Newbury home.

He was now hardly strong enough to officiate in public, but usually held divine service in his house, for the benefit of those necessarily detained from church.

He became interested in his farm, and was very thoughtful of the comfort of those employed by him.

He officiated twice at funerals during this last year of his life.

On Sunday, August 12, 1883, he read the services with much energy, and on the 13th and 14th appeared cheerful and active.

He conversed pleasantly with visitors who came to see him, and spoke of improvements he hoped to make on the farm. On the 15th he was not well, but walked about a quarter of a mile, and dined with the family.

In the afternoon he became very ill, but towards evening seemed partially relieved. His physician, who was sent for, left him late at night, as he seemed quiet. In the morning he was alarmingly worse, and no efforts to help him were availing, until at about ten o'clock he quietly entered into rest.

During his short illness he recognized his family and the rector of St. Paul's, who was sent for to attend him by his bedside. He repeated the Lord's Prayer audibly with the others, and responded "Amen" to the prayers offered.

His death called forth many tributes of love and esteem from friends in different parts of the country, and sympathy with the bereaved family.

The funeral was attended on the following Monday at St. Paul's Church, Newburyport, by seven clergymen besides the rector, Rev. E. L. Drown. A large congregation of sorrowful friends were present.

His body was laid to rest in the Belleville Cemetery, with the holy service of the church. On one part of this cemetery is the site of Queen Anne's Chapel, the first Episcopal Church in Newbury, near which may still be seen the head-stone, at the grave of the

Rev. Matthias Plant, the minister of Queen Anne's Chapel, and the first rector of St. Paul's.

The bishop of the diocese, prevented from being present at the funeral, wrote a letter of condolence to the family, in which he expressed great esteem for Dr. Emery and sorrow for his loss.

At the next convention of the diocese, in June, 1884, the bishop, after mentioning Dr. Emery's long service in Connecticut, said: "In times of necessity he has rendered good service since, notably in his long term of care of St. James', Amesbury, at a time of complete business prostration in that village. Devout, wise, humble, charitable, strong in the faith, Dr. Emery was a man to make friends with all who knew him."

The Rev. Mr. Harriman, rector of Trinity Church, Portland, wrote soon after Dr. Emery's death: "As I enjoy the prosperity of this old and firmly-planted parish, I often acknowledge my indebtedness to the wise master-builders who preceded me, and I feel that others have labored and I have entered into their labors. In these days of change and short rectorship we need to learn the secret of success which enabled Dr. Emery to labor thirty-five years in one place."

From a minute adopted by the vestry of Trinity Church I extract the following:

"From 1835 to 1870 he broke the bread of life to feed the flock of God committed to his care; he went in and out among us, as a faithful imitator of the Good Shepherd, and an example of the believers in word, in conversation, in charity, in faith, in purity.

"Two generations of parishioners remember with gratitude his gentle, kindly ministrations, and look to see him receive the crown of life when the Chief Shepherd shall appear."

An elegant and massive stone church occupies the ground on which the old one built in 1830 stood. A fine organ, the gift of parishioners and many other friends, some from out of town, in memory of Dr. Emery, with a brass tablet set in the wall near it, stands on one side of the chancel.

It was used for the first time publicly at a memorial service nearly a year after Dr. Emery's death, when the rector then in office—the Rev. Mr. Harriman—preached a commemorative sermon from Neh. iv. 6.

The Holy Communion was celebrated, and a very large congregation, not only of parishioners, but also others from different places, participated in the solemn service, and all seemed anxious to show their loving appreciation of their deceased pastor. A memorial window is soon to be placed in the Chapel of St. John Baptist.

"The memory of the just is blessed."





CORNELIUS CONWAY FELTON.<sup>1</sup>

Cornelius Conway Felton, the eldest son of Cornelius Conway and Anna (Morse) Felton, was born in Newbury, Massachusetts, November 6, 1807. His parents gave their children the heritage of their own superior intelligence and moral worth; but were able to bestow on their higher education little beyond their hearty sympathy and encouragement. While Cornelius was still a child they removed to Saugus, and lived in the near neighborhood of Dr. Cheever, grandfather of the present Professor of Anatomy in Harvard University. The doctor, finding young Felton a boy of excellent promise, gave him his first lessons in Latin, and furthered his advancement by every means within his power. Felton was fitted for college under the tuition of Simeon Putnam, of North Andover, who had high and well-merited reputation as a classical teacher.

He entered Harvard College as a freshman in 1823. He took at once and maintained through his college course a foremost place in his class; was second to none in the department of ancient languages, and manifested the power of rapid acquisition and the scholarly tastes that distinguished him through life. At the same time he won the cordial friendship of all who were brought into intimate relations with him; and they were such friends as he was glad to hold ever afterward in the dearest regard. No one can have ever passed through the ordeal of student-life with a character more transparently pure. Temptation, indeed, had for him no meaning. He loved society, but only the best; and his own influence was from the first refining and elevating. He had an elastic spirit, and bore the burdens of his early life easily and cheerily; yet they must have been heavy. He was dependent mainly on his own industry, with the very slender aid then given by the college to meritorious students; and he worked in the library in vacations, taught school, and resorted to every honorable means for replenishing his scanty resources, all the while practising a more rigid economy than would seem credible to a student of the present day.

Immediately on graduating he went to Geneseo, New York, with two of his classmates, to take charge of an academy founded by Mr. James Wadsworth, well-known as a munificent patron of learning. He remained there two years, and then returned to Cambridge as a tutor in Latin. In 1830 he was appointed tutor in Greek; in 1832, College Professor of Greek; and in 1834, Eliot Professor of Greek Literature. He had in these successive offices the occupation most congenial with his taste, and one for which no man could have been more eminently fitted by the cast of his mind, the direction of his studies, and his enthusiastic love of the literature of which he was the teacher and expositor. He was by no means rigid or exacting in the class-room, and an indifferent scholar

was put by him under no compulsory pressure; but those who were ready to learn received from him the most ample aid, and derived from their intercourse with him the strongest stimulus to persevering industry. At the same time his genial disposition and his fellow-feeling with young life, which never waned, made him a favorite teacher with all who came under his charge.

The only important episodes in this period of his life were European tours and sojourns, in 1853 and 1856. On both these occasions he not only visited Greece, but traveled in the country extensively and with close observation; made himself acquainted with the leading men, especially with those concerned in the revival of letters and the diffusion of knowledge; and became conversant with the institutions and the public life of the kingdom. What a man gains by travel depends mainly on what he carries with him,—on his knowledge of the fit topics for research and inquiry; and probably no American has ever been in Greece who was more thoroughly versed than he in all that could be known of the past, or better qualified to form an accurate judgment and estimate of the present and the future, of a people so long depressed and down-trodden, yet with so rich a heritage of ancestral fame.

In 1855 Mr. Agassiz established in Cambridge a school for young ladies; and Mr. Felton, though with his full tale of college duties, became a teacher and lecturer in that institution, and contributed very largely to its success and prosperity.

When, on the resignation of Dr. Walker in 1860, the presidency of Harvard University became vacant, Mr. Felton was elected as his successor; and in their votes the governing boards simply ratified the unanimous choice of the whole community. In this office it can hardly be said that he met the expectations of his friends; but their disappointment was one of surprise and admiration. He had previously led the quiet life of a scholar, absorbed in books and literary labor, with few relations of business with the outside world, and with no opportunities for testing his executive ability; and it was anticipated that he would adorn the headship of the college by the rare grace and beauty of his spirit, character and culture, rather than that he would take upon himself the unnumbered prosaic details of duty and service which then made the presidency of Harvard College as arduous and as multifarious a charge as could well be devised or imagined. But with an intense feeling of responsibility, as for a most sacred trust, he entered upon a thoroughly energetic administration, giving his personal attention to all concerns that could rightfully come under his cognizance, seeking full knowledge of the work of the teachers, exercising a watchful vigilance over the students, and making himself felt, not merely as a gracious and kindly presence, but as an active and action-compelling force in every department of the university. He even be-

<sup>1</sup> By Rev. A. P. Peabody, D.D.







*L. L. Fellin*



came a strict disciplinarian when it was his duty to be so, though it was manifest that in the infliction of penalty he suffered more than those who deserved and needed it. His labors were rendered more severe and exhausting by the growing discontent with the stereotyped and obsolescent methods of our New England colleges, and the movements toward a broader culture and a higher intellectual life, in which he was in the front rank of the leading minds. With his unresting assiduity, he was oppressed by a painful sense of the vast interests devolved upon his discretion and ability, and by the constant accumulation of demands upon his time and strength, which grew more and more numerous and urgent from his habit of giving heed to every claim, and of assuming every burden that he was asked to bear.

But his overtaken vigor of body yielded under the incessant strain and tension. Symptoms of heart-disease, which had already given his friends some uneasiness, became more decided and alarming from the time that he exchanged his sedentary habits for a more active life. Early in 1862, during the winter vacation, he was induced to seek relief and recreation by a change of scene and surroundings, and he visited his brother at Thurlow, Pennsylvania. Here his disease advanced rapidly to a fatal issue. After an attack in which his death was expected from moment to moment, he seemed for a little while convalescent. On the 26th of February, the first day of the new term, I received a letter from him, dictated when respiration and utterance were intermittent and laborious, telling me that he had been at the point of death, but now began to hope for prolonged life; expressing fervent gratitude to the Divine Providence; and asking me to beg the college Faculty, in the name of the Infinite Love, to be lenient and merciful in certain cases of discipline that had been laid over from the preceding term. That same evening I read the letter to the Faculty, obtained the desired vote, and had hardly reached my home when I received a telegram announcing his death.

Mr. Felton filled a very large and, in some respects, a unique place in our world of letters. It is seldom that an adept in one department is a proficient in all the essential branches of liberal culture. This, however, was true of him. While as a classical scholar he had no superior, he was versed in the languages and familiar with the best literature of modern Europe, was largely conversant with natural science, and had a highly educated and nicely critical taste in the entire realm of art. The ability that he showed in many and diverse directions, had its scope been narrower, would have been accounted as genius of a very high order; but in its breadth and versatility it was more than genius. Within the largest bounds of a liberal education no demand was made upon him that found him incapable or unprepared; and whatever he did he did so well that he seemed to have a special adaptation for it.

As a writer he was easy and graceful, brilliant in metaphor, rich and apt in illustration, and, whenever his subject permitted, affluent in wit and humor. He often wrote too rapidly to do himself full justice; but when the occasion required and leisure served, he had at his command a style of finished elegance and beauty.

He was often false to his own reputation in his unstinted kindness to others. No one ever applied to him for aid in literary labor of any sort without receiving all and more than all the assistance he desired. He would put aside work of his own that he was anxious to finish, to look up authorities, to furnish working material, to revise manuscripts, to correct proof, for those whose only claim upon him was their need; and of course the report of his generosity was constantly multiplying his would-be beneficiaries. Had he converted to his own use all the time, thought and study that he contributed to fame in which he had no share, posterity might have admired him more; but his own coevals would have loved him less.

Indeed, those who knew him best feel that no man could have been more lovable than he. He can never have made an enemy, or forgotten or lost a friend. In society he was genial and mirthful, full of anecdote, talking so admirably well that his friends would have been content to be mere listeners, yet never willing to assume more than his due share in conversation. There was a native refinement, an unstudied delicacy in his manners and his social intercourse, indicating an inward life on a high plane, and by unobtrusive example and influence constantly tending to elevate the prevailing tone of sentiment and feeling around him. To those most intimate with him it was impossible that he could be replaced. We have not seen, and may not hope ever to see, his like in this world.

With a temperament that might have seemed pliant and ductile, no man was ever more strongly intrenched than he within the defenses of a true, quick, sensitive and discriminating conscience. No unworthy complacency ever cast a transient shadow even on his early youth. We who knew him from boyhood could recall when he went from us not an act or a word which we would wish to forget. He was firm in the right, and no power on earth could make him swerve from his conviction of duty. His force of character, hidden on ordinary occasions by his gentle, sunny mien, showed itself impregnable when put to the test. He never shrank from the most painful duty; and in prompt decision and fearless energy for difficult emergencies he seemed no less worthy of supreme regard than for those amiable qualities which made his daily life so beautiful.

It can hardly be needful to say that a character like his could have had no other foundation than matured Christian faith and principle. He was unfeignedly reverent and devout. He loved the wor-





ship and ordinances of religion, and gave them the support of his constant attendance, his unfailing interest and his earnest advocacy. He took from Jesus Christ the law of his life, breathed in His spirit, trusted in His gospel of salvation and immortality, and looked to Him for guidance through the death-shadow into the everlasting light.

Mr. Felton's literary activity was incessant; but he seems to have had very little ambition to appear before the public in his own name and on his own sole account. It may be doubted whether he ever published anything except at the solicitation of others; and he was thus often led into partnerships in which his share of the labor far exceeded that of the revenue, whether of fame or of material recompense.

In 1844 he published an edition of the "Iliad," with very valuable English notes, and with Flaxman's illustrations.

In 1840 he prepared a Greek Reader, with English notes and vocabulary. This continued long in use, perhaps is not yet out of use, and is probably to be preferred to any other similar text-book, in the fitness and range of its selections, in the facilities which it furnishes, and in those which it wisely fails to furnish for the student.

In the same year he contributed to Ripley's "Specimens of Foreign Literature" a translation of Menzel's work on "German Literature," in three volumes.

In 1841 he published an edition of "The Clouds" of Aristophanes, with an introduction and notes. This has been republished in England.

In 1843 he contributed very largely to a work on "Classical Studies," edited by Professors Sears and Edwards; and also to Professor Longfellow's "Poets and Poetry of Europe."

In 1844, in connection with Professor Beck, he made a translation of Munk's "Metres of the Greeks and Romans."

In 1847 he published editions of the "Panegyricus" of Isocrates, and of the "Agamemnon" of Æschylus, each with introduction and notes.

In 1849 he translated Professor Guyot's work, entitled "The Earth and Man." In the same year he issued an edition of "The Birds" of Aristophanes, with introduction and notes, which was reprinted in England.

In 1852 he published a selection from the writings of his predecessor, Dr. Popkin, with a most happily written memoir. In the same year he issued a volume of selections from the "Greek Historians."

In 1856 he published a series of selections from modern Greek writers, in poetry and prose.

He contributed to Sparks' "American Biography" a "Life of General Eaton."

In addition to these works, he published many lectures and addresses. His aid was constantly sought by the editors of various periodicals, to which he was

a large contributor. If we remember aright, his earliest writings of this sort were literally labors of love for the *American Monthly Review*, edited by the late Professor Sidney Willard,—a work designed to give a fair and truthful statement and estimate of current American literature, which had an early death solely because it was too honest to live. He was a frequent contributor to the *North American Review* and to the *Christian Examiner*. He wrote for Appleton's "New American Cyclopædia" several long and elaborate articles, particularly in his own special department.

But the works most characteristic of his mind and heart, of his ability, scholarship, taste and sentiment, were not designed for publication, and were not issued till after his death, when they appeared under the editorship of the writer of this memoir. They are "Familiar Letters from Europe," and "Greece, Ancient and Modern." The former was a small volume of letters of travel, written to his family with no ulterior purpose, yet with a fidelity of description, a vividness of comprehension, and a charming spontaneity of graceful diction, that not only needed no revision, but would have suffered damage by any endeavor to improve them. The latter comprises four courses of Lowell "Lectures on Greece," in two large octavo volumes. We doubt whether there exists in our language any other work on Greece that comprehends so much, and is at the same time so entirely the outcome of the author's own study, thought and observation. As the lectures were hastily written, many of them on the eve of delivery, it was thought desirable to verify references and translations; but this labor proved to be almost needless. There was in his manuscript the strange blending of a chirography bearing tokens of hot haste, and a minuteness and accuracy showing that his materials were at his command at momentary notice; though a large portion of them were such as seemed to require elaborate research. There is no reason why these volumes should not live and last, as at once of profound interest to the general reader and of essential service for the special study of the Greece that was and the Greece that is.

Mr. Felton was an active member of the Massachusetts Historical Society, and of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences. He was also a member of the New England Historic Genealogical Society, and of various literary and scientific bodies, in all of which he bore as large a part as his busy life rendered possible. He was for several years one of the Regents of the Smithsonian Institution, and a member of the Massachusetts Board of Education; while he manifested equal efficiency and diligence in the less conspicuous office of a member of the School Committee of Cambridge, where his services are commemorated in a school-house that bears his name. He was a corresponding member of the Archaeological Society of Athens. He received the degree of





*S. M. Felton*



Doctor of Laws from Amherst College in 1848, and from Yale College, in 1860.

Mr. Felton was twice married,—April 12, 1838, to Mary, daughter of Asa and Mary (Hammond) Whitney; and in September, 1846, to Mary Louisa, daughter of Thomas Graves and Mary (Perkins) Cary. He left two sons and three daughters.

#### SAMUEL MORSE FELTON.<sup>1</sup>

Samuel Morse Felton, the son of Cornelius Conway and Anna (Morse) Felton, was born at West Newbury, July 17, 1809. At the age of fourteen he became clerk in a grocery store in Boston, devoting his scanty leisure to study, with the purpose of preparing himself for college. In 1827 he became his brother's pupil at Geneseo, N. Y., and there completed his preparation for advanced standing in Harvard College, entering the sophomore class in 1830. In college, while supporting himself by teaching, he distinguished himself as a scholar in a class containing a remarkable number of men who became eminent in literature and science. On graduating in 1833, he still continued to do double work, taking charge of an academy in Charlestown and studying law at the same time. But impaired health warned him of the necessity of a change, and led him to seek more active employment. He chose the profession of a civil engineer, for which he was admirably fitted, both by rare ability and attainments as a mathematician, and by a maturity of practical wisdom seldom found in one who has lived chiefly among books and students. He entered the office of Loammi Baldwin in 1835, and succeeded to the business of his office on his death, in 1838.

In 1841 Mr. Felton built a railway from Boston to Fresh Pond in Cambridge, and in 1843 he commenced the construction of the Fitchburg Railroad, followed by that of the Vermont Central and other connecting railways. On their completion he became superintendent of the Fitchburg Railroad, and continued to hold that place till, in 1854, he was chosen president of the Philadelphia, Wilmington and Baltimore Railroad. This road was in a very bad condition, unprofitable, in need of extensive repairs and of thorough reorganization in every department.

In the measures which Mr. Felton found necessary he encountered serious opposition, and obstacles that at first seemed insurmountable. But he understood his ground, and maintained it with strenuous purpose and unyielding energy. His plans were laid with careful deliberation and with the wisdom which long experience gave, and the result was that the road became and has not ceased to be second to none of the great thoroughfares of travel, in construction and equipment, in facilities of transportation, and as a safe investment for capital.

In 1861 this road, as the only direct means of communication between the northeastern portion of the country and Washington, became an object of attack by the secessionists, so that its president's unslumbering vigilance was demanded at every point. A plot had been skillfully planned for the assassination of President Lincoln on his way through Baltimore, immediately before his inauguration. This plot Mr. Felton, with still greater skill, unearthed and baffled, and it was solely through his agency that our patriot chief magistrate reached the chair of state. Our limits will not admit of a detailed narrative of this achievement. It deserves, and can hardly fail to secure a permanent place in the history of the country. Suffice it now to say that no greater service was rendered to the loyal cause during the war, and that Mr. Felton's part in it evinced a keenness of penetration, a command of resources and an intensity of will-power, which, in a more conspicuous field, would have won for him extended and enduring fame. Subsequently, the burning of bridges on this road by the rebels threatened the entire suspension of travel and intercourse, and especially of the transportation of troops and military stores between the North and Washington,—a danger which Mr. Felton averted by opening a more easily defended route through Annapolis.

Probably no man in the country ever endured a heavier strain of brain and muscle, of wearing thought and unresting activity, than Mr. Felton bore during the fourteen years for which he held this office. He had hardly completed his reforms in the administration of the road, when he was overtaken by the cares, anxieties, responsibilities and perils forced upon him by the Civil War. Early in 1865 a stroke of paralysis, occasioned wholly by overwork, compelled him to resign. After a few months he recovered, to a good degree, his health and his working power, and he then became, and still is, president of the Pennsylvania Steel Company, the earliest establishment in the United States for the manufacture of steel rails. This is now one of the largest manufactories in the country, and is conducted not only for the benefit of the stockholders, but with the most humane and philanthropic regard for the improvement and well-being of the operatives.

Mr. Felton's professional reputation is shown in his appointment by Governor Andrew, in 1862, as a member of the Hoosac Tunnel Commission, and by President Grant, in 1869, as one of the Commissioners to inspect and report upon the Pacific Railroads, then just completed. He has served as a director in several important railroad corporations. The esteem in which he is held among men of liberal professions other than his own is manifested in his election, for several successive years, to the presidency of the Harvard Club, in Philadelphia.

In private life, Mr. Felton's character stands out in pure white light, without even a transient shadow. Stainless purity, unswerving integrity, large-hearted





benevolence, and those (so-called) lesser, yet not less important, traits that are the charm and blessing of home and of social intercourse, endear him to all who know him. No man can have more or warmer friends than he, and, unless in the inevitable collisions of business, he can never have made an enemy.

Mr. Felton has been twice married,—in 1836, to Eleanor Stetson, of Charlestown, who died in 1847, and in 1850, to Maria Low Lippitt, of Providence. By his first wife he had three daughters; by his present wife he has had one daughter and three sons. He has been very happy in his family, with children devoted to his comfort and happiness, and with sons who are relieving him of such portions of his care and labor as have become onerous with his advancing years.

#### HON. HAYDN BROWN.<sup>1</sup>

Brown is a name that is, and well may be, familiar in this town. The first white child born in Newbury was Mary, daughter of Thomas and Mary Brown, who, living to be eighty-one, died and left, as the record reads, "a good report as a maid, a wife and a widow." There were at least four men named Brown among the first settlers. Of all their descendants there is no one better known to-day in West Newbury, where he was born and has always lived, than Haydn Brown; and we call to mind no one who better knows the town itself; is more intimate with its history and traditions, or more in love with its green hills, its fertile fields, its beautiful river, skirting its whole length, with crystal waters opening their mirror-face to the trees, shrubs and all else that crowd its banks or cast their shadows from the skies.

He was "self-made," as the New Englanders term it; and, if so, does credit to his own workmanship, for he is solid, sensible, strong-armed and level-headed. His Christian name, as that of his brother Handel, indicates that he is from a musical family, and that is the fact, though his life has been too busy in sterling, manly work to indulge much in fine arts or mere accomplishments, though they may refine and elevate society. It has been his lot to dare destiny and snatch victory as a brave man may, when the odds are against him. Commencing life under grave disabilities, all of material wealth he has earned, and all the reputation he enjoys he has won in hard contests. Our fates are not in our stars, but in ourselves; not luck, but pluck conquers every time.

At fifteen, Haydn Brown, with the slightest education, was left to begin life's battle alone; for we must always remember that the world is against the young aspirant till he has received the baptism of the contest without their assistance, though all will cheer, as with throats of brass and tongues of iron, when he has overcome opposition, and feeling the inspiration of success, could get along very well without them.

Finding nothing to do at home, he went to New-

buryport on foot, with all his effects in the historic cotton handkerchief, to make his fortune. Vainly seeking some employment to his taste, he drifted along the wharves, and, when his last dollar had been reached, shipped on board a fishing "smack," for less per month than one of his age would now expect per week; but it was a school of industry. At the end of the voyage, this incident occurred, which awoke the dreaming boy to a higher life. It was necessary for him to sign his name, in receiving his wages. He was confounded. He had looked poverty in the eye without quailing; he had faced the storm on the seas; he had worked hard to perform his duties; but now he hesitated, but finally made an unsightly scrawl. The owner of the vessel, in a sympathizing tone, said: "Young man, you ought to go to school!" This remark, in sorrow, not in anger, uttered, overpowered the lad and rings in his ears to this day. He has often said they were the most eloquent words he ever listened to, though on both sides of the Atlantic he has since heard distinguished orators. He went home to West Newbury discomfited, but not disheartened, for he had met the exigency and determined the future. That winter he went to school, and before the grass was green, or the May flowers peeped from under the snows, he had mastered Walsh's arithmetic, committed every rule of the grammar to memory so thoroughly that he remembers them, *verbatim*, to this day; spent his nights in reading history (he has not read his first novel yet) and was sawing wood in the spring to pay his bill. Thus heroically he started his mental train, and has kept the cars in motion ever since. Afterwards he attended the academies at Pembroke and Lebanon, N. H., and, had the means been at hand, would have entered college. Failing in that—fortunately, perhaps, for a good mechanic should never be lost in a poor preacher, or a good merchant killed in a dunce of a lawyer—he turned himself to industrial and commercial pursuits.

West Newbury is the place where comb-making commenced in America, and where it has been continued to this time. To that he gave attention for five years, and there he started business on a small scale, for himself. Later, in 1846, he joined the firm of S. C. Noyes & Co., and has there continued. This is the largest and most successful business firm the town has ever had. It is widely known, its principal market being New York, and thence extending to all parts of the country. Its integrity and financial ability are beyond question. Its senior member, S. C. Noyes (deceased within a few months) was deemed the richest man in the town, and now Mr. Brown occupies the same position. Fifty years have brought great changes to this industry. Those men at their start found only the rudest contrivances called machinery. Even steam did not enter into their calculations. The power of the shops was in the human hand and human foot, but to-day—in this age of

<sup>1</sup> By George J. L. Colby.





*Hayden Brown*





progress—they have all the improvements that have come to other industries, and they have some of the finest machinery in the country, nearly all of which has been of their own invention, or by persons of their own families. The factory of S. C. Noyes & Co. is the model of its kind in America. Nor has it confined its operations to horn-combs, but the invention of machinery to cut the teeth of fine rubber combs was theirs, and the first combs of that variety were made by them. They have given employment to a large number of hands, and done as much for the progress of their town and the general elevation of society as any business house or firm has ever done. As they accumulated wealth not needed in their home business, they invested in shipping,—the building and owning of a large number of sea-going vessels, ships and schooners, engaged in the fisheries or coastwise and foreign commerce, sailing between Newburyport and Boston.

In local affairs Mr. Brown has never turned a deaf ear to what affected the masses of the people. Remembering his want of early education, he has been untiring in his efforts to make the public schools all they should be; realizing how much he was indebted to the reading of books (for he has been a great reader of history and travels, works on philosophy, politics and religion), he led the way to the establishment of a public library. The town depending largely upon agriculture, he was one of the founders of the local agricultural society, and for many years was its president; has delivered frequent addresses before it, and liberally aided its annual course of winter lectures for a quarter of a century. He had always dealt liberally, not withholding charities from the deserving, and never turning a hungry man away in his hunger. A worker from his very childhood, he has aided labor, scorning the distinctions of race, color or creed. Politically he belongs to the school of Sumner and Wendell Phillips, voted for James G. Birney for President in 1844, and for every Republican candidate for that place from that day. In 1875 he was himself elected to the State Senate, and as an indorsement of his neighbors, received the largest vote ever cast by the town; and in the following year he was re-elected by an increase of nearly two thousand votes in the district. In religion he believes and practices what commends itself to his reason and conscience. He is a lover of nature in all its varied forms. The sunlight on the hills gives him pleasure. The stars and the earth give him gladness. He sees fitness and wisdom in the animals, birds, fishes and insects, and studies their habits. On any one or all of these topics he is the best authority in this locality. He grows eloquent in discoursing on horticulture and floriculture, and loves his garden, its fruits and flowers. Above all things material, and without formality or display, he loves justice and mercy, charity and temperance, honesty and morality, and is a man of pure life and correct habits. He believes

in what renders man wiser and better; and what is more and above this, he wants to see and know.

#### HON. E. M. BOYNTON.<sup>1</sup>

He has never sought any public station, but has been identified with unpopular but successful reforms in which he was leader of a forlorn hope against the most wealthy and powerful monopolies, against press, politicians, parties and every form of ancient and entrenched prejudice.

For fifteen years at intervals of a world-wide business, self-founded, he devoted much money, time and eloquence to reformation of the prevalent ideas as to money, regulation of railroads, immigration and the reservation of lands for the actual settlers, and is satisfied now to see his unpopular ideas accepted by both political parties and his monetary principles settled in his favor forever by the United States Supreme Court.

He has achieved a national reputation as a speaker, writer and inventor, and is the only one who ever represented the New York Board of Trade at the meeting of the united Chambers of Commerce of Great Britain in 1877, by them invited.

In 1876, at Philadelphia, the Emperor of Brazil called twice upon Mr. Boynton. A public test of Mr. Boynton's new lightning saw was ordered by the commissioners of all nations there represented, and a twelve-inch diameter log of gum-wood was sawed off in ten seconds by hand, by the two Boynton brothers, Alfred and Charles. These Mc cutting saw-teeth were the first scientific and practical gain in the cutting points of reciprocal saw-teeth, used for cross-cutting etc., in the world, and the genuine or imitation are still sold or used in nearly every country.

Mr. Boynton was the first largely to substitute these saws for axes, and the *American Agriculturist* in speaking of them declared they saved annually to the people in the United States, fifty million dollars.

They were awarded the highest prizes wherever exhibited, also the first awards of the World's Fairs at Philadelphia and at Sydney, Australia.

He has received some fifteen patents relating to saws and wood-working machinery. His compartment ship patents were arranged, using compartments instead of knees, substituting great economy, strength and safety. Six of them were used in the conveyance of eighty cars on their decks through rocky and hitherto unnavigated rapids of the Merrimac, and no scow or car was ever lost, although frequently pierced by obstructions. A similar system of metallic construction is now being applied to ocean steamers. In 1885, Mr. Boynton, after examining the shallow harbors of the Gulf of Mexico, as a paid expert, patented his jetty and harbor construction system, which Captain

<sup>1</sup> The following sketch of Hon. E. M. Boynton has been condensed from public sources, and especially from the *King's County (Brooklyn) N. Y.) History*.



Eads pronounced a great improvement over his heretofore matchless New Orleans jetties. The Eads system used six or more enormous rafts and layers of timber mattresses, framed and trenailed together with willow brush filling between them and huge artificial stones to hold these wooden embankments down firmly for a sea-wall.

This enormous expense is avoided, and the danger from the teredo worm lessened by the substitution of two very slanting rows of piles, placed snugly side by side, and leaning together, penetrating deeply into the mud and forming two slanting dams back to back, above the sea or harbor, dividing the resistance of sea, which curls at their base as upon a slanting shore. This mole, beginning at the shore, is during construction filled with willows and other brush drawn beneath the linked crest of the pile triangle by a cable chain belt, to which masses of willows and other brush are fastened. This is drawn in with sand and mud to any desired pressure and solidity, while the exterior walls of pile timber, having been soaked in tanks of petroleum, are secure from worms.

A harbor may thus be constructed securely and cheaply at any river mouth, or upon any shallow ocean shore where no river exists.

These patents are soon to become the property of a large company for harbor work in America and Europe.

In March, 1887, Mr. Boynton began issuing the mechanical patents of his Bicycle Railway System, which has now been secured patent protection in Europe, Asia, Africa, North and South America and Australia.

A company of five million dollars' authorized capital has been organized at No. 32 Nassau Street, New York, of which he has been elected president, he and his family being the largest owners, with many distinguished men as share-holders.

The most experienced railway and civil engineers have given their opinions that this system means as great a revolution and advance in rapid and economic railway transportation, as the present system is over the old stage-coach and baggage-wagons or as the large bicycle over the boy's velocipede.

By placing posts at the side of existing railways and projecting rails sixteen feet above trains, nearly four feet wide, and thirteen feet deep, with the increased lightness and strength of a board turned edgewise, will require but one-tenth the weight to convey the same passengers and freight, saving in power ten-fold; freights will be conveyed at less than the cost of water transportation, while the power applied to speed for passengers will enable the doubly enlarged and rapid wheels to cross the continent, if necessary, from New York to the Pacific in a day with absolute safety, the trains being grooved below and above, with double flanged wheels moving on a single rail with bicycle spindle-wheels, rounding the sharpest curve without loss of power; the saving in weight of

ten to one is thus multiplied by a several fold, saving in friction over the present system.

This is to be effected without interference with the present railway system, while using jointly their tracks until substitution of the lighter and more economical trains has been completed.

Arrangements for the engine, cars, and one or more experimental roads, are in progress and will soon be completed, and it is confidently predicted it will give Mr. Boynton a name with the great inventors of the age, who have advanced civilization, and lightened the toil of millions.

The Boyntons in England appeared in possession of numerous strongholds at Scarborough, Rawcliffe, Shrewsbury and other places previous to the conquest, and being Normans, submitted to William the Conqueror and saved their estates. They gave endowments to literary and religious institutions in York and elsewhere, and at Shrewsbury their castle was the point of gathering for the English lords and gentry at the first battle of the Wars of the Roses, where so many were slain, from their indiscretion under Hotspur in not waiting for Glendower and the Earl of Northumberland. John Boynton's castle was taken, himself, Gerald Heron and Archbishop Scrope executed, but the property and title were not confiscated and remain to this day. Later they were adherents and protectors of Wickliffe, the Luther of England.

Strickland Boynton's ship was piloted by Sebastian Cabot in the first discovery of North America, in 1498.

Other members of the family distinguished themselves in the Crusades, and in the wars with France were honored for services rendered at Crecy, Poitiers and Agincourt.

One of the Boynton castles entertained Queen Henrietta Maria with such a display of gold and silver plate that she subsequently confiscated the plate, leaving her portrait in pawn for its repayment when her husband, Charles I., should secure peace.

Sir Matthew Boynton's two sons, William and John, came to Essex County, Mass., with the Rowley gentry, in 1636. Sir Matthew at this time owned Burton Agnes and many other valuable estates in the North of England; commanded Scarborough Castle and the troops of the Scottish border; was the sheriff of Yorkshire and member of Parliament.

In 1638 John Boynton, his son, purchased from Governor Dummer two hundred acres on the Parker River, Newbury, which continued in the family two hundred years.

From John and William, sons of Sir Matthew Boynton, all of that name in America are believed to have descended.

Some of them are distinguished in military and civil life, but in general they have been more noted as inventors and for intellectual and moral qualities.

The annealing of cast-iron, known as malleable iron, the invention of hot-air furnaces, and many other valuable inventions are of Boynton origin.







*Edwin Moody, Esquire.*





Hon. Eben Moody Boynton, the subject of this sketch, was born in Harrisville, near Cleveland, Ohio, July 23, 1840, and came to Massachusetts in his childhood. His father, Alfred Boynton, and mother were natives of Newburyport, descended from those who first landed two hundred and fifty years before,—the Boyntons at Rowley, 1636; the Moodys at Newburyport, 1635,—his mother, Abigail Moody, being descended from William Moody, who first landed at Newburyport, whose father, Rev. William Moody, was a brother of Sir Henry Moody, of Garsden, Wiltshire, England.

The Moody family has been eminent for piety, learning, patriotism, intellectual force and public influence, both in England and America. One of the family was elected president of Harvard College, was for many years pastor of the Old South Church, Boston, did much to enlighten his brother-in-law, Chief Justice Sewell, as to the errors of the witchcraft delusion, and thus saved many lives. Another of the family was the first principal of Dummer Academy, in Newbury, the oldest founded academy in Massachusetts. Deacon Joshua Boynton, an ancestor, was chairman of the board of control of that institution.

Another member of the Boynton family was the first teacher at Rowley, an associate preacher with Rev. John Phillips, ancestor of the Governor Phillips family, who founded the famous Phillips Academies and Andover Theological Seminaries. The last surviving pupil of Master Moody, of Dummer, Enoch Boynton, was famous for introducing silk culture into New England. He died some thirty-two years ago, at the age of ninety years. To this great-uncle, the subject of this sketch first came from his birth-place on the Western Reserve in Ohio. He was a great favorite with Enoch Boynton, who resided in Newbury, where the lands of his ancestors had been occupied by his family in unbroken succession from the first settlement of the town. The original mind and inventive genius of Enoch Boynton made a deep impression on the child of thirteen.

Mr. Boynton's social relations have been singularly fortunate and happy. His summer home is on Pipe-Stage Hill in West Newbury, Mass., overlooking Newburyport and the lovely valley of the Merrimack, whose tidal waters sweep the base of the eminence. His parsonage farm was once the property of that eminent patriot, Caleb Moody, who was imprisoned by Governor Andros for resisting the revocation of Massachusetts' charter. His residence tower commands a view of forty mountain peaks, including Mount Washington and of the ocean far and wide. The first Senator of the United States from Massachusetts, Senator Dalton, and his brother-in-law, Hooper, resided here and entertained many distinguished French exiles after the French Revolution, among whom were Louis Philippe, afterwards King of France; M. de Talleyrand, minister of Napoleon;

and the young poet Brissot, who here wrote his sketches of the beautiful scenery.

Within a half-hour's drive are the birth-places of the poet Whittier, Governor Josiah Bartlett, Hon. Caleb Cushing, William Lloyd Garrison, Caleb Moody, Major Benjamin Perley Poore, John Newell, and the homes of the ancestors of Lowell, Longfellow, Parsons and other distinguished men; while just below, on a beautiful island, is the residence of Harriet Prescott Spofford. James Parton, the historian, resides a mile further, in Newburyport, opposite the old home of Dr. Tyng. The castellated house erected and for six years occupied by the British minister, Sir Edward Thornton, looks out from Laurel Hill, near by the property of Captain Henry W. Moulton and his literary family.

Mr. Boynton came to his present place of residence when he was fourteen years old, to reside with Mrs. Susan Coker, a sister of Mrs. General Peabody, of Newburyport, who had in her household her nephew, George Peabody, the famous London banker and philanthropist, during his early manhood. The influence of Mrs. Coker and her daughter Catharine was of value to young Boynton in the formative age, and when he married she gave him the Peabody clock as a souvenir of the distinguished banker.

In 1873, on May 1st, Mr. Boynton married Anna Bartlett Gale, the only daughter of Dr. Stephen M. Gale, of Newburyport, connected through her father with Governor Josiah Bartlett, the first signer of the Declaration of Independence,—he being her great-grandfather,—and the Websters; on the side of her mother, Hannah Whittier Johnson, with the Johnsons and the family of J. G. Whittier, the poet. She is a lady of high literary and musical culture, uniting these pursuits with domestic tastes. Among their friends are numbered some of the best people in the land. Their union has been blessed with four promising daughters. That their summer home is one of rare beauty and happiness we can testify from personal knowledge.

In 1877 he purchased the side-wheel, one hundred and twenty horse-power, steam tug, the "Charles L. Mather," of New York, and ran it to Newburyport, and began experimenting to open the Merrimack River for navigation to Lawrence, Mass. He sent to Lowell the first scow-load of coal ever received there by water from the harbor of Newburyport, from the Philadelphia and Reading coal pocket; towed it to Lawrence, and passed it through the canal to Gen. B. F. Butler, at Lowell, Mass. Mr. Boynton has since expended over fifty thousand dollars from the revenues of his saw business in opening up the navigation of the Merrimack, with a view to giving cheaper coal and lumber freights and water transportation to the large manufacturing cities on its banks, where about five hundred thousand tons of coal are used annually, and manufactures aggregating \$100,000,000 annually are produced. The improvements



of the channel, and the delivery of eighty thousand dollars' worth of coal by water, caused the railways to reduce their freights in carrying coal to one-half the former charge, on the plea of competition. An opposition so formidable has thus far prevented sufficient capital being embarked to complete an enterprise fraught with so much benefit to the three hundred thousand people engaged in manufacturing near the summer home of Mr. Boynton; thoughtful men predict that the measure must ultimately prove a great success. The transportation of coal by steam upon the Merrimac, as far as Haverhill, Mass., was first begun by Mr. Boynton and associates in 1864, and has been a constant success ever since, all the coal to Haverhill and the lower towns being now received by water, an indication of the result which enlarged channels and facilities will give to the great manufacturing cities above Haverhill in the near future. In order to admit the deeper draft coal steamers, and open the port for foreign commerce, Mr. Boynton first proposed to the United States Government the construction of jetties at the mouth of the Merrimac, in a letter addressed from his store in New York, of which the following is a copy:

OFFICE OF E. M. BOYNTON, )  
NEW YORK, Nov. 18, 1879. )

"HON. GEORGE W. McCLURE, Secretary of War,  
Washington, D. C.

"Dear sir:—I want a preliminary survey of the mouth of the Merrimac River near Newburyport. It is desired to extend the narrow channel between Plum Island and Salisbury, continuing it in the same width out to twenty-five feet depth in the sea. By getting double rows of piers and forming jetties, the shifting sands that obstruct the harbor will be prevented, and the confined channel, instead of spreading like a fan, as it now does, and changing in every storm, will be rendered as deep as it is between Plum Island and Salisbury, where a one mile and a half it averages thirty-five feet in depth.

"Coal steamers of one thousand tons arrive and depart twice each week at great peril, bringing about one hundred thousand tons of anthracite coal this year. About five hundred thousand tons are used in the valley, the population of which is nearly half a million people. About one hundred millions of dollars' worth of products are sent away annually, and it is desirable that the coal and lumber, corn and cotton, to which the entire country is interested, shall have free access. The government has already accomplished much in river improvements, which goes far toward making the harbor here more accessible. I will furnish steamers and men, and pay all the expense, if you will request General Thom to meet me and make the preliminary survey. The coast survey furnishes the principal data needed. I have consulted General Thom, who is alive to the vast importance of the interest involved and the pressing need of immediate action. With great respect, I remain

"Yours, very truly,

(Signed)

"E. M. BOYNTON."

Although this plan was at first objected to on behalf of the government by General George Thom, chief of engineers U. S. A., on the ground of the magnitude of the cost of the necessary boring, sounding, surveys and current observations, undaunted by the prospect that on account of these objections the work would be delayed for years, and the refusal of the War Department to accept his offer to pay for preliminary surveys, Mr. Boynton next procured copies of the surveys of the United States Navy of 1851 and of 1878, and on February 16, 1879, he forwarded copies of the same, showing the changes

of sand at the harbor bar, and giving the data necessary for appropriations. Ten days later the Secretary of War forwarded to Mr. Boynton the approval of General Thom and of the War Department, of his project for constructing jetties at Newburyport, at the mouth of the Merrimac, estimating the cost of granite work as not to exceed six hundred thousand dollars, and an appropriation was secured, after one rejection, by the committee, of fifty thousand dollars to begin the work. The adoption of Mr. Boynton's plan was complete, and over one hundred thousand dollars has since been expended, and granite jetties extend respectively five hundred feet from the southern shore and fourteen hundred feet from the northern shore, and are to be extended four thousand and twenty-five hundred feet respectively, thus compressing the immense waters of the Merrimac and tidal currents by a harbor in the ocean, with an entrance one thousand feet wide. This is the first work of the kind in the section, and its completion will be a monument of granite, as enduring as the continent, to Mr. Boynton's labors in behalf of the Merrimac Valley and the ancient historic city of Newburyport.

In 1877 Mr. Boynton was selected by Messrs. George Opdyke, William Orton, Peter Cooper, John Williams and other members of the executive committee of the New York Board of Trade, to represent the city of New York at the meeting of the Association of Chambers of Commerce of Great Britain, at Westminster Palace Hotel, London, in February of that year.

The courtesies received at our Centennial by the commissioners of the British Association mentioned, led to the invitation, in response to which Mr. Boynton was commissioned, and he was the first to take part as a delegate from the United States in that distinguished body. He participated actively in debate during three days' sessions.

*Speech of Mr. E. M. Boynton, of New York, at the Dinner given by the Association of Chambers of Commerce of the British Empire, at the Westminster Palace Hotel, London, England, February 24, 1877, Lord Salisbury presiding.*

"His experience of England was a succession of surprises. On his first night here he had been permitted a seat on the floor of the Parliament House, and listened to the very instructive debate on Indian finances, trade and resources. And here we listen to the noble Lord Salisbury, who was the delegated absolute ruler of that wonderful land. Solomon, in all his glory, ruled less than ten millions of people; Nerves never fifty millions, imperial Rome, scarce ever a hundred millions, and at my side is a Christian Governor-General of India, who rules absolutely two hundred and fifty millions, ten thousand miles away. It crushes a Republican to think of such personal responsibility. What it would be to feel it he did not know; but he was sure that the Bible, which Queen Victoria gave as the secret of England's greatness must be his guide, and that God his helper, to succeed in meeting his responsibility. He was glad to know that not one of the sixty thousand Englishmen in India could strike the poorest native without liability to answer before a magistrate to English law.

"America is free. They had some civil troubles, from abolishing an ancient institution—slavery—in fifteen States. The work of freedom it took England six hundred years to accomplish has been completed in the past twelve years. Statesmanship was, however, springing up in those States; the love of peace and pride of country found new expres-





sion recently, where least expected. Neither execution nor confiscation followed their war, in which three million soldiers sincerely battled. No right hands of the conquered were severed on the scaffold; all would now shield the nation's honor if threatened from abroad; while their President slept securely without soldier or sentinel.

"Mr. Boynton did not wonder at our pride of country, this beautiful land, filled with such memories as cluster round Westminster Abbey. Yet the poets, statesmen, heroes, scholars and history of Britain, were shared by their children in America. His ancestors came from Britain to Massachusetts two and a half centuries ago, yet more and more was England honored in New England and the United States—your great dead men walk and breathe the air of America. The church and the school were abroad in his country, and the masters of English literature were read quite as much there as are here: Longfellow and Whittier and Bryant and Holmes. We have no such grand antiquities of human hands in America; but if any here present landed at Halifax, they might ride in one direction four thousand miles, *en route* to their Pacific States—visit New York, the commercial port of the continent, and other large young cities—crossing wide States and prairies of limitless fertility—sweep on swift palace trains and over many mountain ranges higher than the Alpine passes trod by Hannibal and Napoleon. Yet they had a few antiquities. When Adam was young their great California redwood trees had sprouted. (*Applause*). When the morning stars sang the song of creation their Niagara joined in the chorus. (*Applause*). England owned the Canadian, we the American half of that four thousand feet wide of mingled falling waters. And, as he had often looked at the blended mountain spray that rose to the clouds from Niagara, the sun-blaze on its forehead, linking the rainbows round its throne, was to him a symbol of perpetual peace between England and America; to promote such peace and reciprocity and good-will should ever be the object of his life." (*Applause*).

Mr. Boynton received invitations to many cities and towns in Great Britain, and was presented to Her Majesty, Queen Victoria, and the Royal family at Buckingham Palace. His speeches at London and afterward at the Plymouth meeting attracted great attention, and he received thirty invitations which he could not accept.

After visiting France and Italy, and examining various engineering works of harbor and river improvements, Mr. Boynton returned. He was tendered a dinner by the New York Board of Trade, which he declined. He received the thanks of the president, Hon. George Opdyke, in tones of highest eulogy. In sad contrast, Mr. Boynton, with Messrs. Francis B. Thurber and John F. Henry, afterward constituted a committee to draft eulogies upon the life and character of President Opdyke upon his death, which occurred June 12, 1880. December 15th, following, as delegate of the Board of Trade to Washington, Mr. Boynton took a prominent part in the discussion of important measures, and introduced the chairman of the Committee on Commerce, Messrs. Reagan, of the House of Representatives, and Beck, of the Senate, at the banquet held December 17th.

Mr. Boynton was at that time contesting member of Congress *versus* George B. Loring, from the famous Sixth Massachusetts Essex County District. He had reluctantly permitted his name to be used as that of an independent and national candidate, and supposed that he had been defeated by less than one hundred votes; but the discovery of a much larger number of illegal votes led General Butler and Hon. Caleb Cushing to believe Mr. Boynton elected, and it took two years to decide the matter. He refused to

make any terms with either of the old parties, and therefore was prevented from obtaining the seat to which these able counselors, and such men as General Weaver (a minority of the committee), General Reagan and Alexander H. Stephens, declared him entitled.

The question was not finally decided until just before the inauguration of President Garfield, thus giving Mr. Boynton two years of Congressional observation, which has proved of great value to him, and had the effect of thoroughly disgusting him with politics.

Mr. Boynton took part in the inauguration of President Garfield, as his last political act, and has since devoted himself to literature and farming. He sold out his patents in 1882 to an incorporated company at 36 Devoe Street, Brooklyn. They were valued at three hundred thousand dollars; having the preceding year, under his own management, earned sixty-three thousand dollars gross, and thirty thousand dollars net profits, and whatever discouragements in manufacturing or losses may hereafter occur, the Lightning saws up to that date had been an unquestioned success the world over.

Mr. Boynton was nominated for member of Congress by the National and the Democratic party in Essex County, in 1880, in a district which, with one exception, has been almost unanimously Republican (since the days when Rantoul and Choate and Cushing represented it), yet Mr. Boynton received about two thousand more votes than had previously been necessary to elect—the largest vote ever given a Democratic Congressional candidate in that district. It being Presidential year, the Republican party prevailed, although many Republicans preferred Mr. Boynton; and his opponent's native city, Newburyport, though overwhelmingly Republican, gave Mr. Boynton a large majority, showing how high was the estimation in which he was held by his neighbors and townsmen. Extracts are annexed from a Congressional speech of Hon. Mr. Boynton, which has been pronounced to contain the best defense of the Fourteenth Amendment to the Constitution which has ever been given, and it is predicted that the extension of suffrage by Massachusetts in conformity therewith is only a question of time. We copy from the *Congressional Record* of January 21, 1881:

"Sumner secured the adoption of the fourteenth amendment, which you would now nullify if you refuse to vindicate its majesty and power in accordance with its sacred provisions.

"The people, North and South, stretch out their hands to you to right their wrongs and give them back their liberties and suffrages. For four long years we have plead with our rulers, and thundered at the gates of the State capitol, calling upon them to do what they have promised, by passing the enfranchisement United States Constitutional amendments to do. Enfranchisement is just, for on the consent of the governed rest our liberties. It promotes manhood to annually select the rulers by a free ballot. It stimulates love of country. It prevents plots and revolutions against the State. It promotes public morals by enlisting all the citizens in the public welfare. It gives security, happi-



ness and prosperity to all classes by giving equal rights, equal privileges and equal burdens. You need not fear the influence of the poor and of the ignorant, for even that is divided in support of candidates selected by the cultured, the wealthy and the influential.

"Equality had its birth in the soul of man, in the teachings of Christ, in the Declaration of Independence. Manhood suffrage is an American invention, and the first realization of universal freedom. Egyptian learning, Grecian art, Roman power and organization, are surpassed in the free manhood of America. Its establishment has given to us, alone among the nations of the earth, eighty thousand free pulpits, not one supported by the State. It has given to us, first among the nations, three hundred thousand free schools, all supported by the State. The only titles of nobility issued are a quarter of a million patents to the poor inventors, who so advance our material wealth. To us alone, among the nations of the earth, it has given freedom from the armaments of Europe and the taxation of tyrants. It has taken off the load that crushes out the liberty and happiness of every other nation in Christendom. Here, with labor doubly rewarded in America (partially on account of our tariff), it is fast teaching the European peasant the folly of being obliged to carry a soldier on his back.

"True, France learning financial wisdom from the captured treasury books of ancient Venice, despite the changes of empires and republics, has for eighty years without a pause. France may therefore teach the bondholders of this land financial self-reliance and the beneficence of full legal tender paper money. And England, with the sovereignty of the ocean in her grasp and needing no defense except her bulwarks that float upon the stormy sea, may instruct us to protect our commerce by substituting peaceful navies to carry our mails and limitless productions. But we can teach them more than France and England are learning of real self-government and the extension of suffrage for manhood suffrage is the strongest form of government. It is broad-based as the Pyramids and as enduring. It teaches the millennium of peace; it teaches the fraternity of nations. There are but two forms of government on earth—voluntary and involuntary.

"Through blood and tears we have settled forever, I trust, the question of our form of government in favor of universal freedom. A million brave and sincere lives and eight billions of treasure have been paid for this amendment to the Constitution of our Republic. Wise or unwise we cannot go back now.

"Will Massachusetts reward the tens of thousands of her heroes who were compelled, because they could not read and write, to make their mark on the muster-roll as well as on the battle field—will she reward them by disfranchisement? I ask the men who represent Massachusetts on this floor, will they disfranchise the men who went out to give their lives for the Union? The bones of many of those men lie bleaching on our battlefields, but their comrades who have returned—will you disfranchise them because they were compelled to make their mark on their receipt of payment for their blood? You insist on their enfranchising four million of slaves by their valor.

"Shall the black slave be made a free man and the white citizen in Massachusetts be made a slave? What would you say if the South were to copy your example? You cannot escape history by denying your official duty to enforce and defend this sacred provision of the Constitution. It is now for the first time brought to your attention, and the ages will point at your cowardice and witness your untruthfulness if you sanction the cruel ordering laws of 1851, disfranchising one hundred thousand white citizens of Massachusetts they have sworn to protect by accepting the amendment and the apportionment law of 1872.

"Shall we do this when we are about to celebrate our first century of freedom, which has accomplished more for mankind, more for his moral nature, with three free pulpits to one of any other nation; more intellectually, with three free schools to any other nation's one; more materially, with three inventions to any other nation's one; more for peace, with fifteen thousand leaders to a soldier; when we have accomplished more for mankind in our first century than has been accomplished by sixty centuries of monarchial and aristocratic government? Apply the laws of Massachusetts, and you will disfranchise a majority of the voting population of the South. You destroy all the protection given by the ballot to one-third, ay, to more than one-third of the fifty millions of this nation.

"Will you bid men pay taxes on all that they consume and produce and not give them representation? Will you bid them produce billions by their toil and refuse the citizenship guaranteed by the fourteenth amendment? Will you enroll this great heroic army, larger than the army of Xerxes, larger than any other army that was ever

gathered in the world—will you enroll this great heroic army of voters in your national militia throughout this broad domain, subject to draft in your defense, and yet give them no vote in disposing of their property and lives?

"Men of Massachusetts, dare you take this responsibility? Loring has quoted young Ohio, the daughter of Massachusetts; Ohio does not do this deed of disfranchising weakness and wickedness. Iowa does not perform this infamy. Maine does not disfranchise her people. New Hampshire, adjoining Massachusetts, with a similar people in every respect, does not find it necessary. Shall Massachusetts dim theuster of her heroes, go back upon the teachings of her history, give the lie to her professions? Shall she act the part of those rulers in Judea who, when Jesus was crucified, would not enter the judgment hall for fear of being defiled, yet when the stern and bloody Roman governor said, 'I find no fault in him,' cried out 'Let him be crucified! Give us Barabbas, the robber!'

"Men of Massachusetts, shield not yourselves behind your illustrious names. As well might Loring, petitioning for national appointment, go to the grave-stones of our ancient Salem for names to secure it as to seek to answer the points of law and fact in this case by taking refuge behind the history, the fame and the glory of our ancient Commonwealth. Massachusetts is not that little space between the hills of Berkshire and the sands of Barnstable, she is now the fifteen million of descendants, whose watch-houses are in every portion of the Republic from Maine to San Francisco; it is the liberty-loving men of America, it is the ideas that come down to us from the saddle of Sidney, from the words of Locke in his exile, from the pilgrims and Puritans, from John Hancock, Adams, Warren, from James Otis, insuring that taxation without representation is tyranny, speaking for universal manhood suffrage in the old cradle of liberty. I adore you, by all her immortals and by the kindred revolutionary heroes of Virginia, by the Sumners and Matrons of South Carolina, by every battle-field of the Revolution, by the liberty won in our last sad, fratricidal state, that you be true to your official oaths, be true to the genius of American liberty and manhood suffrage, and true to the destiny of this the great master-republic of our world.

"You stand at the dividing line between a free and a restricted ballot. Beside you are vast syndicates and giant corporations that urge you to disfranchise the people; that urge you to make the people weak and helpless; that urge you to take from millions of citizens of the United States their lawful rights and erect an empire.

"Now, after you have put the 'freedman's prayer' into the Constitution of my country, do you propose that Massachusetts, of illustrious name and fame, shall be used to wipe out all the war has won? Do you refuse to hear and redress this first breach of the charter? Have the two old parties—republican and democratic—united like Herod and Pilate, like Scribe and Pharisee, to punish those standing up for liberty and justice here in the last court of freedom here in the Congress of the country? The men who won England's Magna Charta could not read or write. The blood of poor men ransomed and enlarged the charter of American freedom and nationality.

"The United States census of 1880 shows that from the same population three men voted in Maine and New Hampshire, Ohio and Indiana, where only two voted in Massachusetts, in a population of similar intelligence and employment. If Maine, that up to 1850 shared and illustrated the history of Massachusetts, safely gives equality, why cannot the mother State? Does it dim the splendor or retard the success of Ohio because she does not refuse a vote to the poorest freedman in her borders? Have we not in America's three hundred thousand free schools, academies and colleges, security that intelligence shall rule, without making the poor and unforlunate tremble at the loss of his manhood suffrage? The eloquent words of Senator Hoar, of Massachusetts, in accepting the presidency of the national republican convention at Chicago, June 3, 1889, were fully cheered by the delegates of every State and Territory, and have before and since been echoed by the President-elect. I quote the Senator:

"The key-note of every republican platform, the principle of every republican union, is found in its respect for the individual man. Until that becomes the pervading principle of every part of the Republic, from Canada to the Gulf, from the Atlantic to the Pacific, our mission is not ended.

"The Republic lives, the republican party lives, but for this: that every man within our borders may dwell secure in a happy home, may cast and have counted his equal vote. Until these things come to pass the mission of our party is not accomplished, nor its conflict with its ancient enemy ended."







*Orin Warren.*





"Had the equality proclaimed in our immortal Declaration of Independence been real, a million men would not have died to write freedom in the Constitution. Two hundred thousand black men fought for their liberty. The colored people alone outnumber our nation when it won independence. You legislate for our fifty millions to day, for the five hundred millions that will celebrate our next centennial. No power can compel you to do justice and keep you out, at freedom's altar. Will you refuse and dim the splendor of the hero-crimsoned flag that is destined to gather in all the States of the New World—destined to teach law and liberty, peace and fraternity to all mankind. That flag is alive for the lowly and the strong; touching earth, it sweeps the stars.

"The uncounted generations that have come and gone, the slow advance of freedom through sixty centuries, the mistakes that have darkened history warn us vigilantly to guard the summit of man's liberty, our Constitution so dearly won. This morning gilds our mountain heights of freedom, when eclipsed by noon it shall only make the men that held their passes immortal."

This appeal for suffrage to the disfranchised soldiers of Massachusetts has been honored by a repeal of Massachusetts' disfranchising law as applied to them.

Mr. Boynton was the advocate of suffrage and reforms in money; was without any large organized party like the Democratic and Republican, yet received ten thousand three hundred votes. Eight thousand legal votes under United States laws were excluded by Massachusetts. A large number of illegal votes were counted for Loring, who claimed a few score votes more as illegally allowed him. The South denied the excuse of Massachusetts nullifying the amendment. Both old parties united against Boynton unless he would join them.

In 1885 Mr. Boynton, at the Worcester Convention of the Republican party, made an earnest protest of the duty of Massachusetts to obey the fourteenth amendment of the Constitution. That year the Massachusetts Constitution was amended to conform to the national suffrage law; but as it required two years and a submission to the people and two-thirds majority every step, it has since by a few votes been defeated in the House after passing the Senate; but the end is certain—either the national Constitution must be obeyed by all the States in the Union or suffrage abandoned, and the sooner Massachusetts obeys the Constitution will she be able to ask a similar compliance by the Southern States,—no question is more vital than suffrage.

#### ORIN WARREN.

Orin Warren, at this time, 1888, is the principal physician in the town of West Newbury.

An account of his ancestry and early life is furnished by two family friends, whose descriptions are so graphic that parts of each paper will be given verbatim.

"The subject of this sketch was born in Fryeburg, Oxford County, Me., January 20, 1833, of American parents, and tradition hath it that in early days his paternal ancestors were of a warlike people, who, for some political offence, were driven from Scotland into

Wales. Thence," some of the family "embarked for the New World of America."

The early death of Dr. Warren's grandparents cut off the source of further information, and we are only able to gather that they were a religious people of the Baptist persuasion and hard-working farmers."

His mother's ancestry is described as "Puritan of the most straitest sect." He is a direct descendant of Elder Brewster, of "Mayflower" and Plymouth fame.

That the grandfather and grandmother were of a hardy and determined stock goes without saying, when we know that about the year 1792 they mounted their horses, and, with one little child, the mother of the subject of this sketch, started from Shirley, Mass., following a bridle-path for scores of miles to the then district of Maine. Settling upon a farm in Fryeburg, in the valley of the Saco River, they coaxed from the soil a living, and brought up, with good religious and educational privileges, a family of eleven children.

Dr. Warren's parents both, at times, earned a living as teachers of district schools, his father at one time occupying an unused cooper's shop for a school-room, and his mother acting as pedagogue in half of a barn, left vacant for school purposes.

Of hardy and self-reliant extraction, these parents asked of the world only a chance to earn an honest living for themselves and their seven children. Consequently Dr. Warren was early taught that to labor was honorable, and that at school or at home there was always business to be attended to.

The other friend writes of Dr. Warren as one "born of parents who gained a competency by their untiring industry, economy and energy; the children were largely the fortunate recipients; all the necessities and conveniences of life were theirs, without encouragement to anything of superfluous indulgence. Self-sacrifice, enterprise, devotion to right and duty were characteristics prominent in the lives of Dr. Warren's parents.

"A full determination to give all the members of their household such religious and intellectual privileges as should be favorable to their early development, and secure to them the highest possible good for their lives and the future, was fully evident.

"The subject of our sketch was the fourth in a merry and musical group of seven, and well calculated for a leader in mirth and song. Naturally of a cheerful disposition, the bright side of life was peculiarly his, and words of courage and good cheer fell from his lips."

This statement is indorsed later by the words of his wife, who says, in regard to this cheerful temperament: "It has been a great help to him in the trying life he has had."

The friend continues: In the quiet and cultured village of Fryeburg, Me., was his home; the place, embosomed among the hills, upon the banks of the strangely crooked and picturesque Saco, is beautiful



for situation, and readily reminds one of the truthful poem, commencing,—

"From Agioochook's granite steeps."

The educational advantages of Fryeburg have been for a long series of years superior, as Dartmouth and Bowdoin have supplied active and efficient principals for its far-famed academy, where Dr. Warren pursued a thorough course of study.

Notwithstanding his noteworthy ancestry, his favorable surroundings and helpful early associations, there was much left for him to accomplish by his own application, zeal and perseverance, and that these were wisely directed, his subsequent career of usefulness and prosperity abundantly attests.

Dr. Warren began the study of medicine in 1854 with Dr. C. H. Dana, in Laporte, Pa., continued with Dr. Towle, of Fryeburg, and in the Portland School of Medicine. He pursued his studies further by attending two courses of lectures at Maine Medical School, Brunswick, and two more courses at Jefferson Medical College, Philadelphia, where he graduated, March 9, 1858. He spent one season at Deer Island Hospital, Boston Harbor. He came to West Newbury to reside July 14, 1859.

On June 5, 1860, he was married, at the South Congregational Church, Boston, by the Rev. E. E. Hale, to Eliza A. Sawyer, daughter of Ezra and Eliza Sawyer. He became a member of the Massachusetts Medical Society in 1861.

This year, 1861, is memorable for the beginning of the great Civil War, by the attack upon Fort Sumter. The call of the President for seventy-five thousand men to put down the insurrection was altogether inadequate, and was followed by other calls as the magnitude of the Rebellion was made evident. The loyal people arose as one man to preserve the Union of all the States, to save the country from division.

Young men earnestly enlisted in the army, and physicians fresh from their medical studies, or having already begun practice, were anxious to do their part in the good work, and at the same time gain experience in surgery, though at the risk of their lives and the pain of separation from their dear friends at home.

Dr. Warren was one who responded to the nation's call.

On the morning of September 12, 1861, he received an order to report to Surgeon-General Dale at the State-House, Boston, Mass., in the afternoon. That afternoon he started for Annapolis, Md., commissioned as assistant surgeon of the Twenty-first Massachusetts Volunteers. He left Annapolis with Burnside's expedition for Roanoke Island, January, 1862. He was present at the battle of Roanoke, February 8, 1862, and at that of Newbern, March 14th; also at that of Camden, April 19th, where he was left with the wounded and taken a prisoner.

A week after this Dr. Warren and his patients were sent, *via* the Dismal Swamp Canal, to Norfolk, where

the wounded were paroled and sent to Fortress Monroe, and the doctor was unconditionally released by General Huger, of the Confederate army.

"This was the day," writes Dr. Warren, "after the memorable battle between the 'Merrimac' and the 'Monitor.' I was invited on board the 'Monitor' by the officers, who were in hopes that I had some information as to the condition of the 'Merrimac.'"

It seems the place to introduce here an extract from a letter written by Surgeon-General Dale to Dr. John Flint, dated March 17, 1862: "I send you here the following item from a letter of the hospital steward of the Twenty-third Massachusetts Volunteers. From the 11th of February to the 6th of March the patients were under the immediate care of Assistant Surgeon O. Warren, of the Twenty-first Massachusetts, who labored night and day, using every means in his power, and often depriving himself of comfort that the wounded should have what they needed."

This was done at the General Hospital. Dr. Hitchcock, on his return from Roanoke, made particular mention of Dr. Warren's devotedness and efficiency.

"Depriving himself of comfort" was not a sentimental compliment. Subsisting for three days on a hard-tack and a sweet-potato, while attending to the wounded, required much forgetfulness of self.

Dr. Warren returned to his regiment as soon as a transport left for Newbern. Shortly after his return he was taken ill with dysentery, which continued long after his retirement from the army.

Early in June he received a letter from Adjutant-General Schouler, stating that he had been recommended for promotion, and received a commission as surgeon, dated June 9, 1862, in the Thirty-third Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers.

On November 30, 1862, he was appointed surgeon of Second Division, Eleventh Army Corps, on the staff of General Steinwehr, and December 18, 1862, was appointed surgeon-in-chief for the same division.

On account of impaired health, before mentioned, Dr. Warren resigned his position in the army, April 1, 1863, and returned to West Newbury to practice his profession and regain his health. Dr. Robinson, who had been for more than fifty years the prominent physician of the place, was now aged and in declining health, though with sound mind and judgment. September 2, 1863, he "rested from his labors." Dr. Warren had Dr. Robinson's approval and succeeded to much of his practice.

It is a blessing to the country towns in New England that all men well read in the science of medicine and skilled in surgery do not go to the large cities to practice.

The sphere of a country physician is not a small one if he improve his opportunities, as his practice is not confined to one town, but he has a circuit sometimes for miles around. He can avail himself of the privilege of easy access to the great centres of busi-





ness and literature, which was denied to his fathers in the profession similarly situated. Though he must drive many weary miles in his rounds of visits, he has beautiful scenery to enjoy and pure air to refresh him after trying watches in the sick-rooms.

The ancient respect for the office of the physician has not entirely faded out from the country towns, and in many instances among our intelligent people "our doctor" becomes the honored friend of families he has visited for years.

Dr. Warren brought from the army to West Newbury more experience in surgery than he could have acquired in many years as a general practitioner. He has gained a well-deserved reputation as a skillful physician and surgeon. He is remarkable for attention and kindness to his patients.

The high estimation in which his truth and integrity are held by the people among whom he dwells are shown by the trusts committed to him in various business matters of importance, and also by his election to the office of Representative to the General Court of Massachusetts from the district in which West Newbury is situated.

This latter office he would not have accepted had not he required relaxation from the arduous duties of his profession. He became a member of Free and Accepted Masons in May, 1876. He was one of the charter members of Post 151 of G. A. R.

Dr. Warren has an extensive practice and a pleasant home in the Western Parish, where his wife and only daughter assist him gracefully in his social duties.

May he long be blessed with health and prosperity to continue the good work of "healing the sick," in which he has been so faithful and so much respected and esteemed.

#### ELIPHALET EMERY.

Eliphalet Emery was born in that part of Newbury which is now West Newbury, September 5, 1781, and was the son of Nathaniel and Sarah (Short) Emery, of that town. He was born, lived and died on the paternal estate, on which his first American ancestor, John Emery, settled on his arrival from England, more than two hundred years ago. The estate was preserved in all its length and breadth during the life of Mr. Emery, and has descended from him unimpaired to his heirs. His education was that of a farmer's son, such as the common schools of Newbury furnished, with the added advantages derived from a course of study in Dummer Academy.

His chosen profession was that of a farmer, inspired partly by the ambition to own and improve his ancestral acres and partly by the natural tastes for agriculture which he had inherited with his land. Possessing the habits of industry, accuracy, thoroughness, promptness and fidelity, guided by a quick and sound intelligence, he stood through life in the front rank among the farmers of the county and State.

Nor did he permit the bounds of his possessions to limit his vision and narrow his mind. Public affairs, those of his town, of his State and of the nation, were subjects to which he applied his mind, and which, in their turn, expanded and strengthened his intellect. He was a member of the Board of Selectmen of West Newbury, after its incorporation in 1819, from 1821 to 1853, with the exception of thirteen scattering years. In 1829-31 and 1834 he was chosen a representative to the General Court, and in all matters affecting the interests and welfare of his town he was active and influential. He was especially active during the war, though then beyond the allotted age of man, and the financial condition of West Newbury during that trying period owed much of its soundness to his sagacity and skill. One who knew him well said at the time of his death, "that he died beloved by his friends, respected by his townsmen and all who knew him; and that his record was that of a faithful, upright and honest man."

He married, April 4, 1820, Sarah, daughter of Rev. Moses Hale, of Boxford, and granddaughter of Rev. Moses Hale, of West Newbury. Companions in married life for many years, they were not long separated by the hand of death. Mrs. Emery died March 4, 1865, and her husband April 20, 1869.

## CHAPTER CXLVIII.

### HAVERHILL.

BY HON. JOHN B. D. COGSWELL.

*Haverhill, England, and the Wards.*

THE Indian name of Haverhill was Pentucket. The early English settlers called it Haverhill, in compliment to their first minister, Rev. John Ward, whose family had, for several generations, been identified with the town of Haverhill in England. The New England town long since surpassed its original in importance. Within a few years there has been a pleasant interchange of hospitality between prominent representatives of the old town and descendants from the first settlers of the new.

Haverhill in England is situated partly in Suffolk and partly in Essex County, which have long been distinguished by the zeal for Protestantism cherished and manifested in their towns and villages. Indeed, the spirit of non-conformity ran riot there during the Commonwealth. August, 1641, an order was published by the House of Commons for taking away all scandalous pictures out of churches. William Dowsing, of Stratford, was Parliamentary visitor of Suffolk churches, under warrant from the Earl of Manchester, general of the Eastern Counties. January 6, 1643, he



was at Haverhill. "He broke down," he says, "about one hundred superstitious pictures; seven Fryars hugging a nun; the picture of God and Christ; and divers other very superstitious; and two hundred had been break down before I came. We took away the Popish inscriptions . . . and we beat down a great stone cross on the top of the church." On that day, John Ward was ministering, peacefully and profitably, in the little hamlet upon the banks of the Merrimac.

The English Haverhill is twenty miles southeast of Cambridge and fifty northeast of London. In 1887 it had a population of 3684, having nearly trebled during the present century. Its principal industry is a manufactory of checks, cottons and fustians, carried on in the Chauntry Mills. It has a market on Wednesday. The places of worship are St. Mary's Episcopal, the old Independent, Congregational Chapel, Primitive Methodist, Baptist Chapel, Gospel Room. Municipal functions are administered according to the English complicated system, by local school and burial boards, the Petty Sessions and the County Court.

The voluntary associations are not unlike, at least in name, those with which the American town is familiar. There is a Literary Institute; a Mutual Improvement Society, a local parliament in connection with it; a Choral Union; a Practicing Society; the Liberal Association; Bible and Blanket Societies; the Maternal Institute; a Book Club; Burial and Benefit Societies; the Odd Fellows; Ancient Shepherds, Ancient Druids, Good Templars, Bands of Hope, Brass and String Bands, Banks, penny and other; Cricket and Foot-ball Clubs, a Volunteer Fire Brigade. Lastly, there are local poets, who sing:

"On the green turf, in verdant paths and vales,  
With cowslips washed by many a gurgling rill,  
Grows the pale primrose in sequestered dales,  
With eglantines, adorn fair Haverhill."

And so on through many stanzas.

The Wards, who thus become a link between the Haverhills of old and new Essex, were an able and high-spirited family. John Ward, the first, who graduated at Christ College, Cambridge, preached at Haverhill and afterwards at Bury. He was suspended by his bishop "for not yielding to wear the surplice." After suspension, he returned to Haverhill, where he died, October, 1598. Upon a mural tablet in the chancel of the church in which he preached, there is said to be a quaint inscription in Latin, of which the following is a translation:

"Grant some of knowledge greater store;  
More learned some in teaching;  
Yet few in life did lighten more,  
None thundered more in preaching."

This "Painful minister," as he was styled, had three sons,—Samuel, Nathaniel and John, all in the Church, of whom, according to Fuller in his

"Worthies," people used to say that "all of them put together would not make up his abilities."

Nathaniel Ward, the second son, born at Haverhill about 1578, died minister at Shenfield, Essex, England, about 1652. He graduated at the Cambridge University in 1603, and was bred a lawyer; traveled on the Continent in Russia and Denmark, in the company of certain merchants; devoted himself to divinity, and became rector of Standon in Hertfordshire. He was connected with the Massachusetts Company in 1630. Brought before Archbishop Laud for non-conformity in 1631 and silenced in 1633, he came to New England in 1634, and became pastor of the church at Agawam or Ipswich, resigning in 1636, on account of impaired health. In the year following the settlement of Haverhill in America, the General Court availed itself of his former legal studies and great experience, for the preparation of the "Body of Liberties," the first code of laws established in New England. It embodied the fundamental declarations of Magna Charta, which, expanded and more precisely expressed, were proclaimed in the Massachusetts Constitution of 1780. At the close of 1646, Nathaniel Ward returned to England. Early in the next year he published at London his famous politico-religious tract, "The Simple Cobbler of Agawam." He preached before the General Court of Massachusetts and the House of Commons in England. Able, satirical and eccentric, he is especially entitled to mention in this place, as the originator of the movement which led to the settlement of Haverhill.

John Ward, son of Nathaniel, was a man of very different character, perhaps more attractive. He was born November 5, 1606, probably at Haverhill, though possibly at Ipswich, England. Like his father and grandfather, he was educated at Cambridge, taking his degree of A.B. in 1626 and of A.M. in 1630. He came to America in 1639, and apparently made his home for a time in Ipswich, with or near his father. Governor Winthrop, in his history, under date of February 29, 1641, mentions the arduous journey from Piscataqua to Agamenticus (now York, Me.) of Mr. John Ward, with three others, "Who was to be entertained for their minister, and though it be but six miles, yet they lost their way and wandered two days and one night without food or fire, in the snow and wet. But God heard their prayers." Probably it was not so much this rough experience as the earnest desire of his father, which prevented Mr. Ward's settlement in Agamenticus, and brought him to Haverhill, where he probably took up his permanent residence in the autumn of 1641. He had already had experience in the ministry in England. Cotton Mather has drawn his picture with great detail in the *Magnalia*. He describes him as "learned, ingenious and religious. He was a person of quick apprehension, a clear understanding, a strong memory, a facetious conversa-





tion, an exact grammarian, an expert physician, and, which was the top of all, a thorough divine; but, which rarely happens, these endowments of his mind were accompanied with a most healthy, hardy and agile constitution of body, which enabled him to make nothing of walking on foot a journey as long as thirty miles together. Such was the blessing of God upon his religious education, that he was not only restrained from the vices of immorality in all his younger days, but also inclined unto all virtuous actions."

The learned Cotton proceeds to characterize this athletic and accomplished young English divine as also modest and retiring, temperate in diet and sleep, sober in apparel, dutiful and generous to his parents, not ambitious of public display, but truly unostentatious, and prudent in managing the affairs of his church and parish, ever seeking the best advice and guided by it. "Through his humility and reservation, it came to pass that, as he chose to begin his ministry in old England at a very small place, thus when he came to New England he chose to settle with a new plantation where he could expect none but small circumstances all his days."

It is quite easy to believe that so admirable a person, thus plentifully endowed with gifts and graces, both of soul and body, might have entered into a profitable matrimonial alliance. We are not therefore surprised when we learn that John Ward "had great offers of rich marriages in England. Yet he chose to marry a meaner person whom exemplary piety had recommended." If that were the only consideration entering into the young Puritan minister's scheme of life, it could scarcely be regarded as a love-match. But, although she was so unsparing of his faults "that he would compare her to an accusing conscience," and although "she would often put upon him the duties of secret fasts, yet she ever pleased him wonderfully. He lived with her for more than forty years, in such a happy harmony, that when she died he professed that in all this time he never had received one displeasing word or look from her. When she met with anything in reading that she counted singularly agreeable, she would still impart it unto him. For which cause, when he lost his mate, he caused these words to be fairly written over his table-board—'*In Iugenda Compare, Vite Speciem Compleat Orbis*,' " an apparent abandonment to grief of the future span of life hardly consistent with the severe self-constraint previously ascribed to him. "And there is this memorable passage to be added. While she was a maid there was ensured unto her the revenue of a parsonage worth two hundred pounds per annum, in case that she married a minister. And all this had been given to our Ward, in case he had conformed unto the doubtful matters of the Church of England, but he left all the allurements and enjoyments of England, choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God in a wilderness."

The "meaner person," who nevertheless would have brought such comfortable preferment to her husband, if he had been contented to abide an amenable clergyman of the Church of England, was Alice Edmunds, thus, according to Cotton Mather's testimony, quite able to exert a highly beneficial influence in her own household. Their children were two,—Mary, who married Benjamin Woodbridge, and Elizabeth, who married Nathaniel Saltonstall, first of Ipswich and afterwards of Haverhill. Both of these daughters had children, and among the descendants of John Ward, the first Haverhill minister, have been and are some of the ablest men and some of the brightest and most benevolent women of New England.

Alice Edmunds Ward died at Haverhill, March 24, 1680. John Ward, seventy-four years old and deeply stricken by the loss of his companion in exile, made his will on the 27th of May following. Said the aged minister:

"O Lord, into thy hands commit I my spirit. *Credo languida fide, sed tanta fide.* I give to my beloved son, Benja. Woodbridge, and to my beloved daughter, Mary, his wife, one parcel of land, containing thirty acres, more or less, lying att the norwest end of the towne of Haverhill, in N. England. . . . I give to my beloved son, Nathl. Saltonstall, and to my beloved daughter Elizabeth, his wife, my house and land adjoining thereto, commonly called the house lot, lying in the town of Haverhill. . . . Lastly, I constitute and appoynt my beloved son, Saltonstall, the Executor of this, my last will and testament."

The instrument, however, was not apparently executed till a few months before his death.

"Signed and sealed in the presence of us,

" WILLIAM WHITE,

" THOMAS EATON,

" BENJ. ROLFE."

"Jan. 24, 1683, owned before John White."

Rev. Benjamin Rolfe, of Newbury, the colleague and successor of Mr. Ward in the ministry, came to Haverhill in the latter part of 1689, having been chaplain to the forces sent to Falmouth, Me., from July 14 to November 14 in that year.

Cotton Mather loved to color his characters highly, for good or evil. But John Ward, of Haverhill, was undoubtedly a pious, prudent, exemplary clergyman. He retained the respect and affection of the people during his long pastorate of more than fifty years, and his learning, virtues and sacrifices became to them a standard of what a Christian minister should be and suffer, if need were. The town records, if read between the lines, would indicate that Mr. Ward was capable of certain demonstrations of high spirit in his old age, when arrangements were in progress about the settlement to be made for Mr. Rolfe. Cotton Mather would have regarded them as only the proper expression of dignity inhering in the priesthood. Mr. Rolfe, on the day of his ordination, could say of his deceased predecessor: "These four years past have been the happiest and most profitable to me of my whole life. I have had the counsels of wisdom and experience, the admonitions of a father and friend, and an example constantly before me of undissembled virtue, ardent piety and burning zeal."





And so we may well permit the author of the "Magnalia" to conclude his panegyric: "This diligent servant of the Lord Jesus Christ continued, under and against many temptations, watching over his flock at Haverhill more than thrice as long as Jacob continued with his uncle—yea, for as many years as there are Sabbaths in the year. On November 19, 1693, he preached an excellent sermon, entering the eighty-eighth year of his age, the only one that ever was, and perhaps ever will be, preached in this country at such an age. On December 27th he went off, bringing up the rear of our first generation." Had Cotton Mather personally known the patriarch of Haverhill? He might easily have done so, for he was about thirty-one years of age when Mr. Ward died, and had been for more than eight years joint pastor with his father, Increase Mather, of the North Church in Boston.

Samuel Sewall, who, a few months before, had entered in his diary comforting news about Mr. Ward's health, received from "Son Saltonstall," at the Council chamber in Boston, now recorded, under date of "December 28, 1693-4, Mr. Ward, of Haverhill, is buried, 87 years old."

That loyal and beloved son of Haverhill, John G. Whittier, in his "Leaves from Margaret Smith's Journal," describes a supposed journey of his heroine with her relatives, the Rawsons, of Newbury, to make a visit at the house of Nathaniel Saltonstall in Haverhill, where they are entertained in a manner indicating not only refined hospitality, but a condition of high comfort, if not affluence. There is a glimpse of the venerable minister, John Ward. Such a visit, in the world of actual events, must have been made earlier than 1679, if at all, for on the 1st of July in that year the unfortunate Rebecca Rawson was married in Boston to the pretended Sir Thomas Hale, and undertook her unfortunate voyage to England.

In 1679 the first meeting-house of Haverhill, a very small and rude building, was standing in the burial-ground now more pretentiously called Pentucket Cemetery. Mr. Ward and his son-in-law, Saltonstall, lived in the immediate vicinity and possibly in the same house. There was the estate, "commonly called the house-lott," which Mr. Ward gave to his daughter Elizabeth and her husband by will, and which had been granted to Mr. Ward by the town of Haverhill. For something like a century after, generous hospitality was administered there by his prosperous and somewhat aristocratic descendants. The estate was long known as "The Buttonwoods," and is still much admired for its sightliness and beauty of prospect. Between the burial-ground and "The Buttonwoods," on Eastern Avenue, there stands (1887) a small building, which, it is suggested with a certain semblance of plausibility, was the dwelling-house of John Ward. It was doubtless erected either by him or his immediate successors in the enjoyment of the estate. But it is certainly a very different structure from the homes

of the well-beneficed clergy of the Church of England, even two hundred and fifty years ago.

## CHAPTER CXLIX.

### HAVERHILL.—(Continued).

*What Scientists say of the Geology of the Region—The Fenest and the Flood of Haverhill.*

WHAT has been written by an eminent geologist of another locality may be aptly applied to Haverhill. Says Professor Shaler, of Harvard University, in the "Memorial History of Boston":

"The topography, the soils and other physical conditions of the region about Boston depend, in a very intimate way, upon the geological history of the district in which they lie. The physical history of the district is closely bound up with that of all Eastern New England. At successive times, and especially just before the human period, and possibly during its first stages in this country, the land was deeply buried beneath a sheet of ice. During the last glacial period, and perhaps frequently in the recent ice times, of which we find traces in the record of the rocks, the ice-sheet for long periods overtopped the highest of our existing hills, and ground away the rock-surface of the country as it crept onward to the sea. During the first stage of the last ice-period, this ice-sheet was certainly over two thousand feet thick in Eastern Massachusetts, and its front lay in the sea at least fifty miles to the east of Boston. At this time the glacial border stretched from New York to the far North, in an ice-wall that lay far to the eastward of the present shores, hiding all traces of the land beneath its mass.

"These successive ice sheets rested on a surface of rock, already much varied by the metamorphism and dislocations to which it had been subjected. Owing to the fact that ice cuts more powerfully in the valleys than on the ridges, and more effectually on the soft than on the hard rocks, these ice-sheets carved this surface into an amazing variety of valleys, pits and depressions. We get some idea of the irregularity of these rock-carvings from the fretted nature of the sea-coast over which the ice-sheets rode. When the last ice-sheet melted away, it left on the surface it had worn a layer of rubbish often a hundred feet or more in depth. As its retreat was not a rout, but was made in a measured way, it often built long irregular walls of waste along the lines where its march was delayed.

"The lower part of the Merrimac Valley is a mountain trough that has been similarly carved out, and the same others traceable still further to the northward.

"After the ice had lain for an unknown period over this region, climatal changes caused it to shrink away slowly and by stages, until it disappeared altogether. As it disappeared it left a very deep mass of waste, which was distributed in an irregular way over the surface, at some places much deeper than at others. At many points this depth exceeded one hundred feet."

In a recent lecture delivered in Boston, in the Lowell Institute series, on the "Ice Age in North America," Prof. G. Frederick Wright is reported as saying in substance:

"In connection with the lines of drainage of New England, we can best discuss the Kames. This is a Scotch word which is applied to the peculiar gravel ridges found in many regions and in New England in abundance. Their formation is a matter of much discussion. There are no large barriers separating many adjacent water-sheds in New England to-day, and ice-barriers must have caused great changes in the river-beds and lines of drainage. But for ice-barriers the Merrimac would enter the Atlantic near Boston at this time. The Kames often extend across valleys, following down the slope on one side and up the other, and also have been ingeniously traced across lake bottoms.

"Beside the glacial terraces of our present stream, we have in the so-called Kame system still further evidence of the existence of temporary lines of drainage, determined by ice-barriers during the continuance of



the glacial period. New England is gridironed by a system of gravel ridges deposited by glacial streams, to a great extent independent of the minor features of the present topography. In those and in the terminal moraines we study the skeleton of the continental ice-sheet as intelligently as the anatomist can study the skeleton of a dissected animal."

In writing of "Pre-historic Andover," in Bailey's "History of North Andover," the same learned observer (presumably) says:

"The marks of the glacial epoch in Andover are open to inspection before every man's door.

"A later glacial deposit (now known in scientific circles as Kames) is represented in Andover by such formations as 'Indian Ridge,' Kame is a Scottish word, meaning sharp ridge."

Hills about Great Pond (Lake Cochichewick) are not, as might be expected, rocky elevations, but are vast heaps of unstratified, compact clay, containing scratched pebbles and gravel, and littered over with angular boulders, transported from the north. These elevations have been named by Prof. Hitchcock, "Lenticular Hills," from their peculiar lens-shaped outline as seen upon the distant horizon. This series of hills continues to the northeast, as far as Portsmouth, N. H.

Dr. Hitchcock wrote in 1842:

"Our moraines form ridges and hills of almost every possible shape. It is not uncommon to find straight ridges for a considerable distance. But the most common and remarkable aspect assumed by these elevations is that of a collection of tectuous ridges and rounded and even conical hills, with corresponding depressions between them. These depressions are not valleys which might have been produced by running water, but were holes, not infrequently occupied by a pond.

"In 1874 the writer ascertained that this belt of ridges extended through the whole length of the town of Andover. Kames frequently pass over the lenticular hills where their height is less than two hundred feet and descend into shallow depressions, crossing river valleys without ceremony. Still later investigations brought to light a parallel belt of gravel ridges reaching the sea at Beverly, and continuing north through Topsheld, Boxford and Haverhill, far into New Hampshire.

"In passing from Andover to New Brunswick, the traveller crosses more than thirty Kames.

"These are all, however, less clearly defined and more subject to interruption than the Andover or Haverhill series.

"The most probable theory of the origin of these remarkable ridges is that they are somewhat of the character of medial moraines and mark the courses of the surface flow of water during the last stages of the melting ice-sheet.

"The ice had doubtless been thousands of feet in depth, and when the material composing the Kames was deposited, still filled most of the depressions and lingered in such transverse valleys as that which the Merrimack follows in the lower part of its course. Superficial streams, swollen by the action of the summer sun, would at that period flow with great violence, during the hot season, and their course would be marked by vast accumulations of coarse gravel, which would in some places be lodged in the channel, in others spread out over masses of ice. Finally, as the last masses of the lower stratum of ice melted, the gravel thereon would settle down from the ice (as dirt does from snow-drifts in the spring) into the irregular forms in which we find these ridges.

"Hagget's Pond (Andover) doubtless marks a depression where the ice lingered while a Kame-stream deposited in a temporary lake the sand-plains in the South towards Tewksbury. Pomp's Pond was preserved from filling up by a similar mass of ice. . . . The basin of Great Pond, in North Andover, was formed in a different manner. In this case the lake is hemmed in by lenticular hills, one of which partially dams its natural outlet. Lenticular hills have also in many places below North Andover determined the course of the Merrimack River."

A moraine is defined to be "A line of rock and gravel extending along the sides of separate glaciers, and along the middle part of glaciers formed by the union of one or more separate ones."

Even the unlearned can apply these observations to that portion of the Merrimac Valley in which Haverhill is situated, and especially to the lake region in the easterly part of the town, in the vicinity of Saltonstall and Kenoza.

It has been written by a competent observer:

"The changes in the fauna of the region immediately surrounding Boston, wrought by civilization, are merely such as would be expected to occur in the transformation of a forest wilderness into a thickly populated district, namely, the extirpation of all the larger indigenous mammals and birds, the partial extinction of many others, and the great reduction in numbers of nearly all forms of animal life, both terrestrial and aquatic, as well as the introduction of various domesticated species and those universal pests of civilization, the house-rats and mice. The only other introduced species of importance are the European house-sparrow and a few species of noxious insects."

The early chroniclers enumerate among the animals of this region, the "Lyon" (catamount or panther), the bear, moose, deer, porcupines, raccoons, beaver, marten and otter. Wood said of the moose: "There be not many of these in Massachusetts Bay, but forty miles to the Northeast there be great store of them." All these animals mostly have disappeared, although rumors occasionally float down from New Hampshire of great sport in "coon hunts," and abundance of deer are still to be found in certain seasons in the south-eastern counties of Massachusetts. "Smaller species occur in greatly reduced numbers, like the muskrat, mink, weasels, shrews, moles, squirrels and the various species of field mice."

The great auk was found along the Lower Merrimac when the fathers came, and its bones occur in the Indian shell-heaps at Ipswich and along the coast. Swans and cranes are said to have been abundant. Of the former, Morton said, "there are of them in Merrimac River and in other parts of the country, great store at the season of the year." Formerly there were great quantities of sea-fowl, as far from the coast as Haverhill, and the cry of the bittern and other water birds is still to be heard about the lakes in the eastern part of the town. Geese, ducks and especially pigeons, were in vast profusion in the early day.

Of reptiles, a competent writer says, in reference to this vicinity:

"The antipathy to snakes, which so generally impels their destruction at every opportunity, has left few of them in comparison with their former number. The rattlesnake, the only dangerous species, found now only at a few localities, was formerly much more generally dispersed. The draining of ponds and marshy lands has greatly circumscribed the haunts of frogs, salamanders and tortoises, which at many localities have become nearly extirpated."

These observations are certainly correct of Haverhill in the main; but the voice of the batrachian has not yet wholly died out of the land.

The waters of the town were full of fish two centuries and a half ago. Codfish, bass and mackerel could be had at the mouth of the river. Morton said of the "Basse:"

"There are such multitudes that I have seen stopped into the river (Merrimack) close adjoining to my house with sand at one time, so many as will load a ship of one hundred tonnes."





The same writer talks about mackerel "18 and 19 inches in length and seven in breadth."

"There is a fish (by some called shad, by some allizes) that at the spring of the year pass up the rivers to spawn in the ponds: and are taken in such multitudes in every river, that hath a pond at the head, that the inhabitants doing their grounds with them. You may see in one township a hundred acres together, set with these fish, every one taking a thousand of them."

Another old writer says:

"In two tides they have gotten one hundred thousand of these fish (meaning shad and alewives) in a wayre to catch fish."

This was written of the River Charles; but the same report might have been given of the Merrimack River at Haverhill. Was not East Haverhill known as "Shad Parish?" And was it not often stipulated in the indentures of apprentices, through the humane thoughtfulness of parents and guardians, that they should not be obliged to eat salmon oftener than six times a week? Wood wrote, from his observations as early as 1633:

"Much sturgeon is taken on the banks of the Merrimack, twelve, fourteen, eighteen feet long, pickled and sent to England."

The Indians called the river, "Monomack," or the River of Sturgeons. The fall of the stream at Pentucket (Haverhill), Pawtucket (Lowell), Namoskeag (Manchester) and Pennycook (Concord) were favorite resorts at the fishing season for the different communities or tribes of Indians. From them the whites learned the use of fish for manure, or, as they expressed it, to "fish corn."

The towns lower down the river seem to have monopolized the sturgeon fishery; but the curing and exportation of salmon and alewives was long a Haverhill industry. Before the days of bridges and dams, the falls of the Merrimack were famous for salmon, and its tributary streams for alewives. Haverhill, from its favorable situation at the head of sloop navigation and tide-water, and at the first falls of the river, was not only one of the earliest and latest engaged in the fisheries, but also the largest. In the year 1654 the town granted liberty to Stephen Kent "to place a wear in Little River, to catch alewives or any other fish." At the town-meeting of March 6, 1657, John Hutchins, of Newbury, was granted liberty to set a wear in the Merrimack, "at the little island above the town by the falls." He was to have the use of the island and the flats to dry his fish. In return, he was "to sell fish to the inhabitants of the town for such pay as the town can make,"—that is, by way of barter for their products,—and was to supply them for their own use, at market prices, in preference to others. His fish-works were to be finished within two years.

Salmon were formerly sold habitually in the town for four or five cents a pound, and were often unsalable at that price in the height of the fishing season. These fish were of the finest; but as the streams and outlets of the ponds became obstructed, and their waters defiled, by dams, mills and bridges, the sup-

ply of salmon rapidly diminished till, at the present time, notwithstanding all the care of the State's fish commissioners, but few are taken in the Merrimack, and those sadly inferior.

It is not thought that shad were much used as food in the early day, being principally employed for manure. The *New Hampshire Gazette* of May 13, 1760, announced:

"Shad—One day last week was drawn by a net at one draft Two Thousand Five hundred and odd Shad Fish out of the River Merrimack near Bedford in this Province. Thought remarkable by some people."

After mills began to be built, the town found it necessary to adopt regulations, so that fish might have an opportunity of passing up the streams to spawn. In 1722 and for more than a hundred years after, persons were chosen at the town-meeting to see that the "fish courses" were kept clear. In 1801 twelve fish wardens were chosen—the first officers under that name—for the purpose of regulating the fisheries and preventing the obstruction of the fish courses. In 1802 the town petitioned the General Court to regulate the alewife fishery. They declare the present mode of catching the fish to be very destructive and that but little advantage accrues to the inhabitants from it. They asked that the exclusive right to the fisheries within its limits may be given to the town. Their petition was granted.

In 1809 the town sold the right to fish in its several streams at auction, and this continued the custom so long as the privilege was thought worth buying. In 1814 there were four privileges sold,—i. e., at Hale's Mills, at Thomas Duston's Meadow, at Enoch Bradley's mill-pond and a privilege near John Carleton, Jr.'s. The amount paid for all was fifty-four dollars. But the town-people were to be supplied for their own use at twenty-five cents per hundred. In 1815 the privileges sold for \$91.35; but after that the value and bids began to dwindle.

The bodies of fresh water within the limits of Haverhill were originally filled with fish. The largest of them, for instance, once abounded with white and red perch, and pickerel of the largest size were frequently caught there. Of late years, as the population has much increased and extended itself from the centre, the angles have grown more numerous and the fish have correspondingly diminished. But still, numerous boys range the shores in the season with extemporized fishing-rods and enjoy as unalloyed pleasure as their great-grandfathers, who, indeed, were mostly too busy to go fishing for fun. Shoemakers, if not skillful, are eager sportsmen, and the borders of Great Pond still shelter "Chowder" parties. In 1859, indeed, that fine body of water was formally rechristened by the name which, to the aboriginal visitors, indicated the abundance of its finny occupants:

"Lake of the Pickerel! let no more  
The echoes answer back Great Pond."



But, sweet Kenoza, from thy shore,  
And watching birds beyond:

And, Indian ghosts, if such, there be,  
Who ply, unseen, their shadowy lines,  
Call back the dear old name to thee,  
As with the voice of pines.

The paths we trod when careless boys  
With manhood's shodden feet we trace."

It was a happy thought to invite the "barefoot boy," whose dreams of beauty had been so often indulged along its margin, to act as sponsor and impress the moral of the place and hour.

"And, Beauty's priestess, thou shalt teach  
The truth, so dimly understood,  
That He who made thee fair, for each  
And all designeth good."

The four lakes of Haverhill have exercised an incalculable influence for good upon the health and taste of its inhabitants.

As the hand traces this line (December 10, 1887), joyous cries attract the ear, and the eye involuntarily wanders over the adjoining sheet of water, where flying figures prove that the schoolboys have not forgotten how to improve the Saturday holiday by "going up to Plug Pond, skating."

Game-birds abounded in the Haverhill woods when the Puritans took possession. The wild turkey was in great abundance; but in 1672 one wrote: "The English and the Indians having now so destroyed the breed, so that 'tis very rare to meet with a Turkie in the woods." However that may have been, a young soldier in camp, under General Washington, at Cambridge, who afterwards was a famous Haverhill merchant, entered in his diary, under date of January 26, 1776, "We bought a wild Turkey that weight 17½ lbs., and had it for supper."

The earliest historian of Haverhill wrote: "In these woods (of Great Pond) the coy partridge is found, and various other kinds of game, which affords a pleasant amusement and healthy exercise to those who are skilled in gunnery;" and, in later days, to some whom the wisest charity could hardly comprise in that class. There are, in the great cities, some who delight to recall the days when they shot woodcock in the thickets about Plug Pond.

In the East Parish, game has thriven as well as poetry. Indeed, there can scarcely be imagined a region better adapted to be the haunt of the sportsman and the poet alike than that which may be called "Whittier's Country." There are the old homestead and "Country Bridge," and the "Countess' Grave," and many another spot which the reader of the most beautiful of American idyls loves to recognize. From the river to Brandy Brow and the Newton road there are unfrequented woodland paths, groves pathetic with the melancholy sigh of the pine trees; great, lonesome hills; streams, sometimes running clear and smiling in the open forest and again hidden in impenetrable thickets. In the more desolate days of

autumn the leaves "rustle to the eddying gust and to the rabbit's tread."

"And now, when come the calm, mild day, as still such days will come,  
To call the squirrel and the bee from out their winter home,—  
When the sound of dropping nuts is heard, though all the woods are still,  
And twinkle in the smoky light the waters of the rill."

There is a great charm about these scenes (not unfelt, let us hope, even by the keen hunter) over which genius has shed

"The light that never was on sea or shore."

Notwithstanding the multiplication of sportsmen, there are still coverts known to the initiated in the North Parish, as well as the East, where it is possible to bag a respectable number of birds.

Mirick wrote, fifty-five years ago,— "Before the town was settled it was covered with an immense and, in some places, almost impenetrable forest, except the lowlands, or meadows. These were cleared by the Indians, perhaps centuries before the discovery of America, and they were covered with a heavy growth of grass, which grew so exceedingly thick and so very high that it was impossible to discover man or beast at a distance of five rods. They resembled the celebrated prairies of the West in everything, except extent. Every autumn the Indians set the dried grass on fire, so that they might more easily kill the deer which came to feed on it the next spring. On account of the grass, they were prized above all other lands by the first settlers, for there they procured hay for their flocks, and they were divided into small lots and distributed among them. The forest was filled with various kinds of small birds. Innumerable flocks of ducks resorted to the ponds, and the timid loon was seen sailing majestically in their waters. The wild deer reposed in the shady groves or bounded over the hills, followed by the eager hunter. The loud bark of the raccoon was heard, and the wily fox was often seen leaping through the woods. But the worst enemy, of the beast kind, to the infant settlement, was the cruel and voracious wolf. They sometimes roamed the woods in droves, trotting like dogs, and in some of their excursions destroyed large numbers of sheep. At one period they had become so bold and troublesome that a large plot of ground was enclosed near the common and used as a pasture for the sheep. Shepherds were likewise appointed to protect them, and at night they were collected into a close fold or pen. Hardly a day passed in which depredations were not made; and almost every night their dismal howlings broke upon its solitude."

Wolves were very destructive to the swine and cattle, as well as sheep. As early as 1630 the General Court ordered bounties for their destruction. The wolves appear to have been unable or unwilling to leap fences in pursuit of cattle, a trait the settlers soon learned to profit by. Wood, speaking of the "necke of land called Nahant," says, "for the present it is only used to put young cattle in and weather





goats and swine, to secure them from the wolves; a few posts and rayles from the lower water-marks to the shore, keeps out the wolves and keeps in the cattle." The same practice was resorted to in Boston, where the neck was fenced across—"So that a little fencing will secure their cattle from the wolves."

As late as 1717, in February, occurred the greatest fall of snow, lasting from the 20th to the 24th, recorded in the annals of New England. During the snow great numbers of deer came from the woods for food, followed by the wolves, which killed many. Previous to 1662 both the colony and the county had offered large bounties for wolf-heads, but in that year the town of Haverhill offered in addition forty shillings for every wolf killed. In 1685 Amesbury repealed its provision for paying a similar bounty, and the Haverhill people soon after took the same action, apparently being fearful that all the wolves would come into their town to take advantage of the bounty or that they would be obliged to pay for wolves actually killed in Amesbury. (See Whittier's "Leaves from Margaret Smith's Journal.") The selectmen, however, were authorized to pay such sums as they should agree upon in particular cases. Two years after, a regular bounty of fifteen shillings was offered for every full-grown wolf killed within the town's limits, and seven shillings sixpence for each young one. In 1696 the town granted Timothy Eaton, for killing a full-grown she-wolf, on the ox-common, a special bounty of ten shillings, "since he declares it was a bitch-wolf and that she will not bring any more whelps."

Chase says, "Among the records for this year (1695) we find a copy of a receipt from the state (provincial) treasurer for 'eight wolves' heads, at eight shillings sixpence, in full for thirty thousand pounds' assessment.' Something of a discount we think." Afterwards and for many years, the bounty was twenty shillings a wolf, and as late as 1716 five full-grown ones were killed in the town.

The wolves long since ceased to trouble the sheep in Haverhill, but the fox survives in the parishes and refuses to be exterminated, notwithstanding great successes occasionally reported to that end. On one of the last days of the very latest November a triumphant hunter was seen passing the North meeting-house, bearing under his arm a splendid fox, whose noble brush would, in one of the English counties, have been gallantly awarded to some spirited Di Vernon and been considered ample recompense for all the expenditure of fine horses, costly pack of hounds, grooms, huntsmen, whippers-in, and the destruction of crops, which a hard run after Reynard entails.

Professor Gray, in treating of the flora of Boston and its vicinity (and he takes the environs of Boston to include the counties of Norfolk, Middlesex and Essex) declares that long after the ice-age

canoe-birches and beeches; and these, as the climate ameliorated, were replaced by white and red pines, and at length the common pitch-pine came to occupy the lighter soils; and the three or four species of oak, the maples, ashes, with their various arborescent and frutescent associates, came in to complete the ordinary and well-known New England forest of historic times.

"Even without historical evidence, we should infer with confidence that New England before human occupation was wholly forest-clad, excepting a line of salt marshes on certain shores, and the bogs and swamps not yet firm enough to sustain trees.

"The Indian tribes found here by the whites had not perceptibly modified the natural vegetation; and there is no evidence that they had been preceded by any agricultural race. Their inconsiderable plantation of maize, along with some beans and pumpkins,—originally derived from much more Southern climes, but thriving under a sultry summer,—however important to the raisers, could not have sensibly affected the face of the country; although it was said that 'in divers places, there is much ground cleared by the Indians.' But, whatever may have been the amount of their planting, if the aborigines had simply abandoned the country, no mark of their occupation would have long remained, so far as the vegetable kingdom is concerned."

Very little is said by the chroniclers about Indian planting in Haverhill. Doubtless there had been something of the kind. But Indian cultivation was very superficial. The labor was generally performed by the squaws and with very rude and imperfect implements. The warrior disdained labor. Therefore what Mirick has said about the Indians "clearing" the meadows, as quoted upon a former page, must be taken with much allowance, as far as it implies any substantial clearing off of the forest; the Indian was too lazy to do anything of the kind.

Among the trees new to the settlers, Professor Gray mentions the flowering dogwood, the sassafras, the tupelo and the hickory; and, among evergreens, the hemlock-spruce and what the colonists improperly called the cedar—the white pine; among the larger shrubs, the magnolia and rhododendron, the largesumach, the hawthorn, the azaleas, the *epigoni* or Mayflower, blueberries and huckleberries.

"The influx of European weeds was prompt and rapid from the first, and has not ceased to flow; for hardly a year passes in which new-comers are not noticed in some parts of the country."

The earliest intelligent account of the plants of this country were by John Josselyn, published in 1672 and 1674. Josselyn's observations were principally made at Scarborough, Maine, not far east of Haverhill. The next was by Rev. Manasseh Cutler, of Essex County (The Hamlet, Ipswich), published in 1785. Presumably, therefore, substantially all the plants they enumerated were to be found in Haverhill.

Josselyn gave a list of "such plants as have sprung up since the English planted and kept cattle in New England." Among these naturalized plants he names sorrel, spearmint, ground-ivy, tansy. Perhaps it surprises almost everybody to learn that the barberry is not a native of New England, but is an intruder. It grows abundantly in some localities in the East Parish.

The European willows, the white poplar, the Lombardy poplar, the English elm, the horse-chestnut, the ailanthus, the Norway maple and spruce, the

"Our coast must have been at one time clothed with white spruces; then probably with black spruce and arbor vitae; with here and there some





European larch, the lilac and the snowball are all importations and are well naturalized in Haverhill. It has been said that when the white settlers took possession of the town, it was well-wooded. There are no longer extensive forests and most of the wood used is brought from adjoining towns. The oak, it has been said, predominates. There are, also, the walnut, sycamore, elm, locust, hemlock, spruce, ash, white and black birch, willow, alder, wild black cherry, plum, white and pitch pine, and a few white and rock maple.

On the hillsides grew spontaneously (and some of them in abundance) the whortleberry, blueberry, strawberry, raspberry, the vine and bush blackberries.

Somewhat later than 1750, Hugh Talent, a gay and popular Irish fiddler, who hired as a servant with Judge Richard Saltonstall, planted in front of the latter's residence certain sycamore trees, which thrived and were famous for almost a century. May 23, 1748, the judge petitioned the proprietors of common lands in Haverhill for about one-fourth acre of land south of his homestead, "where he had lately planted some Button Trees." The petition was granted, and the trees continued to flourish long after the estate had passed from the Saltonstalls to the Duncans, who still own it. Mirick wrote, in 1832, "The sycamore, or buttonwood, as it is more frequently called, attains to the greatest size. About twenty of them are now standing on the banks of the Merrimac, before the mansion of the widow of Samuel W. Duncan, and, together with the willows which adorn the bank of the river for some distance, make a delightful shade. This appears to be a favorite retreat of the citizens of all classes, and on the pleasant evenings of summer, it is frequently thronged." But at last a disease attacked these sycamores, as many others in different localities of Massachusetts, and the glory of the "Old Buttonwoods" became a matter of tradition and history.

There are a few who still remember the pleasant greetings, the village gossip, and perhaps, even the flirtations, beneath their grateful shade. When, a year or two since, an elderly lady who had been a belle in her youth, revisited Haverhill after an absence of many years, it was observed that her recollections of the village were indistinct, save the beauty of the walk beneath the buttonwoods and the splendor of the sunsets as seen from Golden Hill!

What became of Hugh Talent, who, by his skill and ability as a fiddler and success as a tree-planter, thus made his name a household word in the town, and enhanced its gayety for a hundred years? Judge Richard Saltonstall, his master, died at the old residence in 1756, and was buried in the ancient place of sepulture, reserved by the forefathers. His eldest son, Col. Richard, born in 1732, at the outbreak of the Revolution, adopted the King's side, and died in England, a voluntary exile from his beautiful home and the land of his birth. But who was "Hugh

Talent," who, in 1776 was denounced as a Tory, at Pelham, N. H.? Was not he, perchance, the hero of the fiddle and the Buttonwoods, in his old age, sympathizing with the politics of his young master, whom he taught so long ago to keep time to the twanging of his bow, and who, with the officiousness of a boy, helped him to plant the twenty sycamores before rebellion was dreamed of.

## CHAPTER CL.

### HAVERHILL—(Continued).

#### *Description of Haverhill - its Topography.*

THE beautiful natural situation of Haverhill has been always and universally acknowledged. Its southern boundary, the Merrimac River, though not the largest, is confessed to be the most picturesque stream in New England. It flows through more than one hundred miles of rich and fertile country. It is the most noted water-power stream of the world, on which, with its tributaries, there is probably more power utilized than in any other drainage basin of equal size in America. The head of tide and of navigation for coasting vessels is a few miles above Haverhill, but small river boats can ascend as far as Lawrence. Above that point there is no navigation on the river, although there are long stretches of still water behind the dams supplying water-power; and although the idea of rendering the stream navigable even to Manchester has been broached, the cost of the undertaking has prevented any steps being taken to carry it out. Considerable sums have been expended by the general government in opening a channel, and by private enterprise in attempts to develop a successful steam navigation to Lawrence, but at present they appear to be abandoned.

Seventy-eight thousand six hundred net horse-powers were utilized in 1880 on the Merrimac and its tributaries.

The drainage basin has been deprived of its forests to a considerable extent, and, except in the upper portions, scarcely any part of it can be called thickly wooded.

The average fall of the stream is 2.45 feet per mile. Though this is not a large fall, the greater part of it occurs within short distances at six places, giving rise to its noted and remarkable powers.

The mean annual rainfall over the basin of the Merrimac River, is, according to the Smithsonian charts, about forty-three inches of which ten fall in spring, eleven in summer, thirteen in autumn and nine in winter. This distribution is evidently very favorable for a constant flow.

As regards accessibility, it is sufficient to refer to the



map, which shows that the stream is followed closely by the railway through its entire length. No river can be more favorably situated in this respect.

"From the mouth of the river to Haverhill Bridge, a distance of seventeen miles and a half, there is a navigable depth of twelve feet at ordinary high-water. Thence to the head of Mitchell's Falls, a distance of four miles, is a depth of four and a half feet, in ordinary stages of the river with the mill water at Lawrence running. Above the Falls the effect of the tide is not noticeable. Mitchell's Falls are of no value for water-power, the fall varying with the tide, and only amounting to six or eight feet." So says a writer upon the water-powers of the United States, in volume sixteen of the census of 1880.

The earliest mention of the Merrimac was by Sieur De Monts, who wrote from the banks of the St. Lawrence, in 1604: "The Indians tell us of a beautiful river far to the south, which they call the Merrimack." Its abundant fisheries and fertile planting-grounds were exceedingly attractive to them at the appropriate season of the year. The falls of the river were their special places of resort. The Northern Indians called it Merrimack, said to mean a strong place—a place of strong currents. The Massachusetts Indians called it Monomack, a place of islands, or, according to others, the place of sturgeon—from the abundance of fish. Champlain discovered the river June 16, 1605.

On the opposite side of the river from Haverhill are Bradford, Groveland and West Newbury, whose green hills and thriving and attractive villages are objects always delightful and refreshing to the eye. On the east Haverhill is bounded by Merrimac, on the north by Salem, Atkinson and Plaistow, N. H., and on the west by Methuen. Merrimac, previously known as West Amesbury, was incorporated in 1876; Amesbury, called by the first settlers Salisbury Newtown, was incorporated in 1668; and Salisbury, first known as Colchester, was originally settled about 1633, and incorporated in 1640. Salisbury began two years before Haverhill, was for nearly thirty years its eastern boundary, extending along the river to the sea. As we have seen, Amesbury was first carved from it, and, after an interval of more than two hundred years, Merrimac from Amesbury. In the "abstract of the census of 1860," prepared in the office of the Secretary of State by George Wingate Chase, the historian of Haverhill, which is annually published in the Manual of the General Court, there appear half a dozen towns, the precise date of whose incorporation is not given. Haverhill is one of them; Bradford is another. The date of the incorporation is given thus: "—— 1645." In the early colonial days the act of incorporation was not so formal a thing as at the present day, and frequently consisted merely in some official recognition of the new plantation, as the attendance of a deputy, the appointment of a constable, the reception of a peti-

tion. Thenceforward it was usually received into the general scheme of government, as a matter of course.

The northern line of the town of Haverhill is also the boundary between the States of Massachusetts and New Hampshire. The Indian deed, executed in 1642, granted to its inhabitants a tract of land extending eight miles from Little River to the west, six miles to the north and six miles to the east from the same. When the General Court established its boundaries, twenty-five years after, the town assumed nearly the form of a triangle, each angle of which was about fifteen miles in length. The extreme northern point, or "North-westerly angle of Haverhill," was once familiarly known as "Haverhill Peke." This was a very large township. It included a large part of the territory of the present municipalities of Methuen and Lawrence, in Massachusetts, and Salem, Atkinson, Plaistow and Hampstead, N. H. But the town bounds have not been altered since 1741, when the State line was run.

Thus clipped in extent, Haverhill still is about nine miles in length, upon the river, and three in breadth, from the river northwardly. Its latitude is  $42^{\circ} 47'$  north; its longitude is  $71^{\circ} 4'$  west from Greenwich. Its maximum altitude is about three hundred and twenty-five feet. The distance to Boston is thirty miles, or by rail thirty-three; to Portland, seventy-two and seven-tenths miles, or by rail eighty-three. The Boston and Maine Railroad passes through it, of which there is a branch connecting it with Georgetown, Newburyport, Salem and the whole eastern division of that system. It is connected with both Bradford and Groveland by bridges. The river has a width of six hundred feet, and a depth of eight feet in the channel at high water. Water communication is open to coasting vessels of two hundred tons, which ply to Maine for pine and lumber, to Rockport for granite and to Philadelphia for coal. Vessels are towed by steam-power up from Newburyport, at the mouth of the river. Small pleasure steamers ply between the city, Newburyport and the adjacent beaches. Small steamers of light draught have ascended the river to Lawrence. Says a writer in the last "United States Census Reports" (not always consistent and perhaps sometimes fallible): "The rapids above the city extend up about a mile and have a fall of nine (9) feet in this distance. They are in two sections."

There are fifteen thousand two hundred acres in Haverhill, eleven hundred and seven of which are covered with water. The remarkable statement has been made that the amount of unimprovable land is only thirteen acres. Perhaps there is none; but there is certainly a good deal more which is not improved. What that writer subsequently adds is doubtless correct: "But few towns can show so small a number of acres of unimprovable land or land of decidedly inferior quality." Much land is under a high state of cultivation. The soil consists of a light loam, gravel







SALTONSTALL HOUSE. LAKF SALTONSTALL.

RESIDENCE OF WM G HOWE

HAVERHILL, MASS.



and clay, with granite and common rock in considerable abundance. Clay is very abundant, is found a few feet below the surface, and, owing to its retention of moisture, renders the soil damp and heavy; with drainage and cultivation the soil is made productive, especially for potatoes and other vegetables. The city proper slopes abruptly towards the river, and the natural drainage is good. The balance of the territory is undulating, with several hills rising here and there, but not connected.

The highest recorded summer temperature is 100°; highest summer temperature in average years, 95°; the lowest recorded winter temperature 20°; lowest winter temperature in average years, 10°. Fogs roll up the river during the spring and fall, causing dampness and some sickness, but no malaria. The marshes are not large enough to have any perceptible effect on the climate, while the elevated lands are considered healthful. The east winds from the ocean are frequently cold and damp, while the west winds are dry and genial.

There are four bodies of water, which have been already referred to in another connection. They were once called ponds, but have been rechristened as lakes, with more or less success. Ayer's Pond, so-called, because in the beginning several persons of that name settled near its western extremity, and, till recently, owned and cultivated a great deal of land adjoining, is the smallest, covering an area of forty-one acres. It is situated about half a mile from the Merrimac, nearly north from that portion of the village originally settled. Portions of its bottom, especially at its western extremity, were formerly covered with mud, but its sources of supply are springs bubbling up through the sand. Its appearance has been much improved by the Aqueduct Company, which now has the control of all the ponds as the water supply of the city. At its southern point a dam or "plug" has long existed, to which its surplus water was formerly drawn to supply the mills on the brook connecting it with the Merrimac. Hence the name of "Plug" Pond, which, superseding the original, is perhaps that by which it is still best known. It will, however, be eventually recognized as Lake Saltonstall, in memory of a family formerly and for a long time the most distinguished in Haverhill, where the name is no longer borne, although there are a number of descendants in the female line. After the "Buttonwoods" passed out of the possession of the family, Dr. Nathaniel Saltonstall built, and, in 1789, finished his new house upon Merrimac (then Water) Street, west of Main. There were then but few houses in that part of Water Street, and the view was open to the river upon the south. There Dr. Saltonstall died in 1815. Subsequently to the death of his daughter, Mrs. Isaac R. Howe, her son, William G. Howe, removed the family residence to the beautiful northern slope of Plug Pond, where it awaits the near approach of its centennial, which

happens to be that of the inauguration of the constitutional government of the United States and the locally famous visit of President Washington to Haverhill. On the east of Lake Saltonstall, upon the elevated land overlooking it, is Birchbrow, the picturesque residence of Mr. Thomas Sanders, whose family also represent the first minister, John Ward, and Nathaniel Saltonstall, the best known citizen among the first settlers. In the vicinity of Lake Saltonstall is "The Highlands," a district only opened recently for the better class of residences, but now being rapidly occupied for that purpose. Evidently the day is close at hand when all that lovely lake region will be filled with handsome villas, and will be the haunt of sight-seers who will wonder why its unsurpassed beauties were not earlier appreciated.

Pass over the steep hill which separates Lake Saltonstall from its sister lake, and you emerge upon the high table-land where opens a superb view of Kenoza, once "The Great Pond," and rechristened under very happy auspices some thirty years since, as has been already told. On the heights stands "Mimkeni Towers," a magnificent situation, whose advantages were discovered and developed by Dr. James R. Nichols, of Haverhill, now owned and occupied by the family of Mr. William G. Webb.

Lake Kenoza is the largest of the four lakes of Haverhill, having an area of two hundred and thirty-four acres. South of this noble sheet of water was laid out the great ox-common before 1650.

From Mimkeni Towers we look down also upon Lake Pentucket, once "Round Pond" or "Belknap's Pond." This is a remarkably beautiful body of water, singularly pure and limpid. It has an area of thirty-eight acres.

Saltonstall, Kenoza and Pentucket are within half a mile of each other. Kenoza is a mile and a half from Haverhill Bridge, in a northeasterly direction. Pentucket is about one mile northerly from the bridge. The water in these lakes is about one hundred and fifty feet above the bed of the Merrimac. The natural outlet of Round Pond lies towards the southwest, through which, by the way of the Merrimac and Little Rivers, salmon and other fish passed up, according to their season, to deposit spawn. The direction of this outlet of water was long ago artificially changed towards Plug Pond to secure the surplus water for the mills upon Mill Brook. Since the Aqueduct Company acquired the ancient mill privileges upon Mill Brook the later outlet has also been discontinued.

The only outlet from Lake Kenoza is Fishing River, which flows northerly from its northwestern extremity, and up which the alewives used to crowd in spawning time. It has latterly been utilized to increase the supply of water for manufacturing purposes upon the mills below by drawing off water from the lake in the dry season. This privilege was granted to Mr. Ezekiel Hale, Jr., in 1835, who erected a flume at the outlet of the lake and deepened the bed of the stream.





Once, and for many years, there was a corn-mill upon this stream, about half a mile from its mouth. The first mill was built by William Starlin, probably about 1684. He sold it to Thomas Duston in 1697, from whom it descended to his son Timothy.

Creek Pond is in the West Parish, about three miles northwesterly from the bridge, and has an area of one hundred and seventy-five acres. Some beautiful groves adorn its borders, and there are excellent farms in its vicinity. It was once well-stocked with fish, and a favorite resort of sportsmen. Its outlet, Creek Brook, runs due south to the Merrimac, and was long noted for its alewives. It was originally known as Merrie's Creek, probably from Joseph Merrie, who was in the town as early as 1645. Creek Pond begins to be known as Crystal Lake in modern transformation, a name of which it is not unworthy, as its waters are remarkably transparent, and the bottom even and sandy. On Creek Brook, or Merrie's Creek, there were long two mills, one at the outlet of the pond which was first a grist-mill, and later a hat-factory, the other a grist-mill near the Merrimac, and long known as "Bradley's Mill."

These four ponds, so long valuable for their supply of fish-food and water-power, are invaluable to the modern city as furnishing an almost unrivaled supply of pure and abundant water, which is, as yet, controlled by a private corporation.

Fishing River, flowing northerly into Plaistow, gradually bends to the southwest and empties itself into Little River, so-called by the Indians and early settlers to distinguish it from the Merrimac or "Great River." Little River rises in Plaistow and Kingston, N. H., enters Haverhill a little east of the Atkinson line, and flows southeasterly to the Merrimac, entering it at Washington Square, one-fourth of a mile west from Haverhill Bridge. Near the State line there has been, for a hundred and fifty years, a grist-mill on this stream, long known as "Clark's Mill." A fourth of a mile from its mouth, at Winter Street, there was for two hundred years a saw-mill, whence the stream was generally called "Sawmill River." Nearer its mouth was long a grist-mill. The saw and grist mills ceased operations years since, but at the bridge, which at the extremity of Winter Street crosses the stream, Ezekiel Hale established a "cotton yarn manufactory" at the beginning of the present century. Later flannels were manufactured there, and the same manufacture is still carried on upon the locality by M. T. Stevens & Sons.

East Meadow River rises in Newton, N. H., enters Haverhill about three-fourths of a mile east of Brandy Brow Hill, and, passing through beautiful and sequestered woods and thickets, makes its way nearly south to the Merrimac, emptying into it at "Cottle's Creek." As early as 1693, Joseph Peasly built a mill on this stream, near the Amesbury line, and a saw and grist-mill have been maintained there almost constantly since by his descendants. In 1757, An-

thony Chase built a saw-mill about half a mile from the mouth of the stream, and a few years after a grist-mill and fulling-mill. These were in operation for many years. John Chase, son of Anthony, built and carried on for a long time a fulling-mill, about one mile above his father's mills. About 1790, or a little later, Thomas Johnson built a grist-mill about one-fourth of a mile from the Merrimac, known as "Johnson's Mill."

There are no chains of hills in this town, the eminences being generally detached. Nobody ever thought of calling any of them mountains, though some are prominent and pretty steep. There are Johnson's Highlands, Golden Hill, Silver Hill, Turkey Hill, Job's Hill, Brandy Brow Hill and the Great Hill. Golden Hill is said to have once been called Golding's Hill, from a person of that name who owned or lived near it. Its base is about twenty rods from the Merrimac and it rises three hundred and twenty-five feet above the river, about a mile east of Haverhill Bridge. The prospect of the island in the river, long called Clement's, of Groveland, Bradford and the city itself is certainly a picture of great beauty and animation.

Counterpart of Golden Hill is Silver Hill, also called from a former owner, about three-fourths of a mile west of Haverhill Bridge, three hundred feet above the Merrimac, which flows by its southern base. The lower portion has become known as Mount Washington, over which residences are rapidly extending. For ten years the city has been steadily growing in that direction. From the summit of Silver Hill are seen the valleys of Little River and the Great River, the picturesque town of Andover, Lawrence and Methuen,—prosperous children of Haverhill,—the North and West Parishes, scenes of the early Indian warfare, with the distant mountains. If precedent is needed for admiration of these views, it is historically asserted to have been set by the beloved father of his country, who gazed

"On the Hills of Gold and Silver,  
Running round the little town,

with undisguised admiration.

Turkey Hill, north of the East Parish meeting-house, is an irregular group, rather, of hills, from which the river valley is seen to great advantage with the East Meadows, of which so much is read in the town records. Job's Hill is at the north, overlooking the birth-place of the venerable poet, Whittier. These hills, it is imagined, are little visited. They are rugged and solitary, within a short distance of a very busy and thriving community.

Various conjectures, all of them rather unsatisfactory, assume, in the books, to account for the somewhat startling name of Brandy Brow Hill. It is the most northerly point of the town. Its vicinity was long famed for its excellent and abundant pine timber. At the top of Brandy Brow is a great rock,





marking the corners of four towns,—Plaistow, Amesbury, Newton and Haverhill.

Perhaps the most ambitious passage in Chase's "History of Haverhill" is that in which he describes the view from Great Hill, one mile north of Lake Kenoza, the highest eminence in town and the second highest in Essex County. He says: "Portions of more than twenty towns in Massachusetts and nearly or quite as many in New Hampshire are easily distinguished by the naked eye. To the east stretches the broad Atlantic, whose deep blue waters, dotted with the white wings of commerce, are plainly seen from the Great Boar's Head to Cape Ann. Near its edge and partially hidden from our sight by Pipe-Stage Hill in Newbury, are seen the spires and many of the houses of the city of Newburyport. To the right the eye can distinctly trace the outline of Cape Ann, from Castle Neck to Halibut Point. With the aid of a glass several villages upon the Cape are made visible. As we sweep around from east to south, nearly all the most prominent hills in Essex North can be distinctly seen and easily identified. To the south and southwest, portions of the villages of Groveland, Bradford, Haverhill, North Andover, Andover and Methuen and the city of Lawrence can be seen peeping above the intervening hills. To the southwest, the Wachusett; to the west, the Monadnock; and to the north, the Deertfield Mountains are easily distinguished. To the northwest, the village of Atkinson, with its celebrated academy, is spread out in bold relief. To the northeast is seen the top of Powow Hill in Salisbury,—so named from its having been selected by the Indians for their great 'powows,' long before the white man gazed upon the waters of the Merrimack from its summit. Turning again to the south, we notice, almost at our feet, the beautiful Lake Kenoza, glistening in the sun like a diamond encompassed by emeralds. Once viewed, the memory of this lovely landscape will never be effaced.

"The faithful sight  
Engraves the image with a beam of light." "

## CHAPTER CLI.

### HAVERHILL—(Continued).

*Settlement of Haverhill—Indian Deed—First Settlers.*

IN three months, in 1638, no less than three thousand settlers arrived in Massachusetts. This great press of new-comers, who naturally repaired, in the first instance, to the places where their friends, previously landed, had established themselves, caused considerable inconvenience. They could not well be accommodated. Besides, it no doubt seemed as if half England were coming over. The Anglo-Saxon greed

for good land was roused; there was but little available for immediate cultivation. Most of the good land was heavily timbered, and it would be the work of many years to clear it. Without land and without the successful cultivation of lands there could be no products to form the basis of trade and commerce. The years 1639, 1640 and those immediately succeeding, witnessed something like a land speculation in the new colony. After those years, the civil war in England and the brighter prospects it opened to the Puritans checked immigration to New England, and many even returned to their old homes. But it is estimated that in 1640 there were already in New England over twenty thousand persons, or four thousand families. In Ipswich and Newbury, in 1639, there were large numbers of immigrants from Ipswich, Newbury, Lynn, Haverhill and the vicinity of those towns in the easterly part of England. All these people were eagerly looking out for good places to settle in.

We who revere the character of our ancestors, the settlers of New England, when we think, talk and write of them, are in danger always of passing into extremes. We are indignant with those who seize upon the instances of their bigotry, intolerance and cruelty, wilfully or ignorantly to accuse them of inconsistency and hypocrisy. On the other hand, we are apt to err when, in moments of exaltation, we extol them as always and altogether saintly and heroic.

The enterprises which they undertook, and the courage and consistency with which they conducted them, were indeed wholly admirable. The story of the Pilgrims of Plymouth will never cease to be blazoned. The firmness and cool calculation with which Winthrop and his associates covenanted together, with their persons, families and properties, "to pass the seas," marks the voyage of that company as a great event in history. Not in either case simply because it required vigor and manliness and valor to leave home and dear old England, sail over stormy seas and explore the wilderness. The old Greeks had done that; the Vikings had done that; their own ancestors, the Danes and Saxons, had done that. They perhaps did not know the story of Lief Erickson, the Northman, but they had read or heard all about the voyages of Columbus, and the Cabots and John Smith. They were not the first to sail or to explore in America or in New England. The peculiarity of their undertaking was, that they set out not as voyagers, adventurers or traders, but, as Dudley, Winthrop and the rest expressed themselves in the famous agreement at Cambridge, England, August 26, 1629,—*"to inhabit and continue in New England."* They sold everything in the mother country, converted their property, tore up their domestic ties by the roots, and went to Massachusetts to stay. They did not seek to make fortunes and return to Europe to enjoy them, but they went with the determination to attack the wilderness, to overcome it, to plant new settlements



where they hoped in time to obtain something of the comfort and the order of the old. What else did they go for? Many of the Massachusetts settlers were already men of property and substance; many of them had homes and families which were dear to them. They must abandon the first and put in peril and subject to hardship the last. What they hoped, then, finally to gain for themselves, their families and posterity by the great removal, was a shelter and a hiding-place for civil and religious liberty, both then in danger of being destroyed at home. As Winthrop wrote: "The Church hath noe place lefte to flie unto but the wilderness." And the farewell letter from the "Arbella" of April 7, 1630, asks the prayers of the "Reverend Fathers and Brethren" left behind, and promises to return them from "our poor cottages in the wilderness, overshadowed with the spirit of supplication, through the manifold necessities and tribulations which may not altogether unexpectedly, nor, we hope, unprofitably, befall us." These expressions show the character of the enterprise. They were laboring under no illusions; let us not fall into any. They were not idealists; they did not sail away into Utopia; they left the persecutors; they did not ask the persecutors to go with them. They sought to save themselves; they did not undertake to save the world. They meant to establish a government, if the King of England would leave them in peace, in which they and those who thought with them could enjoy the liberty of soul and body which they considered ought to be inherent to an Englishman. They and those who thought with them—not those who differed from them. And if the result of their labors has been the establishment of a happy asylum for people of all sorts of belief, it is a result unexpected and undesired by them, though the natural outcome of their own independence and self-sacrifice.

They took care to say in this farewell letter parenthetically, "We are not of those that dream of perfection in this world," and, it may be supposed that if they had anticipated the criticisms of posterity, some of them might have warned us not to expect in their conduct the perfection of consistency. Others of them would plainly have denounced toleration as "Carrion." Just as the stern Gov. Thomas Dudley wrote Sir Richard Saltonstall, "God forbid our love for the truth should be grown so could that we could tolerate errors." In common fairness, we must take the Puritans according to their own expressed limitations. And when we once understand that they came hither only to establish a home for themselves and such as were in accord with them, we are in a position to judge their doings intelligently.

The next thing to appreciate about the early settlers of this region is that they were men of common sense. They believed in prayer, morning and evening and at all times, but not as a substitute for intelligent human effort. They trusted in God and

kept their powder dry. They did not expect to find it in good condition when the Indians attacked them, if they did not preserve it from dampness by due personal care. They did the best they could themselves in the first place, and then asked God's blessing upon their labors. They meant to succeed in the great enterprise which had brought them to America. The only way in which they dreamed of success was by every man doing the best he could for himself and so for all. They had no notions of a common stock, and no intention that the industrious should support the idle in idleness. Justice would be the wisest charity. To nourish infant communities and to support a struggling common-wealth, each person must put forth his abilities and be taxed, and also protected according to the result. The improvident must suffer the consequences; hence, very few instances will be found in our early history of any community of labor, save in isolated cases, for a very short time or for objects of public concern. The lands were divided in severalty and each man went to work to improve his own.

Land being the great object of desire and means of profit, the shrewd men made the most of their opportunities of acquiring it. They *prospected* the wilderness, they sought out desirable tracts towards which they directed immigration. Simon Bradstreet, for instance, was (to use a modern English phrase) a great promotor. He lived at Ipswich, at Andover and at Salem. He helped lay out the town of Salisbury. And he received grants of land in the former places which became valuable. Doubtless his services were useful, too, from his intelligence, experience and influence.

The Puritan ministers were very influential and especially at the beginning. They were potential, not only in spiritual but in temporal matters. In return, the people provided for their earthly needs, fairly if not generously, according to their ability. But there were sometimes unseemly squabbles on the subject of the minister's compensation. Tithes could not be thought of as a mode of providing it, for that was the method of the Church of England, from which they had come out. It is rather remarkable, indeed, that they should have reserved parsonage or glebe lands, after the English custom, as they did in most of the new settlements. They certainly did not leave the clergy to contributions, nominally voluntary, but morally compulsory. There was always a stated compensation, a formal contract. The pastor was a "settled" minister.

The clergyman from his stand-point recognized the necessity of looking out for himself. He was not a celibate; he had a family usually and a home. He had children. The State did not provide for their education and he must do it himself. He meant there should be schools and a college, and that learning should not die out in New England. To secure these things, he must be independent.

The Puritan clergyman in New England generally





became a farmer by compulsion, and cultivated his glebe land himself. Sometimes he was shrewd enough to *prospect*, also, and obtained valuable tracts of land by grant. Some of the early ministers of Essex County laid the foundation for considerable wealth in this way.

In 1634, Nathaniel Ward, the projector of Haverhill, was at Ipswich, as pastor of the church there. In 1639 his son, John Ward, followed him across the sea, probably bringing his wife with him.

Giles Firmin, Jr., would appear to have come to Massachusetts in Winthrop's company, as his name appears in the list of the members of the First Church in Boston, appended to the covenant of 1630, Aug. 27, 1630. One writer, however, says he came in 1632. His father was "a godly man, an apothecary of Sudbury in England," wrote Winthrop. The younger Firmin had studied at the University of Cambridge, and was learned in medicine. He first taught medicine and surgery in New England. Afterwards he removed to Ipswich, where he was a successful physician, and married a daughter of Nathaniel Ward.

December 22, 1639, Nathaniel Ward wrote to Governor Winthrop: "One more request, that you wd not pass yr. promise nor give any encouragement concerning any plantation att Quichichack or Pentucket till myself and some others either speak or write to you about it, which shall be done so soon as our counsels and contrivalls are ripened."

Four days after, Dr. Firmin wrote Governor Winthrop, who was at this time in pecuniary embarrassment, resulting from the fraud of his bailiff, to which Firmin alludes in the beginning of his letter by way of introduction and then proceeds to the main business of it. He had doubtless known Governor Winthrop well during his residence in Boston.

"My father-in-law Ward, since his son came over, is very desirous that we might sett down together, and so that he might leave us together if God should remove him from hence. Because that can't be accomplished in this town, is very desirous to get mee to remove with him to a new plantation. After much persuasion used, considering my want of accommodation here (the ground the town having given mee lying 5 miles from mee of no use) and that the paths of physick will not find me in town, but beeth apprehending that it might bee a way to free him from some temptations, and make him more cheerful and more serviceable to the country or church, have yielded to him. Herein as I desired your counsel, so do I humbly request your favor, that you would be pleased to give us the liberty of choosing a plantation; we think it will beat Pentucket or Quichichack by Shawshin (And-over); so soon as the season will give us leave to goe, wee shall inform your worship which we desire; and if that by the court of election wee cannot gather a company to begin it, wee will let it fall. We desire you will not grant any of them to any before wee have seene them. If your worship hath heard any relation of the places, wee should remaine thankful to you if you would be pleased to counsel us to any of them."

Firmin proceeds to ask the Governor's advice upon the following state of things:

"The towne (Ipswich) gave mee the ground (100 acres) upon this condition that I should stay in the towne 3 years or else I could not sell it. . .

"I would entreat your counsel whither or no I can sell it. Further I am strongly set upon to study divinite. My studies else must be lost: for physick is but a meane helpe. . .

"GILES FIRMIN,

Ipswich, 26, 10th, 1639.

"Wee humbly entreat your secrecy in our desires."

Winthrop probably advised Firmin that the town of Ipswich could revoke the grant if he did not comply with the condition on which it was made, which probably was the consideration that he should practice his profession as a physician for three years there. Or the practice itself may have become more lucrative. At all events, the Doctor, who was then twenty-five years old, was made a freeman in that year, remained in Ipswich fifteen years and was an elder of the church there. In 1654, he returned to England. He fulfilled his intention of studying theology, was ordained in England and became rector of a church there, continuing, nevertheless, to practice his early profession, and dying at the ripe age of eighty-three years, and thus Pentucket lost the opportunity of welcoming an able doctor to its forest glades. "Few Books" it is said "have been oftener printed or more read than Firmin's 'Real Christian.'" Firmin also wrote to the Governor: "Some of us will view Pentucket in the spring, because every one that hath seen it give it such commendation for a small town; the way also thither being passable for a great pinnace; only my fear is that Passatonaway living there sometimes, he will hardly be bought out for a little."

Firmin further writes that Ward hath been offered the place at Marblehead: "Divers inducements he hath to return to England but his wife is wholly against it, and he is willing, if he might but have any employment, to stay still." From a letter written by Nathaniel Ward to Governor Winthrop, it would appear that he, himself, had at the time some idea of joining the "plantation" himself (doubtless Pentucket), but was deterred by the season and the anticipation of hardship. This was probably in the season of 1640-41, after the first pioneers had taken possession.

Ward pressed very vigorously the object he had so much at heart. He had written again earnestly to the Governor,—"We are led to continue our suite concerning the plantation I have lately mentioned to you; (our company increases apace from divers towns of very desirable men) whereof we desire to be very choice. This next week, if God hinder us not, we propose to view the places, and forthwith to report to you; in the mean time we crave your secrecy and rest. We have already more than twenty families of very good Christians proposed to goe with us." And why not? Why should not good Christians have good lands? Did not God's chosen people enter into the Promised Land?

Mr. Ward and his son-in-law, Dr. Firmin, however, went to work about this business much as this world's people would have done. They certainly plied the Governor industriously and with art. Something, however, of consideration was due to Nathaniel Ward at this time, for he was probably then preparing the famous "Body of Liberties," which, having been revised and altered by the General Court, and sent



into all the towns for consideration, was again revised and amended by the Court, and finally adopted in 1641. It was a great service to Massachusetts, which need not grudge Ward the six hundred acres granted him by the General Court in 1643. It was to be laid out as near to Pentucket (Haverhill) "as conveniently may be." It is said, however, that it was allotted to him in Andover, and that he transferred it to Harvard College in payment of a debt. Though so sharp about the Pentucket plantation, he seems to have been improvident or unfortunate. And so the projector himself disappears from the annals of Pentucket.

At the session of the General Court held at Boston on the 13th of the succeeding May (May 13, 1640), a petition was received from Mr. Ward and Newbury men, for permission to begin a new plantation on the Merrimac, which petition was committed to the governor (Dudley), deputy-governor (Bellingham) and Mr. Winthrop, Sen., "to consider of Pentucket and Coijchawick, and to grant it them, provided they return answer within three weeks from the 21st present, and that they build there before the next court." The petition itself is probably lost. Mr. Ward and his associates selected Pentucket, and probably went to work at once, as at the next session of the court (October 7th of the same year), a committee was appointed to view the bounds between Colchester (Salisbury) and Mr. Ward's plantation."

Mr. Felt, in his history of Ipswich, under the date of 1640, says: "Mr. (Nath'l) Ward, with some men of Newbury, is conditionally allowed to form a settlement at Haverhill or at Andover. This privilege was improved, and the former plantation was chosen before October. His chief object in obtaining such a grant was to prepare a residence for his son, who became an estimable minister there."

Under the date of 1641 Mr. Felt writes, "Rev. John Ward, Mr. John Favor and Hugh Sherratt went from Ipswich to Haverhill;" and Allen, in his biographical dictionary, like Mather in the *Magnalia*, states that he was settled at Haverhill in that year.

In reference to these transactions, some writers have confounded Nathaniel Ward and John Ward together. But there can be no reasonable doubt that Nathaniel Ward conducted the negotiations and was the original projector of the settlement at Haverhill. He certainly never lived there himself, though he may have visited the place before his return to England in 1646.

The first mention of Mr. John Ward in the town records of Haverhill, is a note at the bottom of the page, under the year 1643, stating that on the 29th September, 1642, he had "sixteen acres of land laid out to him for a home-lot, with all the accommodations thereunto belonging."

The "Good Christians" who came to Pentucket in 1640, and began in the early summer of that year the plantation, soon and ever since known as Haver-

hill, were from Newbury and Ipswich, and were twelve in number. Their names were: William White, Samuel Gile, James Davis, Henry Palmer, John Robinson, Christopher Hussey, John Williams, Richard Littlehale, Abraham Tyler, Daniel Ladd, Joseph Merrie, Job Clément. The last four were from Ipswich.

The first houses were erected near the spot where afterwards was the meeting-house, and the old burying-ground, now called Pentucket Cemetery. At the session of the General Court, in June, 1641, a committee was appointed to set out the bounds of Salisbury and Pentucket, *alias* Haverhill; they are to determine the bounds which Mr. Ward and his company are to enjoy as a town or village, if they have six houses up by the next General Court, in the eighth month" (October).

This does not necessarily imply that more than six houses may not have been already, in fact, built, but that six should be the minimum number which the committee would be authorized to regard as a substantial compliance with the general intention of the Court. Other settlers undoubtedly joined the pioneers in the season of 1641.

The first recorded birth was that of John, son of John Robinson, in 1641, who lived but three weeks. The second was a son of the same, in 1642, who lived but one week. John Robinson was a blacksmith, who removed to Exeter in 1657.

The third child born was Deborah, daughter of Tristram Coffin, in 1642, who lived six weeks. The winter of 1641-42 was unusually severe. Boston Harbor was frozen over, so that it was passable for horses, carts and oxen for six weeks. Doubtless the hardships of the beginning were uncongenial to human life, but the statistics soon began to improve. For the first twenty years, or from 1641 to 1661, inclusive, there were one hundred and fifty-eight births and thirty-three deaths, giving a net increase from that cause, in that period, of one hundred and twenty-five.

Giles Firmin had written to Governor Winthrop doubtless in 1639, that he feared that Passaconaway, living at Pentucket sometimes, "will hardly be bought-out for a little." This was Passaconaway, chief of the Pennacooks, titular sovereign or overlord of the Pentucketts, the Indian tribe who had their home in the region which is now Haverhill. The seat of the Pennacooks was at Concord, N. H. They were the most powerful tribe in the valley of the Merrimack, and Passaconaway was their "Great Sachem." He was accounted a mighty powow, or sorcerer. Fortunately he was friendly to the English, and lived to a great age. Gookin saw him at Pawtucket (Lowell) "when he was about one hundred and twenty years old." He died about 1665, and was succeeded by his son Waunalancet, who abdicated his sovereignty and retired to Canada about 1677. The remnant of the tribe then elected Kaucamaugus, a grandson of Passa-





connaway, who was disaffected to the English, and did them much mischief between 1676 and 1691.

Passaconaway's residence at Pentucket probably consisted in occasional visits to the falls in the fishing season, to receive the tribute and homage which the tribes of the Lower Merrimack were in the habit of paying him.

The Pentucketts had once been quite a numerous tribe. Their principal village is supposed to have been on the banks of Little River, not far from its mouth. This was a situation well suited to their tastes and habits, and especially convenient for water-transportation, of which they were so fond. Their burial-ground was where Grand Army Hall now stands, on the north side of Merrimack, near Emerson Street. Here, once, a number of Indian skeletons were unearthed when a cellar was being excavated, and in that vicinity Indian arrow-heads, mortars and other relics were formerly frequently found. When Mr. Ward's company came to Haverhill in 1640 scarcely any of the Pentucketts remained. They had probably been largely swept away in the great pestilence which, about 1613, desolated their tribes, from the Kennebec to Narragansett. The patriarch, White, of Dorsetshire, England, in the "Planter's Flea," published in 1630, says: "The land affords void ground for more people than England can spare, on account of a desolation from a three years' plague, twelve or sixteen years past, which swept away most of the inhabitants along the sea-coast, and in some places utterly consumed man, woman and child, so that there is no person left to lay claim to the soyl which they possessed."

The records of Haverhill contain few allusions to the Indians, and those very scanty. Some mention of a "wigwam" is made in 1650, 1660 and 1685 in the west part of the town. In 1664 allusion was made to an "Indian Wire," in Fishing River, and the "Indian Bridge" over Spicket River. "Old Wills Planting-Ground" is referred to in the records of the General Court for 1662. This is considered to have been on the east side of the Spicket River, within the original bounds of Haverhill.

Mr. Firmin's letter shows that the projectors expected to purchase the Indian title to Pentucket, but the first settlers probably found so few aborigines in the neighborhood upon their arrival, that they scarcely thought it worth while to interrupt their busy labors to negotiate with them or rather, perhaps, to hunt them up for that purpose. But a circumstance occurred which had the effect to awaken their apprehensions, or stir their scruples.

In September, 1642, the Governor received intelligence from Connecticut, "that the Indians all over the country had combined themselves to cut off the English." This was to be done by surprise, in small parties, soon after the harvest had been gathered in. The Governor and Council thinking it advisable immediately to disarm all the Indians within their juris-

diction, a warrant was sent to Ipswich, Rowley and Newbury, "to disarm Passaconaway, who lived by Merrimack." Forty armed men set out to execute it, in a heavy rain and on the Sabbath. They did not get the chief, but they took his son, with his squaw and child, and undertook to conduct them prisoners to the settlements. He, however, escaped and fled to the woods. Either for this reason or on account of certain miscarriages in the conduct of the affair, or most probably, perhaps, because the expedition had failed of its principal object, the Governor and Council sent a friendly messenger to bear their apologies to Passaconaway for the arrest of his dependants and to explain the reason for their order of disarmament. The chieftain condescended to be pacified. The squaw and her child (by some writers said to be a wife and son of Passaconaway himself) were sent back. "Accordingly about a fortnight after," says Winthrop, "he sent his eldest son to us, who delivered up his guns."

No massacre occurred though the plot had doubtless existed. And it is significant that on the 15th of the following November (1642) the Indian title to Pentucket was apparently extinguished. At all events, there is no trace in the records and no tradition of any subsequent Indian claimants.

On that day, Passaquo and Saggahew, with the consent of Passaconaway, sold to the inhabitants of Pentucket, in consideration of three pounds and ten shillings, all the lands they had there: "that is eight myles in length from y<sup>e</sup> Little Rivver in Pentucket Westward: six myles in length from y<sup>e</sup> aforesaid Rivver northward: and six myles in length from y<sup>e</sup> aforesaid Rivver Eastward, with y<sup>e</sup> Ileand and y<sup>e</sup> river that y<sup>e</sup> ileand stand in as far in length as y<sup>e</sup> land lyes by as formerly expressed: that is, fourteen myles in length," and "all y<sup>e</sup> right that we or any of us have in y<sup>e</sup> said ground and Ileand and Rivver: and we warrant it against all or any other Indians whatsoever unto y<sup>e</sup> said inhabitants of Pentucket, and to their heirs and assigns forever."

Passaquo and Saggahew each made their mark of a bow and arrow. The deed is witnessed by John Ward, the minister; Robert Clements, Tristram Coffin, Hugh Sherratt, William White and Thomas Davis, who made his "signe." The witnesses were all inhabitants, and, of course all interested in the deed. It will be observed that it purports to convey not only all the right that Passaquo and Saggahew themselves had, but that also which "any of us have," i. e. any Indians, with warranty against all Indians whatsoever. There has never been any litigation, probably, in which it was necessary closely to scan this Indian deed. It is probable that both grantors and grantees had in mind, as the point of departure, the site of the Indian village on Little River. In after years there was much discussion as to the east and west boundaries of the town. The inhabitants evidently always supposed themselves entitled to have





all that could be implied from the deed, whilst the general court was inclined to narrow their bounds. But it does not appear that there was ever any discussion where the northern boundary should be fixed, except as incidental to the great quarrel between New Hampshire and Massachusetts. The language of the deed is: "Six myles in length, from ye aforesaid river northward." Probably both parties had in mind, six miles north from the site of the Indian village at Little River.

But the charter of "the Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England," granted "all that part of New England lying between three miles to the north of the Merrimack and three miles to south of Charles River." Under this charter, the Massachusetts people claimed that their northern boundary was three miles to the north of the northernmost part of the Merrimack, and from that point to extend east and west. They therefore, in 1639, explored the river and fixed upon a rock, which they called Endicott's Rock, near the outlet of Winnipiscogee Lake, as the northernmost part of the river, and a tree three miles to the northward of that rock as the place where they were entitled to begin to run their east and west line. This claim was somewhat modified, it is true, in 1678, to a claim of three miles north of the river, according to its course, and through its whole length. But why did it never occur to the Haverhill people who, in the early days, were very anxious to have a great township, similarly to claim that the Indian deed granted the inhabitants land extending to a point six miles northerly from the source of the Little River, from which to run an east and west line for a northern boundary? This would have very much enlarged the limits of the town. Probably, as has been suggested, it was always understood that the point of departure was the chief home of the Indians aforesaid upon Little River.

This Indian deed was not recorded till April 29, 1671—when it was entered in the County records for Norfolk, to which Haverhill then belonged.

April 1, 1681, it was recorded at Ipswich in Essex County records. On the outside it is indorsed: "The purchase from the Indians by Haverhill men Recorded." In the previous year (1680) somebody was thoughtful enough to ensure a certain degree of authenticity in perpetual memory of the transaction. Nathaniel Saltonstall, the town clerk, copied it into the town records and appended the following testimony:

"The Rev. Teacher, of ye church and towne of Haverhill; Mr. John Ward, William White and Tho. Davis do testify that Haverhill township, or lands then by ye Indians called Pentucket, was purchased of ye Indians as is mentioned in ye deed in this paper contained, which is entered upon record and that we were then inhabitants at Haverhill and present with ye Indians, Passaquas and Sagahew, who were ye apparent owners of ye land, and so accounted, did signe and confirm ye same; and that then, wee (with others now dead) did signe our name to ye deed, which land we have ever since enjoyed peaceably, without any Indian molestation from the grantors or their heirs. Taken upon February ye 4th, 1680 before Nath. Saltonstall, assist.

"Lieut. Brown and Lieut. Ladd both affirm upon oath that what is entered in the records for Haverhill as the deed of purchase from the Indians of Haverhill Township or lands, of which the deed above written is a true copy, was, and is, a true copy, extract or transcript of the original deed given by the Indians. Taken upon oath February the 4th, 1680, before me, Nath. Saltonstall, assist."

The Indian deed was long in the possession of the descendants of William White, but was deposited with the town records twenty years ago.

Of John Ward, the first witness to the Indian deed, much has already been said.

Robert Clement came from England early in 1642, landing at Salisbury, and probably soon establishing himself at Haverhill, with his wife and four children,—John, Lydia, Robert and Sarah. Another son (Job) had preceded him. His youngest daughter, Mary, remained at Coventry, in Warwickshire, till about 1652, when she joined her family here, and soon married John Osgood, of Andover.

Robert Clement was the first deputy to the General Court (1645–1654), when he was succeeded by John Clement. He was also associate judge, commissioner to administer the oath of fidelity to the inhabitants, to set off public lands, etc. He was evidently regarded as an upright and able man. He died in 1658, on the spot where he first settled, aged about sixty-eight. He then owned the first grist-mill built in the town, which was appraised at thirty pounds. Tristram Coffyn and William White inventoried his property at about £450.

His son, Robert, was the first cooper in Haverhill. He married Elizabeth Fane in 1652, by whom he had eleven children. He also held town offices, was a large land-holder, and lived near the location of the Exchange Building, on Water Street.

Job Clement was a tanner, and married Margaret Dummer,—the first marriage in the town.

John Clement was a farmer. He married Sarah Osgood.

This family were for a long time prominent in town and county. Several generations have lived upon the estate in the North Parish, still owned by descendants of Robert Clement, one of whom is city physician in 1887.

Tristram Coffyn was born in 1609, in Brixham parish, Devonshire, in England. He came in 1642, in the same ship with Robert Clement, near whom he settled. He brought with him his mother (who died in Boston), two sisters, his wife and five children. Tradition has it that he was the first person who plowed land in Haverhill. He did not remain very long here, but removed to Newbury, where he was licensed to keep an ordinary and also to keep a ferry over the Merrimack. He is said subsequently to have removed to Salisbury and thence to Nantucket, where, and indeed, throughout the United States, his descendants are very numerous.

Hugh Sherratt, as we have seen, came from Ipswich in 1641, with John Ward. He first had land assigned to him in the Pond plain, which he relinquished, and



in 1650 he was granted a house-lot "over the little river," it is supposed on the westerly side of what is now Washington Square. He was always unfortunate in his pecuniary affairs. In 1662 he was licensed to keep an ordinary and to "sell strong water and wine at retail." Our ancestors generally called distilled spirits "strong waters." We may judge that Sherratt was accounted a sober and discreet person, for our ancestors wisely intrusted that dangerous traffic only to persons of approved character. But he was still unfortunate. In 1677, being then in his ninety-ninth year he had lost the remnant of his property and sought relief from the town, which agreed with Peter Brewer to keep him for five shillings a week, one half to be paid in breadstuff and the other in meat. The following is worth reprinting to show how poor the towns-people were after it had been settled nearly forty years. Upon "a motion to know who would lend corn or meat to the town for the support of Hugh Sherratt, and they to be paid by the next town-rates, several engaged as followeth: Robert Emerson, bacon; Joseph Emerson, beef, 6 lbs.; Daniel Ela, beef, 12 lbs.; Samuel Gile, beef, 6 lbs.; Henry Kingsbury, Indian, 1; John Page, Jr., Ind., and meat 2 lbs.; Thomas Eaton, 18 lbs. meat or corn; Robert Ford, Jr.,  $\frac{1}{2}$  Ind.; Bartholomew Heath, pork, 4 lbs.; Thomas Davis, pork, 4 lbs., butter, 1 lb.; Michael Emerson, pork, 4 lbs.; Thomas Whittier, turnips, 1; Robert Ayer, pork, 6 lbs.; Daniel Hendrick, meat, 2 lbs.; Peter Ayer, 3 lbs. meat or corn; Thomas Ayer, Jr., 1 lb. meat.

Poor old Sherratt died September 5, 1678, aged one hundred years, enjoying the melancholy distinction of being the first centenarian in the town. It is to be hoped his old fellow-traveller, minister Ward, accorded him the customary honor of a sermon with appropriate exercises, on his hundredth birthday.

William White was born in 1610 (it is said in Norfolk County, England), and came to New England in 1635, going first to Ipswich and, in the same year to Newbury, with Rev. Thomas Parker and his company. He owned a farm in Newbury as late as 1650, and after his death, his widow moved back to Ipswich, where she died. Mr. White settled on what is now Mill street, on land still owned by his descendants, who have been very numerous. He became a large landholder. He had one son, John, who died before him, leaving a son John, who married Lydia Gilman, of Exeter. They had six sons and six daughters, whose progeny has been "exceedingly numerous." In that generation there were three marriages with the Phillips family, of Andover. Some of the descendants of John and Lydia White have been among the wealthiest, as well as the most enterprising and influential townsmen.

William White died September 28, 1690. He was a steady citizen and a zealous church member. His property was inventoried at five hundred and eight pounds, ten shillings and he bequeathed the

odd ten shillings, by will, to "Mr. Ward, my teacher in Haverhill."

Thomas Davis, whose mark is affixed to the deed, was a sawyer, from Marlborough, England, and married before emigrating. He is supposed to have been a brother of James Davis, one of the first company of settlers. He came to Newbury in 1641, and to Haverhill early in the spring of 1642. As early as 1720 there were nineteen families of that name in Haverhill.

## CHAPTER CLII.

### HAVERHILL—(Continued).

#### *Building of the Town.*

THE colony was divided into four counties, May 10, 1643. They were Essex, Middlesex, Suffolk and Norfolk. To Norfolk were assigned the towns of Haverhill, Salisbury, Hampton, Exeter, Dover and Strawberry Bank (Portsmouth). The courts were holden alternately at Salisbury and Hampton. There was probably no reason why the so-called incorporation of the town should not have taken place at once. But it probably chanced that the settlers did not want anything from the General Court immediately. They were all busy in breaking up their lands and making their houses. Nobody was anxious to go as a deputy, and, in fact, none was sent till several years after.

Haverhill remained in Norfolk county until New Hampshire was separated from Massachusetts, in 1680, when Haverhill and Salisbury were assigned to Essex county, and Norfolk county ceased to exist. The present county of Norfolk was incorporated in 1793.

Mirick says, "the first lawful town meeting was holden this year (1643)." But, doubtless, meetings had been held before for the transaction of business, and business certainly had been transacted. Now there was, perhaps, a little time to take breath, and it seemed proper that affairs should be conducted with a little more formality. So a clerk was chosen, a record book provided, and minutes of the doings were made. The General Court had passed a law, also, requiring a record of births, marriages and deaths to be regularly kept in each town.

Richard Littlehale was chosen "town recorder" and "clerk of the writs,"—a court established in towns to try "small causes," where the amount at issue did not exceed forty shillings. By an act passed in 1638, the General Court was, from time to time, to appoint in each town in which there should be no resident magistrate, three persons as commissioners of small causes, two of them to constitute a quorum. The General Court appointed annually, in each town, a clerk of the writs, who was authorized to grant





attachments and summonses, take replevin bonds, and issue summonses for witnesses. Single magistrates and commissioners of small causes, or town courts, were invested with substantially the same powers as a justice of the peace. The selection of Richard Littlehale as clerk of the writs had probably no other effect than to designate him as a suitable person to receive the appointment from the General Court. It was, in all likelihood, the custom to appoint the town clerk also as such officer.

The date of the first meeting recorded is November 6, 1643, and the first vote passed was to prevent unnecessary destruction of timber.—“Voted, that no man shall fall or cause to be fallen any timber upon the common but what he shall make use of within nine months next after it is fallen, or otherwise it is and shall be forfeited.” At the same meeting they passed a vote of great importance.—“That there shall be three hundred acres laid out for house lots, and no more; and that he that was worth two hundred pounds should have twenty acres to his house-lot, and none to exceed that number; and so every one under that sum to have acres proportionable for his house-lot, together with meadow and common and planting-ground, proportionably.” This land was called an “accommodation grant,” and this vote was the foundation of the land system of the town—the key to the manner in which the great tract of land acquired under the deed from the Indians was ultimately all parcelled out among their white assigns and successors. As has been intimated, neither Passaquo nor Saggabew nor any other Indian ever disputed the validity of the Indian deed; and there appears, too, absolutely no room for any sentimental regret or scruple on their behalf.

At a town-meeting holden the 6th of the following February, it was voted “that all landholders shall pay all publique rates, according to their number of acres that they hold to their house-lots; and if any man shall buy one acre of meadow, one acre and a half of planting ground, or one acre of commonage to his house lot, he shall pay proportionably for every acre of commonage with the house-lot.” The theory of ownership and distribution of lands was apparently the following:—

The townsmen of 1643 had, by foresight, energy and influence, obtained leave of the General Court to begin a plantation in a most desirable location. They had fairly purchased of the Indians a very large tract of territory. They held it legally and equitably, subject to the demands of the general government for the common weal, and the adjustment of bounds between them and their neighbors by competent authority. It was their property. They were the proprietors. They could divide it at such times and in such proportions as they saw fit. Such parts of it as were allotted to any particular one of them, he and his heirs and assigns would thereafter own in severalty. In other words, the persons then here were “ye inhabit-

ants of Pentucket,” to whom the Indians had sold. They had not bought for the benefit of all the persons who might flock to Pentucket to profit by the advantageous grant they had obtained. If they chose, however, they could admit any person to their association and a participation in its privileges. And it must be said, that the logic of the early settlers seems substantially to have prevailed. There came a time when their heirs and assigns assumed to be owners of all the lands remaining undivided, and, although fiercely opposed, maintained their claim with ultimate success. They held “proprietors” meetings, had their clerk and moderator, kept records, made grants, carried on successful litigation, and had their own way. Then the organization quietly died out.

The allotments of 1643 were evidently based upon notions like the following. The settlers were few in number, they were in the wilderness. They had no immediate apprehension from the Indians, as has been seen. But they could not forget the terrors of the Pequot war, then recent. Their first necessity was to remain together, for mutual convenience, succor and support. This was probably also their first impulse and instinct. Thus only could they all enjoy the ministrations of the word from their teacher, Mr. Ward. Their “house lots,” therefore, must be near each other, in a compact body. And the most natural place for the village, was, of course, the bank of the river. There they had landed. They had doubtless brought their scanty household goods up the stream in such a “great pinnace” as Giles Firmin had written Governor Winthrop about. By the river must be at first their infrequent communication with the great world of the older settlements.

Three hundred acres were accordingly laid off for the home lots, along and back from the river bank. But the immediate margin of the river was reserved for the present. The houses faced the river. The highway ran in front of them. The nearest body of fresh water was the pond, which soon became known as Ayer’s, afterward Plug, pond. Its outlet was a brook which ran southwardly to the river, entering it at a point where was the landing and where the little hamlet began to be. The first grist-mill was undoubtedly on that stream, and it was then and always after known as “Mill Brook,” till it ceased to be. Up to 1860 and later, it continued to be used for the same purpose.

The mill brook came to be the centre of the little village. The land about the lower course of the brook was reserved for public uses. It came to be known as the “Mill Lot.”

When lands were laid out afterwards, the Mill Lot had its share in the apportionment. The Mill Lot was the ground now occupied by Linnwood and Pentucket cemetery and the tract between Pentucket cemetery and Mill Street, which was granted out of the original Mill Lot. The houses grew up about the Mill Lot; the settlers worshipped in private



houses, doubtless, in bad weather, but in pleasant, they met under the branches of a great tree which stood, probably, upon the Mill Lot. The dead were buried there in all probability, almost or quite from the very beginning.

The first settlement was, therefore, on the lower part of the present Water Street. That, in fact, was the town for nearly two hundred years. Fortunately, a tract was reserved for public uses, substantially if not formally, from the site of what is now Haverhill Bridge, to the site of what is now Winter Street Bridge, over Little River. Thus they had a public reservation, and an irregular row of scattered houses on Water Street. The sixteen acres allotted Mr. Ward for a home lot in 1642 were below the Mill Lot.

February 27, 1643, it was "voted that Job Clements shall have a parcel of ground, not exceeding one quarter of an acre at the Mill Brooke, being bounded forth by the Free-men to sett him up a tann-house and tann-fatts upon, to him and his heirs forever," It has been conjectured that a corn-mill was already built there. A tannery, like the corn-mill, always stood there afterwards. Job Clements was the first tanner in the town, and his tannery was near the mouth of the brook.

It had been thought prudent that only three hundred acres should be appropriated, in the first instance, to house lots, of which no man was to have more than twenty acres, nor any man to have so much unless he was worth two hundred pounds. Two hundred pounds estate, then, receiving twenty acres, those of less estate were to receive proportionately. The gardens, if any, were doubtless expected to be at the home lots. But the best land may not have been at the house lots and though there might be gardens cultivated by the women, and by men in leisure hours, the great stress and labor of the little community was to be directed to agriculture and cattle raising. The pioneers probably brought some cattle with them, at all events there were some here, which speedily multiplied, after their kind. There must, therefore, be planting ground and pasture. Where should these be laid out to best advantage?

It has been said that the Indians in some localities, used to burn the grass in the autumn that the deer might not hide in it from the hunter in the spring. The trees in such spots, were originally scanty or killed by the Indian fires. There the grass grew lush and strong, a treasure much prized by the pioneers. They cut and stacked it in the proper season, hauling it home mostly in the winter when the snow lay deep on the ground. These were the "meadows." They lay along what was afterwards known as East Meadow River in the East Parish; the "Pond Meadow," in the region of Lake Kenosha; "Hawkes Meadow," in the West Parish; "Creek Meadow"; the Spicket or "Spiggott" meadows in what are now Methuen and Salem, N. H., and in other parts of the town.

The early planting grounds were in the "Great Plain" or "The Plain," below the village, and up the "Great River," the Merrimack.

For pasturage was taken the land of inferior quality, and partly covered with trees and bushes. This was commonage. Then there were lands densely covered with timber. That its value was appreciated from the first can be understood from the vote adopted November, 1643, and many subsequent of similar character. Doubtless the destruction of timber was nevertheless, great and wanton.

There was land enough and for all; the great difficulty was in its distribution. No man had a farm in the sense in which it is now understood. He had a house and garden in one place, planting-grounds for culture elsewhere, meadows in still other spots, and commonage everywhere. To illustrate the way in which the land was first distributed, we will take the example selected by Chase in his History of Haverhill, a copy from the town records:

"1659, Daniel Ladd's accommodations. Six acres of accommodations. Four acres to his house lot, more or less; Robert Clements' bounding on the east, and Henry Savage on the west. Five acres in the plain: William White on the east and John Williams on the north; nine acres up the Great River, Thomas Ayers on the east and George Browne on the west. Four acres of meadow in the east meadow, more or less: Joseph Peasley on the south and George Browne on the north; one acre and a half of meadow in the pond meadow: James Davis, Sen. on the south and Robert Clement, Jun., on the north. One acre of meadow at Hawkes meadow: John Davis on the south and Thomas Whittier on the north."

"Daniel Ladd's 2d division containing 27 acres of upland, be it more or less; with sixteen acres of ox-common and a half, bounded by George Corley and John Hutchins on the west; by a black oak, a white oak, a red oak and a walnut on the south; by a walnut and a white oak on the east; by two white oaks and an ash on the north. Three acres of meadow lying on Spicket River, bounded by Thomas Davis on the south and Robert Clements on the north, and one spot of meadow at Primrose Swamp, and another spot at the east meadow, at the head of the meadow that was John Davis's adjoining to his own. For the land that was taken off Daniel Ladd's 3d division, we added a piece on the north side of the highway, round the meadow that was Goodman Hale's bounded by the highway and Merries Creek. Third division of meadow containing three acres, be it more or less, bounded by John Page on the south, a pine on the east, his own uplands on the west, and uplands on the north of the said meadow lying in Mistake Meadow."

"Daniel Ladd doubtless found farming quite a different thing from what most farmers of the present day find it. His house-lot was in the village; his planting ground in two places,—a part of it in 'the





plain' from one to two miles east of the village, and the other part 'up the great river,' at least as far on the west of the village, while his meadow lands were in seven lots and as many distinct meadows. East Meadows was in the easterly part of the town, three miles from his home-lot, while Spicket Meadow was at least eight miles in the opposite direction. Pond Meadow was two miles northeast; Hawkes' Meadow some three miles west; Primrose Swamp two miles northwest, and Mistake Meadow somewhere in the westerly part of the town."

Daniel Ladd had a home lot of four acres, "more or less." It would appear that he should have had six. As much as his house-lot fell short of "six acres of accommodations," was made up to him elsewhere in quantity or quality, it may be supposed. As a matter of fact, he had in all forty-one acres of upland or planting ground, "more or less:" twelve acres and a half of meadow, "a piece" and two "spots" of the same, sixteen acres and a half of ox-common—in all and of all kinds, seventy-four acres, with certain remnants thrown in.

Daniel Ladd was one of the twelve pioneers of 1640, had children and died in 1693.

As we have seen, lands were divided according to estate, except that no account was made of any estate over £200. After the assignment of land, taxes were levied at first according to the amount of land each man had. If he purchased meadow, planting-ground or commonage, he should pay proportionally. The right of purchase and sale seems to have been always recognized; but at least in the beginning, the town undertook to exercise some supervision over such transactions, probably to make sure as far as possible that unworthy and unsuitable persons were not admitted to their association. Thus at the meeting of April 16, 1649, "it was acknowledged by John Robinson that Daniel Lad had bought six acres of accommodation of him which the town granted him, approved on by the Selectmen."

It was not till 1650 that the valuation of each man's property, under the vote of November 6, 1643, was entered in the town records. It is inserted here for the sake of convenience. It professes to give the names of those to whom land had previously been allotted. It is valuable as far as it goes, but there are some obvious omissions, and neither dates nor valuation should be taken as more than approximately correct.

1641. John Favor.....	1645. Christopher Hussie.....
1641. John Robinson.....	1645. Daniel Hendrick..... £120
1642. John Ward..... £80	1645. Henry Palmer..... 60
1642. Tristram Collin.....	1645. George Corliss.....
1642. Hugh Sherratt..... 50	1646. Thomas Hale.....
1642. William White..... 50	1646. James Davis..... 200
1642. Thomas Davis.....	1646. John Ayer..... 160
1642. John Williams..... 80	1646. Daniel Lad..... 40
1643. Abraham Tyler..... 60	1646. Joseph Peaseley.....
1643. Richard Littlehale..... 40	1646. John Davis.....
1644. Henry Savage.....	1646. Thomas Davis..... 100
1644. Job Clement.....	1646. Thomas Davis..... 100

1646. James Fisk.....	1649. Christopher Lawson.....
1646. William Butler.....	1649. Richard Omsby..... £70
1646. Bartholomew Heath..... £140	1649. Wm. Holdridge.....
1647. Samuel Gile..... 40	1650. Robert Ayer..... 40
1648. Thomas Listerth.....	1650. John Ayer, Jr..... 80
1648. John Eaton..... 80	1650. Thomas Ayer.....
1648. Thomas Whittier..... 80	1650. John Chenam.....
1649. George Goldwin.....	George Brown..... 80
1649. Goodman Moice and three sons.....	John Hort.....
1649. Abraham Merrill.....	Goodman Hale.....

The following table contains the valuation of those to whom house-lots had been laid out at different times, but whose names do not appear in the records previous to 1650. Some of them it will be seen were among the first settlers:

Robert Clement, Sr..... £50	Thomas Eaton..... £40
John Clement..... 30	Edward Clarke..... 40
Matthias Button..... 60	Robert Swan..... 30
Steven Kent..... 200	John Haschme..... 40
James Davis, Jr..... 10	John Johnson..... 30
Peter Ayer..... 60	John Carleton..... 30
Richard Singletary..... 60	Joseph Johns on..... 50
John Hockins..... 480	John Page, Jr..... 40

Names against which no amount is placed, are those of persons as to whom no record has been found of a house-lot being laid out to them. Some of them, no doubt, purchased the right of others to lands. But, on the other hand, the clerks were often negligent and did not realize how eagerly their work would be scanned in two or three hundred years. Sergeant Abraham Palmer was town clerk of Charlestown in 1638 and began to compile the "Book of Possessions," which was continued to 1892. The outcome was Wyman's "Genealogies and estates of Charlestown," the fruit of nearly forty years application to the subject, published in 1879, the year after the author's death. It is a work which is supposed to account for every inch of land upon that historic peninsula. The digression by which reference is made to it here, will be pardoned through the hope that this mention will fire some young antiquarians of Haverhill to emulation, who will not be discouraged by Mr. Wyman's premature decease. He certainly will not be if he is prepared to devote forty years to such a task! Such labors, indeed, appeal to the enthusiasm of but a small class of persons; but, they are none the less admirable and useful.

It would appear from a vote of October 29, 1646, that the sixteen acres laid out to Mr. Ward, in 1642, was a part of the three hundred intended for house-lots. "Voted by all the freeholders at a lawful town-meeting, that Mr. Ward, our teacher's land, shall be rate free for his ministry during his life, if he continue minister to the plantation, provided he use it himself, but if he sell, let or set any of it to hire, it shall pay rates proportionably with our own; and that forty pounds per annum shall be paid him by the remainder of the three hundred acres for his ministry."

Edward Johnson, the chief founder of Woburn, in his "Wonder Working Providence of Zion's Saviour





in New England," wrote: "The town of Haverhill was built much about this time, lying higher up than Salisbury upon the fair and large river of Merrimack; the people are wholly bent to improve their labor in tilling the earth and keeping of cattle, whose yearly increase encourages them to spend their days in these remote parts. The constant penetrating further into this wilderness hath caused the wild and uncouth woods to be filled with frequented ways, and the large rivers to be overlaid with bridges passable both for horse and foot; this town is of a large extent, supposed to be ten miles in length, there being an overweening desire in most men for meadow-land, which hath caused many towns to grasp more into their hands than they could afterwards possibly hold; the people are laborers in gaining the goods of this life, yet they are not unmindful also of the chief end of their coming hither; namely, to be made partakers of the blessed ordinances of Christ, that their souls might be refreshed by the continued income of his rich grace, to which end they gathered into a church-body and called to office the reverend Mr. Ward, son to the former named Mr. Ward, of Ipswich.

"With mind resolved, run out thy race at length,  
Young Ward, begin, where as thy father left,—  
Left hath he not, but faculties for further strength;  
Nor thou, nor he, are yet to hope he left  
Fruit of thy labor, thou shalt see so much,  
Thou shalt see shall reap it and to prove it  
When I shall tell by Christ's almighty touch  
All's folk shall praise him with a cheerful voice  
They prosper shall that Zion's building mend,  
Then Ward, cease not with to be the staves to lay,  
For great is he thou to this work assigned.  
Whose pleasure is, heaven's Crown shall be thy pay."

The pioneer of Woburn looked upon the pioneers of Haverhill as dwelling in the wilderness; yet, it cannot but excite a smile to read of the "frequented ways" and "large rivers overlaid with passable bridges." For many years the ways of Haverhill were nothing but paths, perhaps not always easy to trace, and the bridging of "Little River" taxed its utmost resources. But certainly Haverhill was a frontier town and an outpost of civilization for many years.

"The rising towns and churches new in wilderness they wander,  
First Plymouth, and then Salem next, we placed for asylum;  
Woburn, Wrentham, Reading, built with little silver needle—  
And over, Haverhill, B. river Banks, their habitations settle."

Haverhill is named in Rev. John Eliot's "Description of New England," written in 1650.

Three years ago (1884) there was discovered in England the "Description of New England," written about 1660, by Samuel Maverick, the early settler of Noddle's Island or East Boston. He says: "Four leagues up this river (Merrimack) is Haverell, a pretty towne, and a few miles higher is the towne of Andover—both townes subsist by husbandry.

"Seaven miles to the southward of Hampton is Merrimack River, on the mouth of which, on the north side, is seated a large towne called Salisbury, and

three miles above it a village called Old Salisbury, where there is a saw mill or two. The commodities the towne affords are corne, cattle, boards and pipe staves."

It did not take the settlers of New England very long to find out what they had accessible for foreign commerce. There was fish, there was lumber. Both commodities were in demand in the West Indies. Fish could be sold at a profit in the Catholic countries of Southern Europe. 1643 was a year of famine, but, wrote Winthrop, "the merchants had great success in the sale of their pipe-staves and fish. The 'Trial,' of Boston, made a good voyage, which encouraged the merchants and made wine, sugar and cotton very plentiful and cheap." Cotton came from Barbadoes. Molasses also came back from the West Indies and was early distilled into rum. Of that business, in after days, Haverhill had her share. The great statesman, Burke, said of New England rum: "They are more famous for the quantity and cheapness than for the excellency of their rum."

The primeval oaks began to be cut down and hewn into timber or rifted for staves, which were shipped to the West Indies and there made into pipes. Pipe-Staff Hill, in West Newbury, by its name, is a reminder that that and the other noble hills in this vicinity were once covered with great trees that fell before the pioneer's axe, and helped create the infant commerce of the Merrimack Valley. Hence, the unavailing care with which the early settlers of this town endeavored to protect the splendid forests they found here, consistent with a well regulated use for legitimate and open trade.

January 13, 1645, the town voted "that every inhabitant that will, may make upon the common, for every acre of house-lot which he hath, one hundred of pipe-staves and no more; provided he fall no timber for the same within two miles of the house-lots." In 1646, the same privilege was granted; but if any person felled more trees than his proportion or within the prescribed limits, he should pay five shillings, for the use of the town, for each offense. This vote would have given several persons the opportunity to prepare about two thousand staves in each of the years.

March 3, 1648, it was "voted that all men shall have liberty to fell or let stand any tree or trees which standeth at the end of his lot, next the street or great river; and if any man shall fell any such tree unto whom it doth not belong, he shall pay for every tree five shillings, to be paid unto him at the end of whose lot it did grow." This was on Water Street, where the house lots had been laid out. It is quite probable the pioneers did not expect to have any buildings on the water side. No grants of land were made on the south side of the highway for a long time.

In after years votes were frequently passed for the preservation of timber. Thus, in 1668, a fine of ten shillings was imposed upon any person who should



fell a white, red or black oak-tree, "within the town's limits, for staves, heading, logs for boards, or anything else for transportation, without leave from the Selectmen from year to year." But so much depredation continued by unauthorized persons, that a town-meeting was called a few years after, (January 1, 1674) expressly to consider the matter. It was voted unanimously that timber for staves, heading, ship-timber or frames of houses, should not be transported out of the town, or even "brought to water-side." At the ensuing March meeting a surveyor of boards and culler of staves were chosen for the first time. James Pecker was chosen to the first, and Robert Clement to the latter, office. These precautions doubtless had some effect, but only postponed the evil day. The American forests were doomed, and succeeding generations will expend much time and labor in attempts to replace them.

At the town-meeting of March 14, 1645, it was voted "that every inhabitant may keep for every acre that he hath to his house-lott, either an horse-beast, ox, or cow, with a foale or calfe, with a year old, a two year old and a three year old, until they shall be of the age of three years and a halfe, upon the commons appointed by the greater part of the freemen, and no more." This vote permitted the pasturage upon the public lands of one mature animal, with four young animals, for each acre of house-lot. Two or three persons, then, could pasture each a hundred creatures, if they desired. The commons was then all such land as had not been granted to any individual.

In 1645, there were, apparently, thirty-two landholders in the town; of these, twelve had come in 1640; two with Mr. Ward, in 1641; the Clements, Collin, and Thomas Davis, in 1642, or earlier. The names of the others were Henry Savage, Daniel Hendrick, William Butler, John Ayer, Sr., John Ayer, Jr., Joseph Peaseley, George Corliss, Nathaniel Wier, James Fiske, Thomas Hale, James Davis, Jr., John Eaton, Bartholomew Heath and John Davis. All but Savage, Butler, the Ayers, Fisk and Eaton, were from Newbury.

John Ayer had three brothers who soon joined the settlement: Robert, Thomas and Peter. The latter settled in the northwesterly part of the town, afterwards the West Parish, where Ayer's Village perpetuates the name. The others settled in the vicinity of Plug (long called Ayers) Pond. In 1632, Captain John Ayer, 2d, was already of the sixth generation living on the same spot. The Ayers became so numerous that in 1701 it was supposed nearly one-third of the inhabitants of the town were of that family, and they have since scattered themselves over the entire Union. They were "a fearless, athletic race of men," mostly farmers.

George Corliss came from England to Newbury about 1639, being then about twenty-two years old. He was from County Devon. In 1645, he married at

Haverhill, Joanna Davis, a native of Wales. This was the second marriage in the place. The name was then generally spelled Corle or Corley. He was enterprising, and, about 1647, built a log-house on his land, about three miles west of the village, on property now owned by Charles Corliss, his descendant in the seventh generation. It was put up on a sunny knoll, near a little brook. Traces of the cellar are still visible. Corliss acquired a large landed property. He owned, it is said, land on both sides of the old "Spicket Path" for a distance of more than three miles. His daughter was Mrs. Mary Neff, Hannah Dustin's nurse, and her companion in the famous captivity. George Corliss died October 19, 1686, having made his will the day before.

Joseph Peaseley (afterwards Peaslee) also came from England to Newbury, where he was made a freeman in 1642. Many of his descendants, of the same name, still live in Haverhill and the adjoining towns. He lived in the eastern part of the town, where also resided his only son Joseph and his grandson, Colonel Nathaniel Peaslee, a merchant and large landholder, for many years very influential in town affairs. John G. Whittier is descended from Joseph Peasley, who was also an ancestor of the Badgers and Cogswells of Haverhill and New Hampshire. Among his descendants have been a chief justice of the Supreme Court of Massachusetts, a Governor of New Hampshire, representatives in Congress and many others prominent in public life.

Joseph Peasley was, in certain ways, a conspicuous man. The church records call him a "gifted brother," and he was reputed to have some skill in the practice of medicine, which his son Joseph inherited, whom Chase calls "a physician." The difficulty with Joseph Peasley was, that he had not been licensed either to preach or to practice medicine. He was very fond of exercising his gifts by way of exhortation, and undertook to minister to the needs of the people of Salisbury Newtown (Amesbury) as a lay-minister. This was not acceptable to the "Standing Order." The ministers were always jealous of their prerogatives and Peasley was a thorn in their side. He was regarded as a nuisance, although his most illustrious descendant speaks of him as a "brave confessor."

About 1654 Joseph Peaseley and Thomas Macy were arrested and fined for preaching, not being ordained ministers. The court forbade their exhorting any more. Lieutenant Robert Pike, of Salisbury, declared that "such persons as did act in making that law, did break their oath to the country, for it is against the liberty of the country, both civil and ecclesiastical." For this unguarded expression, he was disfranchised by the General Court and heavily fined. At the next May court a petition was presented from a large number of the inhabitants of Hampton, Salisbury, Haverhill and Andover, praying that Pike's sentence might be remitted. The





General Court was outraged that "so many persons should combine together to present such an unjust and unreasonable request," and appointed a committee to call the petitioners together "and require a reason of their very unjust request." At the next November court orders were issued to summon sixteen of the petitioners to give bonds in the sum of ten pounds each to appear and answer for their offense before the County Court. Says Chase, "None of the Haverhill signers were included in the order. *They had acknowledged their offence.*" Three years afterward Pike "humbly desired the court, his fine being paid, to release him from the other part of his sentence," which it was pleased to do. Chase naturally remarks, "The whole case is an instructive one." The following are the names of the Haverhill signers to the original petition in behalf of Pike:

## "HAVERHILL."

James Davis.	John Heth.	Robert Lins.
Joseph Peasley.	John Clements.	George Carles.
Tristram Coffin.	Abraham Tyler.	Bartholomew Heth.
Peter Coffin.	John Williams.	Edw. Clarke.
John Davis.	John Williams.	James Davis, Jr.
John Eaton.	Thomas Davis.	Theophilus Sachwell.
Thomas Eaton.	John Lycres.	Thos. Whittier.
Robert Clements.	James Hussey.	Thos. Dow.
Thomas Bellows.	Dan. Hendrick.	Joseph Davis.
John Webster.	Stephen Kent.	Peter Ayre.
George Brown.	Richard Singletary.	Samuel Gill.
Epaphras Davis.	Henry Palmer.	Robert Swan.
Richard Littlehale.		

A few of these names have disappeared from the town, although descendants of all the signers may be here, bearing other names. It will be observed that some of the signers were among the most influential and substantial of the people, and probably all were respectable. The three brothers (presumably) Ayer, all spell their name differently, and neither spells it as is now habitually done. The "gifted" Peasley is himself one of the signers. He may have been no more inclined to martyrdom than his neighbors.

This list is as remarkable, for the names it does not, as for those it does contain. Some of the townsmen, whose names are absent, were devoted friends of the "Standing Order." It is probably not too much to say that the most influential one of all would not have signed the petition if he had been asked, Minister Ward. It would be too much to expect that a priest would go against the prestige of his own anointment. Besides, such proceedings were accounted disorderly. Massachusetts was hardly ready for exhorters when Whitfield came, nearly one hundred years later.

Joseph Peasley is accounted the first Quaker of Haverhill. His son, Joseph, was a Quaker, as were, at least, one branch of the Whittiers, descended from him. When the second meeting-house was accepted by the town—October 24, 1699—"Joseph Peaseley, &c., moving that the Town would allow him & others to meet at the new meeting-house for and in their way of worship; which is accounted to be for Quak-

ers: it was read and refused to be voted upon." Very likely there was some contemptuous laughter as the significance of the motion came to be understood in the town-meeting: but it is pleasant to add that there is no trace of any active persecution or molestation of the Quakers in Haverhill.

It is possible the elder Peasley may have been what in more modern phrase would have been called a "come-outer," rather than a Quaker. He died in 1660-61. His son, born in Haverhill in 1646, died in 1723. It would seem as if the first Joseph must bear the odium of the following transaction, recorded by Mirick under the date of 1658:—"Joseph Peasley was fined 40s. by the Court, for beating Peter Brown, and 20s. for abusing Timothy Swan—all to be paid in 'corne.'" It would be interesting to know if the poetic phrasing of the transaction, given by Mirick, was the effusion of a Quaker poet of the lineage of Joseph Peasley.

Thomas Whittier came to Haverhill from Newbury about 1646, bringing a swarm of bees which had been given him by the will of Henry Rolfe, of that place, who called them his "best swarm."

Job Clement was made a freeman at Ipswich Court January 30, 1647, and sworn constable for Haverhill. He is regarded as the first. Richard Littlehale, who was town clerk, was also made sexton, though as yet there was no meeting-house. In 1646 the town voted that "Richard Littlehale should beat the drum on the Lord's Day morning and evening, and on lecture days, for which and also for writing public orders, he is to have 30 shillings; he is also to beat the drum for town meetings." This was of course to call the people together: but in 1652, the town voted "that Abraham Tyler shall blow his horn in the most convenient place, every Lord's day, about half an hour before the meeting begins, and also on lecture days, for which he is to have one peck of corn of every family for the year ensuing." In 1653, they reverted to the first practice and directed Edward Clark to beat the drum on the "Lord's days and lecture days." These incidents allured the early historians of Haverhill into a mild jocoseness.

In 1645, there were fourteen church members in Haverhill—eight males and six females—to whom Mr. Ward had ministered for several years, and they were anxious to be recognized as a church, and that he should be ordained as their pastor. The church members at Andover (a plantation a little younger) were in the same situation. A council of the neighboring churches had therefore been convened for September 19, 1644, to meet "at Rowley (the fore-mentioned plantations being then but newly erected, were not capable to entertain them that were like to be gathered together on that occasion). But when they assembled most of those who were to join together in church fellowship at that time, refused to make the confession of their faith and repentance, because, as was said, they declared it openly before in other



churches, upon their admission into them. Whereupon the messengers of the churches not being satisfied, the assembly broke, before they had accomplished what they intended. But in October, 1645, messengers of churches met together again, on the same account, when such satisfaction was given, that Mr. John Ward was ordained pastor of the church in Haverhill, on the north side of the said Merrimack, and Mr. John Woodbridge was ordained pastor of the church at Andover, on the south side of the same." Haverhill was the twenty-third town settled in the colony and its church was reckoned the twenty-sixth.

It has been incidentally mentioned that Mr. Ward's salary was fixed at forty pounds, with immunity from taxes. October 29, 1646, at the same meeting, the first selectmen were chosen: they were Thomas Hale, Henry Palmer, Thomas Davis, James Davis and William White. In 1636, the General Court had enacted that "every particular township should have power over its own affairs, and to settle mullets upon any offender, upon any public order, not exceeding twenty shillings, and liberty to choose prudential men, not exceeding seven, to order the affairs of the town." These officers were at first called "the seven men," then "towne's men," then "towne's men select," and finally by natural evolution "Selectmen." Said Rev. Richard Brown in his diary, "they were chosen from quarter to quarter by papers to discharge the business of the town, in taking in, or refusing any to come into town, as also to dispose of lands and lots, to make lawful orders, to impose fines on the breakers of orders, and also to levy and distrain them, and were fully empowered of themselves to do what the town had power for to do. The reason whereof was, the town judged it inconvenient and burdensome to be all called together on every occasion."

The General Court was thus early engaged in efforts to equalize taxation. At the November session of 1646 it adopted the following schedule for the towns:—"Cowses of four year old and upward, £5; heifers and steers betwixt 3 and 4 year old, £1; heifers and steers betwixt 2 and 3 year old, fifty shillings; and between 1 and 2 year old, 30s.; oxen four year old and upward, £6; horses and mares 4 year old and upward £7; 3 year old £5; betwixt 2 and 3 year old, £3; yearlings, £2; sheepe above a year old, 20s.; asses above a year old, £2."

Houses, lands and all other visible estate, real and personal, were to be valued according to what they were worth in the several places where they were, proportionate to the above price for cattle, etc. It will be observed that the General Court was only able to equalize the value of live stock by reckoning one beast as of as much worth as another, and then abandoned all other property in despair to the judgment of the town raters. Hay and corn growing were not to be rated. Towns were required to choose one of their freemen, who with the selectmen, should yearly

make a true valuation of all ratable property in their several limits. This was the origin of assessors as town officers.

May, 1647, the records of the General Court declare:—"The town of Haverhill having chosen Robert Clements, Henry Palmer and Thomas Hale to end small causes they are allowed."

At the same Court John Osgood (Andover), and Thom: Hale were appointed "to lay out the way from Andiver to Haverell; and James Davis, Jun., and Antho. Staniell (doubtless of Exeter) from Haverhill to Excetter." A committee was also appointed to "view ye ryver, and make returne to ye Courte of ye necessity and charge of a bridge,"—at the next session. But it does not appear that any report was ever made about the matter. Chase thinks the river referred to was the Merrimack. This scarcely seems possible, as there was not yet a ferry. At the September Court (County), 1647, the town was presented for not having a ferry and at the next March Court it was "enjoined to provide a boat for the convenience of passengers" within a reasonable time, "under a penalty of 40s. and fees." The town afterwards appointed Thomas Hale to keep the ferry. The ferriage was to be "one penny for a passenger, two pence for cattel under two years old, and four pence for each as were over that age." The ferry was established at the place still known as the "old ferry-way," a little east of the foot of Kent Street. The people had always passed over the river at this place, but this was the first established ferry. The bridge was almost one hundred and fifty years old, and the ferry has been again resorted to within a few years while the bridge was being rebuilt.

"The overweening desire in most men after meadow land," of which Johnson wrote, early manifested itself here. May 10, 1643, the General Court granted the town "a parcel of meadow land about six score acres more or less, west of Haverhill about six miles." In 1637, the inhabitants petitioned the General Court for a tract of land to enlarge the town. The following is the very reasonable answer of the court, at its session of October 27: "In answer to the petition of Haverhill, ye Courte conceiving such vast grants to be greatly prejudicial to ye publick good and little if at all advantageous to particular townships, apprehending four miles square or such a proportion, will accomodate a sufficient tract of land; in such a case thinke meete a committee be chosen to view the place and returne their apprehensions to ye next General Courte, to which end, with the petitioners consent, they have nominated Mr. Dummer, (Newbury); Mr. Carlton, (Rowley); John Osgood, (Andover); and Ensign Howlet, (Ipswich); or any two of them, provided Ensign Howlet be one to do it." This was not at all what the petitioners wanted. They already claimed under the Indian deed a tract much larger than four miles square, and to that territory they always clung with





tenacity. They wanted more, not less; and when the General Court in appointing the committee which was doubtless a satisfactory one in its make up, announced a restrictive principle by which the committee should be guided, they had already enough of the committee and we hear no more about the affair. In this year the town was assigned the letter H. as a town mark for branding its cattle upon the near quarter.

The court also directed the inhabitants qualified to vote to meet and choose "some meet person for the place of Sergeant to exercise them" in military drill.

All able-bodied men were required to train in each town on Saturday by a law passed as early as 1631. By a law passed in 1640, the lads from ten to sixteen years of age were ordered to be "instructed upon ye usual training days, in ye exercise of arms, as small guns, halfe pikes, bowes and arrows, &c." Theoretically, the colony was always under martial law. Every town had its train band with officers, its rendezvous and organization in case of sudden attack: its watches and scouts. The settlers never attended town-meetings or religious worship without taking their arms with them. Nor was it regarded as prudent that a man should go to work in the field without carrying along his gun. At meeting, the men entered last and made their exit first, that they might be ready to protect the women and children in case of attack. Hence, by way of survival, the curious custom of rural New England, under which the women and children occupy the interior portion of the pews, and the men and the imitative big boys linger on the outside of the edifice until the service is about to begin.

At the beginning of the settlements in New England, the Indians might easily have destroyed them, with less effort than they afterwards put forth unsuccessfully. As has been said, pestilence had depopulated the tracts at first occupied by the white men, and the colonists had opportunity to establish themselves. When the Indians at last went to war, it was already too late. Dissensions also among the Indians prevented the successful concentration of their forces. The swift and sudden rout and almost complete extermination of the Pequods in 1737, ensured peace for thirty-eight years. Yet the wise legislation of the colonies proceeded upon the theory that every settlement was in constant siege and every settler a man-at-arms, who could never safely lay his armor off. The advantage of this training was found when the terrible war broke out, known as King Philip's. When Haverhill began, there was a long period of tranquillity. There were only a few straggling Indians in the vicinity. John Eliot and others were commencing their good work among the savages. His converts, known as the praying Indians, were permitted to go to and fro among the settlements and were regarded as harmless. Under these circumstances, military discipline doubtless

became somewhat lax and the people restive under its restraints. But it was all that saved them when, later, the day of trial came.

Meantime, the little hamlet was growing in tranquillity. Henry Palmer and others had taken grants of land in the plain north of Pond Meadow. A house or two had been built near the spot where Stevens' Mills stand. It was felt that the time had come to build a meeting-house; and at the March meeting, 1648, it was "voted that the meeting-house shall stand on the lower Knowle at the lower end of the Mill Lot." It was put up that season and finished in the following autumn. It was twenty-six feet long, twenty feet wide, of one story, without galleries or cupola, facing the river, upon the little elevation midway between the north and south bounds of Pentucket Cemetery. Twenty-five years ago people were living who remembered its foundation stones. The settlement now had a public building, in which, according to the custom of the times, the town-meetings were held and its business transacted. When need arose, it was a fort as well. But it was a very simple structure, though doubtless well timbered. March 3, 1655, it was voted that "Thomas Davis shall have three pounds allowed him by the toune, for to ground-pin and daub it; provided that Thomas Davis provide the stones and clay for the under-pinning; the toune being at their own expense to bring ye clay into place for ye plastering of ye walls up to the beams." Lime mortar was not yet in general use; lime was manufactured from oyster and clam shells. Limestone was first discovered at Newbury, in 1697, where large quantities of lime were manufactured for a century after.

In 1659 population had so far increased that it was necessary to enlarge the meeting-house, and a committee was appointed for that purpose and to repair it, "and to finish it and make seats in it, and also to sell land for to pay the workmen, not exceeding twenty acres in the cow-common."

In the following year it was ordered that the land behind the meeting-house should be reserved for a burial-ground. It seems to be quite certain that burials had previously taken place there, this vote being only a formal dedication of the spot. At the same meeting, ten acres of meadow and two hundred acres of upland were granted for a parsonage to Mr. Ward and his successors.

In the beginning, there were probably no pews; but in 1665 it was voted that Mr. Ward with three others, "should plan and seat the inhabitants of Haverhill in the seats built in the meeting-house."

The pressure of new comers continued, and in 1666 it was voted "yt John Hutchins shall have libertie to build a gallery at ye westend of ye meeting-house and to take any of ye inhabitants of ye town to joyne with him, provided yt he give notice to ye towne, whether he will or noe ye next training day, soe yt any of ye inhabitants of ye towne yt hath a minde to





joyne with him, may give in their names; and yt there is none but ye inhabitants of ye towne is to have any interest in ye said gallery." The last proviso seems a little inhospitable; but it will be observed that non-residents are not restricted from attending public worship, but only from acquiring proprietary interests at a time when the pressure for sittings was great.

The next year (1667) it was voted that the inhabitants should keep the places assigned them by the committee, under the penalty of two shillings, six pence, and the selectmen were instructed to enforce this rule against everybody but John Hutchins, who was apparently permitted to roam at will through the west gallery. That great work, however, may have been still incomplete, for at the annual meeting in 1673, "John Hutchins, having built galleries in the meeting-house, was allowed to sell seats or privileges in the same to any one."

It has been said the meeting and town-house was also designed as a fort. It contained a magazine of war material after 1672, when the selectmen were ordered "to provide, at the town's cost, a place in the meeting-house, according to law, to secure the town's stock of powder and other ammunition."

Early in 1675, when the whole colony began to shake with apprehension of Indian War, a town-meeting was called (February 19th) to consider what measures should be adopted. Fortifications had formerly been built about the great public edifice, but in the general feeling of security they had been suffered to fall into decay. Now it was voted that "the selectmen shall forthwith cause the fortifications (around the meeting-house) to be finished; to make port holes in the walls, to right up those places that are defective and likely to fall and to make a flanker at the east corner, that the work, in case of need, may be of use against the common enemy."

The meeting-house, however effective it might have proved as a fort, was insufficient in its accommodations for worship, and, in June, 1681, it was resolved to build a gallery for the women, who, in those days, generally sat apart from the men. Nothing seems to have been done in pursuance of this vote, for the record of the annual town-meeting in 1684 contains the following: "A complaint being made to the town for want of room in the meeting-house for women when they come to hear the word of God preached, and that care be speedily taken about the same; the town (by their act upon June 24, 1681, having taken care for such a gallery and appointed persons to take care thereof and to get it to be made at the town's cost) do refer this matter to the same committee, empowering them to get the same built, desiring them forthwith to proceed upon the work to have it finished, that no excuse of that kind be made by any persons that do or shall absent themselves from the worship of God."

In the summer of the same year (July 30th) a town-

meeting was called to see about the seating of the inhabitants in the meeting-house, "alterations and divers deaths" having made some new arrangement necessary. The selectmen were made a committee for "the new seating or placing of persons in the seats in the meeting-house." It was voted that if any refused to occupy the seats assigned them by the selectmen, they should "forfeit a fine of twelve pence in corn" for each day's neglect or refusal; and, "to prevent any objection of others," another committee was chosen to seat the selectmen.

The building of a meeting-house, the conduct of public worship, the choice of a minister and the extent and manner of his support, attendance at "meeting" Sundays and lecture days, with the greater or less degree of comfort associated with it during the many long hours of compulsory waiting, constituted a great portion of the life of all the people in the early days of New England. Save for town-meeting and training days, it was practically their whole public life, and as all antiquarians know, the dispositions of seats in the meeting-house, depending largely upon social distinction, was a matter of vast importance, often creating heart-burning, which even the lapse of years could not wholly assuage.

When the meeting-house was built, the General Court thought it high time that the town was equipped with the ordinary municipal appliances of civilization—as it was then understood. In 1649 it was accordingly ordered to erect a watch-house, pound and stocks, immediately. Nothing is said in this order or in the town records about a whipping-post; probably the whipping-post came in with the stocks. The pound was erected on the public ground,—the "mill-lot,"—near the meeting-house, and probably the stocks were put up there too, according to the colony custom. The whipping-post came in Boston as early as 1639, and stood in front of the First Church. The stocks were built the same year by Edward Palmer, and when he sent in an extortionate bill for building them, the court ordered him to be set in them for an hour himself. Whipping was well thought of in those days. In 1645 the governors of Harvard College caused Henry Dunster, the first president, with his own revered hand, to whip in public, the sons of two eminent ministers, for a grave offense. Corporal punishment, in the vicinage of that ancient institution, is no longer administered by its officials, at any rate. The last stocks and whipping-post stood on the Haverhill Common, at the east end of the meeting-house, about ten rods north of the southern entrance of the present park, till near the close of the last century. The whipping-post formed a part of the stocks. It was about twelve to fifteen inches in diameter, and set in the ground at an angle of about forty-five degrees. The offender was secured upon the upper side of this post, and lashes were given by a "cat" of stout leather thongs. In 1860, Mrs. Stebbins, an old lady of eighty-two, distinctly remembered



seeing a man whipped, who broke into Mr. Duncan's store, about the year 1784. His loud outcries made a deep impression upon her mind. Moses Wingate had a reminiscence of a more cheerful character. He remembered the whipping, by Sheriff David Bradley, of an offender, who afterwards serenely offered to "take as many more for half a pint of rum."

In 1649, the town of Newbury endeavored to entice away Job Clement, the tanner, by an offer of a freehold, if he would carry on his trade there for four years, letting the shoemakers of that town "have the first proffer on the forsaking of his leather, making as good pay as others." He, however, remained in Haverhill.

Good settlers were always welcome, and skilled workmen were frequently offered a bonus to come. In 1650 the town granted John Hoitt, of Ipswich, three-fourths of an acre of land and the "clay pits," on condition that he became an inhabitant. These clay pits were in the West Parish, near the land of George Corliss, and are still known by that name. The first colonists imported brick, and it was naturally an object to have brickmakers resident. Chase thinks the pits were dug, and perhaps worked, before Hoitt came, but that can only be a conjecture.

John Clement and Stephen Kent planted orchards about this time. The first is believed to have been a little north of Linwood Cemetery, probably under the shelter of the neighboring hills, and the second where Samuel W. Ayer formerly lived.

Two barns were built on the land afterwards known as the "Common," by Bartholomew Heath and Joseph Peasley. This indicates good progress in agriculture. In this year there were forty freemen in town, of whom nineteen had taken the oath of fidelity. The year previous the town had chosen Thomas Hale constable, not the first in the town, but probably the first chosen by the town. At this time, also, began the first of the many changes of land. January 7, 1649, we learn from the records, there had been complaint by some who had had land out in the plain (east of the village), that it was "not fit for improvement." Probably a portion of it, having now been cultivated for several years and being originally light, began to show signs of exhaustion. The town gave them liberty "to lay it down" and take up land in some other place. In 1650, Hugh Sherratt, Bartholomew Heath, James Fiske and John Chenarie, laid down their land in the plain, and had "it laid out over Little River, westward." But about this time Joseph Peasley had leave to lay down his land over Little River and to take up in the plain, and Samuel Gild also chose in the plain. After this, there were many such changes. Some of them were doubtless due to mere caprice; but, probably, the larger portion, to more substantial reasons. The settlement was regarded as a success, and began to assume an appearance of stability. Men began taking their families away from the village and building their houses elsewhere.

When they had once fixed upon a spot for a permanent home it was discovered that land in so many localities, far separated, was a serious inconvenience. Changes, therefore, were made, tending to enable each man to bring his parcels nearer together. But it was many years before this could be accomplished and anything like symmetrical farms could be formed. It is no wonder the attention of the people was so much taken up at the town-meetings by frequent applications for leave to make exchanges and for approval of them. The mode of making grants in the beginning, caused so many inconveniences and perplexities, the real wonder is they did not all lose their heads together.

At the request of the town, the General Court appointed Henry Palmer, Thomas Davis and Job Clements to "end small causes," and also appointed and empowered Robert Clements to give the oath of fidelity. The town also petitioned the Court "for the graunt of an island lying in the Rivur Merrimac agaynst some part of their towne, containng about 20 or 30 acres." Their request was acceded to, "unless Mr. Ward or any other shall make any cleare title from this court within three years to the sayd island."

The town directed that the name of every freeholder should be kept in the town's book, and that he should attend town-meetings, when lawfully warned; and having "lawful warning he is to come within half an hour after the meeting is begun, and continue till sunset if the meeting hold so long, under the penalty of half a bushel of Indian corn or the value of it." Three years before, John Ayer, Sr., and James Fiske had been fined "for not attending the town-meeting, in season." In 1659 it was ordered that if a town-meeting was publicly warned on a lecture day, it should be considered a sufficient notice. The lecture was at first weekly, afterwards monthly, and it was almost as obligatory to attend meeting on that day as on the Sabbath itself.

The great ox-Common had been laid out before 1650, and in 1651 it was ordered that it "shall be for the use of them who live upon the east side of the mill brook, and for as many as will join with them." "They that live upon the west side of the mill brook shall have liberty to have an ox-Common westward for them, and as many as will join with them, which common is to be laid out in a convenient place, as shall be judged meet by the major part of the town."

At a meeting January 1, 1651, it was agreed that those who had land in the plain or below it, "butting upon the great river, should have liberty to make use of the bank next to the river for a fence for the space of four years: and also such as have land over the little river, west, should have the same liberty so far as Thomas Hale's lot."

An instance of the supervision the town intended to exercise over new-comers is to be found in the





vote of that year: "agreed that James Pecker should be an inhabitant with us, and that he shall have a four-acre lot (house-lot) with accommodations proportionable to it, which lot is to be bought of Bartholomew Heath for eight pounds. James Pecker doth promise to come and be an inhabitant with us by June, 1653." He probably came accordingly, dying in Haverhill, in 1696. The only children of his recorded, were four daughters, but there were male citizens of the name here long after. James Pecker kept a tavern for many years, and, when he died in 1657, his widow succeeded him. About 1760 Matthew Soley had it for a little while, and then Jeremiah Pecker carried it on. Bartholomew Pecker, a native of Haverhill, was a good Revolutionary soldier, said at one time to have been a member of Washington's Life Guards. He loved New England run too well. That he presented himself to Washington's notice on his visit to Haverhill in spite of vigorous opposition, that his old chief recognized him, saying: "Bart, is this you?" and gave him a gold piece, is apparently as authentic as any other incident of that memorable occasion. "Pecker Street" and "Pecker Hill," will always preserve the name of the graceless veteran whom his townsmen were ashamed of.

In this year George Brown and Daniel Hendrick were appointed to lay out the highway between Haverhill and Salisbury, and Theophilus Shatswell to join the men from Rowley, and lay out a road between that town and this. The last was not approved by the County Court at Ipswich till 1686.

Up to this time there had been no saw-mill, and the people were compelled either to hew all the boards and planks used for building or else to bring them from Newbury; in either case, the inconvenience was great. There was plenty of timber, plenty of water-power and an ardent desire for a saw-mill of their own. December 1, 1657, it was voted that a saw-mill should be "set up by Isaac Cousins and such others of this town as shall join with him: the town and they agreeing upon terms, viz: that they shall not make use of any timber within three miles of the meeting-house: *Item*—That all timbers without the compass of three miles from the meeting-house should be free for the use of the saw-mill: they paying the twelfth hundred to the use of the town in general. *Item*—That the town for their use shall have boards and planks at three shillings per hundred for such pay as is merchantable. The town also reserving to themselves a liberty to make use of what timber they stand in need of, though it be without the three mile compass from the meeting-house." December 15, 1651, "Granted by the major part of the inhabitants that Isaac Cousins shall have a sixth part of a saw-mill or mills: and that Mr. Clement (Robert), Job Clement, Stephen Kent, William White and Theophilus Shatswell shall join with him, together with any others that they shall agree with, provided that Mr. Coffin (Peter Coffin, of Exeter) have liberty

to have a sixth part of it, if he come to be an inhabitant of this town. This mill is to be set up upon the river, called Thomas Hale's river" (Little River at Winter Street).

This grant was more explicit than that made two weeks before, naming all the parties recognized and the location. They were to set up the mill by April, 1653. They had liberty to set up a second mill by April, 1654—"If they set them not up by these times above mentioned, then this grant is to be disannulled. . . . The proprietors have power, if they see cause, to remove one or both these mills up or down the river."

December 16, 1651, "voted and granted by the inhabitants that there shall no saw-mill be set up while these forementioned saw-mills are going." At the same time a committee was chosen to lay out ground for the use of the saw-mill "for a Pen," to be "returned to the town when the saw-mills are done." A six acre house-lot, with all accommodations proportionable, "was granted to the above mentioned Isaac Cousins, provided he lived in town five years following his trade of a smith." Three hundred and six acres had now been laid out in house-lots, or accommodation grants.

Three days had thus been spent in adjusting the most important matter of a saw-mill. Cousins was a blacksmith, as we have seen, the first in the town. He did not, however, fulfill the conditions of his grant, and in 1653, it was transferred to John Webster, upon similar terms. John Webster came from Newbury, and returned there after four years. His brother, Stephen, a tailor, removed from Newbury to Haverhill soon after, and is supposed to have been the ancestor of all the Websters of Haverhill and the many emigrants of that name.

A lot of land not exceeding four-score acres, was also granted to the proprietors of the saw-mill as long as they kept it in use. This lot was on the west side of Little River or Sawmill River, as it then began to be called.

In 1656 the town voted to cancel all these grants and privileges, if the present saw-mill or some other did not cut boards enough for the town by midsummer. In 1658 all former grants and privileges were declared forfeited, and Thomas Davis, one of the owners of the mill, John Hutchins and Daniel Hendricks were granted the privileges appertaining to the old mill if they put up a mill and supplied the town within twelve months. But no mill was built, and the next year the voters declared the privilege forfeited.

Notwithstanding all these difficulties Daniel Ladd and Theophilus Shatswell, in 1659, having received liberty from the town in consideration of five pounds a year, built the first saw-mill upon Spiggot (Spicket) River, now in Salem, N. H.

The old saw-mill at Little River was still a source of disquietude. The town had more than once de-



clared the privileges forfeited, but the mill owners seem to have paid little attention to such decrees.

In 1660 a committee was chosen to request the executors of Mr. John Clements to repair the mill or "desert the place." If they refused the committee were to "force them by law." Probably the mill was repaired, for in 1664 the owners of the saw-mill were allowed the use of one hundred acres to pasture their oxen, paying an annual rent of "100 boards."

In 1665 additional grist-mill accommodations were needed. "The corn-mill now in Haverhill is not sufficient to answer the town's end for to grind the town's corn," and a committee was chosen to confer with John Osgood and Andrew Greeley, its owners, "to know whether they will maintain a sufficient mill or mills," or to agree with others. Bartholomew Heath and Andrew Greeley agreed with the committee "to repair the mill that now is by September next, and if this mill proves insufficient to answer the town's end, then to build another by September following," and so to maintain sufficient corn-mills with skillful millers, good mill-stones, storeroom for bags, "with lock and key, & also we do engage not to grind for any other town or towns to the hindrance of any of the inhabitants of Haverhill." In consideration of all which the town agreed, November 4, 1665, that Heath and Greeley should have land "in the street on both sides of the brook at the end of Michael Emerson's lot, to set another mill on or any other place on the town's land." Also that the town would not give leave to any others to set up any mill upon the town's land.

When, in 1669, the bridge over Little or Sawmill River was out of repair, it was considered that "the present saw-mill owners were engaged to do it;" yet when Thomas Davis, in open meeting, said, "I will not," a committee was chosen to "compound the matter with Davis and to build a new bridge." The inhabitants were all called upon to contribute proportionally of their labor towards constructing it.

September 17, 1669, a special meeting was called about a corn-mill, "the town being wholly destitute of any. Andrew Greeley, in whose hands the mill was, being about to carry on a mill at the East Meadow River, upon the motion and desire of the town, did promise to take the frame down at the Little River & bring it up & raise it at the place where the former mill was (Mill Brook); many of the inhabitants at the same time promising to allow him freely some help towards the taking the frame down and raising it again."

But the trouble continued, and March 6, 1671, it was voted "that John Haseltine or any other man have liberty to build a mill to grind corn in the town of Haverhill, either upon the west river, called the saw-mill river, or upon east meadow river."

In 1675 the town voted to prosecute the owners of the saw-mill for not keeping their agreement. This

came to nothing, and the fact probably was that more mills were needed.

In 1678 Richard Bartlett, of "Almsbury," by unanimous vote, was "granted the privilege to set a saw-mill in Haverhill, on the North Meadow River," on condition that he should pay the regular rates (taxes): "deliver at our meeting-house 1000 merchantable per year," should sell to the Haverhill people at three shillings per hundred, and secure the town from any damages recovered by present saw-mill owners on account of the new mill and damages to meadows.

Five years later it was voted to allow Joseph Kingsbury, Samuel Hutchins, Robert Swan, Jr., and Josiah Gage to build a saw-mill on Merries Creek below the bridge. Guided by past experience, the town expressly reserved the right to allow others a similar privilege on the same stream.

At the same meeting, 1683, it was proposed to Andrew Greeley to build another corn-mill, which he refused to do, "and declared before the town that he knew there was a necessity for the town to have another corn-mill, & that he was not at all against their having of one set up, provided it be set upon any other brook or stream." Whereupon Stephen Dalton "propounded for liberty to build a corn-mill," which request was granted.

In 1684 William Starlin was given leave to set up a corn-mill at Fishing River, with reservation of the right to allow any others to put up mills on the same stream. The town granted Starlin ten acres of land "for encouragement." Starlin, in 1697, deeded it to Thomas Dustin.

For years, negotiations were pending with different persons—Andrew Greeley, Nathaniel Whittier, Joseph Peasley and Peter Patie—about building a grist-mill at East Meadow River. It was finally erected, soon after 1696, at a place afterwards long known as Johnson's mill about one-fourth of a mile from the mouth of the stream, by Samuel Currier and Joseph Greeley, to whom the town allowed the use of ten acres of land.

In 1705, John Swan and Jonathan Emerson, were granted the privilege of setting up a grist-mill, on Little River. This is supposed to have been built midway between the mouth of the river and the Winter Street bridge.

At the next annual meeting, John White was allowed to build "a fulling mill on Mill brook, near his own dwelling-house." This was the first mill of that kind.

We hear very little more about saw and grist-mills. At last the land had rest. Probably natural competition took care of the whole matter in the end.

In 1651, it was voted "that all the meadows shall be laid out by the 12th of June next, to each man his proportion according to his house lot." It was also "ordered that Hugh Sherrat, Theophilus Satchwell, Bart Heath, James Fiske, and Daniel Ladd,





shall view the upland that is fit to plough, by the last of March or the tenth of April next, and that they bring in their intelligence to the town by that time." It was further ordered, "that all the undivided land after all the meadows and second division of plough land is laid out, shall remain to the same inhabitants the proprietors of the three hundred and six acres, to every one according to honest and true meaning, all commons remaining in general to them."

The last was a vote of great importance in the history of the town. It had been settled more than ten years, and the title from the Indians to the inhabitants of Haverhill had been made about ten years before. The town was fairly prosperous, and new settlers had come; more were likely to do so. The new comers would in a short time outnumber the pioneers. Now that a division of all the meadows and a second division of plough land was about to be made, the question evidently arose to whom will belong the large quantity of land (commons) that will still remain undivided. Shall it remain to such as have participated in previous divisions, namely,—the proprietors of the three hundred and six acres of house-lots, accommodation grants, or shall it be regarded as the estate of all the inhabitants, whoever they may be, now or hereafter; whether fairly or unfairly, the town by the above vote, expressly and clearly declared that the commons should "remain" and be the property of the then proprietors of the house-lots. In after years, when the population had much increased, such a vote could not have been carried. Its validity was indeed stoutly contested and with a good deal of plausibility. There was much wrangling, a good deal of rough and tumble fighting and many law-suits. The "proprietors," as the lot holders and their successors came to be called, organized themselves, kept records and held their meetings for many years. They made many grants, but probably their expenses absorbed the proceeds. In other towns also, similar controversies raged for years, but the victory generally remained with the proprietors or commoners, as may be observed at Salisbury at the present time where the "Commoners" are asserting their title to the beach without dispute.

The second division of plough land was made June 7, 1652. The division commenced at the head of Pond Meadow, and extended north, east and west. The lot-layers received for their services two pence an acre or ten shillings each. Forty-one persons received a share in the division, each having "his proportion either in quality or quantity of his lot, according to the discretion of the lot-layers."

Following are the names of those who received a share in this division, or as the records have it, "The lots or draughts for the second division of plough land with the number of each man's accommodation."

Acres		Acres	
1. John Davis.....	6	22. Daniel Hendrick.....	8
2. James Fiske.....	4	23. Thomas Davis.....	8
3. Matthias Bulten.....	6	24. Richard Ormsbie.....	5
4. Bartholomew Heath.....	4	25. Robert Ayer.....	5
5. Abraham Tyler.....	4	26. Henry Savage.....	4
6. John Ayer, Sr.....	8	27. George Broome.....	10
7. Henry Palmer.....	9	28. William Holdridge.....	5
8. Edward Clarke.....	4	29. Mr. John Ward.....	8
9. Robert Clement.....	6	30. George Corbis.....	7
10. Hugh Sherrott.....	12	31. Theophilus Satchwell.....	6 1/2
11. John Woodin.....	1	32. John Williams.....	8
12. Thomas Petty.....	1	33. John Chenatchie.....	4
13. Thomas Whittier.....	7 1/2	34. James Pecker.....	4
14. Stephen Kent.....	22 1/2	35. Thomas Ayers.....	9
15. Joseph Peaseley.....	12	36. Samuel Gold.....	10
16. John Ayer, Jr.....	8	37. Daniel Ladd.....	6
17. Thomas Lathforth.....	6	38. James Davis, Jr.....	10
18. Richard Littlehale.....	1	39. Job Clement.....	6
19. Isaac Cousins.....	8 1/2	40. John Clement.....	8
20. William White.....	7	41. James Davis, Sr.....	10
21. John Eaton.....	10		

In the second division of meadow land, made in 1653, there were forty-eight lots drawn. About the same time the island just below the village was divided into forty-five lots. The names and the bounds of each man's lot are given in the Commoner's Book of Records, but entered there under the date of 1727.

A third division of upland, or plowland, was also ordered to be laid out; this was situated west and north of West Meadow, in the West Parish.

Only three Estates equalled the valuation of two hundred pounds, and received, according to the vote of Nov. 6, 1643, a house lot of twenty acres, the limit allowed—those of James Davis, Steven Kent and John Hutchins. John Hutchins' valuation indeed, was four hundred and eighty pounds, but he got no more land for the excess over two hundred pounds.

In 1650, the General Court passed a law forbidding any person whose estate did not exceed two hundred pounds, to wear any gold or silver lace or buttons great boots, silk hoods, ribbons or scarfs, under a penalty of ten shillings. In 1653, the wife of John Hutchins was presented to the court for wearing a silk hood; "but upon testimony of her being brought up above the ordinary way was discharged." But the wife of Joseph Swett being also presented at the same time and for the same offense, was fined the ten shillings, not being qualified by estate for such vanities. In 1664, the General Court remitted to John Hutchins, late constable of Haverhill, a sum for corn collected for taxes and burned up while in his hands. Stephen Kent, notwithstanding his considerable property, was not always a satisfactory citizen. In 1652, he was fined in the County Court, at Hampton, ten pounds "for suffering five Indians to be drunke in his house and one of them wounded."

He petitioned the General Court for relief without avail, for it was ordered "that Stephen Kent within one month shall pay the said tenne pounds to the selectmen of Haverhill, who shall therewith satisfy for the cure of the Indian." He petitioned then to have the fine reduced, but without success. The fine was a heavy one, but the harboring and debauching





of the Indians was a serious offense, for which Kent, a few years later, would have suffered more than a pecuniary penalty. Hedoubtless has given his name to Kent Street, near the old ferry.

Matthias Button was a Dutchman who came to Salem with John Endicott in 1628. He was in Ipswich in 1639, and came to Haverhill about 1646. In 1662, William Simmons who had been the ferryman for five years previous, was voted "the overplus in the constable's hands of the country rate, to satisfy him for the curing of Matthias Button." This is the first mention of a doctor on the records, although as has been said, Joseph Peasely is reported to have practised medicine, probably among his neighbors. Button was an uneasy creature. He first lived in the village, then west, then east of it, and finally was living in a thatched house near the present residence of Mr. Thomas West, where he was burned out in 1671. In 1663, he had married Elizabeth Duston. His son, Daniel, as is supposed, was in Lothrop's Company—the Flower of Essex—and was killed at Bloody Brook by the Indians Sept. 18, 1675. Button gave to Rev. Thomas Cobbett, (minister at Ipswich about thirty years) some of the facts communicated by him to Increase Mather, concerning the early troubles with the Indians. Button died in 1672 very old.

About 1651, the road ever since known as Mill Street was laid out; and for more than a hundred years, it was known as the "Great Road" leading into the village.

In 1652, the town voted Mr. Ward, the "Teacher," a salary of fifty pounds; also, "that if any one or more shall be disenabled to pay his proportion, that then the rest of the inhabitants shall pay it for him or them to Mr. Ward."

In that year the General Court changed the time for elections in towns from November to March; and with the exception of a short period, the town meetings were held in March, so long as there were town meetings.

A prison, the second in the colony, was that year built at Ipswich. Haverhill donated four pounds seven shillings, to Harvard College. According to the custom of their Saxon ancestors, the flocks and herds were pastured together; and in 1652, James George was appointed town's herdsman; his pay was twelve shillings and six pence a week, in Indian corn and butter. "He was to keep y<sup>e</sup> herd faithfully as a heard ought to be kept; if any be left (strayed) on the Sabbath when y<sup>e</sup> town<sup>e</sup> worship, they who keepe are to goe y<sup>e</sup> next day, doing their best indeavore to find them." He was not permitted to turn his flock into the pasture on the Sabbath, until the "second beating of the drum"—when the people would be gone to meeting.

In 1654 died Thomas Dow, the first adult to die in the settlement.

The ox-common (south of Kenoza) was enlarged

and the whole ordered to be fenced. "All those that will join in the fencing of it, shall have a proportion in it according to the fence they make and maintain, provided that none shall keep more than four oxen in it." Thirty-four persons helped to build the fence and were entitled to keep an equivalent of ninety-two oxen within it. Only oxen, steers and horses were to pasture there. There were other ox-commons, but none so large as this. Some were of only a few acres, for single individuals; others for a number. But this was the great ox-common.

There being no ferryman in 1655, the General Court ordered Robert Haseltine, of Bradford, to keep a ferry, charging "4d. a person, if they pay presently; and 6d. if boockt; and keepe entertainment for horse and man, for one year, unless the General Court take further orders." The year previously the General Court enacted that ministers should be respectably maintained in the several towns; in case of neglect the county courts were directed to assess a tax for that purpose. Notwithstanding the liberal vote of 1652 as to Mr. Ward's salary, there were some, as speedily as 1656, who thought it exorbitant. So great was the disturbance that the council of magistrates intervened August 14th, 1656. Difficulties also existed at Salisbury. The order recites the existence of differences in the two churches, that the council has hereto advised them to convene councils from the neighboring churches to which they have not inclined, and orders the churches in Boston, Cambridge and Ipswich, to send each of them respectively two messengers to meet at Haverhill, August 27th, at 8 o'clock A. M., and "at Salisbury the day after their issuing or rising from Haverhill for ye ends above expressed." Mr. Robert Clements, of Haverhill, and Mr. Samuel Hall of Salisbury, "shall take care for the entertainment of the sayd councill & all persons concerned therein who shall be sattisfied by the Treasurer." One member of the council was that able but bigoted John Norton, who had been colleague at Ipswich with Nathaniel, John Ward's father, and who, in this very year, was called to the first church in Boston, whom the Quakers scornfully called "the chief priest."

There were other than pecuniary difficulties at Haverhill, as appears from the minutes of the council which, upon the second branch, Chase prints at length. There were knotty points of casuistry, which may be more briefly stated. Henry Palmer, a member of the church in Haverhill, having been by a public arbitration censured as a delinquent in point of defamation of Robert Swan, a member of the Rowley Church, was it the duty of the church of Haverhill "to take church notice thereof?" and the council held that it was. But, second, the church at Haverhill is not concluded as to its determination by "the censure of ye arbitrators, . . ." "Because their institution, meanes & ends are divers."

Third. Goodman Palmer did well in presenting the



case, and "there was too great appearance of much iniquity on Goodman Swain's part." Yet as "the witnesses are detected of such falsehood" as renders them incompetent to establish a matter before the church: therefore "Goodman Palmer was not without sin." The acknowledgment hereof is commended to Brother Palmer; "so we desire it may be accepted of the church, and that in such manner as his infirmity herein (too common unto ye best) being forgiven, all regular zeale against sin both in them and others may receive due encouragement."

This case does not require a positive decision whether or not Robert Hazleton gave testimony on oath or not. If it was so taken, it is of no consequence to the church, "Before which a matter is not to stand without two or three witnesses." There being then so much for the negative, and no positive testimony, save that of Thomas Aires, the church cannot receive it as a truth.

"Hence wee conceive the act of Thomas Aires, in charging and urging the prosecution of those Brethren in a church way, who said it was not taken, and that to the Hindrance of the celebration of ye Lord's Supper, then intended to be irregular and in the nature of it of much ill consequence."

The Council subsequently reported to the General Court that "through the blessing of God the differences were in a good measure composed, and their ministers settled amongst them." They decided that Mr. Ward should be paid fifty pounds per annum, in wheat, rye and Indian corn. They also specified how Mr. Ward's rate should be made and collected. Men were to be appointed yearly "to cut, make and bring home his hay and wood," who were to be paid out of his salary."

For these gracious determinations, the next Court directed the constable of Haverhill to levy by way of rate, on the inhabitants of Haverhill, the sum of £12, 19s. for the satisfaction of Mr. John Clements for the charges expended in Haverhill "about the Council."

These events do not seem to have prejudiced the people against Mr. Ward. At a meeting in 1660, ten acres of meadow and two hundred acres of upland were set apart as parsonage land for Mr. Ward and his successors, and when, in 1669, he made a complaint of want of wood, the town voted to add ten pounds to his salary (making it sixty), and that the Selectmen should annually expend it in procuring him cord-wood at six shillings per cord. This provided for about thirty cords, a liberal, but not extravagant allowance, for those days of great open fires.

It appears that at this time the first half of Mr. Ward's salary was paid by a "collection of estates" in August, and all other charges were paid by "a collection of estates in November or December, annually." Upon notice by the Selectmen, every man should bring in to them an account of his estate; if he refused or neglected to bring in an account, or

brought in a false one, it was "in the power of the Selectmen to rate such persons by will, and doom as they please upon account of their defect."

Michael Emerson came into the town in 1656, and settled near the White house on Mill Street. He was offered a grant of land if he "would go back into the woods," which he did. He settled not far from the corner of Primrose and Winter Streets. The land south of Winter Street was part of the tract originally granted him, and Emerson Street preserves his name. He married Hannah Webster, and his eldest daughter, Hannah, marrying Thomas Duston, became, easily, the most famous woman Haverhill has produced. Capt. Nehemiah Emerson, a descendant of Michael, marched on the "Lexington Alarm," leaving his work behind him. He rose from a private to be captain, serving through the whole Revolutionary War, and visiting his home but once. There were also four of his brothers in that army. Chase is authority for the statement that General Washington specially commended Capt. Emerson to a well-known citizen of Haverhill, in later years.

It has been mentioned that William Simmons was ferryman from 1657 over the "Great River." The town directed that if he had only a canoe, he was to ferry single persons for two-pence, and cattle for four-pence each; but if he provided a suitable boat, he should have six-pence a head for cattle, two-pence for sheep and hogs, and three-pence for strangers.

William Simmons was the only new-comer who shared in the third division of meadow, laid out in 1658, at the rate of half an acre to an acre of accommodation, when forty-one persons drew lots.

At that meeting it was voted that if any person had no convenient road to his upland or meadow, upon complaint to the town, two men should be chosen to lay one out for him, whose charges should be defrayed by the town. So many of these roads were laid out that in after years committees had to be sent out to hunt some of them up.

The first deed, apparently, brought to record, was one from Thomas Sleeper and wife to William White, October 11, 1659.

In that year a fourth division of upland was laid out beyond Spiggot River (Spicket), now partly in Salem, N. H. It was to be bounded south by the Merrimac, north by Shatswell's pond, west by the town's bounds, and to run eastward until all the lots were drawn. There were forty-nine lots, of which all but three were drawn. They were a mile long, at the rate of twenty acres to one of accommodation land or house-lot.

The old settlers had begun to draw the lines and to fortify and prepare to defend their titles. In this year they voted that no man should be taken into town as an inhabitant or "town-dweller" without the consent of the town. Also, that none should vote in town affairs without the consent of the town, except as the law gave them the right.





John Clement was probably the first citizen of Haverhill who sailed for Europe. He was drowned on the outward voyage, in 1659, and his brother John was appointed administrator, who seems to have visited England and Ireland in the discharge of his duties.

Notwithstanding their best efforts, the inhabitants were still without a blacksmith in 1658, when Mr. Ward and nineteen others bought Joseph Jewett's house and land for twenty pounds, which they gave to John Johnson, before of Charlestown, provided he would live here seven years, following the trade of a blacksmith, and promising not to work for anybody who refused "to pay towards this purchase until they bring under the selectmen's hands that they will pay." Unlike his predecessors, John Johnson kept his agreement. The house was on the site of the present Exchange building, Water Street. Till 1853, the estate was occupied by the family of Bailey Bartlett, who was a lineal descendant of John Johnson. For two hundred years blacksmithing was carried on in the town almost or quite constantly by some of his descendants, near the spot of his original location.

John Heath, Thomas Lilford and Daniel Ella are names appended to the Johnson agreement, which we have not before met.

At the session of the General Court, in October, 1647, it had been enacted that every township numbering fifty householders should forthwith appoint some one to teach the children to read and write, "whose wages shall be paid either by ye parents or masters of such children, or by ye inhabitants in general, as ye major part of those that order ye prudentials of ye towne shall appoint."

When any town should increase to the number of one hundred householders, they should set up a Grammar School, where youth might be fitted for the university. In case of neglect by any town for a year to discharge this duty, it should pay five pound to the next school "till they shall perform this order."

In 1647 the town of Haverhill had not fifty householders. It was fourteen years before it provided a schoolmaster, and there were periods afterwards in which it obviously neglected its legal duty. As late as 1816 a distinguished native of the town wrote: "This town has never been remarkable for its liberal support of schools. . . No other provision has ever been made for schools than is required by law." That was seventy years ago, and it is believed much has since been done to remove that reproach, if it were then deserved.

The first instructor employed by the town was Thomas Nasse, a peripatetic schoolmaster, who, at different times, taught in Chebacco Parish of Ipswich (now Essex) and at Newbury, where he died, May 18, 1691. His salary was ten pounds from the town, and what he could obtain by private arrangement,

from the parents or guardians of his pupils. He kept school in Haverhill from 1660 to 1673, and perhaps later. Previous to 1670 the school had been kept in some private house, but in that year order was taken for the building of a school-house "as near the meeting-house that now is as may be, which may be convenient for the keeping of a public school in & for the service of a watch-house, & for the entertainment of such persons on the sabbath days at noon as may desire to repair thither, & shall not repair between the forenoon & afternoon exercises to their own dwellings, which house is to be erected upon that which is now the town's common land or reserved for public use."

Voluntary contributions were expected for building the school-house, but if not sufficient, they were to be laid aside, and the whole charge paid by a public rate upon the inhabitants. William White, Peter Ayers and Nathaniel Saltonstall, all were put in charge of the business, which perhaps, did not look altogether promising, as Master Nasse's salary for 1668 was then in arrear, and was not paid till some time afterward.

In 1672 it was voted "that the Selectmen shall hire Thomas Nasse for a schoolmaster, to learn such as shall resort to him to read and write as formerly, who shall be the settled schoolmaster for the town until the town take further order, provided that they do not allow the said Thomas Nasse more than ten pounds by the year, he having the like liberty to agree with the parents or masters of those that come to him as formerly." Next year the salary was "taken off, and no more to be allowed or voted for." It was perhaps thought that the amount received from parents or masters was sufficient for his compensation. The schoolmaster, probably, did not find it such, and threw up the job; for the records of Ipswich Court, for March, 1687, contain the following: "The court having called the presentment of Haverhill for not having a schoolmaster, according to law, in their towne, & finding that there is some provision made for the present, for teaching children, they are released upon that presentment; but the court judging that what is now done and provided by them doth not answer the law, nor is convenient to be rested in, doe order that the town, before the next court at Ipswich, provide an able and meet schoolmaster, that may constantly attend that service, as is usual in such cases, and that the scoole be kept neare the centre of the town." The last proviso would indicate that here, as in many towns at that period, the school was made to meander about, for the convenience of the neighborhood or the master.

It may be conjectured that the town's compliance with the order of the court was merely perfunctory. For ten years the records were not burdened by any reference to a school.

November 9, 1685, a meeting was held "in order to supply, and the pointing a fit person to keep school



in this Town, and make it his only employ to instruct the children or young men, or any of the inhabitants of Haverhill, in reading and in writing, and in cyphering;" and the selectmen were given full power to provide such a person, and agree with him to keep school until the next annual meeting, provided they did not agree to give him, on the public account, more than four pounds in corn till that time. And the following agreement is recorded under the same date:

"We whose names are underwritten have agreed with Mr. James Chadwick to keep the school, to endeavor to teach such as shall resort to him, as they shall desire to read, or write, or cypher, or all of them, until the next annual meeting in February next, for which service of his he shall be paid by the town in general three pounds, besides what he shall have or agree with the scholars for, or their parents or masters, or for want of agreement the said Mr. Chadwick, in his demands not to exceed what usually is paid in other places for schooling, viz.: to have by the week for a Reader one shilling, & for a writer one shilling six pence).

"Dated November 9, 1695, by us,

ROBT. AYER.	} Selectmen
SAM. DAW.	
JOHN. GAY.	

"And consented unto by the other 2.

"JOHN. PADUA, JUN.	} Selectmen.
SAM. WAINWRIGHT."	

The vote and the agreement closely followed the lines of the law of 1647. The vote also indicates that some of the adult inhabitants might possibly be expected to avail themselves of the schoolmaster's abilities.

At the next annual meeting, the selectmen were directed "to agree with Mr. Chadwick or any other person, to make it his employ to keep school in Haverhill for the year ensuing." In 1695, the selectmen were ordered to attend to the settling of "Schools of learning" in town, and to "settle a suitable schoolmaster according to law."

The "Schools of learning" were hardly those of Padua or Paris, and we may judge, from the proceedings of the year 1700, that the town was not inclined, even yet, to go any further in this direction than the law imperatively required. In that year, a building was ordered to be erected for watch-house, school-house, and for any other use to which it might be appropriated. It was built on what is now Main Street, near the top of the hill, and faced the Merri-mac (on the then commons).

June 3d, a grammar school was ordered to be established immediately, and Mr. Richard Saltonstall was appointed to procure a suitable instructor. In July, thirty pounds were raised to be appropriated for that purpose: and the selectmen were ordered "to write a letter to the scholar that Richard Saltonstall had treated with or some other meet person, to write him to come and be the schoolmaster for this town of Haverhill." The step was a bold one, but their courage failed them, for September 12, 1701, at a meeting called to see about a schoolmaster, when "The question being moved by some of the inhabitants whether the town is obliged by the Law to be provided with a Grammar schoolmaster—Yea or no; the Town an-

swers in the negative and therefore do not proceed to do it, because they do not find they have the number of one hundred families or householders which the law mentions."

Among the town charges for 1701, appears the following item: "to the schoolmaster £6," which was ordered paid.

June 5, 1702, the selectmen being ordered to get a schoolmaster for this year "with all the speed they possibly can," engaged one Mr. Tufts and agreed to pay him thirty-four pounds for his services. One's wonder at this hitherto unexampled liberality is checked upon finding that the town had been once more presented for being destitute of a school, and, notwithstanding this spasmodic effort, was made to pay its fine.

July 21, 1703, a meeting was held to see about a schoolmaster, which was adjourned to August 18th, and then to September 15th, when, "After much discourse about getting a schoolmaster, the town, in consideration of their troubles with the Indians, resolved to do nothing in the premises." Other towns, also urged the same disability, and, in November, 1705, the General Court made an order, exempting all towns of less than two hundred families from keeping a grammar school for three years, on account of the general impoverishment caused by the Indian Wars.

Slight efforts were made to supply the lack of public grants by private enterprise. September 2, 1707, Thomas Ayer petitioned the commoners "for a small piece of land to set a house on near the meeting-house that so said Ayer's wife might be the better accommodated for the keeping of school to teach children to read." The selectmen were empowered to lay him out a piece for that purpose, to enjoy during her life-time. Alas! Ayer's wife, born Ruth Milford, with her youngest child, Ruth, was killed by the Indians, August 29, 1708. The disconsolate widower, marrying the widow Blasedell, they gave to their only child, in 1711, the name of the massacred mother and child.

Obadiah Ayer kept a school half the time in 1710 and 1711, for which the town paid him £15 each year. His did not rise, however, to the dignity of a grammar school, as he only taught "reading, writing and cyphering."

Obadiah Ayer, of Haverhill, graduated at Harvard in 1710.

Much is said, in these days, about the general disposition to neglect civic duty, especially as to municipal affairs. Our fathers took summary measures to check this tendency. We have seen two respectable citizens fined for not getting to town meeting in season. In 1650, it was voted that the name of every freeholder should be kept in the town's book, and he should attend town meeting when legally named: "and having lawful warning he is to come within half an hour after the meeting is begun and continue





until sunset if the meeting hold so long, under the penalty of half a bushel of Indian corn or the value of it."

It has been stated that in the beginning, it was voted that lands should be divided according to the estate possessed by each man, up to two hundred pounds, and that rates or taxes should be assessed according to the land allotted to each. There being only one or two persons who reached the maximum of estate, and only one, so far as appears whose property went beyond it, this was a sufficiently convenient and equitable way of making taxes. At first all were shareholders, partners. Then there began to come in persons without estate, of whom not much account was taken at first. But, as their number increased, the original settlers and partners finding that their township was popular and that new settlers were arriving fast enough so that there was no longer occasion to offer them inducements, came to the not unnatural conclusion that those who had ventured out into the wilderness and endured privations, ought to enjoy the fruit of their enterprise. In other words, they determined that to them, their heirs and successors alone, belonged not only the lands already divided, but the common lands still remaining. Notwithstanding great opposition, to be dealt with more at length in another place, they carried their point, and maintained their ground. But this condition of things, while it recognized them as owners of all the lands, left them as such liable also to bear in taxation all the burdens of the community. It was necessary to take another step. Accordingly, in 1657 it was voted that if any person moved into town who was not a freeholder, he should be taxed for the support of church and State, according to his "visible estate," or by estimation of the Selectmen.

In 1662, the great ox-common was divided into lots which were distributed to those entitled to pasture in it; and although smaller ox-commons continued to exist, every man had a right to have his share set off to him in severalty, and the tendency now was strongly toward individual ownership.

The following order, adopted by the town of Ipswich, March 15, 1660, shows very clearly that historically the general course of things in the colony was such as we have indicated for Haverhill. The pioneers in the day of small things offered inducements by the grant of lands to insure themselves useful citizens and good neighbors; when their towns became firmly established, they looked upon newcomers with jealousy, as seeking to obtain privileges they had not labored for, and determined to secure the residue of their common lands to themselves. "For as much as it is found by experience, that the common lands of this town are overburdened by the multiplying of dwelling-houses, contrary to the interest and meaning of the first inhabitants in their granting of house lots and other lands to such as came among them; to the end such inconveniences may be pre-

vented for the future, it is ordered that no house, henceforth erected, shall have any right to the common lands of this town, nor any person, inhabiting such house, make use of any pasture timber or wood growing upon any of said common lands, on pretext of any right or title belonging to any such house hereafter built, without express leave of the town. It is further ordered, that the Seven men, in behalf of the town, petition the next General Court, for the confirmation of this order." In accordance with the petition thus outlined, and, undoubtedly in concurrence with the desires of the major and most wealthy and influential portion of Haverhill and other towns similarly situated, the General Court passed a law, May 30, 1660, that "no cottage or dwelling shall have commonage, except those now built, or which may be by consent of the commoners or towns."

The passage of this law caused the beginning of a practice to record the erection of dwelling-houses in the town books, as is shown by this extract from the Haverhill records:

"Cottages: Whereas, the law provides for the prevention of the great inconvenience and damage that otherways would accrue by those persons that have built houses or cottages upon the common or their own land, since 1660, that have not lawful right thereunto, to the great prejudice of the house proprietors. Therefore we whose names are hereunto subscribed, do judge it meet for the prevention as aforesaid, and do hereby set down the names of those that have built houses upon the Common of Haverhill, or their own land, since the year aforesaid.

Samuel Davis,	Thomas Whittier,	Stephen Webster,
James Davis, Jr.,	Abraham Whiticker,	James Pecker,
John Swadlow,	Samuel Cudby,	Daniel Ladd, Jr.,
Samuel Gille, Sen.,	Samuel Currier,	Mathias Batten,
Nathaniel Smith,	Benjamin Page,	Stephen Dow,
Will Sell,	John Page, Jr.,	John Eyer,
	Joshua Woodman,	

(Signed) George Browne, Daniel Ladd, Jr., John Haseltine, Joseph Davis. Selectmen of Haverhill, in the year 1668."

It will be observed that the Selectmen do not undertake to decide whether any of these persons, or if any who, were entitled to a right of commonage. They simply record the fact that they had built houses since 1660, because the law of 1660 provided that no dwelling-house thereafter built should have commonage unless built by consent of the commoners or the town. Some of the builders, as we know, were already commoners, some, probably were not, and would not be entitled to commonage without special vote. But there was now a point of departure. Every builder, since 1660, must establish his right of commonage; it could not be presumed in his favor. From another point of view—the historical and to the genealogist—these lists are of great value, as showing who were residents of the town at the time and when they built their houses. This record is continued at subsequent dates:

"A list of more houses that are and fall under the law made in '66), prohibiting them from the privileges in common lands.

Joseph Davis,	Robert Ford,	John Kingsbury,
Daniel Ladd, Sen.,	Isaac Colbie,	Thomas Ayers,
	Joseph Johnson,	

"As attest, Henry Palmer, George Brown, James Pecker, Robert Swan, Steven Webster, Selectmen in 1669."





"A list of more houses built which fall under the law made 1660, which prohibits them from privileges in Common lands.

James Kingsbery,	Gilbert Willford,	Philip Eastman,
Thomas Duston,	Math. Hartman,	Josiah Gage,
Dan Ladd, Jr., 2d.	Rob. Emerson,	Jno. Hartshorn,
Thomas Davis,	Joseph Peasley,	Thos. Hartshorn,
Peter Green,	Joseph Page,	Widdow Ayers,
Josiah Hutchins,	Josiah Heath,	James Sanders,
Samuel Hutchins,	Nicholas Browne,	Jno. Heath, Jr.,
Stephen Webster, 2d	Samuel Ladd,	Samuel Bilknap,
Thomas Eastman,	Nathan Singletary,	Peter Brewer.

"This account was entered January 20th, '75, by the Selectmen William White, George Brown, Daniel Hendricks, Thomas Fatten, Selectmen in 1675."

"February the 1st, 1677. An account of more cottages erected since January, 25, '75.

Thomas Duston,	Rob. Hastings,	James Saunders, 2d
John Robie,		Ezra Roll.

"As Attest, Henry Palmer, Andrew Guile, George Brown."

"More cottages erected since February, 1st, '77.

Sam Ayers,	Thomas Duston, 2d,	John Whittier,
Joseph Kingsbery,	John Williams,	John Haseltine, Jr.
Amos Singletary,		Benj. Singletary.

"This account was entered January 13th, 1679, by order of Henry Palmer, George Browne, Daniel Hendricks, Robert Emerson, selectmen."

"More cottages erected, entered Feb. 27, 81.

"Nath. Haseltine, Jno. Johnson, Jun., Jno. Stockbridge, Saml. Dalton, John Clement."

Where the selectmen say these house-holders are prohibited from privileges in common lands, they simply mean *may be prohibited*. Thus, Daniel Ladd, Senior, Peasley and others, whoever has read the preceding pages can easily select as among those who had received "Accommodation Grants," and therefore were entitled to commonage; but the fact of erecting houses after 1660 put them upon proof to establish their title, if ever questioned.

Thomas Duston, mentioned twice in the above list, is Thomas, husband of the famous Hannah. He sold a house to Peter Green, above named, in 1676. He was married December, 1677, and Chase conjectures that the second house which he appears to have built, was erected in the summer of that year, and was the one in which he lived at the time his wife was taken prisoner in 1697.

The business of granting lands, of "laying down" lands granted, and "taking up" others, consumed so much time at the town-meeting that in 1663 it was voted there should be a general town-meeting holden on the first Tuesday in March annually, "for the granting and selling and exchanging of lands or commonages, if the town see cause, and therefore it is hereby ordered that all the other towns or other meetings whatever, after this day is ended, shall be and are hereby prohibited from acting upon those grants of lands or commonages." The first Tuesday in March continued to be the time for holding the annual meeting until 1675, when it was changed to the last Tuesday in February.

Before this time great trouble had been occasioned by the failure frequently to make record of land grants at the time when made—thus Samuel Gild's grant of 1663 was not entered until 1690. In 1664, this evil was rectified, and two years after it was ordered that all who claimed to own land in the town should bring

in their title to the same, that it might be duly examined and approved. The word *farm* appears in the records for the first time in 1663, showing that matters were becoming settled. The next year the selectmen were authorized to sell land to pay the expense of building a pound, which was the first, notwithstanding the order of the court in 1649. It was of wood, and stood near the meeting-house.

In 1664, John Carleton succeeded Richard Littlehale as town recorder and Clerk of the writs, holding those offices till 1668, when he was succeeded by Nathaniel Saltonstall, who remained in office till 1700—thirty-two years. At the May session of the General Court, 1668, and in answer to a petition, Capt. Nathaniel Saltonstall was authorized to join persons in marriage—an office which our fathers preferred to have performed by the magistrate rather than by the clergy. Previous to 1664, there were thirty-seven marriages in the town.

In 1664, a list was prepared showing that there were sixty-four freemen in town headed by "Mr. Ward our preacher." That year a cow-common was laid out, extending from Little River to North Meadow, thence to East Meadow.

In 1665 a road was ordered laid out from "Holt's Rocks," just below the present Rocks Bridge to the Country Bridge, in the East Meadow. "Holt's Rocks" took their name from Nicholas Holt one of the first settlers of Newbury, after of Andover, who kept the first bridge near the Rocks. In 1667, a highway "down the valley to Holt's Rocks" was ordered. This year, 1665, Nathaniel Saltonstall was chosen captain of the militia company, and George Browne, ensign. The officers were young and doubtless infused new vigor into the military force. The flag was a ground field-green, with a red cross, "and a white field in ye angle according to ye ancient custom of our own English Nation, and the English plantations in America, and our own practice in our ships and other vessels, by order of ye Major General." October, 1669, the General Court ordered "that George Browne be left and James Parker ensigne to Haverhill military company, under the conduct of Nathaniel Saltonstall, Esq."

This year, November 17, there was a "thanksgiving for relief from drouth, and lengthening out the harvest." The highway from Haverhill Ferry to Topsfield was accepted at Ipswich Court.

In successive years, the duties of the selectmen were defined. By a vote of 1666, they should "have power to act in any prudential affairs according to the laws of the country, excepting in the disposing of lands." Two years later it was voted that one of the former selectmen should be re-elected each year; but the next year this rule was dispensed with, and, at the next annual meeting repealed. In that form it was probably found impracticable to determine which one should enjoy the honor and glory of office, not so much desired then as now. Thus, when Thomas



Whittier was chosen constable it was voted that he should be excused provided he presented some one to take his place whom the selectmen should declare satisfactory. In 1770, Henry Palmer, refusing to act as constable after being chosen, "was fined according to law." At this time the selectmen were directed "to provide a herdsman or herdsmen, and bulls for the use of the town." Those who lived without the compass of Pond River and the Great Plain fence, were to "pay 6d. a head for privileges of herdsmen and bull."

In 1669, the town set forth by vote the powers of the selectmen at length, and again in 1670. Substantially, they were as follows: 1. To order and appoint when Mr. Ward's salary should be paid, levy rates for same, and to take them by distress if not paid otherwise. 2. To observe all orders of the town, and collect all fines. 3. To pay all debts of the town by fines due or by rates in general. 4. To make all rates necessary to defray the town's debts. 5. To call town-meetings at discretion. 6. To see that all laws of the country were observed and kept. 7. To act in all prudential affairs of the town according to law. 8. To observe all orders of the town as near as they can.

In July, 1667, was laid out still another quantity of "accommodation" land. The following is a list of the names to whom it was allotted, and the number of acres to each:

acres.	acres.
"Mr. Ward..... 26	Goodman Williams..... 6
James Davis, Sr. & Jr. 29	John Clements..... 5
George Browne..... 11	Hugh Sherratt..... 8
John Eaton, Sr..... 10	John Robinson..... 1
Henry Palmer..... 9	Goodman Butler..... 1
Robert Eyre..... 4	Henry Savage..... 4
Olgood Eyre..... 8	Joseph Martin..... 5
John Ayres..... 8	George Corley..... 5
Win. White..... 5	Mill Lot..... 6
Goodman Peasley..... 12	James Pecker..... 2
Goodman Gutter..... 1	Richard Littlehale..... 4
Goodman Tiler..... 4	Mr. Collin..... 10
Mr. Clements, John & John..... 40	John Renington..... 4
Old Galloway..... 8	Robert Swan..... 2
Goodman Heath..... 10	John Hutchinson's..... 6
Andrew Grady..... 6	Daniel Eila..... 2
Goodman Noise..... 4	Joseph Johnson..... 2
Thos. Harte..... 20	John Davis..... 6
Thos. Davis..... 18	John Clements..... 3
Goodman Ladd..... 6	Daniel Hendricks..... 3
	John Robinson..... 6

At the annual meeting of 1668, "John Johnson was chosen Moderator for the present meeting." This is the first time a moderator is mentioned in the records, though one was regularly chosen afterwards. Perhaps the new town clerk Nathaniel Saltonstall many have been more precise than his predecessors. Indeed, he seems to have been an excellent clerk, although he indulged himself in occasional comments upon the town proceedings, sometimes in Latin, what the historian Gibbon calls "the obscurity of a learned language." On one of these occasions, the town by vote directed the clerk's comment to be expunged from the record.

At the same meeting, a committee was chosen, to whom the inhabitants were to "make known by what title they lay any claim to any land in the town."

Several persons were fined for being absent from the town meeting.

It was ordered "that what papers should be brought to the Recorder to be entered in the town book of Records, it shall be in his power to record them, provided that Ensign Brown, James Davis, Jun., and Robert Clements, Jr., give their assent." The recorder was much annoyed by requests to record papers which should be recorded elsewhere or were not worth recording anywhere. Thus he prefaces the record of certain deeds with this note: "The copy of several deeds, which to satisfy the grantees, are entered, who they are told that it is no legal county record of Deeds."

Henry Kingsbery and John Renington are names first found in the records this year.

The town once passed a vote restricting ownership of seats in the meeting-house to inhabitants; but the following was much more hospitable in temper. The town, by a major vote, did make choice of Andrew Greeley, sen, to keep the ferry at Haverhill; provided that he agree and will carry over the inhabitants of the town and the inhabitants of the town of Merrimack (Bradford) over against us, for three pence an horse and a penny a man; and that he will carry all ministers over free that come upon visitation to us, and in particular Mr. Symes (of Bradford) and that, if the inhabitants of the town over against us do come over to meet with us on the sabbath days, they shall have the free use of the ferry boat or boats, for the occasion, without paying anything." Greeley was also to pay forty shillings to Mrs. Simons, the widow of the former ferryman.

The town meetings at that time often commenced as early as 7 A.M., and were never adjourned to a later hour than 8 A.M. Debate was abundant and notwithstanding the early hour of meeting, it frequently took three days to transact the business. Still they managed to convince each other at last; for it being the recorder's custom to give the names of those who "dissented" from any vote passed, very few were ordinarily found in the minority. About this time it was resolved that no vote passed after sunset should be valid.

It is recorded in 1671, "Robert Emerson, Ephraim Davis and John Heath, Jun., desiring to take the oath of fidelity to this colony, it was administered to them by N. Saltonstall, Commissioner." No one was allowed to vote for magistrates or deputies unless he had taken the freeman's oath, or "oath of fidelity." A man might be a freeholder and not a freeman. A freeman according to this understanding, was one who, had taken the freeman's oath, and a freeholder was one who either by grant, purchase or inheritance, had become entitled to a share in the common and





undivided lands of Haverhill. But it seems all the inhabitants were permitted to vote for town officers and to raise money. In 1631, it was enacted in the Massachusetts colony that only church members should be admitted freemen. As late as 1676, five-sixth of the men in the colony were not voters, because not church members.

In 1673, the clerk was directed to enter "in the book" all the previous orders and grants of the town, "which stand in loose papers and sheets." There has always been great difficulty in studying the early records of the town from this fact that many of them were written on such "loose papers" and were recorded without reference to their respective dates, while some were without date. Doubtless their strict chronology has not always been followed in the annals.

At Hampton Court in 1672, it was ordered that John Littlehale of Haverhill, who "liveth in an house by himself, contrary to a law of the country whereby hee is subject to much sin; and having had information of some of his accounts which are in no way to be allowed of but disproved and discountenanced," "doe forthwith, at farthest, within the time of six weeks next after the date hereof, remove himself from the said place and solitary life and settle himself in some orderly family in the said towne and bee subject to the orderly rules of family government in said family (unless hee remove out of the said towne within the time) and if he doe not perform this order as aforesaid, then this Courte doth order that the Selectmen doe forthwith order and place the said John to bee in some orderly family as aforesaid, which if he shall refuse to submit unto, then these are in his majestie's name to require the Constable of said town upon his knowledge of it or information, to apprehend the person of said John and carry him to the house of correction in Hampton, there to bee kept and sett to work untill he shall be freed by order of authority; and this order shall bee a discharge and security."

John, son of Richard Littlehale, the pioneer, was born at Haverhill in 1650, one of twelve children. Our fathers did not approve of bachelors, and, in many ways, imposed absurd penalties upon them by by-laws and in other ways—as, for instance, by compelling them in one town to kill an extra number of blackbirds and crows. It was their policy, of course, to increase the population of the wilderness. In the present instance, the father had twelve children, the son was like to have none. Besides, the solitary life tended to disorder, and in this case, the intimation is that Littlehale "was subject to sin" in fact as well as from situation. Nothing is known to his discredit, except what may be inferred from the order of the Court. He escaped the threatened penalties by entering "some orderly family;" but he had not been ordered to marry and did not do so for

forty-four years, when, being sixty-six years old, he took a wife and had two children.

So much has been said of the duties of the selectmen that it should be added they were also "to have some one to sweep the meeting-house duly, decently and orderly." For all their services they were to receive annually fifty shillings, distributable amongst them, "to each man according to his services."

March 1674, John Keyzar of Salem, was granted a piece of land, with privileges on the common, etc., if he would come "and set up his trade of tanner." This he did and in 1682 the grant was confirmed to him and his heirs forever. In 1683, he was publicly admonished by the moderator of the town-meeting for keeping his tan-vats open by which cattle and swine had been killed; "and in special that mischief may not come unto children, which may occasion his own life to come upon triall." Two years after Keyzar asked leave to sell his land; but the town informed him "that they did and do expect the conditions therein mentioned to be attended, or else the said John may leave the same to the town, with the buildings and improvements by him made thereon, to the town for public use."

The town records this year for the first time state that meetings were called by the "writ of the selectmen, published and placed on file." The publication was by a fixing a copy of the warrant to the door of the meeting-house, in which, of course, the meetings were held.

The Court empowered the selectmen, upon their petition, to "bind out young ones into service"—provided their indentures met the approval of "worshipful Major Saltonstall."

From the records of the County Court in 1673, 1674 and 1675, have been extracted the minutes of sentences imposed upon residents of Haverhill: Nathaniel Emerson was "admonished for being in company with Peter Cross and others, at Jonas Gregory's, and drinking of stolen wine." "Robert Swan was fined 20s. for being drunk and cursing." "Michael Emerson was fined 5s. for his cruel and excessive beating of his daughter with a flayle swingel, and kicking of her." We may be sure no punishment would have been imposed upon a father for beating his child unless the correction had been "cruel and excessive." Parental authority was jealously upheld. This daughter was Elizabeth Emerson, who lived to incur the extreme penalty of the law for crime. "Two daughters of Hannah Bosworth were fined ten shillings each for wearing silk." Daniel Ela was fined ten shillings for profanity, and two shillings more for his "reviling speeches."

In 1675 Haverhill was rated twenty-fifth of the forty-nine towns of the colony. That year the time of holding the town meeting was changed to the last Tuesday in February.

At that meeting Michael Emerson was chosen to "view and seal all leather in the town." In 1677



Emerson "complained," probably because the duties were burdensome or disagreeable, and Andrew Greely was "joined with him."

The next year, Feb. 27, 1676, William Thompson asked to be "accepted a townsman, to dwell here and follow his trade of shoemaking," but the town refused to have him "by a clear and full vote." In 1677 Peter Patie, a married man whom the town had "hitherto accounted of as a journeyman shoemaker," "making a motion to the town to grant him a piece of land to settle upon," his motion according to law was rejected. The moderator also declared to him "that it was the duty of the Grand Jurymen to look after him."

Patie was probably an irresponsible person. In 1680 he was presented to the Court for being absent from his wife for several years, and in the following year he was presented for having another wife in Virginia. Nevertheless, Peter "stuck." November 8, 1682, Peter Patie married Sarah Gile and had eight children by her. This is supposed to be the same as Peter Patie. In 1694 he was chosen constable by a "plentiful, clear and legal paper vote." As late as 1710 he was the regular ferry-man at "Patie's Ferry."

Notwithstanding this cold welcome to shoemakers, others soon applied. At the annual meeting in 1679, "upon the request of Benjamin Webster and Samuel Parker, two young men and shoemakers, that the town would give them libertie to live in this town to follow the trade, having hired a house to that end; the town by their vote doe grant their motion and accept of them so as to live in town and follow the trade of shoemaking."

Daniel Ela, who in 1677 had been licensed to keep an ordinary for one year, but had been unable to avail himself of the privilege on account of the small-pox in his family, had liberty from the Court to sell "Wine, Beer, Cyder and provisions to horse and man, or travelers in Haverhill."

The town voted in 1679 to choose a committee to look after the accounts of the selectmen for the preceding year; also, that a committee should be chosen for that purpose every year thereafter.

From the records of the General Court for 1680, it appears that Haverhill, with twenty-one other towns, had failed to pay a subscription in aid of Harvard College—either that made as far back as 1652 or some other later. The Court ordered the selectmen of the delinquent towns to inquire into the affair and report, under a penalty of twenty pounds. Nothing more appearing about it, the long delayed subscription was probably paid.

Pastor Ward, having lost his wife March 24, 1680, probably gave intimation of his desire to be relieved in part from ministerial care. The record says: "At a town meeting Dec. 22, 1680, held after lecture, Nath'l. Saltonstall, Lieut. Broune, Tho. Whittier, Wm. White and Dan'l Ela were chosen a committee

"to look out for and agree with and obtain forthwith and procure upon the best terms they can get, some meet and able person to be a present help and assistant to Mr. Ward, our minister, now in his old age, in the work of the ministry in preaching."

From the beginning it had been the custom to have a weekly lecture,—in most towns on Thursday, but in Haverhill from an early date, on Friday. The services commenced about 11 A. M. About 1750 the weekly were superseded by monthly lectures.

The committee thus chosen were also instructed "to look out a place for a convenient situation for a minister," and "to agree with anyone upon purchase or exchange of land, or if they meet not with a bargain to their mind, then to set out such of the town's common land as they shall judge most convenient for a place for the ministry."

June 24, 1681, the committee reported that not finding any suitable place on purchase or exchange, John Haseltine, Senior had "given two acres to the town for the perpetual use of the ministry," and that they had laid out a piece adjoining it for the same purpose. Their doings were approved, and the land was granted for that purpose "forever." This land was situated north of the present Winter Street, and between Little River and the common. The gift was apparently the first private donation in this town for public uses.

The committee reported that they had not been able to get a new minister, whereupon another committee was chosen in their place, with instructions to do so, "they taking the advice of Mr. Ward, our present aged minister." Josiah Gage was agreed with, to build a house for the new minister.

All these movements came to nothing for the present. Josiah Gage did not build the house, and in 1682, a committee was chosen to find somebody else to do it. At a special meeting April 4th, a committee was appointed "to treat with Samuel Dalton or John Stockbridge for either of their houses which they have of late erected in town," for the use of the new minister. In this movement towards novelties, a new meeting-house began to be talked about. At the June meeting of the previous year, a proposition to take action was voted down, says the recorder, "by the additional and willful votes of many prohibited by law from voting." The gallery vote for women was probably a compromise between the parties. The subject again came up in March, 1682, but without result.

In June there was another meeting, "called at the request of Mr. Ward" "to see about a new minister." Ten pounds were raised to get one.

In July, the town let the "parsonage farm" to Daniel Bradley, for twenty-one years, Mr. Ward probably having given it up, on account of age and ill-health.

September 18th, there was still another meeting about a new minister. It was voted "to proffer Mr.





Jeremiah Cushing or some other meet person that may be agreed upon, £100 in corn or provisions, besides the £60 proffered for annual salary during Mr. Ward's life," to be raised as a town rate and paid "part money, part wheat, part rye and part Indian Corn, all good, dry, sweet, clean and merchantable." The committee previously chosen was continued "to carry on designs with Mr. Cushing, whom the town hath had some experience of." Three weeks later, it was voted to buy of Samuel Simons his house and nine acres of land for the use of the ministry, for which they agree to give him "forty acres near Fishing River, and £30 in wheat, rye and corn." They also voted to give Mr. Cushing, in addition to previous offers, "four cow-common rights" and "twenty cords of wood at his house annually."

In 1683, at the annual meeting, it was decided to send a messenger to get an answer from Mr. Cushing, unless he would "please to come and give us a visit, that we may receive answer from himself." It was voted to raise one-half of the hundred pounds offered him, immediately; also to buy "the house where Henry Palmer lived and died, for the use of the ministry forever." The price to be paid was twenty acres of land "towards Great Pond," said to be the first time that body of water is mentioned by name in the records. In June there was another meeting. It was called to consider Mr. Cushing's settlement, but all its time was engrossed about the proposition for a new meeting-house. All favored the new meeting-house, but there was an irreconcilable difference of opinion about its location. In favor of building a new meeting-house upon the old site were Sergeant John Johnson, Mr. John Ward, minister, Nathaniel Saltonstall, Lieutenant George Browne, William White, Thomas Whittier, John Whittier, Robert Emerson, Robert Clement, Jotham Hendrick, James Davis, Sr., Daniel Ela, John Page, Sr., and Samuel Shepherd, in all fifteen. Many of these, as we know, live on or near the present Water Street and in the vicinity of the old meeting-house. The following "were against the settling of the meeting-house where the meeting-house now stands (forever) but that this meeting-house that now is may stand as long as is convenient: " Thomas Davis, Daniel Lad, sen. Sam<sup>l</sup>. Gild, Peter Ayer, Onesiph<sup>r</sup> Mash, sen. John Haseltine sen. Micha. Emerson, Geo. Corlis, Rob. Ford, Sam<sup>l</sup>. Simons, Tim. Ayers, John Robie, Sam<sup>l</sup>. Hutchins, John Corlis, Sam<sup>l</sup>. Ayer, Thomas Duston, John Hartshorne, Thos. Ayer, Joseph Kingsberry, John Gild, Sam<sup>l</sup>. Kingsberry, Joseph Hutchins, Stephen Webster, Nath<sup>l</sup>. Haseltine, Tho. Hartshorne, Rob<sup>t</sup>. Swan, sen., Will<sup>m</sup> Neff, Josiah Gage, Ezekl Lad, Rob<sup>t</sup> Swan, Jun., Philip Eastman, Henry Kembal, Joseph Johnson, Mat Harriman." Total, thirty-four.

And in this last list we find the names of those who, like Michael Emerson, had gone "back into the wood," such as the Ayers, Mash (Marsh) the Corlisses, Duston, Neff, etc., etc.

Mr. Cushing, so much desired, who probably had preached in Haverhill and pleased the people, did not accept their invitation. He afterwards became pastor of the church in Scituate.

October 27, 1683, another meeting was called about settling a minister. It was first voted to dismiss the former committee and next, to choose a new committee "to procure a person to join with Mr. Ward in the work of the ministry at Haverhill." This committee, the third upon the subject, was composed of Corporal Peter Ayer, Corporal Josiah Gage and Robert Swan, Sr.

At the annual meeting in 1654, Daniel Ela and William Starlin made a "proffer to the town to sell their livings, house and land, for a situation for a minister or the ministry," and a committee was chosen to treat with them "in the time of intermission, before the afternoon" and report. On their report, the town declined Ela's offer as "too difficult too comply with and perform," but decided to treat further with Starlin, through the committee, who were to report at an adjourned meeting, next day. It was then voted to give him one hundred pounds for his house and land as follows: "Ten acres of land at the Fishing River, near to Robert Emerson's," convenient "for the setting up of a corn mill there," at three pounds per acre; and the remaining seventy pounds to be paid in merchantable corn, in two payments, for which a rate was ordered.

Subsequently, (1686) Daniel Ela offered to sell his "housing and land by the meeting-house" to the town for a parsonage, and to take as part pay, the house and land previously purchased of William Starlin; but, after long debate, the town declined to treat with him.

In 1682, for the first time, the moderator was chosen by "a paper vote," and it was determined that in the future the selectmen should be chosen in the same manner, "one at a time." This was the beginning of written ballots for town officers. In 1684, it was ordered that in choosing selectmen, votes should be brought in "for five several distinct persons in one paper at one time, cut between the names, so that they may hang together; and when all the papers so brought in are sorted, those five men that have the greatest number of votes, as it is usual in the public elections on nominations for the country, shall be the men who are chosen to serve for the selectmen for the year ensuing." But in 1687, this order was rescinded, and "the former ancient practice of putting in for but one person at a time ordered to be attended to." The other method was probably too complicated for the slenderly trained arithmeticians of that day.

When the selectmen of 1685 were chosen, it was found that a majority were not freemen, as the law required, and "without reflection or disrespect, Daniel Bradley was left out and Josiah Gage chosen in his room."





There had been "a beaten way" before, but at this time, a highway was laid out "from Amesbury meeting-house by Country Bridge to Haverhill." A highway was also laid out "above Spicket as far as Haverhill lands go in that direction." One had been previously laid out here, but, by disuse, it had become "uncertain."

At the annual meeting in 1683, Francis Wainwright, a merchant of Ipswich, obtained leave for his son Simon to settle in town, and use timber to build him a house and a "Ware-house." Simon immediately came to Haverhill and was probably the first trader in the town.

West Bridge, at Sawmill River, was so much damaged by floods this spring, that the town chose a committee to rebuild it.

Daniel Ela was fined forty shillings by the court for ill-treating his wife, and William White complained of him for cruelty to her again the next year.

In 1686, a committee, "by virtue of an order from the Selectmen," reported that the following "had trespassed upon the Town's ways and common land by their fencing of them in:" Joseph Greelee, Joseph Peasley, Samuel Pearson, Samuel Shepherd, Daniel Ela, Edward Brumidge, Sergeant Johnson, Peter Patie, Lieutenant Browne or S. Ford, Benjamin Singletry, John Gild, Robert Swan, Stephen Davis, Daniel Hendrick, John Davis, Edward Clarke, Stephen Dow, Abraham Belknap, Thomas Davis, John Whittier. About this time, a rule was adopted that all petitions to the town should be in writing.

The town permitted swine to go unyoked if their owners would be responsible for damages.

In 1687, Joseph Peaslee being chosen constable by paper-votes (or written ballots, now first employed for other offices than moderator and selectmen) "made his plea for freedom," *i. e.*, asked to be released from that duty. Not being permitted to decline, he moved that a second constable be chosen "because the town was large and many lived remote, so that one man could not well do the work of warning meetings and gathering of rates alone." John Ayer, Jr., was accordingly chosen second constable. They were permitted to divide their wards and work as they might agree. They could not agree at all, and the town released Ayer and left Peaslee to do all alone. Soon after, however, and for many years, two constables were regularly chosen.

The first mention of sheep is in 1684, when "the Proprietors of the Great Plain, thinking to lay-down the said field for some years to be improved for a sheep-pasture," the town gave leave for them to fence it, choose officers, and make all necessary regulations for that purpose." In 1887 it was ordered:—"It being the interest and desire of the inhabitants, for the sake of back, belly and purse, to get into a stock, and a way to keep a stock of sheep, in which all endeavours hitherto have been invalid and of no effect, for a further trial: The Selectmen have hereby power

granted them to call forth the inhabitants capable of labor, with suitable tools, and in suitable companies, about Michaelmas, to clear some land at the town's end, sides, or skirts, as they in their discretion shall think meet to direct, to make it capable and fit for sheep with the less hazzard; and he that is warned as above, and doth not accordingly come and attend the service, shall pay a fine of two shillings per day."

"With the less hazzard," shows that sheep were still in great peril from the wolves. Amesbury had repealed the forty shillings bounty for wolf-heads two years before.

But Coffin estimates that in 1685 there were over five thousand sheep in Newbury. Shepherds were employed and hurdles used in pasturing them. The commons of Haverhill were admirably adapted to sheep husbandry.

What the boundaries of Haverhill should be occupied the attention of its first settlers largely for many years. October 7, 1649, the General Court appointed a committee "to view the bounds between Colchester (Salisbury) and Mr. Warde's plantation." This was "to view." At the next June court, a committee was appointed "to set out the bounds of Salisbury and Pentucket, alias Haverhill." In May, 1643, the Court granted the new town a parcel of meadow-land, "west of Haverhill about six miles." In 1647, the inhabitants having petitioned the General Court for a tract of land to enlarge the town, that body, in reply, expressed, in effect, an opinion that "four miles square or such a proportion, will accommodate a sufficient tract of land;" and appointed a committee to view the place and report. This was not at all what the petitioners wanted. The Indian deed gave them much more than this, and their desire was to be enlarged and not contracted in space. They wanted a great town. Nothing came, therefore, out of this application. The matter was dropped.

But in 1650 the General Court again appointed a committee to settle the bounds of Haverhill and Salisbury; and in December of that year Haverhill appointed a committee to meet a similar committee from Salisbury, "to agree with them, if they can, and to lay out the bounds between us." The town committees were unable to agree, and at the May Session, 1651, the General Court appointed a new committee to lay out the bounds of Haverhill, which reported in October, and their report was confirmed. The order of confirmation recites the former determination to confine the town to four miles square, "or such a tract of land," and the late appointment of a committee of four, "or any two of them, to lay out their said boundes, which Joseph Jewett and William Wilder havinge done accordinge to the Courtes graunt, this Court (at the request of the inhabitants of Haverhill) doth confirm their said bounds, as they are now layd out by the persons above mentioned." The actual bounds determined upon are not given. A



cursory inspection of this order would lead to the conclusion that the committee had set off a tract substantially four miles square, in which the inhabitants had acquiesced. But we know the eager desire of the people for a great town exhibited long afterwards. Whence we cannot but come to the conclusion that the words, "or such a tract of land" really covered, in their estimation, a much larger quantity of land. At all events this definite settlement was very soon disturbed again. May, 1654, Haverhill sent in a new petition about its bounds with Salisbury, stating that a "great mistake" had been made in the prior running of the line, to the disadvantage of Haverhill. The committee appointed to investigate the matter reported in September that such a mistake had been made, as "we find acknowledged by both parties," and recommended that a new line should be run. The report was accepted in October. But this by no means ended the matter, which continued to be agitated until 1667, when the General Court made the following order: "As a final issue of all differences between the two towns of Haverhill and Salisbury Newtown, in reference to their bounds, the Court having heard what all parties could say therein, judge meet to confirm the line which was run by the committee and the agreement of both towns, beginning at the rear of Holts Rocks, near Merrimack River's side, and running up on the N. W. line, as they apprehended to Brandy Brow, and from thence to Darby Hill, and so to a white pine about a mile further, marked H. S., and this is to be the dividing line between them."

One would have supposed Haverhill bounds were now pretty well settled; but when in 1660, the General Court granted Major General Dennison a tract of land "on the other side of Merrimack, about six miles above Andover," it was found that Haverhill claimed the land as within the bounds of their town. Whereupon the court ordered "that the townsmen of Haverhill be required by warrant from the secretary to appear at the next sessions of this court, to show a reason why they have marked bound trees at so great a distance from their town up Merrimack River, and also to give an account of the bounds of their town, and upon what right they lay claim to so long a tract of land."

The town appointed James Davis and Theophilus Shatswell "to answer the warrant of the General Court concerning the bounds." Their compensation was fixed at "ten groats per day each," three shillings, four pence.

Davis and Shatswell attended to their commission; but would appear to have failed in establishing the town's claims, were one to judge only from the following order of the General Court: "This Court having in October, 1660, granted Major General Dennison six hundred acres of land (formerly granted) to be layed out beyond Merrimack River, a little above old Will's planting ground, which land was then claymed by the towne of Haverhill, as within their bounds, for

which they, by their attornays, sumoned to appeare at that court did alleadg severall pleas, which the court then judged invalid, and notwithstanding the same, they then graunted the six hundred acres, provided it were not within seven miles of Haverhill meeting-house, which sayd sixe hundred acres being since laid out, as above exprest by George Abbot and Thomas Chandler, and returned to this court, is allowed and confirmed." That is to say, the claims of Haverhill were disallowed and the Dennison grant, not being within seven miles of Haverhill meeting-house, was confirmed. It will be remembered that, in Indian deed, Little River was the point of departure, and the grant was to extend eight miles westward from that stream. But the General Court now established the meeting-house as the point of departure, which was three-quarters of a mile east of Little River. This was then an apparent curtailment of the tract granted in the Indian deed of one mile and three-quarters. But the end was not yet. In the General Court records for October, 1664, is found the following order: "For an issue in the case in difference between Major Generall Dennison and the towne of Haverhill, relating to their bounds, the Court judgeth it meete to confirm the bounds of Haverhill, not extending upon the river above eight miles from their meeting-house, and doe confirm unto Major Generall Dennison his farm as it is now laid out." Another mile is now granted to Haverhill, notwithstanding the recent firmness of the General Court, and the western bound of the town was now within three-quarters of a mile of the apparent extreme limit established by the Indian deed. It is probable that the Dennison grant, when laid out was found to leave room for this extension, and the General Court yielded to the importunity or diplomacy of Haverhill representatives.

But the town had in fact already granted lots to some of its inhabitants still further west, and when the Dennison grant was laid out, it was obliged to give land in place of them elsewhere.

The bounds appear to have been as unsettled as if nothing had ever been done about them; and at the May session of 1666, the court appointed a new committee of three "to run the bounds of the town of Haverhill and make return thereof to the next session of the court." The report was made at May session, 1667, by a single member of the committee, John Parker, of Billerica, and is as follows:

"In obedience to an order of the honored Generall Court, dated the 23d of May, 1666, Thomas Noyes, of Sudbury, Lieutenant Chadlee, of Salisbury, Newtowne, John Parker, of Billeriquey, did meete at Haverhill the 31st day of October, 1666, to runn the bounds of Haverhill, according to order committed unto us. Wee began at the meeting-house and runne a due west line just eight miles; there wee reared up a heape of stones, and from thence runn a due south lyne to Merrymacke River, and stated a due north lyne from the sayd heape of stones to meet with and close the line northwest from the bound at Merrimack River that divides between Haverhill and Salisbury, which bound is just two miles and fower-acre poles from Haverhill meeting house, which lyeth about east north-east, and there we cease our worke at that time for want of





the order wherein that lyne was prefixt betwene Salisbury and Haverhill from the sayd bounds at Holt's Rocks; then the sayd committee did appointe to meete again to finish the work about the bounds upon the first second day of May next following. This worke was done by Thomas Noyse, deceased, and refused to be subscribed unto by Lieutenant Challice, being left alone to make his returne to the honourd Court by him who is your servant wherein you shall command.

JOHN PARKER."

The General Court approved of this report, as follows: "The Court doe approve of this returne of the bounds of Haverhill, so farr as the same was stated by Ensign Noyse and the rest of the Committee appointed thereunto before the death of Ensign Noyse; but as for the bounds between Haverhill and Salisbury New town, it is settled as this Court hath determined this session."

The order of the General Court, under which this committee acted, is couched in the following language: "not extending *upon the river* above eight miles from their meeting-house." It has been said that, under the Indian deed, Little River was the line from which to measure the extent of the grant, and a fair construction would probably have found the western bounds by following the river. The General Court substituted the meeting-house for Little River, and ordered their committee to run out the eight miles upon the river. The committee did nothing of the sort. They ran a line *due west* from the meeting-house, and, marking the point thus found with "a heape of stones," they ran a line from it due south to the Merrimac, and started a line due north from the heap of stones to meet the line between Haverhill and Salisbury, running northwest from Holt's Rocks. They appear also to have measured the distance between the meeting-house and Holt's Rocks, finding it "just two miles and fower-teen score poles" east-northeast, or two miles, four thousand six hundred and twenty feet in a straight line.

The reading of their order by the committee gave the town a much larger area than it would have obtained by following the sinuous course of the river. A difference was made of at least four miles upon the river, and Haverhill got a tract of land equal to about four miles by twelve, more than the General Court meant to give them, and more than they could have got by the most liberal construction of the Indian deed. They had their own way at last; they had a great town. Consequently we hear of no more complaint about the bounds, except that the committee, having only "started" the line north from the heap of stones, eight miles due west of the meeting-house, had not run it out to meet and close the line, running northwest from Holt's Rocks. Accordingly, in 1674, the town directed the selectmen to attend to the matter immediately. The selectmen employed Jonathan Danforth, a well-known surveyor, to finish the work begun in 1667. His report, made to the General Court, at its May session, 1675, is as follows:

"At the request of the Selectmen of Haverhill the bounds of the said towne were perfected as followeth: from Holt's rocks wee ran due northwest, according to the compasse, not allowing any variations, allowing Amesbury their full and just bounds, as hath been determined by the honoured General Court; all the other lynes on the west side of the plantation wee ran from Merrimack River due north untill it cut with the first lyne, where wee erected a great pillar of stones; this first lyne was sett out and begun to run by Ensigne Noyse and Sergeant John Parker at eight miles distance from Haverhill meeting-house, upon a due west lyne, which is according to the grant of the General Court; the running lynes on both sides of the plantation were well bounded by markt trees and heaps of stones. Layed out by

JONATHAN DANFORTH,  
Surveyor."

The General Court approved of this return. And thus the bounds of Haverhill Town were perfected. As thus defined it was nearly a great triangle, with its base upon the river. The length of the northeast angle was about fifteen miles; of the west line rather more; and an air-line from Holt's Rocks to the southwest corner would have been also about fifteen miles.

"If we start," says Chase, "from the site of the first meeting-house (in the old burying-ground), and run a line due west eight miles, it will bring us to a point about four miles northwest of Methuen Village. A line due south from this point will pass a little over two miles to the west of the village and strike the Merrimac River, about three and a half miles above the upper bridge at Lawrence, and within about one and a half miles of the present southwest corner of Methuen. This last-named line was the old western bound of Haverhill, as confirmed in 1667 (and 1675), and continued till 1725," when Methuen was set off from it principally.

The town then included the largest part of Methuen (and Lawrence), a large part of Salem, Paistow and Hampstead, N. H., and all of Atkinson.

A learned lawyer, writing of the principle on which these colonies were founded, has said that it required, while the inhabitants of a town "should remain a part of the whole, and be subject to the general voice in relation to all matters which concerned the whole colony, they should be allowed to be what their separate settlements had made them: namely, distinct communities in regard to such affairs as concerned none but themselves." As early as March, 1635-36, the General Court had declared that "particular towns have many things which concern only themselves and the ordering of their own affairs, and disposing of business in their own town." Therefore they were permitted "to dispose of their own lands and woods, with all the privileges and appurtenances of the said towns, to grant lots, and to make such orders as may concern the well-ordering of their own towns, not repugnant to the laws and orders here established by the General Court; as also to lay mulets and penalties for the breach of these orders, and to levy and distrain the same, not exceeding the sum of twenty shillings; also to choose their own particular officers, as constables, surveyors for the highways, and the like." These powers and others subsequently granted to the towns by the General



Court, we have now seen exercised by the inhabitants of the youthful plantation of Haverhill. The bounds had been settled after long effort; the lands had been granted, farms established, records orderly kept, the church gathered and the meeting-house erected, schools established, comfort secured, their own vine and fig-tree planted, whereunder every man could sit. The town was builded, after the slow, substantial New England pattern.

## CHAPTER CLIII.

### HAVERHILL—(Continued.)

*Indian Alarms—Under Andros—Settlement of Mr. Rolfe as Minister—Preparations for Defense—The New Charter—Building of the Second Meeting-house.*

FOR thirty years from its beginning, the little settlement at Haverhill had been blest with peace and prosperity. There had been no discouragements or privations, save those necessarily attending a pioneer enterprise in the wilderness.

The people had been permitted substantially to manage their own affairs. They had even secured by persistence the object of their supreme desire—a great territory. The inhabitants were a sturdy community. They were of one stock. With scarcely an exception, they were Englishmen. There were even no Scotchmen. One may suspect that Michael Emerson was an Irishman. Tradition says that Joanna Davis, the wife of George Corliss, was a native of Wales. None of the settlers were from the Continent of Europe. And what in this way was true of Haverhill, was true of New England as a whole. It was a homogeneous people. It is a trite remark that no county of England was so English as Massachusetts. The population of New England in 1649, when immigration substantially ceased, has been estimated as high as 26,000. It is believed their descendants at the present time number fifteen millions, or one-quarter of the population of the United States. The people of Haverhill were solid English yeomen, with respectable intelligence. Crime was not unknown, but was not rife among them. They were a God-fearing, sober people. It may be declared without fear of contradiction, that in 1675 the village of Haverhill was superior to the average community in rural England. Narrow and bigoted, there was nevertheless about them a certain elevation, born of the motives with which they had come to America and the enterprise in which they had been engaged. They were sturdy, resolute, self-reliant.

Their isolation in the wilderness had made them watchful of danger, and the policy of the government had created and maintained military discipline and

the habit of constant preparation for defense. But the settlers of Haverhill, in the first generation, can have entertained no very acute apprehension of peril from Indian warfare. As we have seen, they found few natives here. They had wisely bought the Indian title for what it was worth. Sir Edmund Andros, indeed, afterward said of the Indian deeds, "that their hand was worth no more than a scratch with a bear's paw." But Andros' favorite theory was, that all titles must come from the King. After the loss of the charter in 1684, at a town-meeting held June 18, 1685, in Boston, a committee was charged with the duty of buying any claim, "legal or pretended," which the Indians might advance to "Deare Island, the Necke of Boston, or any part thereof." An Indian title might be a feeble instrument, but it was better than nothing. As the Haverhill pioneers found few or no Indians upon the spot, they had no collision with them afterwards, and apparently, little annoyance from them. There were doubtless straggling parties or individuals who disturbed the inhabitants living without the village, just as "stragglers" and tramps have frightened the women and children of the country in modern times. Some trade was carried on with them, and when they could procure fire water they were quarrelsome and dangerous. It was the colony policy to forbid, or at least to restrain, the sale of liquor to the Indians. A law was passed at November Court, 1654, prohibiting all persons, except those specially licensed, from selling "any Indian or Indians either wine or strong liquor of any sort," under a penalty of 20s. per pint, and in that proportion for all quantities, more or less. Henry Palmer, of Haverhill, and Roger Shaw, of Hampton, were the only persons so licensed in the whole county of Norfolk.

In 1646, Eliot began his noble labors among the Indians, and before King Philip's War some thousands of them had been gathered into villages, and were known as Praying Indians. A great work had doubtless been done among them. But of course many of the Praying Indians had assumed only the thinnest varnish of civilization and Christianity. Many of them were pilferers and vagabonds. However the whites may have differed as to the extent of the change worked in them by the missionaries, they generally agreed in considering the Praying Indians as harmless. Thus they obtained the dangerous privilege of roaming about the settlements at will. They got fire-arms and ammunition. Some of this class were afterwards the most dangerous enemies of the whites. Among them was Simon, who figures in the local annals of Haverhill and the vicinity. He found his haunts in this town and Amesbury. In 1672 he and another Indian named Samuel were fined five pounds "for stealing Englishman's horse." When the war broke out, he is said to have improved the opportunity to get vengeance upon those against whom he had a grudge, and became the terror of the neighboring





settlements. One writer speaks of him "As the arch-villain and incendiary of all the Eastern Indians." And yet Hubbard tells us he spared an old woman at Portsmouth, "because he said she had been kind to his grandmother."

Previous to 1675 the settlers in general regarded the Indians with indifference or contempt. There had been little sympathy with the efforts of Eliot, Gookin, Bourne, Mayhew and a few other self-sacrificing men to Christianize and civilize them. They were regarded in the main as worthless creatures, and, on the whole, an obstruction to the enjoyment of the land by God's chosen people. But there had been no general cruelty or oppression practiced towards them, and the law, theoretically, treated them as it did the whites. Now from this state of apathy there was a bloody awakening.

Alarm began to be felt in Haverhill early in 1675. Rumors of threatened hostility among the Indians were flying thickly. It had been the custom, in the early days, to have some semblance of a fort in every new settlement. The trees, which had been felled to clear the ground, were used for protection. Thus, at Cambridge, the present college yard and common were originally inclosed and fortified by palisades, the trees being driven closely into the ground and their tops united by birch withes. Within this inclosure the people could take refuge, and the cattle could be driven in at night.

Some time previously a fortification had been built around the meeting-house at Haverhill, but it had been suffered to fall into decay. At a meeting called February 18, 1675, to concert measures suitable to the danger apprehended, it was ordered that "the Selectmen shall forthwith cause the fortifications to be finished, to make port-holes in the walls, to right up those places that are defective and likely to fall and to make a flanker at the east corner, that the work, in case of need, may be made use of against the common enemy."

Daniel Ladd, Peter Ayer and Thomas Whittier were appointed to designate what houses should be garrisoned; and the "old brush and top wood" on the common was ordered to be burned to prevent the concealment and stealthy approach of the Indians.

Hostilities did not actually commence for some time after. At about four P.M. June 21, 1675, an express reached Governor Leverett in Boston from Governor Winslow, of the old colony, informing him that on Sunday, the day before, the people of Swansea had retreated to their block-house, on account of Indian approach. Leverett, an old soldier of the English Civil War, had, before the 28th, sent three hundred foot and eighty horse, besides arms, ammunition and provisions, to the aid of the Plymouth men. A fast was appointed for the 29th of June in Massachusetts. The General Court furnished the militia in the frontier towns with arms and ammunition, and ordered

fortifications and garrisons to be made ready, without delay.

The sufferings of Plymouth colony in King Philip's War were terrible. The debt she incurred was supposed to amount to more than all her personal property. But it was paid to the last penny. Twelve or thirteen towns were destroyed in what is now Massachusetts. Six hundred dwelling-houses of the English were burned. Massachusetts had a population of about twenty-five thousand; she lost five or six hundred men, at least one-tenth of her fighting force.

Very little injury was done in the immediate vicinity of Haverhill. But the alarm and distress were dreadful. March 19, 1676, came the news that the Indians were crossing the Merrimac at Wamesit (Lowell). Couriers were at once despatched to Ipswich for aid. Major-General Dennison wrote to the Governor that there was great alarm in Andover and Haverhill, and that he was sending up sixty men. Fortunately, this rumor proved unfounded. But the people of Andover wrote the Governor April 7th, earnestly craving aid, and informing him that their town had been twice attacked and the people had begun to move away. May 2d Ephraim Kingsbury, of Haverhill, was killed by the Indians—the first, it is supposed, slain by them in the town, but the particulars have been lost. The next day, May 3d, Haverhill Simon, with two other Praying Indians, made a murderous attack, the story of which belongs more properly to the history of Bradford.

John Littlehale, of Haverhill, is said to have been killed by the Indians September 18, 1675. King Philip, the origin and brain of the Indian assault, was killed August 12, 1676. The following winter a truce was concluded with the Eastern Indians.

The terror of Northeastern Massachusetts, which suffered less in King Philip's War than its southern and western portions, may be inferred from a proposition under consideration by the General Court March 23, 1676, to build a fence of stockades (palisades) or stones, eight feet high, between the head of navigation on the River Charles and the Concord River, at Billerica, for the protection of Essex County and part of Middlesex. And the court ordered one able and fit man from each of the towns proposed to be included, to meet at Cambridge March 31st, to survey the ground, estimate the expense and report in writing how it might be prosecuted and effected, and what each town should pay, etc. Nearly all the towns reported.

Capt. John Hull, the mint-master, was also treasurer of the colony. He made entry in his journal August 24, 1676, of £24 16s. 8d., paid on account of "Haverhill Towne" soldiers, according to "Sundry acceptances," in sums of from five shillings to seventeen shillings and ten pence. Their names were Samuel Huchins, Nathaniel Haseltine, Samuel Aires, John Keisar, John Clements, Amos Singletens (Singletary?), Nathaniel Lad, Daniel Lad, George Brown, John John-





son, Philip Esman, Benjamin Singleterry, Thomas Durston, Thomas Eastman, Thomas Hart-horn, Richard Allin, Robert Swan, Henry Kemball, Benjamin Graley, Jonathan Henrick, John Corly, John Roby, Samuel Ladd, Thomas Kinsbury, Robert Swan, John Haseltine, Samuel Notts, Joseph Bond—twenty-eight in number. These were doubtless all drafted men, *i. e.*, from the militia of the town. In all our early wars, drafting was the recognized mode of filling up the military quota. There was then nothing opprobrious in drafting or being drafted. To fight, when necessary, was the duty of every able-bodied man, just as it was to vote, to pay taxes, to hold office, to go to meeting. The law provided how all these obligations should be discharged. Duty was not only honorable, it was compulsory. All belonged to the militia who were able to discharge its functions. This was a matter of course. But all could not be spared, or were not needed for the field. Then all took an equal chance, and those drawn out must march. This was a matter of course, too, and simple enough, according to their ideas. Nor does it appear to have involved any discredit to procure a substitute if a drafted man's business or health or convenience required his presence at home. Volunteering had not, in those days, as in more recent, a magic sound, and duty, rather than sentiment, controlled mainly the citizen's conduct, in war as well as in peace. And they fought grimly against the heathen foe, as men under the special protection of Jehovah. When Captain Mason had exterminated the Pequots, he wrote: "Thus was God seen in the Mount, crushing his proud enemies."

July 12, 1777, Saltonstall, of Haverhill, and others of Bradford and Andover, petitioned the General Court for "more provision for protection, on account of present appearance and warning of danger."

In response, the court ordered one-fifth of the men to be kept continually on scout, taking turns, so that all should bear their part. The towns were, in effect, told to protect themselves. This was correct, so far, for King Philip's War had fallen as lightly on these towns as almost any in the colony, although they had doubtless suffered terribly from anxiety and alarm, through their exposed situation. Houses were garrisoned and scouts kept upon the watch night and day. As late as 1684 thirty-five troopers were kept constantly on the move on the borders of Haverhill, Amesbury and Salisbury, and the foot companies in each town were constantly in readiness.

In October, 1675 the Court ordered a special tax of £1533 to pay the expense of the war with the Indians. Boston paid £390; Charle-town, £139; Dorchester, £40; and Roxbury, £30. The proportion of Haverhill was £18. This was hard to get, and a town-meeting was called November 18th "to allow the inhabitants to make staves enough to pay the eight rates required by the country, so as to save bread corn, which men cannot well live without."

The issue of King Philip's War culminating in the complete overthrow of the Narragansetts, secured permanent peace with the Indians for Southern New England. Their power was broken. As an element of danger they were destroyed in that section. By midsummer in 1678 there was peace everywhere and quiet everywhere in that region. Henceforward the Indian only disturbed New England when he came down from the North as an ally and through the instigation of the Frenchman. And to that danger, Haverhill, as a frontier town, was exposed for forty years longer. Her reign of terror had hardly begun. But for a little while after King Philip's War there was tranquillity. Confidence returned in a measure and the much harried colonists hoped to enjoy the fruits of their labor.

From 1675 to 1678 the town had been too much disturbed by the Indian war to attend to anything else, but in 1683, 1684 and 1686 they found time in the annual meetings to listen to land claims by Job Clement, Robert Swan, Sr. and others, and charges and counter-charges of wrong about land bounds between John Gild and Lieut. Johnson and between Robert Swan and Lieut. George Brown.

Robert Swan was early in Haverhill and a lot-holder, but he seems to have been often in hot water. The famous Council of 1656 thought "there was too great appearance of much iniquity on Goodman Swan's part in this matter." He was probably a passionate man. In 1666 he was fined by the County Court "30s. for striking John Carleton several blows," whilst Carleton was fined £3 for striking him. In 1673 the town ordered him to "pull down" a ditch he had made across one of the town's highways or be prosecuted. In 1674 he was fined 20s. for being drunk and cursing. July 2, 1694, there was a special meeting at which it was voted to resist Swan's claim to the meadow laid out for the ministry. But he apparently had the confidence of the people, after all. He served in King Philip's War, was on the committee with Mr. Ward in 1683 to procure an associate pastor, and in 1686 on the committee to view disputed or uncertain bounds. He was highway surveyor in 1692, and deputy to the General Court in 1684. In 1689 his sons Samuel and Joshua were brought before Major Nathaniel Saltonstall as a magistrate, upon a complaint for cutting down some of Simon Wainwright's best apple trees. Swan sent the major a notice which Myrick prints, forbidding him to proceed with the examination, and insinuating his opinion that if the major took it, it would "be altered when it comes to corte." February 17th following, the magistrate entered at court a complaint against Swan "for a high contempt of authority and endeavoring to hinder him in the execution of his office as magistrate, and casting abominable, wicked reflections upon him to ye high defamation of his name." But Swan's sons avenged the public upon him. They appear to have had a feud with Wainwright, for



Samuel, the son, was, in 1690, tried, convicted and sent to jail for wantonly stabbing Capt. Simon Wainwright's valuable horse with a half-pike. The testimony of Samuel Ingalls is worth reproducing as a matter of justice to old Swan, and illustrative of the parental discipline of that day. He says: "I and Samuel Swan was at work together in the field of Robert Swan, Jun., and Goodman Swan, Sen., came to us and asked us to goe into the hous with him, and then he asked Sam'l why he stabbed Mr. Wainwright's horse. Samuel said nothing. Then said his father to him what is the reason yo doe wickedly in sinning against God in abusing the dum creature, and his father was so grieved at it yt he weped, and then he said I am resolved I will give you coreksion, and then he pulled off his close to his shirt and took a stick as big as a good ordinary nailing rod, and then he took Sam'l by one hand and streek him as hard as he cable to strike and streek him many blows. His father was a considerable while beating him and Samuel cryed out and beged of his father vari much yt he would beat him no more."

Simon Wainwright, as we have seen, came to Haverhill in 1683, and six years later he seems to have had a valuable orchard.

It may be noted, as an indication of advancing taste and an appreciation of something besides absolute necessity, that in 1676, the selectmen were ordered to remove the pound from the burying-ground to a "more suitable and convenient place."

The town, apparently, was not called upon to support any poor or unprovided person until 1671-72, when Robert Emerson and his wife brought to the annual meeting the orphan child of Richard and Hannah Mercer, and desired the town to take care of it and also pay them for nursing it above a year past. The townsmen listened to their cries, seconded, perhaps, by the child's, and ordered the selectmen to "provide for it and pay Robert Emerson what they should find due him; also, to address the County Court next at Salisbury to have order from them and counsel how to dispose of the said child, and maintain the same."

The second centenarian, Richard Singletary, died October 25, 1687, aged one hundred and two years.

In 1666 occurred perhaps the first in Haverhill of a class of offenses with which the Puritans contended in vain—the County Court fined John Barnard and his wife for incontinence; of course, before marriage. The man was fined three pounds, and the woman four shillings.

It has been truly said that the dreariest period in the history of New England was the period between 1684 and 1688. On the 18th of June in the former year a decree in the High Chancery Court of England annulled the charter of Massachusetts. In February, 1685, Charles the Second died of a stroke of apoplexy. His successor, James the Second, conceived the idea of uniting all the American governments, as far as possible, under a single head. Very

able American jurists have been of the opinion, studying the case calmly after nearly two hundred years, that the decree in Chancery was not legally effective to forfeit the charter. It made no difference; the colony was not in position to contest it. The news that the charter was condemned filled the colony with gloom. May 12, 1686, the last election according to the provisions of the charter took place. May, 14, the "Rose" frigate arrived in Boston with news that Joseph Dudley had been appointed president of a provisional government, which included Massachusetts, New Hampshire, Maine and the King's provinces. December 19, 1686, arrived at Boston as permanent Governor, Sir Edmund Andros, whose name and memory are profoundly hated in New England, and whose administration, under the control of the gloomy and bigoted James, is by the modern writers called "The Usurpation of Andros." Andros proceeded upon the assumption that, by the resumption of the charter, all government was annulled. He said; "there is no such thing as a town in the whole country." He levied a tax of twenty pence on each poll and one penny in the pound upon "all the late colonies and provinces toward defraying the public charges of government." Some towns asked to be excused from paying the tax; others refused. Haverhill, Salisbury, Rowley and Andover were fined for disobedience. In September, 1688, a special Justice's Court was ordered to "make inquiry in the several towns of Gloster, Haverhill and Boxford, and examine and bind over such persons as have been factious and seditious there and contemptuously refused to obey and execute the warrants of the Treasurer." Simon Wainwright, of Haverhill, who had made twenty barrels of cider from his own orchard in 1688, had twenty-five barrels taken from him by Andros' excise officers. It appears that the town had not appointed a commissioner to meet at the shire-town to assist in making rates for the county; wherefore Onesiphorous Mash (Marsh), the town constable, was obliged to give bond and pay a fee of five pounds, three shillings, to some officer, that he would appear and answer at Salem. Daniel Bradley, a selectman, was compelled to pay five pounds one shilling, for a similar bond, on the same account. Our poor but thrifty fathers complained bitterly and with reason that they were obliged to pay illegal and unheard-of fees during Andros' short-lived government.

In this time of distress a fresh Indian war broke out at the Eastward, fomented by the intrigues of the French. In November, 1688, Andros organized a force of seven or eight hundred men, and marched into the Eastern country. He built several forts, but found no enemy. For this expedition Joseph Emerson and Jacob Whiticker were drafted from Haverhill, on their return making depositions concerning abuse and maltreatment before their townsman, Nathaniel Saltonstall, as assistant.





Samuel Ayer, constable, writing to the General Court, under date of February 11, 1689, in answer to a citation requiring the town to appear and answer to the charge of "withholding one-half their proportion of rates," says: "I pray you consider our poor condition. There are many that have not corn to pay their rates; many more that have not money; to strain (distrain) I know not what to take; We are a great way from any market, to make money of anigh thing we have, and now there is not anigh way to transport to other places. I pray you consider our poor condition."

April 4, 1689, came the glorious news that William, Prince of Orange, had landed in England. April 18th the people in Boston were all alive. In the south end the cry was that the north enders were all in arms; and in the north end the same story about the south end flew from lip to lip. The people who ran to arms seized Randolph and others obnoxious to them: old Simon Bradstreet, the last Governor under the charter, and such of the former assistants as were at hand, were brought to the Council chamber, whither Andros, most unwillingly, was conducted to be informed that he was deposed. A revolution was accomplished. On the 20th a provisional Council was organized, which called a convention of two delegates from each town. May 9, 1689, sixty-six delegates met. The convention invited the old officers to resume government, which they declined to do. A new convention was then called for May 22d, at which fifty-four towns were represented. This convention repeating the request of the former, the old governor and officers resumed their former places and everything went on tranquilly.

May 26th came the eagerly-welcomed news of the accession of William and Mary.

Haverhill made the following answer to the invitation to attend the second Convention.

"HAVERHILL, May 29, 1689.

"By an express from ye Council for safety, etc., dated May ye 10th, 1689, The town being meet, do unanimously, nemine contradicente, declare yt they think it most eligible and safe to wait for information from ye Crown in England, according to promise and declaration, so yt we may yet better know wt we may at present doe; and do pray yt ye Council, now in being for safety of ye people and Conservation of Power, do take care effectually in all publique affairs and trade imergences. And we do hereby further declare yt we will be assistant in ye charges yt shall come unto, both w<sup>th</sup> our persons and estates, so yt ye persons that are, or shall be, put into hold, be effectually secured and have not too full a libertie of visitors, either made or Remade, whereby they may escape, we we hear hath been attempted.

"This was read, noted and passed, nemine contradicente, as attest.

"N. SALTONSTALL,

"Recorder."

Nathaniel Saltonstall, the recorder, was already a member of the provisional Council of Safety, having been an assistant in the last year's government under the old charter.

Cornet Peter Ayer was chosen to represent the town in the convention. The temporary organization under the old charter was continued by authority from England, and elections were held under it,

everything going forward peacefully in the administration of affairs. But the clouds of savage warfare were gathering again about the northern frontier townships.

August 13, 1790, a small party of Indians made their appearance in the northerly part of Haverhill and killed Daniel Bradley. Near by, Nathaniel Singletary and his eldest son were at work in the field. Approaching after their crafty, secret fashion, they shot Singletary, who fell dead. The son, attempting to flee, was overtaken and made prisoner. After scalping the elder Singletary, the Indians began a rapid retreat, but their prisoner managed to escape from them and returned to his home the same day. Nathaniel Singletary was a squatter on the parsonage lands in what is now the northwesterly part of the town. As late as 1860 traces of the cellar of his house could still be seen on land then owned by Benjamin Kimball, on the Parsonage Road. Bradley was killed on that road, not far from the present Atkinson railroad station.

About the same time two men were killed at Andover. It appears that men from abroad had, early in the season, been stationed at Haverhill to aid in its protection; but on July 22d at least a part of them (those from Rowley) were ordered home on account of the "busy season of the year."

The later attacks, however, caused an appeal to the General Court for assistance, and, August 29th, the Ipswich horse were ordered here, as a place of rendezvous.

October 17th the Indians made another foray, when they wounded and took prisoner Ezra Rolfe, who died three days after. Rolfe lived near the present line of Plaistow, not far from the present North Parish meeting-house.

No further attacks or alarms occurring that year, the people began to breathe freely again.

In the latter part of 1689, Rev. Benjamin Rolfe, who was born at Newbury, 1662, and graduated at Harvard 1684, was employed as an assistant to Mr. Ward and seems to have given satisfaction. His tribute to the senior pastor has been already referred to, and he himself was undoubtedly an upright, prudent, pious man, diligent in his calling.

At a town-meeting January 20, 1690, it was voted to give Mr. Rolfe "forty pounds per annum in wheat, rye and Indian to join and assist Mr. Ward," and after Mr. Ward's death the town would "further allow what shall be rational." According to the recorder, there was much opposition to this vote, so that it was reconsidered and the intimation is that "Mr. Ward and his son Saltonstall" (son-in-law, Nathaniel Saltonstall, who was recorder) left the meeting, on account of this opposition. During their absence the town voted to pay Mr. Rolfe the above sum for one year, with his diet or board, and that Mr. Ward should have his full salary, provided he, at his own cost, boarded Mr. Rolfe. In the margin



of the record it was written "£20 taken from Mr. Ward for Mr. Rolfe's diet in —90 without consent." The action of the town in causing certain lines of comment upon the record to be expunged shows that there was considerable irritation about the matter. Mr. Ward, as we have before seen, desired to be relieved in his old age by an assistant, and there is no evidence that Mr. Rolfe was personally disagreeable to him; indeed, the inference is quite to the contrary. The probability is, that Mr. Ward either thought the people were now of sufficient ability to provide for the salary of the assistant without deduction from his own and that it was their duty to do so, or else that they proceeded about the business rather uncourteously and without proper consultation with himself. The old ministers, who were settled for life, were regarded as having a contract, almost indissoluble without their consent.

It is pleasant to note that Mr. Rolfe continuing in his labors for nearly two years, the friction seems to have disappeared, and an honorable adjustment was made between all parties concerned.

October 25, 1692, a meeting was held to consider the permanent settlement of Mr. Rolfe as colleague with Mr. Ward. The question "whether Mr. Benj. Rolfe, whom this town hath had experience of in the ministry near three years, shall be the man pitched upon for that work and to be our settled minister in Haverhill," was decided in the affirmative "by a full vote," and a committee was appointed to agree with him. A meeting was called December 5th, to hear the report of the committee, when a letter from Mr. Rolfe, dated November 21st, was read. The letter, which treats of temporalities in a very judicious manner, is printed by Chase in full. The town thereupon voted "that Mr. Benj. Rolfe, who hath for about three years been an help here, in the work of the ministry with Mr. Ward, if he please to settle here in the ministerial work, shall have & hereby hath that piece of land freely bestowed upon him as his own proper estate, which was laid out by the Town's Committee, June 24, 1681, and approved of, near where Nathaniel Smith formerly lived, and is also joining to that two acres which was given by the town to Samuel Wilcot." This was the land referred to in a former chapter as given by John Haseltine for the perpetual use of the ministry, to which was joined a certain piece of commons for the same purpose. The town now also directed the selectmen to treat with the owners about buying Wilcot's two acres, to be added to the rest.

January 30, 1693, another meeting was called to see if the town would confirm its vote to settle Mr. Rolfe, as objections had been made to the former meeting, "because of the shortness of warning." The town now declared that "by a full vote, it is renewed, allowed of, confirmed, made, and to be stood unto for the full and free vote of the inhabitants of Haverhill." Apparently they were in earnest.

Mr. Rolfe was granted the free and full improvement of the parsonage farm and meadow, then on lease to Mr. Bradley, so long as he continued in the town as their minister, and also of the parsonage land bought of William Stirling, besides what was otherwise appointed him for his annual salary. It was also voted to lay him out, with all convenient speed, ten acres of good meadow, for his free use while he remained their minister.

The "Parsonage Farm," it will be remembered, had been leased, in July, 1682, for twenty-one years, to Daniel Bradley, who was presumably the Daniel Bradley chosen selectman in 1685, and left out because not a freeman, but acting as selectman in 1688, and killed by the Indians on the "Parsonage Road," August 13, 1690. William Starlin's house and land was bought by the town, it will be remembered, in 1684.

The settlement of a minister was indeed a most solemn and momentous transaction at the period when the town was the parish and transacted business relating to the church in town-meeting.

This important affair now rested until May 8th, when a town-meeting was called "for the people to join with the church and take care for the providing necessities for Mr. Rolfe's ordination to office in this town." This mention "of the people" in this connection shows that a new order of things was beginning, very slowly, to be evolved.

After choosing a moderator, "the town resolved to stop in the proceedings till they knew what Mr. Ward would abate of his yearly maintenance."

Then a proposal in writing from him, dated November 13, 1692, was read, in which he offered, in case of settlement of an assistant minister, to

"Abate to the town of what they ought to pay to me by covenant and town orders, all, excepting only twenty pounds in corn, and fifty cords of current merchantable cord wood, to be paid as formerly, annually, during my life: viz., ten pounds in merchantable wheat, and ten pounds in merchantable Indian, and fifty cords of oak and walnut wood, to be laid in my house, and corded by one thereto appointed at the Town's charges; for time as followeth, viz.: Half in October, annually, and the other half in February, annually. Provided, that all arrears be truly paid me and that myself and estate be exempted from all rates; and that the Town do appoint one or two men to attend at my house upon a set day to receive and take account of what shall be brought in, and set the price thereof if it be not merchantable, that so it come not in pitiful driblets as formerly.

"And in case the conditions be not performed within the year, by the 2d of February annually, then the whole sixty pounds to be paid annually, according to town orders already made, and so proportionably.

"JOHN WARD."

This is a business-like document, pertinent and probably reasonable, and shows that the old minister had still his wits about him. The reference to the "pitiful driblets" seems a little unkind when none remembers how poor the town in its infancy was, as shown by the meagre bids towards supplies for the support of old Hugh Sherratt, made in 1677, when Peter Ayer bid "3 lb. meat or corn," and Thomas Ayer, Jr., "1 lb. meat." And in the present year of grace there has come to light a diary kept by a min-





ister settled within the limits of Mr. Ward's old parish nearly a century after Mr. Ward's proposal, which shows that he was receiving his salary in similar pitiful dribbles with apparent equanimity.

When the letter had been read a committee was appointed "to go and see what Mr. Ward will abate, &c.," who, by "word of mouth," brought back substantially the same proposition, which the town accepted. A vote was then passed that "care shall, at the Town's charge, be taken for a place and provision for entertainment at Mr. Rolfe's ordination," provided it did not exceed ten pounds; but, as "Several men proclaimed against it with great violence," the vote was *nullified*.

Then the agreement made by the town's committee, who were Robert Ayer, Peter Ayer and Steven Dow, with Mr. Rolfe, was approved and confirmed. It is printed in full by Chase, and, in effect, provides, 1, for the payment to Mr. Rolfe of an annual salary of sixty pounds in wheat, rye and Indian corn, "at the price of the grain in the Country rate, at the time of payment," the whole "to be paid to him or his order, in Haverhill, by the 2d of February annually."

2. "That Mr. Rolfe, out of his sixty pounds, is to provide personal quarters for himself as he shall think good."

3. That at the "Town's charge, in convenient season annually, there shall be laid in for him a sufficient quantity and stock of good, sweet and dry and sound hay, for the keeping his horse through the winter, at such place in Haverhill as he shall appoint."

Mr. Rolfe had already written a letter dated April 29, 1693, in which he accepted the terms proposed, with the additional suggestion that the town should grant "also to me a supply of wood as soon as I shall stand in need of it. And if it please God so to order it that the whole work be devolved upon me, or to bring them out of those difficulties that, by occasion of the war, they are now under: They grant to me such a supply as that whereby I may so live as a minister of the gospel ought to live, and be able, without distraction by wants, to discharge my duty as a minister of Christ to God and yourselves. Thus I say I do express myself willing to settle among you with a true intention and true affection."

Mr. Rolfe touches delicate subjects with great propriety of expression, whilst judiciously anticipating future contingencies. Besides the business provisions, it is noticeable that he makes two conditions of a different character, viz.: "1st. So long as the people of God here do continue in the profession of the true faith and peace of the gospel. Acts 2: 42. 2d. So long as I may have the liberty of my ministry among them." Mr. Rolfe, who was as yet a bachelor, married Mehitabel Atwater March 12, 1693-94, and six children had been born to them before the occurrence of the great catastrophe in their lives and in the life of the town.

Mr. Rolfe was ordained January 7, 1693, but the senior pastor had been already ten days laid to rest in the burying-ground near the little church, and perhaps under the great tree beneath whose wide-spreading branches he had preached in his early prime when the pioneers gathered in the fresh, magnificent forest of Pentucket.<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Rolfe had been thus happily settled in a period of comparative tranquillity from Indian alarms. But when the annual meeting was held in 1690, there was a period of deep anxiety. No business was done except to elect officers. News arriving of the destruction of Schenectady and other places in New York, a town-meeting was held March 24th, "to consider what is to be done for the present security of the place against the enemy, by sending for help abroad, or to draw off." The selectmen were given "full powers in all respects," and then, the recorder says, "A small discourse was opened about the then state of the Town, how to stand against the Enemy, and to see for a livelihood for hereafter, if lives of the people should be spared. But it soon ceased and was given over, and nothing done that was to satisfaction in that affair, the people being out of the way for their own subsistence; and therefore the Moderator declared the meeting closed."

The suggestion which, in the first panic, had found its way into the warrant for the meeting to see if the town should be abandoned and the people move away into the circle of safety, giving up so much of the frontier of defense, evidently was put away as too cowardly, and requiring too much of sacrifice. Folks could not leave their smiling plantations and their hard-earned homes. Things were gloomy enough. The suggestion about a "livelihood" and "subsistence" probably referred to the anxiety felt lest the stealthy and skulking Indians, lurking about the outer edge of the settlement, would make it impossible for them to cultivate their fields or gather in their harvests. However, it was evidently concluded to stay and abide the result. The first, most pressing necessity obviously was to provide for the personal safety of their families; and the measures to be adopted to that end were wisely left in the hands of the chief executive officers,—the town's select,—the selectmen.

No new or original measures of defensive warfare

<sup>1</sup> The time and place of John Ward's marriage to Alice Edmunds, about whom Cotton Mather says so much, has only recently become known.

In the "Marriage Licenses granted by the Bishop of London," printed from Colonel Chester's MS. copy by the Harleian Society in 1867, vol. 25, p. 227, is this entry,—

"1636, May 21, John Ward, Clerk, of Hadleigh Castle, Essex, Bachelor, 26, & Alice Edmunds, of Oakham, Co. Kent, Spinster, 24, consent of her father, Nicholas Edmunds, at St. Leonard's, Foster Lane."

"Oakham" is Alkham, near Dover, England.

This localizes Alice Edmunds and fixes the date of the marriage, but if John Ward's age is correctly given in the marriage license, "26," he was born about 1610, and not in 1606, as Cotton Mather stated, and was not as old as has always been understood.





were adopted. Precautions were taken which before had been resorted to in other places, and not here because of the happy immunity which the town had enjoyed in its infancy.

The selectmen appointed six garrisons and four houses of refuge, besides watch-houses. If they were not all established at once, all were about the same time. The garrisons and refuges were houses selected because of their convenient situation for the families to resort to in case of alarm, and because they were somewhat adapted to defense against the quick, impatient attacks of the savages.

One of them was the house owned by Onesiphorous Mash, Sr., the ancestor of all the Marshes. He had built this house in 1684, and the ground was long known as "Mash's Hill," afterwards "Pecker's Hill." The house stood on the north side of the road, half-way up the slope. One account says the garrison was commanded by Jonathan Marsh, but it is generally believed by Sergeant John Haseltine. He had under his command seven men—Onesiphorous Mash, Sr., Onesiphorous Mash, Jr., Nathaniel Haseltine, Eben Webster, Joseph Holt, Thomas Ayer and Joseph Bond.

Another was commanded by Sergeant John Webster. This was very probably near the river, about three-fourths of a mile east of Haverhill Bridge. Webster had under him eight men—Stephen Webster, Samuel Watts, Nicholas Brown, Jacob Whittaker, John Marsh, Robert Ford, Samuel Ford and Thomas Kingsbury.

The third garrison house was owned and commanded by Jonathan Emerson; in 1860 a portion of it was standing on the northwest corner of Winter and Harrison Streets.

The fourth was commanded by James Ayer, and stood nearly opposite the house known, thirty or more years ago, as that of Captain John Ayer (2nd), on Pond Street, near the west end of Plug Pond.

The fifth was commanded by Joseph Bradley, probably the brother of Daniel Bradley, who was killed by the Indians this year. It was situated in the northerly part of town. No trace of it remains.

The sixth was owned and commanded by Captain John White, and was situated near the present White house, on Mill Street, nearly opposite Linwood Cemetery. He had six men to his garrison—Stephen Dow, Sr., Stephen Dow, Jr., John Dow, Edward Brumidge, Israel Hendrick, Israel —, Jr.

Two brick houses belonging to Joseph and Nathaniel Peaselee, in the easterly part of the town, towards Rock's Bridge, and the houses of Major Nathaniel Saltonstall and Capt. Simon Wainwright were designated as houses of refuge. A few soldiers were stationed in each of them, under the command of their owners. Two watch-houses were also built, one of which stood on Main Street, near where John Dow lived some years since. The other was on the bank of the river, on Water Street, a few rods east of the "Duncan Place."

The houses of Joseph and Nathaniel Peaselee were supposed to be still standing when Chase wrote, in 1861. He says: "The former was owned by the late Nathan Sawyer, and stands a short distance east of the latter, which is now owned and occupied by Captain Jesse Newcomb, and is situated about two miles east of Haverhill Bridge."

Saltonstall's house was on the site of the well-known Duncan house, an estate which, from the settlement of the town till after the Revolution, was in the possession of his family. Captain Simon Wainwright's house stood on the site of the "Emerson House," opposite Winter Street Church.

The school-house which then stood in the burying-ground (Pentucket Cemetery), was also used as a watch-house. Many private houses were likewise barricaded, and the people, generally, were, or were supposed to be, on the alert and always ready to defend themselves.

Says Mirick: "Most of the garrisons, and two of the houses of refuge (those belonging to Joseph and Nathaniel Peaselee), were built of brick, and were two stories high; those that were not built of this material had a single laying of it between the outer and inner walls. They had but one outside door, which was often so small that but one person could enter at a time; their windows were about two feet and a half in length, eighteen inches in breadth and were secured on the inside with iron bars. Their glass was very small, cut in the shape of a diamond, was extremely thick and fastened in with lead instead of putty. There were generally but two rooms in the basement story, and tradition says that they entered the chamber with the help of a ladder, instead of stairs, so that the inmates could retreat into them and take it up if the basement story should be taken by the enemy. Their fire-places were of such enormous size that they could burn their wood sled-length very conveniently; and the ovens opened on the outside of the building, generally at one end, behind the fire-places. They were of such dimensions that we should suppose a sufficient quantity of bread might be baked in them to supply a regiment of hungry mouths."

Many families who lived in the outskirts of the town removed with their families to the vicinity of the garrisons or houses of refuge. Thus tradition says that the Dows, father and son, moved near the garrison house of Capt. John White, under whose command they were.

The Indians had a peculiar whistle for signal to each other, which was often heard in the neighboring woods. The younger Dow alone could imitate it, and often concealed himself, and tried to decoy the Indians within range of the bullets of the white soldiers. But it appears he never imitated the wild call well enough to fool the Indians, however much his friends may have admired the success of his mockery.



April 7th another town-meeting was held, "to consider what may & and is to be done as to sending to the Council or General Court for their affording help to this place by soldiers, as it is a frontier town, exposed to great danger, &c." It was voted to send a petition asking for, "upon the Country's charges, 40 men, at least, to be a constant daily scout, to keep out without the utmost garrisons, and in constant service, so as to watch the enemy and prevent & surprise them, or give notice to others within, that they may be encouraged to do somewhat in order to future livelihood, and in case of need to stand for their lives." Cornet Peter Ayer was "particularly made choice of to present, prefer & prosecute" the petition, in answer to which soldiers were sent from Newbury and other places to Haverhill, Amesbury and Salisbury. Newbury was, of course, less in danger than those towns which sheltered it from savage assaults on the north, yet even there fifty-one persons kept watch every night. Wild rumors everywhere were afloat. Isaac Morrill was arrested at Newbury May 29, 1690, and sent to Ipswich for trial. It was believed that he was enticing Indian and negro servants to steal a vessel, go to Canada, raise a force of four or five hundred Indians and three hundred Canadians, come down between Haverhill and Amesbury over Merrimac River, near "Indian River, by Archelaus hill, on the backside of John Emery's meadow, and destroy. And then they could easily destroy such small towns as Haverhill and Amesbury."

The danger was sufficiently real without panic-raising rumors,

July 5th eight persons were killed at Exeter; two days after, three at Amesbury. July 10th, after the news reached him, Major Nathaniel Saltonstall sent a letter from Haverhill to the Council at Boston, asking help:

"I can, as I wrote by Lt. Johnson, of Almsbury, on Monday last, say that Haverhill hath as much need of present & settled assistance as any place; I beseech you cast us not off, or give us command to draw off. I do not think it much to avail, but as a present satisfaction, yt men visit us after assistance is done us, for before ye can be with us ye continue is hindered gone & nothing to be done but for ye men to return, unless yy would stay as men in service or occasion shal offer. Indeed ye change is gyt; but they all are not, yet some are willing to bear their part. Foot men are most advisable & serviceable, & so, in ye end, it will be found, excepting only a very few to be employed in carrying or fetching newes; men complain more of difficulty to provide for horses than for many more men.

"The Iol. be your counsellor & guid in all these difficulties; let us have a speedy dispatch of the Posts, Philip Grole & Wm. Hely, both of Salisbury, yt I may give accot: to ym yt send to me. I am not in a capacity to help you, but want men for or necessary defence; & orders to keep on own men to duty upon their peril & for their being sent to Boston for judgment according to yr desert, yt is some of ym;

"I am, gentlemen, your true servant,  
"N: SALTONSTALL."

The savages filled the woods in every direction. It was not safe to leave the vicinity of the garrisons or to be anywhere out of doors unarmed. The gun must be within reach of the hand; even so, surprise was frequent.

August 31st Samuel Parker and a small boy were cutting hay at the meadow in the East Parish, when a party of Indians surprised and shot Parker. The little fellow escaped by hiding himself in the tall grass, and, running from the sound and smoke of the guns, brought home the useful news. October 10th the General Court ordered that "Maj. Saltonstall do dismiss home the scout of ten troopers appointed to be employed between Haverhill & Salisbury by direction of the said Major for security of said towns in the time of harvest." On the 22d of the same month they ordered that all the garrison soldiers posted in the towns of Haverhill, Salisbury and Amesbury be forthwith dismissed. The theory was that on the approach of winter the Indians, living far to the east and north, would retire before the approach of inclement weather and deep snow. This generally was the case, yet winter attacks sometimes happened.

To add to the distress of the Haverhill people, small-pox, then an enemy terrible in fact and horrible in imagination, broke out among them. A pest-house was established on the hill east of the house where Joseph Bradley formerly lived. Only a few died—Mirick says six.

June 16, 1691, John Robie was killed by the Indians in the North Parish. His wife dying a few days before, leaving him with seven children, the oldest not quite eleven years old, he took the little motherless creatures to a house of refuge. Returning with cart and oxen and his boy Ichabod, he had arrived midway of the present North Parish burying-ground, near the spot where the Clement house stands, when he was shot. Ichabod was taken prisoner, but escaped and got back safely. Saltonstall wrote Major Pike, of Newbury, "June 15, 1691, 12 at night," that Robie was killed about two hours before sunset, "near the woods near Bradley's." He probably refers to Joseph Bradley's garrison.

In the same foray Nathaniel Ladd was shot and soon died of his wounds.

Hutchinson, in his history, says that in October of this year "a family was killed at Rowley and one at Haverhill." The name of the latter is not known. July 18, 1692, Hannah Whittiker, wife of Abraham, was killed.

In August John Keezar was mowing in the Pond Meadow, when an Indian, who had possessed himself of his gun, which he had left beside a tree, mockingly took aim at him: "Me kill you now." Nevertheless, Keezar, plucking up courage from desperation, ran toward him with loud cries, brandishing the glittering scythe. Unaccustomed, probably, to such an offensive weapon, the Indian dropped the gun and fled, swiftly pursued by Keezar, who, overtaking him, plunged the scythe in his bowels. John doubtless thought the only good Indian was a dead Indian.

In response to an urgent call late in the season, Sir William Phipps, the first royal Governor under the new charter, ordered, November 1st, twelve soldiers





to be sent from Newbury to Haverhill. Happily, there were no assaults that year.

A new era came in with the second charter. The form of town government became more complicated, new officers were created, the name of town recorder was changed to town clerk. It will be profitable, therefore, to repeat the roll of town officers chosen at this election in 1692,—

"Lt. John Johnson, Moderator; Nathaniel Saltenstall, Town Clerk; Ensign Thomas Eaton, Cornet Peter Ayer, Sergt. Robert Ayer, Sergt. John Page, Nathaniel Saltenstall, Selectmen; Robert Swan, Sen., Samuel Currier, James Sanders, Design John White and Sergt. Josiah Gage, Highway Surveyors; Michael Emerson, Leather Soder; Ensign Thomas Eaton, Soder of Weights and Measures; Sergt. Josiah Gage, Lieut. Samuel Ayer, Sergt. John Haseltine, Captain George Browne, William Starin and Joseph Johnson, Sen., Tythingmen; for viewers of fences, for the west side of the Sawmill River, Ensign Samuel Hatchins, Onesiph Marsh, Sen.; between the west bridge and Mill Brook and northward as far as Ephraim Gild's, John Johnson, Samuel Emerson; between the Mill Brook and Great Ham, Eph Roberts, Israel Hendricks; for the Great Plain and fields below that, to the extent of Haverhill bounds, on that quarter to the eastward, Amos Singletary, John Whittier; for the northern farms about William Starin's and in that quarter, Joseph Johnson Sen., Christopher Bartlett; Steven Dow, Sen., Grand Juror; Daniel Lad, Junr, for Jury of Trials."

Joseph Peaseley, by vote, was permitted to put up a saw-mill "at the head of East Meadow River, upon the stream by or near Brandy Brow." This was the second Joseph Peaseley. The mill he built and its successors have always been known as "Peaseley's Mills," and almost always owned by persons of that family.

Only one person, Jonathan Franklin, appears to have been killed by the Indians in the town this year.

At the annual meeting in 1694 the town refused to elect tythingmen, as well as a hayward, culler of staves, field-drivers and house-officers; but a few weeks afterwards a town-meeting was held, "by the order of the Sheriff," to choose a deputy to the General Court and tythingmen. Probably the tythingmen were chosen regularly afterwards. It was their duty to keep order in church, and their office was frequently no sinecure. The old records in many of the towns are full of references to the choice of officers to keep the boys in order at meeting. The tythingman was usually armed with a long staff to reach and punch the heads of unruly youngsters. There are people still living here who remember the tythingmen.

July 30th a meeting was held, by "command of the country," to choose assessors; and Capt. Simon Wainwright, Ensign John White and Cornet Peter Ayer were chosen and sworn—being the first board of assessors. Previously, a commissioner had been chosen to act with the selectmen in making valuations. All the town officers were this year sworn to perform their duties faithfully, for the first time.

The Indians had now made little disturbance for two years, but they made many desperate attacks the present season. September 4th, Joseph Pike, of Newbury, deputy sheriff of Essex, travelling with one

Long, between Amesbury and Haverhill, in the execution of his office, fell into an Indian ambuscade, near the north of Pond Plain, and was killed with his companion. "The enemy lay in a deserted house by the way, or in a clump of bushes, or both."

In 1695 the annual meeting was held the first Tuesday in March, according to an act of the Great Court. A town treasurer was chosen for the first time. Lieut. Samuel Ayer was the person thus honored. Mr. Rolfe, now married, asked for wood and the town voted him fifteen cords a year, for three years. John Gild offered the town sixteen pounds for "the side hill adjoining Great Pond," which they voted to take. He agreed to pay "one-third current money, one-third good Indian corn and one-third good, fat neat cattle, fit for slaughter." This shows an advance in the condition of the town.

For a variety, there was a little dispute about Amesbury bounds. But the people were tired of that subject, and directed the selectmen to see that the matter was settled forthwith.

As we have seen, the recorder formerly made an entry that a motion to build a new meeting-house was voted down, improperly and fraudulently. The old meeting-house had become entirely inadequate to hold the people, notwithstanding all expedients to accommodate them. Doubtless, the Indian troubles had much to do with the indisposition to move in the matter.

This year it was voted at an adjourned meeting that the meeting-house "be forthwith repaired so far as is necessary for our present use of the place; till we be better fitted and provided with a new one." Then the question was put, "whether, when the town builds a new meeting-house, it shall be set in the same place where the old house stands?" The town voted no. The question was then put, "whether the new meeting-house for this town, when built, shall be set upon the common land, near John Keyzar's and Lieut. Johnson's new dwelling-places." This was decided "plentifully in the affirmative," only Captain Browne, John Whittier and Samuel Currier dissenting. It was then voted that "a new meeting-house shall be built forthwith, with what speed may be," and a committee was appointed to treat "with men abroad" about doing the work, and to report their proposals to the town. But in May, 1696, a meeting was called to see if the town would build or repair. It was voted to build, and a new committee was chosen "to look out a workman that can and will engage to do the work by the lump or great, for money." They were "to look and view some meeting-houses for dimensions," and then propose the work to undertakers, at home or abroad.

July 28th the committee reported that they had "been abroad at several towns, taking dimensions of several meeting-houses, and taking an account of the cost of them," and "after bartering with divers workmen," they had found Sergeant John Haseltine,



the most inclinable to build of any one. "Haseltine offered to build a house fifty feet long, forty-two feet wide and eighteen feet stud, finishing the same within and without, with seats, pulpit, galleries, windows, doors, floors and stairs," after the pattern of the Beverly meeting-house, and doing the sides after the style of the Reading meeting-house, finding all material, for four hundred pounds in money. After long debate about the site, and the price proposed, the dimensions recommended were approved and the meeting ended.

A special meeting was next called for April 10, 1697, when it was voted that "there be a meeting-house forthwith framed," and "chose a committee to agree with Sergeant John Haseltine, or any other man, about the work." They should agree for everything, even "to the turning of the key," for four hundred pounds in money. There should be a "turret for a bell," and it was agreed the house should stand "at the place by Lieutenant John White's and Mr. Samuel Dalton's."

Everything was now settled. But nothing was settled. In June there was another meeting when, "after much discourse and difference about the place where the new meeting-house should be erected," it was voted to call another meeting, which was held, accordingly, July 5th. Upon the matter of location "paper votes were called for," with the following result: "For the old place that now is 25. For the Common land near Keyzar's 53." A new committee was chosen to go on with the work, within the money limit formerly agreed on. Captain Samuel Ayer, Corporal Peter Ayer and Ensign John Page constituted it.

Does anybody suppose the matter was now finally settled? He is much mistaken. July 4, 1698, another meeting was called "by warrant from a justice of the peace," on petition of eight inhabitants, who asked that a committee be raised "to hear all pleas on both sides, and determine where the new frame should be raised." Thirty-three others joined in this request. Then the moderator called for the names of those opposed to such a committee, "which was drawn and brought in," numbering sixty-three: whereupon the moderator declared that the vote was against raising such a committee, and the meeting dissolved. The work going on, a meeting was called late in the year by the selectmen, to consider "whether the people should meet this winter at the old meeting-house or at that which is of new, erected at Widow Keyzar's." John Keyzar has evidently been called from earth during this protracted controversy. The heroic tanner will relate his exploit with the scythe no more. "Votes were called for by personal appearance and entering their names." Something like modern practice at political conventions when suspicion of fraud prevails. "Thirty-four persons entered their names for meeting at the new house as soon as the glass windows are finished & set up,"

while eighteen voted for continuing in the old meeting-house, "till a new meeting-house be quite finished."

The selectmen were appointed "to determine the places and what room shall be allowed to such as shall desire to have pews in the new meeting-house: and to whom it shall be allowed: they being at the cost for the making of them for their own use as is usual in other places: any other form for seats formerly thought of notwithstanding." The clerk records that "much discourse was held about pulling up the seats in the old meeting-house to set up at a new place for the present meeting-house; but it was fully opposed and reasons given & therefore not put to vote."

Notwithstanding the vote to move to the new meeting-house as soon as the windows were in, it was not in fact done. A meeting was called for October 24, 1699, "for the further consideration and settlement of the affairs belonging to the new meeting-house." The committee last chosen (selectmen) reported that room had been allowed eight persons to make themselves pews in the new meeting-house at their own cost. These were Captain Simon Wainwright, Captain Samuel Ayer, Nathaniel Saltonstall, Sergeant John Haseltine, Lieutenant John White, Widow Hannah Ayer and son, Ensign John Page, Sergeant Josiah Gage.

Seventy-eight persons had voted upon the great test question of locality—probably very near the full voting strength of the town. Those who voted for the old lot by the Mill Brook, were naturally mostly those who lived on Water Street and in the East Parish, like Saltonstall, the Whittiers, Peaseley, Sanders, the Curriers, and so on. Those who voted for the new location more to the westward and on the Common, now the present City Hall Park, were largely those living nearer to Main Street, to the west, over Little or Sawmill River, and in the outskirts of the town, like John Johnson, the Ayers, Marshes, Emersons. One or two of the most important men in the town, like John White and Simon Wainwright, did not vote at all. Chase has printed these lists, which are of value. Twenty persons, headed by Nathaniel Saltonstall, protested against further proceedings after the question of location was decided against them.

At the meeting October 24th a committee was chosen to go and inspect the new meeting-house and report whether it was done according to agreement, and whether the town ought to accept of it. The committee were Nathaniel Saltonstall, Simon Wainwright, John White, John Whittier, Daniel Ela. Saltonstall and Ela had been against the location of the new house. Wainwright and White, to some extent, neutral. The committee's report, presented to the same meeting, will be found in Chase. The report was drawn up by Saltonstall. The committee reported that the dimensions were all greater than





the contract called for: that the outsiders were "well fitted and comely." . . . "We cannot but say, we like and well approve of the work; and therefore we humbly propose to the town, now assembled, to accept of the same as to the work and workman's part, in said covenant, his additions being much for the better." . . . "And we again do pray that the town will accept of his work with thankfulness to him for his care & pains, & take care that the Town's part for payment be also faithfully & reasonably performed." Upon reading this report "The town by their unanimous vote, without any one voting to the contrary, granted their acceptance of the committee's return, above written, and of a new meeting-house accordingly." It was then formally voted that the new meeting-house should be the place where the people should "meet and attend for the constant worship of God." November 20th a meeting was called to choose a committee "to place or seat the people in the new meeting-house, that they may know where to sit & not disorderly crowd upon one another, and be uncivil in the time of God's worship." A committee was then chosen to seat the first committee, "so that there may be no grumbling at them for picking for and placing themselves." But suppose there should be a little log-rolling between the two committees?

The seating committee were subsequently allowed six shillings each for the discharge of that duty.

It was finally voted that "Capt. Samuel Ayer and Nath. Saltonstall be, and are hereby empowered to the best advantage they can, to dispose of our old meeting-house, for the public benefit of said town, for the use of a school-house, or a watch-house, or a house of shelter, or shed to set horses in, for all or any one or more of them, as they can meet with chapmen." And thus passed away the glory of the first meeting-house, which had also been during its period of usefulness, the only public edifice of Haverhill. The erection of the new—a building of large cost and importance for that day—undoubtedly taxed severely the resources of the town. It will have been observed that all proceedings about it had been taken by the municipality as such. The town was the parish, as yet. It is not surprising that there should have been differences of opinion as to the location of the new house. Since religious societies were entirely separated from the towns, such troubles have not been unknown. Piety, in former times, was frequently insufficient to resist the temptation to discord, which the building of a new house for public worship presented. The old ministers used to pray for unity, and were very fervent in thankfulness when they got it.

It will be remembered that eight pews had been built by some of the wealthiest and most substantial citizens of the town. The committee for seating did not interfere with these. They assigned places only upon the "long seats," the rude common benches. But there was a good deal of choice in locality, never-

theless, as to warmth, light, convenience of hearing and proximity to the minister, and people were seated according to their age, importance and social standing. Once seated, they kept their places, under penalty of a fine. When service lasted from nine o'clock in the morning to four or five in the afternoon, with only an hour's intermission, it was important, especially to old folks, whether they could hear and whether they sat in a draught.

There is an interesting view of the second meeting-house in Chase's history. The building near it, was probably, he says, one erected in 1723, for a watch-house and school-house. The account he gives of the view, is the following: It was painted after a steeple had been added to the meeting-house, probably between 1750 and 1766, upon a panel over the mantelpiece in the front room of the "Harrod House," a famous tavern in its time, which stood a little north of the present City Hall. The panel was cut out to preserve the painting and is supposed to be still in the possession of a descendant of the family, unfortunately not a resident of Haverhill. The "Harrod" will be again mentioned in another connection.

The building of the new meeting-house undoubtedly gave Haverhill, in 1701, an importance among the neighboring towns of Essex it had not before enjoyed. It was a great effort, and showed the growing prosperity of the young town. It was very fortunate that after so much discussion and dissension, all should have ended in harmony and good feeling. All honor to Sergeant John Haseltine, the first great master builder of Haverhill, who, in the language of the committee of inspection, "appeared to be honest and honestly faithful to his word."

## CHAPTER CLIV.

### HAVERHILL—(Continued).

#### *Indian Attacks—The Great Descent—Effects of Indian Warfare.*

THE Indians made a foray upon the town in August, 1695, when two persons were wounded. It is said they were children of Abraham Whittaker, whose wife, Hannah, was killed by the Indians in 1692. In 1705, the town directed the selectmen to pay Dr. Bradstreet for the cure of Whittaker's children, and another person "for digging a grave for some of the said Whittaker's family, which were killed by the Indians."

In this foray the Indians carried away two boys, Isaac Bradley, aged fifteen, and Joseph Whittaker, aged eleven, who were at work in the field, near Joseph Bradley's house, in what is now the North Parish. Whittaker lived on the Derry road, west from Bradley's. Isaac was small in size, active and shrewd.





Joseph was over-grown, slow-witted and clumsy of movement. The Indians took these boys to Lake Winnipiscogee, where they were placed in a family consisting of a man, his squaw and several children. Here they became sufficiently acquainted with the Indian language to learn that they were to be taken to Canada in the spring, when they determined to escape. Isaac, however, was very ill with fever, recovering only through the care of his squaw mistress, who was kind to both boys. It was consequently April before they were able, on a bright moonlight night, to put their plan in execution. Isaac was naturally leader, by his greater age, intelligence and enterprise. Taking a supply of moose meat, bread and their master's fireworks, they started in a southerly direction, running through the night and hiding in a hollow log at dawn. Pursued by a party of Indians with dogs, they only escaped detection and recapture by the friendly shelter of the log and by sacrificing all their meat to the dogs, who were too busy devouring it to betray their presence to the Indians as they passed by. Resuming the journey at night in a different direction from that taken by their pursuers, the boys pressed on their weary way as fast as their strength would permit. When their bread was gone, they ate roots, buds, berries, with such rich morsels as a raw pigeon and turtle. They did not dare to make a fire for fear its smoke would be seen by Indian enemies. Once, indeed, they came suddenly upon an Indian encampment, seeing the savages seated around the fire, and retreating precipitately under cover of the darkness. Coming to a stream, Isaac had the good sense to follow its meanderings, believing it would bring them out to a settlement. Joseph's strength and courage failed him, and Isaac literally drew and carried him towards succor. On the ninth night of their flight, they came out at Saco Fort. Isaac found his way back to Haverhill, whilst poor Joseph, seized by raging fever, was long ill at the fort and till brought home by his father after much suffering.

August 15, 1696, Jonathan Haynes, who lived in the westerly part of the town, was reaping in a field near Bradley's Mills, while his four children—Mary, Thomas, Jonathan and Joseph, were picking beans in a field near by, when they were surprised and taken captive by the Indians. Mary was eighteen years old; Thomas, sixteen; Jonathan, nearly twelve, and Joseph, seven. The Indians took them to Penacook (Concord, N. H.), where they separated, dividing their prisoners. One party received Bradley and his eldest son, Thomas, and started for their haunts in Maine. Soon after reaching there Haynes and his son escaped. The father, after two or three days, exhausted by want of food and by fatigue, was unable to continue. Thomas, persevering, reached Saco, where he obtained refreshment, and, returning, was able to revive his parent with the joint stimulus of food and hope. They both returned safely to Haverhill. The children were taken to Canada, and

sold to the French for servants. The tradition is that Mary was drawn upon a hand-sled. It is believed she was ransomed the following winter with one hundred pounds of tobacco. Chase says she afterward married John Preston, of Andover, and removed to Connecticut. October 12, 1730, she signed a deed at Windham, in that State.

The boys never returned. A deed of 1731 speaks of them as still in Canada. And Chase says that three brothers named Haynes, of Haverhill, who were in the Canada expedition in 1657, found their relatives, the captives, who were identified, though they could no longer speak English, were contented and refused to leave Canada. They must then have been old men, aged respectively seventy-three and sixty-eight. Mirick says that "Joseph Haynes, a relative," visited the captives.

Mirick and Chase do not agree about the names and sex of the children who were carried away, or as to their ultimate fate. It is surprising that both of them assign to Joseph, a little lad of seven, the role of rescuing the father in the wilderness. Certainly this feat must have been performed by Thomas, the eldest, and is sufficiently creditable to a sturdy youth of sixteen. Besides, it appears from a petition to the Governor and Council, under date of April 17, 1701, that the following Haverhill captives were still missing: Daniel Bradley, aged seven; Abigail Kimball, aged eight; Philip Cod, aged six,—all taken March 15, 1697; *Jonathan Haines*, aged twelve; *Joseph Haines*, aged seven,—taken August 15, 1696; and Abraham Whittiker, aged eight or nine, taken in August, 1691.

March 15, 1697, a party of about twenty Indians made a bloody and sweeping attack upon the westerly part of the town. Their retreat was as swift as their assault, so that although the rumor of destruction soon reached the village, and an armed party marched forth in pursuit, it was unavailing. Nine houses were plundered and burned, in defense of which their owners were slain. Twenty-seven persons were killed, of whom fifteen were children, and thirteen were carried away captive. The following are the names of the killed: John Keezar, his father, and son, George; John Kimball and his mother, Hannah; Sarah Eastman; Thomas Eaton; Thomas Emerson, his wife, Elizabeth, and two children, Timothy and Sarah; Daniel Bradley, his wife, Hannah, and two children, Mary and Hannah; Martha Dow, daughter of Stephen Dow; Joseph, Martha and Sarah Bradley, children of Joseph Bradley; Thomas and Mehitable Kingsbury; Thomas Wood and his daughter, Susannah; John Woodman and his daughter, Susannah; Zachariah White and Martha, infant daughter of Thomas Duston.

The first house attacked was that of Thomas Duston. His wife, Hannah, was the eldest daughter of Michael Emerson, and was at this time not quite forty years old. She was the mother of thirteen chil-



dren in all, the twelfth of whom was a babe of six days old at the time of the descent. She was still in bed under the care, as nurse, of Mary Nell, the daughter of George Corliss, who married William Nell. Nell had gone off in Andros' Eastern expedition, and died at Pemaquid, February, 1688. Corliss gave Mrs. Nell, by will, the farm (as is supposed), now occupied by William Swasey, on Broadway.

Duston was at work in the field, and seeing the enemy at a distance, ran home. There were seven children capable of doing something for themselves, of whom the eldest, Hannah, was over eighteen, and the youngest, Timothy, was two years and a half. Directing these to fly towards the garrison-house (probably Marsh's, at what is now Pecker's Hill), about a mile distant, he hastened to see what could be done for his wife and the infant. But the Indians were swiftly approaching, doubtless uttering their horrible war-whoops; and, as we are told, in all the savage glory of war-paint, armed with guns, "their tomahawks drawn for the slaughter and their scalping-knives unsheathed and glittering in the sun-beam." Recognizing the impossibility of rescuing the sick wife, and possibly bidden to do so by her (though no account says so), he determined to attempt to save at least one of the children. Hastily mounting his horse, he rode after them, armed with his gun, and overtook the flying group about an eighth of a mile from his door. Unable to determine which one to save, he dismounted from his horse and faced a little party of Indians who had pursued him. Recognizing his air of resolution, they hesitated to approach a desperate man. Accordingly, Duston, encouraging his children to press on towards the garrison, and keeping his horse as a barrier between himself and the savages, continued the retreat in good order, and reserving his fire, whilst the Indians, skulking behind trees and fences, fired without effect. Thus keeping the foe at bay, he reached the place of safety, when the Indians doubtless appreciated that their time for retreat had arrived, and the victorious but distracted father lodged in garrison the children whom he doubtless looked upon as already orphaned by the death of their mother. In the mean time the main body of Indians captured Mrs. Nell, who was attempting to escape with the babe; and entering the house, directed Mrs. Duston to rise, doubtless by furious gestures. She had scant time for toilet; indeed, it is said, she had only secured one shoe for the terrible journey before her, when the red men, seizing what they wanted, set the house on fire. They had no time to lose, for they doubtless expected a speedy attack from the village, and rallying to retire, they hastened to rid themselves of encumbrances. Such of the captives as were leg-weary or lagged in the march, were tomahawked and abandoned. An Indian seized the Duston babe and dashed its brains out against an apple tree. Of this there cannot well be any doubt, because, for a hun-

dred years after there were aged females who said they had often eaten fruit grown upon the fateful tree. But upon the farm of John James Marsh (formerly Jeff Emery's), near Creek Pond, now Crystal Lake, there used to be shown a rock against which it was said that the Indians had struck the poor little babe. Notwithstanding her weakened state from illness, Hannah Duston travelled a dozen miles or so that day, and in the keen March wind, the weather happening to be extremely cold, kept on with her savage captors through alternate snow, ice and mud. It is related that the women reached their destination in comparatively good health. Such was the hardihood of the pioneer women of New England. Their halt was made at last at a small island, now known as Dustin's, at the mouth of Contoocook River, six miles above the State-House, at Concord, N. H. In the family of the Indian who claimed them as his special property, were twelve persons—"two stout men," three women and seven children.

They were converts of the Catholic priests, and performed their devotions, morning, noon and night, with scrupulous care. Cotton Mather himself, cannot but observe the irony of the situation as he records; "Indeed these Idolators were, like the rest of their whiter brethren, Persecutors, and would not endure that these poor women should retire to their English prayers if they could hinder them." Yet they treated with kindness their unhappy captives; who found here another captive, an English youth, named Samuel Leonardson, taken prisoner at Worcester a year and a half before. It was intended to take the prisoners to Canada, and sell them to the French, according to custom. They were told also, that when they arrived at an Indian town, they would be stripped and made to run the gauntlet. Although they had unflinchingly endured so much, the prospect of these further indignities was insupportable to the women. They determined to escape, and Hannah Duston, who doubtless suggested the idea, planned the method, which was carried into execution on the 30th or 31st of April, after a stay of five weeks at the island. The Indians looked upon Leonardson, who had lived so long with them in apparent contentment, as one of their own family, and through him Mrs. Duston obtained from one of the Indians, in social chat, much needed information where to strike an enemy in order to kill him instantly and how to scalp a man. Everything being in readiness, an hour before the break of day, the two women and the boy, armed with hatchets, began their attack upon the sleeping Indians. Mrs. Duston killed her master, and young Leonardson killed the man who had taught him where and how to strike. One squaw, whom they had wounded sorely, yet managed to escape; also a little Indian boy, whom they had intended to spare and bring away with them. Then gathering up what small stock of provisions the wigwam afforded, the gun of the master,





and the tomahawk with which she had killed him, scuttling all the canoes save one to impede pursuit, Mrs. Duston embarked her command in the remaining one, to voyage down the Merrimac. Before proceeding far she suddenly recollected that they had neglected to avail themselves of the information how to scalp neatly, which they had procured from the dead Indian. Expressing her fears that the neighbors would not believe their whole tragic story without the bloody evidence of the scalps, they returned to the wigwam, took the ten scalps, and, wrapping them in a piece of linen cloth brought from her house at the time of capture, resumed their perilous voyage. It was indeed perilous. The squaw and child who had escaped, would as soon as possible report what had happened to neighboring Indians, who would be sure to pursue. Besides, they were thinly clad and illy supplied with food. However, they did not lose courage, having been favored so far. They kept a good-look out: at night, two slept and one paddled. And thus in due time they reached home and presented themselves to their friends who had given them up for dead.

After recovering from their fatigues, the now famous returned captives repaired to Boston, accompanied by Thomas Duston, the gun, the tomahawk and the ten scalps. Duston presented to the General Assembly a petition for recompense on account of "the just slaughter of so many of the Barbarians," and his own misfortunes, "having lost his estate in that calamity." Twenty-five pounds were voted Duston; twelve pounds ten shillings to Mary Neff; and twelve pounds, ten shillings to Samuel Leonardson. Hannah Duston had the honor of being interviewed by no less important a reporter than Cotton Mather, who gives the whole story in the "*Magnalia*," in his usual graphic, staring fashion. Thomas Duston was, quite probably, son of Thomas Duston, of Dover, N. H. The name is first found in the records of Haverhill, as the builder of a cottage before 1675; as soldier in King Philip's war (August, 1676); in the list of cottagers before February 1677; and again, in the list of cottages built between February, 1677 and January 1679, is the name of Thomas Duston second. The record of town meetings, first presents the name in 1682.

It may be conjectured that Thomas Duston and Thomas Duston second in the cottage lists, are the same. Duston lived in a small house at the time of the attack. Moses Merrill, who was living in 1860, remembered the cellar as a boy, and showed the site to Chase, the historian. Duston was building a new brick house at the time of the attack.

The name was originally Durstan; in the town records it is generally spelt Duston, but occasionally Dustan and Dustin. Dustin is the most common form at the present time, Mirick writes of him: "Thomas Dustin was a man of considerable ingenuity, and tradition says that he had a vast deal of mother wit." It is pretty clear that at the time of the attack, he

lived on the west side of Little River. August, 1697, three months after Mrs. Duston's return, Thomas Duston bought of William Starlin the land Starlin had bought and received by grant of the town in 1684. This land was at the Fishing River and east of Little River, near the northerly end of Primrose Street. The consideration was one hundred pounds, and tradition says the scalp-money was part of it. The town records, March 4, 1701-'2, mention "the highway that leads to Tho. Duston's mill." In 1723-'4, Duston lived on the Starlin estate. Duston was living in March, 1729. The date of his death is uncertain, as is that of his wife. It seems to be known, however, that she survived him some years, living, after his death, with her son Jonathan, who resided on the southwest part of the original Thomas Duston farm. From 1715 to 1721-'2, Duston was moderator of most of the Proprietors' meetings.

Duston's feat has been commemorated in poetry and prose. President Dwight, of Yale College, in his "Travels," has a spirited account of the retreat and defense of the flying children.

Some years since a monument was erected on Duston's (or Contoocook) Island in the Merrimack, in memory of this bold slaughter and escape.

In 1855 a Duston Monument Association was formed in the West Parish of Haverhill, which resulted in the erection of a suitable monument, dedicated in June 1861. Unfortunately, the Association had incurred debts which were not liquidated, and in 1865 the monument was actually taken on execution and removed, and has been, it is said, erected as a soldier's monument, in another town of Massachusetts. This was a mortifying incident. But on the 25th of November, 1879, a statue, erected upon the Common in front of the City Hall, at the cost of the late Hon. E. J. M. Hale, was donated by him to the city in honor of Hannah Duston, and accepted in its behalf in appropriate resolutions of the City Council.

The famous tomahawk is said to have been lost in the woods long afterwards. The Indian gun, remaining in possession of the male line of Hannah Duston's descendants till 1859, was then presented to the Duston Monument Association. It has since found a resting-place at the City Library; but it is understood that the trustees have recently surrendered it to a descendant whose claim to its possession was considered well-founded. The Duston descendants are numerous and highly respectable. After the terrible alarm and massacre, the town authorities awoke vigorously. It has been said that Thomas Duston was at the time building a new brick house. This was appointed a garrison, and Duston himself its commander, as appears by the following order:

"To Thomas Dustin, upon the settlement of garrisons, April 5, 1696-97. You being appointed master of the garrison at your house, you are, in his Maj's (Majesty's) name, required to see that a good watch is kept at your garrison both by night and by day, by those persons hereafter named, who are to be under your command and inspection in building or repairing your garrison: and if any person refuse or neglect their



duty, you are accordingly required to make return of the same, under your hand, to the Committee of Militia in Haverhill. The persons appointed are as follows: Josiah Heath, sen., Josiah Heath, jun., Joseph Bradley, John Heath, Joseph Kingsbury, and Thomas Kingsbury.

By order of the Committee of Militia,

SAMUEL AYER, Capt."

It will be observed by the date that Hannah Duston was still in captivity, nothing as yet being known of her fate.

Mr. Duston was, for the time, largely engaged in brick-making. The business, however, was carried on at great risk, because the Indians were almost always lurking about, watching their opportunity. The clay-pits were only a short distance from the garrison, but the savages were so bold that a file of soldiers constantly guarded the men who brought the clay from the pits to the yard near the house, where it was made into bricks.

Considering the remarkable character of Mrs. Duston's exploit, and the Indian's disposition to revenge losses incurred in such a manner, it would not have been surprising if special efforts had been made to recapture her and wipe out so deadly an affront.

It may be observed that Mather in the "Magnalia," presents to us Mrs. Duston's own views of her feat in its moral aspect. "Being where she had not her own life secured unto her, she thought she was not forbidden by any law to take away the life of the murderers by whom her child had been butchered." Being without the pale of the law, she was a law unto herself. Mirick, in his history informs us that "various opinions are afloat concerning the justness of this truly heroic deed." He intimates that perhaps the strict moralist would not approve the act. It may be apprehended that, in Hannah Duston's day, such scruples would have found little favor. A descendant of hers, recently deceased at an advanced age, came to Haverhill in 1889 to delight his eyes with an inspection of the then newly erected monument, and to traverse the scenes to him hallowed by her former presence. When he was asked in a rather delicate and guarded manner what he thought, morally and aesthetically, of the killing and, more especially of the scalping which did not appear to have been necessary for safety and which some squeamish people might even regard as wanton—whether it was in his judgment a slight departure from the normal delicacy and sensibility, so beautiful in woman—the veteran's eye glared and with a voice of thunder he replied, "Not a bit on't—I *glory* in her spunk!"

Mirick has a story that one of the Indians ravaging to and fro, stole the first town-book of records. Retreating up the river with a few others, the party found a yoke of oxen in the westerly part of the town, now Methuen, cut out the tongues of the poor beasts, struck up a fire and broiled them. Then, continuing their rapid return towards the north, they left the town-book behind them either by accident or design. It was speedily found, but so damaged with water that many of the records were illegible.

Chase does not believe these anecdotes, for plausible but not conclusive, reasons—first, because Nathaniel Saltonstall, who was then town clerk and had been for a long time, would have had this record in his possession, and the Indians did not penetrate within about two miles of his house in the village. But he concedes that the book might have been in the possession of the family of John Carleton, the second town clerk from 1664 to 1668, who lived west of the village. He does not think, however, that an Indian would make "prize of an old record-book when there were so many other things within his grasp far more attractive and valuable to savage eyes." But the Indian, who could neither read nor write, might regard the book covered with characters illegible to him as the white man's fetich and carry it away either as the method most effectually of annoying his enemies, or in the vague hope of deriving some unknown virtue from its possession. But probably the following transactions taken from the town records will serve better to make the matter clear than any conjecture, however aided by ingenious reasoning.

March 3, 1673-74, Mr. George Browne and Thomas Whittier were appointed to overlook the transcript of book No. 1 copied into book No. 3, as made by the town clerk. May 15, 1674, they reported the transcript to be "consonant and agreeable to the said old book," and that there was no need for the town to use the old book, but should commit it to the town clerk, who adds this memorandum in Latin, with which he was fond of garnishing his records: "*Vera copia oppidanis publicita; et tradita, et iis conscripta et approbata, qua nunc scriptis meis deposita est.*" Nathaniel Saltonstall, recorder."

The book being thus traced to the town clerk, who evidently means in this manner to acknowledge its receipt and deposit, it is hardly probable it should have been permitted to stray off again into the West Parish.

This original record book is in the town archives at City Hall. Considering its great age and rough usage, it is in a state of respectable preservation. In 1848, when a new town hall was completed, a safe was purchased for the better preservation of the town records; and the first two books of the records were ordered to be copied. Chase writes: "The latter task was performed in a most faithful and beautiful manner by Mr. Josiah Keeley."

Mr. Keeley's work is beautifully executed; but it is not a copy, it is an *abstract*. The ancient record is crabbed and difficult, but not undecipherable; and the experts in such writing at the present time would have made literal copies. Mr. Keeley seems, however, to have got the sense of the orders for all practical purposes.

The Haverhill town records have, upon the whole, been exceedingly well kept and preserved. There is a loose leaf, the history of which is told in the





records:—"March 10, 1717-18. At a town-meeting in Haverhill by adjournment, Captain John White brought one leaf of town-book and delivered it to Moderator, who delivered it to town-clerk to put it into the town-book, and note when it was returned; and was accordingly done by John Eaton, Town-Clerk, and this is the leaf that was brought by Captain White." The leaf is still safe in the custody of the present excellent City-Clerk.—March 22, 1697, the Massachusetts Assembly adopted the following order: "Whereas, it is reported that Colonel Saltingstall hath been very negligent of his duty as colonel, and that the late damage at Haverhill, wherein about forty of his majesty's subjects were killed and captured by the heathen enemy, besides six houses burnt and much spoile, and y<sup>e</sup> the said Colonel did not (as he might, when he had notice of the enemies approach) take care to draw them into Garrison; nor encourage the pursuit of them when persons offered; that his Honor will be pleased to make inquiry into the said affair, and see that there may be due animadversions, which may be a proper means to prevent the like miscarriages."

This order was adopted a week after the massacre, when doubtless many idle rumors were flying about, and there was the usual disposition to blame somebody. "His Honor" was William Stoughton, then Lieutenant-Governor and acting Governor, an old associate of Colonel Saltonstall. There may have been "due animadversion," but there is no record of it, and the Colonel retained his command.

This order recites the burning of six houses. Mather, whom Drake and others have followed, says, "about half a dozen houses;" a cotemporary journalist (Fairfield) entered in his diary that the Indians "burnt nine houses," Saltonstall, Myrick, Chase and other local writers, agree upon nine.

February 22, 1795, a party of Indians, early upon the war-path, made an attack in Andover, killing five and capturing five, returning through the westerly part of Haverhill. Here they captured in ambuscade Jonathan Haynes and Samuel Ladd, with their eldest sons, Joseph Haynes and Daniel Ladd. They each had an ox and horse team, with which they were hauling home hay from the extreme western part of the town, where it had been stacked since the preceding summer. The savages killed the elder Haynes, because "he so old he no go with us"—too infirm—and Ladd, who had a stern face, "because he so sour." Chase repeats a tradition that the savages camped at night in "Mill Meadow," a mile and a half north-east of World's End Pond. Here they killed the oxen, cutting out their tongues and other select pieces, to carry along in their homeward march. Chase is of the opinion that this incident has been transferred by Mirick to the Duston affair of a year previous, with exaggerated details, and so that the Indians were not guilty of cruelty to living animals, as had been charged.

The young men were carried to Pennacook, where they were kept some years till ransomed. Ladd was terribly disfigured by the savages with powder, being caught in an abortive attempt to escape. A descendant of Haynes has an ornamented staff, which his master gave him upon his return from captivity in token of regard.

March 5th a party of about forty Indians made a second raid on Andover, killing five persons and burning two houses and two barns, with the cattle in them. "On their return," says Hutchinson, "they made spoil on Haverhill." This is supposed to have been the burning of the house and buildings of Philip Eastman.

A treaty of peace had been made in the preceding autumn between the English and French (September 20, 1697), known as the peace of Ryswick, and soon after the last injuries the Governor of Canada notified the Indians to bury the hatchet. It was quite time for the poor English in such exposed settlements as Haverhill. They now had a little breathing space in which to cultivate their land and increase their flocks, sleeping tranquilly at night without hearing the war-whoop.

In this interval a building was erected (1700) on what is now Main Street, near the top of the hill, and facing the Merrimack, for a watch-house, school-house, or any other public use. In this year, for the first time, the town referred claims against the town to a committee to audit, instead of considering each one by itself in town-meeting.

At the annual election in 1701, John White was chosen town clerk in place of Nathaniel Saltonstall, who had served since 1668, a period of thirty three years. He had doubtless been an admirable clerk, though he sometimes presumed upon the citizens' ignorance of Latin to interpolate irrelevant comments in that language. This year the town remitted Joseph Peaseley his rates on account of his loss by fire.

At a special meeting in 1702, it was voted to levy a rate or tax of £31 12s. 00d., to defray the town's indebtedness for the previous year. In this amount were included £6 for the schoolmaster, £2 10s. for the selectmen's salary, and six shillings for "time and money spent to obtain a schoolmaster." Ten pounds was voted Mr. Rolfe for wood, and "four public contributions," which had first been given him the previous year, and were annually continued till his death. Such contributions, of one sort or another, were taken every Sunday towards the close of service, their object being previously explained by one of the deacons. The people proceeded to the "deacon's seat," and deposited their offerings in due order,—first the magistrates and dignitaries, then the elders, and lastly the common people. After the benediction all the people remained standing, whilst the minister marched down the aisle, followed by his family, and gravely bowing on either side.

In 1698 a clerk of the markets was first chosen—





Ensign Thomas Eatton, who continued as such till 1706.

At the annual meeting in 1703 Captain Richard Saltonstall petitioned the town for liberty to run a fence "from the pound cross over the spot where the old meeting-house formerly stood to his fence," and to "feed on the burying-place," viz., to pasture animals upon it, or else that the town should fence in the burying-place by itself, which the townsmen voted to do, when the old meeting-house had now been removed.

May 4, 1702, England declared against France and Spain, the war known in Europe as the "War of the Spanish Succession," but in America as Queen Anne's War. It was not long before the French and the English colonies in America were involved in it; notwithstanding the previous peace, it appears that in March and April, 1700, Capt. Samuel Ayer had twenty soldiers under his command, who were in constant service here. March 16th twenty men were sent from Ipswich to Haverhill. Early in 1702, the House of Representatives ordered snow shoes to be provided for the militia in the frontier towns, that they might be prepared to resist and pursue Indian depredators in the winter.

At the approach of war an additional garrison was ordered in the house of James Sanders, who lived at or near the foot of "Sanders'" Hill, in the northeasterly part of the town. James is thought to have been a son of John, who came from the parish of Dainton, Wiltshire, England.

Mirick says that early in the spring of 1701, the Indians attacked the garrison house of Jonathan Emerson, at the northwest corner of the present Winter and Harrison Streets. He may have antedated the time of the attack; but indeed, some straggling party may have anticipated the war, and made an assault without direction from their French masters. The garrison repulsed the attack without loss, whilst it is said that two Indians were killed, whom the red-men carried away and threw into the "deep hole," near the brick-yards. In the winter of 1704, February 8th about three or four o'clock in the afternoon, a party of six Indians surprised the northern garrison at Joseph Bradley's, rushing in at the open gates. Jonathan Johnson, a sentinel, shot and wounded the foremost, and Mrs. Bradley, who had a kettle of boiling soap on the fire, threw a ladleful of it over the unhappy savage, whom the "subsequent proceedings" interested no more. The savages at once killed Johnson, and took prisoners Mrs. Bradley and four others. Three whites escaped unhurt, and the Indians probably fearing to be surprised in their turn, commenced a precipitate retreat. The weather was bitter and the snow deep, whilst the unhappy captives were over-weighted with a heavy burden. Mrs. Bradley lived for many days on bits of skin, bark, ground-nuts, wild onions and lily-roots. In such a miserable plight she gave birth to a child, deep in the forests.

When the child cried the Indians thrust hot embers in its mouth. In mockery of the rite of baptism, they gashed its forehead with their knives; and, during her temporary absence they piked it upon a pole. At last the party arrived in Canada, where the Indians sold Mrs. Bradley to a Canadian for eighty livres.

She was treated kindly by the family of which she thus became an inmate, and in March, 1705, her husband went to Canada, and redeemed her. Tradition among descendants relates that he travelled on foot, accompanied only by a dog that drew a little sled, whereon was a bag of snuff, a present from the Governor of Massachusetts (at this time Joseph Dudley) to the Governor of Canada. The reunited couple voyaged from Montreal to Boston, and returned to Haverhill in safety.

The old writers said this was Mrs. Bradley's second captivity; and tradition added that when the Indians rushed into the garrison, one of them cried out, exultingly, "Now Hannah, we got you." There was a good deal of confusion about the second captivity, but there seems to have been no doubt that in the summer of 1706, the year after the return of Bradley and his wife, their garrison was again attacked in the night time. It is said they, their children and a hired man, were the only persons within it. But the moon shone brightly and they could see the red men silently and watchfully stealing near. They all armed themselves, and Mrs. Bradley, in her desperation, declared to her husband, that she had rather be killed than taken prisoner again. The savages, rushing against the door, tried to break it in and partially succeeded, when Mrs. Bradley shot and killed the foremost, who was struggling to crowd himself in at the opening. Batted in this first attempt, the Indians, as often occurred when their first leap failed, retreated like the wild beasts of the forest, whose habits in their warfare they often seemed to have copied.

This was not Mrs. Bradley's first captivity, as appears from the State Archives. In 1738, Hannah Bradley, of Haverhill, petitioned the General Court for a grant of land, in consideration of her former sufferings among the Indians and her "present low circumstances." That body granted her two hundred and fifty acres of land which was laid out to her in two lots, May 29, 1738, in Methuen, by Richard Hazen, a noted Haverhill surveyor.

Shortly after, Joseph Neff, a son of Mary, petitioned for a similar grant, in recognition of his mother's service in helping Hannah Duston to kill "divers Indians." He says his mother was "kept a prisoner for a considerable time," and "in their return home (they) past thro the utmost hazard of their lives and suffered distressing want being almost starved before they could return to their dwelling." Neff was granted two hundred acres of land. In aid of his petition, Mrs. Bradley made the following



deposition which establishes the fact that she had been taken prisoner March 15, 1697, with Mrs. Duston, and traveled with her at least as far as Pennacook :

"The deposition of the Widow Hannah Bradley, of Haverhill, of full age, who testifieth and saith that about forty years past the said Hannah together with the widow Mary Nell were taken prisoners by the Indians and carried together into captivity and above penny Cook the deponent was, by the Indians, forced to travel farther than the rest of the Captives, and the next night but one, there came to us one Squaw, whosaid that Hannah Duston and the aforesaid Mary Nell assisted in killing the Indians of her Wigwam, except herself and a boy, herself escaping very narrowly, shewing, to myself and others, seven wounds as she said with a Hatchet on her head, which wounds were given her when the rest were killed, and further saith not.

her  
HANNAH X BRADLEY,  
mark

August 4, 1704, Joseph Page and Bartholomew Heath were killed at Haverhill by the Indians, and a lad with them had a narrow escape.

The distress occasioned by Indian alarms was such that the town directed the selectmen to petition the assembly for abatement of that year's taxes. The next year a constant watch was kept day and night. In June Governor Dudley directed Colonel Saltonstall to "detach twenty able soldiers of the Newbury militia, and have them rendezvous at Haverhill on July fifth." These orders were given, and July 17th Saltonstall writes Lieutenant-Colonel Thomas Noyes, of Newbury, a severe letter, complaining of the physique of the "able soldiers," sent as "a considerable number of them appeared to be but boys or children, and not fit for service, blind, in part, and deaf and cross-handed." August 4th he writes again to Noyes in the same strain.

"Some idea," Chase truly says, "of the dangers and alarms of those years, and the great exertions made for the security of the frontier towns, may be had from the large number of soldiers ferried across the Merrimac at a single place, Griffin's Ferry, opposite the present village."

In 1707 Griffin would appear to have ferried over, at different times, two hundred and eighty-four men and nearly as many horses; in 1708 one hundred and eighty men and thirty one horses.

June 21, 1707, Joseph and Ebenezer Page, sons of Joseph, were killed in Haverhill. In August another attack was made, in which Nathan Simonds, of this town, and Jonathan Marsh, of Salem, were wounded.

Early in the spring of 1708 intelligence was sent to Governor Dudley at Boston that a French and Indian force, consisting of eight hundred men, was about marching for some one of our frontier settlements. Upon the receipt of this news, he "ordered guards in the most exposed places of both his provinces." Four hundred Massachusetts militia were posted in New Hampshire. A patrol was kept up from King-ton to Dover, and scouts were continually upon the move. To Haverhill were sent about forty men, commanded by three Salem officers—

Major, afterward Colonel, Turner (a principal merchant of that place, and for many years a member of the council), Captain Price and Captain Gardner. Soon after their arrival they were posted in the frontier houses and the garrisons. The following is the French account of the Canadian expedition. It is copied from Father Charlevoix's "History of New France." "This expedition had been decided upon in a great council held at Montreal with the chiefs of all the Christian Indians settled in the colony, and other Abenakis were to join with a hundred picked Canadians, besides a great number of volunteers, chiefly officers in our troops, making in all four hundred men. Messieurs de St. Ours des Chaillons and Hertel de Rouville were to command the French, and the Sieur Boucher de la Perriere was to lead the Indians. As it was important to keep the project secret till the moment when the warriors should start and to march rapidly, it was arranged that the two first named commandants should proceed by the St. Francis River with the Algonquins, the Abenakis of Bekancourt, and the Hurons of Lorette, and that La Perriere with the Iroquois should go by Lake Champlain: that all should meet at Lake Nikisipigue (Winnipisigee), where the Indians bordering on Acadia were to be at the appointed time. Various incidents well-nigh defeated the expedition, and delayed the march of the warriors. At last, on the 26th of July, they started; but Des Chaillons and Rouville, on reaching the St. Francis, learned that the Hurons had turned back, because one of their men had been accidentally killed, apparently while hunting, the rest believing, from this, that the expedition would be disastrous. The Iroquois, whom La Perriere was conducting by way of Lake Champlain, soon followed this example, under the pretext that some of them were sick, and that the malady might easily spread through the whole force.

"De Vaudreuil (Governor of Canada), to whom the commandants wrote, communicating this desertion and asking his orders, replied that even if the Algonquins and the Abenakis of Bekancourt should also abandon them, they should nevertheless keep on and make a dash at some isolated place, rather than return without doing something. Des Chaillons imparted this letter to the Indians, who swore that they would follow wherever he might lead them. They accordingly set out to the number of two hundred, and after marching one hundred and fifty leagues by impracticable roads, reached Lake Nikisipigue, but found no Abenakis there from the Acadian border, those Indians having been obliged to turn their arms elsewhere.

"They then resolved to march against a village called Hewreuil (Haverhill), composed of twenty-five or thirty well-built houses, with a fort, in which the Governor resided. This fort had a garrison of thirty soldiers and there were at least ten in each house. These troops had but just arrived in the place, having





been sent by the Governor of New England, who, on hearing of the march of the French, had sent similar detachments to all the towns of that district.

"Our braves were not dismayed on learning that the enemy were so well prepared to receive them, and no longer trusting to a surprise resolved to make it up in valor. They rested quietly all that night and the next day, one hour after sunrise, drew up in battle array. Rouville made a short address to the French to exhort all who had any quarrels with each other to be reconciled sincerely and embrace, as they all did. They then prayed and marched against the fort. Here they met with a vigorous resistance, but at last entered sword in hand and set it on fire. All the houses were also well defended and met the same fate. About a hundred of the English were killed in these attacks; many others, too slow in leaving the fort and houses, were burned in them, and the number of prisoners was large. There was no booty, as no thought was given to it till everything was consumed by the flames. Moreover, the sound of drum and trumpet was heard in all the neighboring villages, and there was not a moment to be lost in securing their retreat.

"It was conducted with great order, no one having more provisions than were needed for the homeward march. This precaution was even more necessary than they imagined. Our men had scarcely gone half a league, when, on entering a wood, they fell into an ambuscade formed by seventy men, who, before uncovering themselves, fired every man his shot. Our braves stood this volley without flinching, and fortunately it did no great damage. Meanwhile all behind was full of horse and foot, in close pursuit, and there was no course but to trample down those who had just fired on them.

"They took this course without hesitation; each one threw down his stock of provisions and almost all his baggage and without losing time with fire-arms at once rushed to close quarters. The English, taken aback by this sudden attack from men whom they supposed they had thrown into confusion, were routed themselves and could not rally; so that, except ten or twelve who escaped by flight, all were killed or taken.

"Nescambionit (an Indian warrior whom the English writers call Assacambuit), who had returned from France the year before, always fought near the commandants, performing wonders with a sabre presented to him by the King. He received a musket-ball in the foot. In the two actions we had eighteen men wounded, three Indians and five Frenchmen killed—among the last, two young officers of great promise, Hertel de Chambly (Rouville's brother) and Vercheres. During the last combat, several of the prisoners taken at the attack on Hewreuil (Haverhill) escaped.

"All the rest praised highly the kind treatment shown them by their captors during the retreat,

which was effected without accident, after the encounter just mentioned, and various incidents, related of some of the officers and volunteers, were more honorable to them than the signal proofs they had given of their bravery. I was one of the first to learn them, because I was at Montreal, at the very port, when the party landed there about the middle of September. Great praise was given especially to the Sieur Dupuys, son of the Lieutenant Particulier, of Quebec, who had carried his humanity so far as to carry the daughter of the King's Lieutenant at Hewreuil a good part of the way, the girl being almost unable to walk.

"The inaction of the English youth, much more numerous than the French, surprised men in Canada and one of the prisoners was asked the reason. His answer revealed the true cause of the remissness of the Iroquois led by La Perriere on his last expedition. This man said that it was not the fault of the young men of his nation that they had not raised war-parties against the French this year; that more than five hundred of the most alert had asked and obtained leave of the Governor-General of New England, but that as they were on the point of marching, they received counter-orders in consequence of a letter from the Governor of Albany to his general.

"In this letter, he added, the Governor stated that he had just gained control of the Christian Iroquois, who had assured him that no Indian would ever again take the war path against the English; that it was thus useless to go to any expense to attack the French, who, reduced to their own forces, were in no position to undertake anything, so that they might rest assured that the English colonies would henceforth enjoy perfect tranquillity, which was all they desired.

"This same prisoner also said that it was believed at Hewreuil (Haverhill) and all the cantons, that the party that laid waste that village was merely a detachment from a force of sixteen hundred men, of which the main body was not far off; that the same thing was said at Boston and that throughout New England they were constantly under arms, which exhausted the people greatly. It was ascertained from another prisoner that the Governor of Albany had recently made considerable presents to the Christian Iroquois."

It would appear that the French Governor-General of Canada, the Marquis de Vaudreuil, whilst sending his detachments of French and Indians against the English settlements in New England, had pursued a conciliatory policy towards Peter Schuyler, whom Charlevoix calls the Governor of Albany. He was accordingly much disgusted to find that Schuyler had been intriguing with the Catholic Indians and had warned Governor Dudley of the expedition which resulted in the attack on Haverhill. Charlevoix continues: "On his side, the Governor-General complained warmly to the Governor of Albany that



while he left his district and all New York undisturbed, out of consideration for the Dutch and for him personally, and this with a view of keeping the Iroquois to a neutrality no less advantageous to the English colonies than to New York, he (Schuyler) not only kept constantly stimulating the cantons to take up arms, but was building a fort in the Mohawk canton, and laboring to debauch from him the Indians domiciliated in the centre of the French colony."

October 8, 1708, about three weeks after the return of the Haverhill expedition to Canada, Schuyler replied to Vaudreuil: "As for the belt which I sent with a view to prevent the Indians from taking part in this war, carried on against the government of Boston, I must avow the fact, but I was impelled to it by Christian charity. I could not help believing it my duty to God and my neighbor to prevent, if possible, these barbarous and pagan cruelties, which have been but too often perpetrated on the unhappy people of that province." "Petre Schuiler," comments Father Charlevoix, "was a very worthy man, and here expressed only his real sentiments; but he was sufficiently aware of all that had occurred during the last fifty years in that part of America to know that it was the English who drove us to the stern necessity of letting our Indians act as New England did theirs. He could not be in ignorance of the horrors to which the Iroquois had gone at their instigation during the last war; that even at Boston the French and Abénakis held as prisoners were treated with an inhumanity little inferior to the cruelties of which he complained so bitterly. . . . It was also easy to prove that neither the French nor their Indians had ever resorted to the cruelties he reproached them with, except in retaliation; and that before determining to resort to this means to stop the barbarities used by the Iroquois to our officers, our missionaries and our settlers, and the ill treatment to which the Bostoners subjected our allies and our own people, the most illustrious in New France had long been allowed to shed unavailing tears." . . .

"It was not only in Canada that the English sought to turn against us the Indians, whose esteem and affection we were always more successful than themselves in securing."

In this manner, the accomplished Jesuit presents the French side of the issue of responsibility for Indian atrocities. And having now read the enemy's account of the descent upon Haverhill, let us turn to that transmitted to us by the English writers and local tradition. Discrepancies will of course be observed. Charlevoix received his narrative from the returning Frenchmen, who doubtless magnified their own exploits. Besides, the English accounts are confused and difficult to reconcile. People who lived in the time of our Civil War, and are familiar with its literature, will not be surprised that we have not a clear narrative of this affair, which happened in the

gray of the morning in an obscure frontier hamlet, one hundred and eighty years ago.

Thus, Charlevoix says the attack was made "one hour after sunrise." The local accounts say that on Sunday morning, August 29, 1708, *at break of day*, the French and Indians passed the frontier garrisons undiscovered and were first seen near the pound by John Keezar, who was returning from Amesbury. John Keezar was a wandering cobbler, the son of John Keezar who was killed in the Indian attack of March 15, 1697. The original pound, as we know, stood near the meeting-house. In 1773 the town voted "to build a stone pound in the corner of the parsonage pasture, near Captain Eames." This pound stood on the west side of Main Street, about midway between White and Fourth. Probably the pound of 1708 may have stood lower down, but near the present line of Main Street. Keezar ran into the village and alarmed the sleeping and unguarded inhabitants by firing his gun near the meeting-house. Another account assigns the honor of discovery to one Hutchins who was out stealing milk. Still another to a young man, who went up on the common to catch his horse, for an early start (on the Sabbath!) for a distant town, but who unluckily went to hide his sweetheart before he told the people. An old tradition says that the assailants came down along the present line of Concord Street, east of Round Pond. Upon that route they would have shunned the garrison houses, and would be quite likely to come within the observation of John Keezar, returning from Amesbury. At any rate, they speedily whirled into the village, uttering wild yells, with shrill whistling, and dressed in hideous war-paint. It is well known that the Frenchmen, who so easily assimilated themselves to the Indian habits and thus acquired the extraordinary control over them to which Charlevoix alludes, frequently adopted the Indian war-dress. Nothing could be conceived more horrible and distracting. No wonder the savages seemed like red demons to our ancestors. The first victim was Mrs. Smith, shot whilst flying from her house to a garrison. The enemy broke up into small parties, to do their bloody work more quickly and effectually. There was no fort and they attacked none.

The first assault was made at the house of the pastor, Rolfe, which stood at the corner of the present Main and Summer Streets, where the venerable Dr. Moses Nichols lives (1888). The house was garrisoned by three soldiers, who behaved like poltroons, and who even, it is said, begged their foes for mercy, which they did not deserve and did not get.

Mr. Rolfe, an athletic man, in the prime of life, awakened by the savage yells, jumped out of bed and placed his back against the entrance door, which the enemy were trying to break in. Calling in vain on his guard for help, he was wounded in the elbow by a ball passing through the door. Still he resisted till, finding the door giving way, he fled through the





house and out at the back-door. The Indians overtook him at the well and gave him swift despatch with their tomahawks. Some roved over the house for plunder and victims. Mrs. Rolfe was killed by a hatchet stroke in the brain, and her youngest child, Mehitabel, an infant, snatched from her protecting arms, was dashed against a stone near the house door.

Hagar, supposed to have been a negro slave, saved by her courage and dexterity two of the Rolfe children—Mary, a girl of thirteen years, and Elizabeth, who, three days later, attained her ninth year. At the first alarm Hagar took the children into the cellar, covered them with tubs and then hid herself. The enemy rushed to and fro in the cellar and even trod upon the foot of one of the girls who had the resolution not to cry out. They drank from the milk-pans, dashed them upon the cellar floor, and took meat from the barrel behind which Hagar was crouched. In after-years these girls were accounted remarkable women. Mary married Colonel Estes Hatch, of Dorchester. Elizabeth married Rev. Samuel Checkley, of Boston, minister of the New South (Church Green). Her daughter Elizabeth married Sam Adams, the patriot, and John Lothrop Motley, the historian, was one of her descendants. There were two other children—Benjamin and Francis, aged respectively twelve and six at the time of the massacre. December 22, 1735, the House of Representatives granted to Benjamin Rolfe, for himself and other children, heirs of Benjamin Rolfe, a plot of land in Lunenburg, not to exceed six hundred acres and not to interfere with any former grant. This, of course, was in consideration of the sufferings and losses of the family in the descent on Haverhill.

Anna Whittaker, a girl of eighteen, probably in attendance as nurse to Mrs. Rolfe, hid herself in an apple chest, under the stairs. She lived to be seventy-four years old, was a famous midwife, was twice married, and at her death had one hundred and twelve descendants. She probably often told the story of the wonderful escape, and it seems likely that in her old age she dreamed that she had saved Mary and Elizabeth's lives; but the laurels of poor black Hagar were not thus to be stripped from her.

Thomas Hartshorne lived a few rods west of the meeting-house—the new one, on the Common, now City Hall Park. He and two sons were shot just after leaving the house, and a third son was tomahawked as he came out of the door. Mrs. Hartshorne and the rest of the children, save one, escaped notice by going into the cellar, closing the trap-door over them. The enemy swarmed through the house for plunder, and finding an infant on a bed in the garret, threw it out of the window, on a pile of clapboards. It was picked up unconscious when all was over. When this infant had become a man of lofty stature and great strength, the neighbors used to joke him, saying that the Indians *started* him when they threw him from the garret window.

Lieut. John Johnson lived where his descendant, Bailey Bartlett, lived, and the Exchange Building on Water Street now is. When a party of the enemy made their appearance, he and his wife were standing in the doorway; with them was Ruth, wife of Thomas Johnson 2d (son of his son, Lieut. John, 2d) who had in her arms a babe a year old. Johnson and his wife were shot down where they stood, and Ruth Johnson, flying through the house, was killed in the garden at the rear, where the Osgood block stands. Tradition says that the babe was found, clinging to the dead mother's breast. Johnson was a deacon and the town records show that he was a useful and respected citizen. Chase says that he is supposed to have descended from Captain Edward Johnson, the famous author of the "Wonder Working Providence of Zion's Saviour," before quoted. This would be "important, if true," as a distinguished antiquary used to observe; but Chase gives no evidence in support of the suggestion.<sup>1</sup> Edward Johnson came over with Winthrop in 1630. Returning to England a little while, he was in Charlestown for a few years (1636–42), and then became the chief founder of Woburn. Deacon John Johnson was the original blacksmith, who came to Haverhill in 1658. He was seventy-five (75) years old.

Mr. Silvers' house, within ten rods of the meeting-house, was rifled and burned. The watch-house, on Main Street, built seven years before, was attacked but successfully defended.

The house of Captain Simon Wainwright, the merchant, stood directly opposite the Winter Street meeting-house. He was shot at the first assault. Mrs. Wainwright unbarred the doors and admitted the assailants. After a little parley, she left them under the pretense of procuring them money, and escaped with all her children, save a daughter who was taken captive. A party of soldiers were quartered in the chambers, and made a resolute defense, driving off their assailants. They made an ineffectual attempt to fire the house, but took with them three prisoners. Meantime, the soldiers killed from the windows two Indians, who were skulking behind a rock while they fired. Buried in the field, the floods exposed their bones only a few years ago.

Swan's house stood on White's lot, near the Winter Street meeting-house. The old Revolutionary soldier, Captain Nehemiah Emerson, used to tell the tale of its defense, as he got it from his grandfather, who, on the day of the great fray, lived in the garrison house of his father, Jonathan Emerson. The Swans had children, in whose defense and their own, they determined to hold out as long as possible. Two Indians attempted to break down the door, which they had barricaded with their bodies. Hard pressed, Mr. Swan, a timid man, thought it would be best to yield

<sup>1</sup> It is not true. St. John Johnson was oldest son of William Johnson, of Charlestown. He was born in England in 1633 and came in his mother's arms to Charlestown the next year. See "Genealogical Register," January, 1879.





and not exasperate the foe. But Mrs. Swan was resolute, and when the foremost Indian was forcing his way in, she ran her spit, three feet long, through his body. The disheartened savages retreated spiritless, but whether *spiritless* or not, the chronicles do not vouchsafe to tell us.

Simon Wainwright, as we have mentioned, came from Ipswich. His father, Francis, was famous for his exploit in the Pequot War, when, being attacked by two Indians, and breaking the stock of his gun, he killed them both with the barrel. Simon was an influential and very prosperous citizen. In those days the traders were likely to get what ready money there was about. Was the rumor of it so great that even the Canadians had heard of it who asked his wife for money? There was a story that he had a great chest packed tightly with Spanish dollars. He buried a good many of his dollars in his life-time, and there has been considerable digging at different times to find it, but in vain. For the information of treasure-seekers, it is deemed proper to mention here that the dollars will be found in the space "bounded by Little River on the south and west, Winter Street on the north, and the easterly line of the lots on the easterly side of Emerson Street on the east."

April 29, 1710, Widow Mary Wainwright petitioned the General Court from Haverhill to take some care for the redemption of her daughter, "a long time in captivity with the French of Canada," "before Canada be so endeared to her that I shall never have my daughter more." The indorsement on the petition is: "In the House of Representatives read and recommended 12th June." May not this captive girl have been "the daughter of the King's Lieutenant," whom the *Sieur Dupuys*, according to *Charlevoix* carried "a good part of the way"?

Nathan Simon's house was attacked and he was wounded in the arm by a ball. He shot two Indians and the attacking party retired.

Sibley, the late well-known antiquarian of Harvard College, states in his history of Union, Me., that there was a tradition of the Sibley family that Samuel Sibley, the ancestor, was killed by the meeting-house. Sibley, was from Salem and was probably one of the soldiers under Major Turner.

These various attacks were made about the same time by separate small detachments of the invaders.

One of them had set fire to the rear of the new meeting-house, constructed, as we have seen, at so great an effort. Its loss would have been almost irreparable. Fortunately, a wholesome diversion occurred just at this time. Mr. Davis, a bold and quick-witted man, going behind Mr. Rolfe's barn, which was near the house, struck violently with a great club, and with outcries and words of command, shouted, "Come on! Come on! We will have them." The stragglers still remaining in Mr. Rolfe's house took alarm and, after a hasty and fruitless attempt to

fire it, ran forth crying: "The English are come." Doubtless the raiders had been warned by their leaders that their success depended upon a surprise, and the work must be rapid on account of the soldiers in garrison houses at their rear. And about this time Major Turner actually arriving with his company of soldiers, the whole force commenced a rapid retreat, taking with them a number of prisoners. Mirick says the retreat commenced about sunrise. The opportune Davis ran to the meeting house, and, with the aid of a few others, put out the flames and saved the building. The Sibley tradition declares that Samuel, the ancestor, was killed while throwing water here. It might have been a last, straggling shot.

The town was now roused and taking to arms. Joseph Bradley (probably the commander of the North garrison) collected a small party and secured the medicine box and packs of the enemy, which they had left about three miles from the village. The spot is said to have been a short distance north of the house of Deacon Carleton, in the West Parish, about half a mile north of the place where the subsequent fight took place.

Captain Samuel Ayer, a strong and fearless man, collected a party of about twenty men and pursued the enemy, coming up with and attacking them as they were about entering the woods, when they faced about and gave battle. Captain Ayer was soon reinforced by another party, led by his son, making the whole number of townsmen about sixty or seventy. After a smart fight which lasted about an hour, they retook some of the prisoners, and the French force retreated in haste, leaving nine of their number dead on the field. Mirick declares that their sufferings were so great, on account of the loss of their packs and the consequent want of food, that many of the Frenchmen gave themselves up as prisoners; and some of their own captives were dismissed with a message that if they were pursued, the rest should be put to death. Probably there were some stragglers in the rapid retreat; and we have seen that *Charlevoix* admits the escape of "several" of their prisoners "during the last combat."

The French account states also that their people threw down their packs of provisions in order to carry on the last fight with greater ease, and makes no mention of the packs having been left behind in the outskirts of the town and taken by the English. Mirick claims that the French left thirty of their number dead, in both engagements, and many were wounded whom they carried with them. Perhaps some Indians were killed of whom no exact roster was made. Governor Dudley, in his address to the Assembly, says: "We might have done more against them if we had followed their tracks." This might well be. The French were in a very critical condition, at such an immense distance from home. The attack had been a bold one and they were fortunate



they did not pay a terrible penalty, in their retreat being cut off entirely.

One may conjecture that each party had seen enough of the other.

Captain Ayer was killed in the engagement, before the reinforcing party arrived. He was shot in the groin, and bled so profusely his son did not recognize him. Captain Ayer was a deacon, also one of the selectmen, and an active, resolute and worthy man. He lived near Plug Pond.

The local historians make the number of killed belonging to Haverhill as sixteen,—Mr. Rolfe, wife and child, Mrs. Smith, Thomas Hartshorne and three sons, Lieut. Johnson and his wife Catherine, Capt. Wainwright, Capt. Ayer, John Dalton, Ruth, wife of Thos. Ayer, with one daughter, and Ruth, wife of Thomas Johnson 2d. Probably about the same number were carried away as prisoners.

Joseph Bartlett, of Newbury, about twenty-two years old, who was stationed as a soldier at Capt. Wainwright's house, was taken prisoner, and after his return from Canada published a very interesting account of his adventures. He was absent over four years. The General Court allowed him £20 15s. for his charges and expenses. He was taken in the Wainwright house, in company with Mary Wainwright and another soldier named Newmarsh. Soon after the retreat began a Salem soldier named Lindall was knocked in the head. The attack by Capt. Ayer's party so demoralized the French that they broke up into small parties, which did not unite again for three days. During that time they traveled hard. When they reached Lake Winnipiscogee, the French and Indians separated. Bartlett was taken by the Indians. However it may have been with the former, the Indians suffered for lack of food. Bartlett seems to have had his share of what was going. He appears not to have been treated unkindly, except by the squaws. Perhaps the Indian women may have hated the English, against whom their husbands fought and at whose hands they sometimes fell, as the English women hated the Indians. As a rule, the Indians treated their captives tolerably well, except in case of sudden provocation or terror. This was ordinarily a matter of policy, as they intended to sell them to the French for servants. The aged, sick and infants, with whom they did not care to be embarrassed, they certainly made short and brutal work of.

Pike, in his journal, says that "many soldiers belonging to Salem were here slain." Among them was William Coffin, to whose widow, Sarah, the General Court granted £5, "on account of the remarkable forwardness and courage which her husband, William Coffin, of Salem, distinguished himself by, in the action at Haverhill, where he was slain."

When the fighting was over and comparative calmness had arrived, the day was far advanced. It was midsummer and sultry, and the dead must be speedily buried. Some, no doubt, were put in earth where

they fell. Coffins could only be made for the most important. In the burial-ground a large pit was dug, where several were laid away together. Mr. Rolfe, his wife and child, were placed in one grave, near the south end of the ground. A respectable monument was erected to their memory, with suitable inscriptions, which, in the course of a century and a half, became illegible. In 1848 an appropriate monument and inscriptions were erected by the care of the women of Haverhill, who were engaged in restoring the "old burying ground" to a condition of becoming decency. The old Latin epitaph to Mr. Rolfe was recarved and is as follows: "Clauditur hoc tumulo corpus reverendi, pii, doctique viri, Benjamin Rolfe, ecclesie Christi quae est in Haverhill, pastoris fidelissimi: qui domi suae ab hostibus barbare trucidatus. A laboribus suis requievit mane diei sacrae quietis, Aug. XXIX, Anno Domini MDCCVIII, aetatis suae XLVI."

Samuel Sewall, then judge of the Superior Court, entered in his diary, under the date of 1703-04: "Febr. 8, a garrison house is surprised at Haverhill by six or seven Indians." This was the attack in which Hannah Bradley was taken prisoner.

"Lord's Day, Aug. 29, 1708. About 4 P.M. an express brings the news, the doleful news of the surprise of Haverhill by 150 French and Indians. Mr. Rolfe and his family slain, about break of day. Those words ran much in my mind, I will smite the Shepherd and the sheep shall be scattered. What a dreadful scattering is here of poor Haverhill flock, upon the very day they used to have their solemn assemblies! Capt. Wainwright is slain."

May 1, 1697, the judge made entry: "Mannah Dustan came to see me; gave her part of Connecticut flax. She saith her master, whom she killed, formerly lived with Mr. Rowlandson at Lancaster. He told her that when he prayed the English way, he thought that was good, but now he found the French way was better. The single man showed the night before to Sam'l Lenarson how he used to knock Englishmen on the head and take off their scalps, little thinking that the captives would make some of their first experiments upon himself."

September 25, 1708, there was an alarm, but no attack. Colonel Saltonstall wrote the Governor and Council on the 27th "that a party of the enemy, to the number of about thirty, were discovered in the town on Saturday night, but that he soon gave the alarm, drew a number of soldiers together, and had repelled and driven them back without suffering any loss." The *Boston News Letter* of October 4th says of this affair,—"Some few skulking Indians were discovered in the town in the night, and the alarm being made, they were soon frightened, and drew off without doing any mischief."

October 18th Jonathan Emerson, Jonathan Eaton and William Johnson, selectmen, petitioned the General Court for abatement of a part of the town tax.





They set forth the assaults upon the town, "damni-  
fying us to ye value of about (€) 1000 lb. beside (which  
is more) loss of lives, thereby reducing us to great ex-  
tremity and distraction, discouraging of hearts of  
many amongst us who are upon designs and endeavors  
to remove, whereby our condition is rendered in  
some measure comparable to yt of David's & ye men  
with him when Ziklag was spoiled. Considering also  
in conjunction therewith ye extreem charges we  
must be exposed unto (if our town stands) in build-  
ing strong garrisons. Now settling a minister, &c." The  
court ordered an abatement of thirty pounds  
from their tax.

In 1711 we find that the parsonage house was pre-  
pared and *fortified* at an expense of €11 14s. 6d.  
The garrisons and houses of refuge were kept in or-  
der. A company of soldiers, under the command of  
Lieutenant-Colonel Richard Saltonstall were armed,  
equipped and exercised. June 19, 1710, the General  
Court ordered these men to be equipped with snow-  
shoes. Snow-shoes were also supplied to the North  
Militia Regiment of Essex. Chase gives a list of fifty-  
six of these snow-shoe men who lived in Haverhill.

August 27, 1712, a foot company of fifty men was  
ordered raised and posted at Haverhill.

Queen Anne's War closed April 13, 1713, with the  
peace of Utrecht, and on the 13th of July following a  
treaty was made with the Indians at Portsmouth, em-  
bracing the tribes from the Merrimac to the St.  
Johns. By this treaty the English were to enjoy  
their old settlements, without claim or molestation  
from the Indians, while the latter reserved their an-  
cient rights of hunting, fishing and fowling. The  
government was to establish convenient trading-  
houses, where the Indians could obtain supplies with-  
out the extortion and imposition formerly common.  
The next spring a ship was sent to Quebec to ex-  
change prisoners.

Hutchinson estimates that "from 1675 to 1715  
5000 to 6000 of the youth of the country had perished  
by the enemy or by distempers contracted in the  
service."

The peace with the Indians did not last long.  
Fresh troubles arose with the Eastern tribes, and in  
1717 it was necessary to have a confirmation of the  
treaty of 1713. The Jesuit priests, notably Father  
Ralle, who had his station and mission chapel at  
Norridgewock, were held to be responsible for stirring  
up the Indian hostilities. Three times an attempt  
was made to capture him. August 23, 1724, the En-  
glish surprised and destroyed his settlement, and the  
body of the good priest was left upon the ground  
near the cross, scalped and outraged. Whatever,  
however, may be said of Father Ralle, his death  
broke the power of the Norridgewocks and led towards  
a permanent peace. Previously, in 1722, Brunswick,  
Me., was destroyed, and great alarm sprang up all  
along the frontier.

August 10, 1722, the selectmen were ordered "to

build a good fort round Rev. Mr. Brown's house with  
what speed they could." The people did not mean to  
lose a second good minister. The town clerk jour-  
neyed to Ipswich on horseback to get nails for the  
fort, and two quarts of rum—a very moderate quantity  
—were used for the raising, at an expense of four  
shillings. In the spring of 1724 the enemy seemed to be  
omnipresent. They were scattered all over the country  
in small parties, plundering, murdering and spread-  
ing terror in every direction. A constant watch was  
kept. In July Colonel Noyes, of Newbury, was di-  
rected to send twelve men to Haverhill and six to  
Amesbury, to serve as scouts. September 15th  
"John White, Capt.; Richard Kimball, Capt.; Jon-  
athan Woodman, Capt.; and Richard Hazzen, Lieut.,"  
wrote to the Governor from Haverhill, strongly urg-  
ing the sending a strong party to Lake Winnipiseogee,  
to surprise and utterly break up the Indians in  
that region.

The last important passage of arms in these hos-  
tilities was at Pequawket, or Pigwacket (Fryeburg,  
Me.), in May, 1725. The long Indian hostilities had  
trained Indian fighters among the English as hardy,  
as wary and cunning as the savages themselves.  
John Lovewell, of Dunstable, was one of the most  
noted, and raised a party of volunteers for this expe-  
dition which numbered forty-six men besides himself,  
including a chaplain and surgeon. The chaplain  
prayed morning and evening. He was Frye, of  
Andover, and the doggerel in which his name is  
commemorated illustrates the spirit of the time:

"They wounded good young Frye,  
Who was our English chaplain.  
He many Indians slew,  
And some of them he scalped  
While bullets round him flew."

Four of Lovewell's men were from Haverhill,—  
Abiel Asten, Ebenezer Ayer, Doctor William Ayer  
and Zebediah Austin. Asten was living in 1790, at a  
great age, in that part of old Haverhill now Salem,  
N. H. Austin lived in what is now Methuen. He  
got back too, for he married in 1729. These Haver-  
hill men probably joined Lovewell's party here,  
where the expedition was furnished with supplies by  
John White, who had charge of the stores kept here,  
to supply the soldiers. They marched away about  
April 27th. After the famous fight with Paugus and  
his men at Saco Pond, only a few wounded, exhausted  
men were left to crawl away. But nobody dared  
hang upon their trail. After the famous fight the  
power of the Eastern Indians steadily declined, and  
the Abenaki chiefs signed, at the Council chamber in  
Boston, December 15, 1725, a treaty of peace which  
was long respected, and other tribes acceded to it at  
Falmouth (Portland) in 1727.

Even after Lovewell's fight the terrors of Haver-  
hill continued. A scouting-party was in service  
during September and October, 1725. Joshua Bailey  
and Jonathan Woodman wrote to the Governor



August 30th that Indians had recently been "lurking in the woods; guns heard, etc." The men were called "centinels," and a line of them were kept constantly posted on the frontier of the town to keep watch and give alarm if need be. In 1723 John Clement had asked to be relieved from paying the rent of the Parsonage Farm for the previous year because he had been driven off by the war.

We have arrived at a time when the troubles of the Haverhill people, growing out of hostilities by the Indians, were at last drawing to a close. There were still French and Indian Wars, and Haverhill men fought in them. But the town was now safe. Notwithstanding the fear and annoyance inspired by the savage, the line of settlement was moving to the north. Haverhill ceased to be a frontier town and was itself protected by other towns.

The story of the Indian forays upon Haverhill was told by Mirick in his history of the town with considerable vivacity. Sixty years ago a respectable amount of tradition remained upon the lips of the old people still living, which he was fortunate enough to catch and reduce to permanent form. In the West and North Parishes there were those who, sitting in the corners of the great open fire-places of winter nights, had heard, with breathless attention, their grand-sires' tales of how the Indians came down.

In 1795 Rev. Abiel Abbot was ordained as minister of the First Church in Haverhill. He was an admirable scholar and a fine writer, with literary tastes. Interested in the early history of the town, he set himself speedily to do his share towards preserving its annals. Judith Whiting, who was a big girl when the great descent was made, was still living. When the Haverhill bridge was completed in the fall of 1794 the old woman walked over it unaided. Mirick says she was then in her hundredth year. She failed to complete the century, lacking twelve days when she died. But she was full of the Indian lore, and Mr. Abbot received its narratives from her lips and reduced them to writing.

This period in the town's annals has been dealt with with great, and perhaps disproportionate detail. But it is not only the romantic, but the critical period. The townspeople often talked of "drawing off,"—abandoning their property to the savage foe. Probably they never really meant to do that; they were made of sterner stuff. But they might have been obliged to go. An attack like that of Hertel de Romilles, made ten or twelve years before, would almost have exterminated them. The French commanders were men of superior enterprise and skill, far abler than the English. And as Charlevoix has truly told us, they, with the assistance of the astute and indefatigable Jesuits, were much more successful in the management of their Indian allies. They appreciated the Indian character. They were not disgusted by his brutal traits, or they were much more successful in concealing their disgust. The Jesuits lived with their

converts; they ate and slept with them. This even the good apostle Eliot could not do. He would have given his life to save them, in this world and the next; but his stomach would not bear their food, and the heat, the filth and the vermin of their wigwams overpowered him to faintness. From the Gulf of St. Lawrence to the Pacific Ocean, the Frenchman, whether colonist, pioneer, warrior or trapper, has been gay and contented, with his Indian wife and his copper-colored children. Under Frontenac and Vaudreuil, New England was long harried and tormented. Then the enterprising Frenchman built a whole line of forts from the St. Lawrence River to the Gulf of Mexico; and until the triumphs of Pitt and the death of Montcalm, upon the heights of Abraham, it was not certain that the Gaul would not drive the Anglo-Saxon into the Atlantic Ocean. True, the Englishman was driving his roots deep into the soil. The Frenchman was full of military fire and ambition; his rival was cultivating the earth and increasing his resources. He had, at least, the longest purse, and the heaviest battalions for war.

The Catholic religion and the priest's simple baptism—the Mass and the cross—suited the American savage better than the severe austerity and the subtle theology of Calvinism. No wonder Hannah Duston's master "found the French way better."

The patient consideration of our fathers' relation with the Indians, is the more necessary in order to comprehend the permanent effect it had upon the character of the New England people.

The leading living representative of the first Massachusetts Governor says: "The spreading of the Gospel and the conversion of the heathen were foremost in the contemplation of the New England Fathers." Before leaving England, in 1629, in "The Conclusions for New England," Winthrop wrote: "It will be a service to the church of great consequence to carry the Gospel into those partes of the World, to helpe on the comminge of the fulnesse of the Gentiles." But the Massachusetts colonists found very few Indians in their immediate neighborhood; they were very busy themselves, and they postponed carrying the Gospel to a more convenient season.

Then came the Pequot War, and the stern and inexorable destruction of that tribe, infusing the wholesome terror of the white man's power and resolution, which kept the peace for more than a generation. These were the years in which the beneficent works of Eliot and his associates were wrought; but, as has already been intimated, those labors were not regarded with universal favor. But they made the presence of the Praying Indians familiar in the white settlements. Familiarity bred contempt. The Indian was lazy; he was always willing to be drunken. Meanwhile, he sold his peltry to the traders, he got guns and ammunition and learned how to use them. When King Philip's War broke out, these besotted loafers, familiar with the English towns and ways, became dangerous.





As villages burned and war-whoops sounded, the terror and rage of our good fathers were intense and equal. They seem to have determined to rid themselves of their noxious neighbors as far as possible. They killed as many as they could, and they reduced a large number of the rest to slavery. These terrible measures did their perfect work in Southern New England. There was no more Indian warfare in that region. The Indians of the Islands and the Cape, who stayed at home during Philip's War, though he was their overlord, ever after lived at peace with their white neighbors, and have been treated not unkindly by them. But peace has been more fatal to them than war. Not a man of absolutely pure Indian lineage remains among them.

The scene of Indian hostilities was now transferred to the North, and the people who suffered lived in the outskirts of the English settlements, like the men of Haverhill.

The men of Haverhill found few or no Indians in the territory of Pentucket. They took alarm at the first rumor of outbreak and bought the Indian title of those who had or claimed the right to sell it, with the professed assent of the tribal chieftain. Their dealings with the natives were certainly very slight, apparently nothing. They were poor themselves and hard-working, but they were contented and were steadily progressing when King Philip's War broke. Then, though not themselves immediately involved in its horrors, they began to feel all the anxieties of war. Rumors came thick and fast. They could almost see the flame and smoke of the burning villages at night. And soon their turn came, too.

Involved as these unlucky American colonists were in the dynastic quarrels of Europe, they were obliged to participate in a horrible warfare at the caprice of their sovereigns.

It must be supposed that Ward and White and Clement, their associates and their children, did not consider that they had done any wrong to the red men. The red men to whom the forests and streams of Pentucket once belonged had passed away. The survivors had sold their title. Their enjoyment of these thousands and thousands of acres had been only transitory, for a little hunting and a little fishing in its season, and the rude cultivation of a few acres near the mouth of Little River.

The white man, on the other hand, was making the wilderness bloom and blossom as the rose. In the half-century of his occupation he had subdued more acres than all the red men of New England would skim over, with their clam shell hoes and skin-deep cultivation, in a thousand years. He had brought in the European civilization; he was attaining contentment and abundance; he was looking on to gain luxury and refinement in due time. Most of all and best of all, he was doing God's appointed work. There was no doubt about that.

Who were these Indians again, who came with ter-

rible war-whoop and painted faces and unfathomable savagery? They were not the original Pentuckets—most of them had never seen Pentucket till they came to plunder, slay and scalp. They were the Abenakis of the East, the wild Hurons and Algonquins of the distant North, who traversed great wildernesses to attack a peaceful and unoffending people. They were not Praying Indians, such as we had formerly contemplated with amused and undisguised contempt. They were pagans, heathen; worse, they were the creatures of Romanism, the puppets of the hated Jesuit priests. They were idolaters.

They came to burn the cabin, to scalp the women, to throw red-hot embers into the mouths of babes. They harried the settlements, not only to destroy property and make life insecure—they made life a torment. It was not worth having at such a price—of perpetual vigilance. The husband went forth to the field, to the village, to the town-meeting—what agony to the wife, living on the edge of the cleared lands, when he did not return at sunset! And to the husband and father, accidentally and imperatively delayed. What anxiety! how slow the good horse is! As he climbs the last hill, shall he see his dwelling in flames? Shall he find it in ashes, wife and the little ones already far on the way to the wilderness and Canada as captives?

Again, the Indian fought by surprise, approaching by stealth till near his prey, and then springing upon it with leaps and bounds and the cries of the beasts of the forest. It was the fashion most of all repulsive to the open, straightforward, bull-dog nature of the Englishman, though after a generation he learned to match the red man at his own arts.

And now what wonder that the frontiersman came to look upon his Indian foe as he looked upon the noxious creatures of the forest—the rattlesnake whom he crushed beneath his heel, the wolf for whose head he offered bounties? Rev. Solomon Stoddard, of Northampton, wrote to Governor Dudley in 1703: "They don't appear openly in ye field to bid us battle; they use those cruelty that fall into their hands; they act like wolves and are to be dealt with all as wolves." And so Mr. Stoddard proposed that the English "may be put into ye way to hunt ye Indians with dogs as they doe bears."

There was nobody in that day to point out the general good treatment of captives by the savages—their scrupulous respect to the chastity of their female prisoners. In truth, their clemency and their fantastic humors were too uncertain to make the position of a captive with them altogether pleasant. Still, a pretty good brief could be made in their behalf and from their point of view, in looking over their transactions with the Haverhill people. But there was nobody then certainly who could be invoked "to put yourself in his place." Even now, one needs be careful. As the historian Palfrey, who had made a painstaking study of the Indian character, wrote of Father





Ralle, the Jesuit whom "the Bostoners" slew and scalped. "Men of this century not in danger of the tomahawk which his zeal lifted against the wives and children of a hundred years ago, can afford to be just to his good qualities, such as they were, and to be sentimental over his grave."

We shall not be sentimental. It was a case of self-preservation. One party or the other had to go to the wall. It was a question of the survival of the fittest. It would ill-become the descendants of old Haverhill to doubt that in this case, the fittest survived.

There certainly is no trace of resentment towards the French Canadians, a hundred of whom apparently came here in arms on the fateful Sunday morning in August, one hundred and eighty years ago. Their descendant is in Haverhill to-day. He is welcome, and, it is believed, is doing good and is being done good unto.

But the people from 1675 to 1730, the Hannah Dustons and Hannah Bradleys and the children they bore in those terrible days of bloodshed, captivity and terror, and the generations who listened to the night-mare tales of Indian atrocities, became deeply imbued with impressions of the cruelty, treachery and worthlessness of the Indian character. The fifteen millions of people descended from the New England pioneers, have carried these impressions to the Pacific slope, and they are not extinct to-day. The Indian philanthropist is actuated, no doubt, by the highest motives of humanity, and, in the immeasurable superiority of our race and civilization, we cannot do too much to save the fragments of the people, whom we have practically dispossessed of the continent. But the ordinary American is very listless about the cause.

The door through which Pastor Rolfe was wounded, was preserved until destroyed by fire, nailed up in the porch of the First Parish meeting-house.

The indirect influence of the Indian wars upon the morals of the community was unfavorable. All war is demoralizing. The presence of the garrison soldiers was not propitious. Danger, anxiety, desperation, do not ordinarily promote temperance or self-restraint. If a man strikes a sturdy blow in the hour of peril, his frailties will be overlooked for a while. And what is overlooked in him, is apt to become chronic in the community. Haverhill was not the same orderly, devout society in the eighteenth as it had been in the seventeenth, century.

Even in perilous times people occasionally smile, and it would seem that grim-visaged war sometimes smoothed his wrinkled front, even at the garrison-houses. As at Jonathan Marsh's fort on Broadway, when the brave sentinels fired till their ammunition was about gone, at a supposed Indian discovered within the palisades, and found in the morning it was only an old maid's petticoat, hung on the clothes' line to dry!

Or at Thomas Duston's garrison, when Joseph Whittaker surprised the state of Mary Whittaker's feelings towards himself by feigning to have thrown his person in despair into the fortress well. Still more pleasant is it to read of Thomas Whittier, a Friend, and the ancestor of the most eminent Friend in the world, who lived near the garrison house of James Sanders, but would not seek shelter there for himself and family at night-fall, as was the prevailing custom. He built no palisade wall about his house, he never carried a gun with him, and he always treated the Indians kindly. In return, they never molested him or his. Thus it happened that in the evening when the family gathered about the chimney corners, and the fitful shadows danced, guttural whispers were heard outside the rude windows. Keen eyes shone like fireballs, and copper skins glistened. But no fear was ever felt, and no harm was ever done. The tradition is a charming one; we may as well believe it, as nobody has ever had the hardihood to deny it!

## CHAPTER CLV.

### HAVERHILL. — (Continued).

#### *Witchcraft—Crime—War—about the Commons.*

It has been said, with some pride, that the witchcraft delusion of 1692 had no currency either in Haverhill or Newbury. But among the "Witchcraft Papers" in the clerk's office of Essex County is a power of attorney to Stephen Sewall "to procure us a copy of the act in favor of us in respect of our reputations and estates and to act for the reception of what is allowed us, and to transact any other thing referring to the premises on our behalf that may be requisite or convenient." This paper is signed, among numerous others, by Joseph Emerson, in behalf of his wife, Martha Emerson, of Haverhill. The inference would naturally be that Martha Emerson had, at some time, been implicated in those unhappy proceedings. Stephen Sewall was clerk of the court at Salem and brother of Judge Sewall, who sat in the trials at Salem, and afterwards made confession in the Old South Meeting-House. As to Newbury, Cotton Mather, in his "Remarkable Providences," gave an account of the "troubles preternatural" in the house of William Morse, of Newbury, Mass., in 1679, for which Mrs. Morse, in 1680, was sentenced to be hung, though she was never executed.<sup>1</sup>

If no witchcraft prosecutions originated in Haverhill, it could not boast an entire immunity from

<sup>1</sup> On the 27th of September, 1692, John Shepard, of Rowley, was bound over to Court for assisting to convey Mary Green of Haverhill, a person charged with witchcraft, out of Ipswich jail.



criminals and crime. Samuel Sewall, December 25, 1674, entered in his all-containing diary that "Samuel Guile, of Havarell," had committed at Amesbury a capital offence against chastity. September 25, 1691, he records: "Elizabeth ———, of Havarill, is tried for murdering her two female bastard children. September 26.—She is brought in guilty by the jury, Mr. Crisp, Foreman. Mr. Stoughton was not in Court on Friday afternoon when the trial was, and went off the bench on Saturday."

"Thursday, June 8, Elizabeth Emerson, of Havarill, and a negro woman were executed (at Boston), after lecture, for murdering their infant children. Mr. Cotton Mather preached from Job 36: 14; made a very good sermon to a very great auditory." Elizabeth Emerson was that unhappy daughter of Michael Emerson whom he beat so cruelly in 1674. The town recorder entered in his records the birth of her two illegitimate children, May 8, 1691, and adds: "The mother lay long in prison, but at the long run, in the year 1691, as I take it, was executed at Boston for the murdering of the two babes, or one of them."

Mention has been made of the action formerly taken to secure the town's undivided lands to the original proprietors and their heirs and assigns. In 1705, on motion of Captain Samuel Ayer, a declaratory motion was carried.—"That before any vote or act pass for the disposing of the land or timber in Haverhill, it may be known who by law have right to vote in the affair." A committee of five were chosen "to run lines and settle bounds between individuals and the Common Lands," and "the moderator gave notice of a meeting of the proprietors of the common or undivided lands in Haverhill for April 2." April 2d, "at a meeting of the Commoners," the old committee chosen to examine the claims of persons to these lands was dismissed, and a new one was chosen: Captain Samuel Ayre, John White, Joseph Peaseley, Sr. And this committee was ordered "to do it as speedily as possible." The commoners did not meet again till July 21, 1707, when nothing was done except to adjourn to September 24. A committee was then chosen to prosecute all trespassers on the common-lands, and the town clerk was empowered, as "clerk of the Proprietors in Haverhill Commons," to execute a power of attorney for the committee, who immediately began suits against several persons.

In the spring of 1709, another Commoner's meeting was held, at which John White, who was town clerk, was also chosen "Proprietors Clerk," and it was voted to hold a meeting on the first Tuesday in April, annually. It appears, from the record of this meeting, that at a former meeting the committee previously chosen for that purpose had reported the names of all those who were entitled to vote as proprietors of common land. The same person being clerk for the town and also for the commoners, the record of their meetings was kept in the town book of records until April

13, 1713, when they began keeping them in a separate book and so continued until they ceased to meet as such. Having now organized themselves as a separate body, and denying the right of a town's man in the Commons, unless he also represented one of the original proprietors, by purchase or descent; the absurdity of keeping their records with the towns', must speedily have become apparent. In 1711, the Commoners "voted and granted that the cow common may be fenced in from the Pond Bridge, and so by Ephraim Guile's, and as far as the river runs by Ephraim Roberts' sawmill and so to Thos. Duston's"—that is, the fence followed the stream from the outlet of Lake Kenoza to Duston's, which was near the junction of Fishing and Little Rivers. The Cow Common continued in this direction to "the Lane by Jonathan Emerson's"—Winter Street,—But the Commoners were not to be allowed their claims without any challenge. At the annual town meeting, in 1719, it was voted "to make all the inhabitants of this Town, proprietors in Common lands according to the changes they have borne in the town in the time of the war;" and a committee was chosen "to examine what every man paid to the rates, in the time of the war in this town." This was a proper form for the non-commoners to test the question, but the proposition was never carried out. In June, 1719, "Upwards of twenty of the inhabitants and Free-holders" petitioned the selectmen to call a town meeting "to prevent the disposing of any more of the common-lands belonging to said Town by a few men contrary to a former vote of said Town;" and also, "to choose a committee to prosecute any that have or shall encroach upon any of the lands, at the Town's cost." The selectmen refusing to call a meeting, a warrant was issued by "Joseph Woodbridge, Justice of the Peace." Nothing was done at the meeting so called, except to dismiss all committees previously chosen by the town, and to choose a new committee to prosecute encroachments upon the common lands of the town. From this it appears that the non-commoners had determined to try conclusions with the commoners, or those who claimed to own the common lands. This was a vote of war, and the dispute upon the subject waxed warm. The commoners were refused the key of the meeting-house to hold their meetings in, and, after organizing at its door, they adjourned to the tavern of James Pecker, where they held subsequent meetings. This was natural enough. It was hardly to be expected that the voters whom they proposed to exclude from any participation in the common lands, would permit them to hold their meeting to effectuate that purpose in the town's building.

At the annual meeting in 1720, the town unanimously voted to make the following proposal to the commoners: "That the inhabitants or non-commoners so called, should have their right in all the common or undivided lands in said Haverhill, lying on the west side of the way from William Johnson's to





Jonathan Cough's, in proportion with the commoners according to the rates and taxes they have borne from the year 1694, to the year 1714.

"Nathan Webster was chosen to prefer this request to the commoners or proprietors of the common land in Haverhill."

This was clearly a weakening on the part of the non-commoners; it seems like a recognition of the claim of the commoners to prefer such a request to them. And accordingly, at an adjourned meeting May 29, "the commoners' answer to the town's proposal was brought into the town meeting and read; and the commoners therein signify to the town that they can't see reason to grant their proposals at present." The non-commoners now made an effort to recover their lost ground. The first vote at the next town meeting was "to sell some common-land to pay the town's debt or charges." The second was: "voted and granted that that tract of land lying beyond Hoghill Mill, that lyeth within our Township not intruding on the fourth division land, shall be laid out to those men that have been out in long marches in the time of the war, and to others of the inhabitants of this town that will make speedy settlement on the same." A committee of five was chosen to lay it out forthwith, in fifty acre lots. At a meeting in July, Samuel Haseltine was granted a piece of common-land for work done in "enlarging the galleries of the meeting-house." Various other grants and sales of common-lands were made at the same meeting. Probably they considered that the commoners had rejected the olive branch held out by themselves; and were prepared now to throw down the gauntlet of defiance. At the next meeting they voted "to defend the land that they have sold or shall sell"; also to "bear all the charges that any man or men shall be put to, to defend the land that he hath bought or shall buy of the town, by any suits in law until the title of said land shall be tried out." At an adjourned meeting December 11, another great step was taken about common lands: "Voted and granted that the common-land in Haverhill, except the cow-common and the land beyond Hoghill Mill, shall be laid out into rate lots, according to the charges or rates that every persons in this town has paid from the year 1692 to 1712, except those persons that removed out of the town in the time of the war; and excepting some land to make good old grants, if any do appear to be justly due from the town."

"Voted and granted that every five pounds that has been paid in public charges of rates in this town by any person within the time above mentioned shall draw one acre of land in the rate lots; and so proportionally according to what sum they have paid within the time above prefixed. A committee was chosen to take an account of the rates paid during the year specified, and also to lay out the land according to the above votes."

Of course, these proceedings lead to the inference

that the proprietors and their representatives, who now called themselves the commoners, had entirely lost control of the town-meetings. The new-comers now outvoted them. The non-commoners had begun by granting lands to the soldiers, next to actual settlers. They now proposed to divide the remaining lands among the rate or tax-payers during the Indian troubles, proportionately to the tax paid, with an exception which shows that there were some persons who were faint-hearted during the war, and moved out of town.

In the mean time the commoners were going forward, as if assured of their rights. At their meeting January 2, 1721, Samuel White and William White, eldest sons of John White, were granted permission to set up a grist-mill and a fulling-mill on Sawmill River. They desired to remove their mill from Mill Brook to the river, because of the scarcity of water during a part of the year at Mill Brook. This defect of Mill Brook was in part remedied at least when an outlet was made from Round Pond into Plug Pond, thus increasing the water available for the brook, its outlet. And at the same meeting a fifth division of land was ordered, to include all the undivided lands in the town, except the cow-common.

At a meeting in February the "island or islands just above Spicket Falls" were sold to Asa and Richard Swan for two pounds ten shillings.

At a meeting in June the following petition was presented, which is of importance historically:

"HAVERHILL, June 29, 1721.

"To ye commoners or proprietors of ye common lands in Haverhill, ye petition of Ebenezer Eastman, of ye sd Town, humbly sheweth, that as much as Trading by sea is an way whereby I expect to get my living and furnish out my good neighbors with many other necessaries of life, it is most convenient, and ye Encouragement of shipping being of very great consequence and a great interest to this town, as well as my own, I would humbly request yt I may have liberty to erect a wharf some what above ye house where I now dwell, yt so navigation may be promoted, and yt thereby ye whole town of Haverhill as well as myself may receive an annual Income thereby, and you infinitely oblige your humble petitioner.

"EBENEZER EASTMAN."

This is doubtless the first proposition to build a wharf in Haverhill; and, indeed, is said to contain the first reference to commerce, or "trading by sea." It is believed Eastman was the first who made a business of trading on the river. When Mr. Rolfe's successor was ordained, Deacon White brought the wine and sugar on horseback from Boston. The lime for plastering the parsonage-house, in 1719, was hauled from Newbury by oxen, and the town clerk went to Ipswich on horseback to get nails for the building of the watch-house. We know that Simon Wainwright had traded in town before 1708, and he probably kept some nails, sugar and wine; but for great enterprises like those to which we have just referred, it is evident that special expeditions were thought advisable. And taking all these things into consideration, with the silence of the records, it seems altogether probable that hitherto there had



been but little, and no regular, use of the river in a commercial way.

The lots in the fifth division of land were drawn November 20, 1721. The list is of great importance, as showing once more the original proprietors or their representatives. It is as follows:

- |   |                                     |
|---|-------------------------------------|
| 1. The first lot to Jno. Ayer.              | 27. Jno. Dow, purchased from        |
| 2. Mr. Clemens' Executors.                  | Mr. Dow's Right.                    |
| 3. Mr. Joseph Jewitt.                       | 28. Peter Ayer.                     |
| 4. Jno. Page.                               | 29. Richard Simsbury.               |
| 5. Thomas Davis.                            | 30. Jno. Ayer.                      |
| 6. Jno. Williams, sen.                      | 31. Jno. Hutchins.                  |
| 7. Robert Ayer.                             | 32. Wm. Smith, on the right of      |
| 8. James Davis, jun.                        | Jno. Davis.                         |
| 9. Tho. Whittier.                           | 33. Rob. Swan.                      |
| 10. John Johnson.                           | 34. Jno. Cheney.                    |
| 11. Thomas Sleeper.                         | 35. proprietors.                    |
| 12. Henry Palmer.                           | 36. Rich. Litchfield.               |
| 13. Wilho. Helling.                         | 37. Tho. Eaton.                     |
| 14. Stephen Kent.                           | 38. To Nathl. Ayer, on his father's |
| 15. Proprietors.                            | John Ayer's right.                  |
| 16. Same as 15.                             | 39. Edward Clark.                   |
| 17. To Robt. Clement or Jno. Clement right. | 40. Daniel L.                       |
| 18. George Brown.                           | 41. James Davis, Sen.               |
| 19. Matthias Button.                        | 42. James Bisk.                     |
| 20. David Hendrick.                         | 43. George Corliss.                 |
| 21. proprietors.                            | 44. John Lutton.                    |
| 22. Obadiah Ayer, on his father             | 45. Bartholmew Heath.               |
| Jno. Ayer's right.                          | 46. Joseph Lusk, Jr.                |
| 23. Wm. White.                              | 47. proprietors.                    |
| 24. Tho. Linforth.                          | 48. Lew. Sheratt.                   |
| 25. Mr. Jno. Ward.                          | 49. Abraham Tyler.                  |
| 26. Joseph Peasley.                         | 50. To James Peasley's Right.       |

All these names, except seven, are to be found on the town records within three years from the date of the Indian deed, and before the town was incorporated. Those names are Jewitt, Whittier, Johnson, Sleeper, Linforth, Eaton and Pressey; and almost all of these seven were here early. The proprietors, in the view of these people, were, as has been said before, the heirs and assigns of the original proprietors. Thus, Mr. Ward was represented by the heirs, who took under his will; William White, Joseph Peasley and others by their heirs, children and grandchildren; John Dow had bought Tristram Coffin's right, and so on. The purchasers or grantees of specific lands were only entitled to those particular tracts; they had nothing to do with undivided lands. "The inhabitants of Pentucket," as intended in the original deed, were the members of the original company, or those shortly after admitted with their free consent, and by their undoubted act and volition, to the association. On the other hand, the non-commoners, so-called, being those whom the proprietors excluded from their association, claimed that the lands had been granted to the inhabitants of Pentucket that then were, or at any time should be. The lands might all have been granted at once; if any remained undivided, then every inhabitant had a right to vote in their disposition. It must be remembered that proceedings had formerly been taken to ascertain titles: as when, March 4, 1667-68, Captain Saltonstall, Henry Palmer and George Browne were appointed a committee "to

whom the inhabitants shall make known their title every Second-day in the week in this month of March, upon forfeiture of two shillings per man; and the fines shall pay the said committee for their time and the remainder to the town." The long-headed pioneers were laying the foundation for these subsequent proceedings of the proprietors.

Having no longer Indian wars, the people had more leisure for domestic contention, and the proprietorship of the common lands was the occasion of long and angry controversy.

It would appear that the town-books, or some of them, were borrowed and retained without right and explanation during the progress of this affair. They were, doubtless, thumbed a good deal, and, perhaps, injured, during these private searches. At the annual meeting in 1721 it was voted "that there shall be a committee chosen to prefer a petition to the General Court for redress, in behalf of the damage that the town sustained by the town-books being part of them cut and torn out." This was probably a minatory move—or what in modern slang is called sometimes *bluff*—and was not expected to lead to any action. It quite certainly did not.

The proprietors appear to have been consistent in their action. They doubtless believed themselves in the right, legally, and perhaps morally, and they continued to dispose of the common lands accordingly. The new comers, although growing more numerous, had less wealth and influence, proportionally. Some of the proprietary families were growing wealthy for the times.

The following incident, related by Mirick, exhibits the acrimonious state of feeling: "The Commoners had fenced a certain part of the ox-common with split rails. This was very much disliked by the non-commoners living in the north part of the town, and they determined to be revenged. They soon concocted a plot, and a small party assembled near Flaggy Meadow on the night appointed to execute it, carried the rails into large piles and set them on fire. The loss of the rails was but trifling when compared with the other damage done by the fire. The earth was dry, and it ran through the woods, and continued to burn for many days."

The largest and most valuable of the remaining tracts of land undivided was that laid out in 1665 as a cow common. A part of it had been fenced off, and its proportions had been much curtailed, but it was still a large and valuable tract of land. According to the vote of March 7, 1665, all the land *within* the following bounds was forever to be a cow-common: "Within the bounds of Fishing River; and from thence to a brook that goeth to the hither north meadow; and from thence as the cart path goeth, to the meadow of Bartholomew Heath, which was formerly George Corliss's meadow; and from thence to the East Meadow river, and so within the bounds of the east meadow river down to the Great River." It





appears from the vote already given about fencing a part of the cow-common, that it originally extended on the west substantially to the present crossing of Little River by the Winter Street bridge; then sweeping round to the north and east to East Meadow River, and then south to the Merrimac, encircling the village and the planting lands. The proprietors had discussed the proposition to lay out the remainder into lots and dispose of them.

Five town-meetings were held about 1723, to consider the inhabitants' claim to these lands, without a vote being reached. The marginal reference to one of them says that it was "precious time spent for naught." The feeling was becoming very bitter. September 2, 1723, the town chose a committee to confer with the commoners, "in order to make some agreement about common lands in Haverhill," and the meeting adjourned, to hear their report.

The town committee asked for "a proposition, in order to make peace." At the adjourned meeting the committee reported that no reply had been received from the commoners, and another adjournment was had. At the next meeting it was reported that the town's overture had been propounded to the commoners at one of their meetings, and was "met with silence and nothing more." But December 5, 1723, several of the proprietors petitioned for a proprietor's meeting, as follows:

*"To Jno. White, Esqr., proprietors' clerk, greeting:*

"Whereas there are several persons in ye town of Haverhill of long & ancient standing in ye Town, who, by reason yt they have fitness no Right in ye Common lands either by Themselves or claiming under Their Ancestors, are very uneasy att ye division and disposal of said lands to be made among ye proprietors and real owners of it. Therefore we, ye subscribers, proprietors, taking into Consideration ye old usage of Consulting, and yt peace may be made, we request yt There may be a meeting of ye proprietors to bee att ye meeting-house in Haverhill, on Monday, ye sixth day of January next ensuing, att ten of ye clock in ye forenoon, for Reason following: first, yt att ye proprietors see cause They chose a committee to debate ye matter with such persons who have been of long & ancient standing in ye Town, Though They have little or noe right To any Common lands, either by Themselves or Ancestors & To see upon what Conditions such persons will be satisfied & To make report att ye proprietors soe that they may give them some lands if They see cause."

"Secondly, yt They have a committee To debate with such persons who have claim to Rights not yett allowed To see what will satisfy Them & make report Thereof to ye proprietors yt soe They may act upon itt if They see Cause."

The meeting was held accordingly, and Deacon James Ayer, Nathaniel Peasly and Richard Hazzen were chosen a committee to meet the non-proprietors and ascertain what would satisfy them.

The petitioners did not propose that the proprietors should surrender a jot of their legal claims; but they were a minority in the town and their position was doubtless a very uncomfortable one. Their scheme, as will be observed, was to make friends by granting lands to a considerable number of individuals, and thus bring them over to their own party, expecting to secure their influence and support when they had got such concessions for themselves as they desired. Possibly there was also

some real sympathy for ancient settlers who yet had no legal rights in common lands.

Of the committee appointed, James Ayer represented the large family of that name, who, as we know, were very early in the town. Nathaniel Peasly was grandson of Joseph the first, and son of Joseph the second. He was for many years an important and influential citizen. Richard Hazzen was a leading land surveyor, a man of determined character, and for a long time was active in the land troubles of the town.

This committee met the non-proprietors at the tavern of Cornet James Pecker on the 28th of January, and February 5th reported to the proprietors the following as the result of their "debate": "Jno. Sanders did declare and say yt as to ye comons They were in ye hands of ye law & yt hee was easy with ye determination of ye Law; for if ye town lost, his right with ye comons would be as good as now." That is to say, Sanders, having no benefit now of the commons, could not be worse off in any case, and for his part, was willing to abide the result of the litigation.

"Joshua Swan would not bee easy unless they would grant him 15 acres between Sam'l Davis & Job Clements."

"Matthew Harriman, Jun'r, declared yt hee would be uneasy unless all ye fences erected on ye cow common were demolished and itt lay according to ye vote of ye ancient fathers & ye proprietors' records, Burnt."

"William Johnson would not be easy unless They would fling up ye cow common."

"All those above accounted are unreasonable in their demands & soe (we) acted nothing upon it."

"All ye other persons under written to ye number of about 39 persons, Though They had noe material objection against ye division of ye Comons, yett since They had bore charges, lost friends by ye Indians, &c., did desire some particular pieces of land upon ye proprietors' grant of which They would bee easy & for ye future rest contented & proceeded to request as followeth (viz). These individuals asked, some the grant of common rights, but the larger number specified pieces of land in severalty, from two to twenty acres in extent.

Upon the reading of the report of the committee, the proprietors "voted yt ye several parcells of land petitioned for or desired by ye several persons according To ye return of ye sd committee, Bee hereby granted To them on This condition yt They rest satisfied & contented with ye division of ye Comon land according to ye proprietors' order, & yt for ye future They appeare In all Town meetings unless hindered by extraordinary Casualty & doe oppose By voate & argument all such persons and voates as any way disturbe or hinder ye proprietors in Their peaceable Enjoyments of Their lands divided or undivided & yt they Indeavor to hinder any farther process in law about ye same & farther peace & unittie again as far as may





be & yt They Assign (Sign) Articlees agreeable to this voate betwixt themselves & the committee which shall be appointed for ye purpose, before ye said land Bee laid out To them. And yt ye particular persons To whom ye land is granted shall pay ye Committee yt have been already Impowered about having ye proposalls of severall persons for land to be Given them & also What further charge ye Committee may be att about ye same, for ye laying of itt out & for recording ye same. This was voated & granted By a full voate."

A committee was then chosen to draw up the proposed articles, and on the persons with whom the committee should agree according to the above vote signing them, the committee were to lay them out the lands they asked for.

This was a close bargain, whatever may be thought of the morality of it, as a matter of public policy. The proprietors had received a large accession of strength, and there was quiet for awhile. But the disturbance broke out afresh when the proprietors actually decided to divide the cow-common into lots and lay out highways through it. In the warrant for the annual town-meeting for March 2, 1725, are the following articles: "2. And to see whether ye town will chuse a Committee to draw money out of ye Town Treasury to seport one or more of ye Comoners to take a method in law to recover their Rights from ye Inerachments of ye Comoners. That it may yt lie in Comon as by ye Cow Comon grant made in March, 1661-65. 3. And to chuse a Committee to prefer a petition to ye General Assembly to acquaint ye Honorable House with ye irregular method of ye Comoners in their last actions about ye Cow-Comon, and to see what ye towne may think proper on yt account and to doe it on ye Town's Cost."

Upon the town-meeting day referred to, the proprietors, doubtless finding themselves in a minority, withdrew, organized a separate meeting and chose a separate set of town officers. Captain Joshua Bayley was moderator of the party remaining at the meeting house; Captain John White of the seceders. The former body chose Eustis Thomas Whittier, John Sanders and Anthony Colby a committee under the second article of the warrant, and the same persons, with the selectmen, who were Captain Joshua Bayley, James Sanders and Christopher Bartlett, a committee under the third article to petition the General Assembly.

The next meeting of the non-proprietors was held April 8th, upon a warrant signed by Benjamin Stevens, "one of his majestie's justices of ye County of Essex," in answer to a petition to him "signed by more than fifty hands." The proposition was, "To see whether the Town will Impower ye Selectmen of Haverhill, or chuse a Committee to prosecute on ye town's cost, to final issue any of ye faction that are Indeavoring to disturb and disquiet ye Town Clark in his peaceable Improvement of ye town Books! . . . And to prose-

cut any persons yt by color of their Election in ye meeting, where Capt. White pretended to be moderator yt shall presume to act as such officer." Upon the first article, Captain Joshua Bayley, James Sanders, Thomas Haines, Daniel Bodwell and Christopher Bartlett were chosen a committee to prosecute "any of yt faction." It was then declared by an unanimous vote that the officers chosen at the preceding meeting, naming them, should be supported through any difficulty that might arise in executing their respective duties; that "ye small party where Capt. White pretended to be a moderator on March 2, 1724-25, was not according to the town's will, nor according to ye consent and former practice of our Town;" that "The Town doe declare against Mr. Richard Hazzen, Jr., his being town clerk;" and "that the selectmen should prosecute to final issue any person or persons that, by color of his Election in the meeting aforesaid," should presume to act as such officer. The meeting then adjourned for two weeks, at which time "some discourse passed," but no vote was taken. There were meetings twice afterwards, adjourning on both occasions without doing any business—the last being held June 21st, after action was taken under the following direction.

The non-proprietors appealing to the General Court, it adopted the following order June 4, 1725:

"Whereas at the anniversary of the town-meeting in the town of Haverhill in March last, there happened to be two contending parties who assembled at the meeting house, and did there and then choose two sets of town officers, whereby great difficulties arose in the said town, and considerable expense incurred in the law; and it is feared that no good government can be supported unless some speedy cure can be taken to prevent these disorders. For preventing whereof, and to put an end to said strife, it is ordered by this General Court that Joshua Swan and Nathaniel Pearley, constables for the town in 1724, be and are hereby required to warn the freeholders and other inhabitants to assemble at the meeting-house in Haverhill on the ninth of June at ten o'clock a.m., and then and there to choose all the town officers which the law requires to be chosen in the month of March annually; and that Richard Kent, Esq., be desired to be present at the said meeting; and he is empowered to moderate the affairs, and no other person be allowed to vote but such as are lawfully qualified; and that the proceedings of both parties at the aforesaid meeting of March 24 are declared null and void, and the charge to be borne at this Court shall order."

A meeting was accordingly held June 9th, over which Richard Kent, Esq., of Newbury, presided as moderator. In the morning there was some debate, but no vote was taken. At the adjourned meeting in the afternoon the moderator directed votes to be brought in for a town clerk. Few were thrown, however, and the moderator did not declare that anybody was chosen, but adjourned the meeting to June 23d.

The General Court, upon report of this impotent conclusion, passed the following resolves June 15, 1725:

"Resolved, that whereas by special order of this court, the town of Haverhill was assembled on the 9th inst. for the choice of town officers, and no other than a town clerk was chosen, although he was not declared by the moderator, and said meeting having been adjourned, notwithstanding the other town officers were to be chosen the same day,

"Resolved, that John Eaton be and is hereby declared Town Clerk for Haverhill, according to the choice made the ninth of June, as aforesaid, and that the freeholders take assembly at the meeting-house in Haverhill, according to the adjournment, and that they then and there choose



all other town officers, and that Richard Kent, Esq., hereby declared moderator of the meeting, be directed to administer the oath by law appointed to John Eaton and the other officers to be chosen, any law, usage or custom to the contrary notwithstanding."

The action, as well as the language, of the General Court would now be regarded as arbitrary, and in violation of well-settled custom. In modern times such questions are relegated to the courts of law. The General Court treated the disturbance at Haverhill in the fashion in which the general political committee of the leading party in our chief town in Massachusetts now conducts its affairs. If a ward caucus breaks up in confusion, or splits into separating factions, a member of the General Committee is sent to hold another caucus, and decide questions peremptorily, and a squad of policemen is secured to support his decisions. However, the action of the General Court may have proved salutary. There was no more trouble. It was probably understood that no non-sense would be allowed, and for some reason this action would seem to have been regarded as favorable to the proprietors. The other party appears to have practically given up the contest. The proprietors had other difficulties afterwards, but they arose from other causes and with different persons.

The town-meeting met, according to adjournment, and completed the election of its officers.

Henceforward, the town records are no more burdened about these affairs. The meetings of the town and those of the proprietors of common and undivided lands were held separately and the records were kept in separate books. The officers were chosen separately, though frequently the same persons held office under the town and the proprietors at the same time. The proprietors held their meetings for nearly forty years after; granted, sold and exchanged the undivided lands. Their rights seem to have been fully recognized. They eventually triumphed in all litigation, of which they had a great deal.

These proceedings of the Haverhill factions would somehow appear to be familiar, and to anticipate transactions which have been heard of elsewhere in later days. There have been many stormy town-meetings here in past times.

Captain John White, moderator of the proprietors' meeting, before named, was grandson of William, the pioneer. In 1725 he was sixty-one years old, and father of a large and highly respectable family.

Captain Joshua Bailey, moderator of the town-meeting, was born (according to Chase) October 30, 1685, and was for many years one of the principal men. He was moderator and selectman from 1724 to 1734, and moderator in after-years. He was pretty certainly a physician. "Dr. Bayley" is mentioned in the records in 1718. In 1722, "Dr. Bayley" went to Boston for soldiers. He married Elizabeth Johnson, the granddaughter of the first John Johnson, about 1715, and there were seven children born, all daughters.

He was moderator of the first regular meeting of the First Parish, November 24, 1729. Honorable Bailey Bartlett was his grandson, and in his sketch of the latter, Chase says that Dr. Joshua Bayley had been a distinguished surgeon in the British navy before becoming physician in the village of Haverhill. This is the tradition of descendants. He was probably the first educated physician in Haverhill, his predecessors having only certain natural gifts in that direction, with some experience.

## CHAPTER CLVI.

### HAVERHILL.—(*Continued*).

*Settling Ministers—Slavery in Haverhill—Fugitives and the Beginning of Disfranchisement—Local Incidents.*

WITHIN three weeks after the tragic death of Mr. Rolfe a meeting was called, September 15, 1708, to see about a new minister, and a committee was chosen to supply the pulpit "for the present and for the coming winter." Mr. Nicholas Seaver preached during the winter and spring following. The town desired him to settle, and offered him annually twenty pounds in money and forty pounds in corn. Afterwards they voted to add one hundred pounds in money to their former offer, "to be improved by him in settling himself with a house, and the use of all the parsonage land." June 11th the town voted to give him four contributions annually and twenty cords of wood, still in addition. He made counter-proposals, which the town declined, June 21, 1709.

Mr. Richard Brown preached next, whom the church, "by a unanimous vote, not one person then present dissenting, made choice of to be their minister and pastor if he may be obtained." This is the earliest preserved record of any distinct church meeting. The same day a town-meeting was held, in which it was unanimously voted "to concur with the church" in the selection of Mr. Brown for a minister, and a committee was chosen to treat with him, and also "to treat with the administrator for the purchase of the late Mr. Rolfe's house." December 7th, a committee reported upon the latter business, and it was voted to purchase the house, the price paid for which, and for all Mr. Rolfe's land, was three hundred pounds.

Mr. Brown declined the invitation. He had preached twenty-four Sabbaths, and was succeeded by Rev. Joshua Gardner, whom the town unanimously voted to invite, May 15, 1710. In October a church-meeting was held, at which he was unanimously chosen; and at a town-meeting, the same day, the action of the church was unanimously concurred in. The salary voted was seventy pounds per





annum, payable "one-half in good passable money and the rest in good merchantable corn, at money price, or in good passable money & the use of all the Parsonage Housing & lands & meadows." Mr. Gardner accepted the offer in a letter which was read in town-meeting December 11th, and "very well accepted." He was ordained January 10, 1711, the town paying twenty pounds for the expenses of the occasion.

In 1709 the new meeting-house began to be too small, and about thirty men and thirteen young ladies were given leave by the town to build pews or seats. John White had leave "to set up a shed on the outside of the window at the west end of the meeting-house, to keep out the heat of the sun there."

Mr. Gardner was a young man of great talents and brilliant promise. At the annual meeting in 1715, the town voted that Mr. Gardner might have a weekly contribution if he desired it, so that he might have some money "before the town rate was raised for him." A committee was chosen to join with him in leasing the parsonage farm for twenty years, "if he lives so long."

Two weeks afterwards Mr. Gardner was dead, and a town-meeting was held, March 28th, to consider finding some one to succeed him. One of his successors, Mr. Barnard, thus spoke of him, years after: "Mr. Gardner, who is warm in the hearts of a few of you to this day, was soon ripe for heaven, according to the account which was handed down of him. He was not suffered to remain long by reason of death. Neither prayers nor tears could detain him from his inheritance above. In a few years he finished his course with joy." Mr. Gardner died March 21, 1715. He graduated at Harvard at twenty years, and was ordained at twenty-three. Great expectations were entertained of him. His epitaph calls him "a man good betimes;" he made a profession of religion at thirteen years.

The town voted to pay the expenses of his funeral, which amounted to £34 9s. 6d.

This year the town's old book of "Grants & Order" was found to be lost, and a committee was chosen to find it. The committee each spent three days in the business and the whole expense was £4 16s.

John White attended on the committee two days, and James Sanders made a journey to Salem to hunt the volume up. The book was finally found and ordered delivered to the town clerk. Probably it had been taken by some person in the course of the litigation or preparations for it, about the common and undivided lands.

In 1711, John Swett, a native of Newbury, was appointed ferryman at the Rocks, where it is said there were not then more than two houses. Indeed, it is believed that on account of the Indian wars the population of the town had increased but little in thirty years.

The next year the town abated half the ministerial and school rates of Henry Bodwell and eight others, living in the part now Methuen, on account of their difficulty in attending upon either meeting or school, by the reason of the great distance.

Petitions also began to be received from persons living in remote parts of the town for schools in their own locality. Thus, in 1711, Joseph Emerson and fifteen others asked for a school-house in the north-west part of the town, near Job Clements', and a school one quarter of the year, "that they might have the benefit of having their children brought up to learning as well as the children of those that live in the centre of the town." John Sanders and eighteen others living in the northeasterly part of the town asked for a school-house and school "near the house of Mr. John Whittier, on the common, between the two bridges & between the house of Daniel Ela and the Country road." Both petitions were granted and the selectmen were ordered to provide a school-master; whilst a committee was chosen to build the school-houses, which were to be "20 ft. long, 16 ft. wide & 8 ft. stud & finished so as may be comfortable & convenient." In 1714 a petition was received from Peter Green and eleven others, asking for a school-house in the northwesterly part of the town, "between Hoghill and the brick kill bridge," but the request was denied, because "very few, if any, persons voted for it."

Obadiah Ayer, who taught the school in the village for a number of years about this time, was a son of Captain Samuel, who was killed in the fight with the French and Indians, August 29, 1708. Obadiah, born in 1689, graduated at Harvard in 1710 and studied for the ministry. He was a man of talent and power, but subject to occasional attacks of mental alienation, when he was cared for in Boston, it is said, at lodgings provided for him by his particular friend, John (?) Hancock.

In 1713, instead of electing tythingmen, the selectmen and constables were ordered "to regulate the conduct of disorderly boys on the Sabbath in the meeting-house."

Eleven more women asked permission in 1714 to build a "women's pew" in the meeting-house. The matter was referred to the selectmen.

At the same meeting the selectmen were "desired to seat the *negroes* in some convenient place in the meeting-house, if they can." The pew was established, and afterwards there was always a "negro pew," as long as there were negroes. The "negroes" were slaves, though generally called "servants."

After the Indians taken in King Philip's War, who were regarded as rebels against the government, were sold as slaves, there was not much said against slavery for a long time in Massachusetts. They sent rum and pipe-staves to the West Indies and rum and trinkets to Africa, and brought back a few slaves. Some slaves were brought to Boston in slave vessels. The



courts held that the Constitution of 1780, declaring all men free and equal, liberated the slaves. There is a letter in the Massachusetts archives from Chief Justice Sergeant, of Haverhill, on this subject.

Just before the Revolution, when people were all talking about the rights of man, men's consciences began naturally to grow more tender about holding fellow-beings in subjection, no matter by what name the relation was called. In fact, the slave in Massachusetts was generally a house servant or chore boy. Sometimes they were employed on the land. A few of the most intelligent were sail-makers, ship-carpenters and blacksmiths.

In 1763 slaves were more numerous than at any other time. There were then 5214 blacks, or 45 to 1 of the population, but among them were some free-men.

"Hopewell, an Indian servant of John Hutchins," died in Haverhill in 1668. Mr. Rolfe's "negro woman," Hagar, who saved the children from the Indians, "owned the covenant and was baptized," with her three children, by Rev. Mr. Gardner in 1711. In 1723 Rev. Mr. Brown had an Indian servant, as appears from his own entry, "Baptized Phillis, an Indian girl, servant of John and Joanna Brown." In 1728 Mr. Brown baptized "Mafiah, negro servant of Richard Saltonstall." March 29, 1709, Colonel Richard Saltonstall's house was blown up in the night time with powder, as was supposed through the vindictive agency of a negro wench in his family, whom he had severely corrected for some misbehavior. The Indian troubles not being over, his house was still garrisoned with soldiers, but no lives were lost.

Rev. Mr. Bacheller, of the West Parish, had a negro, who died March 24, 1785. "Nero, servant to ye Revd Mr. Bacheller." He had another named "Pomp," of whom stories are told. There were "negroes" or servants in the East as well as the West and First Parishes. Miss Rebecca I. Davis has recently, in her "Gleanings from the Merrimac Valley," printed interesting notes about some of the last of these slaves—Prince and Nancea, servants of Amos Davis, and Peter, whose name is commemorated in "Peter's Ridge."

The children of these negro servants were generally regarded as incumbrances, and given away when weaned, like puppies.

In 1674 there were in Haverhill twenty-five slaves, "of sixteen years old and upwards." Speaking materially, this indicated a very comfortable degree of prosperity and substance. Slaves were entered as property in the town valuation lists from 1750 to 1776. In 1761 Rev. Samuel Bacheller and Joseph Haynes, of the West Parish, bitter and life-long opponents, owned slaves. In 1753 John Cogswell, John Dimond, Benjamin Harrod, John Hazzen, Colonel Richard Saltonstall, William Swanten, John Sawyer and Samuel White owned slaves in the First Parish; Moses Clements, Nathaniel Cogswell, James McHard,

Samuel White, Samuel White, Jr., and John White in 1766. In the East Parish, Greelee, Morse, Peaslee, Hardey, Tyler and Moors owned slaves in different years.

Chase prints a bill of sale dated Haverhill, August 23, 1742, in which, for the consideration of one hundred and fifteen pounds, Nathaniel Cogswell, "trader" (Water Street), sells and warrants his "negro boy, Caesar," to Samuel Phillips, Jr., of Andover, "trader." The latter was Samuel Phillips, of North Andover, son and descendant of the eminent ministers of Andover, Rowley and Watertown, himself the father of Lieutenant-Governor Phillips, through whom much of his substance was devoted to founding Phillips Academy and the Theological Seminary. Eminent piety, usefulness and slave-holding were at that time quite compatible in Massachusetts.

In 1714 a town-meeting was adjourned, because of a "great fire in the woods, whereby the hay was in general and great danger." This was doubtless the hay cut in the summer in meadows adjoining the woods and left to be hauled home on sleds in the winter.

The stocks probably wanted repairing this year, there being an item—"iron for the stocks, 3s. 10d."

In 1714 the bounds of the town were renewed by Samuel Danforth, son, of Jonathan, who had settled there forty-seven years before.

After 1693 highway surveyors had been regularly chosen, but it is believed no money was paid by the town for highways, excepting for building and repairing bridges, until 1715, when "Jotham Hendrick, surveyor," was allowed six shillings for "mending the highway." After that melancholy precedent, highway expenses became habitual. It probably will be admitted, however, that Haverhill highways have been proverbially inferior to those of most of the towns in Essex County. A lack of suitable material has doubtless been a principal cause of this habitual condition. In 1887 very considerable highway improvements were carried on. If the work has been done with due economy, although burdensome to the city's finances, it will hereafter be regarded as money well expended. No wise community will indulge in the extravagance of imperfectly-constructed and illy-repaired highways.

After Mr. Gardner died the pulpit was supplied by various "candidates," among whom were Mr. Robert Stanton and Mr. Jonathan Cushing. July 27, 1716, at a church-meeting to choose a minister, Mr. Cushing received 20 out of 35 votes; and at a town-meeting, held the same day, he received 102 out of 136 votes. This vote probably shows about how many male church members and how many voters there were in the town at that time, as no business could be more important in their view. The town voted to offer Mr. Cushing the same salary they had given Mr. Gardner. It appears, however, there was a minority, who not only preferred Mr. Stanton, but were very much





opposed to Mr. Cushing; so another meeting was called to hear what the minority had to urge. Then a committee was chosen to consult the Revs. Leverett and Brattle, of Cambridge, under whose advice a committee was chosen to treat with Mr. Fiske, who had also preached in the town. But they could not agree upon Mr. Fiske, and so resort was again had to the Cambridge divines. January 22, 1717, there was a meeting "to hear the advice of the Rev. Mr. Leverett (president of Harvard) and Mr. Brattle." The record does not tell us what their advice was, but the following was the first vote passed at the town meeting:

"Voted that the Rev'd Mr. Moody, Mr. Parson, Mr. Wise of Chebacco, Mr. Wells, Mr. Tappin & Mr. White, be desired with the Rev'd Mr. Barnard, Mr. Cushing, Mr. Symes & Mr. Tufts, in keeping a day of humiliation in our great affairs, on Wednesday, the sixth day of February next."

A committee was chosen to invite the ministers before named, and to receive their advice, and also to make provision for their entertainment on the day of the fast. Shall we hope that the "entertainment" was Lenten, as well as the day?

The outcome of the fast was that the church selected the Rev. Joseph Parsons, of Lebanon, for minister. Then a town-meeting was called (May 28th) to consider the matter. Mr. Parsons was at this time preaching in Haverhill, but as "a great many people were unsatisfied about his leaving his church at" Lebanon, papers were read in the town-meeting; among them, the determination of a council acquitting him "from crimes laid to his charge," and approving of his removal. The town voted that they were satisfied, and chose him as minister by a vote of 65 to 48, offering him a salary of one hundred pounds, with the use of the parsonage land and buildings. The minority, however, were so strongly opposed to his coming that at a meeting called August 13 the town reconsidered its former vote, with only one dissenting voice. This looked kindly, and a meeting was called October 30th "to forgive all past offences that have been given among us concerning the settlement of a minister, and agree in love and peace to consider and agree upon a suitable person to carry on the work of the ministry among us." The moderator, Ephraim Roberts, proposed that all who wished to signify "their desire for peace and love one towards another, and for the sending of a minister to preach with us," should move to the east end of the meeting-house. And all, except three or four, moved over. The meeting then adjourned. There had been a love-feast. Still there was another meeting November 12, but after "considerable discourse," it adjourned without accomplishing anything.

Sunday, October 21, 1716, was a very dark day, with much smoke, such as our generation has seen within a few years, though perhaps darker.

And Cotton Mather and others have told us great

stories about the prodigious snows between the 18th and 24th of February, 1717.

Early in February, 1718, Mr. "Samuel Chickley" was unanimously made choice of for their minister, to whom, two months afterward, the town gave a formal call, with an offer of one hundred pounds salary, and the use of all the parsonage land east of Sawmill River. They did not include the land west of the Sawmill River because they were now beginning to anticipate the future, "not knowing but what they may in some convenient time settle another minister there." Mr. Checkley declined the offer and became the minister at Church Green, in Boston.

Mr. John Brown, of Little Cambridge (Brighton), came next as a candidate, whom in October the people unanimously invited to settle with them, offering to him the same salary as before to Mr. Checkley. Mr. Brown, who graduated at Harvard in 1714, accepted the invitation, and was ordained May 13, 1719. He married Joanna, daughter of Rev. Roland Cotton, of Sandwich. She was a great-granddaughter of the famous minister, John Cotton, of Boston, and also of John Ward, of Haverhill, through the latter's daughter Elizabeth, wife of Nathaniel Saltonstall. Pastor Brown and his wife had ten children—six sons and four daughters. Four sons, educated at Cambridge, became ministers. Two died very young, of one of whom a good judge said he had "raised in his friends the fairest hopes." Thus the grand old ministers paid their debt to learning, in educating their children. One of Mr. Brown's daughters married Rev. Edward Brooks, some time minister of North Yarmouth, Maine, through whom he had descendants, not only wealthy and distinguished, but some far away from the orthodox standard he upheld here.

The General Court, in 1718, granted the ferry known as Swett's to Haverhill and Newbury for forty years. The town granted all its right to John Swett if he would ferry over the inhabitants for "a penny a single person, and four pence for a man and horse."

In 1717 "Deacon John Haseltine" was moderator of one of the meetings about settling a minister, and afterwards was of all the meetings when ministerial business came to be considered, though not at other times. John White was also deacon at the same time and is said to have usually entertained the ministers, probably at his new house, still standing on Mill Street, opposite the cemetery, one of the oldest houses in Haverhill, and probably, of its age, the best preserved. Somebody in those days, in every town, had to keep what was known as the "Minister's Tavern."

In 1718 there came to Boston one hundred and twenty families from the North of Ireland. They were descended from Scotchmen who emigrated to Ireland about the middle of the seventeenth century. They were rigid Presbyterians, and, in the latter





days, are very proud of being known as "Scotch-Irish." April 2, 1719, sixteen families landed from boats at Haverhill. Unluckily, the boats capsized, and men, women and children were upset in the river, much to the amusement of the villagers, who seem to have despised the poor Irishmen, whose appearance and speech probably seemed to them uncouth and outlandish. One of their own countrymen had written some years before, "But Lord! to see the absurd nature of Englishmen, that cannot forbear laughing and jeering at everything that looks strange."

Hearing of a fine tract of land about fifteen miles away, called Nutfield, from the abundance of chestnut, walnut and butternut trees, the men left their families in Haverhill and went to view the place. Being well pleased with it and finding it unappropriated, they concluded to locate there, having before had authority from the Assembly to make a settlement elsewhere. Building rude huts, they removed their families and took possession of their new homes April 11th (O. S.). In 1722 their settlement was incorporated by the name of Londonderry, in memory of the famous siege. They introduced the potato into this region. Tradition says that William White first planted them in Haverhill; but when he had raised four bushels, did not know what to do with so many.

There were afterwards dealings and quarrels between the Haverhill and the Nutfield people, and a branch of one at least of the Londonderry families has had strong root here for more than a century and is regarded as "to the manor born."

In July, 1719, Henry Bodwell and others petitioned the town to grant or set them off a certain tract of land lying in the township of Haverhill, that so they might be a township or parish, but the request was denied. This was the beginning of a movement for a new town in the far west of Haverhill, which was only reasonable, but which was, of course, opposed as long as possible, according to the almost invariable usage in such cases.

At March meeting, 1719, Joshua Swan, Henry Bodwell and twenty-six others, petitioned the town to set aside and grant for "a privilege for the ministry" about "fifty or sixty acres" in the west end of Haverhill, near "bare meadow," "together with a piece of land lying on a hill called meeting-house hill, in times past reserved by our forefathers for the use of the ministry, (and) which might in hard times make a convenient parsonage." This petition was granted "according to the proposals therein made," and in July following a committee was chosen to lay out the land. It is pleasing to observe that commoners and non-commoners laid aside their quarrels in this instance and made the grant by common consent.

October, 1720, a meeting was held to see about the town's proportion of the £50,000, "bank money,"

granted by the General Court in 1720. Trustees were appointed to receive it, and were directed to let it out to individuals, inhabitants, in sums of £10 to £20, at five per cent. interest, payable annually. Like most grants of the character, it proved a delusion and a snare, and made trouble only.

This year there was a new "setting of persons in the meeting-house." Death and changes had probably made it necessary. It took the committee four days. How long it took a second committee to seat the first, we are not told.

There seems to have been peace in church matters for a time after the settlement of Mr. Brown. Feeling had run very high. During the previous difficulties the people had at one time (1717) consulted some of the neighboring ministers—Revs. Thomas Symmes of Bradford, Moses Hale of Newbury, and Edward Payson of Rowley, who in their reply thought it "advisable" that the town should lay aside "their awful animosities." What with church quarrels and commons quarrels, the frequently occurring and stormy town-meeting must have given them plenty to think and talk about. After the questions about commons lands were settled—and there came a time when there were no more commons to fight about—there were plenty of other questions: the setting up of new towns, loss of territory, establishment of parishes. A Haverhill town-meeting doubtless exhibited a fierce democracy.

In 1720, the old writers say, "tea began to be used in New England." Some friend sent to Mr. Gile, of Haverhill, a pound of tea. His wife had heard that it was to be cooked by an infusion of water, so she set all of her tea boiling in a pot of water. Then, under the impression that it was to be used after the fashion of a vegetable, she added a solid piece of corned beef—with a result which can only be imagined.

Coffee, Chase says, came in later. A party of gentlemen, about 1757, "put up"—not registered—at Lieutenant Ebenezer Eastman's tavern. They had brought a quantity of coffee with them as a luxury, which they transferred to the landlady to be prepared. Too proud to confess her ignorance, Madame prepared it as she did her beans, by soaking a due time in cold water, and baking in the bean pot. Nevertheless, from a comparatively early day, the people of Haverhill village got into comfortable circumstances, and a few of them had relations with the great world at Boston. There have been well-reputed taverns in Haverhill in former days, at least as early as the period we are now speaking of. New Hampshire began to be settled, people passed to and fro, and Haverhill, seated at the crossing of the river, was a convenient stopping-place. In 1718, Samuel Sewall, who had for twenty-five years been a justice of the Superior Court, was promoted to be a chief justice. Going circuit next year, he makes the following entry in his diary: "May 11, 1719. Set out with



Scipio" (negro 'servant') "for York. . . Got over the ferry to Haverhill about sunset. The river there is very charming. Eat excellent salmon at Pecker's, carried a bushel of oats with us to Kingston, where we baited. Then took leave of Capt. Jno. Wainwright, our pilot." This was undoubtedly John, the son of Simon, killed by the Indians in 1708.

It has been mentioned that February 6, 1716, a great council and fast was held about the ministerial difficulties. "Rev. Mr. Moody's" name heads the list of ministers. A short time before, Judge Sewall minuted in his diary: "December 31, 1715-16. Mr. Moody of York goes home. Came in last night at 10. Is to preach at Haverhill to-morrow." One may conjecture that at this visit Mr. Moody suggested the solemn fast "for wisdom of heaven."

In 1723 three new school-houses were ordered built—one in the north part of the town, one in the northwesterly and the other in the westerly. It was also voted to hire a school-master, "to move for the town's benefit to the several parts of the town." Richard Hazzen kept school "three quarters"—one quarter at the house of Widow Mary Whittier. He was paid eleven pounds per quarter.

Four young gentlemen of the East Parish, Nathaniel Peaslee, Jr., and others, asked leave to erect a seat in a "vacant place" in the meeting-house. They lived so far away "that, at anytime being belated, we cannot get into any seat; but are obliged to sit squeezed on the stairs where we cannot hear the minister and so get little good by his preaching, though we endeavor to ever so much." Several young women asked a similar privilege to build a pew of their own. These were two Hazzens, two Clements, two Peaslees and Rachel Sanders.

Abiall Messer was allowed to keep a ferry near his house for five years. Messer lived, doubtless, in what is now Methuen.

In 1723 the selectmen ran the lines of Haverhill with the selectmen of Kingston, N. H., which then joined it.

In this year the town refused Captain Joshua Bayley, Ebenezer Eastman and others, liberty to fish in the river with a net, of which this is the first mention.

In the spring of 1724, Stephen Barker, and others, of the extreme west, petitioned the General Court for a new town, to be formed out of that portion of Haverhill above Hawke's Meadow Brook. The town appointed Capt. John White agent to oppose the petition. This, as has been intimated, has always been the course of things in Massachusetts. The Haverhill planters wanted a "Great town." They had one, but could not properly govern it. The people could not come ten miles to Sabbath and town meetings, and lectures, not to speak of schools. But the old town resisted dismemberment. Partition has ever been resisted as long as possible in such cases, and countless woes predicted, both for

old and new. The old people are willing to do anything rather than let the children go and try their own fortune.

Thus, in November, 1725, the inhabitants of that section petitioned the town for a school there, which was voted; also "ten pounds to pay a minister to preach there," if they got one that year. Still, the people above Hawke's Brook wanted to be a town of themselves, and the General Court made them one by the name of Methuen, December 8, 1725. Four years afterward a church was formed there and Rev. Christopher Sargeant was ordained its pastor, November 5, 1729. In January following, the society petitioned the "Proprietor, of the common and undivided lands in Haverhill, and that part of Methuen formerly contained within the ancient bounds of Haverhill," for a parcel of land for a parsonage. The proprietors not only gave them the land for a parsonage, but gave the minister a piece for himself.

In May, 1737, the inhabitants of the "second parish in Methuen, being about to build a meeting-house," also asked the Haverhill proprietors for land. The proprietors voted them fifty acres, and also voted fifty to their first ordained minister. These lands were all in Methuen.

Indeed, the proprietors, when they had triumphed over their enemies, appear to have conducted their affairs in a very liberal way. It is much to their credit that they recognized themselves largely as trustees for the public, bound to make handsome grants for beneficent objects of general concern.

Methuen, the oldest daughter of Haverhill, is thus one hundred and sixty-three years old. Its territory was principally set off from Haverhill, with the addition on the west of a strip of land between Haverhill and Dracut, not previously comprised within the limits of any town. The portion of the city of Lawrence north of the Merrimac, was a part of Methuen and originally of Haverhill. That part of Lawrence has a large population, which cannot here be given; but Methuen had, in 1880, four thousand three hundred and ninety-two inhabitants. Its historian is informed that a brick from the old "Bodwell house," bore upon it the date of 1660. The name had become familiar upon the Haverhill town records before the separation, and has recently become familiar to the country, in the person of one of the descendants of that house too soon cut off from great usefulness, whilst Governor of a neighboring State.

In 1719, the town of Haverhill ordered the burial-ground to be suitably fenced with boards, and a convenient gate erected and swung on hinges. The present generation may still take lessons from the past. Hardly a name is mentioned in these pages that has not its representatives there. The learned and pious and grave ministers were all buried in that consecrated spot. For nearly two centuries it was the burial-





ground by distinction. Valor, excellence, beauty—all make that dust. Within its limits the first meeting-house, the old fort, the primal school-house stood. Everything makes the place interesting, in memory of the fathers, but it seems to have small interest for their children.

The new pound was ordered built in 1725. As has been suggested, the former may have stood nearer the river. In this year Mary Pearsons was warned out of town, "she having nothing to live upon," says the recorder. The authorities exercised intense watchfulness to prevent any poor persons becoming chargeable to the town. They usually served a formal notice on everybody who came, to go away again. Between 1724 and 1770 thirty were ordered off, of whom this apprehension was entertained. Thus, December 8, 1724, eighteen shillings was allowed Nathl. Peaslee, constable, for warning Mary Mash out of town and for carrying her out of town by a warrant from Justice Woodbridge to Bradford constable, and for his assistance about it, and for the same service about Thomas Club.

"To Christopher Bartlett, for cleaning ye fish courses, 1724, 8 shillings." "Voted & allowed: Gratis: for John Sanders, for ye year past, and until this day as Representative for ye town, £4-0-0." The following vote explains itself: "Haverhill, Mch. 2, 1724-5, voated & granted yt ye new Book this day Brought into ye town meeting, shall be a book to enter ye town's acts & orders therein by ye Town Clerks, & so as they, from time to time, may be chosen att ye annual town meeting

"Voated & granted yt the new book this day Brought into ye town meeting as above, shall be delivered to John Eatton, this day chosen town clerk, for to enter the town's acts & orders therein, yt are already passed or this day be made."

"Pecker's" tavern has been mentioned, but in 1728 the town thought two were "sufficient for the town's benefit," and appointed Lieutenant Ebenezer Eastman and John Swett to keep them—the latter at Holt's Rocks. Nathaniel Saltonstall wrote a letter to the Quarter Sessions, December 26, 1696, about licenses, worth reading to-day.—Notwithstanding the conservative action of the town on the application of the western people, to be permitted to form a new town, the period of disintegration and emigration began before 1725.

In 1721 about a hundred persons from Portsmouth, Exeter and Haverhill, petitioned the General Court for liberty to settle in the northerly part of Nutfield, Londonderry. In the following year, a few families removed to Chester.

In 1720, Captain Ebenezer Eastman and several others of Haverhill explored the lands in the vicinity of Pennacook (Concord, N. H.), and delighted with its rich intervals, petitioned the General Court for a grant of them.

The grant of the "Plantation of Pennacook" was

finally made January 17, 1725, under what were considered very stringent conditions, to secure a solid and respectable settlement. One of them was to cut through a road from Haverhill to the new settlement. The court appointed a standing committee of nine "to bring it forward." The committee met at Haverhill in February, 1725, for the purpose of admitting settlers. One hundred were admitted to be of the company, to each of whom was allotted a right in the township, and three lots were reserved, one for the first settled minister, one for the parsonage, and one for the "use of the school forever." In 1726 the General Court appointed a committee to lay out the lands of Pennacook, which was headed by John Wainwright, of Haverhill.

In 1727, Ebenezer Eastman, of Haverhill, moved the first family from Haverhill to Pennacook. He was a man of great energy of character. Born here, 1781, he was son of Philip Eastman, who was taken captive by the Indians in 1676, and whose house and buildings are said to have been burned by them in 1698. Ebenezer Eastman was in the expedition to Port Royal, and in Admiral Walker's unfortunate expedition up the St. Lawrence River in 1711; in 1745 he was at the reduction of Louisbourg. Meanwhile, as we have seen, he had "traded by sea," kept tavern, explored Pennacook, and led off in its settlement, becoming one of its most useful citizens.

There were thirty-six Haverhill men among the one hundred admitted by the committee to be of the Pennacook settlement. Of these were some of the leading and most useful citizens of the town. Dr. Bailey, several of the Ayer, White, Clement, Davis, Hazzen, Johnson, Peaselee, Pecker, Page, Sanders and Whittier families. Some of these were men of property, who entered into the affair as an investment, or for a provision for sons, complying with the conditions of clearing land and building houses. The relations between Haverhill and Pennacook, or Concord, were intimate for many years.

These movements had doubtless taught the townsmen greater consideration for settlers in the outskirts. Thus the petition of ten persons living in the east part of the town, for leave to worship at the Amesbury meeting-house, was allowed in 1726. The next year families living in the northern and western parts of the town were permitted to hold meetings for worship in each of those localities during the winter season. This did not satisfy the north, and, June 18, 1728, the town voted that the northerly part of the town should be set off into a separate precinct or parish, on condition that the inhabitants within it should determine in a month's time where to build their meeting-house, and settle an orthodox minister as soon as possible. The meeting-house was built the same year. The next year twenty-nine members of the church had leave to organize themselves as a church at what is now Salem, N. H. In 1730 twelve



persons were allowed to pay their "minister's rate" in Amesbury.

As movements were in progress to break up the town, the town was inclined to break up some other organization. In 1726, at an unwarned meeting, held after the annual town-meeting, Captain Joshua Bayley was chosen a committee to join with any persons chosen by neighboring towns, "to use all proper means to get the County of Essex divided." The reason given was that the shire-town was so distant. Nothing came of the proposition. In 1693 several towns had petitioned for a division of Essex County. The House passed an act for the purpose, but the Governor and Council would not concur. In 1736 a similar proposition was made, without success, and since then the subject has been several times ineffectually agitated in the Merrimack Valley towns, on at least one occasion with an ambition to make Haverhill shire-town of the new county. When, February 4, 1679, the General Court made an order, transferring Haverhill and other towns from Norfolk County back into Essex, the town clerk entered a copy of it in the town-book, with this certificate: "This is a true copy of the original sent up to be published, which was posted in Haverhill, 18: 2: 79. As attest, Nath'l Saltonstall, Record'r for Haverhill." At the present moment the town is as likely to remain in Essex as at any time for the last two hundred and nine years.

In 1726, the town voted Mr. Brown, the minister, four yearly contributions, in addition to his salary. The next year the town, at his request, "double floored" one of the rooms, "very cold in the winter," "ceiled overhead" another, and, of its own volition, "repapered the great room."

In May of this year the town voted to raise and repay immediately into the province treasury one-fifth of the "Bank Money."

The year 1727 was long memorable in the traditions of the Merrimack Valley. First, on account of "a mighty tempest of wind and rain," Saturday and Sunday, September 16th and 17th, which destroyed a large amount of property, sweeping off "near two hundred load of hay" from the marshes of Newbury.

"A most terrible, sudden and amazing earthquake" began Sunday, October 29th, the shocks continuing with abated violence for some months. The Rev. Mr. Plant, of Newburyport, in his account of these shocks, says: "On the nineteenth (November), about ten at night, a very loud shock and another about break of day, somewhat *here* abated, but at Haverhill a very loud burst, making their houses rock, as that overnight did with us. It was the Lord's day in the evening." Between January 1 and May 22, 1728, over thirty shocks are recorded. Coffin, in his History of Newbury, "has noted nearly two hundred earthquake shocks near the Merrimack, between 1727 and 1770. May 22, 1728, was observed by the church in Haverhill as a day of thanksgiving

"for the great mercies of the winter past under the earthquakes."

The bounds of the North Parish or Precinct of Haverhill, as established by the General Court, August, 1728, should be given here as a matter of historical interest: "Beginning at the Westerly end of Brandy Brow, on Almsbury Line, from thence to the northerly end of the hither North Meadow, as it is commonly called, thence to the fishing river, and so down the fishing river till it comes to the Bridge by Matthew Harriman's, then running westerly to the bridge over the brook by Nath'l Marble's, and then a straight line Northwest one quarter of a point North, to the bounds of Haverhill, taking all the land within the town of Haverhill, north of that line." The North Parish, as thus defined, included almost the whole of Plaistow, about half of Hampstead and the whole of Atkinson.

At a special meeting called for that purpose in 1729, the town voted to raise fifty pounds towards the cost of supporting the province agent in England. Other sums were afterward appropriated for a similar object.

At the annual meeting a proposition was rejected to raise one hundred pounds for school money. The same proposition was renewed without success the next year, with the modification that half the money should be appropriated for the support of "the Grammar School near the meeting-house." The "Grammar School" was supported all the time, but held in different parts of the town. Common schools were kept a few weeks each, in different parts of the town.

The town gave the "North Precinct" ten pounds in 1730 towards the support of a minister, and the parish invited one Mr. Haynes to settle, who declined. They then invited Rev. James, son of Rev. Caleb Cushing, of Salisbury, who accepted, and was ordained the following December. Nov. 1, 1730, forty-six members of the First Church were dismissed, for the purpose of uniting in a church state in the North Precinct.

This year three "Overseers of the Poor" were chosen for the first time. Chosen annually till 1735, the office was then discontinued, and its duties relegated to the board of selectmen. The office of overseer was not revived until 1801.—The North Precinct asking for a grant of land for their new minister, the proprietors allotted him a piece containing about twenty-nine acres. Joseph Whittier and Moses Hazen, in 1731, petitioned the proprietors for leave to build a wharf on the Merrimack, near Mill Brook. It was granted on condition that they kept the two bridges near them in repair "forever," paid fifty pounds, and built a good wharf, at least one hundred feet wide, from the highway to low water-mark. In 1732, the town voted to give the "profit (rent) of the Parsonage Farm" to the North Parish until there should be another parish in town. They voted to "take an exact list of the Poles and estates" in town,





choosing a committee to do it. "Christopher Bartlett was paid six shillings, one day valuation estates."

June 18, 1733, Henry Springer, who professed that he was desirous of carrying on the trade of a ship carpenter, petitioned the proprietors to grant him land for a "building yard" "betwixt the highway by the burying-place and the River, or where the vessell now stands upon the stocks." This petition was granted, provided he "should settle and carry on the trade of a ship's carpenter, or that some other person build in the same place in his room, and no longer." This was pretty certainly the first of ship-building as a regular business.

In March, 1734, the proprietors granted to Richard Saltonstall the large island in "Island Pond," containing about two hundred acres—one-half in consideration of valuable services he had rendered them, the other half to be paid for by him at thirty shillings per acre. Island Pond was still in Haverhill.

In 1734 and the two following years, there was a terrible pest of "catterpillers" in Haverhill and Bradford, and a part of Methuen, Chester and Andover, "and in many other places near Haverhill." They entirely devoured all the foliage finally, but in the beginning specially affected that of the red and black oak. Dr. Joshua Bailey left an account of them.

In 1734 the town consented that the inhabitants of the easterly part should be set off into a parish by themselves, and the line was accordingly run. But when the petitioners went to the General Court to get the proceedings legalized, there was such a sharp opposition from a minority that the court sent them home again.

The people in the westerly part made a similar application with better success and the west land was set off into the West Parish. A meeting-house was completed the following autumn. It stood east of the present meeting-house, where Timothy J. Goodrich lived in 1861. So says Chase.

In 1734 the Haverhill proprietors gave land to the North Parish for a burying-ground. It is still used for the same purpose, and is on the Atkinson road, near the Clement estate.

The next year the town for the first time voted "to mend and repair the highways by a rate." The prices for labor were fixed at four shillings per day for a man, and two shillings for a yoke of oxen; the surveyors to judge what a day's work was. But no separate sum was voted to be raised as a highway tax till 1754.

In July, 1735, Rev. Samuel Bacheller was ordained as pastor of the West Parish. Seventy-seven members of the First Church were dismissed to form the new one. The next year the proprietors gave the parish forty acres of land, and Mr. Bacheller seventy for his own use. At the annual meeting the town also voted to divide the income from all the parsonage land west of Sawmill (Little) River equally between the North and West Parishes.

In October the proprietors voted to survey and divide all the meadows lying in common in the town. Each was to receive his proportion, according to the original grant of "accomodation" land he represented.

In May, 1735, a Mr. Clough, of Kingston, N. H., who had examined a hog dead of a throat disease, was himself suddenly attacked with a swelling of the throat, living but a few days. Three weeks after three children in his neighborhood were attacked in a similar manner, and lived but thirty-six hours. From this beginning the disease spread rapidly to the eastern colonies and to New York on the west, which it did not reach for two years. Between June, 1735, and July, 1736, nine hundred and eighty-four persons died in fourteen towns of New Hampshire. Its particular mortality was with children. It appeared in October, 1736, in Haverhill, and swept off more than one-half of all the children under fifteen years of age. In many families not a child was left. Fifty-eight families lost one each; thirty-four, two each; eleven lost three each; five lost four each, and four lost five each. One hundred and ninety-nine died in this town, of whom only one was over forty years of age. The disease was attended with a sore throat, white or ash-colored spots, an efflorescence on the skin, great general debility and a strong tendency to putridity.

A layman would naturally conclude that this distemper was similar to the modern diphtheria. Physicians have written upon the disorder, although the writer is not aware that any one contemporaneous with its ravages did so. Rev. John Brown, of Haverhill, who lost three children, published an account of it in a large pamphlet, which must now be very rare.

The same disease appeared in 1763, in a milder form.

In 1737, the town voted to build an almshouse instead of supporting the paupers in private families. Next year the vote was renewed, and in 1738 it seems to have been constructed. It stood just below Mill Brook on the river side. But the new system did not satisfy them, and in 1746 the town voted to sell the almshouse and go back to the old plan.

The line between Haverhill and Methuen was not finally settled till 1738, when it was run by the selectmen of the two towns.

About this time a new ferry was established about a mile and a half below the Chain Ferry, but it was soon after removed a mile up the river. November 6, 1738, James McHard petitioned the proprietors for leave to build a still-house on "a small vacancy of land betwixt the parsonage land and Merrimack River by Mr. Pecker's." They gave him permission, provided he built within three years. It stood on Mill Brook. This was a rum distillery, and the first one in town.

In the summer of 1740 there fell a vast amount of





rain. The succeeding winter is thought to have been the most severe known since the settlement of the country. There were twenty-seven snow-storms. In November and early in December there were great and continuous rains, producing a freshet, which, according to the journalist Plant, "was not known by no man for seventy years." In this town the water rose fifteen feet, and floated off many houses. December 12th the river was closed with ice, and before January 1st loaded teams, even with eight oxen, passed from Haverhill to the long wharf at Newburyport.

A church was formed in that part of Haverhill now Salem, N. H., in 1740, of which Rev. Abner Bailey was the first minister. He died in 1798.

When the northerly part of the town was erected into a separate precinct in 1728 the town ceased to be the parish. All that remained after the North Parish was set off was known as the "South" or "Old Parish," still later as the "First Parish." Parochial business was no longer transacted in town, but in parish meetings, the first of which was held November 24, 1729, by virtue of a warrant from Richard Saltonstall, justice. John Eaton was chosen clerk. From that time on the organization was regularly kept up.

In March, 1730, the parish voted to "give to ye Revd. Mr. Brown ye timber of the forte yt is about his house, to despoise of it as he pleaseth." The fear of Indian enemies had passed away at last.

In that year the petitions of the East and the West that money might be "raised by ye parish yt they might hire a minister to preach to ym in ye winter season, on bad traveling," were refused. 1732 the parish enlarged the burying-place by purchasing half an acre of land adjoining it.

In December, 1733, the parish voted to hire another minister, "to assist Mr. Brown for three months this winter." His health had long been failing, and the care of such an enormous parish would require a man of herculean strength. But the East and West had evidently improved the opportunity to press their respective claims. At the first meeting about an assistant there was "considerable discourse" and "some hard words," but no vote; while at the next meeting the vote was passed to hire an assistant, and then votes to procure and pay ministers for both the East and West sections the winter following. There had been a compromise.

The following February, propositions were made in parish meeting to erect two new parishes and build two new meeting-houses—one near the house of Nathaniel Merrill, Jr., and the other near that of Richard Hazzen. It was also proposed to set off to Amesbury West Parish those living near Amesbury line, and to the North Parish those who could most conveniently worship there. All these propositions were rejected. Four weeks later a vote was passed to set off those living east of a line from Elisha Davis' to the "pond bridge," and so on by the brook to the

North Parish line, into a new parish. Twenty-two persons living within the bounds of this new parish, as proposed, dissented from the vote; and, as we have already seen, their opposition prevailed at that time with the General Court, and the East Parish was not set up till some years after. Then there was "great Debat" and "some hard words" again, but finally a committee was chosen to set off a parish "at the west end of the old or South Parish." The General Court erected this parish at once, but its bounds were matter of dispute for several years.

As early as 1720, Pastor Brown had been for several months unable to preach, the town providing a substitute. From 1733 to 1742, being in a "weak state of health," the parish provided for his pulpit supply for weeks and sometimes for months at a time. At last consumption claimed its long-besieged prey, and the good man died December 2, 1742. The parish, with fine liberality, voted to raise one hundred pounds, old tenor, to defray the expenses of his funeral, which was to be delivered to "Madam Brown, to be used at her discretion."

Of Mr. Brown his successor wrote: "Mr. Brown, my immediate predecessor, whose praise was in the churches while he abode in the flesh, and whose memory is still precious with the serious and judicious for his talents, goodness and assiduous labours, early appeared old by reason of a thin and slender constitution, and, emaciated with cares and pains, seemed burthened with life before the time." Mr. Brown was forty-six years old. His epitaph declares that "as he was greatly esteemed in his life for his learning, piety and prudence, his removal is very justly lamented as a loss to his family, church and country. He was an Israelite indeed, in whom there was no guile."

After the death of Mr. Brown the church and people were happily united in the Rev. Edward Barnard, who was ordained April 27, 1743. He belonged to one of the great ministerial families of New England. His father and grandfather were ministers of the First Church in Andover in succession. His brother, Rev. Thomas Barnard, of Newbury and Salem, was considered one of the most profound, liberal and excellent of the ministers. They all graduated at Harvard. Thomas Barnard preached the ordination sermon for his brother Edward. His topic was, "Tyranny and Slavery in matters of religion cautioned against; and true humility recommended to ministers and people." It is a sermon of great ability, clearness and liberality. It was printed in Boston for Samuel Eliot, of Haverhill. Dr. Bayley wrote in his journal: "April 16, 1743 (O. S.). Great snow-storm—eleven inches on a level. Rev. Barnard ordained."

Mr. Barnard's salary was fixed at one hundred ounces of silver, or its equivalent, annually, together with the use of all the parsonage land and buildings, except one lot near the river (where Merrimac Street now is), and also "a reasonable support and main-



tenance when by ye providence of God he shall be disabled from ye work of ye ministry, so long as he remains our minister." This was an excellent provision, for the times.

The next great agitation in the parish was about the first bell, imported expressly from London in 1748. The parish voted £65 1s. 6d., old tenor, to procure it. After much discussion, it was finally "voted to Hang the Bell on the top of the meeting-house, and build a proper place for that purpose," and "to raise one hundred pounds, old tenor, towards defraying the charges of building the Steeple and Hanging the Bell." The belfry was built on the top of the meeting-house, and the bell-rope descended to the broad aisle. It was voted "to ring the bell at one of the clock every day, and at nine every night, and on Sabbaths and Lectures." The first bellman was Samuel Knowlton. March 26, 1753, the parish voted that Benjamin Harrod should take down and dispose of the old bell, and provide a "new one of about 500 lbs." In time the old meeting-house became so much decayed that the bell could not be rung with safety, and it was therefore taken down and hung on two pieces of timber placed crosswise at the top, upon the hill, near the parsonage house (corner of Main and Summer Streets). Mirick says it was first hung in that fashion. John Whiting succeeded Samuel Knowlton as bellman, and to him succeeded his widow, Judith Whiting, who had charge of bell and meeting-house many years, dying in 1795, not quite a hundred years old, after crossing the Great Bridge and telling her budget of Indian stories.

In 1734 the inhabitants of the easterly part had failed to be set off into a separate parish because of the opposition of some of their own number. In 1743 the attempt was renewed in a petition to the General Court of Nathaniel Peaslee (who had headed the petition nine years before) and fifty-four others, who recite the incorporation of Methuen in 1725, of the North Parish in 1728, and the West Parish in 1734. "And now may it please your Excy. & Hous., the meeting-house now in the old parish stands but a mile at furthest off the West Parish Line, & the said meeting House stands near six miles from the East End of said Parish, & we have petitioned to the said Parish for some ease in this matter, & no help can be obtained," ... signing themselves, "Your poor distressed Petrs."

June 1, 1743, the petitioners were ordered to serve the First Parish with a copy of the petition, "that they may show cause (if any they have) why the prayer thereof should not be granted." June 9th, Joshua Bayley and Captain James Pearson were chosen to make answer in behalf of the first or "Old-east Parish." They set forth in their answer what was formerly done and failed to be done, on account of the opposition of "many of the inhabitants on the easterly side of that line;" that "in the month

of May last there was a vote passed to divide ye Parish, and a line was fixt which we hoped might make a peace in the Parish (tho at the same time we are humbly of the opinion that the whole Parish will make but two verry lean Parishes when divided). . . . It appears to us that we have been tenderly thoughtful in what we have done relating to a divisional line, having set off near one-half of the land & near sixty families, yea, all that have desired it except two or three men which, by our own act, may go with their estates to the new Parish if they please." . . . They solicit "a tender regard to the old Parish that was once the Center of a verry large town, is now become (by the loss of almost all Methuen & three separate Parishes) to be very small." June 14th, these petitions were read, and a committee was appointed to visit Haverhill, view the parish, hear the parties and report. September 9th, the committee reported in favor of the petitioners, and the parish was set off accordingly.

In November of the same year the first parish meeting of the East Parish was held "at the house of Nathaniel Whittier, deceased." A committee was appointed to select a location for a meeting-house, who reported at an adjourned meeting a recommendation that it be erected "at the south side of Turkey Hill, near the south-east end of the hill." The report was accepted, the work was begun, and meetings were held in the meeting-house by the following September, though it was not actually finished until a few years before it was torn down in 1838, nearly a century after. Alterations and improvements were made at different times. Until about 1816 the two sexes sat apart during meeting. The first artificial heating was in 1829. In 1745 the town granted the East Parish parsonage land valued at twelve hundred pounds, old tenor. When the house was ready to be used, the parish invited the neighboring ministers to fast and pray with them "for ye divine direction, in order to give a person a call to settle among them in the work of the ministry." September 6, 1744, was the day appointed. After the meeting the ministers recommended Mr. Benjamin Parker as well qualified. Accordingly, October 4th, a call was given to Mr. Parker. The parish voted to give him the use of the parsonage land; to build him a parsonage house and barn; to pay him one hundred pounds, old tenor, and seventy pounds provision pay, annually, for the first three years, and, after that, to increase the provision pay to one hundred pounds per annum. The call was accepted, and Mr. Parker was ordained November 28, 1744, at which time the church was gathered, consisting of sixteen male members. Mr. Parker entered in its records that "the inhabitants of the precinct had constant preaching for some time previously." In March, 1745, a parish committee requested Mr. Parker to wait a time for them to build the parsonage house they had engaged to furnish him with. His answer was, "no, he would not," and, before the next October,





the house was finished. It was nearly opposite the meeting-house, and was long used for its original purpose. In 1748 the parish built a school-house about six rods northerly of the meeting-house, and laid out two burying-grounds,—the first “between Jonathan Marsh’s barn and Gravel Shoot,” the other “in the corner of Richard Colby’s land, nearest country bridge,” both of which places are still used for the purpose. After a few years the school money was divided into two parts, and one school was kept at Gideon George’s, another at Joseph Greele’s, till the town was divided into small districts. Tradition has said that in 1750 there were but four houses at Rocks Village.

In 1743 the proprietors granted Edward Flynt leave “to finish a vessel he had put up on the banks of the river near his house,” and also to put up any others during the proprietors’ pleasure.

John Ayer had recently built a tan-house “on land given to him by the proprietors for that purpose in the rear of his father’s garden,” and had also built a bridge across the stream near it. In consideration that he would *forever* keep the bridge in repair, the proprietors granted him the piece of land west of his tan-house. This was not far from the west end of Plug Pond, probably bordering on what is now Kenoza Avenue.

In 1744 the town voted to divide the parsonage land into lots. A highway two and a half rods wide was laid out through the lots “to near the mouth of Little River and over said river.” The expense of the bridge was to come out of the sale of the lots. This highway was what is now called *Merrimac Street*, now one hundred and forty-four years old. The lots were laid out on the north side only, and numbered from east to west, the lot cornering on Merrimac and Main Streets—long known as “White’s Corner”—being “Lot Number One.”

It is, of course, deeply to be regretted that this highway was made so narrow. The town had exhausted itself upon one great highway in the early day—that from Sanders’ Hill to the Merrimac, above Holt’s Rocks—which was twelve rods wide, and made the town much trouble. In 1754 it was cut down to four rods in width, and the land thus thrown out, nineteen acres and eighty-two rods, was sold to various persons along the line of the road.

In 1733 the proprietors had given John Gage liberty to set a blacksmith’s shop near the river and Springer’s ship-yard; and now, Edmund Greenleaf obtained liberty to set up such a shop near Edward Flynt’s ship-yard.

In 1745 the town allowed Thomas Cottle to establish a ferry near his house, as he represented that the ferry might be “sarvicable to the town and other travellers,” and proposed to ferry the town’s people one-fourth cheaper than strangers. There were thus five ferries over the Merrimac between the village and Holt’s Rocks—i.e., Griffin’s, on Water Street, near the foot of Lindell; Mullikin’s, at the chain ferry;

Pattee’s Ferry; Cottle’s, at Cottle’s Creek, on the mouth of East Meadow River; Swett’s, at Holt’s Rocks.

In 1746 the town voted to exempt the First, or “old,” Parish from paying anything for any other school in town, provided they would keep a grammar school constantly in their parish, at their own expense. The year before a grammar school had been begun there.—The tax-collectors were usually the constables. As we have noted, there was originally but one constable, who, when chosen, must either “stand,” procure an acceptable substitute, pay a penalty of five pounds, or get excused, which the town was rarely in a mood to allow. After a while there were two constables, one for the lands and people east of Little River, the other for those west. Finally, there was one constable to a parish. At first the constables were not allowed any pay; in 1780 it was voted to allow them a poundage of fourpence on twenty shillings collected. Each parish now collected its own ministerial tax. In the First Parish the system of collection was frequently as follows: a contribution was taken up every Sabbath afternoon at the close of service. In the early days everybody went up to the deacon’s seat, depositing his offering, the dignitaries beginning. It is said this custom went out about 1665. Afterwards the contributions were collected. Every contributor inclosed his money in a piece of paper, on which he wrote his name, and the amount contributed, with the object to which he wanted it devoted. If he wished it apportioned to his tax, it was so credited. When no name was written on the paper the offering was understood to be for the minister, and so disposed of. As we have seen, special contributions were sometimes taken up for his benefit. There are religious societies to-day within the limits of the “Ancient Parish,” which are supported entirely upon the principle of voluntary contribution.

The following is a brief list of persons residing in this town in 1747, with their occupations: It was gleaned from petitions and other papers in the State Archives, and is of some value as showing what trades were carried on:

“James Pecker, an a Potecary; Edmond Mors, a shoemaker or cord-winder; Daniel Appleton, Joyner; James Parson, Husbandman; John Byenton, Black Smith; Grant Webster, Marchant; Jonathan Webster, Hatter; Andrew Fwink, Shipwrite; Nathaniel Knelton, Taylor; Mr. Trask, Brick Layer; Ebenezer Hale, Cordwinder; William Hancock, Farmer.”

In 1748 occurred one of the overmastering agitations about town affairs. At the annual meeting, March 1st, Nathaniel Peaselee was declared elected moderator. Samuel White and fifteen others, ineffectually protesting “that he was not chosen according to law,” retired, and those who remained elected town officers, and transacted the other business. Henry Springer and fifty-eight others asked the General Court to investigate the matter, on the ground that illegal votes were received and legal rejected. The petitioners chose John Sanders and Peter Ayer to present their



case. With the petition were sent fourteen depositions signed by twenty-eight other inhabitants, in support. Joshua Sawyer and others deposed, September 17th, that no list was used to show who was entitled to vote till some time after Peaslee began to act as moderator. To these petitions the selectmen of 1747 and 1748 and seventy-two others replied that the petition "contained false and abusive statements," that many of the petitioners were new-comers and contentious people; "that John Sanders was greatly prejudiced against moderator Peaslee, because the latter had exposed and prevented the former from obtaining more money from the Province than belonged to him, by a false account; the moderator was duly and legally chosen, and had the Rev. Mr. Barnard open the meeting with prayer; and many of the petitioners were not qualified to vote, and some were not even residents of the town."

There was another petition, dated March 29, 1748, signed by twenty-seven "freeholders and inhabitants," who say that they were not present at the annual meeting on account of the great depth of snow, but had heard of the proceedings, and prayed that the petition of Sanders and others be not granted.

These petitions were referred to a committee, which reported "that the town-meeting held on the first day of March be sett aside and that the selectmen for the year 1747 grant a new warrant for the choice of all ordinary town officers that Towns by law are enabled to choose;" the meeting to be held some time in April. The report was accepted.

A town-meeting was accordingly convened April 26th, at which all the officers chosen March 1st were re-chosen, except Thomas Duston selectman in place of Moses Clement. "John Pecker and others" dissented, because this was not done "according to law."

May 25, 1748, Richard Saltonstall and forty-one others, memorialized the General Court, to the effect that "the affairs of the second meeting were conducted with more wickedness, partiality and premeditated corruption than the first;" that the selectmen (who were also assessors) had made a "pretended valuation, by which they disqualified some of the opposite party, and admitted others who were clearly not entitled to vote—all for the purpose of carrying their own points in the choice of officers; that the cause of all the uneasiness among the inhabitants, was the belief that the Selectmen, or some of them, had combined with the Town Treasurer (who was also Town Clerk) to Imbezell large sums of the publick money & apply it to their own use." They therefore prayed for a new meeting, to be presided over by a disinterested moderator, and that the transactions of the last meeting be set aside. The General Court ordered the petitioners to serve the selectmen and moderator with a copy of their petition, and June 15th, was assigned to hear the parties. In their answer the selectmen deny any attempt at partiality, and declare that the memorial is false and vexatious. But it ap-

pears that June 17, 1748, Nathaniel Sanders and Joseph Patten for the memorialists and the selectmen for the respondents, made an agreement for peace on the following terms: the memorialists to drop their petition, on condition that a new town-meeting be held, and that a disinterested committee be chosen to settle with the town treasurer, on which committee no selectman or member of a former committee should be placed. However, the General Court's committee heard the case in part in June, postponing its consideration further to September, when they made a report, recommending that the proceedings of the second meeting should be set aside, and declared null and void, and a new meeting should be called; and that as no valuation had been taken the present year, "according to law," the valuation of 1747 should be taken as the rule for determining the right to vote. The General Court adopted the report, and appointed John Choate, Esq., of Ipswich, to act as moderator of the meeting. Accordingly, a meeting was held November 22d, when Col. Choate acted as moderator, and the same persons were for the third time elected as town officers! And then the war came to an end. But if our fathers' opinions of each other, as expressed to the General Court, are to be taken as correct, their descendants have invented nothing in the way of bad politics.

Colonel Nathaniel Peaslee, the moderator, grandson of Joseph the first and son of Joseph the second, born in 1682, was a merchant and a large landholder. He was much employed in the town's business, serving many years as selectman and moderator. He was representative to the General Court nine years in all, and longer than any other man in the town's history save David How.

This year--1748--a motion was made to build a school-house in every parish, but it was negatived. In 1723 the town had voted to build a number, but they may not have been built, or all of them.

During the war of 1744-48 Haverhill men were out. Some were at the taking of Louisburg, but the muster-rolls of that expedition do not give place of residence or enlistment of those engaged in it. In 1748 nine Haverhill soldiers were stationed at Scarborough, Me., as sentinels.

In 1749 a proposition was made to hold the town-meetings half the time in the West Parish, and the other half in the East—but it was voted down. Probably that arrangement would have inconvenienced almost everybody.

The summer of this year was made miserable by intense drought, caterpillars and similar pests, accompanied with great heat.

In 1751 it was voted that a grammar school should be kept in each parish four months in the year. This was probably a spasmodic effort, occasioned by intimations that the town was in danger of prosecution for not keeping such a school, as the law required. In fact, the next spring Nathaniel Peaslee was chosen





to appear and answer a presentment against the town, for not being provided with a "grammar-school master;" and another, for not keeping "Hawk's River Bridge in repair."

In 1752 great alarm was occasioned by the appearance of small-pox in neighboring towns, and John Cogswell and Samuel White were appointed to assist the selectmen to use every means to prevent its entrance into this town. Special constables were appointed to serve necessary warrants. But the disease was not to be barred out by their puny barriers, and in 1755-56 several persons died with it.

In this year the change in computing time, from "Old Style" to "New Style," went into effect in England and its colonies by act of Parliament.

In 1753 a tax was laid upon coaches, chariots, chaises, calashes and riding-chairs. These were all then clumsy vehicles. The chaise was large, heavy-wheeled, square-topped. Only wealthy people had them, and they were only used on very important occasions—like a wedding or an ordination. A calash was like a very clumsy wagon-seat, set upon a heavy pair of low wagon-wheels, with shafts attached. In 1754 there was one chaise and nine calashes in Haverhill. In 1755 eighteen calashes were returned. Everybody rode on horseback, upon saddle and pillion, or walked.

## CHAPTER CLVII.

### HAVERHILL—(Continued).

*The Boundary Line Dispute—Frontier Warfare—Demise of Proprietors of Common Lands.*

FROM the first settlement of Massachusetts there has been an intermittent controversy about a portion of its northern boundary. The charter of King Charles the First granted all "that part of New England lying between three miles to the north of the Merrimack, and three miles to the south of the Charles River, and of every part thereof in the Massachusetts Bay, and in length between the described breadth from the Atlantic Ocean to the South Sea." What was meant by the words "three miles to the north of the Merrimack, and of every part thereof?" The grantees construed the words as authorizing them to find a beginning for their line at the point three miles due north from the northernmost point of the Merrimac. They accordingly sent out an expedition in 1639 to follow up the river. The commissioners selected a rock near the place where the Merrimac issues from the Winnipiseogee Lake as the northernmost point of the river, and marked it (ever since known as Endicott's Rock). They then proceeded three miles north from the rock, and there selected a certain tree as their extreme northern bound. Three

miles south of the mouth of the Charles, and of every point thereof, would, of course, form the southern boundary. These lines would be extended to the Atlantic Ocean on the east, and the South Sea on the west. From the tree, three miles north of Endicott's Rock, a line, extended east to the Atlantic, and west, so far as it was judicious to do so, would take a respectable portion of what is now Maine, and a large share of New Hampshire and Vermont. True, a considerable part of the territory embraced in the patent, according to this construction, had been already granted to John Mason and others, and as the patentees approached the Hudson River on their way to "the South Sea," there might be other difficulties in the way of enforcing the title. But at the time referred to, neither Mason nor other individual patentees were in a position to enforce their claims as against Massachusetts. She accordingly granted lands and townships, according to her own interpretation of the charter. Haverhill, as we have seen, extended fifteen miles from the Merrimac.

The New Hampshire patentees, on the other hand, asserted that the northern line of Massachusetts could not at any point extend more than three miles north of the middle of the channel of the Merrimac. In 1677, at a meeting before the King and Council, the agents for Massachusetts reduced their claims to a jurisdictional line three miles from the river, according to its course; that is, the line, beginning three miles north of the mouth of the Merrimac should run parallel with the river at that distance to Endicott's Rock, thence three miles to the tree before mentioned, and thence due west to the South Sea. This was a large abatement from the first claim, and it seems to have been considered that the more moderate pretension was well founded. Massachusetts, however, continued to exercise jurisdiction over those parts of the towns already granted, as Haverhill and Amesbury, that were more than three miles from the Merrimac, and New Hampshire complained without avail.

The charter of 1692, however, prescribed the northern boundary of Massachusetts in different language, "extending from the great river commonly called Monomack, alias Merrimack on the north part, and from three miles northward of the said river to the atlantic or western sea." Did this mean three miles northward from every point of the river? Did it confirm or restrict the bounds of the original charter? About 1720, at any rate, New Hampshire began to claim that the line should commence at a point three miles north of the mouth of the Merrimac, and thence run due west. This would have cut off considerable of the territory originally claimed by Massachusetts, but it would have left the whole of more than twenty New Hampshire towns and parts of others, including the present city of Nashua, in Massachusetts.

When Londonderry was incorporated, in 1722, the enterprising Scotch-Irish people soon begun to have





difficulties with the people living in the northwesterly part of the original grant of Haverhill.

The same year, a committee was appointed by the General Court of Massachusetts to inquire into encroachments upon lands to the north of Merrimac, belonging to the towns of Salisbury, Amesbury and Haverhill, over which Massachusetts, of course, was exercising jurisdiction, according to her original grants. Kingston, in New Hampshire, claimed that her grant included lands in the northeastern part of Haverhill, and there was trouble along the whole northern border.

In November, 1726, a petition was presented to the General Court from Orlando Bayley, Jacob Rowell, and several others from Haverhill and Amesbury, in which they set forth that they have been prosecuted at law for land they had held for sixty years, on pretense that it was in the town of Kingston and province of New Hampshire. Writs in trespass had been served upon the petitioners on the ground that their land was "more than three miles from Merrimac River," and these cases were tried in New Hampshire.

The General Court informed their agent in London about these complaints, and voted that the Governor should remonstrate to the General Court of New Hampshire against the proceedings and ask that they might be stayed and all such, until the question of boundary was determined.

In February, 1728, however, the Council made an order reciting a petition of Richard Hazen, Jr., James Pecker, Ebenr. Eastman and Nathaniel Peasley, all of Haverhill, in behalf of its inhabitants, "setting forth that notwithstanding the Ancient Grant of the sd Town, the many confirmations and settlements of their Bounds by the Government, divers of the inhabitants of Londonderry, within the Province of New Hampshire, have encroached upon the Petitioners' lands, mowed their meadows, cut down and destroyed their Timber, and erected several Houses on their Lands and have prosecuted the inhabitants of Haverhill, in the said Province of New Hampshire, for improving their own lands, and therefore praying relief from this Board," and as it appeared to the board that there was great danger that the inhabitants in the two provinces would use violence on each other unless they are speedily discountenanced by their respective governments, "for preventing whereof, voted, that the Inhabitants of this Province bordering on the dividing Line and claiming Lands there be directed not to make any new Settlement on the said Lands or any improvements whatsoever thereon, and to desist from all prosecutions in the Law till the further order of this Government for the settlement of the said Line, Provided the Government of New Hampshire do give the like or some other effectual directions."

It appears from the Council records of that year that Nathaniel Peasley was twice allowed money from

the province treasury to defend himself against suits in New Hampshire—ten pounds and thirty pounds,—and that John Wainwright and Richard Saltonstall were granted twenty pounds to prosecute trespassers on province lands in Methuen.

The land in dispute between people in Haverhill and people of Londonderry lay in what were known in Haverhill as the "fourth division" and the "fifth division" lands, especially the latter. The "fifth division" had been laid out in lots January, 1721, as we have seen, by the proprietors of Haverhill. The grantees of the proprietors had entered upon the lots, cultivated and improved them. Thus collisions had arisen between them and the men of Londonderry claiming the same lands. The proprietors of Haverhill supported their own rights and those of their grantees with great resolution; and after the proprietors had successfully asserted their rights against the non-commoners in their own town, and had conciliated opposition, in the manner already related, they seem to have had substantial moral support from the inhabitants of Haverhill in maintaining their grants against the claims and petty warfare of the people of New Hampshire. Not that there appears to have been much to choose between the contending parties. The New Hampshire people brought suits in their own courts against the Massachusetts men, whom they regarded as trespassers. The Massachusetts men retaliated. Assaults were committed and fights occurred, which caused the participants to be arrested, fined and imprisoned in either State. Indeed, there was a long and angry border warfare—all the more bitter because rights of property were involved, and each party doubtless sincerely believed itself in the right.

It is rather difficult to see how the claim of Londonderry could be upheld morally or in the law, because Wheelwright's deed of 1719 bounds its grant on the eastward "upon Haverhill line." Haverhill bounds had been established since 1667, and everybody could ascertain where "Haverhill line" was. It was a matter of record. However, this is immaterial to our purpose.

At a meeting of the Haverhill proprietors held in January, 1729, a committee was chosen to prosecute, "to final issue," all trespassers on the common lands; and another to perambulate the west line of the town. The reason of the latter action was that the west line of the town was the western boundary of the "Fifth Division Lots." They were in the northwesterly part of the town, the angle, or, as it was called, the "Peke of Haverhill."

At a meeting of the proprietors April 7, 1729, "Wm. Mudgete did remonstrate to the proprietors that he has lately been at great cost and charges in defending his title to certain lands in the fifth division, which were, and still are, claimed by the Irish, and that the matter is now in the law undecided." He therefore prayed that the proprie-



tors would "reimburse him what he has expended in removing the said Irish out of his house." A committee was appointed to examine his accounts and report. And at a subsequent meeting, Mudgett was allowed forty-four pounds, seventeen shillings and six pence from the proprietors' treasury.

The same year, however, August 27th, the inhabitants of Londonderry petitioned the Governor and Council of New Hampshire,—“Inasmuch as the Inhabitants of the Towne of Haverhill do often disturb sundry of your petitioners in their quiet possession of their lands granted them by their charter, under their pretentions of a title thereto,” they pray for assistance, on account of the “Law-suits which are daily multiplied by them.”

The records of the General Court of Massachusetts show that June 29, 1731, the House received “A petition of Nathan Webster and Richard Hazzen, Jr., Agents for the Proprietors of the town of Haverhill, setting forth their Ancient and Legal right to the Lands they possess in said Town, as also the late encroachments of the Irish people settled in the Province of New Hampshire, who have cutt down and carried away great quantities of their Hay and Timber and other ways disturbed them in the improvement of their lands, Praying relief from this Court.” Paul Dudley, afterward chief justice, reported from the committee to which this petition was referred that, inasmuch as there was a hopeful prospect of a speedy settlement of the line, the Governor should be directed to issue a proclamation, directing the inhabitants of both provinces to forbear molesting each other for the present year. The House adopted the report, but the Council refused to concur, and “voted, that inasmuch as there are Courts of Justice established by Law before whom affairs of that nature are properly cognizable, the Petition be dismissed.”

Soon after this, commissioners of the two provinces met at Newbury to negotiate, but without success. The New Hampshire commissioners then appointed John Kingle, a merchant of Portsmouth, agent to present a petition to the King, whose appointment was confirmed by their House of Representatives October 31, 1731.

The King issued an order at last, submitting the matter to a board of commissioners, composed of five councilors from each of the governments of New York, Rhode Island and Nova Scotia. The tribunal was not regarded as favorable to Massachusetts, as she had at the moment some controversy with the two former about boundaries, and the latter was thought to be prejudiced against her. Connecticut, which Massachusetts had proposed, was rejected, because of a supposed bias in her favor.

The time and place for the meeting of this commission was August 10, 1737, at Hampton, N. H.

At a meeting held May 17, 1737, Haverhill chose Colonel Richard Saltonstall, Mr. Richard Hazzen and

Deacon James Ayer “to wait upon the Commissioners and represent the affairs and boundaries of the town to them, provided the Proprietors of the undivided lands pay the expense of the committee.” Saltonstall and Hazzen had already been employed by the proprietors.

In the manuscript docket of Colonel Saltonstall, as justice of the peace for the county of Essex, is the record of two cases, heard before him March 15, 1735, at Haverhill, in both of which “Richard Hazzen, *et al.*,” are plaintiffs, which are quite certainly a part of the proceedings by which the Haverhill proprietors were endeavoring to protect their grantees. They were actions of trespass, and in both of them the respective defendants plead in abatement—“1. That the justice before whom the tryall is, is a party concerned. 2<sup>ly</sup>, that neither the originall Right to which this Land mentioned in the Writt is laid out, nor the number of the Lott are mentioned in the Writt.” These pleas were overruled, and the defendants respectively plead not guilty. One of them, by the consideration of the justice, recovered “double his cost occasioned by the prosecution;” in the other case, “It is considered that the plaintiff recover forty shillings sued for in the writt and costs of court, taxed at 12s. 7d.,” from which judgment the defendant appealed. The proprietors’ agent lost one case and won one before the magistrate.

The Assemblies of the two provinces met at Hampton Falls and Salisbury respectively, on the day of the meeting of the commission, and Governor Belcher, who was Governor of both provinces, appeared with considerable military and other pomp. The commission decided upon the eastern boundary of New Hampshire, which had also been in earnest dispute, but the question as to the boundary dependent upon the original and second charters of Massachusetts Bay was left as they found it. By agreement, it was submitted to the King in England.

New Hampshire employed as agent, John Tomlinson, who retained one Parris as solicitor—a man of skill and shrewdness. Massachusetts employed Colonel Edmund Quincy, as agent, a man of high character, but he died in England in 1738, of the small-pox by inoculation. Her interests then fell into the hands of Wilks and Partridge, who are accounted to have been much inferior in diplomatic ability to the managers for New Hampshire.

In a letter written by Richard Hazzen, the agent of the Haverhill proprietors, May 9, 1737, he says: “I should earnestly request that endeavors might be used that a line from Endicott’s Tree to three miles north of Merrimack River at ye mouth might be ye dividing line of the Provinces which we take to be the true intent of the Charter; but the Province having put in a different claim, we forbear to mention it.” This was a novel scheme for finding a boundary line, and had not, perhaps, much to recommend it. And, as Hazzen admits, it was just as well to forbear men-





tioning it, for the province had long before intimated that it would be satisfied with much less. But New Hampshire also would have been satisfied with much less than she received, through the award of the King.

This town and the other towns interested, sent petitions directly to the King, setting forth their rights as they conceived them under the ancient grants. All of which was of no avail. The decision of His Majesty, King George the Second, much to the mortification of Massachusetts and the inhabitants of the towns claiming jurisdiction under her, was entirely in favor of New Hampshire.

April 9, 1740, a decree of the King in Council passed the seals, by which it was adjudged, ordered and decreed "that the northern boundary of the province of Massachusetts Bay is and be a similar curve line, pursuing the course of Merrimac River, at three miles distance on the north side thereof, beginning at the Atlantic Ocean and ending at a point due north of a place in the plan returned by the commissioners (the commission already referred to), called Pawtucket Falls, and a straight line drawn from thence due west across said river till it meets with His Majesty's other governments." Pawtucket Falls is now the city of Lowell, and a continuing line following the course of the Merrimac west of that point would shortly turn towards the north. Doubtless one reason for the decision was the desire to avoid collision as far as possible with claims under other patents.

The King's decree was sent to Governor Belcher, with instructions to apply to the respective Assemblies of New Hampshire and Massachusetts, to unite in making the necessary provisions in running and marking the line conformably to the decree, and permitting the Assembly of either province to proceed *ex parte* if the Assembly of the other should refuse. The Assembly of the province of Massachusetts declined having anything to do with the matter, but the Assembly of New Hampshire made the necessary appropriation for running and marking the line. Walter Bryant was therefore appointed by Governor Belcher and the Council March 12, 1741, to run the boundary between New Hampshire and Maine (then a part of Massachusetts). March 16, 1741, Governor Belcher appointed George Mitchell to run the curve line from the Atlantic Ocean to a point three miles due north of Pawtucket Falls. Governor Belcher also issued a warrant or order to Richard Hazzen, directing him to cause the line to be run from a point three miles north of Pawtucket Falls till it reaches His Majesty's other governments. George Mitchell had already been employed in drawing maps for the use of the commission. Richard Hazzen was without doubt the agent of the Haverhill proprietors, but he was not employed about that part of the line in which they and their grantees were interested, but in running that part of it west of Pawtucket Falls.

George Mitchell ran and marked his line in Febru-

ary, 1741, made a map of the river from the Atlantic to Pawtucket Falls, and March 8, 1741, at Portsmouth, New Hampshire, made oath to a statement written upon the back of the map that the survey "is true and exact to the best of his skill and knowledge, and that the line described in the plan is as conformable to His Majesty's determination in Council as was in his power to draw, but finding it impracticable to stick to the letter of said determination, has in some places taken from one province, and made ample allowance for the same in the next reach of the River."

In the month of March, 1741, Hazzen ran and marked a line from the point about three miles north of Pawtucket Falls, across the Connecticut River to the supposed boundary line of New York, on what was supposed to be a due west line from the place of beginning. By this line, under the King's decree, it is said that New Hampshire received a territory of about fifty-five miles by fourteen, more than she had claimed before the commissioners.

Bryant and Hazzen were both directed to allow ten degrees variation for the needle. Hazzen's line was fifty-five miles long; Bryant's was one hundred and twenty miles long. If Hazzen, by this variation, therefore, took anything from New Hampshire improperly, Bryant must have taken much more improperly from Maine for the benefit of New Hampshire. Bryant's line was run, and has since been accepted as the true boundary line between New Hampshire and Maine.

Mitchell and Hazzen's line, thus run in 1740, under the authority of Governor Belcher and the New Hampshire Assembly, at the expense of New Hampshire and in the absence of Massachusetts, is the only line ever run between the two governments. Returns of the surveyors were lodged in the office of the Board of Trade in Great Britain, by Governor Belcher, and returns were also lodged in the offices of the respective secretaries of each of the provinces, the latter of which have disappeared.

After the King's decision was made known, Thomas Hutchinson, of Boston, petitioned His Majesty "to direct that the several Line townships, which by the Line directed to be run by his Majesty's order in Council of ye 9th April, 1740, will be cut off from the Province of Massachusetts Bay may be united to that province." And it appears that the towns interested—Haverhill and Amesbury—also petitioned in their own behalf.

May 7, 1741, Gov. Belcher wrote to the Board of Trade in England, "concerning a difficulty arisen upon ye construction of his Majesty's Judgment respecting ye Boundaries betwixt ye Province of Massachusetts Bay and that of New Hampshire."

Belcher recites the King's decree and proceeds: "Your lordships will be pleased to observe that it is called the *Northern Boundaries of the Massachusetts*, but not the *Southern of New Hampshire*, nor the *Divis-*



*ional Line* between the two Provinces. From this the people of both Provinces say, the lands from the Northern Boundary of Massachusetts, till they meet the Southern Boundary of New Hampshire, and so further westward, are not under any jurisdiction or Government, nor can the lands already ungranted between these lines be granted for the Incouragement of New Settlers. If the matter remains thus, it may soon produce disorders and confusion between the King's subjects, now settled upon some part of those lands, who look upon themselves in a state of anarchy."

To enforce his suggestion, Belcher refers to the different wording of the decree where it prescribes the other boundary (between New Hampshire and Maine) the language there being, "And as to the Northern Boundary between the Said Provinces, the Court resolves and determines that the Dividing Line, etc." No answer appears to have been made to Governor Belcher's inquiry. The difficulty was probably regarded by my Lords of Trade as rather imaginary than real, and as partaking of the nature of a quibble.

The King's decree was undoubtedly intended to fix the dividing line or boundary of both provinces. Greater precision in language might have been had, and doubtless the point suggested by Gov. Belcher was made much of by those disappointed at the King's decision, and may have raised illusory hopes of something more to be done, while it added to the confusion and perplexities of the poor people in the disputed territory. New Hampshire taxed the inhabitants there as soon as the line was run. Those portions of Haverhill and Amesbury falling north of the new line were incorporated by the General Court of that province into a district, under the name of "Haverhill District," which continued until it was divided and incorporated into towns.

The instructions given Benning Wentworth, who at this time was appointed to succeed Belcher as Governor of New Hampshire, cite the King's decree without comment as fixing the limits of his jurisdiction. George Mitchell's construction is not necessarily of much importance, but in the title of his map he writes of "describing Bounds between his Majesty's Province of New Hampshire and the Massachusetts Bay, agreeable to his Majesty's Order in Council."

Dec. 8, 1742, Gov. Benning Wentworth, of New Hampshire, wrote to the Board of Trade, referring to the petitions to restore to Massachusetts the inhabitants who had been set away from it against their expectation and desire—"unless it should be his Majesty's pleasure to put an end to applications of this nature, it will be impossible for me to carry his Royal Instructions into execution." "New Hampshire sits down by his Majesty's determination, and has showed the greatest obedience thereto by paying the whole expense of running and marking out the boundaries in exact conformity to the Royal determination, and therefore thinks it a great hardship that Massachusetts should lead them into any new charge

in a dispute that had subsisted near four-score years, and which has been so solemnly determined." The Legislature of New Hampshire also begged the King not to allow any change in the boundary line. Gov. Wentworth and New Hampshire had their own way. The boundaries marked out "in exact conformity to the Royal determination" have never been disturbed, but never agreed upon between the two provinces or the two States. The supplemental chapter of history about this boundary is certainly an amusing one.

In 1825 Massachusetts appointed a commission to act jointly with a commission to be appointed by New Hampshire, to ascertain the boundary between the two States. January 31, 1827, the Massachusetts commissioners made their report to Governor Lincoln, in substance as follows: In July, 1825, upon information from his excellency that the State of New Hampshire had acceded to the proposals of Massachusetts, to run and ascertain the boundary line between their respective States aforesaid, and had appointed commissioners for that purpose, they put themselves in communication with the New Hampshire Board, and met them about the business intrusted to both boards. They recite the disappearance of the returns of the surveyors of 1741 from the American offices and say: "But it was now agreed by the commissioners from each State that a line existed as the same was reputed, known and acknowledged as well by the authorities of the town on each side of said line as by inhabitants and others residing in the vicinity thereof. We, accordingly, commenced the survey," a surveyor and assistant surveyor being appointed by the Massachusetts commissioners and similar agents by the New Hampshire commissioners. "And we began at a large stone in the marsh, . . . which stone is three miles and two hundred and twenty rods northerly from where the Merrimack River now enters the Atlantic Ocean; thence by several courses and distances we ran thirty-four miles and twelve rods to a point or station called the Boundary Pine, which is, by an actual measurement, two miles and three hundred and thirteen rods (5164½ feet) due north of a point in Pawtucket Falls, called the great pot-hole place; thence we proceeded west by the reputed line fifty-five miles, etc., . . . which is a corner of New Hampshire and Vermont."

Meeting again, October 27th, at Nashua, in New Hampshire, when the surveyors' minutes and plans on both sides were compared, "no doubt remained but the line, as originally run and marked by George Mitchell, from the Atlantic Ocean to the place called the Boundary Pine, two miles, three hundred and thirteen rods due north of Pawtucket Falls, was ascertained and found. And that the line due west from that station to the point on the west bank of the Connecticut River, as the same had been originally marked and returned by Richard Hazzen, was in like manner ascertained and found."

Whereupon the Massachusetts invited the New





Hampshire commissioners to "reduce the same to a convention, and to proceed to erect durable monuments at each angle between the Atlantic Ocean and the boundary line, and also at the end of the lines of the several towns," "in order to prevent future mistakes concerning the same."

"But this proposal was rejected by the commissioners from New Hampshire. They proposed to us to run and mark a new line, proceeding from the Station north of Pawtucket Falls due west, as the same should be now ascertained, to the River Connecticut, to terminate, as they stated, two miles, three hundred and two rods south of the aforesaid point on the west bank of Connecticut River, which included the meeting-house in Northfield, Massachusetts, and to join with them in a survey of the Merrimac River, from the ocean to the said station against Pawtucket Falls, in order to ascertain whether the line aforesaid, as originally run, was more than three miles in all parts thereof distant from the river, leaving this line for a subject for future discussion after the survey should be made. The commissioners from Massachusetts did not go into a full consideration of the fitness of either of these measures, being unanimously of opinion that their powers did not extend to the altering of any line, or ceding any portion of the territories of Massachusetts, but were confined to ascertaining the existing line between the two States, as the same had been originally run and marked by George Mitchell.

"The Commissioners from New Hampshire then informed us that they should proceed, *ex parte*, to survey the river.

The commissioners of 1825, therefore, failed to come to any agreement. But, in order that the line they had found might not be lost, Massachusetts caused granite monuments, fourteen inches square by four feet in height, to be erected at every angle in the line, and at the intersection of all town lines. This work was done in 1827 by Varnum, assistant-surveyor for the Massachusetts commissioners in 1825, and these monuments have marked the line ever since.

In 1882, in the course of a perambulation of the boundary line between the city of Haverhill and the towns of Plaistow and Atkinson, in New Hampshire, some of the monuments referred to were found, and this, leading to the discovery that no boundary line between the two States had ever been agreed upon, an application was made to the Legislature of Massachusetts, which resulted in the appointment of three commissioners by each State, authorized to ascertain and establish the line. Copies of maps and documents have been obtained from the Public Record Office, in England, giving the history of the whole subject, with copies of Mitchell's maps and lines. The line run by Mitchell and Hazzen in 1741 is fully identified, and that has ever since been the jurisdictional line between the two States, obnoxious as it

was to Massachusetts, and vastly more favorable to New Hampshire than she had ever dreamed of. New Hampshire alleges that a mistake was made in the survey by Hazzen in 1741, by which that State was deprived of a strip of land about three miles wide, on the Connecticut River, and terminating in a point in the town of Dracut, opposite what is now the city of Lowell, containing some fifty thousand acres. New Hampshire also appears to assert that Mitchell's line was wrong, because he only claims to have made a *practicable* line three miles from the Merrimac, having "in some places taken from one Province, and made ample allowance for the same in the next reach of the river." The New Hampshire commissioners claim that the proper line under King George's famous decree is one "*every part of which* is three miles due north of the corresponding part of the river, and is represented by an unbroken line." New Hampshire wants, or rather her commissioners want, to be absolutely accurate, and apparently that the line to which Massachusetts submitted with such reluctance one hundred and fifty years ago, because it stripped her of so great a territory, should be disturbed upon the theory that the New Hampshire agents, acting under her own direction, did not take quite so much land as they were mathematically entitled to. The demand looks a little ungracious, to say the least.

King George's decree only settled the jurisdictional question. It was a condition of submission of the dispute to the decision of the King, that private property should not be affected, and this condition was incorporated into the decree. Questions of title were therefore left to be settled by the law.

In September, 1741, after the lines were run, the Haverhill proprietors chose a committee to prosecute all trespassers on the common and undivided lands, whether they were north or south of the New Hampshire line, or in that part of Methuen formerly Haverhill; and they continued to sell and grant lands on the north side of the new line.

On the other hand, the inhabitants of Londonderry petitioned the General Court of New Hampshire to newly run the lines of their town, as "your petitioners for several years past have been very greatly disturbed and incroached upon in their possessions and in defence of the same has expended from time to time in the Law near two thousand Pounds against the inhabitants of Massachusetts Bay." They complain that the last "carry off the small part of the timber that is yet growing there."

The sort of proceedings that were indulged in by both parties may be conjectured from circumstances like the following: In April, 1735, John Carlton and his brother George (sons of Thomas, of Bradford) petitioned the proprietors of Haverhill to make them some consideration for the services of themselves and teams "when constable Pecker went to fetch off those that were Tresspassers on that part of Haverhill com-





mon beyond the Island Pond," as they had done to others that went at the same time.

The historian of Londonderry says: "Sometimes an inhabitant of this town, when employed in these meadows, would be seized and carried away by individuals from abroad, who laid in wait for the purpose. Thus a Mr. Christie, while mowing in a meadow, was seized and carried to Haverhill, without being allowed to apprise his family of his situation.

"It also appears that civil processes were commenced and carried on before the courts in Massachusetts, as they held their sessions at Newburyport and Ipswich, and that certain individuals were actually committed to prison under the arrests which were made by the claimants in that province. We find frequent charges made for attendance at court at Ipswich, also a vote of the town to pay the expenses of individuals imprisoned, and to perform for them the necessary work required on their farms during their imprisonment."

After many years of these troubles, we find Richard Hazzen, of whom we have heard so much, petitioning the General Court of Massachusetts, May 31, 1753, to the effect that "upon the running of the divisional line between the provinces, about one-third part of the lands belonging to the ancient town of Haverhill fell to the northward of the said line and within the province of New Hampshire," the government of which "claimed, not only the jurisdiction of these lands to the North side of the line, but also the property (contrary to the order of the Crown), and endeavoured to ouste all the inhabitants, which were more than one hundred families, settled by Haverhill, to the Northward of it, and take away their property by force of arms, the people of Kingston and Londonderry oftentimes coming in Clans to the Number of forty or fifty at a time, and one hundred or more, to fence in our lands, build on them, &c."

That the petitioner, having some lands on the north side of the line himself, and seeing the distress the Haverhill people were in, moved into New Hampshire and aided them in their lawsuits, "which have now lasted almost ten years." He had made one hundred and thirty journeys to Portsmouth and sunk a thousand pounds. "Notwithstanding, he has had such success that no one Haverhill man has lost his estate nor are any new settlements made upon us, no new suites Commenct, and but two depending and them before the Governor and Council." Meantime he had been obliged to mortgage his estate and asked relief. The General Court voted to loan him four hundred and sixty-eight pounds free of interest for five years, upon security. But it is believed that he never got the money, dying next year.

The proprietors were put to large expenses in sustaining their grantees, as their records show. Thus: January 15, 1748-49, one hundred pounds was voted "towards defraying ye action before ye King and Council wherein Nathaniel French (Kingston) is ap-

pellant, against Thomas Follonsbee and others, (Haverhill), appellees."

December 16, 1751, Henry Sanders was voted twenty pounds "to carry on his case against Wheelright at Portsmouth," (a suit under the Wheelright deed). June 29, 1752, Edward Flint was voted thirty pounds "to carry on his case against Londonderry at Portsmouth," and forty pounds more in November, 1753, "to continue his case." January 1, 1753, fifty pounds was voted to prosecute trespassers on the land previously granted "the first minister of Timberlane, now called Hampstead." November 20, 1758, four hundred and seventy-eight pounds, twelve shillings, New Hampshire old tenor, was voted Nathaniel P. Sargeant "for his services in David Heath's and other cases."

By the running of the new line, in 1741, one-third of the population, territory and property of Haverhill was cut off from it. Taken in connection with the loss of Methuen in 1725, more than one-half of its resources was stripped from it. Under instructions from the town, the selectmen took a list of the polls and estates falling into "New Hampshire province according to Mr. Mitchell's Line."

Two hundred and fifteen polls or taxable persons, one hundred and fifty-eight houses, nine mills, four hundred and fifty-eight acres of mowing, three hundred and eight of planting, one hundred and fifty-two of pastures and nineteen of orchard, two negroes, two hundred and thirty-nine oxen, three hundred and forty-six cows, one hundred and thirty-five horses and twenty swine had fallen on the north side of the line. Three hundred and forty-six heads or polls, two hundred and fourteen houses, seven mills, eleven hundred and twenty-six acres of mowing, seven hundred and fifty-one of planting, seven hundred and twenty-three of pasture, and one hundred and twenty-five and a half of orchard, ten negroes, two hundred and sixty-six oxen, five hundred and forty cows, one hundred and eighty-four horses and one hundred and twenty-eight swine fell south of the line.

Hampstead, N. H., incorporated January 19, 1749, was formed of two parts cut off from Haverhill and Amesbury respectively. It was originally Timberland or Timberlane, on account of the abundance of its timber. Richard Hazzen, the indefatigable agent of the Haverhill proprietors, removed to Hampstead and was one of its leading men. His nephew, Captain John Hazzen, removing from Haverhill to Hampstead and staying there a few years, led a company to found a new town on the Upper Connecticut, which, though his influence received the name of Haverhill. Many Haverhill people settled there.

Plaistow, a large part of which was originally in Haverhill, was incorporated February 28, 1749. The first settlers were nearly all from Haverhill. Charles Bartlett and Nicholas White were prominent among them. The meeting-house of the First Church, originally the North Precinct of Haverhill, over which



Rev. Mr. Cushing was pastor, fell a few rods north of the State line in 1741. Two-thirds of the inhabitants went with it. The minister's house and the greater part of the land belonging to the parish remained in Massachusetts. Difficulties arose in consequence, some of the parishioners on the south refusing to pay their minister's rate, for an alleged want of power to raise it. Whereupon the General Court of Massachusetts, April 7, 1753, created the portion south of the line into a parish with all the powers thereto appertaining. Atkinson was set off from Plaistow, and incorporated September 3, 1767. All its territory was originally from Haverhill. The Pages, Dows and others, its first settlers, were all of Haverhill. They went there about 1727 or 1728, after the Indian Wars. The relations between Atkinson and the mother town have always been and still are very intimate. Many Haverhill youths were educated at its famous academy, which celebrated its centennial in 1887. Atkinson is still an admirable specimen of the pure, unmixed, New England country town.

Salem, N. H., was incorporated as a district soon after the line was run in 1741, and as a town in 1750. Policy Pond, partly in Salem and partly in Winham, was once Haverhill Pond.

The "Proprietors of the Common Lands" had held an important position in the town affairs, as has been set forth at great length, but they had sustained much litigation, their lands had been mainly disposed of and the organization was falling into decay. In 1748 they informed the General Court that "A Common Right" was worth only three pounds, old tenor, and they were ready to sell at that price. They say that when the old grants are all made good, they "don't think one penny will fall to the Proprietors." Nevertheless, the proprietors and their descendants held on to their "Rights" with great tenacity. They were like "French Spoliation Claims" at a later day. Something unexpected might turn up about them at any time. Peter Ayer owned two common rights, which descended to five daughters. One of the daughters divided her fifth of the two rights among her own four daughters.

The title to a great deal of land in the once immense township came from the "Proprietors." In 1739 they disposed of forty-seven parcels of land, many being given to parties applying for them. In 1749 the "Proprietors agreed & voted yt all their Right, propertee & interest yt they have in the land lying betwixt ye head of ye lotts & Merrimac River, from Capt. John Pecker's wharfe down to ye plaine gate, so called (excepting a road all along by ye head of ye lotts so wide as ye Town shall think proper), be & hereby is given, granted & appropriated to ye use & benefit of sd town within ye Massachusetts, to be disposed of as the said town shall see cause; with this proviso, that the said Town do Disalow & Discontinue the said road, laid out by the selectmen from Kent's lott down to ye plain gate, on February 11,

1724-5: this above voted in the affirmative." Pecker's wharf was near the mouth of Mill Brook, and the Plain Gate, so called, was some distance east of Mill Street.

In 1751 there still remained to the proprietors the strip of land between Water Street and the river, extending from the bridge to Mill Brook, excepting a few small lots, previously granted. There was then suddenly a great demand for lots to build wharves upon. Enoch Bartlett wanted a lot to build a wharf "against the house of Joshua Bailey, Esq." This was the first lot below the present bridge. Seven or eight wharf lots were granted lower down. Richard Hazzen obtained a lot for a building yard "below Mill Brook." He now lived in Hampstead, and was probably going to bring some of the famous sticks of "Timberland" to the river for vessels. In 1759 the proprietors granted to Jonathan Buck all their rights and privileges in the Mill Brook, "below the Great Road." The "Great Road" was Mill Street. Buck owned the land on the west side, and one Morley the land on the east side of Mill Brook. Jonathan Buck, David Marsh, Enoch Bartlett, Isaac Osgood, James Duncan, James McHard "and others" of Haverhill were, in 1760, granted six townships in the province of Maine, between the Penobscot and St. Croix Rivers. But Buck was the only one of the petitioners who settled on the lands. He was one of the founders of the town of Bucksport.

The numerous applications for wharves above mentioned indicate the beginning of a general interest in commerce by the people. Agriculture was ceasing to be their entire dependence.

In 1759 Samuel Blodgett put up "pot and pearl-ash" works on Mill Brook. They were among the earliest of that kind, continuing in successful operation many years.

In 1754 the town for the first time voted a specific sum of money for repair of highways; one hundred pounds was the amount. Two shillings a day were allowed for a man, and the same for oxen "with a good cart or plow," or eighteen pence for oxen alone.

A proposition was also made to appropriate a specific sum for schools. It was rejected that year, but carried the next. Fifty pounds were then appropriated for their support the current year; the parishes were to receive their proportion of the money.

1755 was long famous as one of "excessive heat and drought," and for the most violent earthquake ever known in North America. In the same year and in the month of November occurred the terrible earthquake that shattered the city of Lisbon.

In 1760, there was again a severe drought in Eastern Massachusetts, and the following winter there was a great scarcity of grain in this vicinity. Joseph Haynes, of the West Parish, made a journey on horseback to Connecticut, where, in the vicinity of Hartford, he made arrangements for a cargo of corn, which, later, he brought to Haverhill, selling it for





food and seed only, and refusing to sell for speculation or to those not in actual need.

In 1760 the town gave a lease to the ferry at Holt's Rocks for ten years to John Swett, whose father had kept it already for forty years.

In the summer of 1763 the bridge over Little River, where Winter Street crosses it, was rebuilt. The following materials were provided: two gallons and three quarts of rum, two pounds and a half of "Shugar," one hundred and twenty-one feet of two-inch plank, one hundred and thirty feet of two and a half inch plank, and twenty feet of white oak timber.

In 1764 the town voted down a motion to divide the parsonage lands among the four parishes.

In the custody of the city clerk of Haverhill are some of the records of the proprietors of common lands. An early book, the first entry in which is of the date of February 25, 1722-23, seems to have been bought at the "Boar's Head in Cornhill, near Stock's market, Boston." The last entry in that book is of October 15, 1745. During the latter days of the organization, Colonel Nathaniel Peaslee was largely chairman of their committees and moderator of their meetings, and his grandson, Joseph Badger, Jr., was for years their clerk. From September 5, 1755, to November 20, 1758, there were no meetings. In 1759, Badger, the clerk just named, was a committee to settle with the claimants under the "Mason" patent for the township of Salem, N. H. The last entry of Joseph Badger as clerk is April 4, 1763. In the spring of that year he emigrated to Gilmanton, N. H., a new settlement, where he became a very influential citizen. January 31, 1763, doubtless in anticipation of his departure, Nathaniel Peaslee Sargeant was elected clerk. He was another grandson of Colonel Nathaniel Peaslee, whose daughter Susanna married Rev. Christopher Sargeant, first minister of Methuen. Young Sargeant, who graduated at Harvard in 1750, was soon after a practicing lawyer in Haverhill and so remained until appointed justice (afterwards chief justice) of the Supreme Court. June 6, 1763, at an adjourned meeting, Nathaniel Peaslee, moderator, swore the new clerk to his faithful performance of the duties of his office. "The meeting was at ye House of Mrs. Hannah Foster, inn holder, of Haverhill." The last record is as follows, and marks the quiet demise of a long, busy and powerful organization. Colonel Peaslee, the moderator, was more than eighty-one years old.

"*Essex ss.* Haverhill, October 10th, A.D. 1763. This being the time to which ye Props. meeting was adjourned, the Moderator did not come, and so this meeting ended, of course.

"*AUL. NATHL. PEASLEE SARGEANT, Props. Clerk.*"

## CHAPTER CLVIII.

### HAVERHILL—(Continued).

*The French War—Fire Club—Theological War in the West Parish—Coming of Hezekiah Smith and Formation of the Baptist Society—The First Church and Parish—Minister Barnard.*

THE Seven Years' War between France and England (1756-1763) again embroiled their American colonies. Haverhill seems to have borne her part. There were a few townsmen in the expedition to Nova Scotia, when the "Neutral French" were deported from Acadia. Some of those unhappy people fell to the share of Haverhill, in the general distribution. In 1759 the town paid twelve pounds ten shillings towards the support of eight persons assigned to it, who were all women and children. In 1756 Capt. Edmund Mooers led thirty from the first company in the town in the expedition to Crown Point; Maj. Richard Saltonstall seems to have led about thirty from the second company. The poll-tax of those in service was remitted to the town by the province. The same men served frequently on a number of different occasions, when calls were made. Capt. Mooers seems to have served substantially through the war. Capt. Henry Young Brown, of Haverhill, served through the whole war with such usefulness that in 1770 the General Court made him a grant of eleven thousand acres on Saco River, near Fryeburg to which he removed and where his descendants have resided.

Maj. Saltonstall, entering the service in 1756, was a major in the army at Fort William Henry, at its capitulation on August 9, 1757, enduring his share of fatigue and terror from the shameless assaults of the Indians. He commanded a regiment from 1760 to the close of the war, and was soon after made sheriff of the County of Essex. He was regarded as a good officer.

In 1757 there were three foot companies in Haverhill. The first company was composed of 133 men, residents of the First Parish; the second of 131 men, residents of the West Parish, of which Maj. Saltonstall was then captain; the third of 56 men, residents of the East Parish. There was besides the Alarm List, including all between the ages of sixteen and sixty years, who were exempt from ordinary military duty, but liable upon emergencies to be called out for duty in their own town. The Alarm List in the First Parish carried 40 names, with the minister, Rev. Edward Barnard, at the head; in the West Parish, 16 names, with Pastor Batcheller at the head; in East Parish, 9 names, headed by Rev. Benjamin Parker.

On the "Last Alarm for the Relief of Fort William Henry," August "ye 16th," 1757, Ensign Joseph Badger, Jr., led as far as Worcester a detachment of 29 men from the first company, Lieut. Currier 10 from the third, and Lieut. Bradley probably 22 from the second.



Dr. James Brickett, then a young man, was surgeon's mate in Col. Frye's regiment from March 30, 1759, to July 30, 1760.

In 1758 there were 28 townsmen in Col. John Osgood's regiment. Capt. John Hazzen had a company for the reduction of Ticonderoga and Crown Point.

In 1759 there were 54 Haverhill men in Col. Bagley's regiment. At least 44 were in service in 1760. Between November 2, 1759, and January 7, 1763, there were 117 Haverhill men in service, but not all different persons, some having served and been discharged several times. Some of them shared in the great glory of the fall of Quebec and the conquest of Canada.

By a valuation taken in 1767, it appears there were "478 Polls ratable, 27 Polls not ratable." The valuation was exceedingly low. "Thus 281 Dwelling-Houses" were valued at £5 each. There were "44 work houses," "2 Distill Houses," "3 warehouses," "3320 superficial feet wharf," "19 mills," "10 servts for life at 40s. each," £4768 13s. 2d. trading stock, "242 tuns of Shipping," "£3855 12s. 2d. Money at int. a 6 p c't.," 186 horses, 252 oxen, 716 cows, 1315 sheep, 59 swine, 1040 cow pastures, 13,765 bushels grain, 2736 barrels cider, 916½ tons English hay, 945 do. meadow hay. The whole valuation was £4791 13s. 4½d. It must, however, be remembered that this was only the annual value, or worth per year, of lands, houses, money, live-stock and servants "for life."

In 1767 the first powder-house was erected, eight feet square.

Feb. 22, 1768, a Fire Club was organized and fire wardens were chosen. The latter were Cornelius Mansise, Enoch Bartlett, Samuel White, E-q., and Isaac Osgood. The object of the "Fire Club" was to assist in extinguishing fires, and "in saving and taking the utmost care of each other's Goods," upon such occasions. There were originally only eighteen members, each of whom provided bags and buckets. The only officers were a moderator and a clerk. New members were admitted only by unanimous consent, and the number was limited to twenty five. Afterwards they enlarged their aims, by the protection of each other's goods from theft, and the pursuit of thieves, and the recovery of drowning persons and drowned bodies. The society included most of the leading citizens from 1768 to 1822, and was, no doubt, a useful organization, not only for social purposes, but as a centre of organization and effort. The annual supper was kept up long after the activity of the society had ceased, and was an important event in the life of the village. The first fire-engine was bought in 1769, by a company formed for the purpose. Cornelius Mansise was the first captain, with fourteen assistants. The engine was bought, as well as kept in repair, by private subscriptions. March 19, 1770, according to the record, the company "took the engine out, worked her, and put her in again;" in the evening "met at Capt. Bradley's for refreshments, etc."

In 1769 "salt works" were put up on Mill Brook by James Hudson, to whom the town voted, for encouragement, £13 6s. 8d. But he was not successful.

In 1771 Nathaniel Walker and William Greenleaf were chosen "Weighers of Bread." Fifteen years after the office was joined to that of "Clerk of the market," chosen annually for many years. In 1786 the selectmen were ordered to regulate the size of all bread sold.

In 1773 there was a great tornado between Salisbury Point and Haverhill.

At the annual meeting in 1774 it was voted that the two schools should be kept in the year to come, "the one a Grammar School, and the other an English School," probably in the First Parish only.

At that meeting, John Eaton retired, who had been a faithful town clerk for fifty-seven years. "Clark" Eaton lived below the "Buttonwoods," opposite the river. He was succeeded by John Whittier, but when Whittier declined a re-election in 1778, the townsmen chose Eaton once more. He declined, being considerably over eighty years old.

For years there was great alarm about the small-pox. Vaccination was not yet resorted to, and there was great difference of opinion about inoculation. In 1777 the town refused to build a hospital for inoculation or to permit one to be built at individual cost. The next year the townsmen voted to permit inoculation and then "revoked" the vote, and "voted to prosecute those persons that have taken the small-pox by inoculation in this town, or any that shall take it in future, without consent of the town first obtained." Three weeks later it was "voted to allow the inhabitants of the town to be inoculated at the hospital or houses near it." Tradition says the "Pest House" was near Kenoza Avenue, opposite the estate of Mr. Thomas West, whose ancestor, Dr. Kast, had charge of small-pox patients there. Inoculation was then regarded as a very serious affair. When small-pox was prevalent panic ruled the hour.

No chronicler would venture to pass over the year 1780, as that of the "cold day" and the "dark day." No one now living in Haverhill can remember either, but many, doubtless, have heard them described by those who remembered them well. Of the winter, Bailey Bartlett wrote in his journal: "Snow so deep and drifted that breaking a path on the common, we made an arch through a bank of snow, and rode under the arch on horseback."

For almost a century the town was the parish, and for more than a century the First Parish and its meeting-house was the centre of the municipal, ecclesiastical and social life of the place. The "Standing Order" ruled supreme for just a century and a quarter. But no historical sketch of the town would deserve the name which should fail to allude, however briefly, to the manner in which sectarianism came in.

The West Parish, incorporated by the General





Court in 1734, was organized April 16th, and a meeting-house, at the corner of Broadway and Monument Streets, was ready for occupancy early in October of the same year. Seventy-seven members, dismissed from the First Church for the purpose, were constituted the Third or West Parish Church October 22, 1735. Just two weeks later, Rev. Samuel Bacheller was ordained pastor. Mr. Bacheller graduated at Harvard in 1731. He was always regarded as an able and cultivated man. But from the beginning there were some dissatisfied with his settlement and watchful for occasions to excite prejudice against him. Yet there was no serious difficulty until 1755, when, after a settlement of twenty years, Mr. Bacheller preached a sermon, taking as his text the dying words of our Saviour, "It is finished," in the course of which he intimated the opinion, which was pounced upon as a heresy, "that the blood and water which came from Christ when the soldier pierced his side, his laying in his grave, and his resurrection, was no part of the work of redemption, and that his laying in the grave was no part of his humiliation." Joseph Haynes, the leader of the opposition to Mr. Bacheller, who has heretofore been mentioned in a connection highly honorable to him, a man of strong natural parts and an able controversialist, had the address to seize at once the opportunity. "When this doctrine was delivered over three times in one sermon, the minister was interrupted and told before the congregation that he preached exceeding false divinity." There was a very acrimonious contest upon the subject, which agitated the parish, the town and the neighboring churches for years. The Haverhill association, known as the "Minister's Meeting," upheld Mr. Bacheller. In 1757, Haynes published an anonymous pamphlet at Portsmouth, of eighty-eight pages, entitled "A discourse in order to confute a heresy delivered and much contended for in the West Parish in Haverhill and countenanced by many of the ministers of the adjacent parishes . . . . In this discourse their most material arguments to support their doctrine are answered and their doctrine proved to be corrupt. That the blood and water which came from Christ had a cleansing and redeeming virtue in it; and that his lying in the grave was his humiliation and a part of the sacrifice for sin; and that his resurrection is a powerful means by which we are raised from a state of death in sin to newness of life; and the meritorious and efficacious cause of the Resurrection of the body; and consequently all of them must have a joint influence in the work of Redemption, is proved. By a Lover of the Truth and a Hater of Falsehood."

A "Vindication" of the association, with an "Appendix," apparently by Mr. Bacheller himself, was published, also a dialogue by Rev. Henry True (minister at Hampstead), to which Haynes issued a "Reply" of eighty-eight pages, printed at Portsmouth in 1758. The matter was finally submitted

to a council consisting of nine churches, called by the West Parish Church and pastor. The council met by adjournment September 19, 1758, when twenty charges, involving both Mr. Bacheller's conduct and doctrines, were laid before it. The council sat four days, and decided that the charges were not sufficiently supported. Col. John Choate, of Ipswich, another strong-minded layman, who was a member of the council, differed from his associates, and published his "Reasons of dissent." Little vital interest as the controversy has at the present day, it is of importance to the student of history, as showing to what the constant study of doctrinal theology had brought the keen, hard-headed people of New England. Dogma had become their intellectual food. And one cannot help thinking that, in this case, the pews were willing to show what they could do against the pulpit. April 17, 1759, the council met again by adjournment, when Mr. Haynes laid before them some "Friendly Remarks," in which he criticised the first decision. Yet a re-examination of the charges effected no substantial change in the result.

Neither did the decision of the council quiet the parish. Between April, 1760, and July, 1761, eight meetings were held, at all of which votes were passed more or less insulting to Mr. Bacheller. And as it was evidently hopeless to expect a reconciliation, the pastoral relations were dissolved by a council October 9, 1761.

These disputes did not effect the estimation in which Mr. Bacheller was held by his fellow-townsmen. They sent him to represent them in the General Court in 1769 and 1770, at the very beginning of the pre-Revolutionary struggle. He lived to a great age.

This controversy left its stamp upon the West Parish. Its effects have perhaps never been effaced. Joseph Willard, afterwards president of Harvard College, was invited to become the pastor and accepted the call, but was never ordained. Tradition says that the council refused to settle him over a people so turbulent. January 9, 1771, after an interval of ten years, Rev. Phineas Adams was ordained the second pastor. Mr. Adams was an eminently catholic, conciliatory and prudent man, whose ministry lasted thirty years,—till his death, in 1801. Yet one of his brother ministers, after attending "ministers' meeting" with him about 1786, wrote in his diary that the dissensions were such, it was scarcely possible "Brother Adams" could remain with his people.

About three years after Mr. Bacheller's pastorate came to an end, Rev. Mr. Tingley was supplying the pulpit of the West Parish. Under the date of July 27, 1764, a young minister entered in his diary: "After service (at New Rowley,—now Georgetown). I went with Tingley to Haverhill, and preached for him in the afternoon in the West Parish, from Ezek. 33:11. The Lord was with me." This was Rev. Hezekiah Smith, then twenty-seven years old, who,





born on Long Island, had graduated at Princeton in 1762. When nineteen years old, he had been converted and baptized by Rev. John Gano, an eminent Baptist clergyman, a denomination then poor, derided and despised. At college young Smith had fallen under the influence of President Samuel Davies, whose pulpit eloquence, when in Virginia, had been the model and the inspiration of Patrick Henry. Immediately after graduating he had made an extensive evangelizing tour through the Southern provinces. In one year he rode four thousand two hundred and thirty-five miles on horseback and preached one hundred and seventy-three sermons, often to crowded and deeply affected congregations. September 20, 1763, he was ordained as an Evangelist at Charleston, S. C. During the spring and summer of the next year, he was preaching in Eastern New England, and thus reached the West Parish of Haverhill. Some weeks after he returned, preaching and exhorting there. He wrote in his diary: "God was with us of a truth." "Tues. 28<sup>th</sup>, went to Hampstead, and preached for the Rev. Mr. Truc, who behaved well. The assembly was very solemn. After service I went home with Mrs. White in Haverhill town, wife of John White." This was "Marchant" (merchant) White, a leading and wealthy citizen of Haverhill, whose house, built in 1766 and then beautiful and showy, is still standing on Water Street, next the Exchange Building, though shorn of its former pomp of portico and pillars and its terraced gardens in the rear.

Mr. Smith continuing to preach in the West Parish, the meeting-house was now crowded with attentive hearers. He was a powerful and impressive preacher. One who had known him from his own childhood, but had no partiality for him, wrote long afterwards: "Dr. Smith preached without notes; his voice was uncommonly strong and commanding and his manner solemn and impressive. He was esteemed an able expositor of the Scripture. His learning was not extensive, but he was possessed of excellent sense and a thorough knowledge of human nature." A meeting of the society was soon called, and a committee was appointed to wait upon the popular preacher, with an invitation to become the pastor of the West Church. Says his biographer: "As he at first declined, they urged their request until he was compelled to tell them frankly, what no one had until then even expected, that he was a Baptist. This, of course, ended the matter, as also his further services as a stated or permanent supply in that parish." Full of discord as they were, they were at least united in devotion to the "standing order." The writer before quoted says: "It was not then known that he was a Baptist (a circumstance never forgotten by many), but his friends formed a society for him and built him a meeting-house in the First Parish, after he had declared his peculiar opinions, although many of his hearers never professed to change theirs."

Evidently there were those who could not forgive Mr. Smith that he had stolen their hearts before they knew of his connection with an unpopular sect. But there were those in the village of Haverhill, or, as it was then called, "Haverhill Town," who had become deeply interested in him, and were determined to support him at every hazard. The circumstances were really somewhat difficult and the situation critical. The conservative element had heretofore ruled in ecclesiastical affairs in Haverhill. There had been no favor to separatism or any disposition to schism. Since the quenching of Joseph Peasley there had been no tendency to what was considered disorder. Revivalism and revival preaching were discouraged. It is well known that when George Whitefield came first to New England there was great difference of opinion as to the treatment which ought to be accorded to him. His wonderful eloquence was regarded by some as sensational and disorganizing. The conversions which occurred under his preaching they denounced as unreliable; they wanted nothing of the "great awakening." There were many pulpits to which he was not admitted. Some clergymen welcomed him gladly and rejoiced in his wonderful work. Tradition tells us that Whitefield came twice to Haverhill, and was on both occasions the guest of the White house, on Mill Street. On the first occasion he did not preach in town at all, there being an indisposition to allow him to preach in the meeting-house. On the second visit he preached to a great congregation in the open air, on the piece of ground in the highway near the upper end of the cemetery. The authorities of the town (so the story runs) sent him a warning to depart out of town. Instead of complying with their request, he read their letter at the close of his afternoon discourse, and observing, "Poor souls! they shall have another sermon," proceeded to give notice that he should preach at the same place, *at sunrise* the next morning. He kept his word and addressed a large audience. There is a venerable lady of the town who remembers with vivid distinctness the account which her aunt, a daughter of the White homestead, used to give of the great revivalist's Haverhill meetings on that spot.

The people who had been moved by Whitefield were not afraid of being called Separatists, or New Lights, or Anabaptists. Some of them happened to be among the most respectable and wealthy people of the town. James Duncan, son of George, one of the Scotch-Irish settlers of Londonderry, long a trader in Haverhill, and who lived till 1818, dying at ninety-two years of age, furnished his house (now the site of the Currier Block on Main Street) for a meeting January 1, 1765, "where several friends met and agreed that night to begin a private society or meeting." So Mr. Smith wrote in his diary. "Squire" Samuel White, the three John Whites—Captain John, Merchant John and Master John—William



Greenleaf, Deacon Whittier, Peter Carleton and Simon Ayers, of the West Parish, were either at this meeting or in sympathy with its objects. They were obliged to form what Mr. Smith calls a "Private Society," because the law did not recognize a Baptist Church as entitled to any rights of property, or as having any corporate existence. Long after, in 1793, the "First Baptist Society in Haverhill" received a special act of incorporation. The "Private Society" soon provided a temporary place of worship, and, that being overrun, built an excellent meeting-house in 1765.

The trouble was that all persons were obliged to pay the regular parish tax unless they could obtain exemption in the manner provided by law. This society was obliged to procure certificates from three other Baptist Churches acknowledging them to be one of the regular Baptist congregations before their own officers could give to individuals certificates of their frequent and usual attendance at their church upon the Lord's day, in order that they might be exempted from paying a proportionable part of the ministerial taxes raised by law in the parish. Indeed, Merchant John White, a constant worshipper with the Baptists, though not a church member, was obliged to pay his regular parish tax to the "standing order" at the end of an expensive lawsuit.

Before obtaining a place of worship of their own Mr. Smith's friends had asked the use of the First Parish meeting-house at such times as would not interfere with the service of the pastor. They requested the parish committee to call a parish meeting to consider the subject. The committee declined. Application was then made to John Brown, Esq., justice of the peace, who thereupon issued a warrant for a parish meeting "to see if the parish will vote that any ordained or gospel minister shall or may preach in said meeting-house at any time when it does not interfere with the Rev. Mr. Barnard's public exercises." The parish refused to grant permission.

In 1796 the Baptist Society made an effort to secure for themselves a share in the parsonage lands, but without success. They continued their efforts, indeed, in this direction, up to 1818.

Nevertheless, and perhaps in great measure because of the persistent opposition to them, this Baptist Society grew strong and flourished. It accomplished a great missionary work abroad, and assisted in forming and rearing many infant churches, especially in New Hampshire and Maine. Mr. Smith was an early, earnest and influential friend of Brown University and one of its fellows from the beginning, finally receiving from it, in 1797, the honorary Degree of Doctor of Divinity. His pastorate lasted more than forty years, during which three hundred and five persons were admitted as church members. When Dr. Smith died, in 1805, after a ministry of forty years, funeral honors were paid him by all classes and denomina-

tions, in a sincere and respectful spirit. No man ever accomplished a greater work in the town of Haverhill. The church and society he gathered, after furnishing material for several others, is still strong and flourishing. November 22, 1883, the society dedicated a new meeting-house on Main Street, the largest and most costly among the Protestant houses of worship, which has been entirely paid for. This is the fourth meeting-house, the first three having been located on "Baptist Hill," on Merrimac Street. In 1865 the centennial of the first was observed in a very successful manner, when an admirable historical address was delivered by Rev. Arthur S. Train, who had been the fourth pastor. Other ministers, well known and much respected, were Rev. William Batchelder, Rev. George Keeley (an Englishman by birth), known as "Father" Keeley, Rev. Stephen P. Hill, Rev. Augustus H. Strong, Rev. George W. Bosworth, Rev. Henry C. Graves. Rev. W. W. Everts, Jr., is the present pastor.

"The peace of the town," says another, "was long disturbed by this event, but Mr. Smith conducted himself with great prudence, and gradually obtained general esteem and respect. He was eminent among the clergy of his denomination. . . . As a husband, parent, friend and neighbor, he was highly exemplary. He had traveled much, was several years a chaplain in the army, was extensively known, had many warm friends, and was considered by all as an accomplished gentleman."

The reply by the parish committee to the request for a meeting about the use of their meeting-house by the Baptists, dated December 19, 1764, closes as follows:

"And considering that the request is by such persons as have of late appeared disaffected in the public concerns of the parish, and absented themselves from the instituted ordinances in said house on the Lord's day, and that they have itching ears, following after preachers of a different sect in religion, heaping one Anabaptist preacher upon another, without offering, as we can learn, to make any objection against our teacher, either that his life is irreligious or immoral, or that his preaching or doctrines are repugnant to the gospel, and as they have followed after those Baptist preachers, and by word and practice endeavored to support their tenets, may we not well suppose it to be their intention to introduce such? which we think would be a great infringement upon the Constitution and order of the church, by law established in the parish. And we are also of the opinion, that the door so opened, would produce very bad consequences, by the holding of evening lectures, which are oftentimes attended with a confused noise and indecent gestures, and that the house would, as we fear, be made the theatre for enthusiasts and fanatics to act all the wild and extravagant tricks in, for the propagating of the like in others. We therefore determine not to warrn a meeting, as requested.

"HAVERHILL, December 19, 1764."

It was a complaint of the Baptists that their opponents indiscriminately called them Anabaptists, as above, thus identifying them with all the wild outrages of Munster. The committee objected to "the holding of evening lectures." It is said the celebrated Dr. Emmons, of Franklin, objected to Sunday-schools, first, that they were unnecessary by reason of his preaching and weekly catechising, but specially





because, in the next place, his people would want to be "gadding about" to evening meetings.

The records of the First Church show that, March 9, 1766, Susanna White was refused a letter of dismission, in order to unite with the Baptist Church in this town. "If she will finally withdraw, we must leave her with our Master, according to whose unerring judgment she must stand or fall, determining to follow her with our prayers to the God of all Grace for his enlightening spirit to rectify her mistakes and lead her in the way everlasting."

The records of the First Church contain much that is instructive and interesting.

Dr. Smith's biographer says that the organization of the Baptist Society quickened the zeal of the Congregational Church of the First Parish, which had for several years been discussing the propriety of building a new meeting-house. It had, indeed, been agitated as early as 1761. It was finally erected in 1766. Its dimensions were not to exceed sixty-six feet in length and forty-eight feet in width. For the first time the whole of the ground floor was occupied with pews, which were appraised by a committee and sold at auction. The general men's seats and women's seats were thereafter in the galleries alone.

This house was set "at the northerly side of the old meeting-house, as near to it as may be convenient." It was about midway of the common, and was surmounted by a steeple at the easterly end. It is said to have cost more than a thousand pounds. It was finally taken down in 1837. The year before the house was built (1764) it was voted that the revision of Psalms by Tate and Brady, with the largest impression of Dr. Watts' hymns, "be sung in public in this parish."

In 1774 Mr. Barnard died, having been pastor thirty-one years. Eliot, in his biographical dictionary, wrote of him,—"He was a most accomplished preacher. His popular talents were not eminent, but his discourses were correct and excellent compositions, and highly relished by scholars and men of taste. He was a fine classical scholar, and excelled in poetry as well as prose. It was much regretted that he did not publish more, as what he did publish was so acceptable. His sermon *upon the Good man* would do honor to any divine." A number of his sermons were printed, among which were the election sermon, 1766; the sermon before the convention of ministers, 1773; ordination and fast sermons. "The expectations of his friends were excited when proposals were issued to publish a volume of his sermons in 1774, the year of his death," and they were selected by Mr. Cary, of Newburyport (whose ordination sermon he preached), but the Revolutionary War breaking out, they were not printed.

A distinguished native of Haverhill, whose own family was divided by the religious differences to which he alludes, wrote,—"The latter part of Mr. Barnard's life was disturbed by divisions made in his

society by New-lights and Baptists, who accused him of *not preaching the gospel* and of *not being converted*, but the greatest and most respectable part of his flock remained faithful to their pastor to the last." This is the other side of the shield. Doubtless the Baptists, who deemed themselves wronged and persecuted, were bitter and acrimonious. In a sermon, preached a few months before his death, Mr. Barnard said,— "During the time which I have spent in public service it would be very strange if nothing hard and grievous had occurred, especially considering the cavilling spirit of the age, and the too general proneness to censure without bounds. Doubtless I have had my faults, for which I would ever seek remission through the blood of the everlasting covenant. But wherein I have been unreasonably aspersed, conscious of innocence, it may be calmly borne. . . . This day I see an assembly whose cordial affection to me I ought not to doubt." "Their affection," writes the authority before quoted, "was not to be doubted; their grief at his death was sincere; their children have been taught his praises." The parish chose a committee to take charge of his funeral, and afterward erected a monument over his grave. They also allowed his widow the free use of the parsonage house, with land and pasturage, until the settlement of another minister.

It is rather amusing at this distance of time to observe that whilst the parishioners of Mr. Barnard were so much afraid of the Baptist "tenets," they had been gradually falling into heresy under the teachings of their justly beloved pastor. Mr. Barnard ranked with the Arminians, like others of the highly respectable Merrimac ministers of his day. In doctrine he was much more nearly what at the present day is called liberal than the intruder, Mr. Smith, who was, we may suppose, entirely Calvinistic, except in the doctrine of baptism. "These clergymen and others," says a competent writer, "gradually departed from the Calvinistic system, and forebore to urge or to profess its peculiar tenets, although they did not so expressly and zealously oppose them as many have done in later times. . . . They did not insist, as a preliminary to the ordination of a young man to the Christian ministry, on his professing a belief of the Trinity, or of the five points of Calvinism."

In the Essex Institute, at Salem, hangs a portrait of this eminent and worthy man. He wears the clerical gown and bands and the great wig, which were the fashion of his time. His face is full and rather florid, his expression dignified as became his profession. He looks as if he had profited by those creature comforts which his diary shows that his parishioners were so fond of showering upon him.

From Rev. Thomas Barnard, the first of Andover, 1682, by his son, John Barnard, of Andover North Parish (together seventy-five years), his grandson, Thomas, pastor at Newbury and Salem, and his



great-grandson, Thomas (son of the last), of Salem, there was an unbroken line of ministerial succession in Essex County of one hundred and thirty-two years.

## CHAPTER CLIX.

### HAVERHILL.—(*Continued*).

#### *The Revolutionary War—Visit of Washington.*

A FEW days before the Stamp Act was to go into effect, at a town meeting specially warned for October 14, 1765, "special instruction," to the representative, Col. Richard Saltonstall, were adopted. They declared the belief of his constituents that the Stamp Act was unconstitutional; "which, with the extensive power lately granted to Courts of Admiralty, are great Infringements upon our rights & liberties." They recommend the representative "to promote & procure the repeal of said act as best for the nation in general;" that damages by riotous assemblies be satisfied agreeable to the law of England by the town "where permitted to be done and not by the province in general;" to use his influence that there be no excise on coffee or tea; "that excise be taken off from the private consumption of liquors, & that it be not more than fourpence on the gallon to licensed persons."

July, 1766, Gov. Wentworth, of New Hampshire was appointed surveyor-general of all His Majesty's woods in North America, under the act to protect white pine trees from fifteen to thirty-six inches in diameter for the royal navy. In February, 1772, Samuel Blodget, of Goffstown, N. H., was appointed deputy surveyor for a district in which Haverhill was included, and the seizure and confiscation of lumber under this act much aggravated the prevailing discontent.

September 1, 1768, a town-meeting was called "to see if the town approves of the proceedings of the late House of Representatives in not Rescinding" the famous resolution under which the circular letter to the other colonial Assemblies had been adopted; and "the thanks of the town were voted to the Gentlemen of the House of Representatives for defending the liberties of the people." The Haverhill representative was one of the seventeen who had voted to rescind; the town's action was therefore an implied censure to him, although his popularity and merit in all probability alone protected him from direct reproof. It is significant, however, that the next year the town sent a pronounced Whig as its representative. The new representative, Rev. Samuel Batcheller, was also appointed a committee to represent the town in the convention of delegates from the towns to be held in Boston, September 22, 1769. He

was directed, "in every constitutional way and manner consistent with our loyalty to our sovereign, to oppose and prevent the levying or collecting money from us not granted by ourselves or our legal Representatives." April 9, 1770, severe resolutions were adopted as to those persons who offer for sale or purchase British goods imported contrary to the agreement of the merchants of Boston, and Thomas West, Deacon John Ayer, Capt. William Greenleaf, Nathaniel Peaslee Sargeant, Esq., Nathaniel Walker, John Young and James Carr were appointed a Committee of Inspection to see that such agreements were kept.

July 28, 1774, it was voted not to "buy or purchase any goods or merchandise of any person which shall be imported contrary to the general agreement of the Colonies in General Congress." "Resolved, that we will not import, purchase, send or consume any East India Tea, until the Duty imposed upon importation into the Colonies shall be taken off; & the port of Boston opened." A Committee of Correspondence with Boston and other towns was also appointed.

Sept. 5, 1774, a military company, called the Artillery Company, was organized as an independent body, outside of the three militia companies. The members doubtless realized that war might not be far off. Dr. James Brickett was chosen captain; Israel Bartlett, lieutenant; Joshua B. Osgood, ensign; Edward Barnard, clerk and sergeant. Bailey Bartlett, Israel Bartlett, Thos. Cogswell, Nathaniel Marsh, Doctor Brickett and Nathaniel Walker, ambitious of proficiency in drill, sent to England for a copy of the "Norfolk Militia Book," which they received in due course, and for which they paid £6 15s. The company engaged a drill-master, met for exercise at the "Distill Houses," adopted a smart uniform—that known afterwards as the Continental—and, May 24, 1775, "voted to meet sun an hour high for the future," which seems to have been the last of the company. Real war was now beginning, and the members either voluntarily entered the service or had enough to do in meeting the drafts upon them for actual service. Sept. 15, 1774, the townsmen "voted to buy 800 lbs. powder, with balls and flint answerable as the town's stock." At an adjourned meeting, Oct. 10th, it was voted that "the constables are to pay no more money into the Province Treasury until further orders from the town."

Haverhill was a strong Whig town. There were, however, a few Tories, as they were then called—Loyalists, as we can afford to call them now. The best known of these was Col. Richard Saltonstall, of a distinguished family in the province and town, born 1732 and graduated at Harvard in 1751. At twenty-two, he was commissioned colonel of the militia regiment in which Haverhill was included. Serving in the French War with credit, he appears to have been under the command and so come under the influence of Gen. Timothy Ruggles, afterwards known as the Tory Chief of New England, a man of great ability





and resolution. Appointed sheriff of Essex County soon after the war, his associates were probably largely with the crown officials. He was unmarried and lived hospitably at the family residence. He was popular in the town as long as circumstances would permit, and represented it in the General Court from 1761 to 1768, inclusive. His action in voting for rescinding in 1768—one of the seventeen held up to popular ridicule and contempt—the people could not well overlook. If the townsfolk had been inclined to overlook it, the leaders of the liberty party would not have permitted. Scarcely the redoubtable Ruggles even was able to retain his seat with a devoted constituency.

Even afterwards and during the war, Col. Saltonstall might have remained unmolested. But he probably was imprudent, and assumed somewhat upon old popularity and influence. In the summer of 1774, Timothy Eaton, who was an ardent Whig and one of the town Committee of Correspondence, headed a large party which called on Col. Saltonstall to inform him that his action and language were disagreeable and must be abated.

The colonel was at first a little inclined to ride the high horse, but probably realizing the senselessness of attempting to resist such a mass of people, he wisely changed his tone, assumed a pleasant and jocular air, however difficult it may have been, and offered hospitality to his uninvited guests, which they accepted with enthusiasm. Accordingly they departed in good humor, without violence or insult. Any other course would only have resulted in deep humiliation and affront. Brigadier Ruggles was the only high Tory who escaped contact with the organized Sons of Liberty with dignity. Tact and good humor had saved Col. Saltonstall, but he doubtless realized that he could no longer remain in Haverhill and preserve his past attitude. Within a few days he had sought shelter with his friends in Boston, then filled with British troops. He soon went to England, where, more fortunate than many of his fellow-exiles, he speedily received a pension from King George in recognition of his loyalty. He never returned to America, dying in England in 1785. His half-brother, Dr. Nathaniel Saltonstall, who graduated at Harvard in 1766 and fell under different influences, returned to Haverhill to practice medicine before the outbreak of the war, joined the Artillery Company of which we have spoken, and was a consistent, though never prominent Whig. He spent a long life in his native town, respected and beloved. A younger brother of Doctor Saltonstall, Leverett, swayed by the example and advice of Col. Saltonstall, to whom he had been in the habit of looking as a mentor, obtained a commission in the British army, was captain of a company in Cornwallis' Southern campaign, and died at New York in 1782. Thus families were divided. Rev. Moses Badger, of Haverhill, half-brother of General Joseph Badger, who was active on the patriotic

side, a graduate of Harvard (1761) and an Episcopal clergyman, had married a sister of Col. Saltonstall, was a Loyalist and served as chaplain on the King's side. The property of Col. Saltonstall and Mr. Badger, was confiscated in 1776. In Curwen's diary, there are glimpses of Col. Saltonstall, living in modest, but apparently dignified retirement in London. These were the two principal Loyalists of Haverhill. Samuel White and Joseph Haynes were delegates from this town to the first Provincial Congress; Nathaniel Peaslee Sargeant and Jonathan Webster to the second and third.

The town raised money by voluntary subscription for the sufferers in Boston through the Port Bill.

In general, the town followed the guidance of the Boston committees and the Continental Congress. It voted to raise minute-men, and to pay them when drilling, giving them bounties when called into service. The roll has been preserved. The town engaged a drill-master for them.

On the day of the Lexington alarm, one hundred and five men—nearly one-half the whole militia force—marched out. Nehemiah Emerson was on a roof on Main Street, helping to put out a fire. He joined the minute-men, and came home but once till war was done, serving lastly as captain.

Dr. James Brickett, who had been out in the French War, gathered the minute-men on the news of the British march to Concord. He was soon lieutenant-colonel of Frye's regiment (May 20th), and commanded it at Bunker Hill in the illness of his superior officer. He was himself early wounded and injured, but remained in care of the wounded. Tradition says, that when he was coming off the field after his hurt, he met Dr. Warren just going on, to whom he transferred his arms. They were both ardent patriots, and Warren's example of glorious death was worth more to his country than the life of almost any man he left behind him.

The excitement of the Lexington alarm on the 19th of April was enhanced in Haverhill, by the anxiety and loss occasioned by a great fire (for that day) which had raged on the 16th of April on Main Street, ravaging from Court Street to White's Corner.

Two days after a burlesque alarm, which has been called the "Ipswich Fright," a cry that "The British are coming," spread ludicrous panic from the bay to the Coos country. The people waited around the common all night, ready to fly to the hills at a moment's warning. And the startled folks at the East Parish must long have remembered the "hemlocks" at the east side of the Great Pond, under whose coverts they lay concealed till dawn dispelled their terrors!

But sterner work than this was at hand. Seventy-four Haverhill men were in the battle of Bunker Hill, of whom two were killed. David How and Samuel Blodget, afterwards well known in the town, were in the battle, the former not yet quite seventeen years old.





Thomas Cogswell had been an active member of the Artillery Company, and on the 19th of April, 1775, entered service as captain of a company in the Massachusetts line; was afterwards major, lieutenant-colonel and wagon-master-general. January 7, 1781, General Washington wrote of him upon a question of promotion: "And I do further certify that Major Cogswell has been always represented to me as an intelligent, brave and active officer."

Hezekiah Smith, the Baptist minister, was able, by distinguished patriotic service, to allay at least some portion of the prejudice from which he had suffered. With the consent of his people, he entered the service as chaplain of Colonel Nixon's regiment. He was with the army at Cambridge, before Bunker Hill.

He was in some of the most important battles of the war. His fame as a preacher ran through the army, and he was often summoned to officiate for the regiments of other States. Chaplain Smith was at the surrender of Burgoyne, and preached to his brigade at Tappan, the day before Major André was executed. Recalled to his pastoral work by the people who had loaned him to the cause, he resumed his labors with them again in the latter part of October, 1780, preaching from the text: "For a small moment have I forsaken thee; but with great mercies will I gather thee."

In 1775 a post-rider was established between Cambridge and Haverhill, with a post-office here.

Like all the towns in Massachusetts, with at most one or two unhappy exceptions, Haverhill pledged herself to the Continental Congress in case of their declaring independence of Great Britain, "with their lives and fortunes to support them in the measure."

In September, 1777, a volunteer detachment turned out to reinforce the Northern army, arriving in ample season to witness the surrender of Burgoyne. General Brickett accompanied this party as a volunteer, and by General Gates was put in command of about five hundred militia to guard a division of General Burgoyne's army from Saratoga to Prospect Hill, in Charlestown. Massachusetts never paid him, because he was not in her service, and the United States never paid him, presumably because he had not been regularly mustered into service. Israel Bartlett kept a journal of this march, which is printed in Chase's history.

The town seems really to have discharged itself of patriotic duty during the Revolutionary War at least fairly well. Perhaps it should have even higher praise, for there is no evidence of grumbling or despondency. And the demands were very great; scarcely was one quota filled, when another was called for. There were so many emergencies that life must have seemed full of them, and to contain nothing else. All this was terribly aggravated by the wretched want of regularity and system.

When all the men had gone and all the money had been sent, Congress made requisitions for all the

clothing and all the beef. As to the men, it is claimed that Haverhill was deficient only one man in all the drafts. That did very well. Blankets, shoes, stockings and shirts were called for and rendered. Between December, 1780, and June 22, 1781, requisitions were made upon Haverhill for 45,570 pounds of beef, which were obeyed.

There was the same terrible depreciation and loss of State and Continental currency, of course, here as elsewhere; the same abortive attempts to regulate the price of commodities.

In the midst of war the people were trying to make a Constitution for the State of Massachusetts. June 8, 1778, the town gave seven votes for and sixty-three against the Constitution sent out by the Legislature, which the people rejected by a great majority. May, 1779, the town held two meetings to see if it wished a State convention, for the purpose of forming a Constitution. At both meetings the vote was no. Nevertheless, as a majority of the towns voted yes, precepts were issued for a convention at Cambridge in September, 1779. August 5th, Isaac Redington was chosen moderator and Nathaniel Peaslee Sargeant delegate to the convention. May 2, 1780, that noble instrument—the Constitution of Massachusetts—was submitted to the voters. General Brickett was moderator. He counted the voters present and found there were one hundred and nineteen. After "considerable debate" the meeting adjourned to May 8th, when there were one hundred and seventy-five voters present. The great subject of debate was the third article of the Bill of Rights, regulating religious worship. The Baptists and others objected to the provision that moneys paid for the support of worship and religious teachers should be paid, in the absence of special request, "towards the support of the teacher or teachers of the parish or precinct in which the said moneys are raised." The Baptists wanted no favoritism; they wished all sects served alike. This "was a subject of much altercation and considerable time was spent in arguing upon it." "91 voted to have it stand, and 85 voted for an amendment." "This last vote was reconsidered by a majority of 64 and on a second Tryal there were but 49 for the article and 104 against it." Then Judge Sargeant proposed one plan of amendment and Mr. Smith another. Seventy-nine voted in favor of the former and sixty-six for the latter. Then there was another adjournment.

At the adjourned meeting it was moved to amend chapter six, so that the Governor, Lieutenant-Governor, Councilors and legislators should swear, on taking office, that they respectively believed in the Christian Protestant religion. Eighty-five voted for the third article; sixty-nine against it." Mr. Smith then offered an amendment, which was agreed to. And then the town voted that, notwithstanding the amendment they had adopted, they preferred to take the Constitution as it was rather than have it come again to the people. They evidently were fatigued



with their labors. But the Constitution had been agreed to by a large majority of the towns, so that Monday, September 4, 1780, there was an election for the first time of State officers under it. The vote did not show much interest. For Governor, John Hancock had forty-seven votes, and James Bowdoin, forty-one.

When, in 1778, the Articles of Confederation proposed by Congress were submitted to the people, they chose a committee of which "Hon. Judge N. P. Sargeant was the first named, and adjourned for one week, when certain votes were passed," probably in a form reported by the committee. One of them puts a finger upon the weak spot of the proposed confederation, which brought ruin to the fabric: "Voted, as the opinion of this town that it appears necessary some plan or mode should be added to the Confederation for compelling such states as shall be defective in raising men or money for the common defence to perform their duty."

One precedent was established for other wars, when the town chose a committee of ten "to supply the families of such non-commissioned and private soldiers as are in the Continental service." Thomas West was first named on the committee.

"Greenleaf's Tavern" was long familiar to the townspeople. It was kept by Lieut. William, who entered service as a private in 1776, and did not come out till 1783, with the reputation of a brave officer.

In 1781 the currency had so depreciated that, having more than ten thousand pounds of it in the treasury, the town concluded not to receive any more for taxes. Seventy-five paper dollars would buy one silver one. Nathaniel Bradley charged the town £14 8 s. for four mugs of flip. "To 3 half mugs for myself, £5 8s." Nobody was willing to serve as constable, town clerk or treasurer.

The discontent about taxation, debt and poverty, fostered among the ignorant by artful men, brought about Shay's Rebellion in 1786. In the Autumn, the town of Boston sent out a circular letter to every town in the State, "concerning the common interest of the country." A committee, of which Gen. Brickett was chairman, reported a response October 10th, which was adopted by the town. It is an admirable document, prudent, thoughtful, patriotic. The rebellion, as is well known, was crushed as soon as vigorous measures were resorted to.

In 1789 it was "voted to choose a committee to inspect the schools." This was the first ever chosen, and it consisted of the settled clergymen, the selectmen, Isaac Osgood, Esq., Hon. Nathaniel P. Sargeant, Mr. John White, Capt. Francis Carr and Capt. Samuel Merrill. After this the committee was continued, and next year were "desired to recommend such rules and regulations in the schools as they shall think proper."

And November 4, 1789, was the visit of Washing-

ton, the stay at the Mason's Arms, or Harrod's Tavern, "a brown old building standing on the site of the City Hall; "the calls of ceremony at Bailey Bartlett's, the sheriff, and at Mr. John White's, whose son had married the daughter of Washington's friend, Senator Tristram Dalton, of Newburyport. Hezekiah Smith's biographer says that the President called upon the chaplain too.

He paid a visit to the duck factory of Samuel Blodget. Perhaps all will not recall the fact that Washington Square and Washington Street are named in honor of his visit. The general acted in his usual practical manner when his principal entry in the diary about the town, was a mention of the "Duck manufactory, upon a small but ingenious scale." He certainly walked through the town, for he says so in his diary. And perhaps he would have made a more grandiloquent entry in his journal than the following if he had realized it would be reprinted in all the books, even after a hundred years: "The inhabitants of this small village were well disposed to welcome me to it by every demonstration which could evince their joy."

Two days before, another gentleman had entered in his diary: "Monday, ye 2d Nov., 1789. I went to see Blodgett's spinning and weaving works & they beat everything. The old man is really proud of it.

"They tell me they have a prospect yt. Gen. Washington will be in town this week."

General Washington called at Parson Smith's, and the other diarist, who was a parson of the "standing order," called on Mr. Smith, for fear some of his proper tythes should escape him. "I called on Mr. Smith; talked about giving certificates to people who only pretend to be Baptist. Mr. Smith says he will be honest—and the men shall not be sheltered who are not honest also."

A hundred years ago, the tendency was to exalt Washington as a demi-god. In the early part of this century, historians and biographers treated his character and fame as if he were an idol, whose shrine was only to be approached by the worshipper prone upon the earth and with averted face, lest blindness should punish the too audacious gaze. Now there are persons who boldly say they are going to tell everything about Washington. They are about to strip the veil off from that august countenance. Well, that will do no harm either. It will work no injury to him nor will it strip humanity of one of its most precious jewels. At the worst, it will only be known that he was not an image carved of stone; that in his youth, the blood ran very red in his veins; that he had strong passions and an imperious will; and that he could be profane upon provocation. The grand result will remain that experience and familiarity with great affairs, taught him self-control. The fact will remain that in him were abnormally blended the firmness of a soldier and the prudence of a judge. As a king or emperor, he would have come near





being to mankind what the ignorant Russian is taught to believe his Czar is—father and God. As President of a free people, he will never cease to deserve and receive reverence, for the sublime self-abnegation with which he put aside guilty ambition, and himself set the highest example of obedience, both in letter and in spirit, to the laws he may be said to have preserved. To the people of the modern city, as of the "small village," he will still be the Father of his Country!

## CHAPTER CLX.

### HAVERHILL.—(Continued).

*Business after the war—Chief Justice Sergeant—Other prominent men—Progress of events.*

THE Marquis de Chastellux, one of the French generals under Count de Rochambeau in America during the Revolutionary War, wrote thus near its close of this place and its vicinity: "The North Parish, or North Andover, is a charming place, where there are a great number of very handsome houses, a quantity of meadows and fine cattle. Almost on quitting this handsome township you enter Bradford, where night overtook us, and we traveled two or three miles in the dark before we reached Haverhill Ferry. It was half-past six before we had crossed it and got to Harward's (Harrod's) Inn, where we had a good supper and good lodgings. At Haverhill the Merrimac is only fit for vessels of thirty tons, but much larger ones are built here, which are floated down empty to Newbury. Three miles above Haverhill are falls, and higher up the river is only navigable for boats. The trade of this town formerly consisted in timber for ship-building, which has been suspended since the war. It is pretty considerable and tolerably well-built; and its situation in the form of an amphitheatre on the left shore of the Merrimac, gives it many agreeable aspects."

Jedediah Morse's "Gazetteer," printed in Boston in 1797, says of Haverhill that it has "a considerable inland trade." "It lies chiefly upon two streets, the principal of which runs parallel with the river. Vessels of one hundred tons burden can go up it. Travelers are struck with the pleasantness of the situation; and a number of neat and well-finished houses give it an air of elegance; . . . three distilleries, one of which has lately undergone a laudable transmutation into a brewery. Some vessels are annually built here, and several are employed in the West India trade. A manufactory of sail-cloth was begun here in 1780, and is said to be in a promising way. The trade of the place, however, is considerably less than before the Revolution. The whole township contains three hundred and thirty houses, and two thousand four hundred and eight inhabitants." The "Gazetteer"

was probably a little behind the times, as such works are apt to be. The trade of the town was much injured by the War of the Revolution; but in 1797 it was again prosperous. Ship-building was carried on with renewed energy. There were two ship-yards in the village, and one at the "Rocks," the last of which, however, was discontinued about 1800. Persons living in 1860 could remember when three vessels were launched in a single day at the village. In 1810 nine vessels were built and fifty to sixty men were kept constantly employed in the yards. The vessels were ships, brigs, sloops, schooners and snows.

There was considerable inland trade and foreign commerce. Several Haverhill merchants were direct exporters and importers between New England, England and the West Indies. The smaller vessels, especially in the latter trade, came up the river to the town. The larger came either to Boston or Newburyport, and their goods were transferred to Haverhill in snows or other small vessels, or in gondolas from Newburyport.

The town's exports were corn and grain, beef, fish, lumber, pearl-ashes, linseed oil, tow cloth and other things. Flax-seed was sent to Ireland, pot and pearl-ashes to England and Ireland. All sorts of goods came back from London, sugar and molasses from the West Indies. A part of the latter was converted into rum at the distilleries. A large part of the imported goods were sent into the country by ox-teams, great numbers of which were employed, and which brought back rural products.

Among the principal merchants were John White, Benjamin Willis, James Duncan, James Duncan, Jr., and Isaac Osgood.

John White and his fine mansion on Water street, have been spoken of before. He owned the only chaise in Haverhill when Hezekiah Smith came here. "Sept. 20, 1764, went with John White in his chaise to Newbury." The old hall and stairs in John White's house on Water Street are fine and well preserved to-day. Though no longer owned by the White family, a portion of it is occupied by a venerable and interesting lady whose memory is well stored with the town's unwritten lore.

Mr. Willis was a son of Capt. Benj. Willis, a ship-master living at Charlestown before the Revolution. Taken prisoner by the British and carried into St. Eustacia, in the West Indies, he came home after exchange to find his house burned by the British, and his family refugees in Haverhill, where, when peace came, he was largely engaged in shipping. The son, going out to London as a young man, supercargo of his father's vessel—the good brig "Benjamin and Nancy"—secured the confidence of John Dickinson, a merchant there in a large way, by whose advice and assistance he started with a full stock of foreign goods, and became a large and successful importer in Haverhill.

James Duncan, already named, started as a pack-peddler, but was settled in Haverhill before 1750, and



as we have already had occasion to notice, had in a few years become a man of some importance. His son James succeeded him in business, carrying on both a domestic and importing trade, and also interested in shipping. He built at Lebanon, N. H., a store, potash-works and a mill for grinding flax-seed. In twenty-six months he sent over \$90,000 worth of goods by the great ox-teams to the Lebanon store. Mr. Duncan is said to have been a man of good business talents and enterprise, who, without the advantages of early education, had acquired much general information. He was Major Duncan of the militia and commanded the cavalry companies which escorted Washington, in 1789, from Boston to the New Hampshire line. He died in 1822, at sixty-five.

Isaac Osgood came from Andover to Haverhill long before the Revolution. His store was a wooden building with gambrel roof, which stood a few rods east of the bridge. He was at first in the West India trade; after the war, in the London. He built and operated "Osgood's Still-house," which afterwards was a brewery, and, falling into the hands of John Dickinson, of London, before referred to, he gave it to the younger Willis, by whom it was torn down, and in 1811, Willis, Warner Whittier, Kimball Carleton and James Hazeltine built upon the site the first brick block of the town. The Bannister brick block was built in 1815.

Isaac Osgood died in 1791 and was succeeded in business by his son Peter.

The town valuation in 1790 was \$1,519,411.

Samuel Bean was "post-rider" from Boston to Concord, N. H., carrying letters and newspapers on horseback. He passed through Haverhill going and returning, making the whole route once a week. One Gage started a two-horse coach about this time from Haverhill to Boston, only running it when he had passengers enough. Robert Willis remembered that when, in September, 1792, his mother took her children to Boston to be inoculated with the small-pox, they went over the Haverhill ferry just as the sun was rising and crossed Charlestown Bridge after the lamps were lighted—a journey of about twelve hours. In 1793 a coach was running regularly twice a week. It left the ferry in Bradford "at 6 o'clock precisely, expecting to reach Boston before one." "Fare, 3d. per mile." Judge Samuel Blodgett was doubtless the projector. Soon a stage ran in connection with it twice a week to Concord.

In August, 1811, Morse & Fox began running a coach twice a week between Haverhill and Salem. In March, 1818, the Haverhill and Boston Stage Company began operations, continuing them until, in 1837, the railroad was opened to Boston, when its name was changed to the "Boston and Eastern Stage Company." Before the advent of steam-cars there was a daily and semi-weekly "stage" between Boston and Haverhill, a daily to and from Newburyport, Lowell and Methuen, Exeter and Dover, and a

semi-weekly to and from Concord, N. H., and Salem.

In 1790 the town, on the petition of Judge Sargeant, granted leave for "trees to be set out on the public land"—the common—and the trees were probably sycamores, long since removed.

Nathaniel Peaslee Sargeant was at this time easily the most eminent citizen of the town. He bore the name of his grandfather, Colonel Peaslee, of Haverhill, whose daughter, Susanna, married Rev. Christopher Sargeant, the first minister of Methuen, who lived to a great age and was long known as "Father" Sargeant. Young Sargeant graduated at Harvard in 1750 and was early here in practice. He was perhaps the first regularly educated lawyer who practiced in this town. He had influential connections, was the attorney of the Haverhill proprietors, who had extensive and important law-suits on hand, in which intricate questions were involved. He was studious, and doubtless early made money and reputation. He was never a brilliant advocate, but had a high reputation as a judicious, learned and upright lawyer. He was a safe and moderate Whig; probably his temperament did not permit him to be an ardent one. But he enjoyed the full confidence of his townsmen, and represented them in the Second and Third Provincial Congresses, and in the House of Representatives in 1776. He was one of the first justices appointed at the reorganization of the Superior Court at the outbreak of the Revolution, holding that position till he succeeded William Cushing as chief justice in 1790. He had a very high standing for ability and candor as a judge. In 1788-89, when the Federal Constitution was trembling in the balance, he addressed an able letter in its favor to his cousin, General Joseph Badger, of Gilmanton, N. H., a member of the Constitutional Convention of that State, which was thought to have had considerable influence in aid of the ratification.

Mirick says, "We have heard much in his praise from the lips of the aged."

Judge Sargeant married a sister of the famous Timothy Pickering, of Salem, who was thought to have been a great acquisition to the limited but good society of the village. Her fair, large grave-stone thus far defies time and vandalism in the old burying-ground. When she married Judge Sargeant she was widow of the Rev. Dudley Leavitt. One can still hear from the lips of aged ladies that the grave chief justice was a great favorite in society. One of the ministers, exchanging at Haverhill took tea at his house and entered in his diary: "The judge was very entertaining." He lived opposite the common, on the site of the Unitarian meeting-house. His house, which was removed to make a place for it, may still be seen by the curious on Spring Court, in a good state of preservation. Judge Sargeant died October, 1791.

In 1791, General Brickett and others petitioned, "to





have the trees lately set out in the Training Field removed," but no action was taken on that article.

Hitherto, swine had run at large, but a district, including the village, was now marked out, within which they were warned not to trespass.

In 1790 the town adopted an admirable code of regulations for the government of the grammar schools, which were reported from the school committee by Samuel Walker. The next year Mr. Walker was chairman of a committee to divide the town into school districts.

In 1791 the town, contrary to its usual custom, sent two representatives to the General Court, "provided it should not be any expense to the town." Samuel Blodget was the member chosen under this queer arrangement, and the next year, at the town-meeting, he counted out on the table the money he had received for his services. He wanted to go to the Legislature, to further a scheme of his own, of which he had many. It is a pity his example was not more followed at the present day, when gentlemen who are dying to reach the Legislature for personal ends are yet cunning enough to make their fellow-citizens conceive the brilliant idea of morally coercing them to consent to an election, at great supposed personal loss and discomfort.

Samuel Blodget, long known in Haverhill, seems to have been a remarkable man. Born in Woburn, he was at the taking of Louisburg in 1745, and as we have seen, at the battle of Bunker Hill, doing good service there. He was in Haverhill before 1748, established pot and pearl-ash works in 1759 here conducting them some years successfully. For some years before the Revolution he was judge of the Inferior Court in Hillsborough County, New Hampshire. He was an ingenious mechanic. Raising a valuable cargo with a machine of his own invention from a ship sunk near Plymouth, he afterwards went to Europe to raise Spanish galleons and the war ship "Royal George" in England; but the obtuse authorities would not allow him to make the attempt. We have heard of the duck manufactory in Haverhill, where he also ran coaches and had many other projects. Leaving Haverhill in 1793, he began Blodget's canal at Amoskeag Falls, where he spent several years and all his property, trying to make the canal in the river and to lock the falls, but without success. In 1791 he tried to persuade the General Court to encourage home manufactures. Judge Blodget seems to have been a visionary, chiefly because he was in advance of his times. He tried to bring about things impracticable of accomplishment.

His favorite scheme was to live forever. He was temperate and active; he slept with open doors and windows in the severest weather, and he had gradually hardened his body by abstaining from the use of overcoats, mittens, gloves and such appliances. He was eighty-five years old, vigorous and cheerful, when unluckily, early in 1807, he took a severe cold riding

from Boston to Haverhill on a stormy night in an open sleigh, and died of consumption in the following August. Some of his schemes have been worked out; that for immortality is still open for perfection.

In 1793, the town, which was usually moderately Federal in politics, adopted resolutions approving President Washington's proclamation of neutrality. September 6th, E. Ladd and S. Bragg issued the first newspaper, called *The Guardian of Freedom*. It was a weekly, at nine shillings per annum, and edited by Benjamin Edes, Jr. It was of the town politics, Federal.

In 1794 was completed the great bridge, considered at the time a wonder of skill. In 1796 President Dwight, of Yale College, wrote of it: "No bridge which I have ever seen, except that over the Piscataqua, can be compared with this as a fine object to the eye. The arches, above and below, have a degree of boldness and grandeur unrivaled in this country." It was undoubtedly an important undertaking, taxing the resources of the little town; but alterations in it were necessary before many years. It was rebuilt in 1808. It is perhaps unnecessary to say it was a toll bridge, and could not have been built otherwise at that time.

Merrimac Bridge, at the Rocks, was built in 1795. It was a thousand feet long, being the longest upon the river. Neglected by the proprietors, it was swept away by the ice in 1818. A new bridge was built in 1828, and has been repaired within a few years.

President Dwight was much interested by the fact that there had long been a floating island in Plug Pond; this was undoubtedly the case, but it broke up at last, about 1800.

In the Boston Public Library is a bound volume containing a sketch of Haverhill Bridge, made by Robert Gilmer, of Baltimore, under the following circumstances, to accompany his unprinted "memorandums made in a tour of the Eastern States, in the year 1797": "At four o'clock on Monday I got into the stage and returned to Boston by the way of Exeter and Haverhill, both of which are very pretty little villages, especially the latter, which is situated very pleasantly on the banks of the Merrimack. Across the river is thrown one of the new constructed bridges, like that of Piscataqua, only this has three arches instead of one, and the work which supports the whole is above instead of being just below the bridge. I had time enough before dinner to step to the water's edge and take a sketch of it. While I stood there, with my drawing-book resting upon a pile of plank which happened to be convenient, and intent upon my work, I did not observe the tide, which rose to my feet; and, on looking down, perceived myself up to my ankles in the river. The water rose so gradually that I did not feel it, and never suspected that it could be the case."

Under the lead of Bailey Bartlett, the town, in 1796, adopted a memorial to the national House of Repre-





sentatives, urging its carrying out the provisions of the Jay treaty. And in 1798 the town presented to President John Adams, by Mr. Bartlett, then Representative in Congress from the district, an address congratulating him on the course of his administration, to which the President made an appropriate reply.

In this year the first written school report to the town was made by Rev. Hezekiah Smith, who was chairman of the school committee for the First District. The committee for this district was at that time always a large and able one, which paid much attention to its duties.

In 1798 it appears by the list of householders and dwelling-houses belonging to or occupied by them, exceeding in value the sum of one hundred dollars, that the most valuable residence was that of Dr. Nathaniel Saltonstall, built on Merrimac Street in 1789, now removed to Lake Saltonstall, which was valued at \$3000; John White's at \$2600; Bailey Bartlett's at \$2000; Hannah Woodbury's, \$1500.

Of Haverhill village in 1794, Dr. Jeremiah Spofford thus wrote in 1860: "It consisted at that time of Merrimack, Water and Main Streets, and the only brick building in the village was part of Sheriff Bartlett's house, so long and so lately and so well occupied by Dr. Langley. A row of small wooden stores occupied the river bank, above the bridge, in one of which David Howe, Esq., and in another, Moses Atwood, father of Harriet (Atwood) Newell, kept stores at that time.

"About this time a three-story brick store, perhaps sixty feet long and forty feet deep, was built by Mr. Howe and Phineas Carleton, on the west side of Maine Street, of which Mr. Howe occupied what is now two stores or about forty feet square, and Mr. Carleton twenty by forty, and from Mr. Carleton's store, which was the southerly one, it was vacant land to the corner. From the corner lot a house had been burnt some years before, belonging, we think, to Esquire (Samuel) White, a citizen long well-known, and possibly yet remembered by some in Haverhill.

"The old First Parish and the Baptist Churches then furnished ample accommodations, although a much larger proportion of the people then were constant attendants at church than at present.

"Mr. Shaw preached at the Congregational and Mr. Smith at the Baptist Church. Mrs. Shaw was a Smith, and sister to the wife of President John Adams." Haverhill was indeed most fortunate in the character of its ministers in long succession. She had had for the old church, Ward, Rolfe, Gardner, Brown and Barnard. To the latter, after three years, succeeded the Rev. John Shaw, who graduated at Harvard in 1772, and was ordained in 1777. He was son of the Rev. John Shaw, of Bridgewater, and younger brother of Rev. Oakes Shaw, minister of Barnstable for forty-seven years, and father of Lemuel Shaw, the great chief-justice of Massachusetts.

Mrs. Elizabeth Shaw was perhaps the most remarkable of three famous sisters, daughters of Rev. Mr. Smith, of Weymouth. Admirable women as were her sisters, Mrs. Abigail Adams, wife of the second President, and Mrs. Cranch, mother of Judge Cranch, there were many who awarded the palm of superiority to the handsome, dignified and most notable wife of the Haverhill pastor. Her influence over the society of the village was large and good. Mr. Shaw was a good scholar, and so much did her relatives and friends prize the advantage of their united talents and influence that there were always some youths about the parsonage preparing for college. Among these were the sons of John Adams, one of whom afterwards married one of the handsome daughters of Joseph Harrod, the inn-keeper; William Cranch, who returned to Haverhill, after graduating to practice law under the auspices of Chief Justice Sergeant, till he removed to Washington, where he became himself chief justice of the Circuit Court for the District of Columbia. Cranch joined the Haverhill Fire Club in 1792. He took in Haverhill the law business of Mr. Thaxter, a relative who had deceased. This must have been John Thaxter, who joined the Fire Club in 1785.

In 1874 John Quincy Adams, then seventeen years old, wrote from Auteuil, France, to William Cranch, his cousin: "I have serious thoughts of going in the spring (to America), so as to arrive in May or June, stay a twelvemonth at Mr. Shaw's (who I hope would be as kind to me as he has been to you and is to my brothers), and then enter college for the last year, so as to come out with you." The scheme was carried out, and young Adams became a pupil of Mr. Shaw.

Mr. Shaw was Calvinistic in his theology, and thus, perhaps, his influence tended to counteract that exercised by his predecessor, the Arminian Barnard. But Mr. Shaw, though intelligent, amiable, hospitable and charitable, was not a forcible man. He died very suddenly in 1794, and the town adjourned its meeting to attend his funeral.

There were still some relics of the old days. The seats in the meeting-house were equipped with hinges and usually turned up in prayer-time, that the occupants might lean against the railing during the long petitions, after which they were apt to shut down with a bang. So the following vote passed in the parish in 1791: "Voted that Coll. James Bricket, Deacon Joseph Dodge and Doct. Saltonstall be a committee to speak to the Rev'd. Mr. Shaw that he would speak at some convenient season unto the People that they would let their seats down without such Nois." In the same year "a pew for the women to sing" was built in the gallery of the meeting-house; and it was voted "that the company of singers should choose such Persons among them Selves to Lead in the Musick and Regulate the same as they shall think proper."

Dr. Dwight seems to have thought well of the peo-



ple. He says, "The manners of the inhabitants, in general, are very civil and becoming. Those of the most respectable people are plain, frank, easy and unaffected. Both the gentlemen and ladies are well-bred and intelligent, and recommend themselves not a little to the esteem and attachment of a traveller. We saw at the church a numerous congregation, well dressed, decorous and reverential in their deportment."

After Mr. Shaw's death, the church and parish seemed still to be fortunate. They unanimously invited the Rev. Abiel Abbott, of Andover, who accepted and was ordained June 3, 1795. Mr. Abbott had been a distinguished scholar at school and at Harvard, where he graduated in 1792. He had been an assistant to his brother, Benjamin Abbott, the famous principal of Phillips Exeter Academy, and then principal of Phillips, Andover. He wrote much and published much, and what he wrote was exceedingly admired.

When Washington died there was a town-meeting, January 9, 1800, "at the request of James Brickett and others," to see what measures should be taken. February 22d, Mr. Abbott delivered an eulogy before the inhabitants in the meeting-house on the Common, which was printed and much admired. But, much to the regret of his people, he insisted upon a dismissal in 1803, on account of inadequacy of salary. He died in 1828, minister at Beverly.

When he began to preach, Mr. Abbott was a Trinitarian in views; but eventually his opinions changed and he became a decided Unitarian. Many of the Haverhill Society, not a majority, were in sympathy with him. But there was as yet no breach between the two wings.

Rev. Joshua Dodge was ordained in 1808, remaining till 1827, when he, too, asked for a dismissal, and was succeeded in 1828 by Rev. Dudley Phelps, of Andover. Mr. Phelps was a man of talents and convictions,—social and genial in private life, but bold and aggressive in public. He entered with zeal into the new temperance and anti-slavery movements. Before long there was dissension, as might be expected. Some funds had accumulated and a series of intrigues to get possession of them ensued, not very creditable to any of the parties concerned. Eventually, a sum was paid to certain seceders who were in sympathy with Universalism. The orthodox members withdrew, forming what afterwards became the "Centre Congregational Society," organized April 27, 1833, which erected a meeting-house the next year. They were largely the church, taking away the Trinitarian doctrines, but none of the money. Out of this society again grew, by separation in 1859, the "North Congregational Society." The secession of the Calvinists from the First Parish church and society left the organization, the records and the funds in the hands of the Unitarians. The society quit-claimed to the town its interest in the Common in 1837, and built a new house on the ground north of it, at the corner of Main Street.

The second pastor of the church in the North Precinct, Rev. Gyles Merrill, ordained March 6, 1765, was one of the most excellent of the ministers of Haverhill. He remained pastor till his death in 1801, after a ministry of thirty-seven years. He was orthodox, sufficient in learning, prudent in conduct, simple, kindly and beloved.

The first Sunday-school was collected in the First Parish in July, 1817, when Rev. Mr. Dodge was minister there. The school was large and the work successful.

In October, 1804, a committee, of which Bailey Bartlett was chairman, was appointed to draft By-Laws, which were adopted in the following December. Some were to be in force only in the "compact part of the village."

The first powder house was built on the north side of Powder House Lane (now White Street) in 1805. It was about eight feet square. The second was built on Golden Hill, about 1845.

The town was opposed to the embargo, and, indeed, to most of the measures which led to the War of 1812. But the Haverhill Light Infantry, organized in 1810, performed a tour of duty at South Boston, in 1814, in a handsome manner. This company had a high reputation for discipline and military skill. It disbanded in 1841. The "Hale Guards," afterwards "The Guards," were also, for years, an efficient company.

In 1812 the first musical organization, known as the "Haverhill Musical Society," was formed. It is said the first singing school was held in the same year.

Fortunately for the town, the immediate horrors of war were not experienced by it in the War of 1812. But the news of peace caused the greatest rejoicing to a people whose trade and commerce had been cruelly interrupted.

Ship-building was never quite the same again afterwards that it had been before. Captain William Caldwell carried it on from about 1735 to 1740, when the "North Bend," of about four hundred tons, was hunched.

At different periods efforts have been made to remove obstructions in the river above and below Haverhill, with the expectation of developing manufactures and increasing commerce, but they have not been very successful. The town did not have an almshouse or poor farm until 1820. There was a singular reluctance to abandon the old and unfeeling methods. But ever since there has been a gradual improvement, and it is believed this establishment is highly satisfactory at the present time.

Bailey Bartlett, Moses Wingate and Charles White represented the town in the convention of 1820 to revise the Constitution.





## CHAPTER CLXI.

## HAVERHILL—(Continued).

*Educational, Reformatory and Business Movements—Men and Families—  
The Saltonstalls.*

In 1827 the Haverhill Academy was dedicated—an institution which was of great usefulness for many years, till superseded by the high school. The thorough history and progress of schools in the town would consume time and space not compatible with the scope of the present work, interesting subject as it is.

There was great agitation and excitement when the first temperance society was formed upon the principle of total abstinence. It was called the Society for the Promotion of Temperance in Haverhill and Vicinity, and it was organized February 5, 1828. Rev. Gardner B. Perry, of East Bradford, was president; Rev. Dudley Phelps, of the First Parish, was vice-president; Abijah W. Thayer, then connected with the *Gazette*, was secretary and treasurer. They were bold and uncompromising men, and their course was an aggressive one. Neither was the opposition slight which they encountered. On account of the resolute attitude assumed by Mr. Thayer in the *Gazette*, the circulation fell off from one thousand to six hundred copies weekly.

March 24, 1831, the "Youths' Temperance Association of Haverhill and Bradford" was organized, thirty-seven signing the constitution the same evening. Elias T. Ingalls, still living, was chosen president.

In 1833 the temperance people took the question into town politics. In 1842 the selectmen were instructed not to grant licenses for the sale of intoxicating liquors. A committee was appointed to prosecute such dealers as would not retire from the business. Captain William Caldwell's distillery was sold to Alfred Kittredge about 1836, who put out the fires on the night of taking possession, and built the Kittredge Block upon the site in 1840. Credit for these initiatory movements towards temperance is largely allotted to Isaac R. Howe and William Savory.

The people were doubtless much surprised when it was announced that town-meetings could no longer be held in the First Parish meeting-house without paying for it. They had been held in the meeting-house for nearly two hundred years. It may have seemed that the world was coming to an end. At all events, the town refused to pay thirty dollars a year for the privilege. So the next meeting was held in the West Parish meeting-house; and the next, after that, in the East Parish meeting-house. Then there was a meeting in the Baptist meeting-house, and then in a variety of places till the Town Hall was built, in 1847. The subject had been agitated since the First Parish proposed to charge rent for its meeting-house. The Town Hall cost over sixteen thousand

dollars, twice as much as was first expected. It was built on the "south part of the Harrod lot, so called"—where the Mason's-Arms used to be. In 1818, the town voted to allow the county the free use of the hall for the County Courts, if the latter should be removed from Ipswich to Haverhill. In 1859 the town of itself was thought to have outgrown the hall, without the aid of the county, and an able committee was appointed to consider the subject and report. January 7, 1861, a plan was reported and work was immediately begun. The result was the present City Hall, the cost of which was estimated at forty-two thousand dollars. It was not built too soon. It has served the needs of the place very well for twenty-seven years; but much greater expansion of the town, its business and its population, would revive the cry of 1849, that the place has outgrown its municipal edifice.

In 1828 the first steamboat on the river—the "Merrimack"—began running between Haverhill and Newburyport. But after several years the enterprise was abandoned as unsuccessful. In fact, steamboating on the Merrimack has never been a prosperous business for a great length of time. The building of a railroad between Haverhill and Newburyport ruined it. But it is being again taken hold of by keen business men, and it may be inferred that the amount of pleasure travel on the beautiful stream has and will be sufficient to warrant proper boats being run in a decent and comfortable manner.

The Merrimack Bank was incorporated in 1814, with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars. The Haverhill Institution for Savings was organized in 1829.

Haverhill has had its full share of charitable, educational and literary institutions. The women of the town have been especially active and successful, these many years, in organizing, conducting and supporting, worthy enterprises of all kinds. In connection with such affairs, the names of Mrs. James H. Duncan, Mrs. Rufus Longley and Mrs. Isaac R. How, were long prominent. Thus, in 1829, they were managers of the Infant School Society, for the instruction of very young children. The work was successful.

The Haverhill Lyceum was formed February 25, 1830, with James H. Duncan, Esq., president; James Gale, Esq., recording secretary; and Isaac R. How, Esq., corresponding secretary. This was succeeded by the Haverhill Athenæum, in 1852, and that by the Haverhill Library Association.

In 1834 agitation commenced about continuing the railroad from Andover to Haverhill. The first meeting was held January 5th, at the Eagle House, James H. Duncan, chairman; Alfred Kittredge, secretary. October 26, 1837, the road was open to the Merrimack, at Bradford.

The first anti-slavery society was organized April 3, 1834. Hon. Gilman Parker was president; A. W. Thayer, recording secretary; John G. Whittier, cor-



responding secretary. A female anti-slavery society was formed soon after, and before long similar societies were formed in other portions of the town.

The Essex County Anti-Slavery Society was formed June 10, 1834,—Rev. G. B. Perry, president, and John G. Whittier, corresponding secretary. The American Anti-Slavery Society was organized in May, 1833.

These movements did not pass unnoticed and unopposed. One Sabbath evening, August, 1835, an anti-slavery meeting, which was to have been addressed by Rev. Samuel J. May at the Christian Union Chapel, was broken up by a mob.

After 1836 the first parish bell ceased to be regularly rung at noon and nine o'clock in the evening. To some of the old people, the tongue of time seemed to have stopped.

The Haverhill Female Benevolent Society was incorporated as early as January 13, 1818. It has done, and still is doing, a noble work.

The "Fragment" Society was organized 1825.

In 1816 one wrote: "Haverhill is not so handsome a town as its local situation deserves. But the chief care of its first settlers was to shelter themselves from the severity of the climate and to defend themselves against their savage enemy, and it is not strange that they did not consult the beauty of their settlements. The river or Water Street, is too near the bank. The number of ordinary buildings on the lower side of the street interrupts the view from the houses, and injures the appearance of the town from the opposite shore. A road parallel to the river might be laid out on the brow of the hill, which would open a range of beautiful house-lots overlooking the street below and commanding a most extensive prospect. This has long been wanted, for building lots are scarce."

Such a road or street was opened soon after, when Summer Street was begun from Main. In November, 1836, it was extended from Kent to Mill Street, and Webster Street was laid out.

When, in 1837, the town appropriated one thousand dollars to obtain a quit-claim of the interest of the First Parish in the common, an additional sum was made up by subscription. The parish sold the land "for the use of the town, as an ornamental common." But the ladies of the place had much to do with its final inclosure and improvement. Unworthy as it is of an enterprising town, it is much better than nothing.

In the same year there was a great agitation about the disposition to be made of the surplus revenue to which the town was entitled. It was about twelve thousand dollars. Three thousand dollars was applied to the payment of the town's debts; one thousand dollars was loaned to the First School District; and the balance being invested in stocks of the Merrimac and Haverhill Banks, the interest was annually apportioned to the districts for the support of common schools.

In 1838 many new streets were laid out and named.

Mr. Moses E. Emerson began doing an express business to Boston every day, and in a small way, in the autumn of the same year.

Rev. William Miller produced a deep excitement in this town and its vicinity in 1839 and '40, by his lectures, predicting the destruction of the world by fire in 1843.

In 1855 a large school building was built on School Street. Judge Isaac Ames, afterwards judge of Probate for Suffolk County, taught in a former building on this spot, and later Dr. John Crowell was happily and successfully associated with the school for a number of years.

In 1841 the town accepted the act of the General Court establishing a Fire Department.

January 24, 1842, John Quincy Adams presented in the National House of Representatives the petition of Benjamin Emerson (2d) and others, of Haverhill, for the peaceful dissolution of the Union. The object of the movers in the affair is stated to have been a desire to expose the hollow character of Southern threats of disunion. The petitioners obtained abundant notoriety and the ultimate effect was excellent, as establishing the right of petition.

In 1846 Linwood Cemetery was bought and laid out by a company. This led to efforts by ladies, prominent among whom were Mrs. Dr. Longley and Mrs. Jeremiah Stickney, by which more than one thousand dollars was raised to beautify and improve the old burial-ground. The money was admirably expended, and perhaps the suggestion may be pardoned that there is ample room for another generation to do likewise.

The fraternity of Shenstones, of which Isaac Ames was president and Thomas M. Hayes secretary and treasurer, was organized in October, 1847.

The name of Rev. Arthur S. Train, a beloved minister of the Baptist Society, is often mentioned as active in this work.

In 1854, on motion of Hon. James H. Duncan, the town adopted a preamble and resolutions, protesting against the adoption of the Kansas-Nebraska Bill.

In 1858 the streets had been lighted for the first time by gas. Merrimac Street was paved from Main to Washington Square in 1858. Soon after the paving of Water Street began.

In 1859 the old Fish House lot at the Great Pond was beautified and the sheet of water re-named in accordance with the suggestion of John G. Whittier, who had been asked to select a new name, which he did in his well-known and charming poem of "Kenoza."

It has already been mentioned that David How was at the battle of Bunker Hill, not yet quite seventeen years old. He was born at Methuen in 1758. The gun which it is understood he carried at Bunker Hill, is in the possession of a relative in Haverhill. David How was always a strenuous advocate





of the merits of Colonel Prescott as the real leader in the battle.

December 27, 1775, David enlisted in the Continental army for one year. He was at Harlem Heights and at Trenton, where he took from a Hessian soldier his gun and knapsack; the spoils of war are still in the possession of his descendants.

After the war young How, who had married, went to New London, N. H., where he bought and partly cleared a piece of land, intending to be a farmer; but as his wife was dissatisfied, he gave it up and came to Haverhill. He had learned something about currying with his grandfather Farnham at Andover, and in the basement of a small shop on Water Street he began that business, in a very humble fashion. But he was polite, honest and industrious, and he is said to have been ready, from the days of his soldiering, to trade in anything. He was sure to succeed and he did succeed. Gradually he began to deal in other things besides leather, and eventually he was the largest trader in the town.

From Water he removed to Merrimac Street. Then he built stores for himself on Main Street. Finally he went back to Merrimac, where he superintended building the Bannister Block, in which he owned two stores himself.

He kept leather and exchanged it for shoes. Then he manufactured shoes himself. In the War of 1812 he sent his own team to Philadelphia with a quantity, making a handsome profit. Perhaps as much as anybody, he is entitled to be called the father of the shoe business. During the second war with Great Britain, it is said, he was offered one hundred thousand dollars for the goods in his store and refused it.

When he got rich, Mr. How bought lands and farmed them himself. He was too busy to oversee his laborers and his great farming operations were carried on at a loss. Then he took other people's money to invest and did not invest it profitably. People had unlimited confidence in him and said he was good "as the bank." When they had money they took it to David How to keep for them. He allowed interest on money which brought no increment to him. He gave twenty-five thousand dollars, it is said, for a great river farm in Bradford.

This conduct of farming operations was useful to others if not to himself. He loved to see the grass grow. He used plaster abundantly and was proud of his green fields, and of the great fatted oxen he sent to market. There are many old orchards of his planting. In old age he has still loved to ride out in his antique chaise to his farm in the West Parish.

Along with his pride in his farms, was his pride in his stores. "You can get anything at David How's," was the proverb of the country side. "You cannot buy a hog-yoke there!" was the retort of one to another. "I'll bet yer on't," was the ready response and they adjourned to try their fortune. "Bring down them hog-yokes from the attic," was the prompt

response to the unwilling buyer, and several different patterns were submitted to his inspection.

The beginning of the end came at last. David How had been rich, as people supposed. He had made his money legitimately; but when he received all the money brought to him and invested it in unproductive property, rather in expensive farming operations, whilst he was expected to pay interest on the principal, the result was certain whenever people should press for their money. Probably there was some sudden call, an estate to be settled, a sum to be made up in haste. When there was delay, a cry went up the country-side that David How had failed. Then there was a panic, attachments and executions.

It is said that there were a hundred suits, with heavy attendant costs. And so the fruits of a long and successful period of prosperity were wasted. But no one lost confidence in the old man himself. People never forgot that he had been liberal, charitable, the friend of the poor in the best sense, by employing them.

Mr. How was the first president of the Merrimack Bank, a large stockholder in the Haverhill Bridge and was generally interested in business enterprises. He never advertised. Probably his reputation was worth more to him than his neighbors' advertisements to them. A moderate Federalist, he represented the town for years in the Legislature. Apparently he was elected when nobody else could get through. He was illiterate, for want of early educational opportunities, but respected for his shrewdness and good qualities. He lived to a great age—almost till the famous monument upon the battle-ground was finished, where he fought—dying in 1842, at eighty-four years.

David How sent one son to college (Isaac Reddington How), who graduated at Harvard in 1870, and was a good classical scholar. He studied law with Hon. George Bliss, of Springfield, and Hon. William Prescott, of Boston. He practiced in Haverhill, and was regarded as a well-read lawyer. He was for some years partner with his brother-in-law, John Varnum. But son was never so unlike father. He was unpractical, was at first indifferent to his profession, then took a positive dislike to it, and would have nothing more to do with its engagements. His tastes led him to literature and speculative thought. He was a socialist before there was any socialism. His sympathies were with all reforms, but he was not sufficiently aggressive to be dangerous. His aspirations were ardent for the progress and happiness of all men. He wrote much, had a good deal of miscellaneous information, was highly upright, and, with a more positive character, would have been an eminent citizen. His two sons—Nathaniel S. Howe, known as Judge Howe, and Francis S. Howe (Harvard, 1852)—both lawyers, are freshly remembered in Haverhill.

Bailey Bartlett was a conspicuous man in Haver-





hill for many years. He was descended from the Bartletts of Newbury. His maternal ancestor was that John Johnson who came to Haverhill to be its blacksmith, and was killed in his old age by the Indians, on the famous Sunday morning in August. John Johnson, oldest child of William Johnson, was born in England in 1633, and came in his mother's arms to Charlestown, Mass., in the following year. He was twenty-six years old when he removed to Haverhill. August 29, 1708, he was in his seventy-sixth year. His third wife was seventy years old, and Ruth Johnson, wife of Thomas Johnson, son of John Johnson, Jr., was with the aged couple, having in her arms her baby, Lydia, one year and six months old. Her husband was absent, and so escaped. Lieutenant Johnson and his wife were shot down at once in the doorway, or just outside of it. Ruth Johnson fled through the house, pursued by an Indian, and in the garden the savage cleft her head with his hatchet. The child escaped observation, apparently. Perhaps it was concealed in the folds of its mother's dress. When search was made after the fight was over it was discovered unharmed, and at the dead mother's breast. Growing up, Lydia married Jeremiah Gile, of Haverhill. She died in Enfield, N. H., at the age of seventy-four years, leaving descendants. Ruth Johnson, the mother, was the child of Daniel Bradley, who, with his wife and two children was killed in the Hannah Duston raid, in 1697, when she herself was carried away a captive, being about nine years old. A descendant of John Johnson writes in the "Genealogical Register:" "In the Haverhill old cemetery, called Pentucket, the writer, some forty years ago, after long search, found and kneeled at Ruth's humble grave. The gray, moss-covered head-stone bore the following simple but touching inscription: 'Ruth ye wife of Thomas Johnson, died Aug. ye 29, 1708, and in ye 21 year of her age. Once wt ye Indians in captivity, after 'twas her lot in their hands to dy.'"

John Johnson's granddaughter, Elizabeth, married Dr. Joshua Bailey, whose daughter, Anna, the wife of Enoch Bartlett, gave her family name to her only child. Bailey Bartlett was born in Haverhill about 1750. His father kept an English goods store and so did the son till 1789. He received only the ordinary common-school education of the times, which was poor enough; but he was very fond of reading, and must have improved his leisure with no common zeal. He must also have been a man of good manner and possessed of tact, for we always hear of him in good company. He loved agriculture and mechanics, and was an early member of the State and County Agricultural Societies.

We hear of him as an early and devoted friend of John Adams, a fellow-boarder with him and with Sam. Adams, when the Declaration was adopted. He heard it proclaimed in Independence Yard, July 14, 1776, and long afterwards used to relate that it was received by the crowd, not with cheers, but mur-

murs. In 1781-84 he represented the town in the State House of Representatives, and declining a reelection, he received the townsmen's thanks for faithful service. In 1789 he was in the State Senate. He was a member of the convention that ratified the Constitution of the United States and of the famous Constitutional Convention of 1820. July 1, 1789, Governor John Hancock presented him the commission of sheriff of Essex County in a very complimentary manner, and he retained that office for the remainder of his life, except for a little more than six months, from December, 1811, to June, 1812, when he was superseded by Governor Gerry, who was himself removed as soon as the people got a chance at him. Even during this interval, the people of Essex County elected Mr. Bartlett treasurer of the county. During his shrievalty of forty years he always enjoyed the reputation of being a faithful, efficient, considerate, charitable and humane officer. He was liberal in hospitality. A warm partisan, he was also a warm friend, capable of magnanimous acts to political opponents. In 1797 he succeeded Judge Bradbury, of Newburyport, as Representative in Congress of Essex North—serving in the last Congress holden at Philadelphia and the first in Washington. He witnessed the contest between Jefferson and Burr for the Presidency. Isaac Parker, after justice and chief justice of the Supreme Court, was a fellow-member and room-mate of Bailly Bartlett. Sheriff Bartlett, at the age of eighty, was in attendance upon the Supreme Court at Salem in 1830, in the famous White murder trials of that year. Excessive fatigue was thought to have hastened the death of both the chief justice and his faithful executive officer. Nineteen days after the death-sentence of Knapp, the sheriff was no more.

It should be added that he was a Federal candidate for elector in 1824, and served in that capacity in 1828. He had fifteen children, of whom eleven survived him and one is living still in Haverhill, who several years since noted the centennial of her father's marriage to Peggy White. One daughter married Consul "Jarvis," of Wethersfield, Vt., noted many years ago as the importer of merino sheep; another married Dr. Rufus Longley, the eminent physician of Haverhill for many years; two daughters were the first and second wives of Hon. Joseph E. Sprague, of Salem, well-known as a politician and writer; Gen. William F. Bartlett, the gallant soldier of the Rebellion, was his grandson.

Bailly Bartlett's life was spent conspicuously before the public, and it would be indeed astonishing if he had entirely "escaped calumny." But all men seem in conspiracy to speak well of him, and certainly his activity in town affairs entitles him to generous treatment in any historical sketch of Haverhill.

Dr. Rufus Longley, just mentioned, entered but not graduate at Harvard College, receiving his medical degree at Dartmouth. He began to prac-



tice medicine in Haverhill in 1812 and was very successful. He was forty-three years a doctor and it is rather remarkable that his very first patient in the town was also his last one. Probably it is not invidious to say that he was more distinguished as a physician than any other who has practiced in the town. His professional engagements did not permit him to be a candidate for political office, but he was nevertheless Federal elector in 1840. He was an active and zealous Federalist and Whig. He held some business positions, as president of the Savings Institution, and he was president of the Merrimac Bank at the time of his death. He was Master of the Merrimac Lodge of Free Masons from 1817 to 1826; and from 1852 to his death, in 1854. Dr. Langley was much respected by his juniors in the profession.

Hon. Israel Bartlett was a cousin of Sheriff Bartlett. He was a goldsmith by trade. He was a member of the Artillery Company, saw some service in the Revolution, was in early life active in military matters and always prompt and faithful in town, office and business. In 1810, and from 1816 to 1821, he served the State in the Senate. He was a worthy man, if not a strong one; for many years a member of the First Church, and taken away at last at the great age of ninety.

General Brickett was regarded as an excellent physician, and his son, Dr. Daniel Brickett, was a highly respectable one. Almost all these men lived on Water Street in their day, still the important one of the town.

Hon. James H. Duncan was son of James Duncan, the merchant, but through his mother a descendant of William White, the pioneer of Haverhill. He was born, and always lived in Haverhill, and for a long period was probably estimated abroad and at home as its first citizen. An extended notice of him will be found in another part of this book. He was always a person of some distinction, entering life under favorable auspices; and when he was admitted to the bar of the Supreme Court of the United States at Washington, no less a person than Daniel Webster stood sponsor for him. He was Representative three years in the General Court, State Senator three and member of Congress from 1848 to 1852. In manners, Mr. Duncan was very courteous. He was always highly esteemed by his fellow-townsmen, and exercised, it is said, an almost unequalled influence as a debater in the often turbulent town-meetings.

The Marshes have been a numerous and highly respectable family, individuals of which deserve particular mention. Some notice has been taken of them in another place. In the public library are several sermons occasioned by the death of Rev. John Marsh, pastor of the First Church in Wethersfield, Ct., who was born in Haverhill, and died in 1829, in the seventy-ninth year of his age and forty-eighth of his ministry.

Moses Atwood was, at the close of the last century,

a large and much respected merchant, who lived in a house just west of the Unitarian meeting-house. His daughter, Harriet, was born there October 10, 1793. When a little more than eighteen years of age she married, here, Rev. Samuel Newell, one of the first missionaries sent out to India by the American Board. As Harriet Newell, she has been an object of interest all over the world to many thousands who never heard the name of her birthplace. Dying in the Isle of France, when little more than a girl, her monument proclaims truly, "her name lives and in all Christian lands is pleading with irresistible eloquence for the heathen." Seventy-five years after the death of Harriet Newell, her memory was strangely revived to the public by the death of her brother, Charles Atwood, born at Haverhill in 1803, and graduated at Yale in 1821, who was admitted to the Boston bar more than sixty years before his death. A learned lawyer in certain specialties, he was also in certain directions an accomplished scholar.

John Varnum, born in Dracut in 1778, is understood to have been of the same family with the eminent Senator and Speaker Varnum, whose portrait has just been presented by Massachusetts to Congress and received with distinguished honor. Graduated at Harvard in 1798, he was a law student with the famous Judge Jeremiah Smith at Exeter and commenced to practice in Haverhill in 1802. He was soon successful. Generous in temper, honorable in practice, and unaffected in manners, he conducted lawsuits without asperity, neither giving nor taking wounds that festered. Though an ardent Federalist, he escaped much of the personal bitterness which characterized the politics of that day. He served in the State Senate in 1811, and in Congress from 1826 to 1830. Isaac R. Howe was his law partner at this time. They had married sisters, daughters of Dr. Nathaniel Saltonstall.

The impression one gets of John Varnum is that though a man of excellent qualities he had not quite enough iron in his composition. Yet he participated in one acrimonious political campaign when Caleb Cushing attempted to defeat him for Congress. The brilliant young aspirant was himself overwhelmingly defeated as a rebuke for his unscrupulous political methods. This was one of the most famous Congressional contests in the famous Essex district. After his Congressional career closed, Mr. Varnum removed to Lowell and thence to Michigan, where he died, 1836.

Leonard White was the son of John White, the merchant, and was born about 1767, dying October, 1849, at eighty-two. "Leonard White, ejus Liber 1782," written in his own beautiful copper-plate, is the legend in his "Thesaurus Linguae Latinae," upon which the eye rests whilst the hand traces this line. He was then fitting for college with Parson Shaw, and William Cranch was one of his fellow-students. They graduated at Harvard in 1787, and John Quincy





Adams came here from France, as he had promised, and joined them. Josiah Quincy, the most venerable public man in Boston in our time, was Leonard White's sag in college.

Peter Eaton, born in the West Parish, and one of the earliest pupils of Phillips Andover Academy, afterwards the judicious and beloved pastor of Boxford, was in the same class. Stephen Peabody Webster, also of the West Parish, the first graduate of Atkinson Academy to enter college, was in the class of 1792. He lived long in Haverhill, N. H. William Smith Shaw, son of the minister and founder of the Boston Athenaeum, graduated in 1798.

Leonard White began life in a brilliant way, socially. He was the son of a rich man and he married the daughter of Tristram Dalton, of Newburyport, granddaughter of "King" Hooper, of Marblehead. But he was himself neither brilliant nor ambitious. He was modest, kindly and faithful in the discharge of every duty. Much regarded by his townsmen, he was frequently honored by public trust. He served largely upon the school committees, was many years town clerk and treasurer, was in the Legislature in 1809, and a member of Congress from 1811 to 1813. Then he became the first cashier of the Merrimac Bank, serving in that position for a quarter of a century. In the parlor of one of his descendants his portrait hangs, looking out with youthful expression and cheery smile.

James C. Merrill and Samuel Merrill, sons of Gyles Merrill, the good parson of the North Parish, fitted together at Phillips Exeter Academy, and graduated in the same class at Harvard in 1807. Both were excellent classical scholars. One was better in Greek; the other in Latin. Both studied law. Samuel practiced in Andover. Many a school-boy remembers his long cloak and grave demeanor. James studied with Varnum, practiced in Boston, and was long judge of the Police Court. To the last he kept up his Greek, and in that department was one of the eminent scholars of New England. Of Judge Stephen Minot and his sons, something is said elsewhere. Chase speaks highly of Theodore Eames, a native, who graduated at Yale in 1809; was a teacher, a successful lawyer in Salem, and afterwards, till his death in 1847, judge of the Police Court in Brooklyn, N. Y.

A word more should be added of Rev. Moses Badger, from an historical point of view. He was son of Joseph Badger, a merchant of Haverhill, and half-brother of General Joseph, of Haverhill and Gilmanston. Moses graduated at Harvard in 1761. The Badgers, according to tradition, owned the farm next to the West farm on Kenoza Avenue, now Winnikeni Towers. Moses Badger abandoned the Puritan faith which brought his ancestors to America, and became an Episcopalian clergyman and an enthusiastic propagandist. From 1767 to 1774, when he became a Loyalist refugee, and subsequently chaplain of Delancey's battalion, in the British army, he was a mis-

sionary of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel. It is reasonably conjectured that he first conducted the services of the Episcopal Church in Haverhill. After the war he was rector of King's Chapel, in Providence, where he died in 1792.

In 1795, Ichabod Tucker joined the Haverhill Fire Society. He was then, and for some years after, a practicing lawyer here; afterwards he removed to Salem and was for many years the much respected clerk of the courts for Essex County.

Jeremiah Pecker, of Haverhill, who graduated at Harvard in 1757, was also a Royalist. After the Revolution he taught school at St. Johns, N. B., where he died in 1809.

Osgood Carleton, born in Haverhill 1742, died in Boston 1816. He served in the army of the Revolution and was an original member of the Society of the Cincinnati. After the war he taught mathematics in Boston, and published many maps—among them one of the State in 1801, by order of the General Court. He made various maps and plans of Boston. Moses Emerson born at Haverhill 1717, graduated from Harvard 1737, was a merchant and seems also to have been a "schoolmaster."

Charles Short, LL.D., who died in New York in 1886, was born in Haverhill in 1821, in the Haseltine house, on Water Street. He graduated at Harvard in 1846, with high honors. He spent his life in teaching at Phillips Academy, Andover, Harvard College, in the Roxbury Latin School and in Philadelphia. He was some years president of Kenyon College, Ohio, and was lastly Professor of the Latin Language and Literature in Columbia College. He had a high reputation as a writer and was without doubt the most distinguished scholar of Haverhill extraction.

Many years ago an excellent historical sketch of Haverhill was printed, now not much known, of which it was rather unfairly said, "that it was all about the Saltonstalls." It would be impossible to write of the town in its earlier history without having something to say of them. The name, indeed, has already frequently occurred in the present description, but only incidentally. Some notice of the family occurring elsewhere, only such brief mention will be made of it here as may be found practicable.

Sir Richard Saltonstall, as is well known, came out with Winthrop in 1630; but the following winter being very severe, and he advanced in age, he returned to England in the following spring. He, however, retained an interest in the welfare of the country, and his famous and admirable letter to Cotton and Wilson, the Boston ministers, exhibits a fine spirit of tolerance, showing at any rate that from the other side of the Atlantic he saw the politics of the Massachusetts colony in larger perspective than perhaps was possible for the men here. Something of the same kind of credit is due to his son Richard, of Ipswich, who, after several long absences in England, finally also died there.



His son Nathaniel was born at Ipswich about 1639. Sibley thinks he prepared for college at Ipswich Grammar School, under the celebrated master Ezekiel Cheever. He married Elizabeth Ward, at Haverhill, December 28, 1663, and from their union are descended all the Saltonstalls of America.

August 29, 1664, in consideration of natural affection and of this marriage, his father conveyed to him about a thousand acres of land in Ipswich and in Chebacco Parish. May 3, 1665, he was admitted freeman. In 1671, and from 1673 to 1678, inclusive, he was "invested with magistratical powers for the year ensuing, in the County of Norfolk." In 1665-68 he was an associate for the County Courts in Norfolk. In October, 1677, the General Court appointed him one of the committee of supervision "of the new brick building at the college." October, 1680, the General Court ordered "that the Essex Regiment should be divided, and Major Nathaniel Saltonstall should have command of the militia in Newbury, Rowley, Bradford, Andover, Topsfield, as also Salisbury, Amesbury and Haverhill."

In February, 1681-82, Edmund Randolph included him among those whom he called a faction in the General Court, and a warrant was accordingly issued against him; although, in 1676, in answer to several heads of inquiry concerning the present state of New England, he had mentioned Saltonstall as among the "most popular and well-principled military men . . . who only wait for an opportunity to express their duty to his Majestie."

In 1666, and 1669 to 1672, Saltonstall had been, by election of the freemen of Haverhill, its deputy to the General Court.

As has been said elsewhere, he was of the Provisional Council formed April 20, 1789. He was judge of the Inferior Court of the Pleas for Essex, and held that place till his death, May 21, 1707, after a half-year's consumptive illness. Samuel Sewall, who gossips about everybody, gives us a little glimpse of him and relates an incident, creditable to both of them. It is well known that he was appointed one of the judges of Oyer and Terminer for the trial of cases of witchcraft; that he did not sit in the witch cases in 1692, and was "very much dissatisfied with the proceedings of it." Upon which one writer has remarked, "Saltonstall left the bench, but ought he not, as the friend of justice, to have been upon it." That would have been heroic, but would have required a good deal of moral courage. Perhaps he had not the martyr's spirit. He at least was superior to the supreme silliness and wickedness of the business, if he did permit his conduct to be modified by prudential considerations. Gurdon Saltonstall was the oldest son of Nathaniel, born at Haverhill, March 27, 1666. He graduated at Cambridge in 1684 with great distinction, being also the first graduate furnished by the town. He became a minister and was ordained pastor of the church at New London, Connecticut. But in 1707 he was

chosen Governor, and continued in that office till his sudden death in 1724. And here one must remark of Governor Saltonstall that if one-half part of the eulogies pronounced upon him are to be taken in earnest, he was certainly the most exalted person this town ever produced—or perhaps any other. It is not intended to reproduce any of these panegyrics here, but they reach all points. He had, they say, imagination, reasoning, eloquence, discrimination, readiness, charming manners, a goodly person. Besides, he was just as good as he was great. He was, moreover, a strong opponent of Episcopacy.

We begin to understand something of the exalted tributes to Governor Saltonstall when we read that he "was an advocate of rigorous ecclesiastical authority, always striving to exalt the ministerial office, to maintain its dignity and to enlarge the power of ecclesiastical bodies, which gave him unbounded popularity among his clerical brethren"—who made public opinion in those days. But with all allowances, he was clearly an accomplished and remarkable man, who impressed himself deeply upon his cotemporaries.

Richard Saltonstall, second son of Nathaniel, graduated in 1695. He always lived at Haverhill, and held civil and military office.

Nathaniel, the youngest son, also graduated in 1695 and was tutor. He is highly spoken of in family tradition, but died young.

Richard, son of Richard last named, was born in 1703 and graduated in 1722. He was colonel in the militia at twenty-three. Drake says he was a scientific and practical farmer. In 1736 he was appointed judge of Superior Court, holding that position till his death, in 1756. It has been necessary to mention his name quite frequently in this narrative. His character was eminently respectable. In 1741, while the court was in session at York, Maine, the celebrated Rev. Samuel Moody, of that place, produced the following:

"Lynde, Dudley, Remington and Saltonstall,  
With Sewall, meeting at the judgment hall,  
Make up a learned, wise and faithful set,  
Of God like judges, by God's counsel met."

Judge Saltonstall had three sons of whom we have had occasion to speak,—Colonel Richard, the Loyalist and refugee; the youngest half-brother Leverett, who died in the British army; and Dr. Nathaniel, descended through his mother from the patriotic Cooke family of Boston. Dr. Saltonstall was an excellent man, who practiced his profession in Haverhill respectably and liberally for many years. He enjoyed the esteem of his fellow-citizens, and when he died in 1815, they voluntarily closed their stores and suspended business. Of Dr. Saltonstall's three sons,—Leverett, Nathaniel and Richard,—the first and last graduated at Harvard. All removed from the town.

Leverett began the practice of law in Haverhill, but soon transferred his office to Salem. He was a dis-





tinguished man and a loyal townsman, but his career is fully sketched elsewhere.

So many of this family have graduated formerly from Harvard whilst residents of Haverhill, that the following circumstance should perhaps be mentioned, as given by Sibley in his "Harvard Graduates": There is no family but the Saltonstalls which has sent seven successive generations to the college—*i. e.*, Nathaniel, graduated 1659; Richard, 1695; Richard, 1722; Nathaniel, 1766; Leverett, 1802; Leverett, 1844; Richard Middlecott, 1881; Henry, son of Sir Richard Saltonstall and uncle of Nathaniel, of Haverhill, made nine generations.

In position, prestige, official station and education, the Saltonstalls were undoubtedly the most distinguished family of the town during the provincial and colonial period and until the Revolution brought forward new men.

Richard Hazzen, of Harvard, 1717, may have been the surveyor and land agent before spoken of.

Edward Barnard, Harvard, 1774, was the son of the minister of the First Parish, and Phineas Adams, 1793, was the son of the minister of the West Parish. Benjamin Greenleaf, the noted teacher and arithmetician, graduated at Dartmouth in 1813. He was born in Haverhill, September 25, 1786.

In 1827, Capt. William Baker, a native of Haverhill, died at Providence. He had been a Continental soldier, and in his old age enjoyed a pension. In 1775, when twenty years old, he worked for one Hall, a distiller, in Cole Lane (now Portland Street), Boston. The British soldiers were in the habit of lounging about this distillery, and Baker heard some of them in convivial conversation talk of the proposed march to Concord. He got the first news of it through the lines to Richard Devens, of Charleston, who started Paul Revere upon the famous ride.

Some of the Haverhill ministers, whom death has removed within a few years, have formerly been very dear to the hearts of their parishioners. Among them may be named again Rev. Dr. Train, of the First Baptist Society, a useful and scholarly man; Rev. Dr. George W. Bosworth (yet unburied while this line is written), of the same; Rev. Benjamin F. Horsford, of the Centre Congregational, to whom a tribute is paid elsewhere; Rev. Raymond H. Seeley, for twenty-five years the accomplished and beloved pastor of the North Congregational Society; Rev. Dr. J. W. Hanson, of the Universalist, war chaplain of the "Sixth" in the War for the Union; Rev. T. T. Munger, and Rev. H. E. Barnes, of the Centre, and many others. Rev. Henry Plummer was a native of Haverhill, born February 22, 1794. He preached, largely in Haverhill, for nearly forty years, without salary or regular compensation, and was believed to have done much good.

## CHAPTER CLXII.

### HAVERHILL—(Continued).

*Episcopacy—Sketches in Brief—The Churches and Their Present Work.*

THE Rev. Charles Arthur Rand, of Trinity Church, who was shipwrecked in the "City of Columbus," was a peculiarly high-minded and devoted man. Rev. Dr. S. C. Thrall, one of the former rectors, is remembered for humor, eccentricity and learning.

From the day when Moses Badger, a young graduate of Harvard, embraced Episcopacy and received ordination, one hundred and twenty-five years ago or so, it would seem that there were occasional efforts to build up an Episcopal Church in Haverhill. Rev. Rana Cossit, licensed by the bishop of London to officiate in New England, March 27, 1773, is registered in Fulham records as incumbent of "Haverhill Parish." But it was only in Partibus. Our fathers, the Saltonstalls, the Badgers and all the rest of them, hated and feared Episcopacy. They regarded it as the source of all their woes, and a constant menace to their institutions. And when all the clergymen of that church, like Badger himself, became loyalists, or "Tories," they doubtless thought their gloomy prognostications justified. But times and men change. Some of the descendants of the Puritans appear to find special consolation in the ritual and services of the church their ancestors abhorred. And Trinity, seems to be highly prosperous and even strongly rooted under the efficient rectorship of Rev. David J. Ayers.

October 25, 1869, the town celebrated the hundredth birth-day of Hon. Moses Wingate. He was much in town office. He had been often on the school committee, twenty years postmaster, four years representative in General Court, and was in the Constitutional Convention of 1820. A Jeffersonian Democrat in youth, he nobly rounded out his career by voting for Abraham Lincoln at ninety-five. He died June 5, 1870, aged one hundred years, seven months and twenty-one days. A Mason for sixty-six years and Master Mason in 1813-14, on his centennial day he saw his son, the Rev. Charles Wingate, made a Mason.

In 1875 Charles Wingate built upon the homestead estate of his father the Episcopal Free Church of St. John, the Evangelist, where he is the officiating clergyman. He and his wife devote their life and strength to the work, and to the charitable and moral efforts they cluster about it. And under whatever discouragements, they yearly in September, with renewed gratitude and serene trustfulness, gather about them the friends of the church and of the poor, to celebrate the "Harvest Home."

Among the names held in regard in the town of men with useful or agreeable qualities, or both, must be named James Gale, Phineas Carleton, Colonel





Charles White, Rufus Slocomb the expressman, Eleazer A. Porter, Charles Porter, Ezekiel Hale, Caleb Hersey, Moses D. George. And doubtless many more equally deserve mention.

Benjamin Emerson and David P. Harmon are said to have been earnest anti-slavery men, and warm, courageous friends of the slave.

Edward G. Frothingham was a native of Newburyport, but had lived here many years, when he died, September 17, 1876, at the age of sixty-five years. He had been assistant assessor of internal revenue, and for nearly thirty years was editor and proprietor of the *Gazette*. Ill health had latterly compelled him to retire from active business, and much curtailed his usefulness.

A person who, for almost fifty years, has been in the way of hearing about Haverhill men would be strangely neglectful were he to omit mention of Alfred Kittredge. In his day he was identified with almost all the progressive movements of the town,—business, moral, social. He was an able man and a decided man, and the community always knew where to find him. At the time of his death, May 1, 1877, he was, at seventy-one, editor and proprietor of the *Haverhill Gazette*. In the conduct of a paper, he clearly exhibited the same qualities which distinguished him in private.

Dr. James R. Nichols, so recently deceased, after a residence of more than fifty years, has been largely known abroad as well as at home. A self-made and self-educated man, he displayed great pertinacity and achieved remarkable success. Prosecuting medical studies under difficulties, he obtained his degree at the Dartmouth Medical College. At Winniken Towers he built up one of the most beautiful estates in New England. As an officer of many educational institutions and business associations, member of the State Board of Agriculture, and director of the Boston and Maine Railroad, his time was much engrossed, and his name became familiar to the public. As an author, he was successful. "Fireside Science" and "Chemistry of the Farm" have been much read, and his last book,—"*Whence? What? Where?*"—received great attention, and has passed through eleven editions.

Haverhill has had an art club, of which little is heard at the present time.

Harrison L. Plummer is a son of the soil, whose "wandering steps" have "inclined" almost everywhere. He paints portraits with as much facility and success in Seville as in Haverhill. Some of his likenesses are certainly remarkable, and the fine portrait of John G. Whittier painted for his schoolmates at Haverhill Academy, of which the Public Library is custodian, will always be evidence of his skill.

Mr. O. R. Fowler, a landscape painter, has put upon canvas scenes made familiar by the muse of Whittier—his home, or "Fernside," as many of his admirers love to call it, the school-house of his boyhood and

"Country Bridge." The East Parish and the Lake region, have furnished inspiration for many artists, some of them distinguished.

A good many years since, Mr. Hazen Morse, an eminent engraver, established his residence in the town, bringing a hospitable family, several members of which were endowed with artistic taste and skill. One of his sons, still living, enjoyed in his youth the companionship and instruction of Washington Allston and other eminent artists, at home and abroad. It has been thought by loving friends that too great sensitiveness alone may have prevented his signal success in that field. He has, however, been well known and esteemed in architecture. Just as the new year was coming in, another of this family died suddenly in Boston. Mr. Henry D. Morse was identified with Haverhill from his early youth. An enthusiastic sportsman, he knew every sunny glade and bosky dell within her borders. Early skillful as an engraver of gold and silver, his artistic instinct and love of beauty in color made him love precious stones, and he is admitted to have possessed a taste in this department almost unrivaled. He began the business of diamond-cutting in America, mastered the secrets of Amsterdam, and became a rival of its methods. Nay more, he invented mechanism which is said to have revolutionized the business. He had, moreover, rare gifts as a painter. Besides, he possessed that brightest jewel, "spotless reputation."

Hon. Charles J. Noyes, Speaker of the Massachusetts House of Representatives, a native of Haverhill, is noted elsewhere. Governor E. F. Noyes, of Ohio, minister to the French Republic during President Hayes' administration, has had intimate relations with the town in former years.

On Kent Street, in 1839, was born Henry Bacon, whose father was then pastor of the First Universalist Church. At first employed in a book store in Boston, afterwards a volunteer in the Thirteenth Massachusetts and wounded, he began his real career when, at twenty-five years, he entered the studio of Cabanel at Paris. In 1866 and the following year, he studied with Edward Frere at Ecouen. His first picture was exhibited at the Salon in 1870.

"Boston Boys and General Gage" was first exhibited at the Salon of 1875, and next year at our Centennial Exhibition; "Franklin at Home," was in the Salon of 1876. Of late years Bacon has shown pictures in a different class—like "Bidding Good Bye" and "The Burial at Sea."

An event well worth pausing an instant to note was the opening of the Academy of Music, on the site of the three Baptist meeting-houses, Merrimac Street, September 17 and 18, 1884, under the management of Mr. James F. West, who has done much to create and gratify taste in the town; whose wife, Mrs. Julia Houston West, has also pleased many thousands, here and elsewhere, by her noble voice and elevated style as a singer. The seating capacity of the academy is



one thousand five hundred. In point of approaches, convenience and management, it is fully up to the deserts of the town, and should be regarded as a piece of exceptional good fortune. Still, the best way to achieve success is to deserve it.

Did space permit, a chapter should be devoted to social influences in Haverhill, and to the circumstances which at one time gave to its society a certain tone and distinction. It is not generally known that during the siege of Boston a number of wealthy and cultivated people, driven out of the city, found shelter here. Entreated kindly and hospitably, they never forgot the kindness they had received, and in later and happier days they revisited the pleasant little village by the Merrimac and reciprocated its hospitalities. Some whom the stress of war drove hither, lingered permanently in the happy valley. But to explain these circumstances would require more of detail than is now permissible.

It is a curious circumstance that in the early days of the Revolution a part of the library of Harvard would appear to have been brought hither for safe keeping, and that it seems to have been at one time suggested to move the college here also.

It will soon be thirty years (May 15, 1888) since the following advertisement appeared in the *Haverhill Gazette*: "John James Ingalls; att'y & counselor at Law; office with J. J. Marsh, Esq., in Duncan's Building, cor. of Water & Bridge Streets." Within a year appeared the following in the same paper, May 13, 1859: "John James Ingalls, Attorney at Law, Lawrence, Kansas." That is twenty-nine years ago, and it will very soon be fourteen years since Mr. Ingalls took his seat in the United States Senate, where he is now serving his third term, and over whose deliberations he presides with admirable dignity. His unquestioned ability is appreciated nowhere more highly than in his own constituency, who regard him with undiminished confidence and increased admiration. Senator Ingalls was born in Middleton, a few miles from Haverhill, December 29, 1833, but his family connections were here; here he passed his youth and early manhood, and here his venerable father and his immediate family reside. No record of his career is needed, and no eulogy of his deeds or merits will be attempted. He simply receives the recognition to which he is fairly entitled, as the most distinguished representative of Haverhill, in public life.

But the most eminent and best-beloved son of Haverhill is also the most eminent and best-beloved son of Essex County—nay, of the Commonwealth and of the nation. It would not be necessary to name him, for this work can go into no household where John Greenleaf Whittier is not enshrined an honored and familiar guest. No Essex County man is so obtuse or so spiritless as not to claim participation in his pure fame. No schoolboy in the land is so ignorant as not to know that on the 17th of September,

1887, a simple and unique testimonial was presented to the aged poet to mark the popular recognition of the fact that eighty years ago he was born at the hill-side foot in the East Parish of Haverhill. To attempt to detail the events of the life of Whittier, or to point out his merits, would be to insult the intelligence of the readers of this page. The reason why the right is claimed to speak of him here is, that his ancestors were among the earliest settlers of the town, and that it holds his birth-place. What his own feeling has been about that spot, let the aged poet delineate for himself: "The old farm-house nestling in its valley, hills stretching off to the south and green meadows to the east; the small stream which came noisily down its ravine, washing the old garden wall, and softly lapping on fallen stones and mossy roots of beeches and hemlocks; the tall sentinel poplars at the gateway; the oak forest, sweeping unbroken to the northern horizon, the grass-grown carriage path, with its rude and crazy bridge—the dear old landscape of my boyhood, lies outstretched before me like a daguerreotype from the picture within which I have borne with me in all my wanderings." The only education which schools gave the farmer's boy he received at Corlis' Hill, and during the brief time he was at the Haverhill Academy. He was an early contributor to the *Haverhill Gazette* and at one time its editor. Nearly sixty years ago he thought to write the history of the town. From infancy he drank in its legends, and, though a sincere Quaker, he understood and would have done justice to the motives and policy of its founders. In 1835 the town sent him to the Legislature—the only position of the kind he ever held. And whilst its Representative, he did a thing without instructions from his constituents, which, at this late day, they will not repudiate. William Lloyd Garrison was lodged in jail in that season to save his life from the fury of a Boston mob. Nevertheless, in the afternoon he had two visitors, one of whom was Greenleaf Whittier, the Haverhill Representative. In 1885, when Whittier's portrait was unveiled, he wrote Major Sheldon: "Few marks of esteem have given me so much satisfaction, proving as it does that I am not without honor among 'mine own people,' where, indeed, I most desire and value it." And on the 16th of January, 1888, he sent in aid of the new City Hospital, of Haverhill, a substantial and welcome recognition of its latest charity.

At the moment of this writing there are suggestions that the old homestead should be purchased and sacredly preserved as the memorial of a gifted poet and noble man. It is fortunately now the property of a gentleman who duly appreciates the honor his title-deed confers upon him. There is no decay there, nothing to offend the taste of those who love and honor the grand, good songster of the people and of liberty. It is the substantial, well-preserved farm-house in which his ancestors were born, lived and died. Were it desirable to place the homestead in a public trust, it





could easily be done. The suggestion was made in Haverhill many years ago, and the last words spoken at the unveiling of his portrait were these: "I used to think that the public-spirited people of Haverhill should unite in an effort to secure the birth-place of Whittier, as it were a shrine for the visiting of his admirers. But it is unnecessary. The East Parish, nay, the whole valley, is his monument!"

Among the social agencies of Haverhill, should, perhaps, be mentioned the Monday Evening Club, organized November, 1860, for intellectual and social purposes, composed of professional and business men. It has celebrated its twenty-fifth anniversary, is still flourishing, and is accredited as the parent of several similar organizations in other cities.

The Fortnightly Club is a junior association, of much the same purpose and scope.

General William F. Bartlett was born at Haverhill, June 6, 1840, and died at Pittsfield, December 17, 1876. His career was brief but brilliant. A member of the junior class at Harvard, his political sympathies and the maturity of his mind can be judged by his writing to a friend, April 17, 1861: "I have stuck up for the South all along." That very day he enlisted in a militia battalion. Afterwards he received a captain's commission in the Twentieth Massachusetts. He was at Ball's Bluff, lost a leg at Fair Oaks, Va., May, 1862; after was colonel of Forty-ninth Massachusetts—part of General Augur's division in Louisiana. At the assault of Port Hudson he was wounded in wrist and heel. Returning to Massachusetts, he organized the Fifty-seventh Regiment, and was wounded at the battle of the Wilderness, taken prisoner, and in the Libby prison at Richmond. He was brigadier-general June 20, 1864, and assigned to the Ninth Corps. After exchange he was breveted major-general. One account says he was also captured at the affair of the Crater. After the war Gen. Bartlett engaged in the iron manufacture at West Stockbridge, Mass., and at Richmond, Va. He considered himself an Independent Republican, and declined the Democratic nomination for Governor of Massachusetts in 1875.

General Bartlett was a young man of spirit, courage and high personal honor. His was the material of which successful soldiers are made. Though indifferent to the cause of the Union at first, he was faithful to his flag even unto death. His high gallantry, desperate wounds, cruel sufferings and early death make him the ideal hero of Massachusetts in the War for the Union.

In studying the history of Haverhill, it is painful to read about the dissensions which rent the parishes in turn. In the First Parish, Dudley Phelps forced the fighting which resulted in his own dismissal, in the separation of eighty-nine of the ninety-one members of the church, and the formation of the Centre Congregational Church. As a consequence, the parish has ever since been Unitarian. High authority

has soberly admitted: "It has been given as the opinion of some candid observers, that the division might not have occurred, and the whole body might have remained substantially orthodox, had the minister of that day been one who could be nominal orthodox and at the same time not constitutionally an internally controversial." And a wise observer added: "There is reason to believe that this is not the only instance in which a New England Unitarian Church originated in a reaction against an utterly angular and pugnacious orthodoxy." The temper in which these reflections are made, at any rate, is admirable.

After the death of the Rev. Phineas Adams, dissension reigned supreme in the West Parish for a long time. There was war between the orthodox element and the opposition; there was quarreling also about funds; but at last there was a truce and the combatants separated. As a consequence, there came an opportunity to hold "Exercises commemorative of the one hundred and fiftieth anniversary of the West Congregational Church," October 22, 1885, published in a neat pamphlet. The "Historical Discourse," by the pastor, Rev. John N. Lowell, and indeed all the proceedings, were very interesting.

In the North Parish there has also been a contest about dogmas and funds, carried on with less bitterness. In the long legal and legislative struggle for control of the parish funds the Congregationalists were defeated, and there also is quiet now. A church was built in 1878, where the Rev. T. E. St. John has preached for a number of years. The non-orthodox or liberal elements are gathered there. The orthodox people have recently dedicated a new chapel.

In the East Parish, dissension began with quarrels about the salary of Rev. Benjamin Parker before the Revolution; it was much aggravated when Mr. Parker took the Tory side, as was alleged, and at last the connection between him and his parish was dissolved. From 1797 to 1826, during the pastorate of Rev. Isaac Tompkins, there was harmony. He was a decided Calvinist, but a well-read, able and prudent man, unexceptionable in demeanor.

The Second Baptist Society was organized in the East Parish in 1821, and the meeting-house was built in 1822, and dedicated February 22, 1823. The semi-centennial was commemorated January 3, 1872.

The Riverside Congregational Church is an offshoot from the Fourth Congregational or old East Parish Church. Rev. Albert Donnell is the acting pastor.

The First Universalist Society was organized March 17, 1823, and built its first meeting-house, in 1825, on Summer Street, then newly opened. The society has had a number of interesting and talented pastors.

The Winter Street Congregational Church had a brilliant but brief history—1839 to 1860.

The Third Baptist Church was organized in 1858, and the Free Will Baptist Church in the same year. The latter, in 1860, purchased the meeting-house of



the Winter Street Congregational Society, recently disbanded.

On the second Sunday in September, 1850, Mass was celebrated in Haverhill by Rev. John T. McDonnell. Previously, the town had received a few visits from the officiating priest at Lawrence. July 4, 1852, a new church was dedicated and a commodious house for the priest was built. In 1859 the church was enlarged.

A sketch of the large and substantial new church, St. James' Catholic, will be found elsewhere. For several years Rev. Father O'Doherty has administered the affairs of this parish with extraordinary ability.

The French population of Haverhill has largely increased of late years. It is stated as two thousand nine hundred and seventy-two, but this is thought to be an overestimate. The Society of St. John the Baptist, organized February 23, 1870, to support sick and bury deceased members, had, in October, 1887, one hundred and fifty-four members.

The Church of St. Joseph, Rev. Fr. Oliver Boucher pastor, has cost about thirty-two thousand dollars, and will seat eleven hundred persons. Schools are conducted in connection with it by the Sisters of Charity from Ottawa, Canada.

The South Christian Church was organized April 9, 1806. Its membership in 1887 was one hundred and four. Rev. John A. Gross has been pastor since June, 1885.

January 22, 1888, the public were invited to attend divine worship at the following churches and places of gathering: Trinity Church, Rev. D. J. Ayres, rector; West Parish Congregational Church, Rev. J. N. Lowell, pastor; First Parish (Unitarian), Rev. T. E. St. John, pastor; Mt. Washington Baptist Church, Rev. L. A. Freeman, pastor; Wesley Church, Rev. C. W. Taylor, pastor; Fourth Congregational Church, East Parish; Church of Christ, G. A. R. Hall; St. James' Catholic Church, Rev. Father O'Doherty, pastor; St. Joseph French Catholic Church, Rev. Father Boucher, pastor; Second Baptist Church, Rocks Village, Rev. O. D. Ordway, pastor; Grace Church, Rev. H. H. French, pastor; Portland Street Church, Rev. Welcome E. Bates, pastor; Salvation Army; Centre Church, Rev. Edwin C. Holman, pastor; First Baptist Church, Rev. W. W. Everts, Jr., pastor; Church of St. John the Evangelist, Rev. Charles Wingate; Riverside Church, Rev. A. Donnell, pastor; South Christian Church; First Spiritualist Society at Unity Hall; J. William Fletcher at Brittain Hall; Advent Christian Church, Walnut Street, G. W. Sederquist, pastor; North Church, Rev. N. Boynton, pastor; Gospel temperance meeting in First M. E. Church, addresses by Rev. Mr. Farley; Summer Street Church, Rev. J. C. Snow, pastor; Winter Street Free Baptist Church, Rev. C. A. Hilton, pastor. The Calvary Baptist Church, on Ashland Street, had just settled a new pastor, Rev. Mr. Roberts, lately from Liberia.

Many things indicate a harmony of feeling and unity for work that would perhaps have been impossible at any previous period in the history of the town. Thus, one reads with admiration, and gratification as well, the story of the organization of a Pastors' Association and of proceedings at its meetings. Taking up the report of a recent Conference, it is found that letters of regret at inability to be present were read from an Episcopal and a Universalist clergyman. A Unitarian minister made a report, which was accepted. It was voted to hold a union meeting on Thanksgiving Day in a Methodist meeting-house. The pastor of that church, a Congregationalist, and a Free-Will Baptist clergyman, were appointed to arrange the order of exercises. And a committee, comprising a Methodist, a Baptist and a Christian clergyman, was appointed to select a subject for the next meeting. If such a meeting could by any possibility have been held fifty years ago, the participants could not have looked their parishioners in the face, any more than the Roman augurs could look at each other without laughing.

It would be neither possible nor profitable to compare the work of different denominations or churches. But it is a pleasant thing for the writer of a general sketch like this to be able to record that from an unprejudiced stand-point, he believes that all the regularly organized churches are doing a good work, especially with the young. And there is need enough of it in this place, as in every other. The pastors of most of the leading churches are young men, highly educated, energetic and emulous in doing good. They have the loftiest stimulus for individual and united Christian endeavor.

What work could be so noble?

There is a burning question which it would be impertinent to discuss in this place—that of parochial schools. The experiment is now being tried in Haverhill upon a large scale. It will be watched with deep interest.

Certainly all who love the common weal will admit that it is no time to lower the standard of the public schools. There is every inducement, on the other hand, to hold it higher and still higher.

It seems to be admitted that the first superintendent of schools in the city has done excellent work, and general regret is expressed that he is about to pass to another scene of labor. May the city be equally fortunate in his successor! His report for 1887 will soon be in the hands of the citizens, and will be much more valuable than any imperfect sketch attempted here, upon insufficient knowledge, would be.

It is gratifying to observe an increasing disposition to do justice to the work of the Catholic clergy with the great congregations over which their influence is so extensive. And the candid admit that this influence is exerted with great efficiency in the cause of temperance and of law and order.







REV. JAMES C. DOHERTY, PASTOR.

ST. JAMES' R. C. CHURCH,  
HAVERHILL, MASS.

F. W. FORD, ARCHT.





## CHAPTER CLXIII.

## HAVERHILL—(Continued).

*History of Haverhill Newspapers—Associations, Charitable and, other—Business and Public Corporations—Manufactures—Position of City.*

GREAT pains had been taken to search the files of Haverhill papers, from the earliest date and wherever accessible. Copious notes were taken, in the hope of presenting a good deal that might be novel and interesting, and of being able finally, somehow, to digest the results of Haverhill journalism in a brief essay. But the limits of our sketch forbid such an effort at the present time.

It has already been mentioned that the first newspaper—the "*Guardian of Freedom*"—appeared September 6, 1793. Chase, in his history, has given a full sketch from that initial point of the changes of control and the vicissitudes of the journals themselves. For the reason already given, we will not attempt at this time to follow him, but refer the curious reader to his chapter upon the subject. Some observations may perhaps be profitably made upon the characters of some of the men connected with these papers at different times.

In 1824 Nathan Burrill sold the printing business and the paper—the *Haverhill Gazette*—to Isaac R. Howe. Mr. Howe edited and published the paper until October, 1826, when he engaged the services of Abijah W. Thayer to edit and superintend the publication.

But during a part of the two years, E. W. Reinhart was the editor and John Varnum was joint proprietor with Mr. Howe. Both Varnum and Howe have, perhaps, already been sufficiently spoken of. Mr. Howe probably purchased the paper in the interest of Varnum, who was at that time in Congress, and who, as we have intimated, had eager young rivals who grudged him the seat. Varnum and Howe were law partners and connected by marriage. One of them was indolent and luxurious, the other somewhat chimerical. However, they were well educated gentlemen and conducted the paper in excellent tone and temper, though hardly with what would now be called enterprise. Reinhardt was a man of considerable ability and wrote good articles. After leaving Haverhill, he drifted about the country, starting a number of papers without much success.

In February, 1827, Mr. Thayer purchased the establishment and changed the name of the paper to the *Essex Gazette*. He was a printer by trade, and had previously superintended the publication of the *Gazette*. He had then lived several years in Maine, also connected with a newspaper there, the *Independent Statesman*, of Portland. After his return to Haverhill, he resided here from October, 1826, to July, 1835. He was active and eager, as well as positive about everything. Mainly through his efforts,

occasional Episcopal services were held between 1833 and 1835. He was a live man. Chase says that "his *Gazette* was the first political paper that ever came out in advocacy of total abstinence from intoxicating liquors, and the second of any kind, either in America or in the world." There were then twenty-nine places where liquor was openly sold, but in five years there was only one where it was supposed to be sold secretly. Mr. Thayer's wife, who died within two or three years, was well known in Haverhill, where she had family connections. She was a very interesting woman, of strong convictions, and sympathized warmly with her husband. "I always," she said not long before her death, "did what I could to uphold my husband in his work." After their removal to Philadelphia, John G. Whittier lived for a time in her family. Mrs. Thayer and her husband took a deep interest in him, and her husband exerted himself in behalf of advanced education for the young farmer. She always spoke of Mr. Whittier with the affectionate interest of an elder sister. One of their sons, a journalist, was some years consul-general in Egypt; another, James B. Thayer, is professor in the Law School at Cambridge.

Mr. Whittier was connected with the *Gazette* from January to July, 1830, and from May 4 to Dec. 17, 1836.

In 1835, Erastus Brooks, who had learned the trade of a printer in Portland, of Mr. Thayer, bought the *Gazette* of him. As is well known, the *Gazette* held high rank under Mr. Thayer's management. Mr. Brooks ultimately went to New York and made a success of the *Express*.

For many years, Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, of Groveland, was connected in some way with the *Gazette*. He was a ready and interesting writer.

In July, 1864, Rev. Thomas G. Farnsworth started the *Essex Banner and Haverhill Advertiser*, as a Democratic weekly paper.

Eben. H. Safford, who was a printer, came to Haverhill about 1834, and soon became connected with the *Banner*. William Taggart was editor and joint proprietor from Jan. 6, 1838, until March 11, 1843, when Mr. Safford took the sole charge and proprietorship of it, so continuing until his death, with the exception of a short interval when James Buchanan was President. The paper was always Democratic. Mr. Safford died Dec. 12, 1887. It is announced that the paper will continue to be carried on by his daughter.

Jan. 1, 1859, Z. E. Stone began to publish the *Tri-weekly Publisher*, an independent paper. In 1859, D. P. Bodfish and A. L. Kimball began to publish a weekly paper called the *Essex County Democrat*.

Chase says that on the 1st of July, 1861, four newspapers were published in the town, with an aggregate circulation of a little over four thousand copies per week. They were the *Haverhill Gazette*, *Essex Banner*, *Tri-weekly Publisher* and *Essex County Democrat*.



The latter was a short-lived publication. The *Tri-weekly Publisher* continued till July, 1878, when its publication ceased. Its list and good-will were sold to the *Bulletin*. In 1861 Mr. E. P. Hill became connected with the paper and so continued for several years. Mr. Hill is a veteran journalist, who, Moore says, in his "Historical Notes on Printing," wrote his first newspaper article for a campaign sheet in New Hampshire in 1846.

Thomas Tileston was connected with the *Merrimac Intelligencer*, in Haverhill, from Nov. 5, 1814, till Jan., 1818. Tileston went to New York, helped to found the great wholesale shoe house of Spofford & Tileston, became a famous merchant and the friend of famous men.

Nathaniel Greene was Isaac Hill's first apprentice in the *New Hampshire Gazette*, at Concord. In 1818 Burrill & Tileston turned over the *Merrimac Intelligencer* to Greene as a gift. It died in a few weeks. In 1818 Greene started the *Essex Patriot*, which he published for three years, when he sold it out. Afterwards, in 1821, he got to the *Boston Statesman*, and success.

The first daily newspaper ever published in Haverhill was the *Daily Bulletin*, established by A. J. Hoyt & Co., July 1, 1871. The following January the *Weekly Bulletin* was issued. The present proprietors, J. L. Mitchell and Warren Hoyt (Mitchell & Hoyt), purchased the property Sept. 17, 1875, since which time its growth has been steady and constant. The *Tri-weekly Publisher* was merged into the *Bulletin* in 1877-78. Since its beginning the paper has from time to time been enlarged from six columns to nine. At the present time its certified circulation is stated at over 2500 copies *per diem*, while the weekly prints over 3000. The paper has always been Republican.

January 7, 1837, the *Essex Gazette* being then published by Dr. Spofford and John H. Harris, the name was changed to the original one—*Haverhill Gazette*. December 28, 1838, Mr. Harris became associate editor as well as proprietor and publisher. July 5, 1839, he bought the interest of Dr. Spofford, who retired. May 1, 1840, Mr. Harris sold the establishment to Wm. E. P. Rodgers, who edited and published the paper till October 1, 1843, when he transferred it to Mr. Edward G. Frothingham. It was successively Whig and Republican. About the year 1854, Mr. E. P. Hill became a contributor to the *Gazette*, so remaining through the Fremont and Lincoln campaigns. In 1869, Mr. Frothingham sold the paper to Alfred Kittedge, who changed it to a semi-weekly, continuing to be its proprietor and editor till his death, May 1, 1877. In the following June it was sold to Dr. F. J. Stevens; and in June, 1878, it was changed from a semi-weekly to a daily and a weekly, but it was not a success. The establishment was sold at auction, April, 1878, to Drs. O. D. Cheney and C. D. Hunking and Mr. Amos W. Downing. In 1879 it was sold to Messrs. Bridgman, Gay & Co., who continued it as a

morning daily and weekly, connecting with it a portion of the time an evening edition in the name of *The Telephone*. In 1882 it was purchased by Messrs. F. A. Howard and A. A. Hill, who soon enlarged it and continued it as an evening daily and weekly until July, 1886, when it was again sold to the Haverhill Gazette Publishing Company—A. A. Hill, publisher and editor, Seth C. Bassett, business manager; with Austin P. Nichols as the other member of the company. It is now continued as an evening two edition daily, and a weekly. The paper has passed through many hands, but it has to-day a larger circulation and more widely extended influence than at any previous period of its history.

The *Haverhill Daily Laborer* is published by the Knights of Labor Co-operative Publishing Company, organized September 3, 1884, with a capital of \$10,000 in shares of \$500. President, Wm. A. Robertson; Manager and Editor, Mr. M. E. Parker. The circulation September 17, 1887, was 2976 and was increasing. Its platform is well-known.

The Haverhill papers were never as well conducted as now, and never as enterprising. It is unfortunate that the people of the town do not feel more local pride in their journals. Perhaps there may have been in the past some circumstances in the history of the papers to excuse indifference, but at present the leading papers seem to be striving to deserve public favor. On the other hand, there is nothing that benefits a town so much as a good newspaper.

The Haverhill Woman Suffrage Association was organized February 7, 1878, with the object of securing "to women full equality of rights, political and legal, with men; and to educate them for the intelligent exercise of the highest duties of citizenship." The present number of members is about seventy-five.

The Female Benevolent Society, now in active operation for about seventy years, continues in a prosperous condition. Its membership is three hundred and thirty-three. Its income is derived from rent, interest on bequests, annual donations from friends, collection at the anniversary and membership dues. It has always enjoyed and deserved the public confidence.

The Old Ladies' Home is a charity which has won its way very modestly and unobtrusively. As far back as 1856 the sum of \$100, net result of a levee held in aid of the poor, was put in savings bank as the beginning of a fund. A society was duly incorporated as the Haverhill Charitable Society. Mrs. Stephen Minot framed the constitution. The original members numbered forty-two, afterwards increased to two hundred. Funds were accumulated by the yearly dues of members, an annual entertainment and occasional lectures.

March 6, 1858, it was voted to change the constitution so that instead of raising funds to aid the deserving poor, the object of the society should be that of providing a home for aged indigent women of Haver-





hill, and afterwards the name was changed to the Old Ladies' Home Association.

For years funds were obtained by a May Fair. In 1874 the association bought a suitable lot of land on Main Street, and in 1876 built a home at a cost of about \$10,000. It was dedicated October 18, 1876. Seven inmates were received the first year, twenty-one up to the present time; eight have died.

The property of the association was reported May 1, 1887, at \$28,960.41, exclusive of the Home. President for 1887, Mrs. John Crowell; Secretary, Mrs. Jones Frankie. Excellent reports are heard of the good management of the Home and the comfort of its inmates.

A brief sketch of the origin of the Elizabeth Home for destitute children is given elsewhere. The society has \$13,381.71 invested in mortgages and savings bank, the Elizabeth Home, a house on Pond Street and one on Sixth Street. In 1885 its receipts were \$1838.23, its expenditures \$1876.39, leaving a deficiency of \$38.16. In 1887 the deficiency was \$130.43. Those who were at the annual levee of the society in 1887 are not likely soon to forget the happy, contented faces of the children, the neatness and comfort of the Home, and the apparent excellent management of the executive committee and resident officers. There are ninety-one life members and two hundred and seventy-nine annual.

February 13, 1882, the city of Haverhill accepted an act of the Legislature, authorizing the city to erect and maintain a hospital, to receive donations therefor, and to elect a board of trustees for its management. Under the will of Hon. E. J. M. Hale, the trustees of his estate placed at the disposal of the trustees of the hospital the sum of \$50,000 and an estate on Kent Street. The latter not being considered suitable for the purposes of a hospital, the trustees were authorized by a decree of the Supreme Judicial Court to sell that land upon certain conditions to fulfill the trust. The trustees were taking steps to that end when James H. Carleton, Esq., tendered them for their purposes the estate known as Midlake Farm on Kenoza Avenue, consisting of a fine house with suitable buildings and seven and a half acres of land, all being entirely eligible. The trustees were thus enabled to fit up a cottage hospital, regarded as sufficient for the needs of the city for many years.

The house, remodeled and supplied with admirable equipments, was dedicated to its work Thursday, December 29, 1887. Many donations were made with the greatest cordiality, to supply whatever was needed for the beneficent charity. Within less than a week a terrible railway accident at Bradford more than taxed the entire resources of the new hospital, causing universal congratulation that it was in readiness with its appliances to alleviate suffering.

This was not the first important gift of Mr. Hale to the city. January 29, 1873, he addressed the mayor and City Council, proposing to found a public library and

convey a specific lot of land on Summer Street for the site of it, with \$30,000 in money, provided an equal sum of money should be raised and paid to the trustees to be appointed within six months, and that the city should bear the current expenses of the library. The conditions were accepted and the money raised. A board of trustees was elected, with Mr. Hale at the head. The building was erected at the cost of \$49,543.32, and is, on the whole, well adapted to the purpose. It was dedicated November 11, 1875, with appropriate exercises. Mr. Hale thereafter gave liberally to the institution in money, books and works of art, and by his will \$50,000 as a fund, the income to be expended in the purchase of books, and a similar amount, the income to be applied to maintenance.

On January 1, 1888, the fund remained unimpaired, whilst the total number of volumes reached nearly 45,000. Edward Capen, the librarian in charge from the beginning, places all frequenters of the library under personal obligations to him by his thoughtfulness and care, and the number availing themselves of its privileges must be constantly increasing.

The Haverhill Aqueduct Company was one of the earliest organized in the country—in 1802. The source of supply was Round Pond. The conduits employed were wooden logs of four-inch bore. These primitive pipes met for many years the demand for water, but the great pressure of one hundred and twenty feet fall from the Pond to Water Street caused frequent breaks in them; so many and expensive repairs were required each year as largely to absorb the receipts. In 1842 the company began replacing the wood with iron pipes. These giving a surer supply, the water-takers rapidly increased. In 1856 the mill rights to draw down the waters of Plug Pond were purchased. Eleven years later application was made to the Legislature for increased powers, which were granted by the act of 1867, as well as the right to take and use the waters of Plug and Kenoza Ponds in addition to Round Pond. Before the end of the year, Plug Pond was connected with the company's service. Hitherto the supply had been wholly by gravitation, but as building was rapidly going forward towards the highlands about the ponds, it was necessary to provide a reservoir and pumping engines to raise water for this section. In 1879, this high service was completed. The same year the Silver Hill Aqueduct, a small plant supplying a few families on the west side from springs, was absorbed.

Four years later application was made to the Legislature for the right to take and use Crystal Lake, on the west side of the city, which was granted in 1886. The company now has a model aqueduct, surpassed by none for the purity of water and abundance of supply. The sources of supply are all fed by springs, and are uncontaminated by any polluted streams flowing into them. By an ingenious system of pipes and water-gates, the service is so sub-divided that it is practically three aqueducts, either of which in emer-



gency can temporarily supply the city, or the three can be united. At present the company has thirty-two miles of street mains. All its departments are splendidly equipped, and its capacity is ample to supply abundant water for a city many times larger than the Haverhill of to-day.

In a cotemporary diary is the following entry: "Haverhill Aqueduct built summer 1803 by Mr. Moses Bricket."

We have observed that in the early history of the town the waters of Plug Pond, flowing through Mill Brook, were largely used as the source of water-power. This continued down to a comparatively late day. The Upper Mill, as it was called, was built by William White, father of James D. White, in 1816. He sold it to Col. John Woodman. It then fell into the hands of the Savings Bank, from which Samuel and James D. White bought it in September, 1846. About 1856 they sold their rights, as above stated, to the Aqueduct Company, who sold the land to Linwood Cemetery, thus extinguishing Mill Brook, with its traditions of mills and manufactures, and the occult meaning of Plug Pond.

There was formerly a pond at the foot of Mill Street, on the south side of Water. A tannery was carried on there by Col. Woodman.

The Haverhill Gas-Light Company was incorporated by act of the Legislature, February 12, 1853. The return for the year ending June 30, 1887, shows total sales of gas 36,924,700 cubic feet, or an average of 98,697 feet per day. The charge to consumers was \$1.80 per 1000 feet. The company supplied 319 street lamps, burning an average of six hours per night, at the price of five cents per night for each lamp. December 15, 1887, the price of gas to consumers was reduced to \$1.70 per 1000 feet, with a discount of twenty cents for payment before the 10th of each month. The company at the latter day supplied 217 street lamps, burning on an average eight hours per night, at a price of 6½ cents per lamp per night (about 119 having been displaced by electric light).

November 1, 1887, the amount of deposit in Haverhill Savings Bank was \$1,355,715. The amount of deposit in the City Five Cent Savings Bank was \$866,629.

The Haverhill Co-operative Savings Bank made its ninth annual report November 1, 1886. The bank was chartered August 20, 1877, and began business September 3, 1877. The shares earned interest at the rate of seven per cent. the previous year (1885), and the same was passed to the credit of the shareholders. The secretary, J. A. Page, wrote some little time since: "The Haverhill Co-operative Savings Bank was the second to receive a charter, and has been very successful during the ten years of its existence. It has at present about six hundred shareholders. In 1882 the assets of the bank were only \$30,000. Now they are very near \$100,000, nearly all invested in dwelling-houses of moderate cost. The borrowers are

generally persons of small or moderate incomes, who could not otherwise build houses and pay for them. The demands for loans is constant and increasing.

"A second co-operative bank has just started in Haverhill. Our bank has sustained no losses."

December 7, 1787, the capital stock of the National Banks in Haverhill was as follows: First National \$300,000; Haverhill National, \$200,000; Essex National, \$100,000; Merrimack National, \$240,000; Second National, \$150,000.

In the summer of 1877 the Haverhill and Groveland Street Railway was built from the Boston and Maine station in Haverhill to the Groveland end of Groveland Bridge, three miles, and was equipped with four cars and eight horses, carrying daily about four hundred passengers. Its capital stock was \$24,000.

In September, 1884, it was extended one mile in Groveland to Savaryville, and its capital stock was increased to \$32,000. In the summer of 1886 it was extended from Savaryville to West Newbury, Haverhill to Bradford, and in various parts of Haverhill, increasing its tracks to about fourteen miles. The company now run thirty-eight cars and one hundred and five horses, and carry daily about twenty-five hundred people. The capital stock is \$144,000.

The capital invested in the manufacture of wool and fur hats in Haverhill and Bradford, is stated by a competent authority to be \$500,000; employing some 400 persons; and manufacturing daily between four and five hundred dozen. The value of the annual production is stated at from \$850,000 to \$1,000,000.

Stevens & Co., at their Haverhill mill, have ten sets woolen machinery; their product is 800,000 yards a year of ladies' dress goods. They consume 500,000 pounds of wool; employ 150 hands; and their payroll is \$5000 per month.

This mill is the successor of mills formerly carried on by the Hales upon the same spot at Little River. Ezekiel Hale first made cotton goods there about the beginning of the century. In 1804, he established a woolen factory there. His son, Ezekiel, succeeded him, and in due course, his son, the late E. J. M. Hale, became associated with him.

We may remark that the early trades or manufactures carried on in the town, and to which it gave some encouragement, do not seem to have taken any permanent foothold. The rum distilleries, the growth of which here, at one time excited the animadversion of Boston, long since disappeared, partly, at least, owing to an awakened moral sentiment on the subject. Ship-building is gone. The hat and the shoe manufacture, which struggled up of themselves, alone seem to have had sufficient vitality to survive competition.

Chase thinks hats were manufactured to a considerable extent one hundred years ago. He believes that Jonathan Webster may have made hats as early as 1747. The Appletons, for several generations, carried on the business at the corner of Main Street and Mechanics' Court.





One Ladd had a shop a long time before 1800, next south of the City Hall. Nathan Webster, who learned the trade of his brother, Jonathan, who had learned it of Stephen Webster, carried on the business on quite a respectable scale, in 1815, at the southeast corner of Moore and Water. At first, it is true, he only had two apprentices, but afterwards he employed six to eight, with more than twenty journeymen and twenty girls. In 1835 Nathan Webster went into partnership with his brother David, who had also manufactured since 1818.

Isaac How, brother of David How, was the first hat manufacturer in the West Parish, near the foot of Scotland Hill. His sons, Phineas and Isaac, carried on the business quite largely for many years. Phineas had a hat factory at the outlet of Creek Pond. Isaac How, Jr., about 1835, made forty to fifty dozen per day.

In 1830-31 Mirick wrote that hats were manufactured to the amount of one hundred thousand dollars annually. Isaac How's son-in-law, John Ayer, learned the trade and carried on business for himself, near Greenleaf's Corner. His son-in-law, Jonathan Crowell, succeeded him in business finally at Ayer's village, to which John Ayer had removed. Crowell continued the business for more than forty years, till he died in 1860. He was then manufacturing, under the style of Jonathan Crowell & Co., about eight hundred dozen hats a month, worth about six dollars and a half per dozen, and employing about fifty persons.

In 1860 there were several firms carrying on the manufacture at Ayer's village. Isaac How and others in the West Parish formerly made wool hats, which they carried for sale to Boston, Salem and other places, on horseback or in boxes slung below the axles of a pair of wheels with shafts attached. Ladd, Appleton and Marsh, in the main village, made hats of the fur of the beaver, and ordinary hats of the raccoon and muskrat. The best fur hats would cost about seven dollars. A man bought one when he got married and expected it to last him the remainder of his life. Then there were cotton plush hats with pasteboard bodies, and "napped" hats. Finally the Hows and Mitchells moved into the village of Haverhill, where Greenough, Cook & Co. had begun manufacturing about 1830. Others followed and gradually the business died out at Ayer's village and in the West Parish. The Haverhill Hat Company and William B. Thom & Co. have carried on the business on a large scale for a long time. The business is very active in town at present.

The last vessels built in the town were by John C. Tilton, in his yard on River Street, above the railroad bridge. The keels were laid in 1874, and the vessels launched in 1875. They were the "Lucy Jane" and "Eliza Ann."

Chase says the first shoemaker in town was Andrew Greeley; but he mentions no fact to sustain the assertion, which he must base upon tradition, though he

does not even say that. Other writers have had a good deal to say, by way of joke and otherwise, because the town would not admit William Thompson and Peter Patie to settle and become freemen. Of course the fact of their being shoemakers was not the cause of their exclusion, but the fear that they would become paupers. They had no property, and were thought to be "tramp" shoemakers. It is possible the fathers did not see the necessity of encouraging shoemakers so directly as blacksmiths or millwrights. The latter were obliged to have a plant. The shoemakers could "whip the stump," viz., go around from farm-house to farm-house, with their kit, and stop long enough to make up the boys' shoes for a year to come. They were rovers like John Keezar, coming home from a cobbling sojourn in Amesbury, at dawn on that mild Sunday morning when the French and Indians swooped down.

The farmer, too, in the beginning, made his own shoes or certainly mended them. He kept his own little bits of leather and was a jack at all trades. A few years ago a very rich farmer died at a great age in another town of the State, who had never worn shoes not of his own making; he bore a well-known colonial name and had always lived after the ways of his fathers. Gradually the tramping cobblers settled down and had shops and kept a little leather, "living like other folks." Then the traders and all the people carried on business by barter. The traders took calf skins and others; what so easy as to sell these to the shoemaker, taking pay in shoes? and when he made a quantity he would take his pay "out of the shop;" it was an enlargement of trade. In this way, Moses Gale came to advertise in August, 1795, that he had "several thousand" fresh and dry hides which he would exchange for shoes, giving credit for the hides till the shoes could be made. The shop-keeper could sell a few from his own place of business, and send a few to Salem and Boston; but how to find a channel to ship off more? Moses and James Atwood kept a store and took in shoes. During the War of 1812 they sent a wagon-load of shoes to Philadelphia and found it paid very well. Chase says Mr. Atwood afterwards removed to Philadelphia and started the first wholesale shoe house there. Later, others followed and made money, and others went to other cities and did the like. Some have it that David How made the first foreign venture. If there was anything left in him of the unlicensed sutler of 1776, it would not take him long to discover that there was money in it.

Aroet M. Hatch was in the shoe business here in 1812. He had married a sister of Paul Spofford, of Georgetown. The two went up to Salem, New Hampshire, and began to make shoes. After a year, or about 1817, they came back to Haverhill, and manufactured as Hatch & Spofford, in the Bannister Block.

The town got into ladies' foot-wear trade early. In 1814, Chase & Cogswell sold "ladies' black morocco





shoes, with heels; ladies' colored morocco shoes, with heels; and ladies' colored and black sandals, with heels." Amos Chase sold roan ties in 1810, made by himself.

Phineas Webster is considered to have been about the first to manufacture shoes by the wholesale and do nothing else. This was not far from 1815. At first he exchanged his shoes with Danvers tanners and carriers for morocco and leather. They packed them in boxes, barrels, tea-chests, hogsheds, and shipped them on the little coasting vessels to Philadelphia and Baltimore, where they were exchanged for produce. Arrived there, where the people soon learned the kind of goods brought, the skipper would hoist up a barrel of shoes and dicker them off. If he were a "dreffil smart Yankee," he soon, doubtless, discovered some local trader whom he made his agent. Distribution was the great problem.

Samuel Chase began to manufacture here about 1815; Warner Whittier, at least as early as 1818, manufactured extensively and was followed in the business by his son, the present Warner R. Whittier.

Thomas Tileston, the printer, as we have said, went to New York as early as 1818, where, in connection with Paul Spofford, he started a commission business, and received consignments of Haverhill-made boots and shoes. It put them in the way of fortune and was of great value to the Haverhill makers. Thirty years after, Spofford & Tileston sent out into the West young men whom they had educated in business and who made fortunes in their turn by selling Haverhill shoes, and engaging themselves as pioneers of manufacturing in that then new region.

In 1817 it is said there were probably two hundred shoemakers in town. Daniel Hobson, in 1828, made "Hobson's pumps."

In March, 1832, there were twenty-eight shoe manufacturers in the town, of whom at least sixteen kept "English and West India goods." There was profit on those, if not on the shoes—probably on both.

Jesse Harding was the first morocco dresser in the town.

Mirick says that in 1830 a few houses manufactured over one million dollars. He adds that the combs manufactured in 1831 would exceed thirty thousand dollars, and employed about one hundred persons.

Leather gloves had been made quite extensively a few years before, and about thirty had been employed in making plated ware for saddles. The first "turned" shoes were made by a Philadelphia "tramping jour," who worked long enough in Charlestown for James Gardner, of Bradford, to give other people facilities of finding out the art, which made a great sensation in the trade.

Rufus Sloccomb began to run a two-horse "baggage waggon" in 1818, between Haverhill and Boston, to carry freight. One of the writers says that the tythingmen, stopping him for driving on the Sabbath

(and there was indeed a great crusade on that subject at this time and many county meetings), asked him what his name was. "My name," said Rufus, "is Slowcomb and fast-go," and with that, whipping up his horses, he was out of sight in a moment. He did not use horses altogether, however. One day in the spring of 1836 he had full loads out of town for forty-one horses and eight oxen. In that year he made one hundred and fourteen trips, carrying 26,955 cases shoes.

In March, 1837, there were forty-two shoe manufacturers and fourteen tanners and leather dealers. But the financial panic of that year was a disastrous blow to the shoe interest, from which it did not recover till the discovery of gold in California.

In 1857, there were more than ninety shoe manufactories, eighty-two of which were located in the central village. Besides, there were eighteen inner-sole and stiffening manufactories. In 1859 the number of manufactories in the village was ninety. In 1860, the assessors returned ninety-eight shoe factories, and two boot and shoe; of these, nine were at Ayer's village.

Not counting those carried in passenger trains, the books of the Boston and Maine show that in 1860 it carried 67,856 cases by freight train; 93,856 cases was the estimate for the total shipment of that year, the value of which was estimated at \$3,754,240. In 1875 there were not far from 150,000 cases. The arrest of trade and collapse of Southern credit, at the beginning of the war, prostrated many old manufacturers.

The only general strike ever occurring here was in 1860, of about six hundred operators, but it did not continue long.

The first steam mill was built by David P. Harmon and Sewell E. Jewett, located near the line of the Boston and Maine Railroad.

After enterprising young men began to go West as jobbers of shoes, they speedily demanded to have their shoes sent to them in better shape—that is, sorted and sized—and that was a change in the mode of distribution which the Haverhill manufacturers had to learn and did learn.

As early as 1843, they made a speciality of slippers, mostly heelless and made by hand; also, of pumps, very popular in the South. In 1855 fancy-colored shoes were in demand. From 1858 on, Haverhill has annually made millions of pairs of fancy heeled slippers, low-cut shoes and ladies' boots.

"Previous to 1857 the uppers were stitched by hand—mostly by the wives and daughters of the country shoemakers—and at their homes. But in that year the Singer sewing-machine was introduced into Haverhill. The first cost four hundred dollars and was used in the shop of Moses How."

In 1859 came the Blake sewing-machine, improved by McKay. "At last, ten machines were pronounced good and sent out. Nine of these were moderately



successful, and of these nine, Mr. Moses How, of Haverhill, had one, the first brought to this place."

Long before the introduction of machinery, Haverhill was known almost exclusively by its light goods, women's shoes, and men's and women's slippers.

January, 1887, there were one hundred and seventy shoe manufacturing houses in Haverhill.

Haverhill is one of the eleven cities in the United States producing to the value of \$3,000,000 and upwards of boots and shoes.

Connected with the various departments of the shoe industry in this town in 1887, there were—shoe contractors, 11; shoe crimping, 1; findings and supplies, 5; manufacturers, 166; shoe nail and tack makers, 2; shoe pattern makers, 6; shoe stitchers, 38; shoe stock (prepared), 2; shoe tool manufacturers, 3; slipper and shoe trimmings, 6; soles, tops and stiffenings, 42; paper box manufacturers, 4; cut sole leather, 4; heel contractors, 27; heel manufacturers, 36; leather board, 2; leather dealers, 12; leather remnants, 2; machine button-hole makers, 6; machines (boots and shoes), 14; blocking edges, 1.

"In the shoe factory," observes Colonel Carroll D. Wright, in his report on the factory system of the United States, "is to be seen the perfect adaptation of the manufacture of goods, by perfect, harmonious processes."

One or two things seem to be admitted about the shoe business of Haverhill "in the trade"—first, that in the classes of goods she chooses to produce and put upon the market, she is unsurpassed for taste and finish; second, that in Washington and adjoining streets she has the finest shoe quarter and factories to be found in the country.

The shipment of shoes from the city for 1882 was 158,412 cases; 1883, 194,871; 1884, 194,751; 1885, 226,358; 1886, 232,217; 1887, 228,269. Falling off for 1887, 3946 cases; but, owing to the manner of packing, it is more seeming than real.

When, April 19, 1861, the Hale Guards, Company G, Captain C. P. Messer, were hastily summoned to go to the front, as they had already pledged themselves to do, they were escorted to the common and to the station by the surviving members of the old Haverhill Light Infantry. Company G was in the first battle of Bull Run, where one Haverhill man, Hiram S. Collins, was killed; James A. Shaw was wounded, and taken prisoner at the same time.

May 2d, a meeting was called at Music Hall, to make provision for the families of volunteers. A resolution offered by Hon. Alfred Kittredge, proposing to raise ten thousand dollars for the families of volunteers, was passed, and Alfred Kittredge, J. B. Swett, Levi Taylor and seven others, were appointed a committee to provide for them. Other appropriate resolutions were adopted.

April 22, 1861, the ladies organized a Relief Society in the chapel of the North Congregational Church. May 3d it adopted articles of association, and took the

name of the "Soldiers' Relief Society of Haverhill and Bradford." In this work the ladies of the parishes and Ayer's village joined with hearty goodwill. Mrs. E. P. Hill held the position of president until the last year of the war, when Mrs. Daniel Harman became her successor.

The first work of the society was, to supply clothing and comforts to the families of the volunteers. First, were the Hale Guards, Captain C. P. Messer; next, Company D, Captain A. J. How; Company F, captain Luther Day; Company E, Captain McNamara. They supplied Captain Day's company with a full uniform, and two other companies with an undress uniform.

After Antietam, succor was extended to Company G, Captain Gibson; also to Companies "F" and "G" of the Fiftieth. Captains Samuel W. Duncan and Geo. W. Edwards; to Captain E. F. Tompkins' company, of the Seventeenth, and Captain Boynton's, of the Sixtieth. Contributions were made to the "Sanitary Commission," the New England Rooms, New York; the Cooper Shop Hospital, Philadelphia; the Massachusetts Soldiers' Relief Society, at Washington.

In 1862 bounties were voted.

Early in July, 1862, intelligence was received of the death of Major Henry Jackson How, before Richmond. The town adopted resolutions, and requested his battle sword to be placed near the speaker's stand, and inscribed the "Battle Sword of Henry Jackson How, who fell in front of Richmond while defending the Constitution and Flag of his country." Major How fell at the battle of Glendale, before Richmond, June 30, 1862. "Major How," wrote General Schouler, "served in the Twenty-second Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers, and was one of the bravest and most promising of our young officers. He graduated at Harvard College, and was killed at Glendale, before Richmond, June 30, 1862, nobly facing the foe."

The subject of a Soldiers' Monument was early agitated. James H. Carleton, J. V. Smiley, E. T. Ingalls, O. H. Roberts, J. P. Gilmore, Alfred Kittredge and E. P. Hill, were members of the committee upon the subject. On the place of location, James H. Duncan, William Taggart and Caleb Hersey were the committee. In March, 1868, a plan was reported, to cost \$6000 for monument and \$1000 for inclosing the same, which was accepted, and James H. Carleton, J. V. Smiley, C. P. Messer, Henry T. Fitts, J. K. Jenness and D. Smith Kimball were constituted the building committee. A contract was made with Charles H. Weeks, of Haverhill, as sculptor and architect.

One hundred and eighty-six names are upon the monument, with room for fifty more. The monument was dedicated July 5, 1869, the address being delivered by Hon. George B. Loring, of Salem.

The number of men raised by Haverhill was about 1300, giving a surplus of eighty-five in excess of all claims. Seventy-three were commissioned officers





embracing six field officers, five of whom were credited to its quota and one to Boston, as follows: General William F. Bartlett, noticed elsewhere. The other five were, Colonel Wm. B. Greene, of the First Heavy Artillery; Colonel Jones Frankle, of the Second Massachusetts Heavy Artillery (this officer was captain in First Heavy Artillery Regiment, major in the Seventeenth Regiment, and came out of the war brigadier-general of volunteers by brevet); Colonel Charles P. Messer, of the Fiftieth Regiment; Major Luther Day, of the Seventeenth Regiment; Major Andrew Jackson How, of the Nineteenth Regiment (who fell before Richmond); Lieutenant-Colonel Henry Splaine, of the Seventeenth Regiment.

The town raised and expended to carry on the war, exclusive of State aid, \$118,135.49.

The total amount raised and paid out for State aid, refunded by the Commonwealth, was \$114,542.24.

May 15, 1869, the town accepted the city charter, by a vote of 671 yeas to 141 nays. September 1, 1869, the town accepted an act of the Legislature to unite Bradford with Haverhill in a city by a vote of 212 yeas to 67 nays. But Bradford voted no.

Monday, January 3, 1870, Warner R. Whittier, the first mayor-elect, took the oath of office, administered by Alfred Kittredge, justice of the peace.

David B. Jenney was unanimously elected city clerk, and has been unanimously re-elected at every successive election since that time.

Mayor Whittier was re-elected in 1871, and his successors have been: Levi Taylor, in 1872, who was re-elected but resigned; J. V. Smiley, in 1873 and 1874; Alpheus Currier, in 1875; Joseph K. Jenness, in 1876 and 1877; Nathan S. Kimball, in 1878 and 1879; Charles Shapleigh, in 1880 and 1881; Moses How, in 1882 and 1883; Calvin H. Weeks, in 1884; Joseph H. Sheldon, in 1885; Calvin H. Weeks, in 1886; Joseph H. Sheldon, in 1887; and George H. Carleton, in 1888.

January 22, 1743, the house of Dr. H. Brown, at Holt's Rocks, was burned, and his daughter, twenty-three years old and a son of Dr. Currier, perished.

Sunday, April 16, 1775, an alarming fire swept away all the west side of Main Street, from the present Court Street to White's corner on Merrimac Street. Seventeen buildings were burned, embracing a brick tavern owned by John White, stores of Deacon Joseph Dodge and James Duncan, and a distillery. October, 1827, the house and barn of Daniel Appleton and the barn of Hon. James H. Duncan, on Main, not far from Court Street, were destroyed by fire.

On the morning of January 1, 1847, the meeting-house of the First Parish was entirely destroyed.

Sunday morning, November 16, 1873, a fire broke out in Washburn Block, near Washington Square, extending to the brick shoe manufactories on Washington Street. By the energy of the Fire Department and with prompt aid from Lawrence it was at last subdued.

Thirty-five business firms were burned out, and the loss was estimated at \$150,000. Two men—Mr. Amos Heath, of Bradford, and Mr. Amos George, of Haverhill—lost their lives in trying to save their property. This was the most important fire in the annals of Haverhill, until February 17, 1882, when, just before midnight, a fire broke out in a wooden block on the north side of Washington Street. Valuable aid was received from Newburyport and Lawrence and the fire was at last stayed, but not until it had destroyed property estimated at more than \$1,080,000. Joseph St. Germain, a fireman, was killed by a falling chimney. Another person, named Whittier, was seriously injured and long disabled, but ultimately recovered. Apprehensions were expressed by a few that this very serious disaster had so crippled the town that it would have great difficulty in recovering from the shock. This, however, was not the prevailing expression, which was one of courage and even buoyancy. Business soon became active again, and the object of the sufferers was to resume operations in the old localities as soon as possible. This was largely accomplished before the first anniversary of the fire, and in a most satisfactory manner. Beautiful and substantial buildings had been erected in place of those destroyed, and the anniversary of the outbreak was celebrated by a spirited banquet at the Eagle House. Through the exhibition of pluck and energy made by the sufferers, they won the sympathy of the entire business community of the country. The fire, distressing as it seemed, is generally admitted to have been a blessing in disguise. July 4, 1876, the National Centennial Anniversary was observed with considerable display and much enthusiasm. In the afternoon a very appropriate and valuable oration was delivered by Dr. John Crowell before the city government and the public generally, at the City Hall.

The limits assigned to this sketch have already been over-passed. It is as well, perhaps, that space does not allow recapitulation of recent events, which are apt to seem disproportionately large, till the lapse of time has thrown them into proper perspective. Yet the writer regrets very much not to be able to use material placed at his disposal with friendly courtesy. He trusts not to seem indifferent to politeness, especially of those who furnished valuable information about the Masonic, Odd Fellows and other charitable and friendly organizations; as Major How Post 47, G. A. R. One word may be pardoned in reference to the work which has been done in the past towards elucidating the history of Haverhill.

In 1816, Leverett Saltonstall, born in Haverhill, and much attached to the place of his nativity, wrote an excellent sketch, which was published in the proceedings of the Massachusetts Historical Society. It is not otherwise accessible to the public. It was limited in scope, but made an excellent beginning.

In March, 1830, John G. Whittier, then conducting the *Essex Gazette*, and a young man of twenty-



three, issued proposals to publish a history of Haverhill, in one volume of two hundred pages, duodecimo; price, eighty-seven and one-half cents a copy. He undoubtedly found that the sacrifice of time and of money involved in the scheme would be too great, and so abandoned the project. He, however, with characteristic kindness, placed the material which he had collected at the disposal of B. L. Mirick, a young man employed in the store of Mr. John Dow, as clerk, who, in June, 1831, issued a prospectus for a history of the town. It appeared in March, 1832, at the price of one dollar; although it bears the marks of haste, it is in the main a spirited narrative and very creditable to the compiler. The style is sometimes too florid. Chase's book (1861), notwithstanding some inaccuracies, is a valuable one. He was out of health, and would doubtless have corrected certain errors himself, had he lived. His book will always be an indispensable basis for work in the same direction. But town histories require infinite patience about detail, and perennial revising. Although seeming to himself to have exercised reasonable caution, the writer of this sketch, is perfectly aware that he may have committed egregious blunders, for which he asks pardon in advance. E. P. Hill, a few years since, wrote valuable sketches of this and neighboring towns.

The two hundred and fiftieth anniversary of the settlement of Haverhill will soon be here, (1890). Perhaps some self-sacrificing person will mark the auspicious occasion by a careful and complete history.

The following is substantially a copy of the soldiers' record of the town of Haverhill, kept by the town clerks, in accordance with law; corrected by comparison with the military records and other sources:

Complete record of the name of all the soldiers and officers in the military service and of all the seamen and officers in the naval service of the United States, from Haverhill, during the Rebellion, begun in 1861, together with authentic facts relating to the military or naval career of each soldier, seaman and officer—made out, with additions from time to time, in conformity with the statutes of the Commonwealth, approved March 7, 1860, and April 29, 1863.

## VOLUME I.

"This record comprises volumes as follows:

It is commenced by the undersigned (city or town) clerk, in the month of December, 1863—appointed clerk March, 1861, ceased March 7, 1861.

A. B. JAKES.

## COPIES OF TWO ACTS.

An act to preserve a record of our soldiers and officers, approved March 7, 1863.

An act in addition to (as above), approved April 29, 1863.

First corps enlisted for three months was Company D, Fifth Regiment, enlisted April 16, 1861; mustered May 1, 1861; Carlos P. Messer, captain.

## LIST OF THREE MONTHS' MEN.

Messer, Carlos P., capt., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Dean, George J., 1st lieut., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Smith, Daniel F., 2d lieut., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Palmer, Charles H. P., 3d lieut., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Salter, Thomas T., 4th lieut., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Thompson, John J., 1st sergt., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Edwards, George W., 2d sergt., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Palmer, James M., 3d sergt., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Mills, John F., 4th sergt., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Salter, Wm., 1st corp., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Wallace, George W., 2d corp., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861; slightly wounded at the battle of Bull Run; seized and upheld the flag with a shout when color-bearer fell dead.  
 Hoyt, Van Buren, 3d corp., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861; Q.-M. Dept. May 20 to July 3, 1861.  
 Haynes, Daniel J., 4th corp., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Sawyer, Leonard, Jr., musc., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Wight, Orlando S., musc. and priv., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

## Privates.

Beckford, Eben B., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Bowen, Charles, enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Bromley, Lyman P., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Bromley, Orrin B., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Burnham, Charles, enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; Q.-M. Dept. June 1 to July 3, 1861; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Caswell, Joseph A., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Coles, Thomas J., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Collins, Hiram S., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; killed at Bull Run July 21, 1861.  
 Collins, Enos, enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Colby, John, Jr., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; disch. June 2, 1861, disability.  
 Cook, Wm. P., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; disch. June 2, 1861, disability.  
 Davis, Stephen H., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Dawson, Frank, enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Dodge, Orrison J., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Edwards, Nathl. M., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Emerson, Edward H., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Fogg, George E. F., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Foster, George B., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Fowler, Samuel W., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Frost, James, enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Gould, Albert H., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Gould, Royal D., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Greenleaf, Matthew N., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Gushee, Franklin A., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Hatch, Joshua J., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.





Hersom, Greenleaf, enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Holmes, Varnum E., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. C, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Jackson, Hiram H., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Judge, Charles W., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Kief, Thomas, enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Kiernan, Frank T., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; disch. June 2, 1861, disability.  
 Knowles, Charles K., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Livingston, Murray V., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Meserve, Ebenezer, enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Mills, Wm. H., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Murch, Charles, enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Noyes, Abiel S., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Osgood, Joseph H., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Parmelee, Henry H., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Pecker, John B., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Phillips, Leonard W., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Philbrook, David T., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Ray, Albert F., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Richards, Fitz J., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Shaw, James A., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; wd. and taken pris. at Bull Run; paroled and exchanged May 27, 1862.  
 Shute, Alonzo M., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Smith, Henry J., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Smith, Nahum F., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Stanley, Harrison, enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Steele, Wm. H., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Simpson, John F., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Stowe, Andrew F., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Taylor, Henry, enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Tuttle, Hiram O., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.  
 Wyman, George P., enl. April 16, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Of these, thirty-seven re-enlisted in different organizations.

Adams, John, private, enl. June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. K, 11th Regt.  
 Arnold, S. P., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.  
 Austin, George O., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.; must. out corp. Jan. 8, 1864.  
 Austin, John, private, enl. Aug. 2, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt.  
 Arnold, Thomas F., private, enl. July 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.  
 Armstrong, Wm. J., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.  
 Allen, Elbridge B., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. July 14, 1862.  
 Ayer, Otis S., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Oct. 27, 1861, disability.

Adams, Wm. H. H., private, enl. Aug. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; died Nov. 23, 1862, Philadelphia, Pa.  
 Allbright, Henry, private, enl. Aug. 21, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; taken pris. at Ball's Bluff; disch. Feb. 3, 1863.  
 Abbott, James H., private, enl. Sept. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Sept. Oct. 5, 1861.  
 Appleton, Samuel R., private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out Oct. 17, 1864.  
 Adams, John Q., muc., enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. April 22, 1864, disability.  
 Ayer, Edmund B., sergt., enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Feb. 6, 1865, disability.  
 Adams, Stephen C., sergt., enl. Aug. 3, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862; died at Spring Hospital, Md., Sept. 26, 1862.  
 Allen, James M., sergt., enl. Sept. 19, 1864, 1 yr., 29th Co. Unattached H. A.; must. out at exp. of term.  
 Austin, Elmer M., enl. March 17, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. I, 59th Regt.; missing in action at Shady Grove, Va., June 3, 1864.  
 Austin, John Gage, enl. Feb. 24, 1864, 3 yrs., 16th Batt.; must. out June 27, 1865.  
 Abbott, Wm. W., enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.  
 Atwood, Bradley, private, enl. Aug. 20, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.  
 Aldrich, Ambrose D., private, enl. Aug. 26, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.  
 Abbott, Parker P., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.  
 Aldrich, John W., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.  
 Anderson, Alfred W., private, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.  
 Anderson, Frank, private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.  
 Burdham, Wingate, private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., 1st H. A.; must. out July 8, 1864; re-enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Barry, Joseph, private, enl. June 11, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 9th Regt.; wd. July 1, 1862; disch. Sept. 1, 1863.  
 Bedell, Joseph W., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; no record after enlistment.  
 Boynton, Isaac A., muc., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); disch. Aug. 14, 1862; re-enl. Aug. 18, 1862; private for 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 21, 1863.  
 Bickum, Charles H., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt. (after Co. E, 1st H. A.); disch. Nov. 6, 1863; re-enl. Nov. 6, 1863, Co. E, 1st H. A.; must. out Aug. 16, 1865.  
 Brown, Wm., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. I, 1st H. A.); must. out Dec. 6, 1863; re-enl. as corp. Co. I, 1st H. A. Dec. 7, 1863; died of wds. April 29, 1865, at Washington, D. C.  
 Blackburn, John, private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. —, 12th Regt.; must. out July 8, 1864.  
 Brown, James S., private, enl. July 5, 1861, Co. I, 14th Regt. (after Co. I, 1st H. A.); must. out Dec. 6, 1863; re-enl. corp. 1st H. A. Dec. 7, 1863; must. out June 14, 1865.  
 Beardsley, John B., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. K, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. K, 1st H. A.); pro. to corp.; 2d sergt. Co. K, 1st H. A. July 5, 1861; 2d lieut. June 10, 1862; 1st lieut. Aug. 8, 1863; capt. June 23, 1864; must. out Aug. 16, 1865.  
 Byron, Wm., private, enl. Feb. 20, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. L, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); disch. March 31, 1863, disability.  
 Byron, Trefron, private, enl. Feb. 20, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. L, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out Feb. 22, 1864; re-enl. private, Co. L, 1st H. Art. Feb. 23, 1864; died of wds. May 30, 1864.  
 Burnham, Charles, private, enl. March 19, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); re-enl. private, Co. M, 1st H. A. March 21, 1864.  
 Boardman, Elbridge, private, enl. July 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.  
 Barteaux, David W., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; died Dec. 26, 1862.  
 Badger, Stephen L., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.





- Bailey, Charles P., private, enl. March 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out March 1, 1865, as com. sergt. 1st H. A.
- Brown, George A., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out as corp. Aug. 3, 1864.
- Bradley, Enoch M., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Burke, Thomas, private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Dec. 12, 1863; re-enl. private, Co. F, 17th Inf. Dec. 13, 1863.
- Brickett, Addison, private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864; re-enl. Sept. 20, 1864, 1 yr., Co. A, 17th Regt.; disch. June 30, 1865.
- Butters, Jonas S., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Dec. 16, 1863, disability.
- Blunt, Charles H., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Nov. 21, 1862, disability.
- Boyle, Thomas C., enl. Jan. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 17th Regt.; disch. April 10, 1865, in Co. D.
- Boharman, Wm., private, enl. April 30, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. K, 17th Regt.; pro. to corp.; disch. June 10, 1862, disability.
- Brown, John H., Jr., enl. Jan. 30, 1862, 3 yrs., 19th Regt.; died March 1, 1865, at New York.
- Butters, Charles (2d), mus., enl. Sept. 17, 1861, 3 yrs., 19th Regt.; disch. Aug. 7, 1862, by order of war dept.
- Balch, George W., private, enl. Dec. 31, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; disch. Feb. 28, 1862, disability.
- Benson, Joseph, sergt., enl. Aug. 24, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; disch. Feb. 3, 1863, disability.
- Brown, Francis J., enl. Sept. 2, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 22d Regt.; trans. to V. R. C. Feb. 15, 1864.
- Brosnahan, Patrick, enl. Dec. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.
- Burns, Wm., private, enl. Nov. 27, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; disch. Jan. 1, 1863; re-enl. Co. K, 6th Regt. V. R. C. June 16, 1864; disch. Nov. 18, 1865.
- Barry, Patrick, private, enl. Nov. 25, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; died May 6, 1864, at Baton Rouge, La.
- Barrett, Farnham, private, enl. Oct. 18, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 30th Regt.; trans. to Co. F, same Regt. Feb. 25, 1862; died Nov. 11, 1862, at New Orleans.
- Boyle, Thomas, private, enl. Oct. 18, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 30th Regt.
- Balentine, Elijah, private, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; trans. to 4th Cav.; re-enl. private, April 16, 1864, Co. L, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.
- Brown, Edward Q., private, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; disch. Oct. 15, 1862, disability.
- Bailey, Orrin A., enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; trans. to Co. L, 4th Cav.; must. out Sept. 24, 1864.
- Blanchard, Truman C., enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; trans. to Co. L, 4th Cav.; re-enl. April 16, 1864, Co. L, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.
- Bond, James S., private, enl. Nov. 18, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. C, 32d Regt.; disch. May 29, 1862, disability.
- Blake, Hubbard, private, enl. July 24, 1862, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. F, 1st H. A.); disch. Dec. 31, 1863, to re-enl.; re-enl. Dec. 31, 1863, Co. F, 1st H. A.; disch. Aug. 26, 1864, exp. of service; Co. M.
- Burkett, Ambrose, private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. I, 1st H. A.); must. out of service July 8, 1864, Co. I, 1st H. A., as absent wd.
- Brickett, George W., private, must. in Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. B, 1st H. A.); killed at Spottsylvania May 19, 1864.
- Ball, George W., private, enl. July 30, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. March 3, 1863, disability.
- Bemis, John M., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. Jan. 23, 1863, disability.
- Brickett, James T., private, enl. July 24, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Blake, John P., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Bromley, Lyman P., private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 17th Regt.; disch. Feb. 27, 1863, disability; re-enl. 1st sergt. Co. G, 4th Cav. Jan. 27, 1864; died March 14, 1864, at Haverhill.
- Burpee, Nathaniel B., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; must. out of service Aug. 3, 1864; exp. of service.
- Bailey, Luther S., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; must. out as sergt. June 9, 1864.
- Barrows, Theodore P., private, must. in Aug. 17, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; died Oct. 31, 1862, near Antietam, of fever.
- Batchelder, Wm. S., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Feb. 14, 1863, disability.
- Bennett, George, private, enl. July 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.
- Bly, Ezra, private, enl. Aug. 8, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Nov. 28, 1862, disability; re-enl. Sept. 10, 1864, V. R. C.; must. out Nov. 30, 1865; order of war dept.
- Burbank, David, private, enl. Aug. 23, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 46th Regt.; disch. Jan. 20, 1864, disability.
- Burbank, Percival E., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Nov. 11, 1863, disability.
- Burr, Henry O., corp., enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam June, 1863, in hosp. at York, Pa.; trans. to V. R. C. Feb. 14, 1864; disch. July 27, 1865, surg. certif. disability.
- Brooks, Frederick D., 2d lieutenant, enl. July, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; pro. 1st lieutenant Aug. 16, 1862; wd. at Antietam; res. Jan. 22, 1863.
- Bond, Charles E., private, enl. May 30, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 32d Regt.; died of fever at Mill Creek Hospital Sept. 15, 1862.
- Boles, Miles, 3 yrs.
- Burnham, Charles A. (residence at Haverhill), 3 yrs., 2d N. C. Regt.
- Brown, John, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.
- Burns, Patrick, 3 yrs., Co. K, 40th N. Y. Regt.
- Bean, Edward, 3 yrs., Co. G, 2d N. H. Regt.
- Bassett, Albert S., 3 yrs., 1st Vt. Cav.
- Brooks, Charles A., 3 yrs., Co. K, 9th Maine Regt.
- Blaisdell, Isaac C., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Oct. 17, 1861, disability.
- Bond, James, private, enl. Dec. 29, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 16th Regt.; killed in action at Gettysburg, Pa., July 3, 1863.
- Brown, Charles S., enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1861.
- Bowles, Charles G., private, enl. Feb. 13, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt.; disch. March 16, 1863, disability.
- Bickum, J. W., private, enl. Aug. 11, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Barron, John, enl. Oct. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; died July 23, 1864, in prison, Andersonville, Ga.
- Boadwin, Albert, must. in July 4, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; trans. Oct. 26, 1864, to Co. M, 32d Inf.; must. out June 29, 1865; exp. of term.
- Bartlett, Jeremiah, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A.; must. out to re-enlist and re-enl. Nov. 25, 1863; died May 7, 1865, Jacksonville, Fla.
- Bowley, Oliver S., enl. July 25, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A.; must. out to re-enlist, and re-enlisted Dec. 29, 1863, quota H in Co. A.; must. out Aug. 16, 1865.
- Bond, George W., enl. Nov. 7, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. M, 1st H. A.; disch. March 2, 1864.
- Bailey, Ryland F., enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Boynton, David, 2d lieutenant, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; pro. 1st sergt. Nov. 29, 1862; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. July 23, 1864, capt. 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Burnham, Walter J., enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Berry, Joseph, private, must. in Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.
- Bucklin, John C., private, enl. Oct. 4, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Benson, Samuel B., corp., enl. Aug. 13, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Burleigh, Moses C., private, enl. Sept. 11, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Barlow, Noah O., private, enl. Sept. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Bailey, Stephen W., private, enl. Sept. 19, 1862; 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Buckley, Francis, enl. Sept. 5, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. I, 2d H. A.; trans. to 17th Regt. Jan. 9, 1865; disch. from Co. A June 30, 1865; order of War Dept.



- Batters, Silas, private, enl. Oct. 15, 1862, 9 months Co. H, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Baranham, Wymon P., enl. May 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 1st Regt.; disch., disability, Oct. 2, 1862.
- Bartlett, Edward B., enl. Sept. 20, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; must. out June 6, 1865.
- Back, Alvah W., enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 1st H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.
- Bragoon, Luther, enl. Aug. 20, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; disch. July 16, 1865.
- Batchelder, Arthur N., enl. Aug. 20, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.
- Booth, John E., private, enl. Dec. 8, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; disch. Oct. 9, 1864, disability.
- Beals, Jas. H., private, enl. Dec. 30, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. F, 1st Cav.; must. out June 26, 1865.
- Buckley, Florence, private, enl. Nov. 1, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. D, 1st Cav.; must. out June 29, 1865.
- Bell, John W., private, enl. Jan. 5, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 4th Cav.; disch. July 28, 1865.
- Barry, Wm., private, enl. Sept. 22, 1864, 1 yr., 7th Batt.; died at Mobile, April 20, 1865.
- Bodwell, John W., private, enl. Sept. 22, 1864, 3 yrs., 7th Batt.; disch. July 15, 1865, G. O.
- Brady, Thomas, private, enl. Dec. 19, 1862, 3 yrs., 12th Batt.
- Beals, Henry J., private, enl. March 17, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. I, 59th Regt.
- Brickett, Addison, enl. Sept. 29, 1864, 1 yr., Co. A, 17th Regt.
- Beals, Wm. T., must. in April 2, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. I, 59th Regt.; trans. Jan. 15, 1865, to V. R. C.
- Bickum, Benj. F., must. in March 19, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A.; must. out and re-en. March 24, 1864, hosp. steward Aug. 1, 1864; must. out July 31, 1865.
- Bean, John F., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Bradley, Alphonzo H., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864; re-en. Jan. 2, 1865, Co. C, 1st Batt. Frontier Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Bradley, Francis S., enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864; re-en. Jan. 2, 1865, Co. C, 1st Batt. Frontier Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Berry, Patrick, must. in March 3, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 10th Regt.; must. out Dec. 21, 1863, to re-enl.
- Brown, Abden, must. in Feb. 25, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. G, 19th Regt.; must. out Feb. 27, 1864; reg'l. recruit.
- Barry, Martin, must. in March 3, 1862, 3 yrs., 19th Unassigned recruit; no further record.
- Bly, Ezra J., enl. Sept. 12, 1864, 1 yr., 20th Unattached H. A.; must. out June 16, 1865.
- Bunnell, James B., enl. Dec. 26, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; died May 11, 1865.
- Burnham, Moses E., corporal, enl. Dec. 30, 1865, 1 yr., Co. B, 1st Batt'n, Frontier Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Boucher, Michael, enl. June 13, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. F, 11th Regt.; pro. sergt.-maj. March 4, 1865; must. out to re-enl. Jan. 4, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 6; sergt.-maj., 1st lieut. July 23, 1864; capt. April 12, 1865; must. out July 14, 1865, as 1st lieut.
- Babbridge, Wm., enl. Nov. 13, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Baleh, Chas. T., enl. Nov. 13, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Barnard, Wm. H., must. in Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Bradstreet, Josiah F., must. in Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Barnes, John G., capt., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 60th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-en. Nov. 13, 1864; capt. 17th unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Carney, John, private, enl. May 25, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 2d Regt.; disch. Dec. 23, 1862, disability.
- Carmody, Cornelius, private, enl. June 11, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 4th Regt.; wounded July 1, 1862, at Malvern Hill; wounded Dec. 13, 1862, at Fredericksburg; must. out June 23, 1864, exp. of term.
- Carleton, Dalman J., private, enl. June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt.; disch. Dec. 26, 1863, disability.
- Crane, Samuel H., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. C, 12th Regt.; disch., disability, Dec. 17, 1861.
- Condry, Warren, must. in July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 11th Regt. (afterwards Co. E, 1st H. Art.), absent, wd., May 19, 1864; must. out July 8, 1864.
- Chin, John, enl. July 5, 1861, Co. E, 11th Regt. (afterwards Co. E, 1 H. A.); must. out Nov. 5, 1863, to re-enl.; re-enl. Nov. 5, 1863, Co. E, 1st H. A.; must. out Aug. 16, 1865, in Co. A.
- Cushman, Richard P., 2d lieut., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 11th Regt. (afterwards Co. F, 1st H. A.); pro. 1st lieut. Jan. 9, 1862; dismissed July 25, 1864.
- Cutler, Abahna B., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt. (afterwards Co. H, 1st H. A.); must. out July 8, 1864.
- Collins, Geo. L., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. K, 11th Regt. (afterwards Co. K, 1st H. A.); must. out Nov. 5, 1863, to re-enl.; re-en. as corp., quota of Bradford, Nov. 5, 1863, killed in action June 18, 1864, near Petersburg, Va.
- Collins, Wm. H., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. K, 11th Regt. (afterwards Co. K, 1st H. A.); must. out Nov. 6, 1863, to re-enl.; re-en. Nov. 6, 1863; died of wounds June 17, 1864, at Washington, D. C.
- Cussack, Wm., enl. Sept. 9, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. B, 1st H. A.); must. out Dec. 14, 1863, to re-enl.; re-enl. Dec. 5, 1863, Co. B, 1st H. A.; died Feb. 10, 1865, at Annapolis.
- Curier, Jeremiah S. (Jesse), enl. July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 17th Regt.; must. out as Jesse, Aug. 3, 1864.
- Coffe, John, corporal, enl. July 19, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out as private Aug. 3, 1864.
- Campbell, John, private, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Dec. 8, 1863, disability.
- Chase, Henry, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out to re-enl. Dec. 5, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 5, 1863, Co. E, 17th Inf.; must. out July 11, 1865.
- Connolly, Timothy, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Jan. 5, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. Jan. 5, 1864, Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out in Co. A, July 11, 1865.
- Connolly, Henry, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.
- Collins, Wm. H., as wagoner, enl. April 26, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 31, 1864.
- Colbath, Levi F., private, enl. April 26, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Jan. 1, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. in Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out in Co. A, July 11, 1865, by order of War Dept.
- Cuvier, Samuel M., private, enl. April 26, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; died March 22, 1862, at Baltimore, Md.
- Crooker, George W., private, enl. April 26, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Chapman, John C., private must. in Sept. 28, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch., disability, Jan. 30, 1865; died Ayer's Hill, July 3, 1863.
- Cloutman, Benjamin, corporal, enl. Sept. 6, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; died of disease July 26, 1862.
- Chase, Geo. H., private, enl. Oct. 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed in action June 27, Gaines' Mills, Va.
- Calder, Geo. F., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. April 26, 1862, disability.
- Cayne, John, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, Co. H, 22d Regt., 3 yrs.; died.
- Collingill, John, private, enl. Sept. 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed before Yorktown, April 6, 1862.
- Carr, Almus B., private, enl. Sept. 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Oct. 27, 1862, disability.
- Chesley, Benj. F., 2d lieut., enl. July 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; com'd Aug. 21, 1861; resigned Dec. 27, 1861; re-com'd 1st lieut., Co. H, 59th Mass. Regt. March 3, 1864; com'd capt. March 25, 1865; trans. to 57th Mass. Regt.; must. out Aug. 8, 1865.
- Chase, Augustus S., private, enl. Jan. 30, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; wd. at Fredericksburg, Va., Dec. 13, 1862; disch. Feb. 28, 1863, disability.
- Carleton, Daniel W., private, must. in Aug. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; disch. Oct. 24, 1862, disability.
- Clements, Hazen, enl. Sept. 14, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Feb. 13, 1863, disability.





- Carleton, Everett, private, must. in Aug. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; missing at Antietam; trans. Nov. 6, 1863, to V. R. C.
- Collingill, Chas. H. M., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Feb. 22, 1862; re-en. Dec. 15, 1863, 2d H. A., Co. M.; disch. June 26, 1865.
- Cowell, Isaac H., private, enl. Oct. 8, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Jan. 18, 1862, disability.
- Chase, Rufus K., private, enl. Oct. 1, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. April 26, 1862, disability.
- Chipman, Thomas B., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; disch. Nov. 11, 1862, disability.
- Chipman, Freeman, private, enl. Oct. 21, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; disch. Dec. 6, 1861.
- Colby, Francis, private, enl. Nov. 9, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; disch. April 2, 1862; re-en. V. R. C. July 11, 1864.
- Carey, Thos., must. in Jan. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 30th Regt.; must. out Jan. 1, 1865.
- Casey, Thos., must. in Jan. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 30th Regt.; must. out Jan. 1, 1865, (probably same as above).
- Chase, Wm., corporal, enl. Sept. 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; trans. to Co. L, 4th Cav.; pro. sergt. Jan. 1862, and 2d lieut. May 12, 1862; resigned Feb. 9, 1864.
- Colly, Wm., enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, Cav., trans. to Co. L, 4th Cav.; must. out April 20, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. April 21, 1864, Co. L, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.
- Christian, Chas. H., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., 4th Regt.; afterwards Co. M, 1st H. A.; must. out July 8, 1864; exp. of term.
- Christian, Wm. M., private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., 14th Regt.; (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out July 8, 1864.
- Clark, Leverett C., 3 yrs., 19th Regt.; (no record of him in office of adjutant-general).
- Colby, Geo. W., must. in Sept. 2, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 19th Regt.; died of wds. Oct. 5, 1862, Smoketown, Md.
- Colby, Eben, private, enl. Aug. 12, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. C, 19th Regt.; must. out to re-enl. Dec. 21, 1863; re-en. Dec. 22, 1863, private Co. C, 19th Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Crafts, Eliphalet P., private (corporal), enl. Aug. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Jan. 4, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 5, 1864, Co. E, 17th Regt.; died in Co. C, in rebel prison, Richmond, Va., March 26, 1864.
- Clement, John A., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. July 10, 1864, disability.
- Curtain, Thomas W., private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; must. out Jan. 5, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 5, 1864, Co. A, 17th Regt.; died of disease, June 6, 1864, at Greensboro, N. C.
- Colby, Thomas W., private, enl. Aug. 11, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. Dec. 8, 1863, disability.
- Chase, John A., enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 17th Regt.; disch. Nov. 16, 1862, disability; (rejected).
- Cogswell, John C., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Chipman, Geo., 3 yrs., 17th Regt. (no record in adjutant-general's office).
- Carr, John E., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Dec. 31, 1862, disability.
- Cheever, Geo. B., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Nov. 8, 1862, disability.
- Cochran, Wm. N., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Dec. 22, 1862, disability.
- Cogswell, Edward, private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Jan. 16, 1863, disability.
- Cram, Samuel H., private, enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 35th Regt.; disch. Sept. 18, 1863, disability.
- Colby, John L., private, enl. Jan. 30, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; disch. June 9, 1862, disability; (was also in 2d or 7th N. H. Regt.)
- Cuvier, Francis, 3 yrs., 33d Regt. (no record in adjutant-general's office).
- Carleton, Wm., 3 yrs., Co. K, 10th Maine Regt.
- Carleton, Geo. W., must. in Oct. 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. K, 22d Regt.
- Cadmus, Wm., 3 yrs., Co. C, 6th N. H. Regt.
- Collins, Chas. A., 6th U. S. Regulars.
- Carr, Chas. E., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt.; afterwards Co. F, 1st H. A.; must. out July 8, 1864.
- Croston, Wm., enl. Aug. 28, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt.; (afterward Co. F, 1st H. A.); must. out to re-enl. Nov. 28, 1863; re-enl. Nov. 28, 1863, Co. F, 1st H. A.; must. out July 27, 1865, disability.
- Cline, Thos., sergt., enl. Oct. 9, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.
- Colby, Wm. W., must. in July 15, 1863, Co. D, 18th Regt.; killed May 8, 1864, at Laurel Hill, Va.
- Chase, Benj. W., private, enl. Aug. 22, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 23, 1863.
- Carr, Mark, private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 60th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Carney, Chas. G., private, must. in Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Coffin, David R. B., corporal, enl. Aug. 11, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Coffin, Cyrus V., wagoner, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Chase, Eustis, private, must. in Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Colby, John E., private, enl. Aug. 10, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 60th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Cayne, John, private, enl. Aug. 30, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Clough, Wm. R., private, enl. Aug. 10, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Carr, Geo. W., private, enl. Sept. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 23, 1863.
- Cook, Justin T., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Clark, Cyrus H., enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Connelly, Patrick, enl. Nov. 16, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; missing in action since April 20, 1864; died Nov. 6, 1864, at Andersonville, Ga.
- Connors, James O., enl. Nov. 30, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. K, 2d H. A.; disch. Sept. 23, 1865.
- Croston, Frank, enl. Sept. 5, 1864, 1 yr., Co. I, 2d H. A.; trans. to Co. A, 17th Regt. Jan. 17, 1865; disch. June 30, 1865.
- Carleton, Wilton H., enl. Sept. 10, 1864, 1 yr., Co. I, 2d H. A.; trans. to Co. D, 17th Regt., Jan. 17, 1865; must. out June 30, 1865, as Wilton H. in Co. D, order War Dept.
- Carr, Moses E., enl. Sept. 19, 1864, 1 yr., Co. H, 2d H. A.; must. out June 26, 1865.
- Callahan, Thos., enl. Sept. 20, 1864, 1 yr., Co. C, 2d H. A.; trans. to Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865, order of War Dept.
- Cook, Geo. M., enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out as sergt. June 17, 1865.
- Clifford, Daniel A., private, enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out as corporal June 17, 1865.
- Colburn, Josiah H., private, enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.
- Capron, Darius, private, enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.
- Cassey, John, private, enl. Sept. 13, 1864, 1 yr., 29th Co. Unattached H. A.; must. out June 16, 1865.
- Cranshaw, James W., corporal, enl. Feb. 5, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. D, 1st Cav.; must. out as corporal June 29, 1865.
- Crosby, John F., private, enl. Nov. 5, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; corporal Oct. 1, 1864; wd. and prisoner Oct. 24, 1864; disch. June 19, 1865.
- Cogger, Thos. E., private, enl. Nov. 13, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.
- Connor, John, private, enl. Nov. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; pris. Oct. 24, 1864; disch. July 10, 1865.
- Chase, Lauren M., private, enl. Nov. 30, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.
- Clough, Wm. H., q.m.-sergt., enl. Jan. 5, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.
- Carleton, Fred. O., private, enl. Dec. 29, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. D, 4th Cav.; vet.: must. out Nov. 14, 1865.
- Colby, Enoch W., private, enl. Aug. 11, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. K, 32d Regt.; disch. Dec. 21, 1862, disability.
- Clarendon, Edward H., private, enl. May 9, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. I, 26th Regt.; died of wds. Oct. 17, 1864, at Winchester, Va.



- Coffee, John, private, enl. Sept. 17, 1864, 1 yr., Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Crocker, Cyrus B. W., private, enl. Sept. 20, 1864, 1 yr., Co. C, 17th Regt.; disch. June 30, 1865.
- Clough, John W., 1 yr., 11th Regt.
- Chaquette, Paul, private, enl. Sept. 9, 1864, 1 yr. Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Cahill, Jas., private, enl. March 2, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. G, 59th Regt.; trans. to Co. G, 59th Regt. June 1, 1865; must. out July 30, 1865.
- Chase, Geo. S., enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Chase, Jos., enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; com-sergt. Aug. 5, 1864; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Colby, Stephen W., enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Crane, Fredk. A., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Cobb, Geo. H., must. in Oct. 13, 1862, 9 months, Co. H, 59th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Cannody, Michael, must. in Aug. 3, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. D, 28th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Chow, Charles W., must. in Dec. 9, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. I, 1st H. A.; trans. to V. R. C. Dec. 1, 1864.
- Colby, Geo. M., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt'n, Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Cronen, Cornelius, enl. Sept. 20, 1864; V. R. C.; no record of must. out.
- Calef, Josiah R., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Call, Thos. S., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Carlton, Jas. W., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Davidson, Willard O., private, enl. June 13, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt.; died at Mt. Pleasant Hospital July 27, 1863.
- Davis, A. M., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; disch. for disability as Daniel M., Oct. 20, 1862, (Daniel M. in adjutant-general's report).
- Downing, John, private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; must. out July 8, 1861.
- Davis, Franklin, private, must. in June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; twice wd., at Antietam; must. out July 8, 1861.
- Drew, Arthur L., com-sergt., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., 14th Regt., non-com staff (afterward 1st H. A.); com. 2d lieut. Feb. 15, 1862; dismissed Nov. 19, 1863.
- Demeritt, John W., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt.; (afterward Co. F, 1st H. A.); must. out July 8, 1861.
- Dearborn, Jas. M., Co. K, 14th Regt.; (no record in adjutant-general's office).
- Dimmels, Moses P., private, enl. Feb. 24, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterward 1st H. A.); must. out to re-enl. Feb. 24, 1864; re-enl. Feb. 25, 1865, Co. M, 1st H. A.; must. out Aug. 16, 1865.
- Dimmels, Chas. H., private, enl. Feb. 24, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterward Co. M, 1st H. A.); disch. Feb. 19, 1863; disa. battery.
- Downing, Jas., private, enl. March 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt. (afterward Co. M, 1st H. A.); must. out Mch. 9, 1864, to re-enl. re-enl. March 10, 1864, as sergt., Co. M, 1st H. A.; disch. for pro. in U. S. troops as 2d lieut. Aug. 7, 1865.
- Dewhirst, Horsfall, musician, must. in Aug. 1861, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 30, 1862, order of War Dept.; re-enl. Aug. 4, 1863, Co. C, 2d H. A.; died Oct. 31, 1864, Newbern, N. C., in Co. F.
- Dwinnels, Philip, private, enl. July 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1861.
- Dwinnels, Wm., enl. July 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1861.
- Dougherty, George, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 6, 1864, disability.
- Downing Daniel, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt. (no record at adjutant-general's office).
- Dearborn, John S., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; wd. in North Carolina Dec., 1862 (Foster's Expedition); must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Day, Luther, captain, enl. July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; com. Aug. 21, major Dec. 29, 1863; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Derby, Geo. W., musician, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Oct. 5, 1862, disability.
- Dresser, Alonzo, private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 11, 1863, disability.
- Dearborn, Hazen S., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Doe, Chas. A., enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Davis, Chas. A., enl. Sept. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; wd. in North Carolina, Dec. 1862 (Foster's Expedition).
- Davis, Chas. H., enl. Sept. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Jan. 1, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 11, 1864, Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out in Co. A, July 11, 1865.
- Dawson, Frank, private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; trans. to 1st U. S. Cav. Oct. 31, 1862, as sergt.
- Dwinnels, Daniel, private, enl. Sept. 7, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. July 8, 1862, disability.
- Downing, William, private, enl. Sept. 14, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; died July 2, 1864, at Beverly Ford, Va.
- Dickey, Isaac L., private, enl. Feb. 10, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 19th Regt.; disch. March 6, 1863, disability.
- Davidson, Edward F., private, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; drwd. near Amboy, N. J., Oct. 10, 1861, in service.
- Dempsey, Wm. J., private, must. in Oct. 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 22d Regt.
- Dodge, William H., private, enl. Nov. 8, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 21th Regt.; must. out Jan. 1, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 2, 1864, Co. D, 21th Inf.; died Oct. 23, 1864, at De Camp Hospital, New York.
- Downey, Daniel, enl. Sept. 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. C, 28th Regt.; wd. in Wilderness May 5, 1864; must. out as absent Dec. 19, 1864.
- Donnelly, John, private, enl. Oct. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; wd. May 12, 1864, at Spottsylvania; must. out Dec. 19, 1864, exp. of term.
- Donnelly, Peter, private, enl. Sept. 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; killed at Antietam, Sept. 17, 1862.
- Davis, Moses, private, enl. Oct. 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; disch. April 2, 1862, disability.
- Durant, John, private, enl. Nov. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; disch. Dec. 6, 1864; re-enl. March 31, 1865, in 31st Regt., unassigned; must. out May 6, 1865, by order of War Department.
- Donovan, Thos. H., private, enl. Nov. 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; died as corporal July 1, 1865, Florence, S. C.
- Darling, Leonard N., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch., disability, in Co. F, July 10, 1863.
- Dwinnels, Geo. H., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt.; disch. Oct. 28, 1863, disability.
- Daley, Wm., private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Dwyer, Jas. M., private, must. in Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. Oct. 27, 1862, disability.
- Dyman, Patrick, private, must. in Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Davis, Daniel G., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Feb. 7, 1863, disability.
- Dean, James F. G., sergeant, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Nov. 7, 1862, disability.
- Dresser, Augustus W., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; died; no date.
- Dresser, Wm. M., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch., disability.
- Dresser, Albert L., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. June 18, 1865, disability.
- Drew, Herbert M., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862, shot entirely through both breasts and lungs, dying instantly; body recovered and buried from Town Hall, Haverhill, Sunday, Oct. 12, 1862; Testament in his pocket stained with his blood.
- Drew, Daniel F. M., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Oct. 28, 1863, disability.
- Drew, Chas. A., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Jan. 21, 1863, disability.





- Dunn, Charles M., sergeant, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; trans. to 20th M. V. as sergeant; must. out as sergeant in Co. G, July 29, 1865.
- Day, Horace, 3 yrs., Maine Regt.
- Dearborn, Geo., 3 yrs., 4th N. H. Regt.
- Dresser, Chas. I., 3 yrs., Co. C, 2d N. H. Regt.
- Dresser, John, 3 yrs., Co. C, 2d N. H. Regt.
- Dodge, John N., 3 yrs., Maine Cav.
- Davis, Stephen H., 3 yrs., Maine Regt.
- Dodge, Chas. W., 3 yrs., Co. I, 17th Regt. (no record at adjutant-general's office).
- Duncan, Samuel W., captain, enl. April 28, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; com'd Aug. 28, 1862; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Davis, Chas. A., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.
- Davis, Geo. S., private, enl. Sept. 14, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; died at Baton Rouge, La., May 29, 1863.
- De Rochemont, Daniel P., private, enl. 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out as corporal Aug. 24, 1863.
- Davis, Eliphalet, private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Davis, John, private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out as corporal Aug. 24, 1863.
- Daley, Bartlett F., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 23, 1863.
- Daley, Alfred H., private, enl. Sept. 17, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 23, 1863.
- Davis, George M., enl. Oct. 4, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. Jan. 27, 1864, Co. E, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.
- Davis, Chas. A., must. in Sept. 19, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 30th Regt.; absent since July 13, 1864.
- Dias, Robert, must. in March 31, 1865, 3 yrs., 31st Regt., unassigned recruit; must. out May 6, 1865, by order of War Department.
- Dias, John, private, enl. Dec. 15, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. M, 2d H. A.; must. out Sept. 3, 1865.
- Davis, Richard H., private, enl. Sept. 19, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 2d H. A.; trans. to 17th Regt.; must. out in Co. E, June 30, 1865.
- Daley, Daniel, private, enl. Sept. 7, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 2d H. A.; trans. to 17th Regt.; must. out in Co. F, June 30, 1865.
- Daley, Bartlett F., private, enl. Sept. 17, 1864, 1 yr., Co. F, 2d H. A.; must. out June 26, 1865.
- Damon, Jairus L., private, enl. Dec. 14, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. E, 2d H. A.; disch. June 16, 1865.
- Dowe, Frank A., private, enl. Aug. 23, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.
- Doyle, Michael, private, enl. Dec. 31, 1864, 1 yr., Co. L, 3d Cav.; must. out in Co. K, Sept. 28, 1865.
- Danforth, Otis, private, enl. Dec. 8, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; disch. July 25, 1864, disability.
- Derwin, Thos., private, enl. June 23, 1864, 3 yrs., 4th Cav.; unassigned; disch. July 16, 1864, disability (rejected recruit).
- Douglas, Wm., private, enl. July 24, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. D, 15th Regt.; trans. to navy April 24, 1864.
- Dolan, Barney, private, must. in Nov. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; must. out to re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 2; wd. Oct. 19, 1862; must. out July 5, 1866, absent.
- Dudley, Albert H., must. in July 1, 1865, 3 yrs., Co. F, 1st H. A.; prisoner of war June 22, 1864; must. out July 8, 1864.
- Downes, Chas. H., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Dodge, Chas. B., must. in Aug. 9, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 13th Regt.; must. out Aug. 1, 1864.
- Davis, Albert A., must. in Jan. 27, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.
- Davis, Alvin A., 1st sergeant, enl. Jan. 27, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.
- \*Donnelly, Peter, enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt'n Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Donnelly, Patrick, enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt'n Front. Cav.; must. out June 26, 1865.
- Dale, Herbert A., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Dalton, Pierce, enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Darwin, Thos., must. in Jan. 14, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. C, 59th Regt.
- Davis, Arthur T., enl. Nov. 11, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Dearborn, Geo. W., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Durgin, James N., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Emerson, Joseph R., corporal, enl. June 1, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt.; disch. Oct. 18, 1863, disability; re-enl. Jan. 5, 1864; trans. to 36th Co., 2d Batt. V. R. C.; disch. Sept. 4, 1865.
- Evans, Horace B., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; died of wds. received June 25, 1864 (as sergeant).
- Ellsworth, Daniel W., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; must. out July 8, 1864.
- Elliott, Samuel H., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.; must. out Feb. 16, 1863, as absent, sick, since Aug. 30, 1862; re-enl. June 6, 1863, as private Co. D, 1st Batt'n H. A.; must. out Sept. 12, 1865.
- Ethier, Joseph, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt. (afterward Co. E, 1st H. A.); must. out Nov. 25, 1863; re-enl. Nov. 25, 1863, Co. E, 1st H. A.; must. out July 31, 1865.
- Emery, Aaron, private, enl. Feb. 24, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterward Co. M, 1st H. A.); previously enlisted in Co. G, 30th Regt.; not must.; disch. for disability Nov. 6, 1862.
- Elliott, Wm., private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Oct. 21, 1863, disability, as corporal.
- Ellis, Thos., private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Jan. 5, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 5, 1864, Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out in Co. A, July 17, 1865.
- Emerson, Edward, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.
- Evans, John W., private, enl. Sept. 7, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Dec. 22, 1862, disability.
- England, Charles H., private, enl. Sept. 14, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out Oct. 17, 1864.
- Emerson, Isaiah F., enl. Feb. 18, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. July 18, 1862, disability.
- Eaton, Geo., wagoner, enl. July 16, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.
- Evans, Robert, enl. Aug. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., sharpshooters, 1st Co.; disch., disability.
- Edwards, Nathaniel M., private, 3 yrs., Sewell's Engineer Corps, New York; pro. to 2d and 1st lieut. (was in 3 months' service.)
- Ellis, John M., corporal, enl. Aug. 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; pro. to 2d lieut. from 1st sergt. Sept. 8, 1864; 1st lieut. Nov. 29, 1864; trans. to 29th Regt.; must. out July 29, 1865.
- Ellis, George W., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.
- Emerson, Wm. H., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. March 25, 1863, disability.
- Ellsworth, John N., Jr., 3 yrs., Co. K, 3d Vt. Regt.
- Elder, Albert, 3 yrs.
- Ellsworth, Josiah A., 3 yrs., 28th Regt.
- Ellsworth, Chas. S., 3 yrs., 18th Regt.
- Eaton, Chas. J., 14th Regt.
- Emery, Samuel C., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Emerson, Albert, private, enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. Aug. 20, 1864, 1 yr. in Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.
- Eaton, Eugene G., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Eaton, Albert C., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Edwards, Geo. W., private, enl. March 8, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; com'd captain July 19, 1862; must. out Aug. 23, 1863.
- Eaton, Daniel W., private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Emerson, Geo. R., private, enl. Sept. 17, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Ellis, Sebastian, private, enl. Sept. 2, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; disch. Dec. 14, 1862; minority.





- Eaton, Wm. H., private, enl. Aug. 25, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.
- Earle, Joseph M., private, enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.
- Eaton, Willis G., private, enl. Sept. 22, 1864, 3 yrs., 7th Batt'y; disch. July 12, 1865, G. O.
- Everson, Geo. E., corporal, must. in March 4, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. G, 59th Regt.; killed in action June 17, 1864.
- Eddy, George C., private, enl. Nov. 27, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A.; died Oct. 18, 1864, at Millan, Ga.
- Emery, Ivory, private, enl. Nov. 28, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. F, 1st H. A.; died in Andersonville Prison, Aug. 7, 1864.
- Eaton, John G., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Evan\*, Chas. R., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Eddy, George B., must. in Oct. 13, 1862, 9 months, Co. H, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 21, 1863.
- Eaton, Minot H., must. in May 25, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 2d Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Dec. 30, 1863; must. out July 11, 1865.
- Fuller, Charles G., private, enl. May 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 1st Regt.; wd. several times and taken pris. at Bull Run July, 1861, at Culpepper Hosp., 1 month, and then in Libby Prison; paroled in 1862 and returned home; disch. Nov. 5, 1862.
- Foster, Phineas, private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.; must. out July 8, 1864.
- Frost, George B., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.; must. out April 22, 1864; trans. to 5th U. S. Cav.
- Folsom, Daniel W., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. F, 1st H. A.); must. out July 8, 1864.
- Fletcher, John H., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. F, 1st H. A.); re-enl. Dec. 5, 1863, Co. F, 1st H. A.; died Nov. 25, 1864, U. S. Gen. Hosp.
- Fernald, Nehemiah C., private, enl. March 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out Aug. 25, 1865.
- Flanders, Francis C., private, enl. March 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. M, 1st H. A.); disch. from Co. M, 1st H. A. Dec. 7, 1862, disability; enl. in Co. D, 17th Regt. July 12, 1864; disch. Sept. 7, 1864; re-enl. June 7, 1864, V. R. C.; disch. May 22, 1865, disability.
- Flaherty, Edmund, wagoner, enl. July 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. April 3, 1863, disability, as private.
- Fleming, Murtz, private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; pris. of war in Co. H; must. out Jan. 1, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 2, 1864, Co. E, 17th Regt.; died April 1, 1864, in Rebel Prison.
- Folsom, Charles E., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out as sergt. Aug. 3, 1864.
- Frost, Julius B., 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; no record at office of adjutant general.
- Furber, John H., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Fletcher, Francis, private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. July 12, 1862, disability.
- Fowler, Samuel W., corp., enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Dec. 22, 1862, disability.
- Fogg, George F., corp., enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Nov. 21, 1862, disability; re-enl. Co. D, 1st Cav. Jan. 25, 1864, 3 yrs.; must. out June 29, 1865.
- Frankle, Jones, must. in Aug. 1, 1861, as major for 3 yrs. in 17th Regt. (capt. 1st H. A. July 5, 1864; disch. July 24, 1864); pro. col. 2d H. A. May, 1863; must. out Sept. 3, 1865, brevet brigadier-general.
- Farnsworth, Sylvester P., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; trans. to 3d Batt. June 2, 1863; must. out Sept. 16, 1864.
- Prye, Wm. L., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed in action June 27, 1862, Gaines' Mill, Va.
- Fitts, Henry T., private, enl. Sept. 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out Sept. 18, 1864.
- Foster, Israel, private, enl. Sept. 14, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Oct. 1, 1862, disability.
- Fairbank, Henry A., private, enl. Sept. 4, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. K, 20th Regt.; taken pris. at Ball's Bluff; must. out Dec. 20, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 20, 1863; must. out July 26, 1865, absent.
- Fifield, Lorenzo, enl. Sept. 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; died June 9, 1862, Gaines' Mill, Va.
- Fountain, Archer N., private, enl. Jan. 30, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 19th Regt.; died of wds. Aug. 7, 1862, at Yorktown, Va.
- Fellows, Horatio, private, must. in July 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. C, 19th Regt.; must. out Jan. 20, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 20, 1864; Co. C, 19th Regt.; killed in action June 6, 1864, at Cold Harbor, Va.
- Flynn, John, private, enl. Aug. 24, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; taken pris. at Ball's Bluff; must. out Feb. 17, 1864; re-enl. Feb. 18, 1864, Co. H, 20th Regt.; must. out July 16, 1865.
- Foster, Charles A., private, must. in Aug. 30, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; taken pris. at Ball's Bluff; killed June 1, 1862.
- Fitts, Stephen W., private, enl. Oct. 8, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. March 1, 1863, disability.
- Frink, Robert, private, enl. Sept. 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out Feb. 1, 1864; re-enl. Feb. 2, 1864, Co. H, 22d Regt.; drowned April 2, 1864, at Hare de Grace, Md.
- Frink, George, private, enl. Sept. 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; died June 9, 1863, at Potomac Creek, Va.
- Floyd, Benjamin, private, enl. Oct. 8, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed at James Mills June 27, 1862.
- Fletcher, Andrew J., enl. Sept. 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Sept. 5, 1862, disability.
- Frothingham, George F., private, enl. Sept. 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Nov. 22, 1862, disability.
- Frothingham, Charles H., private, enl. Sept. 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. and re-enl. Feb. 1, 1864, in same Co.; trans. Oct. 26, 1864, to Co. M, 32d Regt.; must. out June 29, 1865.
- Ford, Dennis, private, enl. Dec. 17, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; must. out Dec. 13, 1864; re-enl. Feb. 28, 1865, to 14th Batt., 3 yrs.; must. out June 15, 1865.
- Flaingham, Wm., private, enl. Nov. 25, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; died Oct. 9, 1862, at Carrollton, La.
- Fountain, Jonas, must. in Jan. 27, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 31st Regt.; must. out Feb. 15, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. Feb. 16, 1864, Co. I, 31st Regt.; must. out Sept. 9, 1865.
- Foss, Henry G., enl. Sept. 16, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 1st Cav.; taken pris. while on picket Jan. 20, 1863, near Hartwood Church, Va.; paroled; disch. May 1, 1863, disability.
- Flander\*, Charles H., private, enl. Sept. 16, 1861, Co. D, 1st Cav.; must. out Oct. 3, 1864.
- Forbes, Augustus S., private, must. in May 7, 1862, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. B, 1st H. A.); must. out July 8, 1864.
- Forbes, Henry S., private, enl. Aug. 9, 1862, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. B, 1st H. A.); died Andersonville, Ga., July 27, 1864.
- Fowler, John F., must. in Aug. 12, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. C, 19th Regt.; must. out Aug. 28, 1864.
- Ford, Horace K., private, must. in Aug. 11, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Foller, Patrick, private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Nov. 28, 1862, disability.
- Fernald, Simeon M., enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Oct. 30, 1862, disability.
- Fitts, Jacob W., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt. pro. sergt., 1st sergt., 2d lieut. Jan. 11, 1865; must. out June 9, 1865.
- Flanders, Leonard H., corp., enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. March 5, 1863, disability.
- Foot, Samuel, private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Nov. 12, 1862, disability.
- Foss, Alfred A., private, must. in Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; must. out as sergt. June 9, 1865.
- Fuller, James A., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. for disability.
- Folsom, Horatio, 3 yrs.
- Frothingham, John L., 3 yrs., Co. G, 3d Md. Regt.
- Fannin, Barrett, must. in Nov. 25, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 30th Regt. (but see Farnham Barrett).
- Farr, Ammi, 3 yrs., 5th N. H. Regt.
- Follett, 3 yrs.
- Fuller, John S., Jr., 3 yrs., N. Y. Regt.
- Flanders, Charles E., must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out Dec. 7, 1863, to re-enl.
- Felch, Daniel M., 2d lieut., enl. March 19, 1862, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); disch. April 1, 1863, disability.



- Foss, Wm., private, enl. Sept. 4, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 60th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1864.
- Foss, Wm. A., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1864.
- Flanders, Burton, private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 21, 1864.
- Flanders, Edward L., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 21, 1864.
- Fittspatrick, John, private, enl. Sept. 7, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1864.
- Fowler, Gilbert S., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1864.
- Fuller, Wm. B., enl. Sept. 2, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1864.
- Farnham, Hiram H., private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1864; re-enl. June 16, 1864, V. R. C.
- Flanders, Jesse, private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- French, Moses E., private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Farrington, Moses C., private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Flint, George W., private, enl. Nov. 27, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; died Sept. 11, 1864, at Andersonville.
- Frye, John L., private, enl. Dec. 21, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. C, 2d H. A.; must. out Sept. 3, 1865, absent sick.
- Floyd, George H., private, enl. Dec. 1, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; died Jan. 25, 1864, at Andersonville.
- Fitts, Walter Gage, private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A.; must. out to re-enl.; re-enl. Nov. 24, 1863; disch. Nov. 23, 1864, disability.
- Flanders, Benjamin G., private, enl. Dec. 9, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. K, 2d H. A.; must. out Sept. 3, 1865.
- Frye, Henry C., private, enl. Dec. 16, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. O, 2d H. A.; must. out Sept. 3, 1865.
- Fish, Charles H., corp., enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.
- French, Aaron H., private, enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.
- Foster, Edward H., private, enl. Sept. 13, 1864, 1 yr., 29th Unattached H. A.; must. out Sept. 16, 1865.
- Fegan, Wm., private, enl. Sept. 1, 1864, 1 yr., 29th Unattached H. A.; must. out Sept. 16, 1865.
- Fellows, Rufus J., private, enl. June 24, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. L, 4th Cav.; died Nov. 26, 1864, at Varnia, Va.
- Foye, James H., private, enl. Nov. 29, 1864, 1 yr., 4th Batt.; must. out Oct. 13, 1865.
- Farnham, George H., enl. Dec. 4, 1861, 3 yrs., 23d Regt.; hospital steward; died April 5, 1862, at Roanoke Island, N. C.
- Follansbee, John W., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, 11th Regt.; must. out July 17, 1865, absent sick.
- Fitts, Leroy B., private, enl. July 23, 1861, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Fowler, Edward H., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- French, Frank P., private, enl. July 23, 1861, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Fielden, Andrew H., corp., enl. July 22, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Frye, Albert A., must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; died Dec. 28, 1861, at Baltimore.
- Fowler, Edmund B., must. in Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, 1st Batt'n Front Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- French, Geo. F., must. in Sept. 20, 1864, V. R. C.; no record of must. out.
- Flint, Charles H., must. in Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Flint, Ira T., must. in Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Gilman, Frank, must. in June 21, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 10th Regt.; disch. April 1, 1863, disability.
- Gale, Marcus, enl. June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt.; no record after enlistment.
- Grant, John S., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; must. out as sergt. July 8, 1864.
- Greenleaf, Wm., corp., must. in June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 11th Regt.; must. out Aug. 18, 1862; disability; re-enl. July 1, 1864, V. R. C.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865, order of war dept.
- Gale, Eben P., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. E, 1st H. A.); disch. May 7, 1862, disability.
- Goodwin, Timothy, enl. March 12, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); disch. March 13, 1865.
- Greeley, Jameson, private, enl. March 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. M, 1st H. A.); must. out March 27, 1864; re-enl. March 28, 1864, Co. M, 1st H. A.; must. out Aug. 16, 1865.
- Goss, Charles P., private, enl. July 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Godfrey, Peter, corp., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out July 11, 1865, in Co. G; exp. of service.
- Gartside, James H., private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Aug. 20, 1862.
- Godfrey, John, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.
- Godfrey, Joseph, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. in Co. E, 17th Inf. Dec. 23, 1863; must. out in Co. B July 14, 1865.
- Goggin, John, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Getchell, Daniel L., 1st sergt., enl. Aug. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; 2d Lieut. Dec. 24, 1862; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Gilman, Adoniram (2d), corp., enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Jan. 4, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 5, 1864, as sergt. Co. F, 17th Inf.; must. out July 11, 1865.
- Gardiner, Albert G., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Gilman, Wm. E., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; sergt.; disch. Sept. 25, 1861, disability; re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; disch. Co. B July 11, 1865.
- Gale, Albert, private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. in Co. F, 17th Regt. Feb. 29, 1864; must. out in Co. A July 22, 1865, absent sick.
- Gilman, James W., private, must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out June 9, 1864, order of war dept.
- Gilman, Rufus, must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Gilman, Mark L., private, must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 2, 1862, disability.
- Gardner, David W., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 25, 1861; re-enl. in Co. A, 4th Cav. Dec. 25, 1863, 3 yrs.; pro. corp. Nov. 1, 1865; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.
- George, John S., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; in hosp. at Newark, N. J., Aug. 31, 1862; disch. Oct. 8, 1862, disability.
- Gray, George N., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; trans. to V. R. C. March 15, 1864.
- George, Willard K., must. in Jan. 25, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 19th Regt.; disch. May 24, 1862, disability.
- Greene, Asa W., private, enl. Jan. 30, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 19th Regt.; trans. Sept. 26, 1863, to V. R. C.
- Greenleaf, Albert H., private, enl. Aug. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; must. out Dec. 21, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 22, 1863, in Co. A 17th Inf., as wagoner; must. out June 30, 1865.
- George, Leonard W., private, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. May 21, 1862, disability; re-enl. June 24, 1864, V. R. C.; must. out May 1, 1865.
- Gale, Nathan, enl. Sept. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Sept. 3, 1862, disability.
- Goodwin, Wm. P., private, enl. Oct. 1, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; in hosp. at Newark, N. J., Aug. 3, 1862; disch. Nov. 25, 1862, disability.
- Goulding, Patrick, private enl. Sept. 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; disch. Jan. 4, 1862, disability.
- Gilman, Charles P., private, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; trans. to Co. L, 4th Cav.
- Goldsmith, Wm. H., enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt.; pris. June 22, 1864; must. out July 8, 1864.
- Goldsmith, Lucius R., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. I, 1st H. A.); disch. July 5, 1864, absent sick.
- Gage, Edmund C., private, enl. Aug. 7, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 11th Regt. (afterwards Co. B, 1st H. A.); killed at Spottsylvania May 19, 1864.
- Gentiss, Asa, private, Co. B, 40th N. Y. Regt. (Mozart regiment).





- George, Wallace T., must. in Aug. 12, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. C, 19th Regt. as 1st sergt.; pro. Oct. 5, 1863, to 1st lieut.; resigned Feb. 13, 1865.
- George, Henry B., enl. Aug. 15, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. April 23, 1863, disability.
- George, Henry O., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 16, 1862.
- Glines, James A., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Oct. 6, 1862, disability.
- Gile, Andrew J., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.
- Goodwin, George K., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wds. at Antietam; disch. Feb. 9, 1863, disability; re-enl. Sept. 15, 1864, V. R. C.; must. out Nov. 20, 1865, order of war dept.
- Guptil, Robert, private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, disability.
- Goodrich, Hazen B., enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. to re-enl. as U. S. hosp. steward Jan. 23, 1865; must. out in U. S. A. Dec. 30, 1865.
- Greene, Wm. B., must. in July 5, 1861, as col., 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); resigned Oct. 11, 1861.
- Goldsmith, Melvin H., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); exchanged pris. of war Feb., 1865.
- Goodell, Walter S., sergt., enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out as 1st sergt. Aug. 24, 1863.
- Gibson, Albert D., corp., enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Gordon, Edward, private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Gilman, Lucas B., private, enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; died on passage home Aug. 2, 1863.
- George, Arthur L., private, enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Gould, Royal D., sergt., enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 31, 1864, Co. B, 1st Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Graham, Sylvanus C., private, enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Gale, Henry, private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Goodrich, Walter, private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Graham, James W., private, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; trans. to U. S. A. Dec. 27, 1862.
- George, Townsend P., enl. Nov. 4, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 23, 1863; re-enl. July 29, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out July 11, 1865.
- Goodwin, Henry K., private, enl. Nov. 21, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; disch. July 5, 1865, disability.
- Gordon, Wm. L., corp., enl. Nov. 23, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; died July 5, 1865, at Andersonville.
- Goss, James M., private, enl. Oct. 14, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. B, 1st Batt. H. A.
- Goodrich, Preston M., private, enl. July 26, 1861, 3 yrs., 1st Cav.; unassigned; never joined.
- Green, Thomas, private, enl. Sept. 13, 1861, 1 yr., 29th Unattached H. A.; must. out June 16, 1865.
- Greenough, Henry A., private, enl. Feb. 19, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. G, 2d Cav.
- Godfrey, John T., enl. Jan. 26, 1864, 3 yrs., 2d Cav.; rejected Jan. 26, 1864.
- Goodwin, John C., private, enl. Jan. 7, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 4th Cav.; disch. June 28, 1865, disability.
- Gasson, Edward F., private, enl. Sept. 19, 1864, 1 yr., 13th Batt.; disch. June 16, 1865, by general order.
- Gasson, Frederick L., private, enl. Sept. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 13th Batt.; disch. June 16, 1865, by general order.
- Grant, Joshua, private, enl. Sept. 26, 1864, 1 yr., Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865, by order of war dept.
- Gallagher, Patrick, must. in Sept. 20, 1864, 1 yr., Co. E, 61st Regt.; must. out July 5, 1865.
- George, Llewelyn, corp., enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- George, Charles D., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 29, 1864.
- Grant, Solomon, private, enl. Nov. 16, 1864, 1 yr., 2d Unattached Inf.; must. out July 7, 1865.
- Gage, Alfred F., must. in Dec. 9, 1862, 3 yrs., 1st Unassigned Regt.; no record after enlistment.
- Gorman, Patrick, must. in Sept. 20, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. C, 2d H. A.; trans. Jan. 9, 1865, to Co. E, 17th Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865, by order of war dept.
- Green, Wm., must. in Jan. 2, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. C, 25th Regt.
- Gale, Charles A., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Harmon, Woolbury S., private, enl. May 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 1st Regt.; disch. Feb. 17, 1862, disability.
- Heath, Henry, sergeant, enl. Jan. 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt. pro. to 2d lieut. May 16, 1862; 1st lieut. May 4, 1863; dismissed Feb. 15, 1864.
- Heath, J. Wesley, corporal, enl. June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt.; died at Washington, D. C., in hospital, Nov. 1, 1862.
- Hammond, Chas. W., private, enl. June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt.; died in hospital, at Washington, D. C., Sept. 29, 1862; buried from Town Hall, Sunday, Oct. 5, 1862; first soldier's funeral in town during the war.
- Hoyt, Wm. C., private, enl. June 4, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 7, 1862.
- Hall, Rufus F., enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 12th Regt.; disch. Oct. 18, 1862.
- Haddock, Oliver, enl. June 21, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.; disch. Sept. 10, 1863, disability.
- Hunkins, H. M., enl. Aug. 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt.; (afterward Co. E, 1st H. A.); must. out Nov. 5, 1863, to re-enl.; re-enl. Nov. 6, 1863, Co. F, 1st H. A.; died of wds. May 20, 1864, at Spottsylvania, Va.
- Hoyt, Geo. C., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt. (afterward Co. F, 1st H. A.); must. out Nov. 5, 1863, to re-enl.; re-enl. Nov. 6, 1863, Co. F, 1st H. A.; must. out Aug. 16, 1865.
- Hodgson, Jas. F., private, must. in July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt.; (afterward 1st H. A.); disch. Aug. 5, 1863.
- Heard, Reuben F., private, enl. March 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 11th Regt. (afterward 1st H. A.); died of wds. received June 17, 1864.
- Hunkins, Horace, private, enl. Aug. 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th; re-enl. Nov. 6, 1863; died of wds. May 20, 1864, (probably same as H. M. Hunkins, above).
- Hanson, Wm. H., musician, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864; re-enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr. Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.
- Harrigan, Thos., private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 7, 1862.
- Hennessey, John, private, enl. July, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 24, 1862, disability.
- Hennessey, Daniel, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; no record after enl.
- Hill, John B., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; pro. sergt.-major June 11, 1862; com'd 2d lieut. Aug. 13, 1862; 1st lieut. May 21, 1863; must. out March 14, 1865.
- Hall, Stephen W., musician, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. May 28, 1863, disability; re-enl. Nov. 13, 1864, musician, 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Haynes, Wm. C., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; pro. corporal; must. out private, Aug. 3, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 26, 1865, (Hancock's Corps), U. S. Vet. Vols.; disch. Jan. 26, 1866.
- Harriman, John S., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Hewitt, Samuel G., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; died at Newbern, N. C., April 22, 1862, (Baltimore, Md.).
- Houston, Benj. F., 3 yrs., 17th Regt.
- Hodgkins, Stephen W., private, enl. April, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Hunkins, Ensign L., private, must. in Sept. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; trans. to U. S. Signal Corps Nov. 30, 1863; must. out Feb. 13, 1864, U. S. Signal Corps; discharged August 17, 1865.



- Hewes, Geo. W., private, enl. Jan. 3, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 5, 1861, Co. A, 17th Inf. as quartermaster; pro. to 2d lieutenant. June 16, 1865; must. out as quartermaster. July 11, 1865.
- Haynes, Daniel J., sergeant, enl. Oct. 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; com'd 2d lieutenant. Sept. 6, 1862; died Oct. 20, 1862.
- Haddock, Leonard H., corporal, enl. Sept. 7, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. July 31, 1862, disability; re-enl. 1st Cav. Jan. 28, 1864, in Co. H, 22d Regt.; never must. and rejected Jan. 29, 1864.
- Haseltine, Chas. H., private, enl. Sept. 11, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out as 1st sergeant. Jan. 29, 1865; disability.
- Hicks, Joseph, private, enl. Jan. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. April 9, 1861, disability.
- Hills, Chas. H., private, enl. Feb. 10, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 19th Regt.; must. out Dec. 21, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 22, 1863, Co. B, 19th Regt.; must. out June 17, 1865.
- Hayes, Jas., enl. Jan. 25, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 19th Regt.; disch. Oct. 20, 1862, disability.
- How, Henry J., captain, enl. Aug. 3, 1861, 3 yrs., 19th Regt.; com'd major Aug. 3, 1861; killed in battle at Nelson's Farm, near Richmond, June 30, 1862.
- Heath, Reuben P., private, enl. May 29, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; disch. Feb. 24, 1863, disability; re-enl. in Co. H, 2d H. A., Nov. 28, 1863, 3 yrs.; died Oct. 23, 1864, at Newbern, N. C.
- Hoyt, John L., sergeant, must. in Aug. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 19th Regt.; missing at Antietam; died of wounds. July 5, 1863.
- Holden, Levi, private, enl. Sept. 21, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 27th Regt.
- Hewins, Otis W., private, enl. Oct. 14, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; disch. April 2, 1862, disability.
- Heath, Daniel S., private, enl. Oct. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; died Oct. 6, 1862, at New Orleans.
- Hatch, Alfred B., private, enl. Nov. 2, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; disch. April 2, 1862, disability.
- Hogan, Thos., must. in Dec. 17, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; died Dec. 27, 1862, New Orleans.
- Hamilton, James, private, enl. Oct. 16, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 1st Cav.; must. out Jan. 22, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 23, 1861, Co. D, 1st Cav.; must. out as sergeant June 29, 1865.
- Holmes, Marnum E., sergeant, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., 1st Cav.; must. out Sept. 24, 1864; trans. to Co. L, 4th Cav.
- Hill, Geo. H., private, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; must. out Sept. 24, 1864; trans. to Co. L, 4th Cav.
- Haynes, Nathan W., corporal, must. in Sept. 5, 1861, 3 yrs., 2d Co. Sharpshooters; killed in action as sergeant, May 30, 1864, (Jan. 4, 1863, at Washington, D. C., adjutant-general's report).
- Heath, James H., must. in July 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. C, 19th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Dec. 21, 1863, Co. C, 19th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Heath, Jas., private, 3 yrs.
- Hansen, Joseph, private, July 28, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 3d Regt.; disch. June 13, 1864, disability.
- Harlow, Joseph W., enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 11th Regt.; must. out March 18, 1865.
- Hobourn, John (probably), private, must. in Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterward Co. B, 1st H. A.).
- Hyburn, John, disch. April 19, 1864, disability.
- Hardy, Geo. W., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt.; must. out July 5, 1865.
- Howard, George H., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 2 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterward Co. B, 1st H. A.); disch. June 10, 1862.
- Hobbs, Alonzo, private, must. in Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. June 11, 1863, disability.
- Haines, Andrew J., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. June 22, 1863, disability.
- Hubbard, James, private, must. in Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; disch. Jan. 3, 1863, disability.
- Hagan, Hugh, private, must. in July 30, 1862, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864; re-enl. in Co. A, 2d H. A., for 1 yr., Sept. 5, 1864; disch. June 2, 1865.
- Hardy, Joseph C., private, enl. July 8, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; pro. to 2d lieutenant. Sept. 6, 1864, and to 1st lieutenant. Nov. 29, 1864; must. out June 9, 1865.
- Harmon, Walter S., private, enl. July 25, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Feb. 3, 1863, disability.
- Hammond, Geo. K., private, enl. July 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch.
- Harriman, Ira F., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; must. out June 9, 1865.
- Hackett, Wm., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Jan. 17, 1862.
- Hall, Jesse F., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Feb. 17, 1863, disability.
- Heath, George W., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Dec. 13, 1862, disability; re-enl. July 23, 1864, as corporal, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Heath, Francis O., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Jan. 13, 1863, disability; re-enl. and appointed.
- Head, Addison, private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. March 31, 1863, disability.
- Hewett, John C., sergeant, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Jan. 23, 1863, disability.
- Hodges, Thorndike D., sergeant, enl. July 26, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 35th Regt.; pro. to 2d lieutenant. Jan. 1, 1863; disch. May 30, 1863; com'd in White's Brigade.
- Hoyt, Henry A., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam.
- Humphrey, Edward, 3 yrs.
- Hill, Chas., 3 yrs., 11th N. H. Regt.
- Hersom, Greenleaf, must. in Jan. 21, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 17th Regt.; disch. May 31, 1863, disability.
- How, James C., asst. surg., 3 yrs., New York.
- Hewins, Otis W., 3 yrs., Co. G, 20th Regt.
- Huntress, John, 3 yrs.
- Hunkins, H. W., private, 2 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.
- Houston, Andrew J., must. in Dec. 7, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.
- Harlow, Jos. M., private, must. in Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt.; disch. Nov. 8, 1864, disability.
- Hoburn, George, private, must. in Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., 14th Regt.
- Howard, Eben. M., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. C, 14th (afterward Co. G, 1st H. A.); disch. July 8, 1864.
- Howes, Alonzo, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.
- Harris, Robert, 1st lieutenant, must. in Jan. 9, 1862, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.
- Hanson, John W., enl. Sept. 4, 1862, 9 months, 6th Regt.; com. chaplain Sept. 1, 1862; must. out June 3, 1863; re-com. chaplain 6th (60th) Regt., 100 days, Aug. 4, 1864; must. out Oct. 27, 1864.
- Hassall, Robert, enl. Nov. 11, 1862, 9 months, 50th Regt.; com. chaplain Nov. 8, 1862; resigned March 10, 1863.
- Hurd, Ira, sergeant, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, 50th Regt.; com. 2d lieutenant. Nov. 9, 1862; must. out Aug. 21, 1863; re-com. 1st lieutenant. Co. I, 60th Regt., 100 days, July 23, 1864; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Harmon, Geo. K., corporal, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Hanson, Acel, private, enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Hunkins, Warren O., private, enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. and appointed sergeant Co. I, 60th Regt., 100 days, July 23, 1864; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Howard, Wm. S., private, must. in Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Hunt, Geo. W., private, enl. Aug. 20, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 21, 1863.
- Haynes, Jackson, private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Hanrahan, Jas., private, must. in Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.
- Haddock, Chas. H., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Hill, Andrew J., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Howe, Jas., private, enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 21, 1863.





- Hatch, Joshua, Jr., sergeant, Aug. 6, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Hill, Chas. H., sergeant, enl. Aug. 15, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Holt, Joseph F., sergeant, enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Hammond, Henry G., musician, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Havens, Silas F., private, enl. Sept. 2, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Haseltine, Wm. L., private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Harwood, Andrew J., private, enl. Aug. 26, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Hoyt, Benj. S., Jr., private, enl. Aug. 11, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. corporal 17th Unattached Inf., Aug. 5, 1864; must. out Nov. 12, 1864.
- Hoyt, Samuel P., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. Feb. 9, 1864, Co. D, 57th Inf.; died Nov. 14, 1864, City Point, Va.
- Howe, Edwin M., private, enl. Aug. 26, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Hoyt, Ezra, private, enl. Sept. 2, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Hubbard, Oliver S., private, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Hoyt, Geo. N., wagoner, 1st H. A.
- Hunkins, John N., must. in Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Hunkins, Harry F., enl. Oct. 4, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; died at Baton Rouge, July 1, 1863.
- Hall, Benj. F., enl. Nov. 4, 1862, 9 months, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Hammond, Walter S., must. in Aug. 11, 1862, 3 yrs, Co. H, 32d Regt.; no further record, trans. to 35th Regt.
- Hinds, Simon D., must. in Jan. 5, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. B, 59th Regt.; trans. June 1, 1865, to Co. B, 57th Regt.; must. out July 30, 1865; absent, sick.
- Hurd, Wm. H. H., private, enl. Nov. 27, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A.; prisoner June 22, 1864.
- Hawkins, Lewis, private, enl. April 29, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. K, 1st H. A.; must. out Aug. 16, 1865.
- Hosum, Geo. W., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. D, 2d H. A.; died Sept. 11, 1863, at Newbern, N. C.
- Haley, John, private, enl. Sept. 5, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 2d H. A.; trans. to 17th Regt.; disch. June 30, 1865, in Co. E, by order of War Dept.
- Holden, Geo. A., private, enl. Aug. 22, 1864, Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.
- Hackett, Chas. F., private, enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.
- Harwood, Henry V., private, enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.
- Hargreaves, Daniel R., private, enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.
- Hoyt, Geo. W., private, enl. Feb. 18, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 1 Batt'n H. A.; must. out Feb. 24, 1865.
- Hoyt, Geo., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. B, 1 Batt'n H. A.; must. out June 29, 1865.
- Healey, Daniel, private, enl. Sept. 13, 1864, 1 yr., 29th Unattached H. A.; died at Ft. Strong Hosp. Jan. 12, 1865.
- Huse, Nathan, private, enl. Jan. 27, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. C, 1st Cav.; must. out as bugler June 29, 1865.
- Holbrook, Leroy A., corporal, enl. Dec. 31, 1861, 1 yr., Co. L, 3d Cav.; must. out in Co. E, Sept. 28, 1865; also enl. July 23, 1864, as private, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864, exp. of service.
- Hammond, Chas. H., private, enl. Dec. 1, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.
- Hinds, Lorenzo, private, enl. Nov. 30, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 11, 1865.
- Hall, Frederick A., private, enl. Sept. 22, 1864, 3 yrs., 7th Batt'y; must. out July 12, 1865, G. O.
- Huntress, Wm. H., private, enl. Feb. 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 59th Regt.; trans. to 57th Regt.; must. out in Co. F, July 30, 1865.
- Hall, Samuel A., private, enl. July 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; must. out Aug. 28, 1861.
- Harris, Charles, private, enl. Sept. 16, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 11th Regt.
- Haseltine, Richard, private, enl. Nov. 19, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 30th Regt.; disch. March 30, 1862.
- Hause, David, must. in Sept. 29, 1861, 1 yr., Co. E, 61st Regt.; must. out June 4, 1865.
- Hicks, Joseph T., must. in Nov. 27, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A.; must. out Aug. 16, 1865, in Co. A.
- Hall, Hendrick, private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Hanson, Isaac, private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Holt, Abbot L., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Holbrook, Leroy A., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Hoyt, Jos. S., must. in Dec. 7, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; died Aug. 31, 1864, at Andersonville.
- Hartly, Wm. H., enl. Dec. 30, 1861, 1 yr., Co. B, 1st Batt'n, Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Huse, Edward E., enl. Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., Co. A, 1st Batt'n, Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Harriman, Chas. M., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt'n, Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Hogle, Lucius, enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. D, 1st Batt'n, Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Harney, James, enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. D, 1st Batt'n, Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Holt, F., enl. Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., 1st Batt'n Front. Cav.; 1st sergt.; pro. 2d lieutenant May 13, 1865; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Hardy, Geo. N., enl. Nov. 13, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf. (corporal); must. out June 30, 1865.
- Haley, Jeremiah, enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Hardison, John F., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Harris, Wm. H., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 16th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Hood, Hiram D., enl. Nov. 11, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Hood, Samuel, enl. Nov. 11, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Judson, Isaac P., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; killed at Antietam.
- Jackson, Wm., must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 17th Regt.; disch. Feb. 27, 1863; re-enl. Sept. 2, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1th Cav.; corporal, Nov. 1, 1865; must. out Nov. 11, 1865.
- Johnson, Charles B., private, enl. Feb. 24, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterward Co. M, 1st H. A.); must. out Feb. 24, 1863; re-enl. Feb. 25, Co. M, 1st H. A.; must. out Aug. 16, 1865.
- Johnson, Horatio, private, enl. Feb. 26, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterward Co. M, 1st H. A.); taken prisoner at Gettysburg, must. out Feb. 28, 1864; re-enl. Co. M, 1 H. A., Feb. 29th; disch. March 31, 1865, disability.
- Jones, Samuel W., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Dec. 4, 1862, disability.
- Johnson, Harrison, private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Johnson, Wm. H., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out Feb. 1, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. Feb. 2, Co. H, 22d Regt.; trans. Oct. 26, 1864, to Co. M, 32d Regt.; must. out June 29, 1865.
- Jaques, Edwin H., 3 yrs., 19th Regt.
- Jaques, John I., 3 yrs., 19th Regt.
- Jaques, Melvin F., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; trans. to V. R. Corps, May 28, 1861.
- Jenness, Wm. B., enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. twice at Antietam; disch. Dec. 31, 1862, disability; (name not found in report of adjt.-gen.).
- Jenness, Joseph K., private, enl. Dec. 24, 1861, 3 yrs., 11th Regt., New York; pro. to 2d lieut. Aug. 9, 1864; 1st lieut. March 23, 1865.





- Johnson, George L., private, enl. Sept. 17, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; died June 3, 1862, at Gaines' Mill, Va.
- Judge, Charles W., 1st sergt., enl. Sept. 1, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 17th Regt.; disch. Jan. 31, 1863, disability; Dec. 30, 1861, re-enl. as sergt., 1 yr., Co. B, 1st Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Jeffers, Geo. W., enl. July 17, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. D, 3d H. A.; trans. to Co. I, 12th Inf.; drafted before enl.; trans. June 24, 1864, to 36th Inf.; no further record.
- Johnson, Edwin L., corporal, enl. Aug. 23, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; died at quarantine below New Orleans, Feb. 27, 1863.
- Jacobs, Wyman N., private, enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; died at Baton Rouge, July 7, 1863.
- Johnson, Charles L., private, enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Johnson, Charles H., private, enl. Aug. 20, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; disch. Jan. 5, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 4, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; disch. June 20, 1865.
- Johnson, Henry H., private, enl. Aug. 23, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out as corporal Aug. 24, 1863.
- Johnson, Wm. F., enl. Aug. 26, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; musician; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Johnson, Frank H., private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; disch. Dec. 6, 1862; re-enl. in Co. D, 1st Cav., Jan. 29, 1864, for 3 yrs.; must. out June 29, 1865.
- Jacques, Henry, private, enl. Aug. 23, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Jenness, Sumner G., private, enl. Sept. 17, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Nov. 19, 1862, Boxford.
- Jackson, William, enl. Sept. 2, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. L, 4th Cav.; corp. Nov. 1, 1865; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.
- Johnson, O-good, must. in Feb. 4, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 59th Regt.; no further record.
- Jaques, F. Newton, private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Jewett, Wm. H. (2), must. in Feb. 17, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. C, 19th Regt.; died July 1, 1862, Harrison's Landing, Va.
- Joselyn, Wm. N., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt'n, Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Kimball, Varnum A., private, enl. June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt.; must. out June 24, 1864.
- Kidder, Chas. H., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; must. out July 5, 1864.
- Kenney, Thomas, private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.
- Kimball, Charles H., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; died Oct. 3, 1862; buried from Music Hall, Haverhill, Oct. 7, 1862.
- Kittredge, Frank S., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt. (afterward Co. I, 1st H. A.); must. out Dec. 6, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 7, Co. I, 1 H. A.; must. out Aug. 16, 1865.
- Kennedy, Thos. H., private, enl. March 13, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. M, 1st H. A.); died of wds. July 31, 1864, at Washington, D. C.
- Kimball, James, enl. Aug. 24, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. I, 60th Regt.; disch. Jan. 5, 1863, disability.
- Kemp, Samuel R., private, enl. May 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Kimball, Charles W., private, enl. Aug. 7, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; trans. to Co. E; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Kelly, Joseph G., sergt., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 5, 1864; 2d lieut. June 16, 1865; must. out in Co. A July 11, 1865, as 1st sergt.
- Kenney, Dominick, private, must. in July 31, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt., pro. corp.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 4, 1864, as sergt. Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out in Co. C July 11, 1865.
- Keif, Joseph P., private, enl. April 26, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Jan. 18, 1863, disability; re-enl. Co. L, 4th Cav., Sept. 18, 1864, for 1 yr.; corp. Jan. 1, 1865; sergt. May 21, 1865; disch. June 21 (May 26), 1865, G. O. of War Dept.
- Kimball, Charles A., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Dec. 2, 1863, disability.
- Kenniston, Nathl. F., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Kimball, John T., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Kelly, James N., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; in hosp. at Newark, N. J., Aug. 31, 1862; dropped from rolls July 29, 1863; (but elsewhere record of Kelly, James N.; must. in Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. M, 32d Regt.; must. out June 29, 1865; exp. of term).
- Kimball, Charles A., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Feb. 22, 1862, disability.
- Knowles, Charles K., sergt., enl. Sept. 7, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; pro. 2d lieut. Dec. 16, 1862; wd. at Gettysburg; died of wds. July 13, 1863; buried at Haverhill July 30, 1863.
- Kenniston, Royal F., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; trans. to V. R. C. Aug. 7, 1862.
- Kerrigan, Wm. E., sergt., enl. Sept. 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; wd. June 16, 1862; trans. V. R. C. Oct. 28, 1863; disch. Dec. 13, 1864.
- King, Peter, corp., enl. Sept. 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; must. out Dec. 19, 1864.
- Kimball, Charles, private, enl. Sept. 18, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 30th Regt.; died at Baton Rouge, La., Sept. 9, 1863.
- Kaler, Cornelius, private, must. in Sept. 3, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. D, 1st Cav. (Kaler first enl. private in Co. D, 5th Inf.; must. out July 31, 1864; must. out to re-enl. Dec. 31, 1863; re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; sergt. Co. D, 1st Cav.; 2d lieut. 5th Cav. March 1, 1864; declined com'd 5th Cav.; re-enl. 1st lieut. 5th Cav. March 8, 1864; capt. 5th Cav. April 30, 1864; must. out Oct. 31, 1865).
- Keif, Thomas, corp., must. in Sept. 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; must. out April 20, 1864; re-enl. sergt. Co. L, 4th Cav. April 21, 1864; 2d lieut. April 6, 1865; 1st lieut. July 13, 1865; must. out Nov. 20, 1865; afterwards entered the navy.
- Kendall, George S., 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d Vt. Regt.
- Kelley, Edward P., private, enl. Aug. 8, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; must. out June 9, 1865.
- Kenney, Silas W., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. as sergt. June 5, 1863, disability.
- Keenan, Frank T., sergt., enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Nov. 22, 1862, disability.
- Kimball, Daniel S., private, enl. Aug. 8, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; pro. 2d lieut. Nov. 29, 1864; 1st lieut. Jan. 19, 1865; must. out as 2d lieut. June 9, 1865.
- Kingman, George H., 3 yrs., 19th Regt.
- Kimball, Daniel, 3 yrs.
- Kendall, George S., 3 yrs., Berdan's N. Y. Sharpshooters.
- Kasson, Wm. W., 3 yrs., Co. B, 2d N. H. Regt.; in hosp. at Newark, N. J., Aug. 31, 1862.
- Kelly, Isaiah, must. in Dec. 9, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. I, 1st H. A.; died Aug. 2, 1864, at Haddington Hospital, Va.
- Kelly, David M., private, enl. Aug. 2, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; q.m.-sergt. Nov. 12, 1862; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. in Co. I, 60th Regt., 100 days, July 23, 1864; q.m.-sergt. Aug. 5, 1864; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Kimball, Charles A., corp., enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.
- King, Patrick, private, enl. Sept. 8, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 23, 1864, re-enl. July 11, 1864, Co. D, 2d H. A.; must. out Sept. 3, 1865.
- Kelly, James N., must. in Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. M, 32d Regt.; must. out June 29, 1865.
- Kimball, Moses, private, enl. Dec. 31, 1861, 1 yr., Co. L, 3d Cav.; must. out in Co. E, Sept. 28, 1865.
- Kelly, Charles A., private, enl. Sept. 21, 1861, 3 yrs., 7th Batt.; must. out July 12, 1865, G. O.
- Knox, John H., private, enl. Feb. 27, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 59th Regt.; pris.; must. out June 3, 1865, order of War Dept.
- Kimball, Marcus, private, enl. July 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; must. out Feb. 24, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. Feb. 25th; disch. May 14, 1865, as sergt. Co. A.
- Kelly, Thomas B., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Kelly, James, must. in Dec. 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. C, 28th Regt.; must. out Jan. 1, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. Jan. 2, 1864, private, Co. C, 28th Inf.; pro. to principal musician Dec. 1, 1864; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Kimball, Edward S., must. in Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, 1st Batt'n, Front. Cav.; must. out June 3, 1865.
- Kent, Charles E., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, Co. C, 1st Batt'n, Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.



- Kelley, George W., must. in Dec. 9, 1863, 3 yrs. Co. I, 1st H. A.
- Kimball, Charles N., must. in Nov. 14, 1861, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Kimball, Walter B., must. in Nov. 14, 1861, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Kingsley, George W., must. in Nov. 14, 1861, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Lancaster, F. A., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.; taken pris. at Gettysburg; pro. sergt.-major from corp. Dec. 14, 1863; pro. 1st lieut. May 11, 1864; must. out July 8, 1864.
- Liberty, Peter, private, enl. July 6, 1861, 3 yrs. Co. E, 14th Regt. (afterwards Co. E, 1st H. A.); must. out and re-enl. Nov. 28, 1863, Co. E, 1st H. A.; disch. Nov. 25, 1864, disability.
- Lawson, Francis E., private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Jan. 10, 1862.
- Lawton, Joseph W., private, enl. July 25, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 4, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out in Co. A, July 11, 1865.
- Leonard, George C., private, enl. Sept. 7, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; pro. corp.; disch. Oct. 27, 1862, disability.
- Lord, John W., private, enl. Sept. 14, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Sept. 24, 1862, disability.
- Lord, James H., muc., enl. July 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. in same Co. Dec. 21, 1863; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Lake, Joseph W., private, enl. Aug. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.
- Livingston, Henry B., private, enl. Sept. 19, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Oct. 9, 1862, disability.
- Lee, Hugh, private, enl. Dec. 1, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; disch. Dec. 2, 1863.
- Lynch, Henry, enl. April 19, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 29th Regt.; no record after enlistment.
- Locke, Reuben L., private, enl. Nov. 2, 1861, 3 yrs., 4th Batt.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 3, 1864, must. out Oct. 11, 1865, as corp. 4th Batt.
- Liggett, John, private, enl. Nov. 8, 1861, 3 yrs., 4th Batt.; disch. Feb. 25, 1862, disability.
- Lamb, Lawrence, private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 11th Regt. (afterwards Co. E, 1st H. Art.); died of wds. June 19, 1864, Petersburg, Va.
- Little, Moses C., 3 yrs., Co. D, 19th Regt.; killed at Fredericksburg Dec. 11, 1862.
- Lane, Henry H., private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. C, 17th Regt.; disch. Nov. 25, 1861; re-enl.
- Lord, Charles H., private, must. in July 23, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 11, 1863, disability; re-enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; disch. June 10, 1865.
- Leach, Benj. F., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Nov. 12, 1862, disability.
- Longfellow, Edward P., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Nov. 28, 1862, disability.
- Lufkin, Elbridge, corp., enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch., disability.
- Le Bosquet, James, private, enl. Aug. 3, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Jan. 22, 1863, disability; died at Haverhill, 1864.
- Locke, J. K., private, must. in Aug. 21, 1861, 3 yrs., 19th Unattached Regt.; no record after enlistment.
- Livingston, Murray V., bugler, enl. Sept. 16, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 1st Cav.; disch. and re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864, Co. D; must. out June 29, 1865.
- Le Bosquet, Albert, private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 23, 1863; re-enl. and app. sergt. in Co. I, 60th Regt., 100 days, July 24, 1864; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Laid, Thomas E., private, enl. Aug. 23, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Littlefield, Hazen S., private, enl. Aug. 24, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1864.
- Leonard, John, private, must. in Oct. 4, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.
- Lee, George Oscar, corp., enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Lane, Lawrence, private, enl. Sept. 5, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 2d H. A.; trans. to 17th Regt. Jan. 16, 1865; disch. in Co. F June 30, 1865, order of War Dept.
- Livingston, Edward H., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Liberty, Joseph, private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A.; must. out and re-enl. Nov. 28, 1863; killed in action June 16, 1864, at Petersburg, Va.
- Laundry, Joseph, private, enl. March 19, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 1st H. A.
- La Point, Joseph, private, enl. April 25, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. D, 1st Batt. H. A.; must. out Sept. 12, 1865.
- Loung, George P., private, enl. March 22, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. A, 2d Cav.; must. out July 20, 1865.
- Lovejoy, Edwin B., private, enl. Sept. 22, 1864, 3 yrs., 7th Batt.; must. out July 12, 1865, G. O.
- Lovejoy, Daniel H., private, enl. Aug. 12, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 40th Regt.; disch. as corp. June 25, 1864, disability.
- Lyons, John, must. in Dec. 2, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. K, 3d H. A.; must. out Sept. 18, 1865.
- Larkins, Charles O., enl. Sept. 17, 1864, V. R. C.; must. out Nov. 30, 1865, order of War Dept.
- Littlefield, Joseph A., enl. Nov. 14, 1861, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Morse, George W., sergt., enl. May 25, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d Regt.; must. out Dec. 30, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 31, 1863; pro. 1st lieut. Co. H, 2d Inf. June 9, 1865; must. out July 14, 1865.
- Murphy, Dennis, private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. C, 12th Regt.; must. out as sergt. July 8, 1864.
- Merrill, George L. (Lemuel S.), private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; disch. March 12, 1863.
- McKown, John B., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out and re-enl. Nov. 24, 1863; died Nov. 18, 1864, Millen, Ga.
- McCoy, Patrick, private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out July 8, 1864, in Co. I.
- Merrill, Henry S., com. sergt., enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; pro. 2d lieut. July 3, 1862; resigned May 11, 1863.
- McNamara, Michael C., capt., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; com. Aug. 21st; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Marony, James, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; com. 2d lieut. Aug. 21, 1861; pro. 1st lieut. Jan. 31, 1862; resigned Aug. 12, 1862.
- Mulvey, Henry, corp., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out as sergt. Aug. 3, 1864.
- McCarthy, Thomas, corp., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.
- Mahoney, John, private, must. in Nov. 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; wd. at Winton, N. C., July, 1863; no further record.
- Masteron, John, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.
- Mohndy, George, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864; re-enl. in Co. D, 2d H. A. Aug. 29, 1864; trans. Feb. 3, 1865, to Co. H, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- McGrath, Thomas, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; pro. corp.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 3, 1864; must. out in Co. A June 11, 1865.
- McKane, Patrick, private, enl. April, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.
- Moyle, Bernard, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Aug. 3, 1864.
- Mulligan, Michael, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 6, 1864, disability.
- McKana, Patrick, private, must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Dec. 5, 1861, disability.
- Morse, Gardner S., enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1861.
- Metcalf, Edward D., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Metcalf, George A., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Murray, Thomas, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Meador, Charles F., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out to re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864, as corp. Co. B; trans. to Co. G; must. out as sergt. July 11, 1865, Co. F.
- Manning, Byrne, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.
- Mitchell, James S., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861; must. out Feb. 1, 1864; re-enl.; trans. to 32d M. V.; must. out as corp. Co. M, June 29, 1865.





- Mahoney, John (2d), 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.
- Morse, John H., private, must. in Jan. 2, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 17th Regt.; disch. Feb. 17, 1863, disability.
- Marden, Henry F., corp., enl. Jan. 9, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 17th Regt.
- Mills, Charles E., private, enl. Feb. 18, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt. (had before enl. private Co. D, 5th Inf. May 21, 1861; must. out July 31, 1861); wd. in North Carolina Dec., 1862 (Foster's Expedition); must. out Feb. 19, 1863.
- Mills, John E., musician, enl. Feb. 26, 1862, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.; disch. Oct. 3, 1862, order of War Dept. (had before served 3 months); May 1st to July 31, 1861, Co. D, 5th Regt., musician.
- Moses, John, enl. Feb. 14, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 19th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Dec. 21, 1863; must. out June 30, 1865.
- McQuestion, Clinton, private, enl. Aug. 21, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 20th Regt.; pris. at Ball's Bluff, long at Richmond; killed at Antietam.
- Morrill, John W., private, must. in Sept. 29, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; killed at Wilderness, Va., May 6, 1864; returned as (Merrill).
- McIntosh, James, private, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; in hosp. at Newark, N. J., Aug. 31, 1862, blind; disch. Sept. 3, 1862, disability; died Oct. 14, 1862, at Newark.
- Manning, Timothy, enl. Aug. 15, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. C, 40th Regt.; must. out May 13, 1865, order of War Dept.
- Meagher, John F., private, enl. Sept. 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; died of wds. at Washington.
- Manning, Thomas, private, enl. Oct. 29, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 30th Regt.; died Aug. 20, 1862, at New Orleans.
- Merrill, Joseph W., private, enl. Nov. 2, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; corp.; disch. Dec. 8, 1863, disability.
- McCarty, Patrick, private, enl. Nov. 25, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; must. out July 5, 1866.
- Morse, Horace, enl. Dec. 25, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L (Unattached Co.), 3d Cav.; disch. for promotion July 5, 1863; 2d Lieut. 97th U. S. Colored Inf.; resigned July 19, 1861.
- Mahoney, John (3d), private, enl. Nov. 4, 1861, 3 yrs., 4th Batt.; must. out and re-enl. Dec. 27, 1863; must. out Oct. 14, 1865.
- Moody, Elhanan H., private, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 1st Cav.; trans. to Co. L, 4th Cav.; disch. May 11, 1863, disability.
- Moore, Martin, private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt. afterwards 1st H. A.; must. out July 5, 1864.
- Morse, Frank, private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. April 4, 1863, disability.
- Marden, George O., private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 17th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; died Jan. 1, 1865, at Andersonville, Ga.
- Millet, Wm F., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. July 17, 1863, disability.
- Merrill, James L., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; trans. to signal corps Aug. 1, 1863.
- Meador, John L., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 10, 1863, disability.
- Morse, Henry M., private, enl. July 25, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Jan. at 1864, disability.
- Monette, Luther, private, must. in Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Jan. 1, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 2, 1864; must. out in Co. B July 11, 1865.
- Marsh, Martin L., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Dec. 19, 1862, disability; re-enl. in Co. D, 1st Cav. Feb. 19, 1864; must. out June 28, 1865.
- McClain, Charles D., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Feb. 6, 1863, disability.
- Merrill, Charles A., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt. must. out June 28, 1865, disability.
- Merrill, Edmund N., private, must. in Aug. 17, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; enl. as private in 33d Regt. and trans. to 35th Regt.; pro. com. sergt. Aug. 21, 1862; disch. March 12, 1863; died at home May 16, 1863.
- Morrill, Edward H., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; pro. 2d Lieut., 35th Regt. April 5, 1863; must. out Sept. 21, 1864; 1st Lieut., 61st Inf. Sept. 22, 1864; must. out June 4, 1865, brevet capt.
- Morse, Sylvester, private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Jan. 21, 1863, disability.
- Murray, Joseph, 3 yrs.
- Murray, David B., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Nov. 22, 1862, disability; re-enl. and appointed corp., Co. I, 60th Inf., 100 days, July 23, 1864; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Mills, Wm. W., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out July 5, 1866.
- Morrill, Wm., private, must. in Sept. 30, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 16, 1863, disability; re-enl. in Co. F, 2d H. A. Sept. 5, 1864, 1 yr.; must. out June 26, 1865.
- Morse, Hiram, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.
- McFee, Hamden, 3 yrs.
- Monson, James H., 3 yrs.
- Magoon, Samuel A., must. in Sept. 16, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 26th Regt.; disch. June 22, 1862, disability.
- Morse, Charles C., 2d Lieut., enl. Feb. 19, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 17th Regt.; disch. March 23, 1863; resigned.
- Mahoney, John, Jr., private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. April 3, 1863, disability.
- Morrison, John, private, enl. Aug. 11, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed at Gettysburg July 3, 1863.
- McGuire, Thomas, 20th Regt.
- Messer, Carlos P., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, 50th Regt.; com. col., Nov. 11, 1862; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Mealy, Nicholas J., private, enl. Oct. 31, 1861, 9 months, Co. C, 60th Regt. (in 3 months Co.); must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- McDermitt, Hugh, private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; wd. at Fort Hudson, La., June, 1863; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- McWilliams, Samuel, private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- McQuestion, Simeon, private, enl. Aug. 30, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- McLaughlin, Frank, private, enl. Sept. 7, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. corps, Co. C, 17th Regt. Sept. 16, 1864; must. out June 30, 1865, order of War Dept.
- Morse, James W., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; disch. Jan. 5, 1863.
- Merrill, George W., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out as sergt. Aug. 21, 1863.
- Murphy, Timothy, private, enl. Oct. 20, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1864; re-enl. Sept. 17, 1864, Co. C, 17th Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865, order of War Dept.
- Moulton, Geo. L., private, enl. Aug. 23, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Mace, Daniel W., private, enl. Aug. 22, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Mackey, Andrew J., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; died April 9, 1863, at Baton Rouge.
- Merrill, Howard M., private, enl. Aug. 11, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Morrison, Augustus G., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. in Co. M, 1th H. A., Aug. 20, 1864, 1 yr.; must. out June 17, 1865.
- Mulheren, Hugh, private, enl. Aug. 15, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Murray, Hugh, private, enl. Sept. 17, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- McKenna, Edward, private, enl. Sept. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Marsh, Jos. W., private, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 25, 1863.
- Morrill, Chas. L., must. in Dec. 5, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 50th Regt.; trans. June 1, 1865, to Co. A, 57th Inf.; must. out Aug. 5, 1865; order of War Dept.
- McQuade, John, private, enl. Sept. 5, 1864, 1 yr., Co. I, 3d H. A.; must. out June 26, 1865.
- McCart, Wm., private, enl. Sept. 20, 1864, 1 yr., 29th Unattached H. A.; must. out June 16, 1865.
- Martin, F. Orin, corporal, enl. Aug. 20, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.
- McCarthy, Wm., enl. Sept. 20, 1864, 1 yr., 29th Co. Unattached H. A.; must. out Sept. 15, 1865.
- McElvay, Thos., private, enl. Jan. 11, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.
- McGaffey, Henry, private, enl. Sept. 17, 1864, 1 yr., Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 20, 1865, order of War Dept.



- Miller, Benj., Jr., private, enl. Sept. 17, 1864, 1 yr., Co. O, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865, G. O.
- Miner, Chas. A., private, enl. Sept. 13, 1864, 1 yr., Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865, G. O.
- Masterson, Thomas, private, enl. July 10, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out to re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; Jan. 2, 1864, re-enl.; must. out in Co. A, July 11, 1865.
- Murphy, Daniel, private, enl. Aug. 5, 1864, 1 yr., Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865, by order of War Dept.
- Moody, Edward, private, enl. May 16, 1864, 90 days, 13th Unattached Inf.; must. out Aug. 15, 1864.
- Moulton, Newlan, private, enl. May 16, 1864, 90 days, 13th Unattached Inf.; must. out Aug. 15, 1864; re-enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Martyn, Chas. A., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- McCoy, Frank, private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Merrill, Alphonso T., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Merrill, Francis, private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Merrill, Walter, Jr., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Morrison, Noah H., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Morse, Stephen E., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- McLaughlin, Jas. R., must. in Oct. 13, 1862, 9 months, Co. H, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Magnent, Oliver, enl. Dec. 26, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.
- Miller, Frank C., enl. Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, 1st Batt'n Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Miller, Robt., enl. Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, 1st Batt'n Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Miller, Edward O., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt'n Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- McEvay, Michael, enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt'n Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Morris, George H., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt'n Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Morgan, Wm. H., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., Unattached Co. Inf. (17th Regt.).
- Moulton, Newlan, enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., Unattached Co. Inf. (17th Regt.); must. out June 30, 1865.
- Noyes, William H., private, enl. June 21, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; trans. to V. R. C. July 1, 1863.
- Noyes, George D., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.; must. out July 8, 1864.
- Noyes, John, Jr., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 13th Regt.; must. out Aug. 1, 1864.
- Newton, Thomas F., sergt., enl. July 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; pro. 2d lieut. Dec. 28, 1864; 1st lieut. July 3, 1862; disch. July 11, 1866.
- Nagle, Richard, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; died at Baton Rouge, La., 1, 1862.
- Norman, Michael, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Jan. 18, 1862, disability.
- Norton, Richard E., corp., enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out as sergt. Aug. 3, 1864.
- Norton, William S., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; corp.; disch. Oct. 5, 1862, disability.
- Norton, John, private, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.
- Nelson, William H., private, enl. Sept. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 22d Regt.; trans. to V. R. C. Nov. 15, 1863.
- Newman, Randall P., must. in Oct. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 17th Regt.; must. out Dec. 6, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 6, 1863; corp.; must. out July 11, 1865.
- Naighan, Daniel, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.
- Needham, J. Austin, private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); died at Andersonville, Ga., Sept. 19, 1864.
- Newsmith, Clarence E., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); disch. Jan. 7, 1863, order of war dept. disability.
- Nichols, George M., 3 yrs., 32d Regt.
- Norris, Albert G., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); died Aug. 1864, at Andersonville, Ga.
- Norris, Lyman F., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); prisoner at Gettysburg; at parole Annapolis, Md.; died July 5, 1864, at Andersonville, Ga.
- Netter, Martin, private, enl. Aug. 2, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Dec. 1, 1862, disability.
- Nichols, Walter, private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; trans. to V. R. C. March 21, 1864.
- Noyes, Ariel S., sergt., enl. Feb. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Feb. 16, 1864; sergt.; wd. in Co. C, March 8, 1865; must. out June 21, 1865; absent as corp.
- Nevins, Michael, 3 yrs., Co. F, 40th Regt. N. Y.
- Noyes, Hiram N., corp., enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out as private Aug. 24, 1863.
- Nicholas, Addison D., private, enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out as private Aug. 24, 1863.
- Nason, Edward A., private, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out as private Aug. 24, 1863.
- Norwood, George, private, enl. Aug. 24, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.
- Noonan, Michael, corp., must. in Sept. 20, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 35th Regt.; must. out June 9, 1865.
- Nute, George W., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 1st H. A.; must. out Nov. 6, 1863, to re-enlist; re-enl.; must. out June 2, 1865; absent in Co. M.
- Nibbs, Henry W., private, enl. Dec. 31, 1864, 1 yr., Co. I, 3d Cav.; must. out in Co. E, Sept. 28, 1865.
- Norton, David T., enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864; re-enl. Dec. 30, 1864, Co. A, 1st Batt'n Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Nichols, Frank B., enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Nelson, Benj. S., enl. Nov. 13, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf. (corporal); must. out June 30, 1865.
- Osgood, James M., orderly sergt., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. K, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); com. 2d lieut. Nov. 21, 1861; 1st lieut. Jan. 18, 1862; disch. May 27, 1862; re-enl. as private at Georgetown Aug. 1, 1862.
- Osgood, Orlando F., private, must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs.; disch. Dec. 7, 1861, by G. O. No. 91; re-enl. Feb. 20, 1862, Co. E, 1st H. A.; trans. to Co. H, 19th Invalid Corps Oct. 27, 1863; disch. Feb. 20, 1864, surg. certif. for disability.
- O'Hara, John, corp., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. for disability Nov. 30, 1862.
- Orell, Maxim, private, enl. Sept. 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out Oct. 17, 1864.
- O'Connor, Patrick, private, enl. Nov. 2, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; must. out Feb. 12, 1864; re-enl. Feb. 13, 1864, sergt., Co. G, 30th Regt.; must. out July 5, 1866.
- Ordway, Calvin B., enl. 3 yrs., 31st Cav.
- Osgood, Samuel O., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. May 30, 1864, disability.
- Osgood, Joseph H., private, enl. July 22, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. June 11, 1863, disability; re-enl. Co. D, 1st Cav. Jan. 27, 1864; disch. June 6, 1865, disability.
- O'Brian, Thos., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Apr. 23, 1863, disability.
- Orberton, Wm. W. S., corp., enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Osgood, Jacob, private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Ordway, Hazel E., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- O'Meeley, Michael, private, enl. Sept. 2, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.
- O'Conner, Timothy, private, enl. Nov. 30, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; disch. Dec. 15, 1863, disability; rejected recruit.
- Osgood, Geo. H., private, enl. Sept. 20, 1864, 3 yrs., 7th Batt.; must. out July 12, 1865, by G. O.
- Orall, Geo. W., private, enl. June 27, 1864, 1 yr., Co. H, 17th Regt.; died Apr. 23, 1865, at Morehead City, N. C.
- Ordway, Alvin B., enl. Oct. 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st Cav.; pro. corp. July 7, 1863; sergt.; must. out Nov. 7, 1864.





- Ordway, Albert H. mus., must. in Aug. 5, 1864, 100 days, 17th Unattached Inf.; must. out Nov. 12, 1864.
- Oldson, Jos. H., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Co., Unattached Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Phillips, Wm., private, enl. June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt.; wd. before Richmond; must. out June 21, 1864.
- Pace, Edgar B., private, enl. June 15, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt.; pro. sergt.; must. out Dec. 28, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 29, pro. 1st lieut. July 23, 1864; captain; Oct. 9, 1864; disch. Apr. 11, 1865.
- Place (Johns), Jos. H., private, must. in June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 12th Regt.; trans. to V. R. Corps Nov. 24, 1864.
- Page, Walter S., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; trans. to 5th U. S. Art., Nov. 11, 1862.
- Pillsbury, John M., July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.), hosp. steward; disch. Oct. 31, 1861, disability.
- Parshley, Chas. H., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt. afterwards 1st H. A.; must. out and re-enl. Nov. 25, 1863; disch. July 28, 1865.
- Priest, Johnson, private, enl. Jan. 2, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. L, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); disch. Apr. 30, 1864, disability.
- Parker, Geo. E., priv., enl. Mar. 14, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); disch. Oct. 21, 1863, disability.
- Parmelee, Henry H., private, enl. Mar. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); sergt.; died of wds. recd. June 22, 1864.
- Pitts, Henry H., enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out July 3, 1864; absent, sick.
- Peabody, Joel, private, enl. Feb. 21, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. L, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out Feb. 22, 1865.
- Putnam, Alfred, sergt., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th 3d Regt.; disch. as private Aug. 31, 1863, disability; re-enl. for 1 yr., Co. A, 17th Regt., Sept. 6, 1864; disch. in Co. A June 30, 1865, O. O.
- Place, George H., corp., enl. April 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out as 1st sergt. Aug. 3, 1864.
- Pinkham, Vincent T., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. May 28, 1863, disability.
- Pattee, Harrison M., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Peirce, Frank C., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Pitcz (Pick), John, private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Peirce, Samuel W., private, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. June 30, 1863, disability.
- Philbrook, David T., sergt., enl. Sept. 19, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed June 27, 1862, at Gaine's Mill, Va.
- Palmer, George F., private, enl. Sept. 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Nov. 14, 1862, disability.
- Pervear, James K., private, enl. Aug. 24, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th, trans. to 4th U. S. Art. Oct. 23, 1862.
- Perr, Samuel T., private, enl. Oct. 1, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Oct. 1, 1862, disability.
- Plummer, Daniel L., enl. Sept. 1, 1861, 3 yrs., 3d Batt.; must. out Sept. 15, 1864.
- Pemberton, Lewis E., private, enl. Sept. 3, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 23d Regt.; disch. May 19, 1862, disability.
- Phillips, James, enl. Oct. 7, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 28th Regt.; killed at Chantilly Sept. 1, 1862.
- Page, Charles, private, enl. Oct. 18, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 30th Regt.; disch. March 8, 1864, disability.
- Parker, Niles G., sergt., enl. Sept. 19, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 1st Cav.; lieut. in 1st So. Car. Colored Vols. about Jan., 1863; disch. Feb. 25, 1862.
- Perrere, George H., private, enl. Aug. 8, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; disch. March 7, 1863, disability; re-enl. Sept. 19, 1864, Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865; order of war dept.
- Peirce, Darius, private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Peirce, Levi K., enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Philbrick, Isaac H., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; must. out June 9, 1865.
- Pemberton, Davis E., 3 yrs., Co. B, 20th Regt.
- Porter, Frank A., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; killed on picket, Nov. 29, 1863, at Knoxville, Tenn.
- Palmer, Joseph B., private, enl. Feb. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. July 4, 1863, disability.
- Page, Benjamin H., 3 yrs., Co. A, 77th N. Y. Regt.
- Parker, Edgar A., private, enl. March 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; trans. to new organization.
- Pecker, John B., corp., enl. March 10, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. June 28, 1864, disability; re-enl. March 27, 1864, Co. B, 62d Regt.; must. out May 5, 1865.
- Phillips, Leonard W., sergt., enl. Jan. 25, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; trans. to new organization; died Oct. 5, 1864, in rebel prison (Co. H).
- Palmer, Daniel S., private, enl. Feb. 15, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 11th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out Feb. 29, 1864; re-enl. same day; died Aug. 29, 1864, at Brattleboro, Vt.
- Poor, John M., 1st sergt., enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Pearson, Thomas J., sergt., enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Patten, Joseph L., private, enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Pettengill, Alpheus J., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Pearl, Joshua K., private, enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Payson, Daniel G., corp., enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Poor, Moses, private, must. in Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Parker, Israel, private, enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; died at sea Feb. 4, 1863.
- Pettengill, James W., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Pratt, Abel H., private, enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Pinkham, Warren F., private, enl. Aug. 15, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. and appointed sergt. Co. I (100 days) July 23, 1864; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Pearson, Levi, private, must. in Oct. 7, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 8th Regt.; disch. Nov. 22, 1863, disability.
- Purcell, Martin, must. in Sept. 20, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 35th Regt.; must. out June 9, 1865.
- Phillips, John, private, enl. Nov. 27, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A.; disch. Aug. 16, 1865, in Co. A.
- Page, Joseph, private, enl. Nov. 27, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; died at Andersonville Oct. 14, 1864.
- Proctor, Allen C., private, enl. Dec. 9, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. K, 2d H. A.; must. out as corp. in Co. H, Sept. 3, 1865.
- Pearcy, Joseph L., private, enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.
- Pettengill, George, private, enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.
- Perley, Charles W., private, enl. Dec. 4, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.
- Philbrick, Walter S., private, enl. Sept. 17, 1864, 1 yr., Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865, G. O.
- Poor, George W., must. in Sept. 23, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 4th Cav.; must. out to re-enl. April 15, 1864; re-enl. April 16th as sergt. Co. L; pro. quar.-maj.-sergt. Feb. 21, 1865; 2d lieut. April 7, 1865; 1st lieut. July 8, 1865; must. out as 2d lieut. Nov. 14, 1865.
- Phillips, George, private, enl. Dec. 20, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. K, 5th Cav. (colored); must. out (absent) Oct. 31, 1865.
- Perry, James E., private, enl. Nov. 18, 1864, 1 yr., 4th Batt.; must. out Oct. 14, 1865.
- Parker, Eugene, private, enl. Oct. 18, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 30th Regt.; disch. Dec. 6, 1861, disability.
- Pinkham, Varnum F., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Powers, James H., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Patten, Thaddeus, must. in Oct. 13, 1862, 9 months, Co. H, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.





- Proctor, Frederick, must. in Oct. 13, 1862, 9 months, Co. H, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Pond, Caleb S., mustered in Sept. 17, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. A, 2d H. A.; died Nov. 10, 1864, at Plymouth, N. C.
- Pike, Edward P., must. in Aug. 22, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.
- Poor, Luke, enl. Aug. 20, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. M, 1th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.
- Powers, James, enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. D, 1st Batt. Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Perkins, Hamilton L., enl. Nov. 13, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf. musician; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Pierce, Silas T., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Pierce, Thurston W., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Powell, Nathaniel, enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Prescott, John R., enl. Nov. 11, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Quero, Andrew, private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out July 8, 1864.
- Quimby, John W., private, enl. Aug. 24, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; disch. June 7, 1863; re-enl. Sept. 19, 1864, 1 yr., Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 26, 1865, by order of war dept.
- Roswell, James, private, 3 yrs., Co. G, 1st Regt.; disch. Georgetown, D. C., July 19, 1861, disability.
- Rogers, William H., must. in June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt.; must. out as corp.; trans. to Sig. Corps.
- Rigg, George E., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.; must. out July 8, 1864.
- Riley, Judson, private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. K, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); taken prisoner at temporary hospital, near Fairfax, Va., Aug. 28, 1862; disch. March 10, 1862, disability.
- Remond, Elysie, enl. Feb. 24, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. L, 11th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out Feb. 21, 1864; re-enl. Feb. 22, 1864.
- Regan, Daniel, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; wd. at North Carolina December, 1862 (Foster's Expedition); must. out Aug. 3, 1864; 4th sergt.
- Rivers, Henry, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Dec. 4, 1863; re-enl. same day; wd. at Washington, N. C., April, 1863; must. out in Co. A, July 11, 1865.
- Rooke, Cornelius, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Roswell, John, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864; re-enl. Sept. 22, 1864, 7th Bat.; must. out Sept. 21, 1865.
- Richards, Dearborn F., corp., enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Aug. 12, 1862, disability.
- Runney, Ezra, private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Dec. 28, 1861; re-enl. Jan. 5, 1864; must. out in Co. A, July 11, 1865.
- Rumrill, Charles F., private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Apr. 23, 1864; re-enl. private, Co. H, 2d H. A., Nov. 24, 1863, 3 yrs.; drowned in Potomac River April 21, 1864.
- Rogers, Silas H., private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; must. out in Co. A, July, 1865.
- Roach, Morris, private, enl. Dec. 14, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; wd. at Antietam, disch. Dec. 20, 1862; re-enl. July 14, 1864, V. R. C.; must. out Nov. 30, 1865, by order of war dept.
- Roach, Cornelius, private, enl. Nov. 8, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. C, 28th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; disch. June 30, 1865, in Co. A; wd. Dec. 13, 1862, Aug. 17, 1864, March 25, 1865.
- Robertson, Allen, private, enl. Nov. 24, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; died Aug. 14, 1862 at New Orleans.
- Robertson, Charles, Jr., private, enl. Oct. 18, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 30th Regt.; died at Marine Hospital, N. O., Dec. 9, 1862.
- Ray, Albert F., private, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 1st Cav.; sergt. Sept. 23, 1861; sergt.-maj. Sept. 24, 1861; 2d lieutenant, June 28, 1862; 1st lieutenant, Jan. 27, 1863; detached Batt'n. Aug. 4, 1863; capt. Jan. 10, 1864; maj. May, 1865; must. out Nov. 4, 1865, as capt.
- Roswell, James, private, enl. Sept. 19, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; disch. Oct. 20, 1862, disability.
- Ryan, Michael, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.
- Reynolds, Moses W., private, enl. Dec. 17, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 22d Regt.; miss. Aug. 27, 1862; re-enl. June 29, 1864, V. R. C.; no further record.
- Remick, O. H., private, must. in Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); killed May 19, 1864, at Spottsylvania, Va.
- Rich, Samuel G. B., private, must. in Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); disch. Jan. 19, 1864, disability.
- Richardson, Christopher C., private, enl. Aug. 8, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); disch. Aug. 8, 1863, disability.
- Rowe, George W., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; must. out June 9, 1865; Nov. 15, 1864, 3 yrs., 2d Batt. L. A.; disch. Aug. 11, 1865.
- Rollins, Frank, private, enl. Oct. 21, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; disch. March 27, 1863, disability.
- Ryme, Thomas, 3 yrs.
- Roberts, George A., 3 yrs. Md.
- Rollins, John, private, enl. March 14, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt.; must. out March 14, 1865.
- Richards, Fitz J., corp., enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Jan. 21, 1863, disability.
- Richards, George, corp., enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out Oct. 17, 1864.
- Riley, Thomas D., private, enl. Sept. 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Dec. 19, 1862, disability.
- Reed, William O., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 20th Regt.; taken pris. at Ball's Bluff; must. out in Co. D, 20th Bat., Aug. 21, 1864.
- Ross, John H., private, enl. Sept. 4, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; disch. Apr. 9, 1863, disability.
- Rich, Thomas P. (Josiah?), private, enl. Aug. 21, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; disch. Apr. 12, 1862, disability.
- Rumney, John F., private, enl. Aug. 24, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; taken pris. at Ball's Bluff; paroled 1862; disch. May 15, 1862.
- Roake, Daniel, private, enl. Sept. 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Oct. 21, 1862, disability; re-enl. June 19, 1864, V. R. C.; must. out Dec. 11, 1864, disability.
- Russell, Moody S., private, enl. Oct. 18, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 26th Regt.; disch. Nov. 9, 1863, disability.
- Roberts, Oliver A., private, enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; pro. sergt.-maj. Sept. 20, 1862; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Robert, William P., 1st lieutenant, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 26th Regt.; dismissed Nov. 10, 1865.
- Ross, Franklin, private, enl. Aug. 22, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Reed, Elbridge G., private, enl. Aug. 30, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Regan, James, private, must. in Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out as corp. Aug. 21, 1864; re-enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Ricker, Frederick L., private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out August 24, 1863.
- Rand, Leonard, private, enl. Aug. 23, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; pro. com. sergt. Sept. 20, 1862; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Richardson, Russell O., private, enl. Sept. 17, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Richardson, Charles F., private, enl. Nov. 27, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A.; disch. June 27, 1865.
- Rankins, Jesse, private, enl. Nov. 2, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; disch. June 20, 1865.
- Ryan, Patrick, private, enl. Nov. 12, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; killed in action Nov. 20, 1864.
- Roberts, Benjamin G., private, enl. Sept. 19, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 2d H. A.; trans. to 17th; died in Co. F, June 25, 1865, at Greensboro, N. C.
- Roberts, Charles A., private, enl. Oct. 1, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. G, 3d H. A.; must. out Sept. 18, 1865.
- Reynolds, Orlando C., private, Dec. 31, 1864, 1 yr., Co. E, 3d Cav.; pro. 2d lieutenant, Feb. 8, 1865; capt. Oct. 5, 1865; must. out as 2d lieutenant, Sept. 28, 1865.
- Roberts, George H., 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.



- Rogers, David, private, enl. Oct. 18, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 26th Regt.; disch. Sept. 16, 1862, disability.
- Roseatt, Jay, private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 1 yr., Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1863, by G. O.
- Richardson, Christopher, Jr., private, enl. Nov. 15, 1861, 3 yrs., 2d Batt'n; must. out Aug. 11, 1865.
- Richards, Charles G., private, Dec. 30, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. C, 50th Regt.; died of wds. Dec. 4, 1864, in Key Hospital.
- Russ, Frank H., private, enl. July 23, 1861, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1861.
- Rehull, Thomas, must. in July 30, 1861, 3 yrs., 28th Unassigned Regt. No further record.
- Robie, Chas. F., must. in Dec. 30, 1861, 1 yr., Co. A, 1st Batt'n Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Ramsey, Thomas C., must. in Dec. 30, 1861, 1 yr., Co. B, 1st Batt'n Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Ring, James C., must. in Jan. 2, 1863, 1 yr., 1st Batt'n Front. Cav.; must. out as 2d lieut. June 30, 1865.
- Ryan, Michael, enl. Oct. 22, 1861, V. R. C.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865, order of war dept.
- Ricker, Leonard, must. in Nov. 14, 1861, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Scott, George M., 3 yrs., 10th Regt.
- Stevens, James, enl. June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 11th Regt.; must. out June 24, 1861.
- Stevens, John M., enl. June 30, 1861. No record after enlistment.
- Savage, Charles H., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (1st H. A.); must. out July 8, 1864; absent, sick.
- Smith, Frederick, enl. July 5, 1861, Co. B, 14th Regt. (1st H. A.); must. out Dec. 3, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 4th; died of wds. June 24, 1864.
- Smith, Rufus G., private, July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt. (1st H. A.); must. out and re-enl. Nov. 5, 1863; must. out in Co. A, Aug. 16, 1865; absent.
- Saunders, Joseph, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.).
- Shimpton, James A., private, enl. Feb. 22, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 14th Regt. (1st H. A.); disch. April 17, 1863, disability.
- Scott, John F., must. in Feb. 28, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 1st H. A.; must. out Feb. 28, 1865.
- Scott, John W., 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (1st H. A.) Probably same as last preceding.
- Smith, Aloys T., must. in Aug., 1861, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 30, 1862, order of war dept.
- Splaine, Henry, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt., com. 1st lieut. Aug. 31, 1862; capt. Jan. 31, 1862 (?); major Aug. 4, 1864; lieutenant-col. Aug. 10, 1864; colonel June 10, 1865; must. out as lieutenant-col. July 11, 1865.
- Splainer, James, 1st sergt., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; com. 2d lieut. Jan. 31, 1862; 1st lieut. Dec. 24, 1862; capt. Aug. 10, 1864; major Aug. 4, 1864; must. out July 11, 1865.
- Splaine, Hubert, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out August 3, 1861; re-enl. Sept. 13, 1861, Co. A; must. out June 29, 1863, G. O.
- Smith, John, 2d sergt., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.
- Stevens, Chas. M., private, must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt., disch. Aug. 31, 1862, disability.
- Stevens, Casper, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.
- Snee, Peter, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.
- Spinney, Elbridge H., private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. July 1, 1862, disability.
- Stevens, Leonard S., private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. May 3, 1863, disability.
- Simonds, Thos. B., private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864; re-enl. Sept. 22, 1861, private, 7th Batt.; never joined; enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 1 yr., Co. A, 17th Regt., corp.; must. out June 30, 1865, in Co. F, order of war dept.
- Steele, Simon S., private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 4, 1864; must. out July 29, 1865, in Co. B, absent, sick.
- Silver, John, private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864, corp.
- Stewart, Chas. H., private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. May 30, 1863, disability; re-enl. Feb. 5, 1864, Co. D, 1st Cav.; must. out June 29, 1865.
- Stewart, Geo. E., private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 11, 1863, disability.
- Stevens, Chas. W., enl. Mar. 30, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Apr. 24, 1862, disability; re-enl. Nov. 30, 1863, Co. E, 1st H. A.; died at Andersonville, Ga., Sept. 19, 1864.
- Smith, Jos. E., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Jan. 1, 1865 (47); re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; must. out July 11, 1865, in Co. B.
- Stewart, Jas. C., private, enl. Sept. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. May 30, 1864, disability.
- Salter, Thos. S., 1st lieut., enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed at Gaines' Mills, Va., June 27, 1862.
- Shute, Alonzo M., 2d lieut., enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; com. 1st lieut. July 10, 1862; resigned service Nov. 25, 1862.
- Salter, Wm., enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Nov. 22, 1862, disability.
- Steele, Wm. H., sergt., enl. Sept. 17, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; pro. 2d lieut. Dec. 16, 1862, 1st lieut. May 22, 1863; must. out Oct. 17, 1864.
- Saunders, Alonzo C., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Oct. 11, 1862, disability.
- Sylvester, Chas. H., private, enl. Sept. 7, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; trans. to V. R. C. Jan. 5, 1861.
- Steele, Wm. J. M., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Feb. 9, 1863, disability.
- Steele, Geo. A., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; taken prisoner June 27, 1862; paroled July; returned to Co. Aug. 20, 1862; must. out to re-enl. Dec. 25, 1863; re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; killed in action June 3, 1861.
- Sawyer, Leonard, Jr., muc., must. in Feb. 26, 1862, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 30, 1862, disability.
- Stott, Geo. H., private, enl. Dec. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 17th Regt.; must. out Feb. 10, 1862, disability.
- Sargent, Benj. A., private, enl. Feb. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; must. out Feb. 29, 1864; re-enl. Mar. 1, 1864, sergt. Co. A; trans. to Co. F; must. out July 11, 1865.
- Seammall, Michael, private, enl. Aug. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; wd. at Gettysburg; trans. as sergt. to V. R. C. Sept. 17, 1863; disch. to re-enl. Dec. 21, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 22d; must. out June 6, 1865.
- Sherwood, Duncan, private, enl. Aug. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; wd. at Gettysburg.
- Stevens, Charles M., private, enl. Aug. 19, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 19th Regt.
- Shehan, Daniel, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.
- Splaine, Edward, must. in Oct. 22, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. B, 1st Batt. H. Art.; must. out June 29, 1865.
- Shehan, Wm., private, enl. Jan. 3, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; killed in action at James' Island, S. C., June 17, 1862.
- Smith, Barney, private, enl. Dec. 17, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; must. out Jan. 1, 1864; re-enl. for 3 yrs., same Co.; disch. July 3, 1866.
- Stackpole, Daniel, private, enl. Nov. 2, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 30th Regt.; disch. Jan. 2, 1862, disability.
- Stacy, Moody K., enl. Oct. 16, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 1st Cav.; trans. to Co. I, 4th Cav.; must. out Dec. 31, 1863; re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.
- Sargent, Alfred M., sergt., enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; trans. to Co. L, 4th Cav.; must. out Apr. 20, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. Apr. 21st, corp., Oct. 5, 1861; sergt., Nov. 3, 1862; 1st sergt., Jan. 1, 1864; 2d lieut., Nov. 15, 1864; resigned May 11, 1865.
- Stockbridge, Lindley H., private, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; pro. sergt. June 25, 1862; trans. to V. R. C.; disch. Mar. 30, 1865, to enl. in Co. 10, V. R. C.; com. 2d lieut. 4th Cav. Feb. 1, 1865; 1st lieut. Apr. 23, 1865; resigned July 21, 1865.
- Stevens, Isaiah, private, enl. Sept. 25, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st Cav.; disch. May 11, 1863, disability.
- Short, James, private, enl. Dec. 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 28th Regt.; supposed killed at Chantilly, Va., Sept. 1, 1862.
- Shea, John, private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; died of wds. at Newbern, N. C., Feb. 6, 1864.
- Shea, Patrick, enl. 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.
- Smith, Calvin W., private, enl. Aug. 8, 1862, 3 yrs., 20th Regt.; no record after enlistment.





- Saley, Peter G., private, enl. July 22, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864, corp., Co. E.
- Stanley, Moses N., private, enl. July 10, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out and re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864, Co. C; must. out in Co. A, July 11, 1865.
- Sweeney, James, private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; died.
- Sargent, George F., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Coal Harbor, Va., June 6, 1864.
- Sargent, Harrison P., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam.
- Sanborn, Lewis T., corp., enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. as sergt. Sept. 8, 1864, disability.
- Shaw, Andrew F., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Mar. 25, 1863, disability; re-enl. June 16, 1864, Co. D, 13th Regt., V. R. C.; disch. by G. O. Nov. 13, 1865.
- Spaulding, Leonard V., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Nov. 8, 1862, disability.
- Stover, Martin L., sergt., enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wounded at Antietam; disch. Dec. 23, 1862, disability.
- Storer, Abner D., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; appointed ensign Nov., 1862; disch. for promotion; promoted acting ensign U. S. N. Dec. 23, 1862.
- Shaw, James A., private, must. in Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; was 3 months man; prisoner at Bull Run, paroled June, 1862; re-enl. July 21 at Haverhill, afterwards at Georgetown; must. out June 9, 1865.
- Sawyer, Frank, 3 yrs., Maine.
- Simmington, Thomas, 3 yrs., Co. B, 7th Regt. N. H.
- Stevens, Samuel F., 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.
- Sheys, Bryant, private, enl. Jan. 31, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. July 10, 1863, disability; re-enl. Sept. 1, 1864; unassigned recruit, 2d H. A.; rejected Oct. 8, 1864.
- Stewart, Richard, 3 yrs.
- Stimpson, John F., private, enl. Mar. 14, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 17th Regt.; must. out as sergt. Apr. 2, 1863, disability.
- Sullivan, John M., private, enl. Aug. 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 18th Regt.; disch. Aug. 11, 1862, disability.
- Shean, John, must. in Dec. 7, 1863, 3 yrs., 2d H. A.; must. out July 18, 1865.
- Spain, Thomas, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.
- Smith, Jasper, 3 yrs., Co. E, 32d Regt.
- Story, John B., private, enl. Dec. 2, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st Batt'n; changed to 32d Regt.; trans. to V. R. C. Feb. 18, 1864.
- Smith, William, private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th (1st H. A.); trans. to V. R. C. Jan. 3, 1864.
- Sargent, Charles A., private, must. in Dec. 9, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. Feb. 7, 1863, disability.
- Sullivan, Bartholomew, private, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.
- Sawyer, Addison B., enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, 50th Regt.; hospital steward Nov. 12, 1862; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Stover, Joshua M., sergt., enl. Aug. 20, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. and appointed 1st sergt., Co. I, 60th Regt. (100 days), July 23, 1864; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Swett, Philip C., corp., enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Sargent, Benjn. G., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Sawyer, Ira O., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Sawyer, Horace, private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Stickney, Charles H., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; wounded at Fort Hudson, La., June, 1864; died of same in hospital at Baton Rouge, June 20, 1864.
- Sheldon, Otis E., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Spencer, John C., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; died at quarantine Apr. 9, 1863.
- Stewart, Walter, private, enl. Aug. 20, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Stowe, Andrew F., 1st sergt., enl. Mar. 15, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; com. 2d lieut. Oct. 16, 1862; resigned May 15, 1863.
- Sargent, Numa, private, enl. Aug. 24, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Seates, Isaac S., private, must. in Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 17th unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1864.
- Spencer, Dennis, private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Stevens, James I., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Sargent, William, corp., must. in Mar. 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 50th Regt.; must. out June 13, 1865, supernumerary.
- Simmons, James, private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A.; must. out Nov. 28, 1864, and re-enl. same day; must. out Aug. 16, 1865, in Co. A.
- Shaw, Charles H., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 1st H. A.; must. out and re-enl. Nov. 25, 1863; must. out Aug. 16, 1865.
- Simpson, William, private, enl. Dec. 2, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. G, 2d H. A., died in Andersonville Sept. 22, 1864, Co. H.
- Seelye, Charles H., private, enl. Dec. 4, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. G, 2d H. A.; died pris. at Andersonville, Ga., Aug. 11, 1864.
- Shay, John, private, enl. Dec. 7, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; died pris. at Andersonville, Ga., Sept. 4, 1864.
- Snee, Patrick, private, enl. Dec. 1, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; disch. June 19, 1865, disability.
- Snell, Charles E., private, enl. Nov. 2, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; pro. capt.; died at Annapolis, Md., Dec. 4, 1864.
- Staaten, Michael, private, enl. Sept. 10, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. G, 2d H. A.; must. out Sept. 3, 1865.
- Sargent, Amos B., private, enl. Dec. 8, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1st H. A.; disch. Dec. 16, 1864, disability.
- Slits, Henry, private, enl. Sept. 19, 1864, 1 yr., Co. G, 2d H. A.; disch. June 26, 1865.
- Shirley, Daniel, private, enl. Nov. 19, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; died Oct. 26, 1864, at St. Augustine, Fla.
- Savage, John, private, enl. Nov. 13, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.
- Stewart, John W., private, enl. Dec. 12, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865, absent, sick.
- Shanley, Thomas, private, enl. Sept. 22, 1864, 3 yrs., 7th Batt.; must. out July 15, 1865, G. O.
- Sides, George S., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Stockbridge, Calvin R., private, enl. Sept. 17, 1861, 1 yr., Co. C, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865, G. O.
- Simonds, Thomas B., corp., enl. Sept. 20, 1864, 1 yr., Co. A, 17th Regt.; must. out June 30, 1865, in Co. F, order of war dept.
- Sargent, Albert M., enl. Sept. 13, 1864, 1 yr., Co. C, 17th Regt.; disch. June 30, 1865; order of war dept.
- Stevens, Charles, private, enl. Feb. 23, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. G, 50th Regt.; trans. June 11, 1865, to Co. G, 57th Regt.; must. out July 30, 1865.
- Shannon, Frederick P., must. in Dec. 1, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. C, 1st H. A.; must. out Aug. 16, 1865, Co. M.
- Sylvester, Edward, corp., enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Simington, Samuel, private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Stewart, Charles P., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Stockman, Henry W., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.
- Stevens, Edward G., must. in Sept. 20, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. E, 2d Regt.; must. out July 27, 1865.
- Shehan, Daniel J., must. in June 11, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. C, 9th Regt.; trans. Feb. 27, 1864, to V. R. C.
- Splaine, William, corp., must. in Sept. 2, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1863, disability, in Co. E.
- Stevens, James, must. in June 11, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. I, 19th Regt.; died of wds. Sept. 20, 1864.
- Smith, Moses E., must. in July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 1st H. A.; died Oct. 10, 1864, in Savannah, Ga.
- Smith, Rufus, must. in Dec. 7, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; killed April 20, 1864, at Plymouth, N. C.
- Sheppard, Levi B., must. in Dec. 24, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. M, 2d H. A. (2d Major-sergt.); must. out Sept. 3, 1865.
- Shutter, Allison, enl. Aug. 1, 1863, Vet. Res. Corps. No further record.
- Sullivan, Dennis, enl. Sept. 20, 1864, Vet. Res. Corps. No further record.



- Sherburn, Edward S., enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 20, 1865.
- Stickney, Joseph, enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Towle, Samuel K., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); com. asst. sur. 14th Regt. July 5, 1861; sur. 30th Regt. Feb. 26, 1862; must. out March 3, 1865.
- Tarle, Van B. F., private, July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (1st H. A.); must. out Dec., 1863, to re-enl.; re-enl. Dec. 4, 1865; died at Andersonville, Ga. Jan. 1, 1865.
- Tate, James, private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt. (1st H. A.); must. out Nov., 1863, to re-enl.; re-enl. Nov. 5, 1863; must. out Aug. 16, 1865, as sergt. Co. E, 1st H. A.
- Taggart, Alfred G., enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.
- Tompkins, Enoch F., enl. July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 17th Regt.; com. 1st lieut. Aug. 21, 1861; promoted capt. Dec. 19, 1861; must. out Aug. 3, 1864; re-enl. and recom. capt. Aug. 3, 1864; must. out July 11, 1865.
- Taggart, John, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; prisoner of war since Feb. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 3, 1864; died at Andersonville Prison, Ga., June 19, 1864.
- Towle, William, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. June 22, 1863, disability.
- Turner, William H., enl. July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; 2d lieut. Aug. 21, 1861; pro. 1st lieut. Oct. 28, 1861; disch. and resigned April 25, 1864; com. 1st lieut., 2d H. A. July 27, 1864; never must., com. cancelled.
- Tucker, John, private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1861.
- Tullock, William, private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1861.
- Titecomb, John E., private, enl. April 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out as sergt. Aug. 3, 1864.
- Thompson, John J., enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; com. capt. Oct. 1, 1861; dismissed the service Nov. 22, 1862.
- Thurston, Geo. O., private, enl. Sept. 14, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Nov. 1, 1862, disability.
- Tandy, Richard M., private, must. in Feb. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. Feb. 21, 1863; re-enl. Co. G, 50th Regt. Dec. 24, 1864; trans. V. R. C. Sept. 9, 1864.
- Tilton, Warner W., sergt., enl. July 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; com. 2d lieut. June 20, 1862; 1st lieut. Feb. 27, 1864; disch. Nov. 23, 1864, disability.
- Tenney, Benjamin P., private, enl. Aug. 24, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; tran. V. R. C. Jan. 16, 1864.
- Turner, Charles, band, enl. Sept. 25, 1861, 3 yrs., 22d Regt.; disch. Aug. 11, 1862, order of war dept.
- Titcomb, Thomas P., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; rejected recruit Nov. 16, 1862.
- Tilton, Alfred M., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Tibbets, Russell S., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864; re-enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Tirrell, Phillip B., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Teal, Michael C., private, Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; trans. to V. R. C.
- Thompson, George W., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Feb. 25, 1862, disability.
- Thompson, William H., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Oct. 30, 1862, disability.
- Tilton, Caleb E., corp., enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; injured U. R. accident March 27, 1863, Alexandria, Va.; must. out Jan. 9, 1865.
- Thompson, Nathan B., enl. 3 yrs., N. H.
- Tile-on, Albert O., enl. 3 yrs.
- Trask, Julius, enl. 3 yrs., 1st Cav.
- Tarbox, Charles H., private, enl. 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam.
- Taylor, John, Jr., of war, enl. July 10, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; died Nov. 9, 1861, Baltimore, Md.
- Thurlow, Edwin, private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. B, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out to re-enl. Feb. 28, 1864; re-enl. Feb. 29th; sergt. Co. B; disch. as sergt. July 31, 1865, order war dept.
- Thompson, Levi P., enl. January 9, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; com. capt. Jan. 9, 1862; disch. Sept. 29, 1862; died Sept. 29, 1862.
- Tuck, John A., muc., enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out August 24, 1863.
- Thompson, Horace, private, enl. Aug. 23, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 21, 1863.
- Tucker, William W., private, must. in Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Tabbs, Edward S., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; corp.; trans. to 6th Ill. Cav. July 17, 1863.
- Taylor, John H., private, enl. Aug. 21, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Thompson, Hazen V., enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Tappan, Edmund S., private, enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Tucker, Francis W., private, enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Thompson, Stephen M., private, enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; disch. Dec. 6, 1862, disability.
- Thompson, Moses W., must. in April 20, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. G, 58th Regt.; died July 19, 1864, Andersonville.
- Towle, Carrol M., private, enl. Nov. 18, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 2d H. A.; disch. June 12, 1865, order war dept.
- Toyiey, Charles W., private, Dec. 7, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.
- Tuck, Chas. H., enl. Dec. 30, 1861, 1 yr., Co. B, 1st Batt'n Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.
- Veal, Gustavus D., private, enl. Oct. 4, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.
- Ventelier, Joseph, private, enl. Nov. 28, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. A, 4th Cav.; trans. to V. R. C. July 23, 1864; trans. to navy.
- Vamey, Wm. H., must. in Nov. 16, 1864, 1 yr., 2d Unattached Inf.; must. out July 7, 1865.
- Veal, George W., must. in Aug. 4, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. C, 2d H. A.; must. out Sept. 3, 1865.
- Warren, Warren W., 3 yrs., Co. K, 14th Regt.
- Webb, William H., private, enl. May 25, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 2d Regt.; disch. July 6, 1862, disability.
- Witham, Walter, private, enl. June 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. G, 11th Regt.; missing in action July 2, 1864.
- Whittier, Charles, private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. C, 12th Regt.; wd. at Antietam; disch. Jan. 16, 1863, disability; re-enl. June 3, 1864, V. R. C.; no further record.
- Willey, James, private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.; must. out July 8, 1864.
- Welch, Charles R., 3 yrs., Aug. 6, 1861, Co. E, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.).
- Woodward, Thomas T., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); disch. Dec. 12, 1862, disability.
- Weir, Alexander G., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 11th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out Apr. 12, 1864, disability.
- Woods, John, private, enl. Feb. 20, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. L, 11th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.); must. out to re-enl. Feb. 21, 1864; re-enl. Feb. 22, 1864; trans. to V. R. C. March 4, 1865.
- Witham, Charles O., private, enl. July 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 11, 1861, disability; re-enl. Sept. 18, 1861, Co. B, 30th Regt.; no further record.
- Webb, William, private, enl. July 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. Apr. 24, 1862, disability.
- Whittier, Francis, private, enl. July 12, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out to re-enl. Dec. 17, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 18th, must. out in Co. A, July 24, 1865.
- Wallace, David, private, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Wallace, John, enl. July 10, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.
- Webber, Henry B., enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; com. sergt. Oct. 12, 1862; must. out to re-enl. Jan. 1, 1864; re-enl. Jan. 2, 1864; 1st lieut. Aug. 15, 1864; capt. Sept. 1, 1864; must. out Aug. 31, 1864.
- Woodman, John W., private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.
- Welch, Joseph A., private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; trans. to band Aug. 27, 1861; must. out as corp., to re-enl. Jan. 4, 1861; re-enl. Jan. 4th, as sergt. Co. F; pro. 2d lieut. June 1, 1865; must. out as sergt. July 11, 1865.





- Wallace, William, enl. July 16, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.  
 Wharton, Martin S., private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out as corp. Aug. 3, 1861.  
 Woodington, William, private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 25, 1862, disability.  
 White, George A., private, enl. Apr. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1861.  
 Whipple, George, private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; trans. to V. R. C. July 16, 1863.  
 Watson, Dana B., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out Oct. 7, 1864.  
 Ward, Charles J., private, enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed at Gainey's Mills, Va., June 27, 1862.  
 Webster, George L., private, enl. Sept. 11, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed at Gainey's Mills June 27, 1862.  
 Wells, Francis H., private, enl. Sept. 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Jan. 12, 1862, disability.  
 Welch, Richard, private, enl. Sept. 9, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Nov. 12, 1863, disability.  
 Wilson, Abel R., must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. K, 17th Regt.; must. out Jan. 5, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. as corp.; must. out in Co. B, July 11, 1865.  
 Wallace, Benjamin F., must. in Jan. 25, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 19th Regt.; disch. Jan. 12, 1863, disability.  
 Woodward, William, private, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.  
 Woodard, William, private, enl. Sept. 4, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 20th Regt.; disch. as Daniel Jan. 22, 1863, disability.  
 Woodward, Reuben L., 3 yrs., Co. C, 21st Regt.; disch. Sept. 10, 1862, disability; record lost.  
 Willis, William H., private, enl. Sept. 19, 1861, Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. March 14, 1863, disability.  
 Worthen, Perley A., private, must. in Oct. 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 2d Regt.; disch. Oct. 26, 1862, disability.  
 Wilson, John H., private, enl. Aug. 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. K, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1861.  
 Wheeler, Charles S., private, must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Dec. 6, 1861, disability; re-enl. June 11, 1864; V. R. C.; must. out March 1, 1865, disability.  
 Weeks, Charles E., enl. Sept. 30, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 24th Regt.; must. out Jan. 1, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. Jan. 2, 1864, as sergt.; must. out Jan. 20, 1865.  
 Woodbury, Joseph W., private, enl. Aug. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., 1st Batt'n.; disch. Nov. 16, 1862, disability.  
 Whittier, Lyman P., private, enl. Sept. 16, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 1st Cav.; died at Port Royal, Beaufort, S. C., Sept. 8, 1862.  
 Wentworth, Hiram S., private, enl. Sept. 17, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 1st Cav.; trans. to 4th Cav.; must. out Sept. 25, 1863.  
 Whittier, Kimbal, enl. Sept. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 1st Cav.; disch. Jan. 24, 1863, disability.  
 Welch, Joseph S., private, enl. Aug. 9, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out Oct. 17, 1864.  
 Walker, Franklin L., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. Apr. 3, 1863, disability.  
 Ward, Nathaniel M., private, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 10, 1863, disability.  
 Willey, Edwin S., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. Nov. 30, 1863, disability.  
 Wight, Orlando S., private, enl. Aug. 19, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.  
 Whitman, Frank M., corp., enl. Aug. 2, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; wd. at Spottsylvania; disch. Dec. 18, 1864, disability.  
 White, Albert H., private, enl. Aug. 8, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; must. out as corp. June 19, 1863.  
 Willis, Alfred, private, enl. Aug. 2, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Feb. 11, 1862, disability.  
 Williams, Watson S., private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam.  
 Woodman, Clarence H., private, enl. Aug. 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam.  
 Woodward, Horace F., private, enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. March 16, 1864, disability.  
 Wise, John B., enl. Jan. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. K, 30th Regt.; must. out Jan. 1, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. Jan. 2d, prisoner; disch. Jan. 29, 1865.  
 Webster, Wm. F., private, enl. Aug. 2, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Jan. 21, 1864, by order Gen. Banks.  
 Wilson, Wm. T., enl. 3 yrs., 3d Md. Regt.  
 Wright, Joseph, enl. 3 yrs.  
 Walker, Henry, enl. 3 yrs., 5th N. H. Regt.  
 Wiggin, ———, enl. 3 yrs., 2d N. H. Regt.  
 West, Arthur W., private, enl. Aug. 23, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.  
 Wallace, Geo. Wm., corp., enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; com. 1st lieut. Sept. 3, 1862 (was in 3 months' service); must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. Dec. 30, 1864, sergt., Co. B, 1st Batt. Frontier Cav.; Regimental Com. Sergt.; must. out May 29, 1865.  
 Webster, John L., corp., enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.  
 Whittier, Alvin N., corp., enl. Aug. 28, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 23, 1863.  
 Whitman, Geo. H., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.  
 Walton, Thos., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. Nov. 30, 1863, in Co. H, 2d H. A., 3 yrs.; disch. June 19, 1865, disability.  
 Woodcock, Farnham P., private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.  
 Williams, Jos., private, enl. Aug. 20, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; died at Baton Rouge, La., April 15, 1863.  
 Walker, John H., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.  
 Walker, Wilson M., private, enl. Aug. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.  
 Webster, John P., private, enl. Aug. 16, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 60th Regt.; must. out Aug. 23, 1863.  
 Webb, Daniel, private, enl. Aug. 25, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. Co. I, 60th Regt., 100 days, July 23, 1864; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.  
 Webster, Wm. W., private, enl. Aug. 11, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; died at Baton Rouge Mar. 8, 1863.  
 Whittier, Wm. T., private, enl. Sept. 2, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. in Co. H, 59th Regt., Mar. 4, 1864; trans. to Co. H, 57th Regt.; must. out July 30, 1865.  
 Wallace, Wm. C., private, enl. Sept. 13, 1862, 9 months, Co. G, 50th Regt.; died at Baton Rouge June 16, 1863.  
 Whittier, Wm. T., must. in Mar. 12, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. H, 59th Regt.; trans. June 1, 1865, to Co. H, 57th Inf.; must. out July 30, 1865.  
 Williams, John H., private, enl. Sept. 10, 1864, 1 yr., Co. I, 2d H. A.; trans. to 17th Regt.  
 Welch, John, private, enl. Sept. 5, 1864, 1 yr., Co. M, 2d H. A.; trans. to 17th Regt. Jan. 16, 1865; must. out June 30, 1865, order war dept.  
 Whiting, Chas. A., private, enl. Sept. 7, 1864, 1 yr., 29th Unat. H. A.; must. out June 16, 1865.  
 Weir, John C., private, enl. Dec. 23, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. B, 50th Regt.; must. out June 12, 1865, order war dept.  
 Warren, Henry A., private, enl. Sept. 29, 1864, 1 yr., Co. E, 61st Regt.; killed in action at Petersburg, Va., Apr. 2, 1865.  
 Wardwell, Jos. M., corp., enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.  
 Webster, Addison A., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.  
 Wilson, Wm. F., private, enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.  
 Walton, Jos., must. in July 1, 1865 (?), 3 yrs., Co. F, 1st H. A.; died in rebel prison (no date).  
 Ward, Patrick, must. in Dec. 7, 1863, 3 years, Co. H, 2d H. A.; prisoner April 20, 1864; joined the rebel service.  
 Wood, Charles A., enl. Aug. 22, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. M, 4th H. A.; must. out June 17, 1865.  
 Whiting, Charles, enl. Dec. 29, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. I, 3d Cav.; must. out July 28, 1865, Co. E.  
 Whitney, Charles C., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. D, 1st Battn. Front. Cav.; must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Wentworth, William F., must. in Nov. 14, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Wilder, Edward P., sergt., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863; re-enl. Nov. 13, 1864; 1st lieut. 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.





Walsh, James S., sergt., must. in Sept. 24, 1862, 9 months, Co. B, 18th Regt.; pro. to 2d lieut. July 8, 1864; must. out Sept. 3, 1864; re-enl. Nov. 14, 1864, 2d lieut. 17th Unattached Co. Inf.; must. out June 30, 1865.  
 Young, Joseph, 11th Regt.  
 York, Alfred J., private, enl. Feb. 10, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 19th Regt.; disch. Oct. 24, 1862, disability; probably same; enl. Dec. 26, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 1th Cav.; disch. June 20, 1863, disability.  
 Young, Osgood, private, enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; disch. Oct. 28, 1864, disability.  
 Young, George A., private, enl. Aug. 8, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; killed at Antietam Sept. 17, 1862.  
 York, John S., private, enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. Sept. 10, 1863, disability.

### Recapitulation.

No. of men enlisted and credited to Haverhill's quotas, as per Adjutant-General's Report.....	1201
No. re-enlisted.....	218
No. enlisted in 21st U. S. Colored Troops.....	40
In the Naval service.....	174
Total.....	1633

### Record of Colored Troops in Haverhill Quota.

*Twenty-first Regiment, Three Years' Service.*

Bates, Horace, Turkey Creek, S. C., enl. Aug. 11, 1861.  
 Baity, Caesar, Beaufort, S. C., enl. Aug. 13, 1861.  
 Balber, Jacob, St. Marys, Ga., enl. Aug. 4, 1861.  
 Barber, Abram, Edgefield, S. C., enl. Aug. 4, 1861.  
 Building, Abram, Savannah, Ga., enl. Aug. 21, 1861.  
 Chisholm, Jeff, Beaufort, S. C., enl. Aug. 8, 1861.  
 Campbell, James, Washington, N. C., enl. Aug. 12, 1861.  
 Cummings, Hannibal, Savannah, Ga., enl. Aug. 17, 1861.  
 Gaps, Anderson, Johnson Co., N. C., enl. Aug. 20, 1861.  
 Conan, Thomas, Wilmington, N. C., enl. Aug. 13, 1861.  
 Davis, Robert, Charleston, S. C., enl. Aug. 17, 1861.  
 Freeman, Edward, Nassau, Fla., enl. Aug. 4, 1861.  
 Fozas, Bratos, Hilton Head, S. C., enl. Aug. 24, 1861.  
 Gillard, Hector, Hilton Head, S. C., enl. Aug. 22, 1861.  
 Green, Jack, Beaufort, S. C., enl. Aug. 14, 1861.  
 Holmes, William, South Carolina, enl. Aug. 23, 1861.  
 Hamilton, James, Beaufort, S. C., enl. Aug. 23, 1861.  
 Jones, Paul, Liberty, Ga., enl. Aug. 12, 1861.  
 Jackson, John, Beaufort, S. C., enl. Aug. 16, 1861.  
 Jenkins, William, Beaufort, S. C., enl. Aug. 15, 1861.  
 Johnson, Isaac, Beaufort, S. C., enl. Aug. 22, 1861.  
 Jenkins, Cyrus, Edisto, S. C., enl. Aug. 21, 1861.  
 Mack, Moses, Charleston, S. C., enl. Aug. 15, 1861.  
 McNeil, Morris, South Carolina, enl. Aug. 20, 1861.  
 Pringle, Moses, Beaufort, S. C., enl. Aug. 10, 1861.  
 Palito, J. Amos, St. Helena, S. C., enl. Aug. 11, 1861.  
 Price, Simon, Savannah, Ga., enl. Aug. 21, 1861.  
 Robinson, Peter, St. Helena, S. C., enl. Aug. 10, 1861.  
 Rogers, Ned, Sola, South Carolina, enl. Aug. 14, 1861.  
 Spaulding, Lewis, Georgia, enl. Aug. 8, 1861.  
 St. Aubert, Ned, Charleston, S. C., enl. Aug. 13, 1861.  
 Simmons, James, Charleston, S. C., enl. Aug. 17, 1861.  
 Snow, Ned, South Carolina, enl. Aug. 15, 1861.  
 Smith, Alexander, Richmond, Va., enl. Aug. 23, 1861.  
 Ward, Augustus, Savannah, Ga., enl. Aug. 15, 1861.  
 Wilson, Robert, Lancaster, Va., enl. Aug. 17, 1861.  
 Wallis, Henry, North Carolina, enl. Aug. 22, 1861.  
 Wright, Samuel, Charleston, S. C., enl. Aug. 23, 1861.  
 Washington, William, Charleston, S. C., enl. Aug. 23, 1861.  
 White, Jerry, Hilton Head, S. C., enl. Aug. 22, 1861.

### Record of Seamen and Officers in the Naval Service, quota of Haverhill.

Anderson, George, ent. service Nov. 10, 1862, on Colorado.  
 Andrews, Alden C., ent. service Oct. 27, 1862, on Colorado.  
 Asseltin, Herman, ent. service Oct. 24, 1862, on Colorado.  
 Anderson, John, ent. service Nov. 14, 1862, on Western World.  
 Arrington, Edward, ent. service Nov. 17, 1862, King Fisher.  
 Adams, Charles, ent. service Nov. 18, 1862, King Fisher.  
 Arrish, John W., ent. service May 9, 1861.

Blake, James.  
 Bailey, Stephen, served on Huron.  
 Bums, Matthew, served on Huron; ent. service Aug. 5, 1862.  
 Barney, Charles S., act. ensign, ent. service Jan. 29, 1863; 1863 com. Buckthorne; 1864, Neptune, pro. act. master; disch. Oct. 3, 1865.  
 Baker, John H., ent. service May 19, 1863; served steamer Cambridge, act. ensign, 1863; disch. act. master Sept. 16, 1865.  
 Bailey, Stephen W., ent. service Nov. 29, 1861; served on North Carolina.  
 Balkham, William, Nov. 1, 1862, on Colorado.  
 Berry, James W., Oct. 30, 1862, on Ossipee.  
 Bush, Oliver P., Oct. 3, 1862, on Huron.  
 Bennett, Stephen, Nov. 1, 1862, Colorado.  
 Bailey, Sylvanus C., Nov. 4, 1862, Huron.  
 Bullock, Edgar O., Sept. 29, 1863, Niagara.  
 Bryan, Thomas, Aug. 5, 1861.  
 Blood, Edwin J., Sept. 5, 1861.  
 Canavan, John, Oct. 18, 1862, Colorado.  
 Croone, John, Oct. 18, 1862, Colorado.  
 Cook, Patrick, Oct. 22, 1862, Colorado.  
 Camps, Andrew, Oct. 21, 1862, Colorado.  
 Conner, Maurice, Oct. 25, 1862, Colorado.  
 Charles, Albion, Oct. 27, 1862, Colorado.  
 Chase, Charles, Oct. 27, 1862, Colorado.  
 Connell, George W., Nov. 1, 1862, Colorado.  
 Corne, Samuel, Oct. 28, 1862, musician.  
 Clayton, James, Oct. 29, 1862, Colorado.  
 Cassidy, John, Nov. 3, 1862.  
 Colby, William H., Nov. 4, 1862, Colorado.  
 Craig, John W., April 24, 1861.  
 Coffin, John, July 28, 1861.  
 Dorsey, Edward, July 21, 1861.  
 Dufley, Patrick, August 17, 1861.  
 Finney, Joseph.  
 Foster, George B.  
 Griffin, Solomon, April 26, 1861.  
 Godfrey, John.  
 Hamilton, Thomas.  
 Harder, George W., May 2, 1861.  
 Hartford, Sobriska E., May 3, 1861, "Mississippi."  
 Hutchinson, Christopher, May 3, 1861, "Bainbridge."  
 Hicks, Abram, May 2, 1861, "Colorado."  
 Haley, Dennis, May 4, 1861.  
 Hall, Joseph, May 3, 1861, "Mississippi."  
 Hart, Oliver H., May 3, 1861, "Bainbridge."  
 Haggerty, William, May 2, 1861, "South Carolina."  
 Hauldsback, Albert, May 4, 1861.  
 Hunt, John, May 4, 1861, South Carolina.  
 Harvey, Charles, May 7, 1861, South Carolina.  
 Howard, George A., May 7, 1861, Mississippi.  
 Harney, William, May 6, 1861, Colorado.  
 Harvey, Michael, May 1, 1861, Mississippi.  
 Hare, James, May 4, 1861, Massachusetts.  
 Hartley, Alston, May 4, 1861, Massachusetts.  
 Harrison, Bartholomew, May 6, 1861, years on Colorado; discharged September 16, 1863.  
 Hickey, John, May 3, 1861, Mississippi.  
 Hodgkins, James E., May 3, 1861, Mississippi.  
 Horan, John, May 8, 1861, South Carolina.  
 Honan, Jeremiah, May 8, 1861, South Carolina.  
 Haley, John, May 9, 1861, Bainbridge.  
 Hackett, Philip, May 8, 1861, Mississippi.  
 Howard, Marcus, May 9, 1861, Mississippi.  
 Hulse, Luther Page, May 10, 1861, Mississippi.  
 Hanson, Charles G., May 8, 1861, Mississippi.  
 Haley, Nathaniel B., May 13, 1861, Mississippi.  
 Harmon, John W., May 13, 1861, Mississippi.  
 Hartley, Thomas, May 13, 1861, South Carolina.  
 Hayney, Robert E., May 14, 1861, Susquehanna.  
 Houston, Salomon W., May 11, 1861, Massachusetts.  
 Hamlet, Philip, May 14, 1861, South Carolina.  
 Howard, Charles S., September 12, 1862, Sabine.  
 Haley, Henry, September 29, 1872; released by writ of hab. corp. October 20, 1862.  
 Hayes, Patrick, September 29, 1862, Onward.  
 Harvey, Frederick F., October 1, 1862, Colorado.



Harris, John, October 2, 1862, Ossipee.  
 Harris, Charles W., October 4, 1862, Ossipee.  
 Hanson, Andrew, October 6, 1862, Ossipee.  
 Haggerty, John, October 3, 1862, Ossipee.  
 Hawes, Walter, October 7, 1862, Ossipee.  
 Hayes, James, October 3, 1862, Ossipee.  
 Herl, James, October 6, 1862, Colorado.  
 Harrington, Patrick, October 8, 1862; taken by writ of habeas corpus October 17, 1862.  
 Hart, James Gage, October 9, 1862.  
 Homer, Thomas, enl. October 7, 1862, on Colorado.  
 Hallen, James, enl. October 11, 1862, San Jacinto.  
 Holmes, James, enl. October 11, 1862, Colorado.  
 Hamilton, William H., enl. October 13, 1862, Colorado.  
 Holm, George T., enl. October 8, 1862, Colorado.  
 Hayes, Patrick, enl. October 13, 1862, Colorado.  
 Higgins, Ellen L., enl. October 16, 1862, Colorado.  
 Hendricks, Edward, enl. October 15, 1862, Colorado.  
 Hart, Michael, enl. October 15, 1862, Colorado.  
 Harvey, Samuel, enl. October 21, 1862, Onward.  
 Hare, William, enl. November 1, 1862, on Ossipee.  
 Hayes, John, enl. November 1, 1862, Huron.  
 Hawkins, Joseph A., enl. November 3, 1862, Huron.  
 Hase, Frank G., enl. May 5, 1864, on Sabine.  
 Haunlon, Thomas, enl. July 25, 1864.  
 Hanlon, James, enl. July 25, 1864.  
 Harrogan, John, enl. August 17, 1864.  
 Irwin, James V., enl. September 19, 1862, on Sabino.  
 Isbester, John, enl. May 6, 1864, Mississippi.  
 Joy, Emerson G., enl. May 2, 1864, South Carolina.  
 Jones, John H., enl. April 24, 1861, Mississippi.  
 Jeffrey, Jehiel, enl. May 3, 1861.  
 Jones, Merriek, enl. May 3, 1861, Mississippi.  
 Jennings, Thomas, enl. April 30, 1861, Mississippi.  
 Johnson, Charles, enl. May 3, 1861, Band Ridge.  
 Johnson, William, enl. May 7, 1861, Colorado.  
 Johnson, Benjamin, enl. May 11, 1861, South Carolina.  
 Johnson, George, enl. April 13, 1861, Mississippi.  
 Jackson, Benjamin F., enl. May 11, 1861, South Carolina.  
 Jenness, John, enl. May 13, 1861, Massachusetts.  
 Johnson, William, enl. May 4, 1861, South Carolina.  
 Johnson, Charles H., enl. November 26, 1862, King Fisher.  
 Jackson, Wm. H., enl. Sept. 18, 1862; trans. to New York Oct. 9, 1862.  
 Jenkins, James, enl. Sept. 24, 1862; trans. to New York Oct. 9, 1862.  
 Johnson, Peter, enl. September 28, 1862, Sabine.  
 Johnson, Wm., enl. Sept. 21, 1862; trans. to New York Oct. 9, 1862.  
 Jacobson, Jacob, enl. September 25, 1862, Onward.  
 Johnson, Nathaniel, enl. September 30, 1862, Onward.  
 Johnson, John, enl. October 2, 1862, on Colorado.  
 Jackson, Joseph, enl. October 8, 1862, Colorado.  
 Johnson, Simon, enl. October 9, 1862, Colorado.  
 James, John, enl. October 10, 1862, on Colorado.  
 Jameson, John, enl. October 14, 1862, Colorado.  
 Jones, Isaac, enl. October 20, 1862, Colorado.  
 Johnson, John, enl. November 4, 1862, Colorado.  
 Jayne, John, enl. November 11, 1862, on King Fisher.  
 Jacques, J. Howard, enl. November 22, 1862, King Fisher.  
 King, J. Glancy, enl. May 11, 1861, on Colorado.  
 Kerr, George, enl. May 11, 1861, Mississippi.  
 Kiefe, Thomas, enl. May 14, 1861.  
 Kendall, Patrick, enl. April 19, 1861.  
 Kellock, Edward, enl. May 11, 1861, South Carolina.  
 Kelly, John, enl. May 7, 1861, Mississippi.  
 Kimball, Augustus, enl. May 7, 1861, Colorado.  
 Kimball, William W., enl. July 24, 1861, Sabine.  
 Kelly, James, enl. Sept. 12, 1862; trans. to New York Oct. 9, 1862.  
 Kalcen, John, enl. Sept. 16, 1862; trans. to New York Oct. 9, 1862.  
 Kirk, Andrew, enl. September 11, 1862, on Sabine.  
 Keaton, Robert H., enl. Sept. 11, 1862; trans. to New York Oct. 9, 1862.  
 Knight, Henry H., enl. Sept. 10, 1862; trans. to New York Oct. 9, 1862.  
 Keene, Thomas, enl. April 29, 1864.  
 Kennedy, Dennis, enl. June 6, 1864.  
 Kimball, Frank.  
 Lymen, Michael, enl. August 11, 1864.  
 McCarty, John, enl. February 7, 1862, on Katahdin.  
 McVay, Charles Page, enl. September 3, 1864.  
 McGrath, Terrance, enl. August 12, 1864.

McKenney, Patrick, enl. August 2, 1864.  
 Murphy, Daniel.  
 Mayson, Edward.  
 Nabro, Pedro, enl. February 12, 1862, on San Jacinto.  
 Norton, Henry C., enl. May 3, 1864.  
 Nichols, Ebenezer M., enl. September 20, 1864.  
 O'Leary, Cornelius.  
 Randlett, James M., enl. September 8, 1864.  
 Ross, John R., enl. April 31, 1864.  
 Shea, Charles, enl. December 30, 1861, on Hartford.  
 Sturtavant, George C., enl. July 27, 1864.  
 Scannell, John.  
 Todd, Albert.  
 Tilton, David.  
 Tasker, Lewis.  
 Whipple, Henry, enl. February 13, 1862, on Katahdin.  
 Whitney, George D., enl. February 11, 1862, on Chocoma.  
 West, Walter H., on Nightingale; died on that ship off Pensacola, Florida, September 23, 1863, of yellow fever.  
 White, John.

## CHAPTER CLXIV.

## HAVERHILL—(Continued).

## APPENDIX.

*Population of Haverhill.*

1765.....	1,980	1830.....	3,896	1865.....	10,710
1790.....	2,468	1840.....	4,636	1870.....	13,092
1800.....	2,730	1850.....	5,877	1875.....	11,628
1840.....	2,682	1860.....	7,932	1880.....	18,472
1820.....	3,070	1860.....	9,995	1885.....	21,715

Act of Incorporation as City, March 10, 1869. In 1870 State Census gave population, 11,628. In 1880 State Census gave population, 21,715. Increase in ten years, 7167. Percentage of increase, 1900. Average percentage of increase in the State, 23.66. Brockton had 99.17 percentage of increase; Holyoke, 71.69; Malden, 51.31; Lynn, 40.70.

Haverhill is fifteenth in relative rank of cities and towns in the State, as to population, leading Gloucester, Brockton, Newton, Malden, Fitchburg, Waltham, Newburyport and Northampton.

The villages are Riverside, Rocks Village, Ayer's Village, East Parish, North Parish, Tilton's Corner, West Parish.

The total foreign born in Haverhill, in 1880, was 4161; percentage, 19.69. In 1875 the percentage was 11.68.

In 1880 there were 10,430 males, 11,340 females. Percentage of males, 49.67; of females, 50.33.

There were 5623 voters; non-voters, 229; aliens, 894; total, 6746. Of voters, 3963 were native born, 720 foreign born and naturalized. Voters were 83.35 per cent. of polls.

There were 4917 families; average size of family, 1.11.

There were 3681 dwelling-houses,—3491 of wood, 185 of brick, 5 of wood and brick; 61 dwelling-houses unoccupied.

There were 18 males and 88 females—total, 106—over 80 years of age.

Place of birth,—Native born were 17,634; born in Massachusetts, 10,595; in New Hampshire, 1005; foreign born, 161; in Canada (of English extraction), 324; in Canada (French extraction), 1183; born in England, 320; in Ireland, 1556; in Nova Scotia, 392.

In 1888, Nicholas Costello, of Haverhill, was said to be the oldest person in Essex County and in the State, being 104 years old.

There were 65 persons, in Haverhill, known to be over 80.

*Haverhill City Government for 1888.*

Mayor—George H. Carleton.

City Marshal—Daniel W. Hammond.

Alderman-at-Large—Augustine M. Allen.

Aldermen—Ward 1, George H. Appleton; Ward 2, George A.





Greene; Ward 3, Jackson Webster; Ward 4, Alonzo Way; Ward 5, Wm. Nason; Ward 6, W. W. Potter.

Common Council—Ward 1, E. W. Flanders, E. B. Savage; Ward 2, George D. Ayer, Samuel W. George; Ward 3, Dennis Kenville, Albert Dean; Ward 4, Arthur E. Pernald, Wm. Gray; Ward 5, Daniel S. Chase, Dudley P. Cosen; Ward 6, Edward A. Fitts, Honore M. Sargent. Daniel S. Chase, president; George W. Noyes, clerk.

City Clerk and Treasurer—David B. Tenney.

City Solicitor—Wm. H. Moody.

Superintendent of Highways—Orrin L. Sargent.

Chief Engineer and Superintendent of Fire Alarm—Edward Charlesworth.

Collector of Taxes—Jesse H. Harriman.

Assessors—Charles W. Morse, Ira O. Sawyer, Thomas Lahey.

City Physician—G. Colburn Clement, M.D.

Superintendent of Public Library—Edward Capen.

Board of Health—John F. Creston, the city physician *ex officio*, and Jesse Simonds.

City Messenger—James P. Conner.

### Highway Department.

In his inaugural Mayor Carleton said of the Highway Department:

"There has been expended during the past year for,—

652 feet of sewers.....	\$15,515.28
Sidewalks and crossings.....	21,610.54
Street lights.....	8,832.78
Outlying districts.....	5,312.85
Bridges.....	2,577.50
Winter Street bridge, about.....	11,500.00
Sundries and District No. 1.....	31,160.07

Making with the pay rolls for December 24th and 31st, to be added to this amount, the unprecedented sum of \$67,956.00, as compared with \$10,500 for 1886. The estimated cost of the Summer Street improvement was \$7500; of Portland Street improvements, \$10,000; of Main Street improvements, \$3021; and of Forest Street improvements, \$823."

Of the bridge between Haverhill and Bradford, that it had recently been inspected by a competent engineer, who reported,—

"This bridge is a costly and intricate structure, requiring the nicest adjustment of all its parts, and should always be kept in complete order. He advises to strengthen the cross bracing of the end posts of all fixed spans; keep the bridge in good adjustment and well painted; keep the roadway floor smooth and strong and avoid increasing its weight. Remove snow promptly; prevent fast driving.

These suggestions being observed, he considers the bridge safe."

### Police.

"The police force consists of 1 marshal, 1 assistant marshal, 1 captain of night-watch, 1 sergeant and 19 patrolmen. The pay of the policemen has been raised from \$27.50 to \$2.50 per day, involving an additional expense for the ensuing year of about \$400 per annum. The cost of this department for 1887 has been \$23,924; for 1886 was \$18,300."

### City Hospital.

Of the City Hospital and School, he said,—

"This institution, for which we are indebted to the generosity of the late Hon. E. J. M. Hale, and our esteemed fellow-citizen, Hon. James H. Carleton, was opened with appropriate exercises Wednesday, December 27th, and is now ready for use. It has a capacity for 25 beds. The estimated annual cost of maintaining the hospital is \$5000, while the income from invested funds will probably fall short of \$4000, leaving about \$2000 to be supplied by donations, as by the terms of the bequest. This institution can never become a charge upon the city. I would earnestly recommend this most beneficent charity to the consideration of all who desire to aid in the relief of suffering humanity.

The hospital fund amounts to.....	\$36,687.51
Estimated value of Kent Street property.....	7,500.50
	\$61,187.50
Less estimated outstanding bills.....	4,187.50
	\$60,000.00

### School Department.

"The condition of our schools is generally very satisfactory. In June, 1887, a superintendent of schools was elected and assumed the duties of his office the following September. It was claimed by the advocates of such an office that not only would the efficiency of our schools be promoted, but that it could be done with no increase, and, possibly, a decrease of expenditure. Both these claims have been fully sustained. There has been a marked improvement in the schools, especially in the lower and grammar grades, in which a very large majority of our children receive their entire education. New methods have been adopted, greater enthusiasm has been aroused and it is believed that our schools will compare favorably with those of other cities of the Commonwealth. The cost of the school for the past four years is as follows:

	Total Cost.	Av. No. Pupils.	Cost per Pupil
1881.....	\$60,544.41	2031	\$22.79
1885.....	68,650.49	2374	20.32
1886.....	67,300.84	3788	18.15
1887.....	65,302.95	3549	18.40

The slight decrease in the number of scholars the past year is due to the opening of Parochial schools, September 1st."

William E. Hatch resigned as superintendent of schools, and Albert L. Bartlett was elected, to serve from February 1, 1888.

### Valuation and Taxation.

The total valuation of Haverhill in 1887 was \$16,216,412  
Valuation of personal property was 4,534,249  
Valuation of real estate was 11,865,133  
The total number of polls was 6579, showing a decrease of four from 1886.

The personal valuation showed an increase of \$121,579;  
the real estate valuation an increase of \$715,310.

Total number of tax payers.....	7,974
Value of buildings taxed in 1887.....	\$689,400
Value of land taxed in 1887.....	5,967,293
Number of dwellings taxed in 1887.....	3,904
Property exempted from taxation.....	\$764,700

Divided as follows:

Houses of religious worship.....	394,300
Benevolent and charitable institutions.....	182,800
Literary institutions.....	140,600

### Presidents of the Common Council of Haverhill since

#### City Charter.

Moses How.....	1870	Richard Webster.....	1880
James L. West.....	1871	Thomas E. Barnard.....	1881
George H. Carleton.....	1872-73	Jesse H. Harriman.....	1882
Henry H. Johnson.....	1874	George H. Dole.....	1883
Isaac C. Smith.....	1875	James E. Moran.....	1884
Gilman L. Sleeper.....	1876	George H. Bartlett.....	1885-86
Timothy Huse.....	1877	Fred. J. Connolly.....	1887
Charles W. Morse.....	1878-79	Daniel S. Chase.....	1888

### Town Clerks.

Richard Littlehale.....	1613-64	Phineas Carleton, clerk and treasurer.....	1782-99
John Carleton.....	1664-68	John Cogswell, clerk and treasurer.....	1800-01
Nathaniel Saltonstall.....	1668-1700	Joseph Dodge, clerk and treasurer.....	1802-03
John White.....	1704-15	Leonard White, clerk and treasurer.....	1804-10
John Wainwright.....	1716	James Duncan, Jr.....	1811
John Eaton, clerk 57 years, and treasurer	1717-73	Moses Wingate, clerk and treasurer.....	1812-14
John Whittier, clerk and treasurer.....	1714-77		
Joseph Dodge, clerk and treasurer.....	1778-81		

1 First year of superintendent.



Leonard White, clerk  
and treasurer..... 1815  
Moses Wingate, clerk  
and treasurer..... 1816-17  
Leonard White, clerk  
and treasurer..... 1818  
Moses Wingate, clerk  
and treasurer..... 1819-20  
Leonard White, clerk  
and treasurer..... 1821-31  
James Gale, clerk and  
treasurer..... 1832-36  
Thomas G. Farnsworth,  
clerk..... 1837

Leonard White, clerk  
and treasurer..... 1838-39  
Joshua Keeley, clerk  
and treasurer..... 1840-41  
William Taggart, clerk  
and treasurer..... 1842-43  
A. B. Jacques, clerk and  
treasurer..... 1844-61  
Calvin Buttrick, clerk  
and treasurer..... 1864-65  
William B. Eaton, clerk  
and treasurer..... 1866-69  
David B. Tenney..... 1870-88

1812-19. David How.  
1819. Charles White.  
1820-23. Moses Wingate.  
1823-24. Enoch Foot.  
1825. Stephen Minot.  
1827. Moses Wingate.  
Jas. H. Duncan.  
1828. Charles White.  
John Brickett, Jr.  
1829. Thos. Harding.  
John Brickett, Jr.  
Wm. Bachellor.  
1830. Thomas Harding.  
John Brickett, Jr.  
Wm. Bachellor.  
1831. Caleb B. Le Bosquet.  
1832. Caleb B. Le Bosquet.  
Thos. G. Farnsworth  
Ephraim Corliss.  
James Davis.  
1833. Caleb B. Le Bosquet.  
Geo. Keeley.  
Wm. Bachellor.  
Thos. G. Farnsworth.  
1834. Ephraim Corliss.  
Thos. G. Farnsworth.  
Daniel P. McQuesten.  
Nathan Webster.  
1835. Jacob How.  
Jesse Smith.  
John G. Whittier.  
Leonard Whittier.  
1836. James Davis.  
Elbridge G. Eaton.  
Ward Haseltine.  
Nathan Webster.  
1837. Jos. Ayer.  
James Davis.  
Elbridge G. Eaton.  
Nathan Webster.  
Ward Haseltine.  
1837. Charles Carleton.  
Wm. D. S. Chase.  
James H. Duncan.  
Leonard Whittier.  
1838. Charles Carleton.  
Wm. D. S. Chase.  
James H. Duncan.  
Samuel Johnson.  
1840. Jonathan Crowell.  
Samuel Johnson.  
Alfred Kuttredge.  
Robert Stuart.  
1841. Jonathan Crowell.  
Alfred Kuttredge.  
1842. Rev. Jas. R. Cushing.  
Caleb Hersey.  
1843. None.  
1844. None.  
1845. Hazen Morse.  
1846. Daniel F. Fitts.  
James Hale.  
1847. None.  
1848. Benjamin Page.  
1849. None.  
1850. Charles B. Hall.  
Lemuel Leonards.  
1851. None.  
1852. Samuel Brainard.  
John B. Nichols.  
1853. Samuel Brainard.  
John B. Nichols.  
1854. None.  
1855. Elbridge W. Chase.  
Jesse Simonds.

1856. Truman M. Martyn.  
Wm. Taggart.  
1857. Jesse Simonds.  
Wm. Taggart.  
1858. James H. Duncan.  
Nathan S. Kimball.  
1859. Nathan S. Kimball.  
James Russell.  
1860. Levi C. Wadleigh.  
George W. Chase.  
1861. Levi C. Wadleigh.  
George W. Chase.  
1862. Calvin Buttrick.  
Gilmán Conning.  
1863. Calvin Buttrick.  
Gilmán Conning.  
1864. Charles G. Burnham.  
F. J. Stevens.  
1865. Charles G. Burnham.  
Wm. Foss.  
1866. Charles J. Noyes.  
David Boynton.  
1867. F. J. Stevens.  
David Boynton.  
1868. Charles W. Chase.  
S. K. Towle.  
1869. S. K. Towle.  
Eben Mitchell.  
Thorndike Hodges.  
1870. C. J. Goodwin.  
Henry A. Lord.  
Luther G. Morrison.  
1871. H. O. Burr.  
Wm. E. Blunt.  
1872. Wm. E. Blunt.  
H. O. Burr.  
A. R. Lancaster.  
1873. Wm. E. Blunt.  
A. R. Lancaster.  
George I. Dean.  
1874. Wm. E. Blunt.  
Jas. H. Carleton.  
1875. Wm. E. Blunt.  
B. F. Leighton.  
James H. Carleton.  
1876. Oliver Taylor.  
J. B. Swift.  
John B. Nichols.  
1877. John W. Tilton.  
Oliver Taylor.  
1878. Wm. A. Brooks.  
John W. Tilton.  
1879. Wm. A. Brooks.  
D. Smith Kimball.  
1880. Levi Taylor.  
Edwin Gage.  
1881. Levi Taylor.  
Edwin Gage.  
Daniel T. Morrison.  
1882. Daniel B. Cluff.  
Edwin N. Hill.  
1883. Daniel B. Cluff.  
Edwin N. Hill.  
1884. Calvin Damon.  
Charles H. Flint.  
1885. Wm. H. Johnson.  
Edward G. Frothingham.  
1886. Wm. H. Johnson.  
Edward G. Frothingham.  
1887. J. Otis Wardwell.  
Alden P. Jaques.  
George H. Bartlett.  
1888. J. Otis Wardwell.  
Alden P. Jaques.

*Representatives from Haverhill to Congress and the  
State Legislature.*

*Members of Congress from Haverhill.*

1797-1801. Bailey Bartlett. 1826-30. John Varnum.  
1811-13. Leonard White. 1848-52. James H. Duncan.

*State Senators from Haverhill.*

1789. Bailey Bartlett. 1853. Nathaniel S. Howe.  
1810. Israel Bartlett. 1857. Caleb D. Hunking.  
1811. John Varnum. 1860. Christopher Tompkins.  
1816-21. Israel Bartlett. 1866. Charles J. Noyes.  
1828-31. James H. Duncan. 1871. Nathan S. Kimball.  
1833. Gilmán Parker. 1876. Jackson B. Sweet.  
1844-45. Alfred Kittredge. 1877. Jackson B. Sweet.  
1818. Ezekiel J. M. Hale.

*State Representatives from Haverhill.*

1645-54. Robert Clement. 1717. Amos Singletary.  
1654. John Clement. 1718. John Saunders.  
1660. John Davis, 2d session. 1719. John White.  
1661-66. None. 1720-26. John Saunders.  
1666. Nathaniel Saltonstall. 1726-27. James Saunders.  
1667. Henry Palmer. 1728-29. Richard Saltonstall.  
1668. William Davis. 1729-33. Nathan Webster.  
1670-72. Nathaniel Saltonstall. 1733-34. William White.  
1672. George Brown. 1735-36. Richard Saltonstall.  
1673. Humphrey Davy, 2d ses- 1737. Nathaniel Peasley.  
sion. 1738. Richard Saltonstall.  
1674. Henry Palmer. 1739-42. Nathaniel Peasley.  
1675. George Brown. 1742. Richard Hazen.  
1681. Daniel Hendrick. 1743. Richard Saltonstall.  
1682. None. 1744-45. Philip Haseltine.  
1683. Peter Ayer. 1746-48. Nathaniel Peasley.  
1684. Robert Swan. 1749-59. Nathaniel Saunders.  
1685-86. Peter Ayer. 1751. John Haseltine.  
1687-88. None. 1752-53. Nathaniel Peasley.  
1689-91. Peter Ayer. 1754. Richard Saltonstall.  
1691. John Johnson. 1755-61. David Marsh.  
1692. George Brown. 1761-66. Richard Saltonstall.  
Samuel Hutchins. 1766-70. Samuel Bachellor.  
1693. Daniel Ladd. 1771-76. Jonathan Webster, Jr.  
Thomas Hart. 1776. Jonathan Webster.  
1694. Daniel Ladd. Nathaniel P. Sargent.  
1695-96. Peter Ayer. 1777-81. Jonathan Webster.  
1697. John Page. 1781-84. Bailey Bartlett.  
1698. Peter Ayer. 1784-85. Samuel White.  
1699. Richard Saltonstall. 1786. Nathaniel Marsh.  
1700. John White. 1789-99. Nathaniel Marsh.  
1701. Samuel Ayer. 1791. Francis Carr.  
1702. John White. Samuel Blodgett.  
1703. John White, 1st session. 1792-95. Francis Carr.  
John Haseltine, 2d ses- 1796. None.  
sion. 1797-98. Nathaniel Marsh.  
1704-5. Samuel Watts. 1799. Benjamin Willis.  
1706-7. James Saunders. 1800. Benjamin Willis.  
1708. John White. 1801. None.  
1709. James Saunders. 1802-3. Francis Carr.  
1710-13. John Haseltine. 1804-6. David How.  
1713. John White. 1807-8. Jas. Smiley.  
1714. John Haseltine. 1809. Leonard White.  
1715-16. John White. 1810-11. Ebenezer Gage.





*Post-Office.*

The records of the post-office in the city show the following business transacted in the carriers' department :

Pieces delivered for the year ending Dec. 30, 1887.....	1,951,575
Collected.....	920,249
Total.....	2,871,824
Average per carrier.....	410,689
Pieces delivered for the year ending Dec. 30, 1886.....	1,771,598
Collected.....	815,518
Total.....	2,587,056
Average per carrier.....	509,379
Total for 1887.....	2,871,824
Total for 1886.....	2,587,056
Increase, or 11 per cent.....	284,768

*Record for December 1887.*

	COLL'D.	DETR'D.
Mail letters.....	397,110	109,281
Local letters.....	8,706	
Mail cards.....	12,556	21,101
Local cards.....	6,420	
Papers, etc.....	7,000	78,764
	101,897	209,149
	204,114	
Total.....	311,016	

*Money Order Business.*

The following was the money order business done at the Haverhill Post Office for the year ending December 31, 1887 :

5193 Domestic orders.....	\$68,918 72
Fees on same.....	473 02
1336 International orders.....	18,832 91
Fees on same.....	220 60
5395 Postal Notes.....	11,608 72
Fees on same.....	159 24
	\$99,651 31
2383 Domestic orders paid.....	\$42,225 14
138 International " ".....	1,730 93
1413 Postal Notes.....	3,594 60
	\$47,550 67

15,911 transactions, amounting to..... \$18,910 08

Of this amount, \$2,999 was remitted to Boston.

Number of registered letters sent from this office during this year, 5601.

*Officers-elect for 1888 of Major How Post 47, Grand Army of the Republic, Haverhill.*

Com.....	W. D. Wood
S. V. C.....	Alonzo Joy
J. V. C.....	James F. Clark
Q. M.....	W. H. Johnson
Adjutant.....	J. M. Poore
Surgeon.....	E. G. Frothingham
Chapman.....	Lorenzo Frost
O. D.....	J. F. Fitzgerald
O. G.....	Joseph Marcoux
S. M.....	Orin Dodge
Q. M. S.....	Geo. F. Coffin
Auditors.....	A. Le Bosquet, H. B. George, W. H. Curtis

*Relief Committee:*

Ward 1.....	W. H. Ellison
Ward 2.....	G. F. Coffin
Ward 3.....	J. Lewis Webster
Ward 4.....	Frank Behr
Ward 5.....	Carl Jensen
Ward 6.....	Paul N. Hale
Bradford.....	J. F. Brown

The post is constantly gaining new members, and is in a flourishing condition.

*Officers of the Major How Grand Army of the Republic Association for 1888.*

Trustees—A. Le Bosquet, E. B. Savage, J. G. Seates, I. P. Jackson, W. H. Johnson, Lorenzo Frost, L. O. Bullock.  
Clerk—J. G. Seates.  
Treasurer—A. Le Bosquet.  
Auditors—B. A. Sawyer, Geo. F. Coffin.  
President—L. Frost.

Eighth Regiment Massachusetts V. M., Colonel Francis A. Osgood.

Company F, Haverhill—Captain, Benjamin H. Jellison; first lieutenant, Charles P. Damon; second lieutenant, G. Henry Page.

November 27, 1887, the meeting-house of the South Church, Washington Street, was occupied for the first time after remodeling and embellishing.

*Officers of the Catholic Aid Society for 1888.*

President—Rev. J. O'Doherty.  
Vice-president—Mrs. Michael Roche.  
Treasurer—Mrs. Mary Murphy.  
Recording Secretary—Nellie Buckley.  
Financial Secretary—Mary Desmond.  
Reader—Mary Kennedy.  
Janitress—Mary Driscoll.  
Investigators—The Mrs. Kennedy, Connor, Roche, Neagle Ryan, Cronin, Flynn, Golding, and Mrs. O'Brien, Bradford.

December 31, 1887, the city treasurer, David B. Tenney, made the following statement of the city finances :

	Received 1887.	Paid 1887.
Highway.....	\$1,065.10	\$96,516.23
School.....	189.60	65,290.00
Poor.....	1,991.34	12,362.25
Fire.....	975.63	52,513.79
Police.....	2,583.10	21,524.92
Salaries.....		8,269.62
Contingent.....	20,553.03	19,300.38
Public Property.....	600.00	12,502.18
City Hall.....	889.75	4,172.36
Printing.....	194.50	1,759.18
Pub. Library.....	4,119.12	5,919.26
Health.....		1,866.90
Interest.....	2,537.05	19,789.67
State Aid.....	3,091.59	3,559.50
City Debt.....		26,000.00
Sinking Fund.....		8,800.00
County Tax.....		15,628.20
State Tax.....		18,000.00
Bank Tax.....		9,351.12
Leath.....	75,000.00	75,000.00
River & Wash. St. Imp.....	2,338.19	
Taxes.....	286,715.57	
Totals.....	\$400,033.38	\$419,929.26
Balance 1886.....		76,550.91
Balance 1887.....		26,451.06
		\$476,383.42

*Directors of National Banks for 1888.*

*Merriam National Bank*—Charles W. Chase, Moses Nichols, John B. Nichols, Dudley Porter, Samuel M. Currier, Philip C. Swett, Woodbury Noyes, Charles E. Wiggin, John L. Hobson.

*Haverhill National Bank*—A. Washington Chase, Daniel Fitts, James E. Gale, John E. Gale, John J. Marsh, Eben Mitchell, Thomas Sanders, Amos W. Downing, George A. Kimball, Thomas S. Rudbeck.

*First National Bank*—George Cogswell, Samuel Laubham, Levi Taylor, R. Stuart Chase, S. Porter Gardner, C. C. Griffin, J. H. Durgin, S. H. Gale, A. L. Kimball, E. G. Wood.





*Essex National Bank*—John C. Tilton, Leverett Kimball, John P. Randall, Ezra Kelly, Wm. Caldwell.

*Second National Bank*—John A. Gale, Geo. A. Greene, J. W. Vittum, John Pilling, Geo. H. Carleton, J. H. Winchell, George A. Hall, L. O. Bullock, John W. Bass, George E. Elliott, C. W. Arnold.

The *Shoe and Leather Reporters' Annual* for 1888 states that Haverhill has 162 shoe manufactories, 11 retail shoe dealers, 8 dealers in boot and shoe findings, 7 manufacturers of boot and shoe patterns, 2 dealers in upper leather remnants, 4 dealers in boot, shoe and slipper trimmings, 1 die cutter, three last and pattern makers, 7 dealers in cut soles and leather, 9 dealers in kid, goat and morocco, 31 dealers in soles, taps and stiffenings, 3 manufacturers of shoe-boxes, 6 of shoe machinery, 3 of leather board, 9 heel manufacturers, 15 dealers in cement, 3 miscellaneous.

In the fifteen years following the adoption of the city charter, the following amounts were spent for city improvements of a permanent character:

Groveland bridge (1st).....	\$28,197.78
" " (2d).....	26,904.85
Haverhill bridge.....	58,063.56
High school building.....	107,784.05
Carrier " ".....	40,917.08
Broadway " ".....	16,665.25
Portland street school building.....	11,177.69
Laurel street bridge.....	16,888.53
Marginal sewer.....	24,600.60
Washington square.....	21,514.27
Water supply.....	30,209.51
New school-houses, Bowley, Chestnut Street, Groveland Street.....	32,224.55
Court street banding.....	12,210.30
New armshouse.....	24,666.89
River Street improvements.....	32,383.97
Washington street improvements.....	7,251.60
Total.....	\$495,517.80

#### *The Officers of the Haverhill Shoe and Leather Association for 1888.*

President—S. Porter Gardner.  
 Vice-presidents—Charles L. Kelley, Harry W. Chase, Charles C. Griffin.  
 Secretary—W. W. Spaulding.  
 Treasurer—Warren Kimball.  
 Executive Committee—W. W. Spaulding, William Knipe, S. P. Chick, D. Sherwood, W. Kimball, T. S. Rudbeck, H. W. Chase, Seraphim Leonard, J. H. Thomas, J. H. Winchell, C. C. Griffin, C. M. Hoar.

#### *Officers of the Haverhill and Groveland Street Railway Company.*

Directors—Levi Taylor, Ira O. Sawyer, John A. Gale, Ira A. Abbott, William H. Smiley, John A. Colby, P. C. Swett.  
 Auditor—E. G. Frothingham, D. R. Bennett, G. L. Sleeper.  
 President—Levi Taylor.  
 Clerk and Treasurer—John A. Colby.

#### *Officers of Masonic organizations in 1888.*

*Merrimac Lodge, F. & A. M.*

W. M. ....	Edward B. George
S. W. ....	Charles B. Wright
J. W. ....	Frank S. Gage
Treasurer.....	Levi C. Wadleigh
Secretary.....	Gustavus H. Tibbetts
S. D. ....	James H. Osgood
J. D. ....	John E. Leighton
Marshal.....	James W. Harris
Chaplain.....	John J. Page

S. S. ....	Nelson J. Hunt
J. S. ....	Frank P. Stevens
I. S. ....	Thomas W. Sargent
Organist.....	B. R. Downes
Tyler.....	E. Frank Horne

#### *Haverhill Conventory.*

E. C. ....	George V. Ladd
G. ....	Charles C. Osgood
C. G. ....	W. A. Ordway
Prebte.....	L. A. Woodbury
S. W. ....	Charles M. Heath
J. W. ....	D. F. Sprague
Treasurer.....	W. A. Brooks
Recorder.....	Henry B. George
S. W. ....	Charles N. Kelley
St. B. ....	Geo. O. Willey
Warder.....	E. W. Andrews
Third G.....	P. G. other
Second G.....	I. L. Mitchell
First G.....	Wm. M. Bowley
Organist.....	James E. Gale
Sentinel.....	E. F. Horne

#### *Officers of the Children's Aid Society managing the Elizabeth Home, 1887-88.*

President—Mrs. Ira E. Chase.  
 Vice-presidents—The Mrs. M. B. Frothingham, M. H. Moore, M. F. Ames, N. Boynton, O. S. Lovejoy.  
 Hon. Vice-presidents—The Mrs. J. H. Duncan, M. P. Chase, Daniel Harriman, M. E. Hosford.  
 Secretary—Mrs. J. N. Lewis.  
 Assistant Secretary—Mrs. H. C. Johnson.  
 Treasurer—Miss Sarah M. Kelly.  
 Auditor—Ezra Kelly.  
 Directors—The Mrs. Isaac Davis, C. N. Kelley, Geo. Elliott, Wm. Sellers, P. C. Swett, Wm. E. Blunt, H. C. Tanner, J. Fred Adams, A. W. Cram, R. Tappan, J. M. Nichols, S. S. Rogers, A. F. Kimball, F. W. Jacobs, J. B. Nichols, C. E. Kelly, J. V. Smiley, Gyles Merrill, A. M. Merrick, W. D. Wood, A. C. Brickett, Moses How, the Misses Mary C. Ames, Sarah M. Kelley, Caroline Duncan.  
 Advisory Committee—J. J. Marsh, Dr. I. E. Chase, Moses How, J. B. Nichols, A. W. Downing, Dr. J. R. Nichols.  
 Reference Committee—The Mrs. D. S. Dickinson, E. Kelley, Gardner Kennison, A. M. Merrick, H. C. Johnson.  
 Matron Committee—The Mrs. M. E. Hosford, J. M. Nichols, F. W. Jacobs, Charles Wingate, D. Harriman.  
 Clothing Committee—Messdames J. V. Smiley, E. Fox, R. Tappan, M. J. Lackey, A. G. Todd, W. C. Lewis, A. C. Brickett, C. C. Brown, B. G. Dickenson, H. S. Folsom, D. B. Tenney, E. W. Andrews, N. Thom, Henry Merrill.  
 Basket Committee—Miss Elizabeth C. Ames.  
 Educational Committee—Mrs. W. E. Blunt.  
 Collectors—Mrs. Edbridge Tibbetts, the Misses Emma S. Elliott and Hattie F. Kelley.  
 Committee on Repairs—P. C. Swett.  
 Committee on Wholesale—H. C. Tanner, Mrs. H. C. Tanner, Mrs. M. H. Moore.  
 Committee on Coal—Mrs. R. Tappan, Mrs. A. W. Cram.

The local Board of Civil Service Examiners, January, 1888, was composed of Dudley Porter, chairman, Ira A. Abbott, secretary, and John A. Gale.

At the annual meeting of the Young Men's Christian Association, October 19, 1887, four hundred and seventy-nine members were reported, classified as follows: sustaining, 249; active, 101; associate, 138,—a net gain of ninety-four. Sixty-seven women members had been transferred to the auxiliary. Thirteen denominations were represented in the association. Nine receptions had been held, with an average attendance of one hundred and fourteen. The average evening attendance of young men was thirty-five. There had been twenty-seven sessions of the con-



gress for debating purposes, with an average attendance of thirty. There had been seven successful entertainments, with an average attendance of three hundred and sixty-two.

The following officers were elected for the ensuing year:

President—J. A. Hale.

Vice-President—Dr. J. Crowell.

Treasurer—Geo. Thayer.

Directors for one year—Dr. L. J. Young, G. L. Williams, J. Howard Miller, C. N. Rhodes.

Directors for two years—T. J. Morey, Prof. I. N. Carleton, J. W. P. Smith, J. S. Sumner.

Directors for three years—Thos. Sanders, H. M. Chase, S. A. Dow, A. R. Leighton, S. W. Carleton.

There had been 17 Friday evening meetings, 27 inquiry meetings, 10 sessions of the training class, ten open-air meetings, 52 Sunday afternoon meetings. At Ayer's village meetings, the average attendance had been 20. The gift of the Haverhill Gymnasium had been accepted by the association. There had been 132 new members this year against 75 the year before.

#### *Merrimack Valley Steamboat Company.*

Treasurer, Benj. I. Page; Directors, J. H. Farnsworth, James E. Gale, Eben Mitchell, Ezra Kelley, H. C. Tanner, Dr. James R. Nichols, Charles W. Chase. The president of the board is J. H. Farnsworth.

#### *St. Jean Baptiste Society.*

Chaplain—Rev. O. Boucher.

President—E. J. Poirier.

Vice-President—Mar. Bonin.

Finance Secretary—S. Roger.

Assistant Secretary—A. Guilbert.

Recording Secretary—A. Boucher.

Corresponding Secretary—W. Paquette.

Treasurer—M. D. Mercier.

Auditors—H. Houde, N. Lavallée.

Commanders—Joseph Gervais, A. Poirier.

Directors—H. Cote, C. Guilbert, G. Baril, C. Brisette, A. Chamberland.

#### *K. of L. Co-operative Publishing Company.*

Clerk—Daniel W. Hurley.

Treasurer—A. L. Pettengill.

Directors—Richard F. Sullivan, James E. Devoy, T. P. Loye, A. J. Nason, Wm. A. Robertson, Charles A. Gale, James Wilson, Frank Bigelow, Daniel Stevens, W. W. Sprague. The company publishes the *Haverhill Daily Laborer*.

#### *The Teachers' Association for 1888.*

President—W. E. Hatch.

Vice-President—C. E. Kelley.

Secretary and Treasurer—Fred Gowme.

Executive Committee—Edward J. Cox, Charles W. Haley, Miss Lucy Ingram, Miss Jennie S. Edson, Miss Mary A. Tappan, Miss Sarah S. Noyes, Miss Abbie J. Meadowcroft.

#### *Officers of John G. Whittier Council, Royal Arcanum, in 1888.*

Regent—F. N. Flanders.

Vice-Regent—Warren Hoyt.

Orator—W. F. Thayer.

Secretary—J. H. Emerson.

Collector—Herman F. Morse.

Treasurer—Albert Le Bosquet.

Chaplain—W. H. Lawrence.

Guide—C. H. Worthen.

Warden—James Langley.

Sen.—B. F. Leighton.

Trustees—Alden P. Jaques, Walter S. Goodell, B. F. Leighton.

Del. to Grand Council—R. A. Grieves.

#### *Officers of the Union Steamboat Company of Haverhill and Newburyport for 1888.*

Directors—Oliver Taylor, C. W. Morse, Henry N. Sheppard, F. N. Keezer, Levi Taylor, J. F. Tilton.

Treasurer—G. M. Goodwin.

Clerk—C. H. Brown.

Building Committee—E. P. Shaw, George M. Goodwin, C. W. Morse, Fred. N. Keezer, G. F. Tilton.

Committee on By-laws—E. P. Shaw, C. W. Morse.

#### *Trustees of the City Hospital.*

George H. Carleton—*ex officio*—as mayor, Nathan S. Kimball, Addison B. Jaques, Amos A. Sargent, Samuel M. Currier, John Crowell, trustees; John Crowell, secretary.

#### *Some Charitable and Mutual Benefit Societies.*

Major How Relief Corps.

Mutual Relief Lodge, I. O. O. F.

Plymouth Rock Colony, P. F.

Court Pentucket, A. O. F.

Court Phoenix, A. O. F.

Major How Post 47, G. A. R.

Kenoza Lodge, D. of R.

Palestine Lodge, K. of P.

Burt Lodge, A. O. U. W.

J. G. Whittier Council, R. A.

Enterprise Council, Jr. O. U. A. M.

Excelsior Lodge, K. and L. of H.

J. K. Jenness Camp, S. of V.

Haverhill Commandery, K. G. C.

Washington Council, O. U. A. M.

Mizpah Lodge, I. O. O. F.

Excelsior Council, A. L. of H.

Lincoln Relief Association.

Puritan Council, Home Circle.

Eagle Assembly, R. S. G. F.

Excelsior Lodge, N. E. O. P.

Pentucket Lodge, K. of L.

The eighth annual report of the Board of Health, for the year 1887, is comparatively satisfactory. The board is progressive in its views and action, and endeavors, each year, to hold up and sustain a higher standard of sanitary condition. From this report to the mayor and City Council, dated January 2, 1888, have been gleaned some facts and extracts of interest.

During the year past eighteen tenement-houses were ordered vacated on account of unsanitary condition, eleven of which were put in proper order and seven were vacated.

Night-soil is removed by a person under license, and at a price fixed by the board. Ashes and garbage are collected by the Highway Department, but the method of disposing of them is not satisfactory to the board, which believes they should be completely destroyed by cremation, or some other equally effective method. House-odid is collected by an agent, acting under contract with the board.

Only one complaint of an offensive trade was made to the board during the year.

During the current year it is intended to make a systematic inspection of all school buildings, with a view of determining their sanitary condition.

Most of the sickness from zymotic diseases is ascribed by the board to defective systems of house-drainage and poor workmanship. After careful study





of the theory and practice of some of the best known authorities on this subject, and comparison in the light of information obtained by their own experience, a code of regulations for the construction of house-drainage was framed and adopted by the board in October. They are believed to be practicable, and not too stringent.

Although diphtheria and scarlet fever were unusually prevalent in Massachusetts last year, there was a marked reduction in the number of cases reported at the office of the Board of Health in Haverhill. The whole number of cases of contagious diseases reported during the year was 258 against 362 in 1886. Of this number, 142 were diphtheria, 34 were scarlet fever, 72 typhoid fever, and 10 cases of measles were reported. The number of deaths was forty-five, five less than in 1886, and making 17.40 per cent. of the cases reported. By far the larger number of contagious diseases reported are from the poorer class of tenement-houses and in families, where, by reason of poverty and overcrowding, the necessities of isolation cannot be commanded.

The mortality records for the twelve months ending December 31st show that 1887 was one of more than average good health. While the population of the city increased, the number of deaths was less than in 1886. The whole number of deaths in the city was 465, exclusive of still births, as compared with 481 for the year previous. Estimating the mean population at 25,000, this represents an annual death-rate of 18.60 for every 1000 of population. This diminution in the death-rate has occurred chiefly in the constitutional class and the zymotic diseases, which class comprises those commonly considered to represent the sanitary condition of places, because in a measure preventable by the observance of sanitary regulations. The ratio of deaths in this division was 22.58 per cent. of all deaths against 25.36 in 1886, and varying in different wards from 10.00 to 38.46 per cent. This proportion of preventable deaths, although not so large as last year, is a good deal higher than it should be.

The disease which most largely contributed to mortality in this class was cholera infantum, which caused thirty-five deaths, which number, notwithstanding the unusually high temperature of the summer months, did not differ materially from that of the preceding year.

Under the constitutional class 97 deaths were recorded, or 20.86 per cent. of the total mortality. Cases of consumption numbered 72, or 15.27 per cent. of all deaths, as against 14.76 per cent. the year before.

From the local class were 189, or 40.64 per cent. Diseases of the heart caused 7.74 per cent. and acute lung diseases 8.62 per cent. of deaths from all causes.

The mortality in the development class, including 19 deaths from old age, was 51, or 19.67 per cent., and the number of violent deaths, or those caused by accident, negligence or suicide, was 16, or 3.44.

The number of deaths under five years of age was 162, or 34.84 per cent. of the whole number, as against 37.00 per cent. in 1886, and those under one year constituted 20.64 per cent.

The whole number of deaths occurring among French Canadian residents was fifty-nine. The census of the French Canadian population, taken under the supervision of St. John the Baptist Society in July, 1887, places that portion of the population at 2872; on this basis, with the total before given, the annual death-rate was 20.54 to the thousand. Consumption, the leading disease of the constitutional class, caused 15.36 per cent. of the whole number of deaths, and 33.89 per cent. were in the zymotic class.

The mortality among children under five years of age was 57.62 per cent. of the 59 deaths recorded, more than one-half; and 33.89 per cent. were under the age of one year. Owners of tenement-houses are growing to realize more and more the value of improved sanitary conditions, particularly in regard to the plumbing work in new buildings, the standard of which was raised very much during 1887, and they are more willing to give intelligent support to measures for the public health. Though great improvement must yet take place, before the sanitary condition of Haverhill can be regarded as satisfactory, the board believed that there was a better condition of things than ever before in its history as a city.

## BIOGRAPHICAL.

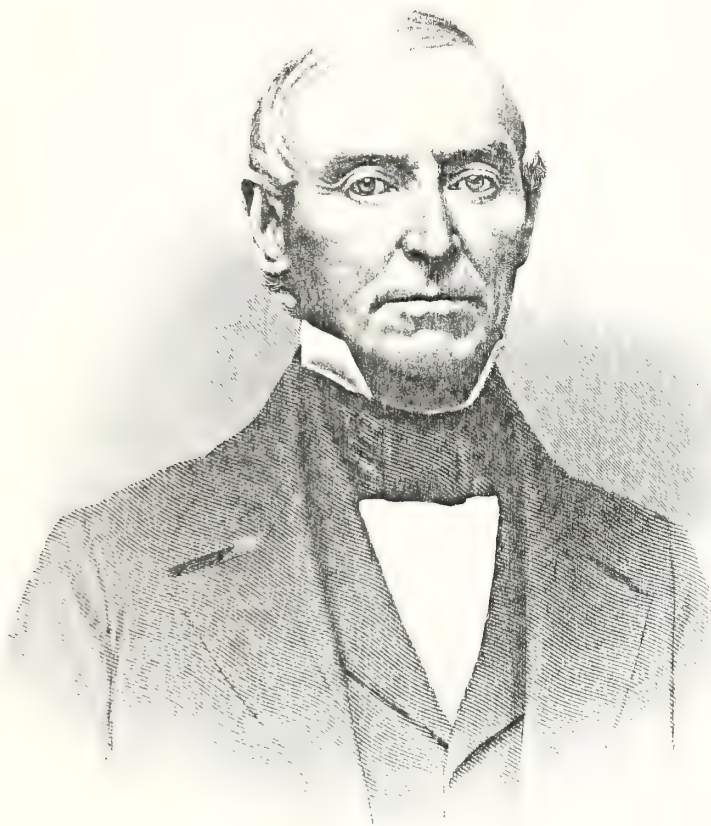
### ROBERT GREEN WALKER.<sup>1</sup>

The Walkers are a family long established in Haverhill, and many of its members have been much employed in the town matters. February 23, 1737-38, Nathaniel Walker married Lydia Ayer, both being of Haverhill. Their third son, James, was born January 17, 1748-49. This is undoubtedly James Walker, of whom Chase says that "he was of the sixth generation since the settlement of the town." During the Revolutionary War he was ensign in a company raised here, and it is said that on the night previous to the battle of Trenton, December 25, 1776, he commanded a detachment of men in charge of the boats employed to carry one of the divisions across the Delaware. From 1818 till his death, February 8, 1846, at the age of ninety-eight, Mr. Walker was a pensioner. In 1840 there were six pensioners still living in Haverhill—James Walker, at ninety, and David How, at eighty-four, heading the list.

Nathaniel Walker, the father, died April 10, 1775. In 1765 he was one of the selectmen. His fourth son, Samuel, born August 7, 1751, married Abigail Badger, of Haverhill. Their children were Samuel Ayer

<sup>1</sup> By John B. D. Cogswell.





Robert L. Walker





Walker, the late well-known auctioneer of Boston, and Robert Green Walker, born June 19, 1803, the subject of this sketch.

Nathaniel Walker, second son of Nathaniel, Sr., was born 1744, and married Hannah Peaslee, Oct. 17, 1771. Their eldest son, Samuel, born January 26, 1779, was probably that Samuel Walker, of Haverhill, who graduated at Dartmouth College in 1802.

Nathaniel Walker, the elder, is in the list of Haverhill tax-payers in 1741, and was enrolled in the militia in 1757. He was moderator of the town-meeting April 9, 1770, at the beginning of the troubles with Great Britain, when it was voted "that we will by all lawful ways and means, exert ourselves and expose to shame and contempt all persons who shall offer to make sale of British goods imported contrary to the agreement of marchants, or that shall purchase such goods in this town, or be aiding or assisting to bring them Into it, till a general importation of such goods shall take place, and that all persons who shall violate or Counter act this vote and resolve, shall be rendered incapable of being chosen to any office of profit or Honour in this town." And Nathaniel Walker, with Thomas West, Nathaniel Peaslee Sargent (afterwards chief justice) and others, were made "a committee to inspect and see that all salutary resolves and agreements with respect to such Goods be Duly observed, and to give notice & expose all who shall violate them; that their names may be remembered with infamy." . . . "The moderator dismissed the meeting."

July 28, 1774, "Nathaniel Walker, Jr.," was placed upon the Committee of Inspection upon the same general subject. He was a member of the Artillery Company, organized September, 1774, and, with Bailey Bartlett, Israel Bartlett, Thomas Cogswell, Nathaniel Marsh and Doctor Brickett, sent to England for a copy of the "Norfolk Militia Book," in which to study tactics.

In 1779 he was one of the town's creditors for money advanced to meet its expenses. Ten years before, in 1769, he was the "clerk" of the company which organized to buy the first fire-engine. The three brothers, Nathaniel, James and Samuel, were members of the Fire Society. Nathaniel and Samuel both find a place in the valuation list of householders in 1798. In 1801 Benjamin Willis, Jr., Nathan Ayer, Samuel Walker, Jonathan Souther and Jesse Harding petitioned the town "for leave to conduct the water by means of an aqueduct, from the round pond, so-called, into this part of the town, for private and public convenience." This was the beginning of the Haverhill Aqueduct Company which was organized the same year under a general State law.

Nathaniel Walker, the elder, was a witness to one of the bills of sale by which the "negro boy Cesur" was transferred. July 10, 1739, Thomas Russ, of Suncook, "cordwainer," in consideration of one hundred pounds, sold his "negro boy named

Cesur, being about seven years old," to Benjamin Emerson, of Haverhill, yeoman. June 16, 1640, Emerson sold him to Nathaniel Cogswell, of Haverhill, trader; and August 23, 1742, being now about ten years old, Nathaniel Cogswell sold him for one hundred and fifteen pounds to Samuel Phillips, Jr., of Andover, "trader" (the son of Reverend Samuel Phillips, first minister of the South Parish in Andover). Nathaniel Walker and Jonathan Buck (of Water Street) witnessed this last bill of sale. These were all highly respectable people, and the public conscience did not begin to be disturbed about domestic slavery for many years after.

Samuel Walker was ensign of Captain Thomas Cogswell's company, drafted for Continental service in 1775. He also marched, September, 1777, with a volunteer detachment to reinforce the Northern army. Samuel Walker was afterwards a prominent person in town affairs. For more than thirty consecutive years and to the day of his death he held positions of honor and trust. He was especially interested in the school system. October, 1790, he reported to the town, as chairman of a committee, a code of thirteen rules, which was adopted, for the government of the grammar schools in the town. They are printed by Chase in his history, in substance. They are very elaborate, even minute in character, and wholesome in tendency. The school committee of the First, or Centre District, a little later, was habitually composed of the sterling and most highly educated men of the town.

At a town-meeting, December 12, 1791, a proposition was made to divide the town into school districts, and a committee of twelve was chosen for the purpose, Samuel Walker being chairman. At an adjourned meeting, December 26th, the committee reported a recommendation that each of the four parishes be erected into a school district. The report was adopted.

The record of the First School District says: "In 1793 the town was divided into school districts. At the town-meeting, held on March 26th the following Gentlemen were chosen a Committee for District No. 1, viz: Rev. John Shaw, the Rev. Hezekiah Smith, Bailey Bartlett, Esq., Samuel Blodgett, Esq., Samuel Walker, Joseph Dodge, Doct'r Saltonstall, Doct'r Brickett and William Cranch." Mr. Shaw was the minister of the First Church and Mr. Smith of the Baptist. Bailey Bartlett was sheriff and soon after Congressman. Dr. Nathaniel Saltonstall and General Brickett were distinguished citizens, and William Cranch, then a young lawyer here, was afterwards chief justice of the District of Columbia. Samuel Walker continued to be chosen annually of this committee for a number of years. He died July 12, 1817.

Robert Green Walker was educated at the Haverhill schools, and at the Bradford academy, under the celebrated Benjamin Greenleaf. He went to Boston at





the age of twenty and found employment there; afterwards to the South, where he was engaged in traveling commercially for a year or two, making his headquarters at Charleston, South Carolina. About 1837 he entered into business in Haverhill with Moses E. Emerson, under the firm-name of Emerson & Walker. Their place of business was Bridge Street, and their neighbors there were William Smiley and Edmund Kimball.

June 30, 1835, Mr. Walker married Mary W. Emerson, of Haverhill, who died in 1872. Their only surviving child was Frances Abby, who married Charles Butters, of Haverhill, July 22, 1863. Their only child is Robert Green Walker Butters, at present (1888) a student at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology.

Robert Green Walker died suddenly February 19, 1862. He was interested in the first steamboat enterprise between Haverhill and Newburyport—the steamer “Merrimack,” Capt. William Haseltine, which made her first trip from Haverhill April 8, 1828. The boat continued running, though quite irregularly, for several years, when the enterprise was abandoned.

Like his ancestors, Mr. Walker was for many years active and prominent in the affairs of the town. He was moderator of the town-meeting in 1846, and from that time till the day of his death was engaged in the town business.

He was on the Prudential (School) Committee from 1848 to 1857. He was selectman from 1851 to 1861, with the exception of two years, and during one of those the board employed him to keep the records and practically conduct the business, surrendering their compensation to him.

He was assessor from 1849 to 1854, inclusive. He was also road surveyor for many years.

In 1852, when party feeling ran very high, Mr. Walker was the only selectman chosen at the first meeting.

The reason why Mr. Walker was so much in the public employment is to be found in his great aptness and skill in the conduct of business of that character. He was neat, accurate and methodical, and had a decided taste for that kind of work. He took pride in doing it well. Again, his system and promptness were appreciated by the public. He had a genuine interest in the public schools, which endeared him to teachers and pupils alike; testimonials from them to that effect are highly prized by his family.

Mr. Walker took a similar interest in the affairs of the religious society with which he was a worshipper—the Centre Congregational. He was never weary of arranging details for its meetings and providing that everything should be done decently and in order.

In a word, he loved to be useful, and had a great capacity for taking trouble. The same tendency made him very valuable as a road surveyor. Emerson and

other streets, bear witness to his efficiency in that department.

He was always ready to accept new methods, and never discarded a proposition simply because it was novel.

In 1859 the town appointed a committee to consider the subject of building a new town hall, to obtain estimates, make plans and report. Hon. James H. Duncan was chairman of the committee; Mr. Walker was the second named upon it, and took deep interest in the affair. January 7, 1861, the committee reported a plan, which was adopted, and measures were at once taken for the erection of a new building. During its construction Mr. Walker was indefatigable in his attention to details connected with it. This is the structure which, with some alterations, has so far served acceptably as the City Hall.

In private life Mr. Walker is spoken of as a genial and agreeable gentleman, whom it was always a pleasure to meet, ever social, with cordial manners and ready wit. One gentleman said, “I remember him as a tall, well-proportioned man, very courteous, though I thought a little reserved, and very well bred. He had great aptitude for public business, and in that respect, as in every other, much confidence was reposed in him. Too much cannot be said in judicious praise of Robert G. Walker.”

Mr. Walker was a faithful, kind and indulgent husband and father.

He was from an early day a member of St. John's Lodge of Masons in Boston.

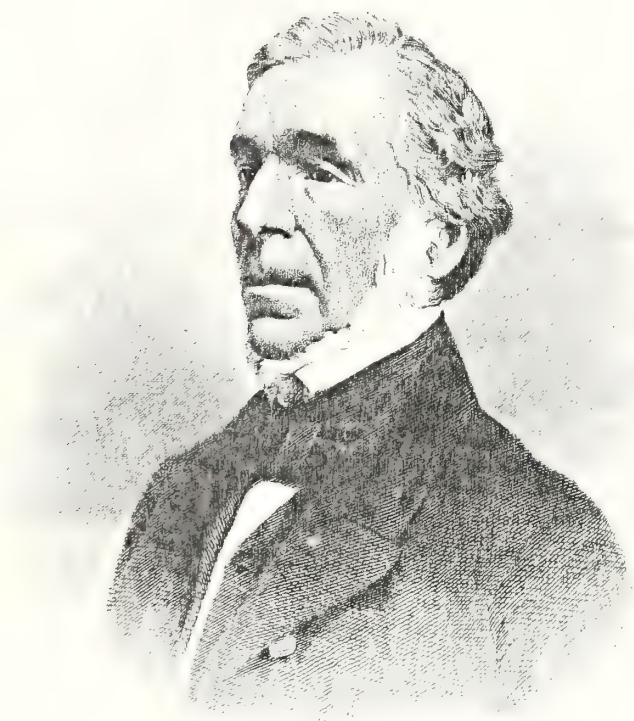
It is characteristic of Mr. Walker's scrupulous care in all things that to him, according to the historian Chase, is to be ascribed the preservation of the invaluable roll of the “minute-men” of 1775, which had been “part of a parcel of loose papers in an old bag which had been kicked about the assessor's room for years.” He rescued and carefully preserved it.

#### PAUL SPOFFORD.

Among her citizens who have been an honor to Haverhill, was Paul Spofford, the son of Joseph Spofford and Mary Chaplin. He was born in 1792, in the neighboring town of New Rowley, now Georgetown, and was sixth in descent from the Rev. John Spofford, appointed by the House of Lords in 1642, Vicar of Silkstone, in Yorkshire, and who resigned in 1662, when seventy-four years old, rather than at the sacrifice of his convictions become a conformist. The present Vicar of Silkstone, the Rev. W. S. Barker, in a recent letter to one of Mr. Spofford's family says:

“I enclose you an extract from Wilkinson's Worsborough which quotes the character of your ancestor.” Chapter 23, page 278, John Spofford, Vicar of Silkstone was 74 years of age when, refusing to comply with the terms of the Act of Uniformity, he resigned his living, and spent the few remaining years of his life at the house of Mr. Cotton, one of his parishioners, who





*Paul Spofford*





resided at Hawkthirst in Silk-ston. The character given of him by the biographer of the nonconforming clergy, is that he was a pious man, of competent parts and abilities, very plain in his preaching, holy in his life, facetious in discourse, and a lover of all good men."

The Spoffords had lived in Yorkshire from before the time of the conquest in 1066. At that date their ancestor's chief seat was in that county, where, and in the neighboring counties he had large possessions. A large portion of them were seized by that ruthless robber, William the Conqueror, and bestowed on William de Percy, one of his followers.

John Spofford, son of the vicar, and ancestor of the New England Spoffords, was one of the pilgrims who accompanied the Rev. Ezekiel Rogers, to this country in 1638, of whom their contemporary Governor Winthrop says, Mr. Rogers arrived in this country with about twenty families of his Yorkshire friends, "godly men" and "most of them of good estate."

The subject of our notice, until the age of nineteen worked upon his father's farm. His mother died when he was a child, but he had a kind and devoted father, and loving sisters, and it was a happy household.

As a boy he was fond of riding, shooting, wrestling, skating and other athletic sports; he had but little time for them, for there was plenty of work on his father's farm, and he was not one to shirk it. He had quite an inventive mind. When a mere child, he built himself a mill upon the little brook that ran through their place, and using a piece of tin which he had notched into a saw, and potatoes for his logs, he would saw out the slabs to the great delight of his little sisters. On one of the few holiday afternoons that fell to his lot, he obtained his father's permission to go duck-shooting. Taking with him Mr. Aubin, a man that worked upon their farm, he went to the Pond a mile or so distant, but when in the middle of it the boat upset, and as he could not swim a stroke, down he sunk to the bottom. The writer has heard him say that, as he lay there, he was free from pain, but that thoughts and memories rushed through his mind with such inconceivable rapidity that it seemed as if everything in his life was before him, and that he thought how his father and sisters would mourn when they should hear that he was drowned. But Mr. Aubin, who was an excellent swimmer, found him, after diving several times, and seizing him by the heel brought him to the surface, and got him ashore. He soon revived and was able to walk home, where a heartfelt welcome, a dry suit, and a good fire soon made him feel all right.

In 1812 he came to Haverhill as a clerk in a store. Soon after this his employer opened a general country-store in Salem, N. H., and Mr. Spofford went thither with him, but a good opening offering in Haverhill, they again returned to the city. While yet a clerk his employer chanced to be sick, at a time when it was necessary to go to Boston to buy a general assort-

ment of goods. With many misgivings he entrusted this, to him all important matter, to his young clerk. In those days a trip to the city of Boston from the remote little village of Haverhill was a great affair. Mr. Spofford, though a country lad, probably on his first visit, spared no pains to justify the trust reposed in him. Fortunately he could carry in his mind the exact appearance of the goods shown him, the fineness of cloth, the color and grain of the sugar, the flavor of the tea, the pattern of crockery, indeed the appearance of the various articles needed for a general country-store, and by pricing each at several stores, he could judge which were the best bargains. So well did he perform his trust, that his employer always sent him afterwards to make the Boston purchases, and soon found it for his interest to promote him to a full partnership.

Much of their business was a barter-trade. At times some of the articles taken—such as shoes, hats, etc.—suited for the South, would accumulate. It was very desirable to find a ready outlet. Mr. Spofford decided to establish a commission-house for that purpose, and proposed to his friend, Thomas Tileston, then editor of the *Haverhill Gazette*, to join him. They formed a partnership, and, in the spring of 1818, founded the house of Spofford & Tileston, which in time became so well and favorably known through all the commercial world. In this age of steam and telegraph we cannot realize how formidable this undertaking must have been to them—the going so far from friends and home, unknown, with an untried business, and but slender means to make their way amongst strangers. What a contrast between leaving Haverhill now in the afternoon, arriving in New York in time for supper, after a ride of seven and a half hours in luxurious cars, and their journey.

They left Haverhill in May, 1818, in the stage-coach, at 7.30 A.M. The roads were bad and the whole day was consumed in getting to Boston. Early the next morning they left Boston by stage, and another day was spent in reaching Providence, R. I. The following morning they took stage, and by night-fall they reached Norwich, Conn. At an early hour the next day they embarked in the steamboat, and arrived at New Haven about eleven that night, and thought that they had made an excellent passage. They were transferred to another steamboat, which lay alongside (I think it was the *Fulton*), and about noon next day were landed at Fulton Street, New York. Two or three years after this, Mr. Spofford was the only through passenger from Boston to New York. Only one stage came out from Boston that day. All his fellow-passengers had left by the time they reached Hartford, and at that city other passengers took their places. This stage was about forty-eight hours from Boston to New York.

Immediately on arriving in New York, Mr. Spofford secured a store in Fulton Street while Mr. Tile-



ston continued on as far as Philadelphia, and, I think, Baltimore, to see which of the three cities would be best for their permanent establishment.

The next day (Sunday), Mr. Spofford obeyed his father's injunctions by attending the Brick Church, of which Dr. Gardiner Spring, son of the Rev. Dr. Samuel Spring, of Newburyport, was pastor. From that day until his death, in 1869, he was a regular attendant of that church, and eventually became a member of it.

His partner, when he returned, a few days after, from Philadelphia, found him in full swing of business, and they wisely determined that New York was the place for them. Among their earliest customers were Spaniards, for at that time a low rate of duty permitted the shipment of shoes to Havana and Matanzas. They paid cash, and this young house of but small means saw that they should use every effort to keep and increase their custom by selling at small profit, and by great care in packing their goods. They soon won the confidence of their Spanish friends, and, on their return from Cuba, with their proceeds in produce, they were entrusted with the sale of coffee, sugar and molasses on commission. Having thus the control of considerable freight, they were induced, within a year or two, to place vessels in the Cuba trade. This, and the agency of the Boston packets, which they obtained about this time, was the beginning of a long and successful career as shipowners.

They boarded at Mrs. Street's, 115 Pearl Street, and at Bunkers'. Among their fellow-boarders were Jos. Kernochan, Henry and Daniel Parish and others who afterwards became very prominent in New York.

During this time Mr. Spofford and his partner had not neglected our Southern country, but they had found a large market for their goods in that direction, and with the like result of cotton, rice and other produce being consigned to them.

Their receipts of goods from Massachusetts on commission soon drifted into purchases for their own account, often paid for in leather. The frequent purchase of leather led them to importing hides from South America, and in a very few years they had six packets running regularly to Buenos Ayres and Montevideo. Meanwhile Spain had laid a heavy duty on American manufactures, so that the goods they formerly sold for Cuba could no longer be sent thither, but the firm had become fully established as importers of sugar and coffee. Their packets—the "Dromo," "Pharos," "Havana," "Cristobal Colon," "Adelaide," "Hellespont," "Caspar Hauser," "James Drake," and many others; and their captains, Benjamin Smith, Richard H. Ellis, Lane, Doughty, Richard Adams and others—were favorably known. For many years they did a very large business with that island. Sugar being an article of great consumption, and bearing a very heavy duty, it happened several times that the greatest amount of duty paid during

the year at the New York Custom-House by any one importer was paid by Spofford & Tileston.

In 1845 Captain Michael Berry proposed to them the building an ocean steamship to run to Charleston, S. C. His many efforts to this end, with his owners and with all the other houses in that trade, had been in vain. They said that their fine packet-ships had handsome cabins, more than sufficient for all the travel. Only once or twice a year would they go full; generally, they could not get one-quarter of what they could accommodate. Why build a vessel that could carry every fortnight four times as many passengers as one of their largest ships? Where could he expect to get enough of them for even a small part of his room? And, as to freight, how could coal compete with wind. The steamship would cost more than five times as much as one of their packets, and every trip there would be a heavy bill for engineers, coal, wages and wear and tear on the machinery. Lastly, but by no means least, who in this country could build sea-going engines? This last really had great force. No marine engines and no sea-going steamers up to this time had ever been built in the United States. In building steamboats for river and inland navigation we excelled. In pleasant weather they could venture along the coast, prepared in case of storm to seek the first harbor. Years before this, a few trips had been made by steamboats between New York and Charleston, but the experiments ended in shipwreck and fearful loss of life. Once, many years before, a steamboat from a Southern port had succeeded in crossing the Atlantic, but none dare a second voyage.

Mr. Spofford and his partner considered the matter carefully. They could not see why marine-engines could not be built in the United States if machinists would inform themselves, and were well paid for their work. They saw at once that the uncertainty of the sailing vessel, which, even with good winds, was four or five days on the trip, and with calms or storms, might be twenty days, when contrasted with sixty hours, in which the steamship would make the run, would give them all the passengers that went by sea and a large number of those who then went by land. But they also saw that it would be useless to attempt it unless they were ready to spend money enough to build a staunch ship with powerful marine-engines that, regardless of weather, would go out at her appointed hour, and that would safely hold her way through the terrific storms that sometimes rage upon our coast.

In 1846 they built the "Southerner;" the contract for machinery was with Stillman, Allen & Co., of the Novelty Works, and for the hull with William H. Brown. The first trip was a success. On the second the "Southerner" encountered one of the worst storms that there had been for many years. Many persons were in great fear for her; but she passed through unscathed, landed her passengers safely and





delivered her cargo in good order. She proved a very buoyant, easy ship, and then all felt that Americans had shown that they, as well as the English, could build marine-engines and ocean steamships that would stand the roughest weather. In a few months they contracted for a larger steamship, the "Northerner."

Aspinwall, Law, Sloo, Vanderbilt, Collins, Livingston and others, who afterwards became so prominent in the steam annals of the country, were upon the trial trips of the "Southerner" and "Northerner." When they saw the regularity of their trips, and the success that had attended the enterprise of Spofford & Tileston, they also built steamships for Liverpool, Havre, Aspinwall and other ports.

It shows how facilities for travel tend to its increase, when we see Spofford & Tileston commencing with a steamship of one thousand tons, trips once in two weeks, and schedule time of sixty hours, and find them at the outbreak of the Civil War with four splendid steamships, each of one thousand six hundred tons, so that twice a week they despatch a vessel with a schedule time of forty-eight to fifty hours. Besides which, on the south of Charleston, Savannah, and Norfolk on her north, each had their lines of steamships, and the travel by rail, also had greatly increased.

It was always a source of great gratification that during all this time not a single life was lost, none of their steamships were wrecked, nor, in fact, met with any mishap of moment. We think, therefore, that we may fairly claim for Haverhill the honor of having two of her former citizens the first in this country to build ocean steamships, and to run them successfully; and also that the enterprise of persons whose business education was commenced in Haverhill, immediately began a steamship development in the United States which soon threatened to wrest the supremacy from England, and which, had it received from our government aid similar to that bestowed by England upon her people, would make us to day, at least her powerful rival, instead of being almost driven from the ocean.

In 1818, they bought the splendid line of Liverpool packets, "Sheridan," "Roscius," "Garriek," and "Sidons," ships of fine model, and when built considered very large. The line was profitable, but they were quick to see that larger ships could be run at about the same expense. They supplied their places with the "Webster," "Calhoun," "Henry Clay," "Orient," "Energy," and others, most of which they built. These were the largest ships in the Liverpool trade. When the great rush for California occurred in 1849, they were among the first to fit-up and send ships thither.

During the Civil War they were staunch supporters of the North, and contributed liberally to the cause. One of their steamships, the "Nashville," was seized by the Confederates, and, as a privateer,

did much mischief. Some of their steamers entered the United States service. With the others they established a line to Havana, and when New Orleans was taken by our forces, their steamers were among the first to visit that city. They sent thither, as their agent, William J. Reid, a young man brought up in their employ, son of the Captain Reid of the "General Armstrong," who, in the War of 1812, so bravely defended his ship against an overwhelming British force.

On a trip to a neighboring plantation for a lot of sugar he had bought, a party of rebels attacked the steamer just as she was leaving. Reid was hit in several places, and a bullet passed through his neck, but being like his father, a man of great courage, he continued for a few moments to give orders, and succeeded in getting the vessel free. It was a terrible wound and it was many months before he recovered. Soon after the close of the war, Reid, having made a handsome property, came North, and the agency was discontinued.

Thus, besides the large inland and banking business of Spofford and Tileston, their shipping business was very extensive. In it, their flag, yellow, on a blue cross, the letters S T, white, was borne unsullied in the four quarters of the globe, and it always flew as the flag of American citizens, for they never yielded to the temptation of putting any of their vessels under a foreign flag, not even during the Civil War. On the contrary, they armed their Havana steamers, and obtained commissions in the United States Navy for the captains; and as for their other vessels, they trusted to the skill and prudence of their commanders,—Hill, Eldridge, Joseph J. Lawrence, Caukins, De Peyster, French, Truman and others. Fortunately, with the exception of the Nashville, they all escaped capture.

In 1844, Mr. Spofford bought Elmwood, a beautiful country-place on the Sound, three miles from Harlem. There he passed half the year, and after a hard day's work in town, he would rest himself by hard work in the hay field, and the superintendence of his farm. I say rest, because, to him, the complete change of occupation, and the bringing back many of the associations of his boyhood, proved a rest, and without doubt prolonged his life, which, though it attained to seventy-seven, would probably have been yet greater had he not met with a severe accident in 1857. He was accompanying the daughters of his partner to the Italian opera, where for many years they had owned a box, and, as usual, together.

In his care for his young charges, he was struck down by a pair of horses which came rushing round the corner at a furious rate. He received a terrible blow on the back of the head. The young ladies fortunately escaped harm, and could aid him to his residence, which was near. Dr. Willard Parker, his family physician, congratulated him in his cheerful manner on his skull not being fractured, but enjoined





rest and quiet. He avoided alarming the family, but he well knew that no one could then tell what danger there might be of internal injury. The next morning, Mr. Spofford felt so much better, that he insisted on going to his office, but by mid-day he became unwell and returned home. For weeks his life trembled in the balance.

Every particle of his scalp sloughed off. To meet this tremendous drain upon the system, it was necessary at first to give him nourishment every two hours regardless of breaking his rest, or of the suffering, a change of position entailed. After a time minute red spots upon the skull, and then very minute filaments radiating from them, and by degrees a web of blood vessels, and then a new skin, and then a new head of hair was formed. Dr. Parker watched this development day by day, and to his professional eye it was most beautiful. Within three months Mr. Spofford was out, as active and apparently as well as ever. It was a most wonderful recovery. The Doctor attributed it to his having always lived a prudent, moderate life, and in no way, having impaired his splendid natural constitution; and to the most careful nursing of his devoted wife, aided afterwards by his sister, Mrs. Hersey, a resident of this city, and Miller, a nurse who had served in the Crimea under Florence Nightingale.

In 1864, Mr. Spofford had the great sorrow to lose his partner Mr. Thomas Tileston, his life-long friend. It was a sudden and terrible blow, but he bore up under it nobly, and continued actively engaged in business until his death, five years later. Then he had a stroke of paralysis, which in a few days ended in his death, October 28, 1869, at Elmwood. The funeral services took place on the 31st at his town residence. The Rev. Drs. Shedd, Murray, and Adams, and the Rev. Mr. Nixon officiated. Richard M. Blatchford, Jonathan Thorne, Shepherd Knapp, Levi A. Dowley, Thomas H. Faile, John David Wolfe, Robert L. Stuart, Jonathan Sturges, John D. Jones and William M. Evans acted as pall-bearers. He was buried in Greenwood in his family vault which adjoins that of his partner Thomas Tileston.

The intimacy between the two partners was unusually close, and contributed much to their success. When they first came to New York they boarded together. On Mr. Tileston's marriage, Mr. Spofford was a member of his family until his own marriage. Then they took houses adjoining and exactly alike 522 and 524 Broadway. In the same block, three or four houses distant, one of their neighbors was John Jacob Astor. Fearing that their business would suffer by reason of their distance from their store, they in 1826 built two houses 37 and 39 Barclay Street, side by side exactly alike, and drew lots for a choice. The situation was beautiful; the lots were deep enough for pleasant gardens and in their immediate rear were the grounds of Columbia College, with their fine old buttonwoods. There they remained

until 1840, when they moved to two houses, side by side, and exactly alike, which they had built at 733 and 735 Broadway. They occupied them for ten years, and then built at 2 and 4 East Fourteenth Street, at the corner of Fifth Avenue, two houses side by side and exactly alike, for which they again drew lots, and which they occupied until their deaths.

Mr. Spofford was for many years one of the council and treasurer of the New York University. He had been a director in the Erie, the Harlem and other railroads and companies; he was also director in various banks, fire and marine insurance companies and other institutions.

Both he and his partner were elected members of the Union Club, but the tastes of both were domestic, and they never accepted. They were, however, for many years members of the celebrated Hone Club, composed of a few gentlemen who dined once a fortnight at each other's houses. Amongst them were Philip Hone (their president), Moses H. Grinnell, Simeon Draper, J. Prescott Hall, Richard M. Blatchford, John Ward, George Curtis, Samuel Jaudon, James Watson Webb, Dr. J. W. Francis, Roswell L. Colt and A. C. Kingsland. There were a few honorary members—Daniel Webster, Thurlow Weed, Thomas Butler King, William H. Seward and one or two others—who dined with them when in town. Being very intelligent men, highly intellectual and leaders in their various pursuits, these reunions were very pleasant, and, though neither Mr. Spofford nor his partner ever held political office, at these meetings, they aided in shaping the course of political parties.

Mr. Spofford was a man of great coolness and nerve. When over seventy, while driving to Elmwood, one of his neighbors tried to pass him, but he maintained the lead until he came to where he was to turn from the main road into the one which led to his place. In order to turn he slackened his pace. His friend, but a few yards behind, was going at full speed, when his horse suddenly shied and brought one of his wheels in contact with the wheel of Mr. Spofford's light wagon, throwing it with great force high into the air, pitching him out on the other side. He picked himself up, and, calling to his horse, the well-trained animal stopped. His friend was greatly alarmed, and wished to take him home, but Mr. Spofford assured him that he could drive himself. He felt that something was wrong with one hand, but the other was all right; so he jumped into his wagon and drove home, a mile or so. His friend, however, would not be put off, but followed in his own wagon until he saw him at his gate all right. Mr. Spofford stopped at the stable to order a man to go for the doctor, and at his farmer's to give some directions about his crops, and then went to the house. He told his wife that he had met with an accident, and, though slight, had sent for the doctor.

His manner was so unconcerned she could not sup-





*B. F. Hosford*





pose that it was serious. The doctor found that both bones of his arm, at the wrist, were broken off short, and set them. The next day, Sunday, his family had hard work to prevent his going to church. On Monday he went to business at the usual hour, stopping at Doctor Parker's, who said that his arm was doing well, and that he would recover the full use of it; but that, while as strong as ever, the wrist would be slightly crooked, from the haste with which it had been set. He added that by resetting the difficulty could be overcome, but that it would be very painful, and was not necessary. Mr. Spofford thought otherwise, and then and there made the doctor perform the operation, and bore the pain, which was very great, without flinching. Then, with his arm in splints, well bandaged and in a sling, he went to his office, where, to his great surprise, his friend found him when he called to inquire how he was progressing.

Mr. Spofford's first wife was the niece and ward of the Hon. Jeremiah Nelson, member of Congress, from Newburyport. After her death he remained a widower for more than ten years, and then married a daughter of the Rev. Dr. Gardiner Spring. He left one daughter and five sons.

In manner he was very unassuming, quiet and retiring, very pleasant, rather slow of speech, but very witty, and quick to see the bearing of a remark. His judgment was excellent. He was a man of very kind, deep feelings, and very considerate of the feelings and welfare of those under him. He would at any time put himself to great personal inconvenience to do them a favor. He was always neat in dress and person, slightly under the average height, of spare wiry build, very healthy, and capable of great endurance, very quick and active in his movements, of dark complexion, very bright, sparkling black eyes and a pleasant smile that lit up his whole countenance. Until fifty years began to sprinkle his hair with grey, it was jet black, very glossy, fine and silk-like in texture, clustering around his head in beautiful curls. From early manhood he always wore whiskers, but never moustache nor beard.

---

REV. B. F. HOSFORD.

Among all the influences which, from the earliest period, have contributed to the moulding of institutions and the development of character in New England, none have been more powerful than that of its clergy. These, from the beginning, were noted as men of learning, ability and piety. They were the founders of schools and colleges; they left their impress upon Church and State; they were leaders in thought and action during times of peace and times of war.

A fit successor and representative of these worthies was the subject of this sketch, in whose character and career an old and a new era seemed to blend their elements. His boyhood was spent amidst the quiet

of a new England country home. His early manhood brought him into contact with the activities of a growing manufacturing community. The period of his pastorate over the Centre Church in Haverhill extended from 1843 to 1865, the mid-period of the nineteenth century, an epoch marked by intellectual quickening, great inventions and stirring events in our national history. In all the movements of the age to which he belonged, he shared through a wide range of sympathies and a keen and vigorous intellect. Thus, while he had drunk of the mental and religious influences of the New England of the past, he was fully alive with the progressive spirit of a later day, and was peculiarly fitted for that office of spiritual teacher and leader which he held among the same people for nearly the space of a generation.

Benjamin Franklin Hosford was born in Thetford, Vt., November 11, 1817. The youngest of twelve children, he was reared with careful tenderness in the simplicity of his rural home, the remembrance of which he always held dear.

The beautiful associations of mountain and woodland, of orchard, meadow and river, of birds and flowers, became a part of his inner life, never to be outgrown. Still more was his character affected by the conscientious training of parents of intelligence and piety, and by the profound metaphysical preaching of a revered theologian, in the square-pewed meeting-house on Thetford Hill, in which families were seated according to rank or seniority, with the boys and girls occupying their respective galleries, guarded by a force of tithing men.

He fitted for college at the Academy of his native town, showing from the first the qualities which marked him through life. His school-mates bore witness to his quickness of apprehension, his enthusiasm for study, his fine tastes, ready powers of observation and quick sense of the ludicrous. The child was, in almost every respect, the father of the man.

He entered Dartmouth College, at Hanover, N. H. in 1834, and directly after his graduation there, began his theological course at Andover Seminary, which covered the usual period of three years, besides an additional year of post-graduate study.

He was ordained pastor of the Center Church in Haverhill May 21, 1845, and on July 28, 1845, was married to Mary Elizabeth Stone, of Saxonville, Mass.

Thus began his life-work, concentrated in one home and one parish, and carried on with all the force of a nature which knew nothing of self-seeking, while through it, like a beam of pure white light, shone the consciousness of the greatness of his high office.

His congregation was made up of varied elements. It contained many families endowed with a heritage of standing, wealth and culture, while there also came into church relations, more or less intimate, representatives of a more restless and less thoughtful



class, which the growth of manufacturing interests was attracting to Haverhill. It required no ordinary tact and wisdom so to adjust pulpit and social ministrations that all should be instructed and won.

It was not so much owing to any direct effort, as to a unity of feeling centering in affection for the pastor and confidence in the consistency of his life and teaching, that the difficult task was accomplished. Social distinctions were little mentioned or thought of, and a sympathy of interest existed, which has been largely perpetuated to the present day.

Into all the general interests of the thriving town the new minister entered enthusiastically. He became a member of the school committee while the public school was still in a formative state, and took a deep interest in their success, as well as in the individual advance of pupils of promise. In those days, the "Lyceum" was at its height of popularity, and Mr Hosford's lectures on astronomy, carefully prepared and illustrated by digrams, were a revelation of wonders to many hearers. In other departments of science he was almost equally an enthusiast; so that every ramble through field or forest revealed something to awaken his eager curiosity and suggest apt illustrations of truth, for lecture, sermon or informal talk. The love of nature, in general, was with him a passion, and his visits to the mountains or sea-shore were always fruitful in helpfulness and delight, both to himself and his people.

He found intense enjoyment, too, in classical music, for which he was endowed with exquisitely delicate susceptibilities, and it was largely through his instrumentality that Haverhill was favored with many fine concerts of the highest order of excellence.

All that was choice and noble in literature was dear to him, and both directly and indirectly, he led others to "give attention to reading." Thus his varied tastes and culture had a large and abiding effect upon the whole community, while they formed a store of resources from which he drew as a preacher. Yet all were brought into beautiful harmony by the subordination of all to his sense of responsibility as a shepherd of souls and a guide of lost and sinful men. A theology based upon the strong rock-foundations of the fathers had, as he presented it, a grandeur, solemnity and strength, which were yet full of yearning tenderness. All that vivid and poetic sensibility of his nature took fire when touched with the flame of the altar, and in its light and glow, the truths of an invisible and spiritual world became living realities to his hearers. He did not claim to be a logician or a theologian; he was not an orator in the strict sense of the word, and he had an utter abhorrence of anything like clap-trap or pretense. Yet his sermons, marked by patient thought and careful preparation, were transparent in style and diction, full of individuality, occasionally flashing into that characteristic wit which never lost dignity,—always simple, earnest and magnetic.

As he touched upon the loftier themes of religious truth, his face kindled and his voice thrilled, till his hearers were uplifted on the wings of his faith and spirituality.

The same characteristics entered largely into the less formal services of social meetings, while his prayers gave evidence of deep acquaintance and sympathy with human needs, as well as of personal nearness to the Father of spirits. In certain special occasions, to use the words of one who knew him intimately, "his supplications reached a sphere that was wholly unearthly, becoming awful for spirituality, resignation and rooted trust in God."

As the years rolled on and Mr. Hosford grew in intellectual and spiritual strength, his church gained in influence and numbers, sometimes with large additions, made after periods of special religious interest, but oftener through the steady ingathering of those who felt the attractive power of Christianity as shown forth in their pastor's words and life.

At the time of Mr. Hosford's settlement in 1845, the church embraced one hundred and sixty-eight members. During the fifteen years following, one hundred and seventy were added. In 1859, ninety-eight members were dismissed to form the North Church. There were constant accessions after that date, and at the time of Mr. Hosford's dismission in 1863, the membership numbered two hundred and fifty-two. Such a record of numbers, however, is only a slight indication of the power for good exerted by a faithful minister of Christ, and in the city where he so long labored, Mr. Hosford's influence still lives as an inspiring and elevating force.

His work as a writer was by no means limited to the production of sermons. He was the author of two interesting volumes, entitled "The Catacombs of Rome" and "The Footsteps of St. Paul." Through the entire period of his ministry he was a frequent contributor to the press. His published articles in newspapers and magazines covered a wide range of topics,—science, music, theology and criticism,—in all which he showed himself almost equally a master. These papers were marked by grace and versatility of style, and especially by a keen appreciation of the ludicrous, which appeared, now in the most playful of fun, and again in some thrust of satire, too good-natured to wound.

In Mr. Hosford, as in other sympathetic natures, this sense of humor lay side by side with a fine sensitiveness to the pathos of life. Both found utterance, not only through his pen, but still more in the daily intercourse of life, rendering him a most delightful companion, full of surprises, ready in repartee, unfailing in responsiveness to both the brighter and the sadder moods of his fellow-men.

What he was in social life it would be hard fittingly to express. His tall, erect figure, his black eyes, with the keen glance that seemed to look one through and through, his scholarly cast of features and his tho-







*E. Bowley*





rough manliness of bearing, made him, even externally, a marked man among a thousand. While dignified and somewhat reserved in manner, and impatient of anything that savored of display or conceit, his kindness and affection went out without reserve to all who had any claim upon them, and especially to the afflicted, the weak and the children and youth of his congregation.

The beautiful home, overlooking the windings of the Merrimack, was the centre of his earthly happiness. Here were born to him four children, of whom three—two sons and a daughter—are still living. When a precious child was taken away by death, at the age of seven, the father's grief for her was of an intensity that could never quite be comforted.

In striking outward events, the most complete and rounded lives are often almost wanting. The twenty years of Mr. Hosford's pastorate were marked by few startling incidents. The tide of human life in Haverhill ebbed and flowed, and the devoted pastor was a large part in it all, ministering at wedding and funeral ceremonies, standing by the sick and dying, taking the little child in his arms for baptism, welcoming into church-fellowship the young believer, who saw in the minister himself a type and likeness of that Master in whose footsteps he yearned to walk.

In 1861, as Mr. Hosford's health was beginning to wane, the War of the Rebellion broke out, causing an antagonism of feeling and interest that divided the North almost equally with the country as a whole, Haverhill proving no exception. Conservative though Mr. Hosford was by nature and principle, his sympathies were ardently on the side of the Union. During the declining years of his life his prayers followed those whom Haverhill sent forth to the strife, the triumphant end of which so many of them were, like himself, never to witness.

He spent two or three years in the pursuit of health, with varying hopes and fears, deepening at length into certainty that the end was near. In October, 1863, he was, at his own request, dismissed from the pastoral office which he had so long honored. Ten months later, August 10, 1864, his earthly course ended, after an illness which, in spite of long pain and languor, was radiant with a beauty and peace that made it the fitting culmination of a noble and holy life.

It is well that such a career should be held in grateful remembrance. Ending at the age of forty-seven years, it might seem to have been mysteriously cut short in its mid-day of usefulness. Yet Christian faith looks forward to the glorious possibilities of the life beyond death, while unbelief itself recognizes that such souls "join the choir invisible" of those who are immortal on earth through the ever-perpetuating influence of pure and lofty character and unselfish devotion to mankind.

EDWIN BOWLEY.<sup>1</sup>

Edwin Bowley was the son of Eben and Mary Nichols Bowley. He was born on the River road, in the East Parish of Haverhill, November 17, 1822. He died at his house on Emerson Street, in the city proper, June 11, 1884, wanting some months of completing his sixty-second year. His parents were poor, and his opportunities of education were exceedingly limited. He went when very young to live with Varnum Ayer, a farmer on Washington Street. The farm he thus worked upon as a boy, he bought years after, and made a very profitable investment of it. He afterwards went to work for one Buswell, who kept a grocery store on Water Street. He was later in the employment of Mr. Bartlett in the same business, to whom he and Mr. Eben Webster were successors in 1847. After several years of successful business Mr. Webster retired, and Martin V. B. Hoyt became a partner, the style of the firm being E. Bowley & Co. Later, Mr. Hoyt was succeeded by Carlos P. Messer, who continued with Mr. Bowley until the latter's death, but the firm-name never changed, and the familiar sign of "E. Bowley & Co." was not removed from Merrimac Street until August 22, 1884. During the many years of its display, there was never any time when the credit of the firm doing business under it was not undoubted, or when it failed to give satisfaction to its numerous customers.

Mr. Bowley had the sagacity to see the probable increase and prosperity of Haverhill from the beginning of his business career, and the courage to act upon his convictions. The large fortune he left at his decease was due to his real estate operations. He began to invest in real estate as early as 1846. And the first piece of land he bought is still in the possession of his family. He sold land in Haverhill the day but one before his death. On the same day he went to Newton and bought the well-known estate, called "The Travellers' Home." The whole number of parties to conveyances in which he was interested was one thousand three hundred and twenty-five. He made between six and seven hundred transfers of real estate. At his death, he owned seventy-eight parcels of land. The Grammar School on Mount Washington, where he toiled as a little lad, no one caring much whether he went to school or not, bears his name.

October 4, 1848, Rev. Arthur S. Train, then pastor of the First Baptist Church in Haverhill, married Edwin Bowley, "a trader by occupation, aged 26 years," to Miss Dolly C. Messer, of Haverhill. Mrs. Bowley was an invalid for years before her husband's death, but has always been respected as a very benevolent woman. They had three children,—Mary G., who married George A. Hall, of Haverhill; Sarah T., and William M., a grocer in Haverhill after his

<sup>1</sup> By John B. D. Cogswell.



father's death, and city alderman in 1886. Mrs. Hall died suddenly in Boston, January 22, 1888, leaving one son.

Mr. Bowley was never actively engaged in politics until the autumn of 1882, when he was unexpectedly nominated for the State Senate by the Democratic party, the district being regarded as strongly Republican. There was unquestionably some sneering at the nomination, on the ground of Mr. Bowley's supposed illiteracy and want of familiarity with public affairs. But he certainly had not sought the office, and some who knew him well, and who were familiar with his native good sense and good judgment, as well as with his intrinsic integrity, kindness, prudence and modesty, had no fear but he could bear the test. And the result more than realized their most sanguine expectations. He was triumphantly chosen, and, although it might have been claimed that the first election was the result of accident or surprise, arising from an unexpected condition of politics, he was re-elected in 1883, and was therefore a member of the Senate at the time of his death.

In the first place, the unlooked for honor, worked no change in the man. He was the same simple, unobtrusive person as before. Secondly, his associates in the legislature, who had doubtless all heard something of his remarkable rise in condition from very humble circumstances, perhaps expected to meet an obtrusive and ignorant man. They found a quiet, simple gentleman, who sought nothing for himself, and only desired to learn how best to do his duty. The result was that in the Senates of 1883 and 1884, no one was more considered, none more esteemed and beloved, than Edwin Bowley. And of this, ample evidence will be given.

Soon after his first election, upon his sixtieth birthday, a considerable number of his friends without distinction of party, tendered Mr. Bowley a reception and dinner at the Eagle House. In the course of the proceedings, B. F. Brickett, Esq., who presided, presented Mr. Bowley, in the name of the company, with an elegant gold watch and chain. Speeches, expressing their high regard for the guest of the evening, were made by Mayor Moses How, W. E. Blunt, F. O. Raymond, Warren Ordway, (of Bradford), David B. Tenny (city clerk), E. B. Bishop, Raymond Noyes (who read a poem written by Mrs. John E. Brown), W. H. Moody, C. W. Morse, T. J. Taylor, D. C. Bartlett and others.

Shortly before taking his seat in the Senate, Mr. Bowley received from the late Hon. N. S. Howe, then at Washington, a letter with which he was naturally gratified, and from which we make an extract. "During the forty years of our acquaintance not for one moment that I am aware of, interrupted by an inharmonious word or act on the part of either—I have never known or heard of anything on your part, inconsistent with the highest honor and integrity. To such men, the interests of the old Com-

monwealth may be safely intrusted, because they will endeavor to impress upon the public legislation the principles which have controlled their private life, and act from considerations of duty, without yielding to the weakness or wickedness of party demands and contaminations."

In the Senate of 1883, Mr. Bowley served upon the Committee on the Fisheries, and the Committee on Roads and Bridges. In 1884, he served on the same Committees, with the addition of that upon Woman Suffrage.

During the session of 1884, Senator Bowley was seized with severe illness which detained him at home, preventing his resuming his seat; but he apparently recovered from this attack, and seemed strong and active again. But he was fatally stricken on the morning of Tuesday, June 10th; and, although he lived till the next day, he gradually passed into a state of unconsciousness, from which he never rallied. His funeral on the afternoon of Saturday June 14th, was attended by a large concourse of people, including many from abroad, among whom were several of his Legislative associates.

The grocers of Haverhill and Bradford closed their stores as a mark of respect. The flag at City of Haverhill Engine House hung at half-mast.

Mr. Bowley was one of the originators of the Haverhill Iron Works, and served till his death as a director and its treasurer; September 15, 1884, the directors adopted resolutions reported by Messrs. Little and Thomas Sanders, expressing their "respect and esteem for him in every relation of life," in which they had been brought in contact with him.

Mr. Bowley was a member of the Bradford Farmers' Institute, which also adopted appropriate resolutions.

He was treasurer and a director of the Brown Hotel Company, and president of the Haverhill Steamboat Express Company.

In his domestic and social relations, Mr. Bowley was one of the kindest and most thoughtful of men.

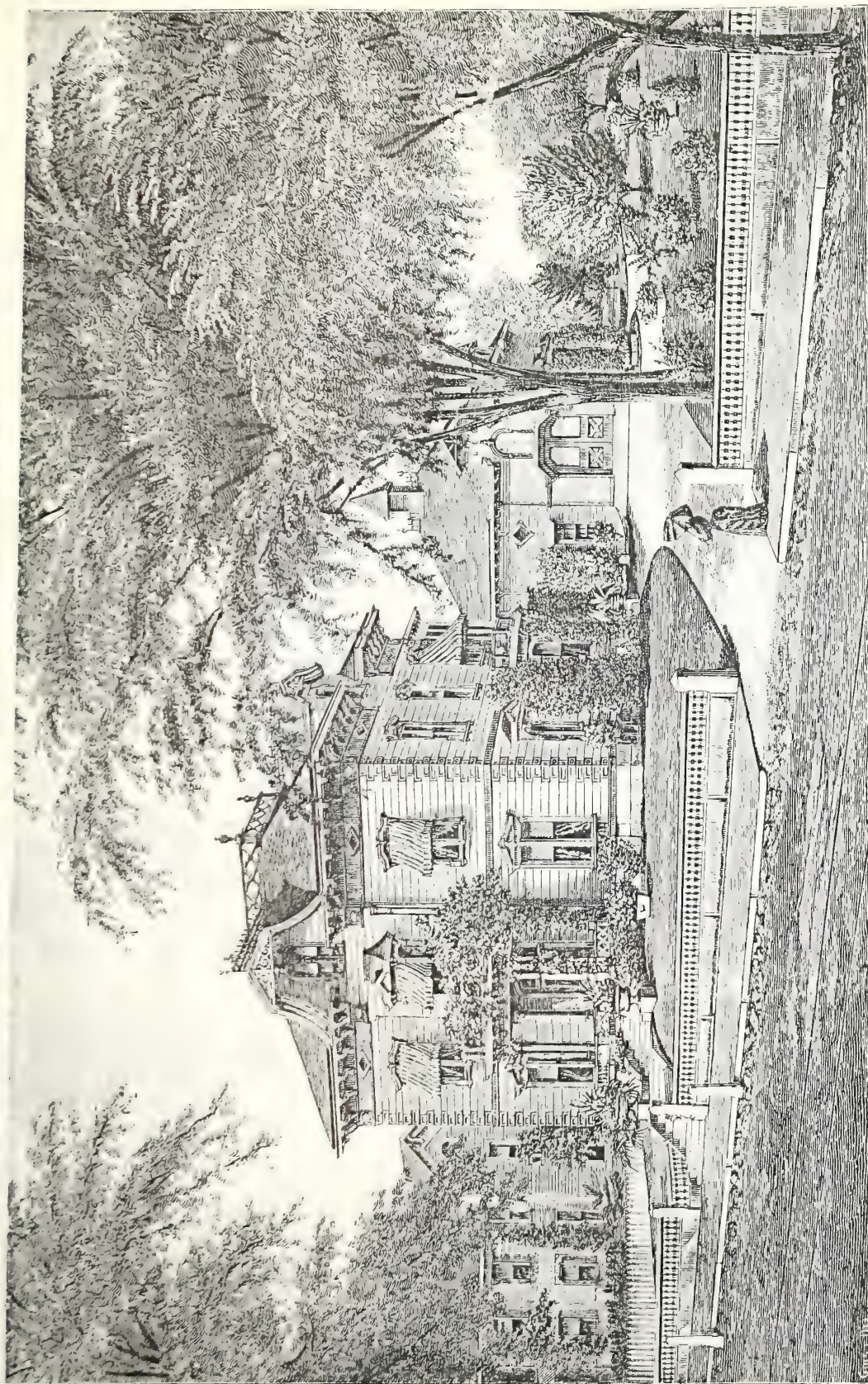
During the hurry of breaking up at the close of the session of 1884 (June 4th), at half-past twelve P.M., twenty-one of the senators found time to write Mr. Bowley a joint letter, expressing their regret at his compulsory absence.

Hon. John D. Washburn, of Worcester, wrote of Mr. Bowley: "He was a straightforward and honorable associate." Senator Burt: "I had learned to love him for the true man that was in him." Senator Morrison, of Lowell, wrote: "I certainly most sincerely admired the man himself."

President Bruce of the Senate of 1884 wrote of him: "Whom I had learned to respect and esteem for the simplicity and purity of his character, and his conscientious discharge of every duty assigned him?" Senator Gilmore, of Cambridge, says: "His genial and unselfish intercourse with his associates will always be remembered with unfeigned pleasure." Senator Sessions, of Hampden, says: "I found him always







RESIDENCE OF THE LATE E. J. M. HALE,  
HAVERHILL, MASS.







*E. J. M. Hale.*



affable, frank and companionable. His large experience and sound common sense made his opinion valuable to us all. We all loved and respected him, and every Senator felt his loss as a personal affliction."

Hon. George G. Crocker, president of the Senate of 1883, and Hon. A. E. Pillsbury, of the Senate of 1884, and president in 1886, also wrote expressing condolence and sympathy.

At the first reunion of the Senate of 1883, held April 1, 1885, resolutions were unanimously adopted, expressing their appreciation of Mr. Bowley's "services and character."

"*Resolved*, That in our intercourse with the deceased, we were always impressed with his sterling integrity, modesty, industry, sound judgment and interest in the welfare of the Commonwealth.

"*Resolved*, That we always found in him a kind friend, a genial companion, a safe and prudent legislator, and we sadly miss his presence on this occasion.

"*Resolved*, That to the family of our late associate, we offer our most tender sympathies, we join with them in mourning his loss and will ever cherish his memory."

These are tributes of which any man might be proud; but even better than these the thanks and tears of the poor, who always found in Edwin Bowley a kind employer and faithful friend.

This sketch was read to an active and leading citizen of Haverhill, who said: "That is all right, and I agree with the whole of it, but you might have made it a little stronger as to what Mr. Bowley did for Haverhill." "In what respect do you mean?" "I mean in the aid he rendered to poor and struggling men. I had particularly in mind the encouragement he gave young men about acquiring homesteads. He would sell a young man a lot on such easy terms that he was as good as a co-operative bank." "Do you not think that Mr. Bowley was a very good judge of human nature?" "Excellent; it amounted almost to an instinct;" and then he related an incident or two, illustrative of Mr. Bowley's shrewdness and tact.

#### E. J. M. HALE.<sup>1</sup>

Ezekiel James Madison Hale was born at Haverhill, March 30, 1813. Ezekiel Hale, his grandfather, born at Newbury, 1762, married in 1785, Phoebe Coburn, of Dracut. From Dracut, he removed to Derry, N. H., and thence to Haverhill. He was a pioneer in the manufacture of textiles. He made cotton goods very early. In 1804, he established a Woolen factory at Little River. His son, Ezekiel, born at Dracut in 1788, succeeded his father as a manufacturer. He married Hannah Church, daughter of Samuel Crookson, a retired merchant of Boston.

E. J. M. Hale fitted for college at Bradford Academy, under Benjamin Greenleaf, entered Dartmouth

College in 1831, and graduated in due course in 1835. John Plummer Healey, the well-known lawyer of Boston, Harry Hibbard and Amos Tuck of New Hampshire, were among his classmates. He began to read law with Gilman Parker of Haverhill, but liking business better, he connected himself with his father's mills. As a boy and young man, he was quiet and studious. Being successful as a manufacturer, he purchased extensive woolen mills at Littleton, N. H., where he made flannels. Purchasing the mill privileges and factory at South Groveland, in 1859, he built two additional establishments, and concentrated his manufacturing at this point. The water power was improved and supplemented by steam-power. Continually extending his business, Mr. Hale purchased the remaining mill sites on the stream. Up to 1875, he constantly increased his buildings and enlarged his operations till the mills gave employment to four or five hundred operatives, and a village of about one thousand inhabitants grew up. Mr. Hale erected many blocks and single dwellings, occupied by the operatives. He did much to foster the growth of the village. He gave a lot for a Catholic church and helped to build it. The site and structure with the furnishing of the St. James Episcopal Church, were entirely provided by him.

Mr. Hale was the largest private manufacturer in the United States. He was a strong and able business man. He naturally was called to give his aid to many enterprises. He was many years a director of the Boston and Maine Railroad Company, and for some years of the Manchester and Lawrence. For twenty-three years he was president of the Merrimac Bank of Haverhill, giving it up shortly before his death. In 1848, he represented the district in the State Senate. February 3, 1837, Mr. Hale married Lucy Lapham, daughter of Benjamin Parker, a merchant of East Bradford, now Groveland. They had seven children—six sons and one daughter. Harry H. Hale of Bradford, born July 7, 1847, who is one of the trustees under his father's will, survives him. Mrs. Hale died in March, 1856, and Mr. Hale, February 5, 1862, married her sister, Ruth C. Parker. Their only issue was, Edward, born May 29, 1863.

Mr. Hale's business success was proportioned to his abilities. He left a very large property, including valuable real estate in New York and Chicago. His mills are still carried on by the trustees of his estate.

His death occurred June 4, 1881. In charities, as in business, he was apt to be decided and even curt in his response to the numerous applications made to him for assistance; but some of those nearest to him say that his private benevolence was much more extended than the world knew. In his public benefactions, he was thoughtful and considerate, and took great care in studying details, that his gifts should work to the best advantage.

He took care to provide for the permanent support of a resident clergyman for the church he had built

<sup>1</sup> By John B. D. Cogswell.





at South Groveland, and a sermon was preached there on the first Sunday after his burial by his friend, the Rev. Charles Wingate, of St. John the Evangelist, Haverhill. Of his religious faith, Mr. Wingate could say: "Precious to him was the church, with her sweet communions, her solemn vows, her hymns of love and praise. Their serene and sober light cast its brightness over the joys and sorrows of many years, and cheered him when the shadows were gathering round his mortal path."

Some brief account has been heretofore given in these pages of the proposition made by Mr. Hale to the city of Haverhill January 29, 1873, in reference to the establishment of a public library, and of its acceptance by the city. August 1, 1873, the City Council elected six trustees of the library, who were E. J. M. Hale, James H. Carleton, James E. Gale, James R. Nichols, R. S. Chase and John L. Hobson. To these the mayor was joined, *ex-officio*. The conditions of the gift having been complied with, in November, 1873, plans for building were invited from architects, and the building was erected in 1874-75, accepted and occupied May, 1875. Mr. Hale himself was chairman of the building committee, and gave the matter much of his time and attention.

November 11, 1875, the building was dedicated. The mayor, Alpheus Currier, delivered the introductory address; prayer was offered by Rev. Dr. Seeley; a poem written by John G. Whittier, was sung; Mr. Hale himself gave an historical sketch of the library, showing that it had been built at a cost of less than fifty thousand dollars, and books purchased at a cost of about twenty thousand dollars, mainly under the care of James E. Gale, one of the trustees. Interesting addresses were made by Hon. Leverett Saltonstall, of Boston, General William F. Bartlett, of Pittsfield, Judge Charles S. Bradley, of Providence, R. I., Professor James B. Thayer, of the Dane Law School, Cambridge, all of whom were connected with Haverhill by birth or descent. A letter was read from John G. Whittier, who wrote: "Half a century ago, as I have good reason for knowing, there were few books to be had in Haverhill and vicinity. There were some not very readable volumes in the old Social Library. . . . I have travelled miles of a winter evening in search of a book." Governor Gaston was present on this occasion.

Edward Capen, who had been already for more than twenty years connected with the Boston Public Library, was appointed librarian by the trustees, November 23, 1874, and has ever since been in that honorable service. Under their joint care, the library has much increased and flourished. The good done by the Haverhill Public Library is inestimable. Thousands upon thousands will have reason to thank the memory of Mr. Hale for his thoughtful and judicious liberality. After much consideration, Mr. Hale also determined to found a hospital in his native

city. To this end he himself purchased a site and procured needful steps to be taken by the city government. The Legislature passed an act which was accepted by the City Council February 13, 1882, authorizing the city to erect and maintain the Haverhill City Hospital. Mr. Hale left by will fifty thousand dollars for a hospital fund. The site being considered unsuitable was sold under authority of the Supreme Court by the trustees, and an estate presented to them by James H. Carleton, in 1886 was adopted for hospital purposes and formally dedicated December 29, 1887, when suitable addresses were made by Hon. Joseph H. Sheldon, the mayor, Dr. John Crowell, who gave an interesting historical address, and others. Within a few days, a frightful railroad accident in the vicinity, caused the resources of the establishment to be taxed to the utmost.

Mr. Hale by will left a fund of fifty thousand dollars for the maintenance of the library, and a fund of equal amount, the interest of which is to be applied to the annual purchase of books.

These thoughtful donations, made with equal liberality and discretion, will cause the memory of Mr. Hale to be ever held in respect in the place where he was born and lived by all right-thinking people.

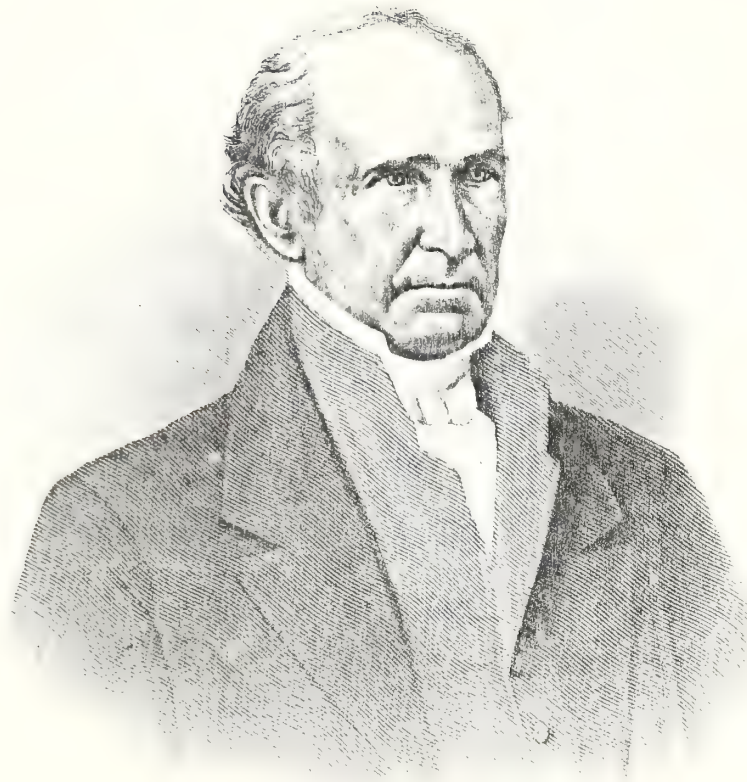
#### HON. STEPHEN MINOT.<sup>1</sup>

The ancestor of the American Minots was Elder George Minot, son of Thomas Minot, Esq., of Saffron Walden, Essex, England, who came to this country about 1630, and settled at Dorchester, Mass.

His grandson, James Minot, graduated at Harvard College, studied divinity and physic, and settled in Concord, Mass., where his grandson, Jonas Minot, was born in 1735, and where he lived. A great part of the territory of Wilmot, N. H., was granted to him; he also owned other large tracts of land in New Hampshire, as well as in Vermont and Maine,—in all, some two hundred thousand acres. He had nine children. The eighth, Stephen, born September 28, 1776, is the subject of this sketch. His mother was Mary Hall, daughter of Rev. Willard and Abigail Hall, of Westford, Mass. He was prepared for college at Westford Academy, and graduated at Harvard in 1801. He studied law with Hon. Samuel Dana, of Groton, and was admitted to the Middlesex bar in 1804. He practiced his profession eleven months in Gloucester and Minot (now Auburn), Maine, and then removed to Haverhill, engaging in practice there. He was judge of the Circuit Court of Common Pleas for Essex County from 1811 to the repeal of the law creating it in 1820. During the years 1814 to 1816, inclusive, he lived in Methuen, where he owned and managed a manufactory. He was district attorney from 1824 to 1830. In 1825 he represented Haverhill in the Legislature. He retired from the practice

<sup>1</sup> By John B. D. Cogswell.

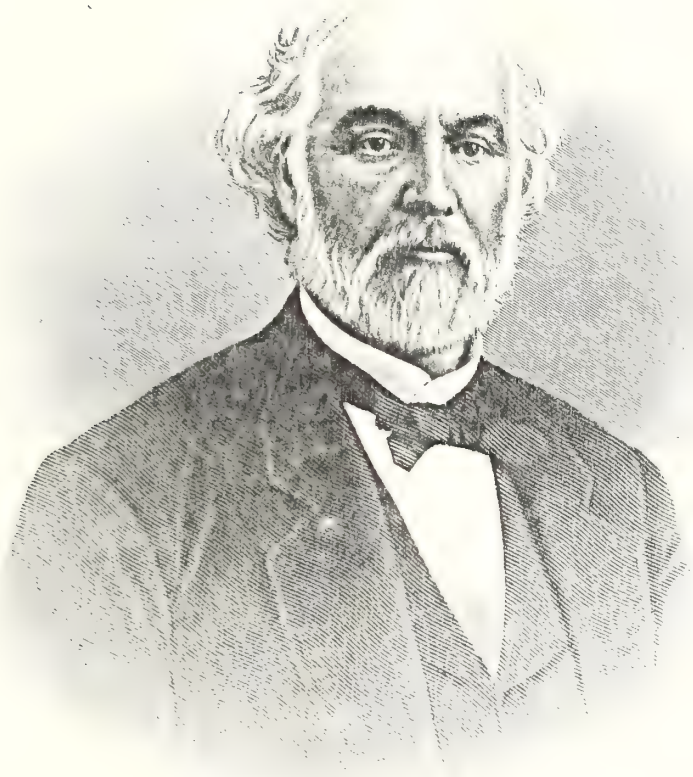




*Stephen Minot.*







*Dr. W. Smiley*



of the law in 1832, at the age of fifty-six. From 1818 to 1822, inclusive, he was a member of the school committee of the First District in Haverhill,—the centre village, where he resided. During the larger part of the time his associates were John Varnum and James H. Duncan, both afterward Representatives in Congress. The following extract from the records shows that at this period what was regarded as an important step in female education was taken: "1819, Apl. 17th.—The Committee met at the office of John Varnum, Esq. Voted that in order to afford the females who attend the Grammar School a better opportunity of instruction than they have hitherto had, said school should, from the first day of May to the first day of September, be kept at the following hours, viz.: The Boys shall attend from eight o'clock, A.M. to twelve o'clock A.M., and from two to four o'clock in the afternoon. The females shall attend from four to six o'clock P.M."

Mr. Minot married Rebecca Trask, of Bradford, in 1809. She was the mother of his three children,—Charles, George and Harriet. She died in 1832. In 1841 he married Ellen P. Gardner, who outlived him. He died April 15, 1861.

In early life Stephen Minot was a Federalist and a Whig; later, he was a Free-Soiler and Republican.

He was prominent in the Unitarian Society at Haverhill. During the period of anti-slavery excitement in that town, when the meeting-houses and public buildings were closed against abolitionists through fear of violence, Judge Minot tendered the use of the basement of the First Parish (Unitarian) meeting-house for discussion upon slavery.

Charles Minot, Judge Minot's oldest son, graduated at Harvard in 1828. In 1829 he was organist of the instrument then set up in the First Parish meeting-house, the earliest in the town. In 1832 he was a lawyer in Haverhill, and was afterwards superintendent of the Boston and Maine Railroad. He was always recognized as an able man.

George Minot, born at Haverhill, Jan. 5, 1817, was prepared at Haverhill and Exeter Academies, and graduated at Harvard in 1836. He received the degree of LL.B. at the Dane Law School at Cambridge, spent one year in the office of Rufus Choate, in Boston, and was admitted to practice in that city, where he remained until his death. He was an industrious and learned lawyer, especially known by his editorial labors. He reported Judge Woodbury's United States Circuit Court decisions, edited the United States Statutes at large, and nine volumes of English Admiralty Reports, and was the author of Minot's Digest, and the supplement thereto of the decisions of the State Supreme Judicial Court.

Harriet Minot (now Mrs. Pitman) of Cambridge, is well remembered in Haverhill as a leader of society there, and deeply interested in the anti-slavery cause, benevolent enterprises and the advancement of

women. Her husband is Mr. Isaac Pitman, formerly of Providence, Rhode Island.

Soon after his death, Mr. Chase, the historian of Haverhill, thus wrote of Judge Minot: "His mind was clear in its perception and logical in its conclusions. Firm in purpose, exact and punctual in method and habits, of strict integrity, fearless in spirit, he was ever prompt to say or do whatever his judgment approved. He was a liberal supporter of the institutions of religion, whose ministrations he attended with great regularity, as long as his infirmities would admit. Of great regularity and temperance in his manner of life, in his private relations a true, affectionate, generous friend. In conversation, he was genial and rich in anecdote. During the latter part of his life, having withdrawn from professional labors he spent much of his time in mathematical studies, in which he took great delight, and in reading the Latin classics."

He was not only an excellent mathematician, but a very respectable mechanic, was fond of music and familiar with early English literature. He was an excellent lawyer, and a shrewd, keen, clear-headed business man. His general capacity for affairs was always admitted. He was industrious, reliable and strictly truthful.

Perhaps the popular feeling in regard to him was that he was a just, rather than a generous or a sympathetic man; but one who knew him intimately writes: "He was very generous to objects of charity which commended themselves to his sympathy. His gifts were bestowed so unostentatiously that few except the recipients were aware of them. Many poor spinsters and widows were his periodical beneficiaries for many years."

"He was undemonstrative, but he was an affectionate husband and a tender and devoted father and grandfather. He was a genuine lover of children."

Rev. Charles Wingate writes of Judge Minot: "I remember his personal appearance and that ever one regarded him as a man of very sound judgment. He was always very calm and deliberate when giving his opinions."

The writer ventures upon the liberty of appending the following extract from a note written by John G. Whittier, dated Danvers, November 2, 1887:

"*Dear Friend:* In answer to thy note, I would say that I knew Judge Minot very well, in my younger days, as one of the leading men in my native town. He was an able lawyer, a dignified and cultivated gentleman of the old school. He was a man of remarkably sound judgment and strict integrity. I remember his large acquaintance with the old English classics and his ready citation of them in conversation."

JAMES VARNUM SMILEY.

The record of a good man's life, while it soothes the affections of all who loved and survived him, has the higher merit of encouraging the struggles and sustaining the virtues of those who, entering upon life with no other reliance than their own strong arm





and resolute hearts and honest principles, are cheered on their way by the example of success achieved and high character established under like circumstances by others.

Such a record properly may be made of the subject of this sketch, whose ancestors, five in number, came to America from Scotland in 1747, and settled in various towns of New England. These men were for the most part farmers, honest and industrious, making good citizens.

*John*, the direct ancestor of this branch, settled in Haverhill, Massachusetts. But little is recorded of him beyond the fact that he married and reared a large family of children, one of whom, *James*, was born in 1758. He grew to manhood, and married Sarah McFarland, April 29, 1781, and they had six children—three boys and three girls. At the breaking out of the Revolutionary War he enlisted as a soldier and was in many engagements. He was taken a prisoner, and, with a neighbor, William Sawyer, was carried to England and confined in a military prison for a long time. While here he opened a little store or shop, where he was allowed to supply his fellow-prisoners with such articles as necessity or fancy prompted them to buy. After long waiting, an arrangement was made for an exchange of one hundred of these prisoners, the choice to be made by lot. Smiley and Sawyer, who, during long confinement, had become fast friends, agreed to stick together, and unless both were drawn, neither would quit the prison. One after another the lucky names were announced, hope and fear alternating in the patriotic breasts of these friends, until the ninety-ninth name called was Sawyer's, while in Smiley's breast hope died out and prison life only seemed to remain. The one hundredth name drawn was that of James Smiley, and with feelings more easily imagined than described, these friends returned to their homes and to freedom under the Stars and Stripes, and often in the years which followed, recounted the incidents of this memorable exchange to their families and friends. Smiley's wife, Sarah, died May 24, 1823, and he followed her April 16, 1824. His second son, *James*, was born June 28, 1789. His business was that of a mason. He married Lydia Bradley November 25, 1813, and she bore him four children, two girls (both of whom died in infancy), and two boys—*James Varnum*, born April 1st, 1820, and *Charles*, born April 19, 1822. Charles, the only survivor of this family, is a merchant in Haverhill, and is unmarried. He places this portrait of his much-loved brother in the history of this city as a tribute to his memory and worth.

The boyhood of the subject of this sketch was spent in Haverhill, where in due time he attended school and became known to his teachers as a studious boy. He excelled in each of the branches of the common school, and desiring a more thorough education than could be obtained under existing circum-

stances, he went to the celebrated Pembroke Academy, in New Hampshire, for some time.

Returning to his native town, he was placed in charge of the Centre Grammar School as its teacher, where, for over twelve years, he remained, and where he became endeared to the whole community as a faithful teacher. Under the Buchanan administration Mr. Smiley was chosen postmaster at Haverhill, where he remained four years, when he went into business in company with A. B. Jaques, opening what has since for many years been known as the Haverhill bookstore, where he successfully continued up to the time of his death, December 17, 1883. August 2, 1855 Mr. Smiley was married to Sarah N. Davis, who still survives him. They had no children. In religion Mr. Smiley was a Baptist. He was a Democrat in politics, as were each generation of his ancestors. Mr. Smiley was very popular among the people of the town, and was elected to many positions of trust and honor, although belonging to the political party that was largely in the minority. He was assessor, chairman of the School Board and also of the Board of Selectmen, president of the Haverhill Gas Company and trustee of the Haverhill Savings Bank.

In 1873 he was elected mayor of the city of Haverhill and served for two terms, giving very general satisfaction. He was a prominent member of the Masonic fraternity, being connected with Merrimac Lodge, F. & A. M., Pentucket Chapter and Haverhill Commandery of K. T. He was successful in business, was liberal in response to the calls of benevolence, provided amply for those dependent upon him, was a good citizen, a faithful friend, and has left behind a memory of a life well spent.

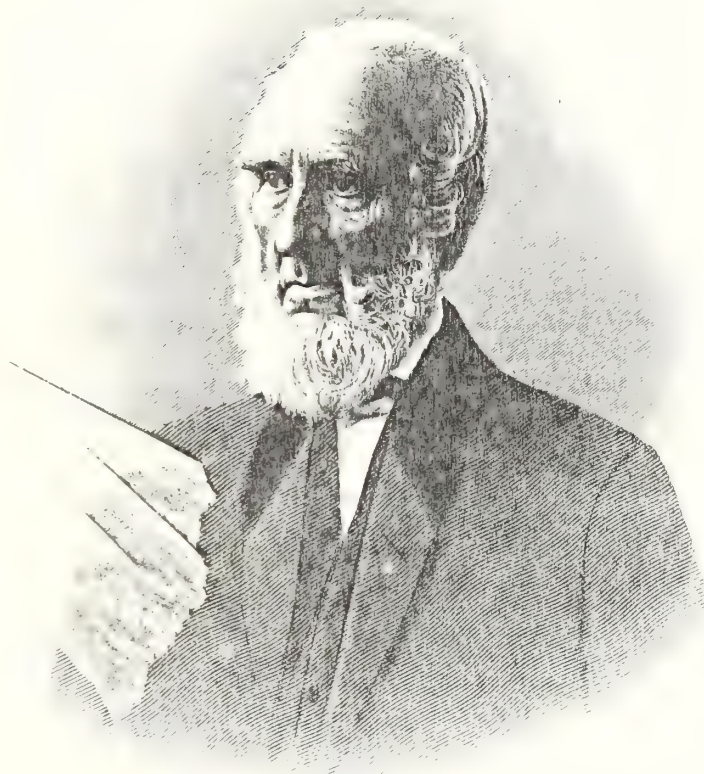
#### JOHN GREENLEAF WHITTIER.<sup>1</sup>

In the town of Haverhill, near the boundary line of that part of Amesbury which was incorporated in 1876 as the town of Merrimac, stands an unpretending farm-house, whose antiquity alone attracts the attention of the traveller. About three miles from the Merrimac River the highway runs nearly east and west, and leading from it at right angles a country road stretches to the north. On the westerly side of this road, within sight from the highway, stands the house with its end to the road, facing south, with its barn and other out-houses standing on the other side of the road, forming with the house a cluster of buildings, through which the road must have been laid out at some period since their original erection. At the foot of the slope on which the house stands, a laughing brook winds its merry way to larger streams, which flow into the Merrimac, and thence to the sea. Undulating fields, green with summer harvests, or white with winter's snow, are broken here and there by patches of wood, which seem to have been de-

<sup>1</sup> By William T. Davis.







J. G. ...



signed by nature's artistic hand to interrupt the monotony of the scene and lend it grace and harmony.

The front of the house with its two stories remains as originally built, except the window frames and glass, and lesser accessories, which, like the clothing of the human body, have felt the hand of repair or the pressure of fashion without alteration or change of the structure they adorn. The rear, once one story high, as if jealous of its rival on the other side, has been at some time raised to the height of the front, and faces the bleak, north winds of winter as proudly as its rival courts the summer sun.

This house was built by Thomas Whittier about the year 1688. At the age of eighteen Mr. Whittier sailed from Southampton for Boston, in the ship "Confidence" of London, John Jobson, master, on the 24th of April, 1638, and not long after the settlement of Salisbury in 1640, became a resident of that town. In 1645 or thereabouts he married Ruth Green, and after a short residence in Newbury, removed to Haverhill in 1648. He first built a log house, in which he lived until the erection of the house above described, about a half a mile to the westward and northward.

Notwithstanding the inferences of various biographers of the subject of this sketch, there is not only no evidence tending to show that Mr. Whittier was a Quaker, but there is much to show that he was not. His social and official position all through the Quaker troubles is wholly irreconcilable with his belief in the Quaker creed. As late as the year 1686, he was one of a church committee to select an associate minister for the Haverhill Church, with which he was in full fellowship.

Mr. Whittier died, November 28, 1696, his wife surviving him until 1710. Of ten children, Joseph the youngest, was born May 8, 1669, and was married May 24, 1694, to Mary, daughter of Joseph Peasley, whose house, built of brick, brought from England, is still standing near the Rocks Bridge. Mr. Peasley was a Quaker, and in the absence of any proof that other branches of the Whittier family were inclined to Quakerism, it may reasonably be presumed that Joseph and his descendants may trace their faith to Joseph Peasley, the father of Joseph Whittier's wife.

Joseph Whittier died December 23, 1739, leaving nine children, of whom another Joseph, the youngest, was born March 31, 1716, and married Sarah Greenleaf of Newbury. The last Joseph died October 10, 1796, having had eleven children, of whom John, the tenth child, was born November 22, 1760, and married, October 3, 1804, Abigail, daughter of Samuel Hussey, of Somersworth, New Hampshire, and a descendant of Christopher Hussey, an early resident of Haverhill and afterwards of Hampton. At Hampton Mr. Hussey married a daughter of Rev. Stephen Batchelder, the first minister of that town. Mr. Batchelder was a man of remarkable personal appearance, with dark,

deep-set eyes, which developed in an intensified form into the wonderful eye and brow of Daniel Webster, a descendant of one branch of his family, and in a milder and more spiritual form into the gentle but firm and unyielding expression of Whittier the Poet. It is not impossible that in quality of mind, too, both Webster and Whittier may have inherited from their common ancestor that love of nature which characterized them, and that imaginative power which, while it made one a poet, enabled the other to entwine columns of logic with wreaths of imagery, which, without the noble structure they served to ornament, would have found their fitting expression in verse, and stamped their author as the grandest poet of the age. There can be nothing more indicative of the poet's mind than that passage from the oration of Mr. Webster, when the corner-stone of Bunker Hill Monument was laid on the 17th of June, 1825: "Let it rise till it meet the sun in his coming; let the earliest light of the morning gild it, and parting day linger and play on its summit." Here he snatched the poet's pen and created a line which, if it had not been perfect prose, would have been perfect poetry. And so in his speech on the Presidential protest, we find that grand flight of the imagination, which only a poet's mind could reach, expressing the uprising of America in the War of the Revolution. "On this question of principle, while actual danger and suffering were as yet afar off, she dared to raise her flag against a power to which, for purposes of foreign conquest and subjugation, Rome in the height of her glory is not to be compared—a power which has dotted the surface of the whole earth with her possessions and military posts; whose morning drum-beat, following the sun and keeping company with the hours, circles the earth daily with one continuous and unbroken strain of the martial airs of England." Here, too, were it not for the column round which the wreath of imagery clings, it would stand on its own merits as the richest bloom of a poet's fancy.

This digression may be excusable as showing that the appearance of such men as Whittier and Webster is not sporadic, and that their beauty and grandeur are only culminations of a growth of generations and centuries. John Whittier was the father of the subject of this sketch. He lived on the ancestral farm, and was as comfortable in circumstances as the best class of farmers of that day. Social position in his time was not confined to cities and other thickly-settled communities, as at the present day, and outlying farms and estates dispensed generous hospitality and were the resorts of the most cultivated and best educated. John Whittier was a public-spirited man, and as a citizen, performed his full share of public service. Besides the circle of ordinary friendship which was often represented at his house, no "Friend" from far or near came into the neighborhood without receiving from him the right hand of fellowship and a sincere welcome. He had four children,—Mary, born Sep-





tember 3, 1806; John Greenleaf, born December 17, 1807; Matthew Franklin, born July 18, 1812; and Elizabeth Hussey, born December 7, 1815.

John Greenleaf Whittier was born in the old ancestral house, built by Thomas Whittier in 1688. He went at seven years of age to a school taught by Joshua Coffin of Newbury, situated on the country road, to which reference has been made, about a half a mile from the house. He was fond of reading, more especially books of biography and travel, and books of poetry do not seem to have made any decisive impression on his youthful mind. His work on the farm began at an early age, and with keen natural powers of observation, it is probable that the scenes of beauty about him furnished as large a share of influence on his future career, as his education in the public school. On the Sabbath his father and mother would, when it was possible, attend the nearest Friends' meeting-house at Amesbury, about eight miles away, and during their absence the incipient poet would wander in the woods and fields, satisfying his taste for the beauties of nature and making them all the stronger by indulgence. Referring to this period of his life he says in the poem entitled "The Barefoot Boy":

"I was rich in flowers and trees,  
Humming-birds and honey bees;  
For my sport the squirrel played,  
Phoebe the spotted dove his spade;  
For my taste the blackberry cone,  
Purpled over hedge and stone;

Laughed the brook for my delight,  
Through the day and through the night,  
Whispering at the garden wall,  
Talked with me from fall to fall;  
Mine the sand-drummed pickered-pond,  
Mine the walnut slopes beyond,  
Mine, on bending orchard trees,  
Apples of Hesperides."

At the age of fourteen he read a volume of Burns' poetry, which was perhaps the first poetry he had ever read, and like many a boy before and since, who has never become a poet, he began to make rhymes. His first productions were in imitation of Burns, and served as mere steps to the portals of the holy of holies, which he was destined to enter. His verses soon proved to be more than rhyme, and as his imagination grew in brilliancy and strength, they became more imbued with the poet's spirit. The story has been often told of the poem entitled "The Deity," which he sent anonymously in 1826, at eighteen years of age, to the Newburyport *Free Press*, of which Wm. Lloyd Garrison was editor, and of the joy and pride with which he first saw it in print. The story is further told of the visit of Garrison to his correspondent, and of his encouragement to the youth to train and develop his talents and secure a better edu-

cation than that with which his parents had seemed content. It is doubtful how much of this story may be true, and whether, as has been claimed, Whittier owed to any appreciable extent to Garrison the decision which was finally reached in his family to send him to the Haverhill Academy.

The poem published in the *Free Press* has been often claimed as one of his very earliest productions. The writer of this sketch however, has in his possession a gift from Mr. Whittier, a leaf apparently torn from a blank book, containing a poem in three stanzas of eight lines each, entitled "The Deserted Fair One," another in five stanzas of eight lines each "To the Memory of William Penn," and the two closing verses of four lines each of a poem addressed to Ireland. These two verses, written at the age of seventeen, are dated 12th mo. 1825, and a *fac simile* of them is herewith presented:

*Long long has the hals of glory surrounded  
The memory of Alfred the pride of thy shore  
And o'er thy dim lakes & wild valleys has sounded  
The heart touching strains of Carolan & Moore  
O soon may the banners of freedom flash o'er thee  
Green island of Erin may liberty smile  
To the list of primitive ages restore thee  
Bright gem of the ocean fair Emerald Isle*  
12<sup>th</sup> Mo. 1825

In April, 1827, in his twentieth year, he went to the Haverhill Academy, then taught by Oliver Carlton, who died in Salem in 1882, and at the dedication of the new building of that institution, then occupied for the first time, Whittier wrote the ode sung on the occasion. At the close of his first term at Haverhill, he secured a school at West Amesbury, now Merri-mac, which he taught during the winter of 1827, returning to the academy in the spring, where he remained six months. In 1828 he wrote for the *American Manufacturer*, a protectionist paper in the interest of Henry Clay, and in 1829 returned home to aid in carrying on the farm, where he continued until July, 1830. During all this time he wrote much in both prose and verse, and some of his poems were published in the newspapers of the day and read with approval. Most of these poems failed to reach the standard which he had set up for himself, and have been excluded from his published collections. Indeed, he has never reached that standard, and when recently asked by the writer of this sketch which of his poems was most satisfactory to himself, he replied that "all of them are so unsatisfactory to me it is difficult to decide."

During the first six months of 1830 he edited the





*Gen. H. Carleton*





*Haverhill Gazette*, writing articles at the same time for the *New England Review* of Hartford, of which he was afterwards for a year and a half the editor, as a substitute for George D. Prentice, who was temporarily absent from his post. During his editorship he published in the *Review* many of the poems, with which the world is familiar. Aside from his poetical labors he devoted time and labor to the support of Henry Clay and the "American system" and to the three great causes of Temperance, Freedom and Religion, or rather, perhaps, religion, which included the other two. In January, 1832, Whittier gave up his position at Hartford and returned home, where he remained a year, during which time he published a pamphlet in condemnation of slavery, of which subsequently an edition of ten thousand copies was published by Lewis Tappan, of New York, for gratuitous distribution. In 1833 he was a member of a National Anti-Slavery Convention in Philadelphia and one of its secretaries. In 1835 he was a member of the State Legislature, and at that time witnessed the mob, from whose clutches Garrison was with difficulty rescued. At this time he seems to have been in full sympathy with Garrison, and indeed there is some reason for believing that Garrison's early devotion to the anti-slavery cause was more or less inspired by Whittier himself. Until 1837 he remained at home engaged in the management of the farm, which after the death of his father in 1832, required careful attention. In 1837 he was chosen one of the secretaries of the National Anti-Slavery Society, and went to New York, where for three months he was associated with Henry B. Stanton and Theodore D. Weld. He then went to Philadelphia, where he was engaged to write for the *Pennsylvania Freeman*, of which in 1838 he became an associate editor. In 1840 he resigned and went to Amesbury, where his mother had taken up her residence, having sold the farm about five years before. Since that time Amesbury has continued to be his legal place of residence, though during the last few years since the death of his mother and the marriage of his niece, who was his devoted companion, he has spent most of his time at Oak Knoll, in Danvers, the residence of three sisters, his cousins, the grandchildren of one of his grandfather's brothers.

It has been said that up to a certain period Mr. Whittier was in full sympathy with Mr. Garrison. At that period their ways parted on the slavery question, though their friendship was never broken nor seriously disturbed. Garrison denounced the constitution and the union and opposed political action. Whittier believed that the slave-holders had constitutional rights or "wrongs," as he has been heard to say, and that while it was the duty of every lover of freedom to prevent the establishment of slavery in territories over which Congress had jurisdiction, Providence would point out some method of final emancipation for the slave. He was sufficiently an optimist

to feel sure that other people were as conscientious as the Friends, who had rid themselves of slavery, and in good time would follow their example. Nor did he think it necessary or charitable to indulge in the denunciations uttered on the anti-slavery platform and the extravagant harangues of Garrison and Pillsbury and Phillips grated harshly on his ears.

In 1883 a complete edition of his poetical works was published, to which was attached a note by the author stating, "In these volumes for the first time a complete collection of my poems has been made. While it is satisfactory to know that these scattered children of my brain have found a home, I cannot but regret that I have been unable, by reason of illness, to give that attention to their revision and arrangement which respect for the opinions of others and my own after-thought and experience demand. That there are pieces in this collection which I would willingly let die I am free to confess. But it is now too late to disown them and I must submit to the inevitable penalty of poetical as other sins. There are others, intimately connected with the author's life and times, which owe their tenacity of vitality to the circumstances under which they were written and the events by which they were suggested."

This note was written for the edition of 1857, but, except so far as it refers to his illness, was as true in 1883 as at the earlier date, for many of the poems included in the volume were written after the edition of 1857.

Mr. Whittier passed his eightieth birthday on 17th of December, 1887, on which occasion large numbers of friends from Boston and elsewhere visited him at Oak Knoll, and paid their tribute of affection to one whose life had flowed like a pure and quiet stream, enriching and making glad all within its influence. On a cold day in January of the present year the writer spent an hour with him at his fireside and at his noonday meal, and few hours in a life of nearly three-score years and ten finger more sweetly in his memory.

#### JAMES H. CARLETON.<sup>1</sup>

The great-grandfather of Mr. Carleton, on the maternal side, was Dr. James Brickett, born in Haverhill in 1737 and dying there December 9, 1818, aged eighty-one years. He was an able and successful physician, practicing for many years and always enjoying the respect of his professional brethren. He was always known at home as "Dr. Brickett," but in the biographical dictionaries he is spoken of as General Brickett, in deference to his military rank. During the French War he served as surgeon's mate in Col. Frye's regiment for at least sixteen months, and perhaps longer. He was an ardent Whig, from the very beginning of the troubles with Great Britain. September 5, 1774, he was elected captain of the Artillery

<sup>1</sup> By John B. D. Cogswell





Company in Haverhill, which was an infant school for the Revolutionary soldiers. During the whole of the struggle he served actively upon the town Committees of Inspection, Correspondence and Safety, of which he was usually chairman. He was also frequently a delegate to the various patriotic conventions.

He evidently hastened to Cambridge upon the Lexington "Alarm." April 26, 1775, he made out there the "list" or roll of Haverhill "Minute" men who had marched on the 19th, and received the money for them. May 20th he was commissioned as lieutenant-colonel in the Essex regiment, commanded by his former superior officer, Col. Frye. On the 16th of June, Col. Frye was absent on court-martial duty, and was also ill with the gout. Lieutenant-Colonel Brickett accordingly led the regiment to Bunker Hill, though he was disabled early in the action. Frothingham says: "Lieutenant-Colonel Brickett, a physician, was wounded early in the action, and, with the other surgeons, repaired to the north side of Bunker Hill and remained in attendance on the wounded." As Col. Frye was, after all, in the battle of Bunker Hill, it is quite probable he relieved Col. Brickett before the latter retired. July 5, 1776, Dr. Brickett was appointed by the Council, colonel of a battalion to be raised in the county of Essex and elsewhere, and July 11th, brigadier-general of forces to be sent to Canada. He took command of the Massachusetts troops at Ticonderoga, August 10, 1776. Mr. Carleton has his "Orderly Book" during this campaign, in an excellent state of preservation. The following will exhibit the characteristics of the man and soldier. In one of his brigade orders, after rebuking certain acts as destructive of discipline, General Brickett continues: "Every officer will therefore endeavor to keep up his dignity, and not by any mean, low, sordid behavior make himself contemptible and so lose his authority. Are we not come here for the defense of the liberties of America? Should we not exert every nerve in it? Good discipline makes you formidable, healthy, vigorous. For want of this, men soon grow insolent, sickly, enervated, and fit to serve neither God nor man." December 2, 1776, Gen. Brickett was president of a court-martial at Albany, for the trial of Arnold, on Col. Hazen's complaint. In September, 1777, he was at Saratoga as a volunteer at the time of Burgoyne's surrender, and, under appointment from Gen. Gates, commanded the escort which brought a portion of the British prisoners to Prospect Hill, in what is now Somerville. As he was not at the time regularly in the service of either the State or Continent, he was never remunerated for either pay or advances. This circumstance caused him great mortification, and he is said to have expressed his irritation in sufficiently forcible language.

General Brickett was often moderator of the town meetings, and from 1779 to 1782, was chairman of

the Board of Selectmen, who were also assessors and overseers of the poor. He was chairman of the committee which reported an address adopted by the town of Haverhill, October 10, 1786, in reply to a circular letter addressed by the town of Boston to the other towns, in reference to the troubles then culminating in "Shay's Rebellion." Presumably, therefore, he was the author of the address, which is one of the finest of the cotemporary documents. The closing paragraph pledges Haverhill to uphold the laws: "We are ready, therefore, to join you in a firm, vigorous support of our Constitution, in the redress of grievances, and in promoting industry, economy, and every other virtue which can exalt and render a nation respectable."

General Brickett was evidently a man somewhat eager and impetuous. His was the spirit of a volunteer. The verdict of his townsmen about him in private life is thus expressed: "He was an obliging neighbor, a genial companion, a liberal and enterprising citizen, and a man of undoubted honor, patriotism and integrity." He never forgot his old military comrades, nor they him. His house on Water Street was always their resort, and there generous old-fashioned hospitality was dispensed, with a soldier's welcome.

General Brickett's son, Dr. Daniel Brickett, who was his associate and successor in practice, was a highly respectable physician and an esteemed citizen. Not so energetic as his father, his taste did not lead him towards public life. His daughter, Fanny Brickett, born September 23, 1793, died December 2, 1869, aged seventy-six. She married Phineas Carleton, of Haverhill, born 1786, who died October 5, 1866, aged eighty years and seven months. Their children were Daniel Brickett Carleton, who died in 1848, aged thirty-two years; James H. Carleton, born March 9, 1818; Mary F. Carleton, born 1824, who married Dr. Kendall Flint; George and Ann Carleton, who died young.

Mr. Phineas Carleton was a man of retiring habits and methodical ways, who disliked and avoided the bustle and display attendant upon public position. It appears, however, that he joined the well-known Fire Society, January, 1814. He was a merchant on Water Street for many years, retiring from active business about 1840. He attained considerable celebrity as a manufacturing jeweller, his silverware being famous, far and near, for its solidity and workmanship. An obituary notice of Mr. Carleton, published in the *Haverhill Gazette*, concludes: "He bore a reputation for unbending integrity and untarnished honor, which gained for him the respect and confidence of the community."

With this worthy parent, Mr. James H. Carleton became early associated in the business we have named, carrying it on after his father's retirement, and even improving upon its traditions. Finally, a very critical condition of health, compelled his retire-



ment from active engagements of that character. Indeed, no sketch of Mr. Carleton would be correct, which should fail to state that for many years his constitution has apparently been so delicate that his intimate friends have always wondered at the amount of business he has managed to transact. Yet, doubtless much aided by his own courage and prudence, he has nearly attained the scriptural allotment of three score and ten.

About 1852 Mr. Carleton married Mary H., daughter of Isaac R. Howe, Esq., a formerly well-known lawyer of Haverhill. Through her mother, Sarah Saltonstall Howe, daughter of Dr. Nathaniel Saltonstall, she was descended from Nathaniel Saltonstall, who married Elizabeth Ward, daughter of the first minister of Haverhill, Rev. John Ward. Mrs. Carleton was born March 25, 1819, and died September 2, 1882. She was a woman of good sense, humor and unafflicted kindness. Not behindhand in any of the town's charitable movements, she was specially interested in the Old Ladies' Home and the Ladies' Benevolent Society.

In 1847 Mr. Carleton was chosen a director of the Haverhill Aqueduct Company, in which circumstances had led him to take an interest. In 1856 he became its treasurer and general manager, a position he has retained till date. The career of this company has been briefly sketched in previous pages, and its success is recognized as phenomenal.

In October, 1847, a society was organized, called the "Fraternity of Shenstones." Its object was to provide means for setting out and taking care of "ornamental trees in the streets, squares and other public places in the town." The organization took its name, of course, from William Shenstone, the poet, who early in the last century devoted life and fortune to the embellishment of his beautiful paternal estate of the Leasowes, in Shropshire, England. Mr. Carleton was not so much engrossed with the ornamental functions of this ornamental tree-planting society as with its practical. He did not hold its offices, but he planted many trees as its representative. And he has his reward, for, as he passes under great elms, he can say, "this and this and these, were placed and watered by my hand."

Fifty or sixty years ago all the young people and some of the old were wont to go fishing and picnicing at Lake Kenoza (then Great Pond). When one of the land-proprietors complained of trespassing there, a number of citizens bought a perpetual license to resort to a pleasant point of land, near the northeastern extremity of the Pond. They put up a wooden building, and the place was long familiar, in a homely way, as the "Fish-house lot." But the building decayed and was burned, accidentally or in mischief, and the grounds were neglected. In the summer of 1858 an interest in the spot was revived, an informal meeting was called, at which Rufus Slocomb, who owned the fee of the land, proposed to transfer it to

the citizens of Haverhill and Bradford for the nominal sum of one hundred dollars, on condition that it should be forever kept open as a place of public resort for the people of the two towns. The offer was accepted, and on August 31, 1859, a meeting was again called on the grounds. Report was made that the land had been purchased and enclosed by a fence, graded, ornamented by the planting of about two hundred and fifty trees, and made practicable by building a substantial stone house. Then there was an election of officers, and Mr. Carleton was chosen president, a position he has retained to the present year. It seems to have been considered that a new name was necessary, and, indeed, "Great Pond" is not a very distinctive one. Fortunately, somebody had thought of Whittier—and his poem of "Kenoza" will be recited along its shores, probably, till the present race gives place to some other, succeeding it. Afterwards, there were other festivities of christening and many famous gayeties in later years—among them, July 27, 1871, a grand picnic to the shoe and leather trade. But when, about 1876, river steam-boating became the popular form of summer pleasuring, the old grounds began to be neglected once more. Alterations of the stone house by an additional story of wood were destroyed by a cyclone, and their restoration brought the association into debt, which Mr. Carleton had protected for many years. Jan. 13, 1888, a meeting was held at Mr. Carleton's house, at which he resigned his position as president, accompanying his retirement with a cancellation of all the debts (eighteen hundred dollars). Both the propositions, so coupled, and modified by the tender of generous hospitality, were accepted. A new list of officers was reported containing many of the old members of the association, as Dudley Porter, President; John P. Randall, 1st Vice-President, and E. P. Hill, Secretary, who has been such since 1859. This association has always been much in Mr. Carleton's affections, and he anticipates from the reorganization a new order of things and an opening up, through its influence, of the beautiful scenery about "Kenoza." But the muse of the Kenoza Lake Club's laureate will still be the most effective agency in that direction.

August 1, 1873, Mr. Carleton was chosen trustee of the public library, at the first election of such officers, and still continues to hold the position, which has been one of great usefulness and beneficence for the people of Haverhill.

In 1874 and 1875 he represented the town in the Legislature.

In youth Mr. Carleton was an active and zealous Whig; when that grand old party broke up he remained for some years in the conservative position of a Webster Whig, and then allied himself to the Democratic party.

In 1876 he was a delegate to the National Democratic Convention at St. Louis. In 1878 he was the un-





successful candidate of his party for Representative to Congress, and in 1881 for lieutenant-governor.

In 1864 he became a member of the Democratic State Central Committee, and by annual re-election still retains the position, being easily the dean of that most honorable body.

During the Civil War Mr. Carleton was no laggard in support of the government, by purse, and hand, and brain. In that connection the town honored him with several unique commissions, which he successfully discharged. He was deputed to solicit and bring to the City Hall, in *perpetuum memoriam*, the battle-sword of Major Henry Jackson How, who fell before Richmond, and whose name is fittingly preserved by the excellent post of the Grand Army, in Haverhill, and he was chairman of the committee for erecting the soldiers' monument, on which they inscribed for the citizens of Haverhill, the proud words, "in grateful tribute to the memory of those, who, on land and on sea, died, that the Republic might live."

A little more than a twelve-month ago, Mr. Carleton tendered to the trustees of the city hospital a very eligible estate for its location. The deed of gift was accepted by them, December 10, 1886, and the building was formally opened December 29, 1887. The excellent address of Dr. John Crowell, on that occasion, shows how gladly the trustees accepted Mr. Carleton's opportune offering.

Some persons knowing the intimate relations existing for many years between the late Mr. Hale and Mr. Carleton, are of the opinion that the latter had much to do with the suggestion, and ripening in the mind of Mr. Hale, of the beneficent thoughts which resulted in the public library and hospital of Haverhill. If happily this were the case, he has shown that he is more than willing, out of his own substance, to supplement the splendid donations of his dead friend.

Partly in pursuit of health and partly to gratify an intelligent curiosity, Mr. Carleton has been an extensive traveller, both at home and abroad. The precarious condition of his health has obliged him to spend many winter seasons in Florida where, unfortunately, he is almost as well known as at home.

Mr. Carleton is a strong partisan and a firm friend. He is a resolute and unyielding combatant, and will never be the first to cry "Hold, Enough!" It should, perhaps, be added, in justice to him, that in his own opinion, he is a very peaceful person, who has never done anything to provoke assault.

Whatever his qualities, they have made a very strong and favorable impression upon the people of Haverhill, who have known him, man and boy, from his youth up. Too positive not to have made enemies, it has been evident, on one occasion at least, that the majority of the citizens were in sympathy with him and gave him their confidence. They have found him pleasant and they believe him to be upright.

Certainly all must admit that for public objects and when there is public calamity, as after the great fire of 1882, Mr. Carleton is a generous giver. He is entitled to recognition as a public-spirited citizen.

In private and social life there is nothing but good to be said of him. He admits and discharges in advance all obligations. His acts of unsolicited friendship have been numerous. He is the most kind and considerate of neighbors. His hospitality is abundant and extended to all sorts and conditions of people, and it is administered cheerily. Solitary as he lives, infirm in health and with old age drawing on, there is still no more important factor in the domestic life of the town than James H. Carleton.

#### THOMAS SANDERS.<sup>1</sup>

Thomas Sanders is descended from Thomas Sanders, who settled in Gloucester, Mass., in 1702, and married a wife there in 1703, who lived to be ninety years old. He was a shipwright and carried on the business of ship-building extensively. In 1725 he commanded the government sloop "Merry Meeting." His oldest son, Thomas, was born in 1704. His descendant, Thomas Sanders, of Haverhill, has the commission granted to him, June 23, 1725, by Lieutenant-Governor William Dummer, J. Willard, secretary, as lieutenant of sloop "Merry Meeting," belonging to His Majesty's service, "whereof Thomas Sanders (his father) is captain." This second Thomas spent a large part of his life in the service of the province, as commander of a government vessel. In January, 1745, he memorialized Governor Shirley for larger pay for himself and the crew of the sloop "Massachusetts," which he then commanded. The Governor, sending the memorial to the House of Representatives, says: "I am satisfied with the reasonableness of Capt. Sanders' request, and am extremely loath to lose so faithful and experienced an officer. I must desire you would give him such relief as may make him easy in the service." The House doubtless complied with Governor Shirley's request, for Captain Sanders was in the expedition to Cape Breton the same year, and had command of the transports in Chapeau Rouge Bay. He had eleven children. His son, Thomas (the third) of Gloucester, married Lucy, daughter of Rev. Thomas Smith, the first minister of Falmouth, Maine, (afterwards Portland). This Thomas Sanders fitted for college with Rev. Moses Parsons, of Byfield, the father of the chief justice, and graduated at Harvard in 1748. He was a merchant at Gloucester, represented that town in the House of Representatives from 1761 to 1770 inclusive, and was then a member of the Council till he resigned, in June, 1773. His son, Thomas, born in 1759, settled in Salem, and died a wealthy citizen of that place, June 5, 1844. He married Elizabeth Elkins, a lineal descen-

<sup>1</sup> By John B. D. Cogswell.

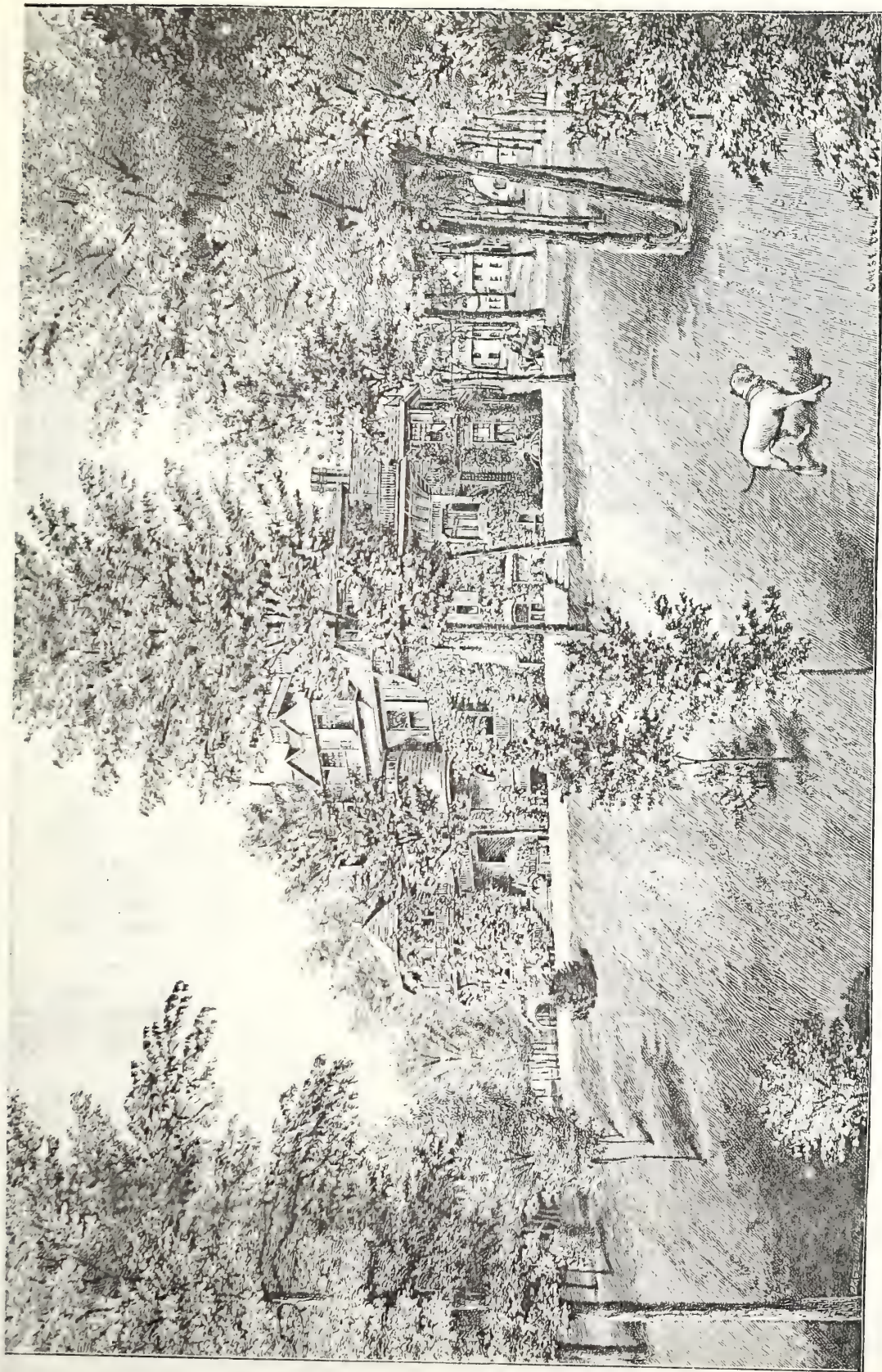




*Thomas Gaudier*







"BIRCHEROW,"  
RESIDENCE OF THOMAS SANDERS,  
HAVERHILL, MASS.





dent of Peregrine White, the first born of New England. Leverett Saltonstall and Nathaniel Saltonstall, born in Haverhill, and sons of Dr. Nathaniel Saltonstall, married two of his daughters. His oldest son, Charles, who graduated at Harvard in 1802, has his name preserved in Sanders' Theatre at the University. George Thomas, the youngest son, born October 30, 1804, graduated at Harvard in 1824, lived at Salem, and died May 1, 1856. He married Mary A. Brown, of Salem, and had two sons—Thomas, the subject of this sketch, and Charles Sanders, who is engaged in business in Boston.

Thomas Sanders, of Haverhill, is, therefore, the fifth in descent from the original Thomas, of Gloucester, who has borne his name. He was born at Salem, August 18, 1839, and married, June 6, 1866, Susie Bradley Howe, daughter of the late Hon. Nathaniel S. Howe, of Haverhill. Their children are George Thomas, born March 5, 1867; Mary Williams, born February 5, 1869; Nathaniel S. Howe, born February 13, 1871; Charles Bradley, September 24, 1878; Anne Elizabeth, April 23, 1880; Janet Rand, January 26, 1884; and Muriel Gurdon, born November 13, 1886.

Thomas Sanders has always been exceedingly fond of agricultural pursuits, and from extreme youth spent much time upon a farm which his father had owned in East Brookfield, Vermont. From 1856 to 1870,—that is from about the age of sixteen or seventeen years till he was thirty—he carried on this farm, which contained about five hundred acres. He used it for stock-raising, and is in the habit of saying that he was successful in that pursuit. No one can doubt his keen relish in the employment, who sees with what eagerness he always escapes from later occupations to turn again to his early Green Mountain home for a brief visit.

The growth of children needing education brought him to Haverhill, where, in 1870, he entered into the business of sole-cutting. He is now (1888) president of the Sanders Leather Company.

It is not extravagant, probably, to say that his establishment leads in the business of furnishing cut soles at wholesale. It is not intended to claim that he first furnished cut soles. But previous to 1870 every manufacturer cut soles for his own uses; now, no manufacturer does. Mr. Sanders' friends think that he had at least an important share in forwarding what is admitted to have been a great step in the progressive history of shoe manufacturing. He has erected large buildings on Washington Street, in the shoe district of Haverhill, near Railroad Square, and lets steam-power to a considerable extent. Though not carefully educated with a view to a business life, he has many excellent business qualities. He is prompt, punctual, reliable and has large executive ability. Circumstances made him acquainted, as early as 1873, with Professor Alexander Graham Bell, who has since become famous as the inventor of the tele-

phone, and this acquaintance ripened into intimacy and friendship. Professor Bell, a Scotchman and not long in this country, had become favorably known as an instructor of deaf mutes, but was much absorbed in his system of visible speech. An earnest and eager student, he was projecting his keen intellect upon collateral lines, and Mr. Sanders, almost by accident, learned that he was speculating upon the possibility of transmitting articulate speech by electricity. Mr. Sanders, on his part, quickly appreciated the immense practical value of such an attainment, if it were possible. Much consultation and mutual confidence drew them together till they united their energies to work for an important end. The immediate result was that Mr. Bell relinquished his professional pursuits, and gave up his time to self-education in the required direction, and to experiments, which he prosecuted with a relentless energy and a triumphant success which scientists have admired, and the public and the law courts have heard a great deal about. For several years these experiments were carried on in Mr. Sanders' immediate neighborhood, and, indeed, in his own home. He found means to carry them on, even to the neglect and injury of his business and his private affairs. At one time Professor Bell and Mr. Sanders were equal partners in reference to all results to be obtained through the former's skill and researches. Subsequently, Gardner Green Hubbard, who became Professor Bell's father-in-law, was admitted as a third and an equal partner. The patent was obtained in 1876, and the world knows the ultimate triumph of the telephone. But these three owned jointly the patent and all of Professor Bell's rights and interests, in law and equity, till they were merged in the various corporations with whose history the world is so familiar. This is not the place, nor is it desired, to argue the merits of the Bell Telephone litigation; but it is intended explicitly to say that Thomas Sanders rendered firm and valuable support to Professor Bell in his years of experiment and straitened circumstances, as Professor Bell would probably be only too willing to admit. And it is proper to add that Mr. Sanders is a staunch believer in Professor Bell's absolute truth and integrity, under any and all circumstances.

In 1880-81, Mr. Sanders built on the Highlands a beautiful house, which he calls "Birchbrow," overlooking Lake Saltonstall. Here he has built up a fine farm embracing a considerable portion of the old "Great Ox-Common" of Haverhill. His avenues, barns and other buildings, with his well-cultivated fields, exhibit that thoroughness which is characteristic of all that Mr. Sanders does. It would be difficult to find an estate where so much has been accomplished in the same time with no greater outlay. In this charming home, a generous and refined hospitality is dispensed, which is at least appreciated by such as have had the good fortune to enjoy it.

On this property Mr. Sanders still enjoys his old



pursuit of stock-raising. He has a fine herd of high-bred Jerseys, and has raised some good colts. Mr. Sanders has had much to do with the management of the New England Agricultural Society, and in 1885 delivered the annual address before the Essex Agricultural Society, of which he is an active member. Mr. Sanders is connected with many corporations and societies. He is, and has been from the beginning, a director in the American Bell Telephone Company; he is a director, also, in the Brunswick Antimony Company, and in the Haverhill Bank; he is a director and treasurer in the Haverhill Iron Works, the business of which has much increased, so that the company is now prosperous.

He is a member of the Merrimack Lodge of Free Masons, and the Haverhill Commandery of Knights Templar; he is a director of the Haverhill Young Men's Christian Association, in the work of which he feels a deep interest, and devotes to it his time and energies; he is a member of the Haverhill Fortnightly and other clubs. But it is hardly worth while to extend this list, save to add that he is a warden and much interested in the temporal and spiritual prosperity of Trinity Episcopal Church.

Socially Mr. Sanders, or "Tom Sanders," as hosts of people persist in calling him, is one of the most genial of men. Nobody is more popular in the town, and perhaps nobody ought to be more so, for he is very much in earnest about everything which can promote its prosperity or enhance its reputation. Political and municipal offices have been often tendered to him, but so far he has put the temptation easily by. He has hosts of friends who would be glad to demonstrate their regard for him. It is generally believed of him, that he is ready and anxious to do what good he can in the world.

#### DR. KENDALL FLINT.<sup>1</sup>

Thomas Flint, the emigrant ancestor, according to tradition, came to America from Wales. The first mention of him in Salem town records, is in 1650; but there is an opinion among the genealogists that he arrived earlier. He was among the first settlers of Salem village, afterwards South Danvers and now Peabody. He bought two hundred acres about six miles from Salem Court House, near Phelps' mill and brook, where the subject of this sketch spent his childhood and youth. The title deed to a part of this land was witnessed in 1662 by Giles Corey, who in 1692, when eighty-one years old, during the witchcraft madness, was pressed to death at Salem because he would not plead to the charge. His house stood upon land that after his death, became a part of the Flint homestead. This estate remains in the possession of heirs of Elijah Flint.

Thomas Flint, son of Thomas, lived upon this

homestead. He was in King Philip's war, and was wounded in the swamp fight. He became a large land-holder, having purchased, between 1664 and 1702, more than nine hundred acres of land. He was a man in whom his neighbors had confidence and was employed to build the first meeting house in Salem village.

Captain Samuel Flint, sixth son of the last Thomas, received in the division of the estate, the house in which his father had lived. He was chairman of the committee chosen to promote the setting off from Salem of Salem village, as a separate town. When it was incorporated as Danvers, he was one of the first Board of Selectmen and through life was much in public business. There is a family tradition that he was out in the old French war, and, on his way home, in command of his company, encountered his son Samuel, who had taken advantage of his father's absence, to enlist in another company. "You rogue, where are you going? Come home with me," cried the father. Whether the story anticipates events or not, this son Samuel, who inherited his father's farm by will, was out as a minute man on the day of the Lexington battle. He seems to have entered the service almost immediately, having been eight months at the siege of Boston. He was killed at the head of his company, at Stillwater, October 7, 1777, and was the only officer from Danvers killed in the Revolution. He was only forty-four. The anecdote came down in the family that Captain Samuel 2d had a negro boy, named Primus, to whom he said, "Primus, if you will go to fight for the country, I will give you your freedom." And Primus accepted the challenge and went.

Major Elijah Flint, second son of the last named Samuel, received the homestead. He was a Whig in politics, a Puritan in religion and in private life a model farmer. The old house, having been enlarged and altered by various generations, was much modernized, and improved according to later ideas, by Thomas Flint, son of Elijah, a hardware merchant of Boston; but it was consumed by fire, June, 1874, much venerated for its antiquity and associations.

Dr. Kendall Flint, the youngest son of Major Elijah, was born February 4, 1807. In 1824 he began to fit for college at Hampton Academy, entering Amherst College in 1827 and graduating there in 1831. He entered Andover Theological Seminary the same year and remained in that institution till 1833, when declining health compelled him to return to his father's house, where a protracted illness of two years awaited him. His physician at last decidedly advised him to exchange the clerical for the medical profession, upon the ground that exercise in the open air might gradually restore his shattered health. The prescription was hard to take, but seemed inevitable. It was a great trial to this young man to leave the study of the immaterial and pass to the material side—to abandon theology and philosophy and the spiritual, and cross to the other side of

<sup>1</sup>By John B. D. Cogswell.







*Hendall Flint M. D.*



the gulf, to study experience, sensation and science. But once convinced that the step was necessary, he entered his name as a student with his attending physician, Dr. Osgood, of Danvers. Completing his medical studies, he received his degree in 1839, at the Harvard School in Boston. Early in 1840 he came to Haverhill and purchased the situation previously occupied by Dr. Augustus Whiting. Haverhill was then a comparatively small place, having, by the census of that year, a population of four thousand three hundred and thirty-six. June 28, 1842, he married Mary F., daughter of Mr. Phineas Carleton. They had two children—George Carleton, born November 26, 1848; died October 6, 1849, and Mary Howe, born April 23, 1853; died in 1855.

Dr. Flint entered upon the practice of medicine with a high sense of responsibility. He believed that the physician could do much to assist nature in saving life, to shorten the duration of disease, to relieve pain and suffering, and to help friends bear up under the responsibility which often seems like to crush them.

He adopted the allopathic practice, then generally ruling in the medical world. He was seldom disappointed in its results when it was properly administered. But after he became master of the treatment and able to vary it, he avoided the harsher remedies, as blistering and bleeding, with such drugs as antimony and calomel, commonly employed at that time, and finally modified the treatment to a more specific form. When the great allopathic practice, that had come down from Hippocrates, Galen, Vesalius, Harvey, Hunter and Good, had swallowed up Thomsonianism, Hydropathy and all similar systems, which were merely one particular remedy used for all complaints, the question was asked, "What will it do with Homœopathy? Will it absorb that also?" The answer was, "No! for Homœopathy is founded on a principle which could be absorbed only by adopting the principle, and though that would enrich Allopathy by having two principles instead of one—to adopt it would compromise its dignity!"

In the American Encyclopedia, in the article Homœopathy, we read that "Hippocrates, the father of medicine, asserted that medicine sometimes acted according to the rule of similia and at others according to that of contraria, thus intimating the truth of both the allopathic law of contraria and the homœopathic law of similia." Although Dr. Flint mainly adhered to allopathy, he believed that there are cases best treated by the homœopathic rule, and these he sought out. And when the cholera visited this country, he used this treatment with perfect success in many cases. Many homœopaths use both systems on the principle that two legs are better than one. When all physicians do the same, the science of medicine will be more complete.

As Dr. Flint looks back over the fifty years of his practice, he sees some new views advanced with regard to the *healing power*. It is said that the efficacy

of drugs, whether in large or small doses, depends, not upon their own peculiar healing nature, but upon the faith with which they have been freighted and weighted by those who have used them, and by the physician and patient now using them. And, moreover, it is said that no medicine or drugs are needed, and, in fact, no faith is needed by the patient—that the doctor or healer can cure, by his own faith, if supported by certain spiritual views and feelings, with their conscious union with the Infinite Spirit. These views have been put forth with great confidence and appear to be supported by abundant evidence from remarkable cases of cure.

Now these views of treatment are outside of medical science. They do not require either a knowledge of the human system, of the materia medica, or anything that is requisite in medical treatment. The cure is of a spiritual nature, not faith in medicine, but faith in a Divine union, with which, physicians as such, have nothing to do.

At the beginning of the civil war, Dr. Flint received an appointment as United States examining surgeon, whose duties were to examine volunteers, drafted men, and men claiming pensions. This very responsible position he held fifteen years.

At the commencement of the war, it was not realized that it cost the Government as much to fit out a man liable to break down at once as an able-bodied soldier. An army of duly examined soldiers are picked men, and in this respect the very flower of the country.

Many volunteers were deeply chagrined, because not being physically perfect, they could not pass examination. But when drafting was necessary, the same severe system of inspection prevailing, censorious persons often insinuated that the examining surgeon must be bribed to allow certain persons to escape whom he had refused to pass, because physically disabled. Examination for pensions is a very responsible duty, calling for an honest and capable class of men, who are well qualified as physicians and surgeons, can weigh well the evidence, and decide accordingly.

Dr. Flint, who suffered so much from ill-health as a young man, and has yet been able to do so much, has now been an invalid again for many years, and latterly compelled to abstain from active practice. Rigid diet and scrupulous care alone, have preserved his valuable life. Yet whoever sees him upon the streets of Haverhill, erect and even youthful in bearing, might well suppose him to be a man in the very prime of life. Yet his father was a boy of fourteen when Americans declared their independence, and a man of twenty-one when Great Britain acknowledged it. And the venerable doctor himself antedates Waterloo and the downfall of Napoleon. Placid and serene, he reads Bain and ponders the tendency of modern philosophy.





WILLIAM E. BLUNT.<sup>1</sup>

Among the citizens of Haverhill who have won distinction and honor in public life, and enjoyed to a large degree the long and uninterrupted confidence of the public, none have more merited it than William E. Blunt, a son of Joshua Blunt, who moved to Haverhill from Andover.

Mr. Blunt was born August 21, 1840, on Merrimack Street, near where the post office now stands. He received his early education in the public schools of the city, and by close and successful application, aided by private instruction, was fitted for college. His life at this time was not unmarked by a hard struggle. He worked during vacations and evenings at whatever was offered, to obtain the means for the prosecution of his studies. He began the study of law, and in due time was admitted to practice in the State Courts, and later, in the United States Court. He was appointed United States Assistant Assessor in 1866. Governor Bullock made him special justice of the Haverhill Police Court, which position he retained for many years. His own townsmen also elected him to the school board, and to the office of city solicitor. He declined the position of trial justice for juvenile offenders, tendered him by Governor Talbot, and in 1870 he was elected to the legislature. In this capacity he represented Haverhill continuously until 1876, when he declined further reelection. His services in the house were marked by signal ability, efficiency and faithfulness, and he soon became favorably known in other parts of the State. A modest young man, not seeking notoriety, he was only conspicuous at first by constant attendance, punctuality and diligence—the prime qualities of usefulness in legislation.—He rarely allowed personal considerations of any kind to interfere with his public duties, and for six consecutive sessions was never absent for a single day. Amiable and of pleasing address, he soon established valuable social relations with his associates, and when it was found that he was quick to discern the merits, bearings and relations of public matters, that he was honorable and straightforward, he was recognized as a valuable ally to any cause in which he took an interest. He was a firm friend and a dangerous opponent. Above all things he was trustworthy. As his valuable services became thus recognized, people applauded the good sense of the voters of Haverhill in keeping him in his seat year after year. He served upon the standing Committees on Probate and Chancery, the Judiciary, Claims, and was three years on the committee on Railroads, and that for redistricting the State as well as other important special committees. On the occasion of the memorable visit of President Grant and his Cabinet, he was a member of the reception committee. During this time he had won the esteem and friendship of

some of the best men in the State, irrespective of party, who considered him an honest, sagacious and growing man. His good sense and tact in politics have made him invaluable as a counsellor.

In 1872, Mr. Blunt was delegate to the Republican National Convention at Philadelphia which renominated President Grant, with Henry Wilson for Vice-President. He served as secretary of the Massachusetts delegation. In 1875 the friends of Mr. Blunt presented his name to the Republican State Convention for nomination as secretary of State, when he received strong support. President Grant nominated him as postmaster of Haverhill, May 30, 1876, and he was promptly confirmed by the Senate. He was reappointed by President Hayes and by President Arthur without opposition, his present commission expiring May 17, 1888. Formerly very earnest in local politics and ever a warm Republican, since his appointment as postmaster he has felt himself constrained to refrain from active participation in political movements. He has been seen no more in caucuses or conventions. This course has been maintained by him with admirable consistency, even when there were great personal temptations to depart from it, and when apparently he might have done so with impunity. The very general acquiescence to his serving as a Republican under a Democratic administration is not alone due to his personal popularity, for he has rendered in that capacity very important service to the business men of the city and to the community at large. He has anticipated rather than responded to the wants of the people, and his efforts in behalf of better and increased mail facilities are justly appreciated. When he saw that the government was erecting public buildings, especially in the West and South, he at once set himself to work to procure an appropriation for one in Haverhill. It is due to his efforts alone that the Senate has twice passed a bill with an appropriation for this object, thus accomplishing what will be of value when circumstances are finally favorable. Noticing his efficiency, which indeed could not be well hidden, the Republicans of Haverhill made a spirited effort to secure Mr. Blunt's nomination to Congress in 1884. In it they were much aided by his personal popularity with all classes and in all parties. He received the hearty and united support of the northern section of the district, but was defeated, Colonel Stone, of Newburyport, who had held the position for two terms, securing the nomination by two majority. In 1886 a more determined effort was made, and his own city and the adjoining and outlying towns sent an undivided and earnest delegation in his behalf to the convention. General William Cogswell, of Salem, was the principal opposing candidate, and after a contest lasting from 10 A.M. to 5 P.M., without intermission, obtained the nomination on the twenty-seventh ballot by one majority. A gallant and satisfactory struggle had been made by Mr. Blunt's friends, and had it not

<sup>1</sup> By John B. D. Cogswell.







William E. Blunt





*Alfred D. Hughes*





been for the fact that he refrained from taking a personal part in the contest, owing to official duties, the result would have doubtless been different. It is due to Mr. Blunt to also add that on both these occasions he acquiesced in the result with admirable good spirit, and supported and efficiently aided in the election of both Colonel Stone and General Cogswell. Mr. Blunt is yet in the early prime of manhood. He is an excellent man of business, and he has acquitted himself admirably in every position, public or private, in which he has been placed.

With his experience of life and affairs, he seems to have still before him a long and useful career. So far as his political prospects are concerned, it is moderate to say that in every contest in which he has been directly or indirectly engaged he has developed great personal strength; that such defeats as he has sustained were but the fortunes of honorable warfare, involving no personal discredit, and in no way diminishing his personal popularity. His wounds are but the scars of chivalrous warfare, and he is ready to do his duty as he may see fit in the future.

For the past five years Mr. Blunt has been president of the Kennebunkport Seashore Company, which owns some six hundred acres of valuable property at Cape Arundel, Me. As a citizen Mr. Blunt is public-spirited and liberal. In conduct and speech he is prudent. His convictions are strong and his opinions are tenaciously held, but not so expressed as to infringe on the rights or wound the feelings of others. In social life he is genial, generous and hospitable. It would, perhaps, be trite to say that he is a kind and considerate husband and father. Mr. Blunt is married, his accomplished wife being Harriet M., daughter of Daniel Harriman. He has two children,—Kate M. and Florence T.

The strongest traits in Mr. Blunt's character, in all the relations of life, are his reliability and fidelity. His is stanch and loyal. With his word goes his heart. In his self-sacrificing friendship he grants favors with a heartiness that doubles their value. No success can attend him, and no honors can be awarded to him, which will not be matters of sincere rejoicing to hosts of attached friends.

#### ALDEN POTTER JAKUES.

Alden Potter Jaques, who, for the past twenty-five years, has been recognized as one of the successful business men of Haverhill, was a native of Bowdoin, Maine, and sprang from an ancestry of sturdy yeomanry. In the colonial days of this country, three brothers, by the name of Jaques, emigrated from France to America and located in Newbury. One of the trio afterwards removed to Harpswell, Maine, and was one of the first settlers of that place, where he became a large real estate owner. For several years he was master of a merchant ship, and followed the sea, and finally found his grave in the ocean.

Isaac, a descendant of Capt. Jaques, grandfather of Alden Potter, removed to Bowdoin, where he accumulated a large property, and became a prominent and influential citizen. He was the father of three sons and one daughter. Stafford, one of the sons, married Harriet Potter, and to them were born five sons and two daughters. Alden P., the oldest of the sons, was born March 4, 1835. His younger days were spent on the homestead farm, and during the three winter months of each year of his boyhood and youth he attended the public schools of his native town. His father, being a contractor and builder, was absent from home a large part of the time, leaving his farm in charge of his eldest son as soon as he was old enough to conduct the place, until he was eighteen, when his ambition led him to seek his fortune in the world. Being quite skillful in the use of tools, he readily obtained a situation as a ship-joiner in Richmond, Me. He continued to follow that trade until the financial crash of 1857, when, ship-building having become a poor business, he engaged in house carpentering.

In 1858, Mr. Jaques married Harriet, daughter of John Car, of Bowdoin, Me., with whom he enjoyed life until she was called home, in 1865. This was his first great sorrow. In 1871 he married Miss Marci L., daughter of Leonard R. Avery, of New Hampton, N. H.; to them has been born one son, Walter H. Jaques. Soon after Mr. Jaques' first marriage he purchased a farm, on which he lived but one year, and in 1859, being desirous of a more active life, he removed to Haverhill, Mass., where he again engaged in carpentering, and, being a skillful workman, found constant employment in doing the finer kinds of finishing. His last work at this trade was done on City Hall, in 1862.

The shoe industry, being the chief business of the place, presented greater inducements and more remunerative wages; he therefore turned his attention to that, and, aided by his natural mechanical skill, he soon found an opening, and for a time he worked at the shoe bench until he engaged in shoe manufacturing in 1862, having formed a partnership with his brother-in-law, Randall A. Potter, the name of the firm being Potter & Jaques.

In 1870, Mr. Jaques, in company with John B. Nichols, purchased the large wooden building then standing on Washington Street, and known as the Collin Block, also the Whipple House adjoining. In this building, in 1873, Mr. Jaques inaugurated an enterprise that has done more than any other to revolutionize the shoe industry in Haverhill, viz.: the application of steam-power to machinery for making shoes. At first this innovation was regarded by some as impracticable, but the advantage those who adopted it soon gained over their neighbors led to the general adoption of this force, and the erection of other engines in the shoe manufacturing section of the city, so that now the business that was at one time



scattered throughout the place is centralized and reduced to a system.

To Mr. Jaques also belongs the honor of being the first to succeed in making shoes in what is known as a string-shop. In this he was also followed by others, until now nearly every manufacturer has adopted this method. Mr. Jaques continued in the shoe business until the great conflagration in February, 1882, swept away his factory and other buildings in which he was interested. This destruction of his property only tended to stimulate him to erect more substantial buildings in place of his old ones, and to interest him more extensively in real estate and other enterprises. At present Mr. Jaques is a large share-owner in, and treasurer of, the Eastern Cattle Company, of Haverhill, which has an extensive and well-stocked ranch at Deer Trail, Col.

While he has been an active and successful business man, Mr. Jaques has always taken a lively interest in the welfare of the city and State where he resides. His fellow-citizens, realizing his talents and ability, have honored him by placing him in positions of trust and responsibility.

He has been twice elected a member of the General School Board, and in '85 and '86 was a member of the Board of Aldermen, and in that board was on several important committees.

In the fall of 1886, Mr. Jaques was elected one of the representatives from Haverhill to the General Court, where he was a faithful public servant, and was honored by being assigned to the special committee to represent the Commonwealth at the centennial celebration of the signing of the National Constitution. November, 1887, Mr. Jaques was re-elected to the General Court.

Mr. Jaques has long been a member of Haverhill Commandery of Knights Templar; Saggahew Lodge, F. and A. M., and of Mutual Relief Lodge, I. O. of O. F.

The subject of our sketch has proved the truth of the proverb: "Seest thou a man diligent in his business? he shall stand before kings; he shall not stand before mean men."

#### AMOS W. DOWNING.

The moral and intellectual features of different individuals are often as strongly marked as is their personal appearance. Each man exhibits a group of distinctive traits belonging to the mind or the heart, which, whether they are the offspring of some natural tendency or the result of education, enables him to perform his part with greater effect in a particular circle of action. Early in life the subject of this

sketch gave promise of unusual achievement along the line of human endeavor. He was born in Middleton, N. H., March 31, 1838, and was the son of Samuel H. and Eliza D. Downing. Though tenderly attached to his home, the spirit of self-reliance and enterprise led him to leave it and strike out for himself at the age of fourteen. He learned the shoemaker's trade, which he followed steadily till his twentieth year. The horizon of the shoe-shop became too contracted for the activity of his brain, and he began to desire a broader field and bolder ventures. Just then the store-keeper of the town proposed to sell out, and made overtures to Mr. Downing. It was a surprise to him, for he had neither capital nor knowledge of the business. But the price was agreed on, his note was accepted, and he left the shoe-bench and became proprietor of the store. At once he mastered the new situation. He visited Boston, selected his supply-merchants, obtained the credit he sought without reference, and did a successful business there for four years, when, in 1864, he sold out his store, removed to Haverhill, Mass., and established himself in a first-class grocery business. His movements and methods, though a stranger, at once inspired confidence and won a liberal patronage. But he desired a broader sphere of enterprise, and one less occupied in that flourishing city, and commenced the leather business in the winter of 1867-68. For ten years his operations were limited to the retail trade, and were gradually extended. He then united with others in the manufacture of leather, connecting himself with the old and reliable house of B. F. Thompson & Co., of Boston, in which he is now an active partner. He is also the senior member of the firm of A. W. Downing & Co., having places of business in both Haverhill and Boston, and who do an extensive business in the manufacture of morocco.

Mr. Downing's remarkable success cannot be traced to inherited wealth, social position, the culture of the schools or to special training for the occupations which he has successively pursued. His powers were drawn out and stimulated by favorable circumstances, and he has achieved large measure of success in each of his varied undertakings. His insight into men and affairs is extraordinary. His habits and manner of life are pure and simple. His sympathies are broad and generous. That he has the respect and confidence of his fellow-citizens is evident from the numerous responsible trusts, both private and public, both financial and religious, which have been committed to him.

In 1859 Mr. Downing married Susan A., daughter of Captain Robert and Ann D. Grace, and she has been a true helpmeet to him in all the varied experiences through which their lives have run.







*Amos W. Darnley*





## CHAPTER CLXV.

## BRADFORD.

BY JOHN B. D. COGSWELL.

*Mr. Rogers' Rowley Plantation—Resources and Industries of the Town.*

THE East Parish of Bradford was incorporated as a town by the name of Groveland, March 8, 1850. A part of Boxford, including more than three-fourths of Johnson's Pond, was annexed to Groveland, March 21, 1856. The history of Groveland has been written for these volumes by a highly competent gentleman, and it will not be necessary to treat of it in this sketch, other than as connected with the old town of Bradford.

The principal original contributions to the history of Bradford have been made by two clergymen, Rev. Dr. Gardner B. Perry, of the East Parish, and Rev. Dr. John D. Kingsbury, present pastor of the Congregational Church in Bradford. Dr. Perry, born at Norton, Mass., 1783, and graduated at Union College, was ordained pastor of the Congregational Church in the East Parish Sept. 28, 1814, dying at Groveland, Dec. 16, 1859. Dr. Perry was a man of great industry and usefulness, and was early allied with several reformatory movements, which worked great changes in society and opinion in Essex County. Dec. 23, 1827, in response to a call addressed to all those in Haverhill and vicinity interested in the promotion of temperance, he presided over a meeting in that place, which led to the formation of a temperance society, of which he was the first president, delivering an address upon the occasion. He was the first president of the Essex County Anti-Slavery Society, organized June 10, 1834, of which John G. Whittier was corresponding secretary.

On Forefathers' Day, 1829, he delivered at East Bradford an historical discourse containing a history of the town, which was published in 1821, at Haverhill, and reprinted in 1872. It contains a great deal of information about the first settlers of the town, its industries and churches, a considerable portion of which he had gathered from tradition. Dr. Kingsbury's "Memorial History" was prepared for the two hundredth anniversary of the First Church in Bradford, Dec. 27, 1882. This history exhibits the result of wide reading and abundant research, displayed in a vivid and picturesque manner. All subsequent investigators must be deeply indebted to these two productions. The writer of this imperfect compilation, hastens to acknowledge his unlimited obligations to both.

No one can read the early history of Essex County, without realizing how much the ministers had to do with shaping the settlements and controlling the

conduct of the pioneers. The first projector of the Haverhill plantation was Rev. Nathaniel Ward, of Ipswich; indeed, it was at first known by his name. In a similar way, another clergyman was the chief promoter of the first occupation of the original territory of Bradford by Englishmen.

Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, born in Haverhill, England, was ordained pastor of the church in Ipswich in 1637-38, to succeed Mr. Ward, who, retiring from the active ministry there, yet remained some years longer, preparing the famous "Body of Liberties," and scheming about new and large plantations. Perry tells us that Rev. Ezekiel Rogers, who came to this country in the fall of 1638, and fixed himself at Rowley, which originally included Bradford, was influenced in doing so by a desire of being near and enjoying the society of Mr. Nathaniel Rogers, of Ipswich.

Ezekiel Rogers was a Puritan of the Puritans. Born at Wethersfield, England, in 1590, and private chaplain for a while, he was twenty years pastor of a church in Rowley, in memory of which the new plantation in Massachusetts was doubtless named—as John Smith had before anticipated would often be the case—"in memory of their old." He is said to have been an eloquent man and a forceful, if not a wilful. In 1643 he preached the election sermon, in which he maintained that the same person should not hold the office of Governor for two successive years. This was Democratic doctrine, at a moment when there was a certain leaning towards establishing the magistracy for life, of which Winthrop said "he was no more in love with the honor or power of it than with an old frieze coat in a summer's day." "It is a good observation," wrote Eliot, "and has been often repeated, that the election sermon is the pulse by which we can tell the state of the body politic."

Mr. Rogers had a singular variety of afflictions, in his declining years. He lost two wives, and the third, when she was left a widow, quarreled with his successor and his people. On the night after his third nuptials his house burned down, and he lost his goods and most of his papers. The last is supposed to have been an historical loss. Then he disabled his right arm by falling from his horse, and had to learn how to write with his left. But thanks, probably, to his land operations, he left considerable property, of which Harvard College had the largest benefit. To his friend, Rev. Zachariah Symmes, of Charlestown, (father of the first minister of Bradford), he wrote: "I am hastening home. Oh, good brother, I thank God I am near home, and you, too, are not far off." The masterful old man had no doubt about his future. "We shall sit next the martyrs and confessors." And so when he came to make his will, he gave vent once more to his cherished dislikes, among other things "of all the base opinions of Anabaptists and Antinomians, and all other Phrenetics, dolays of the times." He died in 1660, but, curiously enough, his scorn of sectaries, seems to have been largely participated



in, in this old parish of Bradford, all the way down through the centuries.

Mr. Rogers was accompanied to America by about twenty families from Yorkshire, but immigration was very large at that time, and, as he was probably a magnetic as well as energetic person, his company had much increased by the time his arrangements were completed, and he took at least sixty families to Rowley. There, for a few years, lands were cultivated in common, but that arrangement has never comported long with the genius of New England, and, before a great while, there was an allotment in severalty.

Probably there is not a village in America so little changed by the lapse of time as Rowley. There are the two or three streets upon which the exiles settled themselves,—Wethersfield, in recollection of the pastor's birth-place, and Bradford, to preserve the name of the substantial town in the West Riding in Yorkshire, from which others of them had come. These people were farmers, smiths and weavers. They soon reverted to their English ways, had great store of hemp and flax, built a fulling-mill and made cloth.

Rowley was incorporated September 1, 1639, when it was ordered by the General Court that "Mr. Ezekiel Rogers' plantation be called Rowley." May 13, 1640, it was declared by the General Court "that Rowley bounds is to be eight miles from their meeting-house in a straight line (westerly); and then a cross line diameter from Ipswich Ryver to Merrimack Ryver when it doth not prejudice any former grant." In October of the same year the court ordered "that the neck of land on Merrimack, near Corchitawick, be added to Rowley."

There seems to have been an original amicable arrangement by which the settlement of Rowley was to intervene with loving neighborhood, between Ipswich and Newbury. But before long there was friction. In 1640, "Mr. Ward's Plantation," at Pentucket or Haverhill, was settled upon. But now the people of Rowley, under their strong leader—what one of the Essex County historical writers whimsically calls "The Rev. Ezekiel Rogers' Company"—was eager to stretch from the seashore to the Merrimack. Mr. Rogers was still in the prime of life—about fifty. He had traveled all through the promised land, and he earnestly desired to be added to the Rowley domain what is now Bradford Neck, and Head's Hill, with other lands, which he claimed were intended for Rowley, but had been assigned to Andover instead, by mistake or wrong. When he demanded its restitution of the General Court and was refused, he retired in high dudgeon, threatening to appeal to the elders. The "Elders" were, as a learned Congregationalist minister has written, "in the early days of New England, taken into express partnership with the civil power, in a manner greatly to exalt the sway which they would otherwise have had; and which on the one hand made it easy for them to realize, and easier on the other hand for

them to attempt great things, in the way of public influence." No wonder they were rather topping in their manner.

Still, Mr. Rogers afterwards apologized for his heat; but he had his desire, the court giving way before his resolute demand. "A stranger," says Mr. Kingsbury, "passing through Rowley, asked him in the style of Puritan speech, are you the man that *serves* here?" "Serves! I am the man that *rules* here."

Mr. Herbert L. Ordway, a zealous antiquarian of Bradford, upon the two hundredth church anniversary, read the following extracts of letters from the clerical promoters of plantations, which, even at this distance of time, are interesting glimpses. Nathaniel Ward, whose somewhat greedy letters about Pentucket (Haverhill) may be perused in the present volume, nevertheless writes Governor Winthrop in this tone of studied moderation:

"Our neighbour towns are much grieved to see the harsh liberality of the Court in giving away the countrye. Some honest men of our towne aduise that in their knowledge there are 68 towns in England within as little compass, as the bounds of Ipswich. I knowe neere 40 where I dwell: Rowly is larger than Ipswich, 5 or 10 miles longer & will have other plantations within it, tributaries to it, & intend, as we heare, to stretch their wings much further yet, will spoile & quicken quite utterly, if not Pentucket. We earnestly pray you to prevent it."

On the other hand, Mr. Rogers writes the Governor:

"Sir, there is one thing that is a new trouble to vs: though the Court doe giue vs but three miles of the right, that we go into the country, yet we heare that some would take somewhat of from that. It seemeth they thinke vs very vnworthy neighbours."

Lastly, in another letter to Governor Winthrop, Mr. Rogers falls back upon another line of consideration, with which Mr. Ward was also familiar:

"You best know how oft we expressed ourselves & how plainly, concerning our desired bounds, as Ipsw. River & Merrimack: without which we would vpon no termes accept of a plantation here. Ipswich men desiring our neighbourhood could shew vs little desirable here (except we purchased it at a leare rate), but the name of Merrimack & some considerable places there, as a neck of land & the like. . . . whereupon I wrote many letters to my friends in England, wherein I told them precisely our bounds; & the sound of Merrimack we made not a little sweet."

These were both good men and famous ministers, such as Cotton Mather loved to eulogize in the "Magnalia," but they went about to enlarge the kingdom, much as modern lobbyists are accustomed to proceed. Eventually Mr. Rogers got his way.

Ancient Rowley included the present Georgetown, Boxford, a part of Middleton, Groveland and Bradford.

Boxford was known originally as "Rowley Village." That part of Rowley which is now Bradford was first the "Merrimac Lands," then Merrimac; sometimes, also, "Rowley Village by the Merrimac." Georgetown used to be called New Rowley. And thus Mr. Rogers' great plantation fell to pieces in the fulness of time.

Finally, two individual allotments of land were made to Rev. Mr. Rogers himself and to the Rev.





Samuel Phillips, his colleague. They were of three hundred acres respectively; both tracts were in that part of Bradford which is now Groveland. Mr. Phillips' tract was east of Johnson's Creek, and was bounded on the east by Mr. Rogers', which extended to the river. Twenty acres of meadow were also assigned to Mr. Phillips, and twenty-five to Mr. Rogers, in Jeremie's Meadow. For a few years the Rowley settlers had enough to occupy them in the original village by the brook-side. But when the village lands had been divided and the population of the town began to increase, there were some more adventurous who began to think of utilizing the Merrimac lands. Besides, Pentucket or Haverhill had now been settled some years. It was a prosperous, and hitherto peaceful village, not yet alarmed by the Indian war-whoop. Some of the original inhabitants were of Newbury, but others had been of Ipswich. There were occasions to pass to and fro, and doubtless some halted on the route and entered Rowley Village by the way of Bradford Street to exchange greetings. Thus the Rowley men would hear of the progress of Haverhill, of the new meeting-house "on the lower knowle," in the "Mill-Lot," with its lofty protecting stockade of smooth poles, sixteen feet high, of the excellent ministrations of Pastor Ward. In 1647 the town had been presented for not having a ferry, and the next year Thomas Hale was appointed to keep it, charging "one penny for a passenger, two pence for cattle under two years old, and four pence for such as were over that age." This has ever since been the "old ferry-way," a little east of the foot of Kent Street. The Haverhill people had crossed at that point from the beginning. But doubtless they were eager to have neighbors upon the south. Thus the long wilderness pathway would seem less wild and tedious. In the same year (1647) John Osgood and Thomas Hale were appointed to "lay out the way from Andover to Haverhill"—of course over Merrimac lands. In short, the time seemed to have fully come for an occupation, at least in a pastoral way. Accordingly it was determined that cattle should be pastured near the river, and an agreement was made by which the town allowed special privileges to those who were willing to serve it as herdsmen. The original agreement was made in 1649 to continue seven years, but there was some misunderstanding about it, and in 1652 the committee were directed to renew it, without, however, enlarging the original term of the contract. The town's committee were Matthew Boyes and Francis Parrott, who were associated with the selectmen, Richard Swan, William Stickney, William Hobson, Samuel Brocklebank and William Tenney—names afterwards familiar in the history of Bradford. The affair was evidently regarded as important. So it was, and especially from an historical stand-point. It shows who were the pioneers and with what views and inducements they came. Following is the agreement:

"Imprimis, that the Town of Rowley hath granted to the said Robert Haseltine, John Haseltine and William Wilde, each of them 40 acres of upland, to be laid out to them as convenient as may be without the great prejudice of the town.

"2d. The said town of Rowley hath granted to the aforesaid parties, each of them, to have commons for 20 head of cattle, which said commons they shall have liberty to fence in, wholly or in part, as they see cause. Provided, that the town of Rowley doth declare that they did restrain them from liberty to erect any more than three tenements upon any part of the aforesaid upland or commons.

"3d. The town hath granted to each of them 20 acres of meadow and which meadow and upland shall be laid out to them when they claim it, unless some Providence of God shall hinder.

"4th. They have liberty to get, each of them, a thousand of Pipe-staves yearly, for the space of seven years, which years began in 1649.

"5th. They have liberty on the commons to cut firewood for their families and also timber for building, and for fencing in of their ground, provided, that they are not to fall any fencing stall within a quarter of a mile of the pasture fence.

"They are to be freed from all towne charges for the lands, houses, four oxen, and six cows and four calves, each of them such a quantity, during the space of seven years, begun in 1649; also they have liberty to keep swine.

"For and in consideration of all the aforesaid privileges, granted by the town of Rowley to the aforesaid Robert, John, and William, and their heirs and assigns, they have covenanted with the same towne, for themselves, their heirs and assigns, sufficiently to look to the herd of cattle, that the towne of Rowley shall put into the pasture during the time of seven years. Provided the cattle be two years old and upward. Provided, also, the town shall give them 2s. by the day, for so much time as they shall spend about looking to said pasture."

"2d. The said Robert, John, and William doth covenant with the towne to provide convenient diet and lodging, at different times, to any that the towne shall send to keep any herd there."

These were great privileges,—*i. e.* to each, forty acres of upland and twenty acres of meadow; right of commonage to each for twenty head of cattle, with liberty to fence the same; liberty for each to build a tenement, with license to cut timber for building and fencing, and to cut firewood for family use; license for each to cut a thousand pipe-staves yearly, for seven years; exemption from town taxes for seven years, for lands, houses and fourteen head of cattle each, as specified; and liberty to keep swine. In consideration of all which, they covenanted to look sufficiently to the herd of cattle, of two years and upwards, that for the space of ten years the town shall put into the pasture. But for such care, they were to be paid at the rate of two shillings a day, according to time expended. And they agreed at all times to board any persons the town should see fit to send as herd-keepers. The restriction as to number of tenements, was doubtless intended to exclude any claim for allotment of additional commonage to other tenements.

The privilege of cutting one thousand pipe-staves each, annually for seven years, was a valuable one. Pipe-staves were becoming an important article of commerce with the West Indies and elsewhere. The town of Haverhill at times passed special rates, allowing the householders to cut pipe-staves, but not within two miles of the house-lots.

After some years William Wilde sold out his lands to the Haseltines, and to George Hadley, and went to Ipswich, where he died in 1662. John and Robert Haseltine were brothers. John was probably married



before coming to America. He had children before removing to Merrimac Lands.

Robert and Ann Haseltine, were married at Rowley in 1639, being the first marriage of the town. They had nine children, some born before, more after coming to the Merrimac.

John Haseltine had been made a "Freeman" in Rowley in 1640, and must therefore have been a church member, as the law then was. But his name does not appear later among the Bradford church members, and it is therefore thought that he removed over the river to Haverhill, and was Deacon John Haseltine of Mr. Ward's church.

A house-lot was laid out to John Haseltine in Haverhill about 1650, so that he did not personally remain very long in Bradford, if the above conjecture is correct. But he was represented here by a son or sons.

In 1643, at the first survey, house lots had been laid out to John and Robert Haseltine on Holmes Street, and to William Wilde on Bradford Street, in old Rowley.

The Haseltines have always been numerous and respectable, both in Bradford and Haverhill. But the original Haseltines who came over the seas with Rogers, though doubtless hardy and vigorous men, were probably illiterate. John could not write his name.

The Bradford land originally laid out to the Haseltines and Wilde, includes the west half of the village. "The lower corner" of this tract "is where the road turns by Jacob Kimball's." "Their meadow land is well known to this day as the Haseltine meadow." In 1658 Joseph Jewett had laid out to him the whole of Bradford Neck. One Glover settled near the cove by Lafayette Day.

In 1671, the following lots were laid out below the farm of Glover:

To	In right of	Rods wide at the river.
" Joseph Chaplin,		35 acres 11½
John Simmons,	Widow Cooper,	42 " 12
Abraham Foster,	John Bortman,	37 " 12
John Simmons,	Thomas Palmer,	36 " 14
John Simmons,	Wm. Wilde and another,	46 " 2
John Simmons,	Hugh Smith,	38 " 12
Jonathan Hopkinson,	Michael Hopkinson,	32 " 14
Samuel Boswell,	Wm. and John Boynton,	53 " 21½
James Dickinson,	Thomas Dickinson,	57 " 23
Deacon Jewett,	John Spoforth,	95 " 31½
Mrs. Kimball, Boston,	{ John Remington { and Geo. Kilborn,	102 " 30
{ James Canada and { James Barker, Jr.,	{ James Barker and { William Stickney,	141 " 33½
John Boynton,	{ William Seales and { Richard Woom,	93 " 26 "

These were the first settlers above the village, and their lots took in the land between Head's Hill and the Haseltine farm. Four lots were laid out below the village in the same year:

To	In right of	Rods wide at the river.
" John Watson,	Thomas Abbott,	59 acres 11
Widow A. Mighill,		215 " 72
Thomas Kimball, (number of acres not known).		
Widow Ann Hobson,		260 " 44 "

This Thomas Kimball was killed May 3, 1676, during King Philip's War, by the three notorious Praying Indians, Symon, Andrew and Peter. Kimball lived on the road leading from what is now South Groveland to Boxford. The story is that the Indians were on the way to kill somebody at Rowley who they fancied had injured them; but finding the night too far spent, turned aside and sacrificed another instead. Something can be learned of Symon the leader, in the accompanying sketch of Haverhill. Thomas Kimball's wife and five children were carried away captive by Symon and his gang, but were afterwards set at liberty and permitted to return, though, it is said, the influence of Wannalancet, chief of the Pennacooks and steadfast friend of the white men, who, in 1677, retired to Canada. After her return from captivity, the widow Mary Kimball petitioned the General Court to protect her from the ruffian Symon, who had threatened to kill her and her children if she ever went back to her house. In October the court abated her taxes.

The Rogers and Phillips grants beyond Johnson's Creek are said to have been largely taken up by the numerous Hardys and Parkers. The lots at the east were very long and narrow, fronting upon the river and extending back several miles in some cases.

Of the allotments of lands, Dr. Perry wrote in 1820: "This town was at first laid out in lots running from the river to what is now called the Rowley line. These lots were of different widths, but the boundaries of most of them are easily discoverable by the course of the fences. And a sufficient number of them are still in the possession of the descendants of the first inhabitants to give any one much acquainted in town an idea sufficiently accurate of the places where the first people lived and the land they occupied." And the excellent doctor repeats "their names in order, beginning at the east end of the town." But it may be doubted whether at this day there would be much profit in attempting to give the list, save for the purpose of showing the method of division of lands. Even seventy years ago, some of the Christian names were uncertain. To recreate with accuracy the original land allotments, would be a task requiring patience, keenness and accuracy which few men possess.

It appears that, according to tradition, John and William Hardy were brothers, who came to America in the family of Governor Winthrop, as laborers, who, not finding employment for them, gave them at first land at Ipswich, which not suiting them, he permitted their removal to Bradford and obtained lands for them here.

Bradford, in its full proportions, was about eight miles long and three wide, containing about ten thousand acres.

The soil is generally very good. In 1820 there were still considerable quantities of salmon, shad,





bass, sturgeon, alewives and other fish in the Merrimack and its tributary waters, which, in the spring, were taken largely in seines. It could then be said, "the salmon caught here are esteemed the best of any taken in the waters of the northern states, and often fetch from seventy-five cents to a dollar a pound in the market in Boston. The quantity of fish is at present much less than formerly." In 1888 a fine river shad or salmon is a novelty.

March 23, 1808, a young gentleman of Haverhill, who kept a scrap-book, made this entry in it: "Seventeen hundred Bass were caught at one Hawl in Merrimack River, at the ferry way in Bradford." But it is to be feared neither the Fish Commissions nor societies for the protection of fish and game, will ever bring back those days of plenty.

For more than a century after the settlement of the town the principal reliance was upon the cultivation of the soil. In the eighteenth century there were many large orchards of apples, peaches, pears and plums. Dr. Perry, who, in 1820, had not yet entered into the temperance movement, seems to lament that there was not so much good "Arminian cider" made as formerly. This was so called in sportive allusion to the theological views of the first pastor of the East Parish Church, Rev. William Balch, himself a noted raiser of fruit.

In the eastern part of the town, traces of mineral wealth, as iron, coal and lead, were early discovered, but they never materialized to any useful extent. There were chalybeate springs, impregnated with iron, and there was an abundance of peat, formerly considerably used for fuel. From 1790 to 1820 the quantity of wood rather increased than diminished, and at the latter date the experiment of sowing acorns and walnuts for tree-raising had begun. Probably, at the present time, the quantity of standing wood is also increasing, as is the case almost everywhere in Essex County.

In 1820, farmers still highly prized the salt hay which they brought, in the season, by the river from the marshes near the sea; and its value in the enrichment of the land is dwelt upon by that keen observer, Dr. Perry, who takes occasion also to recommend the use of plaster of Paris, of which David How, of Haverhill, had made such profitable employment, at Golden Hill, on his great farm in East Bradford, and elsewhere.

Before the Revolution, there had been little trading in this town. There may have been a store in each parish, near the respective meeting-houses, where a few indispensable articles of groceries and hardware could be obtained. Moses Parker is said to have had the first store of any importance, which was in the East Parish. He kept a great variety of merchandise, exchangeable for country produce, and had considerable trade in New Hampshire. This may be supposed to be the same Moses Parker who, for some years after 1770, carried on successfully the

manufacture of tobacco. In the early part of the present century there were quite a number of stores in the East Parish, where it was possible to obtain upon "good terms" most of the articles required in common life. Probably the inhabitants of the Upper Parish (now Bradford) always carried their trade largely to Haverhill, where there was from an early day considerable pretension to cosmopolitanism, as we are informed by Mrs. Emery, of Newbury, in her interesting "Reminiscences of a Nonagenarian."

Ship-building was begun by Mr. John Atwood, of Boston, in 1720. It is now a lost art.

Shubael Walker began tanning in the Upper Parish, soon after the settlement of the town. But in Dr. Perry's time that manufacture had concentrated itself in the East Parish, whence also it has now vanished.

The manufacture of straw, chaise-making, coopering, the making of chocolate, brass and pewter buckles, bricks, sleigh-bells, twine and thread, and various other things, were attempted with greater or less success at different times, but were all ultimately abandoned.

Greater success has attended the development of the valuable water-power of Johnson's Creek, "the greatest and, indeed, the only considerable means for water-works in this town, and it has been considerably improved for this purpose, for on it have stood, or are now standing (1820), four saw-mills, five grist-mills, three fulling-mills, two bark-mills." The first of these was a grist-mill, set up by Edward Carleton, the first person born in Rowley, or his father, probably about the year 1679. From that time on, saw and grist-mills were erected in different parts of the town. The descendants of Rowley, with their Yorkshire traditions, recognized the value of the Johnson's Creek power for cloth-making. Dr. Perry, with his wonted practical sagacity, adds,—"I take this opportunity to observe that though much use is made of the water of Johnson's Creek, yet a much more considerable advantage might be derived from it. Several mills more might, with perfect convenience stand upon it." He suggests a carding-mill and another saw-mill.

"Indeed, it would be easy to show how enterprising individuals might get wealth, and the community be better served, by enlisting in their service, the force of this water, which God, in his goodness, causes to flow down this stream for the use of men."

The excellent clergyman did not live to see the great development of the water-power upon his favorite stream at South Groveland, by that able manufacturer, the late Mr. Hale. Mr. Hale was connected with the East Parish by marriage, and may have heard the old minister descant upon the prospective value of Johnson's Creek. He was a man who did not need much prodding in the direction of money-making. He was eminently keen and hard-headed.





Daniel Hardy, afterwards of Pelham, N. H., began to make shoes about 1760. He sent them to Portsmouth. Thomas Savory and Nathaniel Mitchell afterwards carried on the business extensively, sending their shoes to the Southern States and to the West Indies. About the time of the French Revolution Moses Savory and Mr. Gage entered upon the same business, and after that time shoemaking became "one of the most important articles in the business of this town."

In 1820 Dr. Perry could say: "Large quantities of shoes are manufactured here, and sent to the Southern and Middle States, the West Indies, etc. About one hundred and fifty men are constantly employed in this business, besides many who employ the winter in it, who, it is supposed, make fifty thousand pairs of shoes and boots yearly."

It is a curious circumstance, brought to light by Mr. Ordway, that when the town, March 3, 1775, sympathetically sent its contribution, through a committee composed of Abraham Parker and two others, to the sufferers by the Boston Port Bill, it forwarded "the small sum of £19 4s. 5d. in cash, together with thirty-four pair of shoes."

In 1792, Samuel Tenney, and soon after Uriah Gage, Timothy Phillips and William Tenney, were engaged in the manufacture of shoes in Bradford. Their markets were in Boston, Salem, Newburyport and Portland. They at first carried their goods to market on horseback. Shoes were largely sent to Salem, and thence shipped to the South and the West Indies. They began to be sold on commission in Georgetown, Philadelphia and elsewhere. From 1815 to 1837 the shoe manufacture of Bradford was important. But after the railroad reached Haverhill, in 1837, the Bradford manufacturers, before enterprising and successful within the limits of their own town, began to remove their establishments to Haverhill. In 1876 the centennial orator enumerated, as among the leading manufacturers of Haverhill, the following residents of Bradford: L. Johnson & Co., A. L. Kimball, John B. Farrar, Warren Ordway, Alfred A. Ordway, S. W. Hopkinson, Peter E. Pearl and John F. Merrill.

In 1882 the names of Montgomery, Hoyt, Johnson, Ordway, Webster, Sawyer, Farrar, Kimball, Day, Waldo, Merrill, Ford, Carleton, Durgin, Pearl, Toun and Hopkinson, were stated as among those who had been or were successful manufacturers and resident in Bradford.

The free bridge between Haverhill and Bradford, latterly the extension of the Haverhill and Groveland horse railroad to Bradford, made it easy and pleasant for large numbers of people to do business or find employment in the former town, whilst residing here. The building of a second bridge from the upper part of the village of Bradford to the manufacturing district of Haverhill, somewhat agitated within a few years, is probably only in abeyance at

the present time. Increase of population and assured business would revive the demand with increased force. The course of things during the last few years, however, has not been favorable to expensive schemes of this character. The manufactories which improved railroad and other facilities concentrated thirty or forty years ago have, to a limited extent, been dismantled or quiescent during the last few seasons, whilst goods have been made in small towns here and there throughout the country. Of course, these conditions are counter to all recognized and familiar laws of trade, and can only be accounted for by exceptional circumstances, as labor disturbances or the apprehension of them. These problems will gradually work themselves out, like all others connected with the interests and progress of civilized man. Local pride and attachments, combined with the attractions of unsurpassed beauty of situation and natural wholesomeness of surroundings, will, it may reasonably be hoped, secure the continued prosperity of these two interesting communities so long living together in substantial friendship.

While the very great advantages of Bradford, as a place of residence, preserve and even augment its population by a healthful increase, it is not to be overlooked that there are also facilities connected with its situation in reference to the Merrimac River, and the parallel transportation system of the Boston and Maine Railroad, which are susceptible of great expansion by the application of business capital and energy. On the bank, between the railroad and the river, are already a large hat factory, an extensive coal and lumber yard, a large and successful paper mill and other enterprises.

Whether the two communities, which in 1869 and 1872 could not vote together "to form a more perfect union," will ever be legally consolidated, it were quite useless to discuss in this place. As Dr. Kingsbury happily observed in reference to the early friendship and intercourse between the towns: "The frequent visits to and fro have already begun that long friendship which, whatever names men may call them by, will make them one forever."

## CHAPTER CLXVI.

### BRADFORD—(Continued).

*The Town is Erected—The Church is Built*

IN one respect, old Rowley village appears to great advantage in comparison with many other towns of large territory and far-off, outlying settlements. The towns, or leading individuals who controlled their policy, loved power and hated to relinquish it. They dreaded to be diminished in importance. For a vari-



ety of reasons, as greater protection, development of the country, increase of trade and population, the young and adventurous were encouraged to go out into the wilderness, cut down the great trees and subdue the soil. If they were successful, as of course they almost invariably were, they soon had numerous young people growing up around them. They were too far away to go to school or to meeting. The mothers sighed as they remembered the privileges of their own youth in the older settlements or in dear old England, and saw their children growing up in ignorance and without the privileges of the sanctuary. Through their influence, and the fathers' sense of duty to their children, there began to be agitations in the town-meetings for the setting off of parishes and the building of new meeting-houses. But the outlying settlers were scattered and could not concentrate their influence. The residents of the central portion of the town, who knew each other well, and were in the habit of working together, almost always came off victorious, and sent them home discomfited, year after year.

Thus discontents were roused, and heart-burnings fostered. The only remedy was repeated trial, or an appeal to the General Court. That was expensive, and, to the rude, simple pioneers, seemed like starting for another world. Nobody in the remote districts was likely to know much about public business, or have any great aptness for transacting it. Besides, there was no opportunity to learn how. The village magnate, very likely a well-to-do trader, monopolized the offices. He was accustomed to visiting the shire-town—the capital. He could "afford" to go. Sometimes, however, the woodsmen learned the craft of the villagers and beat them with their own weapons—by union, combination or log-rolling. This was the case at Haverhill. The parishes combined were too strong for the central village, with all its wealth and trade, and array of professional men.

But in Rowley old town there was not so much of this selfishness and love of power exhibited as in many other towns. Thus we read that in 1669 the town voted that the inhabitants of Rowley village—Boxford—shall pay taxes like the other freemen, but may apply them, first to village expenses, and next to improve the minister's farm. Similar kindness was extended towards the dwellers on the Merrimac lands. Thus, when they went to the General Court in 1668, to talk about being set up as a separate town, instead of being confronted by fierce and relentless opposition, they were treated in a kind and considerate manner, with encouragement:

"In answer to the petition of the inhabitants of Rowley, living over against Haverhill, the Court having considered the petition, perused the town of Rowley's grant to the petitioners, heard Rowley's deputy, and also considering a writing sent from Rowley, with what els hath been presented in the case doe find that there is liberty granted to the petitioners by the town of Rowley to provide themselves of a minister and also an intent to release them from their township when they are accordingly provided, and therefore see not but this court may grant

their petition to be a township provided they doe gett and settle an able and orthodox minister and continue to maynteyne him or else to remain to Rowley as formerly."

The providing a suitable minister and making provision to support him was, in the Puritan polity, a condition precedent to the erection of a parish or the incorporation of a town. Not only to prepare thus for the spiritual needs of the people, and so to forward one of the capital ends for which the founders had forsaken the land and Church of England, but also because the accomplishing of these things tended towards stability and permanence in the community. Whatever faith he is of or of no faith, the wise statesman will always recognize that the churches, with their organization and their work, are, in a land like ours, the strongest bulwark of the State.

Provision had already been made by anticipation on the "Lands," for the commencement of this great work. We have seen that the clerical pioneer of Bradford, Mr. Rogers, was a warm friend of Minister Zechariah Symmes, of Charlestown. Mr. Rogers had just passed to the exalted seat he had assigned himself; but doubtless he had been already consulted as to the organization of the new church and had pointed out the son of his old friend, just now eligible.

The elder Symmes, himself the son of a minister, was born at Canterbury, England, in 1599. He came to New England in 1634, in the same ship with Ann Hutchinson, and died in Charlestown in 1676. His son, Zechariah, born at Charlestown in 1637, graduated at Harvard, the first scholar of his class, in 1657. He was afterwards a fellow of the college. He had preached at Rehoboth (Pawtucket) from 1661 to 1666, and came to Bradford to preach in 1667. He was thus thirty years of age, and must have been in the maturity of his powers.

The father had been a man of great physical endurance, and his auditors must have needed a great deal also. Johnson recorded of him that on one occasion "he continued in preaching and praying four or five hours." Said the Scotch minister, when asked if he were not much fatigued after a similar effort: "Na, na, I waur as fresh as a daisy. But ye sud hae seen how tired the folk waur!"

Mr. Symmes, of Bradford, was a man of large stature. He was a man of learning and piety; much respected. He lived forty years in Bradford, dying here March 22, 1707. When his first wife died, he married the Widow Dalton, born Mehitable Palmer, of Haverhill. Before his coming, the people on the lands had doubtless worshipped at Haverhill, and enjoyed the ministrations of the excellent Mr. Ward. They were therefore exceptionally fortunate.

For two years Mr. Symmes preached in a house or barn—perhaps sometimes in the open air, like Mr. Ward in the beginnings of Pentucket. Mr. Symmes could not administer the sacrament, because he had not been ordained. For this reason, most of the Bradford people at this time were members of the





Haverhill church and probably crossed over with the pastor on communion days, although Dr. Kingsbury thinks Mr. Ward may have crossed to Bradford sometimes to administer the sacred elements.

The Haverhill people entreated them hospitably. In town-meeting in 1669 they made choice "of Andrew Greely, Sr., to keep the ferry at Haverhill; provided that he agree and will carry over the inhabitants of the town, and the inhabitants of the town of Merrimack over against us, for three pence an horse, and a penny a man; and that he will carry all ministers over free that come upon visitation to us, and in particular Mr. Symes; and that if the inhabitants of the town over against us do come over to meet with us on the Sabbath days, they shall have free use of the ferry boat, or boats, for the occasion, without paying anything." Dr. Kingsbury wrote of the return of Mr. Symmes and his people over the ferry after communion: "I have thought if our ears were sufficiently acute we might catch, from the breezes on the river, the faint echo of the psalms they sung as they returned with devout and grateful hearts from the table of the Lord." One of the old diarists, whose entries make events life-like, wrote in his little book: "Returning from Andover, I crossed ye ferry; heard them sing well upon ye water."

The first meeting-house was built in 1670, and was probably a rude log house, like that at Pentucket—a wealthier plantation. It must have been of pretty good height, for in 1690 they built a gallery in it. We have seen that John Haseltine had given a lot for a meeting-house and burying-place. That was the old burying-ground on the road to the present Groveland. The meeting-house stood in the west corner of the lot and the dead were buried in the rear. The pound was located in another corner when the town voted, January 5, 1685, to build one the next spring, with gate, lock and key.

The first house in the town had been built near the same spot—the site of the first meeting-house at the old burial lot. August 17, 1681, when Mr. Symmes' wife died, the town chose a committee to state a burial-place "for his own proper use, according to Mr. Symmes' desire." That was on the east of the burial lot.

The first school-house was built upon the same site, which, as was customary, was the political centre of the town, dedicated to all public uses. This first school-house was twenty-two feet long, eighteen feet wide and seven feet posts.

Of course, the building of the meeting-house, and, indeed, all matters about the prudentials of the church, were town matters and ordered in the town-meetings, so long as there was only one parish. April 18, 1670, a committee, of which "Sargent" Gage was chairman, was chosen "for the ordering, setting up and furnishing of a meeting-house according to their best discretion for the good of the town."

January 9, 1671, Robert Haseltine, Ensign Chan-

dler and Shubal Walker were chosen to carry on the work and given power to call upon the inhabitants to come to aid "with hands or teams after legal warning," or in case of refusal, "then to pay double wages to be recovered by distress."

January 29, 1671, "at a general town-meeting," an agreement was made with Samuel Haseltine "to sweep the meeting-house one whole yeare," "and for his pains" he should have of every householder and voter "one peck of Indian corn, which is to be brought to his house."

As soon as Mr. Symmes was received as minister, and at the first town-meeting of which there is a record, not legal because the town was not yet incorporated but held with the kindly license of good Mother Rowley, the selectmen were directed to "finish the Minister's house according to Mr. Symmes' direction and to raise the pay by rate."

Persons were selected to procure his firewood, and to set fences about his house.

The first year he received forty pounds and the next fifty, which appears to have been fixed as his salary, until he was ordained, some years after. Half of this was to be paid in wheat, pork, butter and cheese, the other half in malt, Indian corn or rye. One writer inquires what the minister wanted with so much malt. But at that time, when everybody drank beer, malt was not only a staple article, but current in barter anywhere. The Harvard College accounts show that the students' bills were often paid in malt, in whole or in part.

The provision for payment in butter and cheese in part was rather an unusual one, and indicates a goodly number of milch cows in the town. In 1669 the town gave Mr. Symmes forty acres of common land at Indian Hill. And for many years it was customary to appoint a committee yearly to see that the minister's work was done, and to attend to such things as he might have need of. Indeed, as Dr. Perry observes, "provisions for the full and respectable enjoyment of religion, and for the comfort of those who ministered to them in holy things, formed a very prominent trait in the character of the first settlers in this town."

In 1699 the town voted that there should be an amendment of the disorder of persons sitting in the meeting-house. Five shillings was fixed as a penalty for every day of failure to sit where directed.

The next year rules were prescribed to the selectmen to guide them in seating persons. They were to have respect, first, to age; second, to voters; and third, to length of residence. The Massachusetts Senate still seats its members according to certain rules of a similar character.

In the second church, the people above sixty years were seated according to age, others according to the tax or rate paid. The men sat on one side, the women on the other. In this, as in other towns, special votes were often passed, giving certain seats to par-



ticular individuals, as, 1711-12, "voted that Goodman Spofford has liberty to sit in fourth sete before the pulpit, and his wife to sit in the third sete in the North East corner." Deafness or other infirmity often furnished the occasion for special seating privilege.

Lastly, children were seated by themselves, within reach of the tythingman's rod, to prevent disorder.

The hour for morning worship was as early as eight or nine o'clock. People who were tardy in arriving were to be fined.

In front of the pulpit sat the ruling elders, and before them the deacons, both facing the congregation.

The elders gave out the psalms, line by line, to be sung.

In the early days of the Massachusetts colony, sermons were not read from manuscript. That was too formal—too much like the rectors in England. The hour-glass stood before the minister, and when he had preached an hour he gave it another turn, if he were not done. Dr. Kingsbury says the sermons in Bradford Church were not very long, judging from the specimens preserved.

Simple reading of the Scriptures was not tolerated in the early day from the pulpit. It must be accompanied with comment or explanation otherwise it was too much like the Mass, singing or saying by rote.

The General Court had ordered, in 1677, that the selectmen in towns should appoint tythingmen to keep order on the Sabbath, and also to arrest such as violated it, as by unnecessary traveling. In the early part of this century a vigorous attempt was made in Essex and Middlesex Counties to revive the old law and restrain traveling.

The late venerable Samuel Hoar, of Concord, a Puritan in conduct, though liberal in doctrine, was much interested in this movement. His distinguished son, Senator Hoar, relates: "It is said that an old farmer in one of the northern towns of Middlesex County was looking, in melancholy mood, at the devastation in his woodland, made by the great September gale of 1815, when he suddenly exclaimed, 'I wish this tornado had come last Sunday!' 'Why so?' was asked. 'Because I should have liked to see as it came along up through Concord, whether Sam Hoar would have tried to stop it.'"

Notwithstanding what Dr. Kingsbury says of the brevity of Bradford sermons, the following vote is significant:

"Jan. 30, 1723. The Church voted, that they, having considered that the sleeping at meeting, and especially the laying down ye head to sleep, is a very great indecency and irreverent position in ye worship of God—for ye preventing of it for ye future, have thought it expedient to pass a vote, and accordingly agree that it shall henceforth be accounted an offense for any of ye Brethren of this church, or any of ye communicants, to put themselves into such an irreverent position as to lay their head on their hands, or seat, and that if any shall do so, they shall be observed and reproved, and that if they reform not, that they shall be publicly called forth before ye church stayed for that end, and admonished for such their offensive carriage."

In 1818 a vote passed unanimously in the East Parish, recommending to all to go into the meeting-house during the tolling of the bell on days of public worship, and to make as little noise as practicable in moving the falling seats. The last occasion was a great opportunity for mischievous boys.

January 7, 1672, "it was voted and granted that ye Towne name shall be Bradford." It was formerly supposed that the name was adopted in compliment to Governor Bradford, the historian of Plymouth. But among the original proprietors of Bradford were five families named Chaplin, Palmer, Smith, Dickenson and Jewett, to whom house-lots had before been laid out on Bradford Street, in the village of old Rowley. Tradition said these families came to America from Bradford, in the West Riding of Yorkshire, England. The names of Maximilian Jewett and Joseph Jewett have been found in the register of Bradford Church. They, doubtless, then came from Bradford, Yorkshire. Joseph Jewett owned, at one time, a large tract of land in our Bradford, and Shubael Walker and Robert Haseltine, early settlers, were his sons-in-law. Shubael Walker was the first town clerk, and it seems a very reasonable conjecture that, aided by his position, he influenced the townspeople to change the name from Merrimack.

Bradford was incorporated in 1675.

The religious or church history of Bradford is, in at least one respect, unique—in the long and remarkable course of preparation which was deemed necessary before the formal organization of the Church. The minister or teacher, Mr. Symmes, was of mature years, as we have observed, when he came to Bradford, and had been in charge of another church for a number of years. There were a sufficient number of professed Christians in the town, members of the Rowley, Haverhill and other churches. They prized the sacraments, which Mr. Symmes could not administer till he was ordained. In the meantime, the people, as has been seen, were able to support their minister and did support him. They had built a sufficient meeting-house, which, in fact, satisfied them for many years. Why, then, was there such an unaccountable delay—from 1668, at least, till 1682? Mr. Ward, of Haverhill, indeed, was absent from the council called to advise as to the organization of a church. Dr. Kingsbury suggests that his "absence may possibly be the key to the understanding of the reason why there was so much question about the propriety of forming the church. A large majority of these Bradford people are members of his church. It is possible that he wished to have nothing to say about the matter." But that seems hardly a sufficient or suitable reason for his absence or apparent indifference. The Haverhill Church had indeed extended a grateful hospitality to these stray sheep of other folds; but that would seem to be no reason why they should not be gathered together under the care of their own peculiar and suitable shepherd. New





churches were constantly forming in those days of rapid growth. In Boston and elsewhere, there were already many such examples. The time was not quite yet, but in its fulness, there would be many dowered daughters of the fruitful Haverhill church itself. The venerable Ward, of all men, would seem to have been peculiarly *the* man to give his blessing and good speed to these brethren and sisters, so long under his care, and now apparently especially called to set up a tabernacle for themselves, and be ready for greater activity and usefulness. But steps were taken with extraordinary gravity and self-searching:

"Jan. ye 11, 1781, the town chose a committee to advise and consult and act what in their best judgment they shall think mete for ye good of ye town as to ye settling ye Rev. Zechariah Symmes in office." Mr. Symmes himself was chairman of this committee. And on the same day the committee was given full power to act in the premises.

On the same day, also, in pursuance, no doubt of his own request, it was voted that Mr. Symmes "have liberty, at his discretion, to call out any two men of the inhabitants of ye town to be with him in catechising ye youth, and to go with him to see who of ye heads of families or others will join to ye church." At a private fast held at the house of Brother John Tenney, October 12, 1682 (many months after the preliminary steps above detailed), "an instrument of pacification and mutual obligation to church union and order for ye future" was drawn up and signed by the professing Christians present, who call it a "preparatory help toward the gathering of a church in Bradford."

It is an extraordinary instrument, well worthy to be reproduced whenever any attempt is made to tell the story of Bradford. It will be observed that it clearly alludes to past discords and disturbances. But Dr. Kingsbury says: "It is impossible to know what the differences were which are so freely confessed." The instrument was not signed by the women, because that was not yet customary. Their not signing certainly was not extraordinary in this case, because long afterwards, when the second parish church was formed (Groveland) the women did not take part, but were received into the church after its organization.

"We whose names are subscribed, being awfully sensible that we live in an age wherein God hath, in part, executed that dreadful threatening to raise plagues from the earth, and wherein Satan, that great makebake and author of confusion doth, by God's permission, exceedingly rage, even in the visible Church of God, and wherein that wicked one is sowing ye tares of discord, almost in every Christian society (ye sad effects of which, we that are ye inhabitants of Bradford have for some years past experimentally felt and have yet ye bitter remembrance of) we being now, through ye rich and undeserved mercy of God in Christ Jesus, in the hopeful probability of settling a Church of Christ in Bradford, do take this occasion, as to express our hearty and unfeigned sorrow and lamentation for what unchristian differences have broken out among us to the dishonor of God's name, the grief of his Spirit, and to the obstructing of the work and kingdom of Jesus Christ, and to the hindering of our peace and edification, so also in the name of God, and by his gracious help, seriously and solemnly to engage and promise, for the future, to forgive and forget, to the utmost of our endeavors, all former unchristian animosities, distances, alienations, differences and contests,

private or more public, personal or social, that have arisen ever among or between us and others; to pass a general act of amnesty and oblivion on them all, and not to speak of them to the detraction of each other, at home in Bradford town, much less abroad in any other place; nor to repeat or revive them, unless called by scriptural rule, or lawful authority, to mention them for the conviction or spiritual advantage of each other. Besides we promise through the grace of God, that, in case God, in his most wise and holy providence, should permit any offences, for the future to break forth among us (which we desire God of his infinite mercy would prevent as far as may be for his own glory and our own good) that we will then conscientiously endeavor to attend to scriptural rules for the healing and removing of them, and those rules in particular, Lev. 19: 17, Matt. 18: 15; and to bring no matter of grievance against each other to our minister or to the Church, but in a scriptural and orderly way and manner. That we may be helped inviolably to observe this our agreement, we desire the assistance of each other's mutual both christian and church watch, that we may be monitors or remembrancers to each other of this branch of our covenant, as also the instant and constant prayers of each other, that God would enable us carefully to observe this instrument of our pacification and our conditional obligation to church union and order, that God's name may be honored by us and we may experience God's commanding his blessing upon us, even life forever more."

It seems to have been Mr. Symmes' custom to read this paper at intervals and ask renewed assent to it. This was done at a private fast, April 4, 1683. "At a private fast at my house," February 2, 1686; "at a private church fast at my house, December 22, 1698, (forefather's day), I read the above said instrument, there being but two of the males in full communion absent."

October 31, 1682, occurred the meeting of the council, called to advise whether a church should be formed. The council was composed of John Higginson of Salem, John Richardson of Newbury, William Hubbard, the historian, of Ipswich, John Hale, of Beverly, John Brock, of Reading, Mr. Symmes' brother-in-law, Edward Payson, the junior minister of the church at Mother Rowley, and Samuel Phillips, its senior pastor, progenitor of so much beneficence, public spirit and eloquence, of whose praises the world has been full.

In the guarded manner which was customary, clouding itself in scriptural language and allusion, the council returned an affirmative answer to the question, "whether minister and people should promote without delay, a coalition of themselves into a church society." The same council met, December 27th following, to complete the organization and ordain the pastor. The vote of the town by which it agreed to provide for Mr. Symmes' maintenance is very elaborate. The following is a part of it:

"We ye inhabitants of Bradford met together at a legal Town meeting, 13th of March, 1682 or 3, in thankfulness to God for his great mercy in setting up his sanctuary among us; do hereby engage our selves jointly and singly, and do engage our children after us as far as we may by our parental authority to endeavor to our, and their utmost power, to uphold ye faithful ministry of ye Gospel of Jesus Christ in the town of Bradford so long as we and they shall live, and for ye encouragement of the same to contribute a liberal and honorable maintenance toward it as the rule of ye Gospel doth require, to ye utmost of our and their ability which God shall be pleased to bless us and them with from time to time, and for ye encouragement of our present Minister we do covenant and promise to give and allow to him so long as he shall continue with us as our Minister ye full sum of sixty pounds per annum, if God be pleased to preserve us in our present capacity, and to be paid in our present state annually as followeth.





"Ye first half in wheat and pork, butter and cheese, allowing at least to ye half, one pound of butter for every milch cow, and one cheese for a family, ye other half to be in malt, peas, Indian or rye, except what he willingly accepts in other pay."

"The first payment to be made ye 2nd Thursday in October, ye other payment to be made ye 2nd Thursday in March, and if any unforeseen providence shall hinder: then to take ye next convenient day ye week following."

"We farther grant liberty to him to improve for his best advantage what land we shall accomplish, or obtain for ye Ministry."

It was agreed also that he should have commonage for ten head of cattle, sufficient fire-wood, he paying sixpence a cord for hauling, carting and cording it. It was, moreover, stipulated to furnish him with ten sufficient loads of good hay annually, fencing and yard stuff, "at a reasonable lay," and convenient highways to the several parcels of land they had given him, and to the five acres of meadow, and the forty acres of land "we bought of Benjamin Kimball," also two men from year to year to "the comfortable carrying on his affairs," and that all these things be duly and truly done without trouble to "our present minister." It was afterwards voted that no oil-wood, or poplar, or bass-wood, be brought to Mr. Symmes. Truly this was not only a liberal, but a generous and considerate provision. And there is ample reason to believe that the same tender and watchful care of their pastors has been very constantly extended by this church down to the present day. The history of the church is largely the history of the town.

Although the population is so largely increased, and although very many attend church and meeting in the larger town across the river, it is yet an important and significant fact that there is no other church organization and no other meeting-house in the town of Bradford, than that of the First Congregational Church. When Mr. Symmes grew old, about 1795, it was voted to engage some person to assist him. Mr. Hale was first invited and afterwards, Mr. Joseph Stevens, both of whom declined. Whilst such negotiations were in progress, Mr. Symmes died, and the usual pompous Latin inscription was cut upon his tombstone.

It so happened that just at this time, Zechariah Symmes' son, the Rev. Thomas Symmes, who had been preaching in the neighboring town of Boxford for some years, was leaving that people. He had been born in Bradford, in 1678, and graduated at Harvard in 1698. He had studied at Cambridge five years after graduating and had preached at Boxford five or six years, so that the Bradford folks must have been very familiar with him. He was now about thirty years old, nearly the same age as his laborious father when he came to Bradford. Perhaps, as often happens, he had not been quite appreciated in his birth-place. June 14, 1798, the town voted to hear him preach next, then a committee was chosen to go and invite him to "come and preach for some time," then "that he should be again invited," and at last, November 24, 1798, "Then voted and passed on the affirmative, that Mr. Thomas Symmes should be ordained with all possible speed."

This is not surprising, for Mr. Symmes, the second of Bradford, was a very interesting man. Increase Mather praised him, who had known him from his youth. He was attractive personally, from good looks, high spirit, accomplishments, varied learning, impetuosity. He had a fine voice, and was a good singer. He was hot-tempered and imperious, but was magnanimous and ready to confess a wrong. One may suspect he lived a good deal in extremes of high and low. When he preached the artillery election sermon, in 1720, which was printed, Rev. Dr. Colman, of Boston, wrote a preface to it, wherein he said: "May it prove as profitable in the reading as it was in the hearing; the preacher was unto us a very lovely song of one that has a pleasant voice and can play well on an instrument." The church records bear witness to his fervor. When there was any notable accessions to membership, he broke forth in praise and ascription to God in Latin phrase, which, perhaps, some of his people would have thought savored of the Romish priesthood and the mass: "*Soli Deo Trium, sit omnis Gloria! Laus Deo! Gloria Deo in Excelsis! Gloria Christo!*" With so much that was good, noble and pleasing, he was always in hot water, says his biographer; "he wanted prudence in the economy of his family and a kind, winning manner of address with his parishioners. With a better salary than his neighbors, he lived and died poor, and he likewise kindled a party spirit in both parishes where he was settled. One matter in dispute was concerning church music." In the last particular, Mr. Symmes was correct in point of taste and doubtless accomplished good, but was too hot and rash in his manner of pushing the controversy.

The church records bear traces of his masterfulness, as when it was decided to choose ruling elders, by which Mr. Symmes probably meant elders that he could rule,—"At length I left it to them to choose one for ye upper end of ye Town (having first declared that if they chose ye two aged Deacons, I should not comply with it, if they would have no more).

I then nominated for the East End, etc."

But when Mr. Symmes died, that good man, so opposite in character, Rev. John Brown, of Haverhill, who seems to have had a great admiration of him, preached his funeral sermon and wrote a very interesting account of him. He was buried in the old cemetery, doubtless in the lot chosen by his father, October 10, 1725. In the May before (8th) had befallen at Pigwacket the famous fight between Captain Lovewell's men and Paugus' party, in which four Haverhill men were engaged. Mr. Symmes had "improved" the occasion and preached a sermon, which was published, part of the title of which was "Historical Memorial on the Fight at Pigwacket." A few years ago a sudden controversy springing up, upon an antiquarian point, caused the sermon to be hunted up, and revived the memory of the Bradford minister.



To this brilliant man succeeded Rev. Joseph Parsons, born at Brookfield in 1701, who graduated at Harvard in 1720; was ordained at Bradford in 1726, and died here in 1765. There was an excellent council when he was settled, and a "Great Ordination." Mr. Parsons, too, had his days of glory, when he reached before the artillery company and the General Court.

He did not favor Whitfield's preaching, and was one of the ten Merrimac Valley clergymen who protested to the Boston ministers against his being admitted to the pulpit.

About the time of Parsons' settlement had come also the period when the people in the eastern part of the town, having grown populous, were no longer willing to go up to the west end to meeting. There does not seem to have been a great deal of friction, when it was recognized that the separation was inevitable. The East Precinct was incorporated June 17, 1726, and the church was organized June 7, 1727. One hundred and one members were dismissed to form it. With them went both deacons, and thirty-three members by the name of Hardy. Rev. William Balch was the first minister of the Second Church. He graduated at Harvard in 1724, was ordained in 1728 and died in 1792, aged eighty-eight years. He was able, simple, benevolent and beloved; but there was once (about 1741) a storm in his parish, when nine members of the church declared themselves dissatisfied with his preaching on doctrinal points, and appealed to a neighboring church when their own sustained the pastor. A council was called, which sustained Mr. Balch and the church. Then there was a pulpit warfare between Mr. Balch and the ministers of Ipswich and Beverly, in which Mr. Balch was thought to have sustained himself ably. The result of the council was signed by the moderator, Rev. John Barnard, of Andover. But Mr. Balch was accused of Arminianism, and had not Mr. Barnard also the same tendency? His sons, Edward Barnard (of Haverhill) and Thomas Barnard (of Newbury and Salem), as well as his son-in-law, Dr. Tucker (of Newbury), and Mr. Balch himself, were all Arminian. Of the First Church in Bradford, however, Dr. Kingsbury says: "It has been supposed that the churches in this valley suffered from false doctrine during the time of the pastorate of Parsons and Williams. It was not true of this church. The pastors were faithful in preaching the truth." Undoubtedly, they were Calvinistic.

When Mr. Balch was about seventy-five years old, Ebenezer Dutch, of Ipswich, graduated at Dartmouth in 1776, was ordained as his colleague in 1779. He was not a man of so much learning and culture as the earlier Bradford ministers, but he was very ready and taking of speech, and it has even been said of him that he had "impassioned eloquence."

He had the valuable but dangerous gift of extem-

poraneous speech. He was eccentric and imprudent in his conduct, and, at one time in his career, too much immersed in worldly matters. Tradition says he was fond of swapping horses; but Dr. Perry records that he repented and made a blessed ending: "He that repenteth and forsaketh his sin, shall find mercy." Mr. Dutch died in 1813, and then Dr. Perry himself was ordained September 28, 1814. Dr. Perry was not only a good minister, but a very useful citizen. His labors in behalf of agriculture, for instance, were marked, and it is believed he received a prize for an essay on tree culture. He was an early friend of advanced education, and gave much attention to the schools of the town.

Rev. David A. Wasson, a graduate of the Theological Seminary at Bangor, was ordained as colleague with Dr. Perry in 1851. Mr. Wasson was a man of keen and incisive mind and an original thinker. He had also a native and genuine independence; but he was an extreme radical, and had strayed far away from Calvinism. The result might easily have been foreseen. He was not in his proper place, unless he could carry all the people of his parish with him. That was impossible. There was a hot controversy. Mr. Wasson was unmasked, as it was probably called. He resigned, taking a portion of the people with him. The seceders had an independent society or free church, but that was not very successful, and Mr. Wasson soon retired from it. He has recently deceased. Not prosperous in life, he probably had more original power of mind than any other of the ministers of Bradford.

The East Parish built its first meeting-house in 1726, and its second in 1790.

There has been a marked difference in the characteristics of the two parishes of Bradford. The elder has been invariably prudent, conservative, consistent. The younger parish, disturbed by two great dissensions, in the time of Balch and the latter days of Perry, has not been so peaceful. There has been schism, separation. There has been a greater tendency to radicalism. But there has been always a good degree of intelligence. The two parishes were separated after two hundred years of municipal life. Groveland was incorporated March 8, 1850. The relations between the people of the two towns are believed to be entirely friendly. There are, of course, many ties of consanguinity and old friendship to unite them. But yet the separation was wise, and probably it is not regretted by any considerable number of persons in either place.

## CHAPTER CLXVII.

### BRADFORD--(Continued).

#### *Continued Story of Bradford Church*

THE fourth pastor of the First Parish was Rev. Samuel Williams, born at Waltham in 1743, graduated





at Harvard 1761, a distinguished mathematical scholar, and as such, sent with Professor Winthrop to Newfoundland to observe the transit of Venus. They sailed in the "Province Sloop," commanded by Captain Thomas Sanders. Samuel Williams was son of Wareham Williams, the minister of Waltham, who was carried off by the savages a captive, with his father, Rev. John Williams, of Deerfield, the little boy, Wareham, scrambling through three hundred miles of Indian trail. Young Williams was ordained at Bradford, November 20, 1765. He was, therefore, only twenty-two years of age, and, perhaps, was looked upon with scorn as a "boy" by some of the old ministers, who had been ordained late in life. Mr. Barnard, of Haverhill, who, though somewhat heterodox, was a man of great dignity of bearing, at the close of his address in giving the right hand of fellowship, seriously charged the congregation not to encourage tipsiness in the evening. "The wisest and best among us bitterly complain that our days of ordination are seasons of growing licentiousness."

Notwithstanding his youthfulness, Mr. Williams was, says Dr. Kingsbury, "eminently useful and acceptable as a minister." His reputation as a scholar brought him pupils who reflected credit upon him—among them, Dr. Barnard and Dr. Prince, the eminent minister of Salem. His most famous pupil, however, was Benjamin Thompson, better known by his title of Rumford, Count of the Holy Roman Empire, conferred on him by his patron, the King of Bavaria. Through him, his teacher, Mr. Williams, probably received German scientific honors.

The Revolutionary troubles were coming on and Mr. Williams, taking the popular side, was yet prudent and far-seeing. He appreciated the coming dangers. June 14, 1786, he was dismissed to become Professor of Mathematics and Natural Philosophy at Harvard. He received many literary and scientific honors, and, in his retirement, published a valuable history of Vermont.

For about forty years in the middle of the eighteenth century there were negro slaves on the roll of the Bradford Church—Casars, Seiscos, Pegs and Kates. One is "Argalus, servant of Joseph and Francis Parsons," the minister.

January 14, 1780, the church passed this vote to release Mr. Williams:

"Whereas the Pastor of this church, is invited and desired to accept of a Professorship in Harvard College which is of great importance to the public, therefore voted at his desire, to dismiss him from his Pastoral relation to this church."

June 5, 1781, Rev. Jonathan Allen was ordained his successor. He was of the class of 1774, at Harvard, and was thirty-two years old when ordained—thus redressing the balance which had been disturbed by his predecessor's youthfulness. He was a man of great personal dignity, with high ideas of the importance of the sacred office. He died in Bradford in 1827. Mr. Allen was known as the "parson," and was the

connecting link between the old *régime* and the new. He was fond of dress and was one of the last of the "cocked-hats," Parson Alden, of Yarmouth, at ninety-two, being the very last. Parson Allen was not so stern as he looked; he was jocose and loved a frolic. He loved a glass of punch or toddy, too. Dr. Kingsbury tells an amusing story of his modified advocacy of temperance. But that movement, partial as it was and logically absurd, perhaps accomplished great good in New England. Men were not yet quite ready for the doctrine of total abstinence.

It is said that Parson Allen used to love to call his deacon and go to John Haseltine's dance hall (father of Ann Haseltine Judson, the missionary), to see the young people dance and disport themselves. But, in 1806, there was a great revival, and from that time Parson Allen was a different man. The probability is, that he was always a conscientious man, with a high sense of clerical responsibilities, but with a great love of sociability and reasonable fun. He was evidently much liked and respected.

It illustrates one phase of his character, that when, at the first exhibition of Atkinson Academy, 1788-89, the pupils gave something of a dramatic exhibition, he criticised it as "profane and obscene." He had aspirations which he did not carry out. February 17, 1790, he dined with Parson Peabody, of Atkinson, whose first wife was a sister of Deacon John Haseltine, of Bradford. Parson Peabody wrote in his diary: "I sang with Brother Allen. He borrowed my Edwards upon ye hill, and I believe thinks of writing against Spring."

In the early days of Mr. Allen's pastorate the ministers were generally convivial and had a pretty good time. September 23, 1789, there was a "General Training at Bradford. I went into ye field where they were trooping and training. They made a very pretty appearance, but exercised but very little. There was a vast number of people and among them a number of ministers."

Parson Allen had been a theological pupil of Rev. Mr. Judson, of Taunton, uncle of Rev. Adoniram Judson, the missionary to India, who married Mr. Allen's formerly gay young parishioner, Nancy Haseltine. When, in 1819, the movement began in Bradford Church, at the General Association of Massachusetts, which led to the formation of the American Board, and the marriage of Nancy Haseltine and Harriet Atwood, of Haverhill, to Judson and Samuel Newell, Parson Allen was doubtless deeply interested. February 5, 1812, he preached a sermon at Haverhill on the occasion of the embarkation of these two young women as missionaries. "The great congregation sang his hymn beginning, 'Go, ye Heralds of Salvation.' Parson Allen's finest hymn was composed, Dr. Kingsbury says, in the revival of 1806, -

"Sinners, will you scorn the message,  
Sent in mercy from above?"

sung for the first time in Bradford Church, one of the



most pathetic and winning of all the hymns. Dr. Kingsbury alludes to the tradition that Whitefield could make his hearers weep by pronouncing the word, "Mesopotamia." It would be worth something at the end of one of the great revivalist's meetings to hear recited in that matchless voice,—

"Every sentence—oh, how tender!  
Every line is full of love."

After Mr. Allen came Rev. Ira Ingraham, a man of boldness and clear convictions, who retired speedily from the pastorate because of the opposition to his strong advocacy of total abstinence.

Rev. Nathan Munroe is well remembered as a man of grave appearance yet genial address, of large information, much respected by his people and the community at large.

The Bradford Church is still a Puritan Church, holding fast the old doctrines, if it adopts the modern ways. It embodies many of the precious historical memories of the town.

Mention has been made of the first meeting-house, built in the year 1671. The second was built about 1706. Both of these stood in the old burying-ground, the first on the west side, the other east of it. Dr. Spofford, of Groveland, who lived to be past ninety-two, remembered the foundation of the second.

The third meeting-house, built about 1750 or 1751, stood on the common facing the south in front of the present edifice.

The fourth was dedicated October 8, 1834, on the site of the present. The fifth, now occupied, was built in 1848, and dedicated January 10, 1849. There have been two chapels, the first built about 1838, located nearly on a line with the front of the present church and about twenty-five feet west. The second and present chapel was dedicated November 23, 1879.

The Bradford Church records contain much that is interesting, and some things that are quaint. Here are two examples from the time of the first Mr. Symmes. The first is of the date of 1699.

"1st, Whether any church member that hath or shall be censured by this church and absolved on confession, yet shall through Satan's energy refuse to own their confession, ought not, ipso facto, be suspended by ye officer from ye Lord's table, and continuing absent after due means patiently used for their conviction and recovery, to be layed under the highest censure."

The thought of the unhappy professor, who, having made confession and been absolved, is then obliged to deny his confession of sin, "through Satan's energy," is worthy of analysis by the gloomy intellect of Hawthorne. The following is almost too simple for a smile:

"I gave notice that every one of ye communicants should come prepared with their money to contribute for ye elements ye next sacrament day, viz., 11 of 12, 1709.

"It was moved that every Br. that fetcht wine, should fetch ye bottle where it was deposited, and return it to ye same place, i. e., seasonably. Br. Abraham, said the best way to sweeten ye bottle was to fill it with salt water an hour or two, then empty it, and put up the wine."

Following are the names of the eleven pastors, and the two "ruling elders" of Thomas Symmes:

#### *Pastors.*

- Rev. Zechariah Symmes, ordained December, 1682; died March 22, 1707.
- Rev. Thomas Symmes, installed December, 1708; died October 6, 1725.
- Rev. Joseph Parsons, ordained June 8, 1726; died May 4, 1765.
- Rev. Samuel Williams, ordained November 20, 1766; dismissed June 14, 1780.
- Rev. Jonathan Allen, ordained June 5, 1781; died March 6, 1827.
- Rev. Ira Ingraham, installed December 1, 1824; dismissed April 5, 1830.
- Rev. Loammi Eves Hooley, installed October 13, 1830; dismissed January 30, 1833.
- Rev. Moses C. Searle, installed January 30, 1834; dismissed March, 1834.
- Rev. Nathan Munroe, ordained February 10, 1836; dismissed January 25, 1851.
- Rev. James T. McCollom, installed January, 1854; dismissed September 20, 1866.
- Rev. John D. Kingsbury, installed January 11, 1866.

#### *Elders.*

Sergeant John Boynton and Deacon Samuel Tenny, chosen March 28, 1718.

#### *Deacons.*

- David Hasseltine and Richard Hall, not properly chosen deacons, but nominated to provide elements for the Lord's Supper, November 2, 1862.
- John Tenny, Joseph Bailey and Richard Hall, probably the first deacons, and chosen December 13, 1702.
- Lieutenant Samuel Tenny and Sergeant Richard Bailey, probably a committee only, but possibly deacons, February 2, 1713.
- Stephen Woodman and Moses Day, chosen January 24, 1718.
- Joseph Hall, chosen May 29, 1730.
- Thomas Carlton, chosen October 31, 1742.
- David Walker, chosen November 28, 1745.
- Moses Day, chosen May 1, 1761.
- Stephen Kimball, chosen January 18, 1764.
- Obadiah Kimball, chosen March 16, 1762.
- Thomas Kimball, chosen April 21, 1767.
- Thomas Webster, chosen —, 1782.
- Richard Walker, chosen April —, 1793.
- John Griffin, chosen February —, 1801.
- John Hasseltine, chosen June 18, 1807.
- Jesse Kimball, chosen April 8, 1826.
- William Day, Jr., chosen April 26, 1826.
- David C. Kimball, chosen July 2, 1840.
- Nathaniel Hatch and S. J. B. Spear, chosen August 31, 1860.
- William K. Farrar, S. W. Carlton and A. L. Kimball, chosen October 26, 1869.

The first Sunday-school in Bradford was organized on the second Sabbath in May, 1814, at the "Old Red School-House," then the only school-house in the central part of Bradford. About thirty children were gathered at this first Sunday-school at the close of the afternoon service. The person foremost in the organization was Miss Mary Hasseltine, eldest sister of Miss Abigail C. Hasseltine, afterwards principal of Bradford Academy. Among her assistants were Miss Charlotte Gage and Miss Lydia Kimball.

Rev. Ira Ingraham, installed in 1824, took a great interest in the Sunday-school. After April, 1830, Deacon William Day, Mr. Isaac Morse and Mr. Benjamin Greenleaf (probably) were superintendents. The number of scholars was then probably something more than one hundred.

The first Sunday-school concert recollected by Mr. Harrison E. Chadwick, was in the old meeting-house on the common. From 1825 to 1829, Bradford was





the only place in all New England reporting a Sunday-school, except some of the colleges. These reports were made to the American Sunday-School Union at Philadelphia. From 1833 to 1846 reports were made to the Massachusetts Sabbath-School Society; since 1850, to the General Conference.

In 1887 the Sabbath-school connected with Bradford Church contained about three hundred and fifty members. The amount of money contributed yearly for its own and benevolent purposes, was about \$300.

The Ward Hill school, in the west end of the town, was regularly organized in September, 1861. At present, it numbers about one hundred members, and contributes yearly about \$75 for its own expenses and benevolent objects. The original, with the Haseltine library, numbers about five hundred volumes.

The new parsonage of the Bradford Church was built in the summer of 1886, at a total cost, including the land, of \$6547.58.

The total membership of the church, January 1, 1887, was four hundred and seventeen. In 1886 it contributed for missionary objects, \$267.93.

The following societies were connected with the church for benevolent work: Woman's Auxiliary of Foreign Missions, of the American Home Missionary Society, and Home Missionary Society; Parish Circle for local work; Young Ladies' Relief Society; Bee Hive (children's) Society.

The total value given by the above societies in 1886, in money, clothing and supplies, was \$824.65.

## CHAPTER CLXVIII.

### BRADFORD—(Continued).

#### *Indians and the Indian Deed—Roads and Schools.*

BESIDES the killing of Thomas Kimball, in 1676, very little injury was ever done by Indians in the town of Bradford. When the Indian and French attack was made on Haverhill, in 1708, Nehemiah Carleton was shot from across the river. There was also a tradition that a workman employed in felling timber on the Haverhill side for the house then building, and owned in 1820 by Reuben Carlton, was also shot. But Bradford was protected from Indian attacks by Haverhill on the north and by the river. Still, there was always alarm and anxiety during the time of the Indian attacks, and Bradford soldiers had to march elsewhere. "Centinels" were stationed in the town itself.

There were three garrison-houses built at an early period, one of brick at the west end of the town, near the place where Rev. John Day's house stood in 1820. There was one where the parsonage was afterwards

built, opposite the burial-ground. The third garrison was where Widow Rebecca Foster's house was in 1820, and this was palisaded, when they apprehended danger. The inhabitants often passed the night in these houses. There was also a block-house on the neck, near the falls, where the inhabitants watched by turns, when there were alarms. The Indians sometimes crossed the river near that point, when on their forays.

"Once," said Dr. Perry, "there must have been a considerable settlement of Indians in this town, as is evident from the number of bones found in and about the hill near Paul Parker's. The last of those who resided here was Papahana, who lived to a great age, in a hut near the mouth of Johnson's Creek; the people of the last generation knew him well. The name of the tribe to whom this settlement belonged is supposed to be the Pawtucket." It is supposed that in 1638, Masconomet or Masconomo, was fully satisfied for quit-claiming all his interest in Ipswich and Rowley. But at the beginning of the eighteenth century, Samuel English and Joseph English, his grandchildren, and John Umpee, his nephew, claiming to be his heirs, made a fresh demand, and an elaborate deed of release to the lands of Bradford was executed by them in 1701 to John Tenny, Philip Atwood and John Bointon, for themselves and the other freeholders and proprietors of Bradford. The consideration was £6 12s. The deed was attested by Nathaniel Saltonstall and Dudley Bradstreet, the magistrates of Haverhill and Andover, respectively, and was duly recorded.

The first committee upon roads in Bradford were Sergeant John Gage, Joseph Pike and John Griffin; but no labor was expended or money raised for roads till long after this date. Although the Bradford people had so many ties connecting them with the mother town, the road from Haverhill to Rowley was not laid out till 1686. It was eight rods wide. But before there had been paths. At that early day every man wanted his own road, "to mill, to market and to meeting."

Every town had its mark assigned to it in the early day when cattle roamed at will, in the woods and over the commons. That of Bradford was a bow and arrow, the arrow penetrating the heart.

The first vote of the town upon schools, that is recorded was in 1701, when the selectmen were ordered to provide a school, according to their discretion, and to assess the town for the expense of the same. The next year it was voted that those who sent children to school should pay two pence a week for those who learned to read, and four pence for those who learned to write, the additional expense to be paid by the town. The person's name who then kept was Ichabod. Did Washington Irving borrow his Ichabod Crane from the Bradford town records? The next school-master was Master White, who began in 1723, and received £24 10s. per year. His successor





was one Hobey, who was followed by a Mr. Merrel. All these persons kept through the year, most of them for several years each. Dr. Perry thinks they were well qualified for school-keeping. But the master, without doubt, passed from one neighborhood to another.

The following is a copy of one of the town votes on the subject of education: "March 24, 1710. The town ded then Impoure the Selectmen to imply wemen to teach letel children to read."

The first school-house was built on the meeting-house lot, twenty-two feet long, eighteen feet wide, seven feet posts, to cost twenty-five pounds. The building committee were Jonathan Woodman, Sergeant Robert Haseltine and Nathaniel Walker. All sorts of structures were put up on the meeting-house lot. There was at least one "nooning-house" built, where the people could warm themselves in the noon intermission and eat the food they had brought with them.

In 1820 there were seven school-houses in six districts, in which were kept twenty-four months of school annually by men; in summer, good provision was made for the instruction of small children. May 20, 1754, the town voted "to ye school-master, for four months sarvice, £8 17s. 9d." "To Samuel Webster, for boardingsaid school-master one-third part of year, £4 10s. 8d." That was probably the allowance of men's instruction for one portion of the town.

September 19, 1754, "voted to pay Master Eames for keeping school one-third part of last year, £8 17s. 8d."

"Voted that forty pounds be raised for the school-master and his board."

"March 15, 1757, voted that the East Parish have five months' schooling in twelve for ye time being."

"March 16, 1761, voted to erect a school-house in ye centre of the town, as shall be found in ye following manner, viz.; from Newbury line to Andover line, and from Abraham Gage's to Samuel Hale's, and for money as shall be cast on the last town rate, and the vote passed in the affirmative."

"Voted that £13 6s. 8d. be raised to defray the charge of said building, £13 6s. 8d." "Voted that Lieutenant Thomas Kimball, Lieutenant Nathaniel Parker and William Easman be a committee to find and prefix a centre according to the manner above prescribed."

The committee were afterwards voted "three shillings a peic for that sarvice."

The cost of erection was more than was expected, for the committee were voted £17 18s. 3½d.

The above are examples of the ancient votes about schools, and are all that the record contains for the period covered by them.

June 7, 1805, the town accepted a report made by Moses Parker and others, a committee appointed for that purpose, for the better regulation of the town schools.

Dr. Perry's practical mind led him to suggest what, after long delay, was adopted everywhere: first, that school committees should be empowered to prescribe in all cases the books which should be used; secondly, that towns should furnish the necessary stationery to be used in schools.

At the beginning of the present century, when academies were springing up over New England, intelligent people began to be very uneasy in towns not so favored.

Thus in Bradford the following record explains itself: "At a meeting of a number of the inhabitants of the First Parish in Bradford, March 7, 1803, it was mutually agreed upon that a building should be erected for an academy, and the following persons became subscribers to defray the charges of building said house." The signers were a large majority of the heads of families in the parish. In three months the building was completed and the school was opened. The first principal was Samuel Walker, a native of Haverhill, and a graduate of Dartmouth College in 1802. Miss Hannah E. Swan was preceptor. The school was incorporated in 1804, with a charter conferring ample powers. After Mr. Walker, the preceptors were as follows: Samuel Greeley, 1803-4; Rev. Dr. James Flint, 1805; Rev. Dr. Abraham Burnham, who was much engaged in the great revival of 1806; Isaac Morrill, 1807; Samuel Peabody, 1808; Rev. Daniel Hardy, 1808-10; Rev. Luther Bailey, 1811; Hon. Samuel Adams, 1811; Richard Kimball, 1811-12; Rev. E. P. Sperry, 1812; Rev. Nathaniel Dike, 1812-14; Daniel Noyes, 1814; Benjamin Greenleaf, 1814-36, who was the last preceptor. After that time the school was established for the education of young ladies only, having previously been a mixed school.

There were thus, before Mr. Greenleaf gave the school some appearance of permanency, fourteen preceptors in a dozen years. No one of them, save Mr. Greenleaf, expected to make school-keeping a profession. There was therefore a lack of system and continuity in the service. Benjamin Greenleaf, a native of Haverhill, had graduated at Dartmouth College in 1813, and was engaged the same year in keeping school in his native town. He was certainly a very remarkable man, and made a deep impression upon all with whom he came in contact. Dr. Kingsbury says of him, justly and comprehensively: "A man of versatile talent, an enthusiast in teaching, a mathematician and author of world-wide fame, a Christian of simple and unquestioning faith and rigid virtue, a man of kindly susceptibilities, generous, unsuspecting, unalterable in friendship, a citizen pure, unselfish, upright, and a teacher devoted, upright and unwearied in labor." After retiring from the academy, Mr. Greenleaf was principal of the Bradford Teachers' Seminary till 1848.

Mr. Greenleaf was born September 25, 1786, and was descended from the Newbury family of that name.



His early opportunities for study were very meagre, and he once said: "If I ever offered up an earnest prayer, it was for rainy days that I might betake myself to books."

Chief Justice Perley, of New Hampshire, said of his old teacher: "He was an uncommon genius, in the sense of having peculiarities entirely his own, in the structure of his mind, the contour of his head and face, the expression of his countenance, his utterance, his manners, his motions, all his ways."

Mr. Greenleaf represented the town of Bradford in the Legislature in 1837, 1838 and 1839, where he earnestly supported all measures for the advancement of education, introducing orders for a geological survey and a natural history survey of the State. He was the author of many and valuable text-books.

Doubtless Bradford Academy was much indebted to him for the reputation it acquired during his term of service. Mr. Greenleaf died October 29, 1864, aged seventy-eight years.

When Mr. Greenleaf retired, Miss Abigail C. Haseltine, who had been preceptress since 1815, carried on the school for ladies only. She substantially continued principal till her death, only being relieved in her later years of its more active duties. She had great executive ability, self-possession and dignity of manner. When Miss Haseltine at last retired, her loss was severely felt.

A new Academy Hall had been built and dedicated April 15, 1841. In 1853 the semi-centennial was celebrated, which drew together fifteen hundred of the friends of the school.

After the retirement of Miss Haseltine, the academy was not considered fully prosperous again till it was conducted by Miss Abby H. Johnson, a native of Bradford, named for the former distinguished principal.

The fine new academy and dormitory was completed in 1869, and dedicated in May, 1870, amid great rejoicing of the friends of the institution. The school building, including boarding and school departments under the same roof, is located near the centre of an area of twenty-five acres. The view commands the valley of the Merrimac.

Miss Annie E. Johnson is the present principal. This institution has been very fortunate in its trustees. Rev. Jonathan Allen was president of the board, 1803-27; Rev. Isaac Braman, 1827-43; Hon. Jesse Kimball, 1844; Hon. Samuel H. Walley, 1845-49; Benjamin \* Greenleaf, for several years from 1850. Then, when the aims of the school were broadened, Rev. Dr. Rufus Anderson, the secretary of the American Board, was induced to take the position. With him were associated Samuel D. Warren, Ezra Farnsworth, Rev. Nathan Monroe, Hon. E. S. Tobey, Hon. George Cogswell, Hon. William A. Russell, Rev. Dr. J. H. Means and others. After the new building had been erected, Dr. Anderson retired from the board and was succeeded by the Rev. Dr. James H. Means. Hon. George Cogswell is the present president of the board, with



BRADFORD ACADEMY

whom are associated Samuel D. Warren, vice-president; Dr. John Crowell (of Haverhill), secretary; Rev. Dr. E. K. Alden, Hon. William A. Russell, Elbridge Torrey, Ezra Farnsworth, Rev. Dr. John D. Kingsbury, Rev. Dr. Means, Rev. Nehemiah Boynton (of Haverhill).

The institution is justly the pride of the town and is itself, no doubt, largely benefited by the excellent character of the town, in respect to beauty, healthfulness, general good order and good government.

Distinguished men lecture here, like Prof. Charles A. Young in astronomy. Indeed, it is the intention of the able and earnest managers that the school shall not be inferior to any in any department. Within the last year or two there has been great interest among the friends of the academy in the fine portraits which have been presented to adorn its walls,





as of Rufus Anderson, pupil in youth and president in age; of Harriet Newell and Ann H. Judson, the missionaries who were educated at the school; Hon. George Cogswell, who for more than fifty years has been connected with it and done so much to build it up; of Rev. Nathan Monroe, the former pastor of Bradford Church. It is believed the future of Bradford Academy will be brilliant and useful, even exceeding its past extraordinary record.

In 1821 Merrimac Academy was established in the East Parish, which for many years was successful.

In 1820 there were two libraries in the town. Among educational influences, Dr. Perry enumerated also at that time the Washington Benevolent Society, exclusively devoted to literary improvement.

April 2, 1813, the Philendian Society was formed in what is now Bradford. Its object was "to support female teachers" in places where they might be useful in the moral and intellectual training of neglected children. Parson Allen was much interested in this organization. Its membership embraced many women of Haverhill and Newburyport. Schools were established at Haverhill, Wenham, the Isle of Shoals and Byfield, where Mary and Abigail C. Haseltine were teachers. The results were considered eminently satisfactory. Long since superseded in its work, to recall it now is mainly valuable as showing the tone and spirit of Bradford women in the early years of this century.

The public schools of Bradford have also kept full step with the advance of progress. May 1, 1886, there were 554 school children, 167 being between the ages of five and eight and 387 between the ages of eight and fifteen. The increase over the previous year was nineteen. September, 1886, there were twelve schools, with a teaching force of fifteen. The number of recognized grades was eleven, viz.: two second primary, two first primary, six grammar and the high school. The high school was established in 1866.

From an early period in the history of this town, its public officers have been respectable and respected. One of its first town clerks, Shubael Walker, was a superior officer for the day in which he lived, being an admirable penman and accurate in the discharge of his duties. The town has generally reposed confidence in its selectmen, who appear, upon the whole, to have deserved it. The first selectmen were Sergeant John Gage, Robert Haseltine, Joseph Pike, John Griffin and John Tenny. Thomas Kimball was the first constable. And at the same meeting it was voted that the houses of Benjamin Gage and Thomas Kimball "should be legal places for posting up any order or other business of public concernment for the town." Contrary to the custom in most places, the meeting-house was not employed for such notifications until the division of the town into parishes.

In 1707 it was voted that there should be two constables instead of one, as before, the compensation to

be divided between them. This was the first recognition of the growth of the eastern part of the town, leading to the division of town offices, employments and conveniences. About twenty years afterwards the town was divided into parishes; and thus things proceeded in the way of equitable division until, May 20, 1766, it was "voted that the one-half of the town meetings shall be held at the East Meeting-House in said town for the future." This was a most important vote, giving the clue to the course of things for nearly a century after, till the East Parish was set up as the town of Groveland, in 1850. But it is believed that this vote has not been printed before the present occasion.

Provision for order in the town meetings was also made on the very first occasion, when it was voted "that whoever did not appear at town meeting at the time set for such meeting, should pay sixpence for every hour that he was defective;" and if anyone in meeting should speak without leave obtained from the moderator, he should pay the same sum for every "offense." January 4, 1668, it was further "voted that when the town are assembled in town meeting, no one should leave the house without liberty obtained, under the penalty of twelpence per hour, and that no act passed by the town after sunset shall be of value."

Dr. Perry claimed that in respect to health, Bradford had been as much favored as towns in general. So far as was known, there had never been a specific local disorder. One in ten of the deaths had been of persons more than eighty years old; Dr. Perry thought full one in eight since his residence in the place. That there were not so many persons of very great age at the time of his writing as before had been the case, he ascribed to the destructiveness of the French Wars, but more especially to the terrible destruction of infant and child life, through the awful throat distemper of 1736, which originated in Kingston, N. H., and of which the Rev. John Brown, of Haverhill, published an interesting account in a large pamphlet. This disease in one year carried off in the East Parish of Bradford, forty-seven children and nine grown persons. "And it is said," proceeds Dr. Perry, "that only two families entirely escaped the disorder, one of which was that of their reverend pastor." If they and he had known that across the river, in Haverhill, the Rev. John Brown, the historian of the disease, lost three of his children by it, there could not have been much generalization from the exemption of the Rev. Mr. Balch's children. In 1762, twenty-three persons died of the same throat distemper, in a short time; and in 1794, fifteen more.

In 1777 the small-pox appeared in the East Parish, and at that time, indeed, it was prevalent in this vicinity, perhaps brought from the army. Bradford built a pest-house, to which were removed those taken with the disorder. Fourteen had it, of whom ten died.



Of the seven thousand persons, who, according to his calculations up to and including 1820, had lived in Bradford, Dr. Perry estimated that 1284 had made open profession of religion.

In 1720 the town's expense was £60 16s. 4d. On an average for the ten years before 1820, it had been £900, which Dr. Perry estimated was raised at least as easily as the former taxes; whence, of course, the inference would naturally be drawn that the wealth of the place had increased in that proportion. It certainly has increased in at least as great a proportion in both towns since 1820. Dr. Perry exhibited the increase in the value of land since the early days by an incident which has been often repeated. Before Thomas Kimball settled in Bradford, probably about the year 1660 or a little after, he was driving a herd of cattle through on his way to Haverhill or Hampstead, when one of the land owners, probably Haseltine, offered to take his cattle at a high price and pay him in land upon the river, at eight pence an acre.

In 1810 the population of Bradford was 1369, and in 1820, 1650. When in 1850 the two parishes separated, they were, as nearly as possible, equal in population and valuation. Bradford had about 1300. In 1855, after the division, the population of Bradford was 1372. In 1875, its population was 2347, containing 413 dwellings and 531 families. It had an agricultural product of \$43,635.

As a matter of curiosity and comparison, the industries of Bradford as returned in 1855, after the separation of Groveland, are here given. It is probably however, an approximation only.

## BRADFORD.

"Saddles, Harness and Trunk Manufactories, 2; val. of saddles, &c., \$1500; cap., \$400; emp., 2.

"Boots of all kinds m'd., 75 pairs; Shoes of all kinds m'd., 20; 00 pairs; val. of boots and shoes, \$1000; m. emp., 12; f. emp., 11.

"Bricks m'd., 250,000; val. of bricks, \$1250; emp., 3.

"Horses, 84; val. of horses, \$2160; Oxen over three years old, 94; Steers under three years old, 30; val. of oxen and steers, \$625; Milch Cows, 258; Heifers, 20; val. of cows and heifers, \$1110.

"Butter, 17,000 lbs.; val. of butter, \$4265; Cheese, 3825 lbs.; val. of cheese, \$662; Honey, 325 lbs.; val. of honey, \$60.

"Indian Corn, 112 acres; Indian Corn, per acre, 35 bush; val. \$404.

"Wheat, 4 acres; Wheat, per acre, 18 bush.; val., \$144.

"Rye, 17 acres; Rye, per acre, 20 bush.; val., \$376.

"Barley, 2 acres; Barley, per acre, 25 bush.; val., \$50.

"Oats, 98 acres; Oats, per acre, 19 bush.; val., \$2352.

"Potatoes, 61 acres; Potatoes, per acre, 100 bush.; val., \$6400.

"Onions, 1 acre; Onions, per acre, 30 bush.; val., \$180.

"Turnips, cultivated as a field crop, 4 acres; Turnips, per acre, 150 bush.; val., \$150.

"Carrots, 2 acres; Carrots, per acre, 300 bush.; val., \$180.

"English Mowing, 1130 acres; English Hay, 1240 tons; val., \$18000.

"Wet Meadow or Swale Hay, 40 tons; val., \$320.

"Apple Trees, cultivated for their fruit, 6850; val., \$6580.

"Pear Trees, cultivated for their fruit, 420; val., \$225.

"Shoes made the past year, 102,700.

Jack Screws, 200; val., \$1000."

In 1880 the population of Bradford was 2643; in 1885, 3106. The valuation in 1886 was, personal estate, \$305,867.90; real estate, \$1,274,020.00; total,

\$1,579,887.00—rate of tax, \$15 per \$1000. Total taxes, \$25,472.41.

When the Boston & Maine railroad was opened to this town in 1837, the village contained but three streets, the Andover road and the Salem road, which unite at the meeting house and extend to Haverhill bridge—excepting the old Ferry Street.

The average expense of maintaining the town poor, from 1810 to 1820, was \$839. About the last date, the town purchased a house and farm for their use, where it was expected they would be more comfortable and less expensive.

In 1882, on the two hundredth anniversary of the church organization, it was stated that the "actual necessities of the poor are so few that most of them are supplied from private distribution of charity. The town poor-farm was actually sold for the reason that the town had no paupers to live on it." But, March, 1886, \$2000 was appropriated for the poor. The town paid for board, care, groceries, wood, boots and shoes, burial, etc. In a word, it has recurred to the methods of more than a century ago.

In 1752 there appear to have been two persons supplied with out-door relief—Martha Simons and "Mr. Puffer."

"Sept. 18, 1752, voted to Capt. Mullicken, for keeping Martha Simons from May 22 to — Sept; providing her with showes (shoes) and an apron, £5 19s.

"To same, for keeping Martha Simmons twenty-seven weeks and one cotton Handkerchief, £2 19s. 5d.

"Stephen Kimball, for making one pair of showes and mending one payer for Martha Simons, 4s. 6d.

"March 16, 1756, voted and allowed to David Hall, for seven yards of too (tow) cloth for Martha Simmons and making them, 8s.

"Dec. 18, 1759, voted yt ten shillings be raised for clothes for Martha Simmons.

"March 9, 1762, Dudley Carlton, for Martha Simmons' cotton, 5s. 4d.

"To Benj. Walker, for digging her grave, 5s.

"To Obadiah Kimball, for a winding sheet, 3s.

"Sept. 18, 1852, voted to Joseph Mullicken, for providing a shirt for Mr. Puffer, 6s.

"Voted to Joseph Kimball, for providing another shirt for Mr. Puffer, 6s.

"Voted to Philip Tenney, for two payer of gloves (gloves?) for Mr. Puffer's funeral, 4s.

"Voted to Joseph Mullicken, for rum and sugar that he provided for Mr. Puffer in ye time of his sickness, 10s.

"Voted to Joseph Kimball, for a sheet and shirt and cap to buy Mr. Puffer m."

And thus pauperism seems to have come to an end, temporarily. But the poor we have always with us.

At that time the selectmen were expected to keep a sharp look-out that strangers coming into town did not become chargeable to it; to prevent trouble of that kind, they generally warned them out again immediately—which explains the following: "Bradford, Jany. ye 1, 1775; Peter Russell gives notice to selectmen that Alexander Montgomery has come from Andover to live with him—son of John Montgomery."

September 24, 1745, in town-meeting: "It was put to vote whether the town would abate the heads (polls) of such persons who are or have bin in his Majesties service this year & vote passed in ye negative."

The town was certainly not very liberal to such as





had come or were coming home from the famous Louisburg expedition of that year.

The following is the most suspicious vote, thought it might be explained: "Dec. 18, 1759: voted to Joseph Mullicken for going to Newbury Court and dining ye committee, & two ( ), £5 0s. 0d."

1760-61. In these years there are many charges, about "the French." These were the poor Acadians, who were distributed about among the towns to provide for.

March 9, 1762, "voted to Samuel Trask for building a oven for the French, 4 shillings; voted to Samuel Kimball for bricks and wood for ye French, March 15, 1763, £5 5s. 0d."

There has been some difficulty about tracing the stocks in Bradford; but March 19, 1763, "voted to Deacon Thomas Carlton for mending the town stocks."

May 17, 1773, the town voted to build a powder-house—probably at Head's Hill, which, it is believed was known as Powder-House Hill. The powder-house was stocked with ammunition. "Six half-barrels of powder, bullets and flints proportionable."

## CHAPTER CLXIX.

### BRADFORD—(*Continued*).

#### *Bradford in the Wars.*

It appeared from the journal of Captain William Kimball, who, during the French War of 1755, marched a company from Bradford to Stillwater, New York, that all his men returned to their homes in safety.

The same good fortune attended the company of forty men, commanded by Captain Nathaniel Gage, which was in the battle of Bunker Hill. Although stationed in a place much exposed to the enemy, not a life was lost. Tradition has brought down the story that this was one of the best disciplined and most effective companies engaged on that day, having been carefully instructed by an English deserter, who, in 1820, was still living in Haverhill.

Early in the troubles with Great Britain a town-meeting was held in the West meeting-house, January 7, 1773, to see what, if any, instructions should be given to the town's representative relating to the existing difficulties. The town chose a committee to report what should be done, and adjourned to six o'clock, P.M., the same day. Instructions were adopted to Captain Daniel Thurston, the town's representative in the General Court, informing him that his constituents felt "very great uneasiness at the infringements on our national and Constitutional rights, by many of the late measures of the British Adminis-

tration, particularly of the taxation of the Colonies, and the granting of salaries to the judges of the Superior Court, measures adapted, as we apprehend, to lay a foundation in time to render property precarious, and to introduce a system of deception which we cannot but view with the utmost aversion, and to which we cannot submit while possible to be avoided. We recommend it to you as our Representative in General Assembly, to use your influence to obtain redress of all our grievances, and in particular to enquire whether the support of the Judges of the Superior Court has been adequate to their services, offices and station, and if not, to use your influence in obtaining suitable grants and establishments as may be thought sufficient to remove all pretence that government is not supported among ourselves—which was voted unanimously."

It will be remembered that most of the country towns on the patriotic side followed the bold and shrewd leadership of the Boston Committees, under the masterly management of Sam Adams. This vote certainly showed that Bradford was sound, and it remained so throughout the war.

The town was represented in the Provincial Congress, which assembled at Concord, October 11, 1774, by Captain Daniel Thurston, who was also chosen to represent the town in the Provincial Congress, held in the following February at Cambridge.

More ammunition was laid in store, and thirty pounds sterling were voted for that purpose, and this before open hostilities had commenced. The enlistment of minute-men now commenced, and these were drilled, equipped and paid by the town. The number of hours required for drill was increased from time to time, as the emergency seemed to demand, so that they might be ready to contribute their aid when needed. Town-meetings now were frequently held, adjourning often to the East or West meeting-house to hear reports from committees, vote supplies and encourage each other.

The town-meeting called May 23, 1775, was an important one. It was the first after the battles of Lexington and Concord. The Massachusetts army had appealed to the town for aid, and the articles needed were stated in a circular from a committee of supplies. The town was also called upon to choose a Committee of Correspondence, according to the recommendation of the Provincial Congress.

The supply for the army called for was voted and the committee chosen. This committee were instructed to return the names of those persons who deserted the Provincial service to the county committee, unless they returned to duty. Soon after the battle of Bunker Hill—June 28, 1775—being only eleven days after, another town-meeting was held, encouraging re-enlistment of the minute-men, and promising to pay them.

At a town-meeting held June 20, 1776, it was voted, apparently unanimously, to desire Dudley Carleton, the Representative in General Assembly, "as our rep-





representative, to use your utmost endeavor that our delegates in General Congress be instructed to shake off the tyrannical yoke of Great Britain, and declare these United Colonies independent of that venal, corrupt and avaricious court forever—provided no proposals for a happy reconciliation be offered, which the honorable congress think proper to accept; and we hereby engage that we will, at the risk of our lives and fortunes, endeavor to support and defend them therein."

This town also lent its aid in securing the observance of the State act to prevent monopoly and oppression. Abraham Day, Jr., was chosen to guard the town against the danger arising from internal enemies. It would be impossible to give all the details of the various town-meetings, fifty or more in number, held to carry on this war. But the records abound in evidence of the zeal and readiness of the people to do their part, by voting supplies and furnishing men.

The town seems to have met the calls upon it during the war, for men and supplies, with at least reasonable promptitude.

The delegate from Bradford to the convention held at Cambridge, in 1779, to form a State Constitution, was Peter Russel, Esq. The new Constitution was accepted by the town after some discussion upon the third article.

The feeling against those who opposed the Revolution and left the country during the war, or conspired against it, was very strong; and a vote was passed instructing the Representative to use his utmost endeavors to prevent all such from ever returning to live again in this Commonwealth.

When the Rebellion broke out, the town of Bradford, at a meeting held April 26, 1861, voted one thousand dollars to be used for the benefit of soldiers volunteering, or called into the service. E. F. Brigdon and George Johnson were chosen to act with the selectmen in the distribution of this money. It was voted that no soldier receiving aid from the town, should, for that cause, be subject to any disability as a citizen.

The selectmen were authorized to borrow money necessary to furnish State aid to the families of volunteers, in conformity with the laws of the Commonwealth. Money was raised to pay bounties in order to fill the quotas of the town. Bounties were also raised by private subscription. In 1863, town bonds were issued for the payment of aid to the families of deceased soldiers.

August 20, 1864, a unanimous vote of thanks was passed to the selectmen "for their energy and success in filling the quota of the town. They were authorized to use their own discretion in bringing home the bodies of soldiers killed in battle or dying while in service, and in defraying transit charges and funeral expenses. The town, at the close of the war, had a credit of thirty-one men, over and above all demands.

Four of the number were commissioned officers.

The comrades annually decorate the graves of thirty-one who fell. The town expended \$22,149.42 on account of the war, and \$8,756.33 was raised in addition from private subscription, making a total of \$30,906.05. \$11,915.03 was paid out to the families of volunteers, which the Commonwealth refunded. The war debt of the town has been extinguished.

The women of the town worked with energy and zeal, to supply the needs of the soldiers and their families. They worked largely in co-operation with the women of Haverhill, as the "Soldiers' Relief Society of Haverhill and Bradford." Their cares for the suffering ceased only when there were no more to care for. During the war, the following were selectmen: In 1861, Richard Haseltine, Samuel W. Hopkinson, Leverett Kimball; in 1862, Edmund Kimball, John Perley, Samuel W. Hopkinson; in 1863, Samuel W. Hopkinson, Walter Goodell, Nathaniel Carleton; 1864 and 1865, Charles B. Emerson, John Perley, A. Judson Day. The town clerk, during all these years, was Nathaniel Hatch. The town treasurer in 1861 and up to August 19, 1862, was thence, till after the close of the war, Harvey M. Towle.

Judge Carter had four sons in the service.

Dr. George Cogswell's two sons, George B. and William, born in Bradford, served one as surgeon of the Twenty-ninth Massachusetts, the other, as Colonel of the Second (Brevet Brigadier-General, December 15, 1864).

The following is a record of soldiers and seamen, during the Rebellion, from the town of Bradford (being that preserved in the office of the town clerk):

Kelley, Samuel E., private, must. in July 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 11th Regt.  
 Kimball, Frank H., private, enl. July 30, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Jan., 1863, disability.  
 Kimball, Leroy N., private, enl. July 30, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.  
 Day, Joseph Warren, private, must. in July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; pro. bent. 1863.  
 Walton, Joseph H., private, must. in July 13, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 14th Regt.  
 Walton, Edward M., private, enl. Aug., 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed in action Jan. 3, 1864.  
 Carr, Charles E., must. in July 17, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt.  
 Mills, Joseph E., private, must. in Aug. 26, 1861, 3 months, Co. G, 5th Regt.; re-enl. in 17th Regt., drum major, disch. by act of Congress Nov., 1862.  
 Holt, Francis E., private, must. in Sept. 21, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.  
 Bean, Charles E., must. in June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 12th Regt.; supposed killed at Gettysburg.  
 West, James G., must. in March 1, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt. (afterwards 1st H. A.).  
 Bickum, Charles H., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt.; re-enl. Dec., 1863, 3 yrs.  
 Bickum, Benj., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt.  
 Bickum, Jacob W., private, enl. Aug. 11, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.  
 Parker, Wm., must. in Feb. 19, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt.; re-enl. Feb. 20, 1864.  
 Parker, Henry R., must. in July 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt.  
 Parker, Edward, 3 yrs., Co. I, 11th Regt., disch., disability.  
 Smith, William, must. in July 18, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. D, 14th Regt.  
 Hall, Cyrus J., must. in Aug. 17, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; trans. to Invalid Corps Aug. 6, 1864 (State record, Sept. 30, 1864).  
 Couillard, Charles H., enl. Aug., 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Dec. 27, 1862, disability.



- Banfield, Chas E., enl. in Aug., 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Nov. 12, 1862, disability.
- Morse, Sylvester P., private, enl. Aug. 17, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Jan. 24, 1862, disability.
- Chadwick, Benjamin P., enl. Aug., 1862, 3 yrs., Co. M, 33d Regt.
- Heach, George F., private, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 12th Regt.; died at Gettysburg Sept. 21, 1863.
- Wills, John F., private, enl. Feb. 11, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 13th Regt.; re-enl. 3 yrs., Feb., 1861.
- Mills, Charles E., enl. July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.
- Hansen, Peter, enl. Aug. 20, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; disch. Dec. 9, 1862, disability; re-enl. Dec., 1863, 3 yrs., Co. B, 59th Regt.
- Eaton, George W., enl. in Aug., 1862, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.
- Lang, George H., enl. Aug., 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; trans. to regular army.
- Gale, Moses H., must. in Mar. 12, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. E, 20th Regt.
- Bruce, Norman, must. in July 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.
- Kimball, Charles H., private, Co. I, 12th Regt.; killed in battle.
- Carter, Walter, private, enl. July 30, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; sergt-major, 1863.
- Carter, Robert G., private, enl. July 30, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.
- Lovejoy, George L., enl. Aug., 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; re-enl. Feb., 1864, 3 yrs.
- Morrison, John, enl. Aug., 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; probably killed at Gettysburg.
- Phillips, Chas., private, enl. Aug., 1862, Co. H, 22d Regt.; wounded at Gettysburg July 3, 1863.
- Day, Wm. H. H., private, enl. Aug., 1862, Co. H, 22d Regt.
- Kimball, Eldridge, private, enl. July 1, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt.
- Kimball, Stillman, enl. Feb. 14, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 19th Regt.; disch. Sept. 1, 1862, disability; re-enl. Co. A, 4th Cav. Nov. 19, 1863.
- Kimball, John S., private, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed in action May 11, 1864.
- Kimball, Charles W., private, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch., disability, April 11, 1863.
- Phillips, Leonard W., private, enl. Jan. 25, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.
- Kimball, Moses G., private, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.
- Jenkins, Benjamin A., private, enl. Aug., 1862, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.
- Morse, Harmon F., private, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.; disch. 1863, disability.
- McCullom, John H., 30th Regt., hosp. stew.
- Locke, Oliver S., private, 3 yrs., 1st Cav.; disch. 1863, disability.
- Kaler, Cornelius, private, enl. 1861, 3 yrs., 1st Cav.; pro. sergt.; re-enl. Jan., 1864, 3 yrs.
- De Witt, Merrill, private, 3 yrs., Co. I, 14th Regt.; re-enl. 3 yrs. 4th Cav. 5th sergt. Nov. 1863.
- Hodgdon, James F., 3 yrs., Co. D, 19th Regt.; lost both arms; disch. Sept. 19, 1863.
- Holt, Edgar, private, enl. August, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; pro corp.
- Heckman, John, enl. July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.
- Carter, Eugene, private, 6th Inf., 1st lieut.; grad. at West Point 1861.
- Casly, Thos., enl. Aug. 4, 1862, 3 yrs., 17th Regt.; disch. and enl. in navy Jan. 28, 1863.
- Pressey, William E., 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.
- Davis, Maynard R., private, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt.
- Caswell, Philicus, private, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.
- Brown, Albert M., enl. Aug. 20, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. C, 35th Regt.
- Crostin, William, private, enl. 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 14th Regt.; re-enl. Dec., 1864, 3 yrs.
- Collins, George S., private, enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt.; re-enl. Dec., 1863, 3 yrs.
- Morse, Henry P., private, 3 yrs., Co. F, 12th Regt.; disch. May 1, 1862; re-enl., sergeant, 17th N. H. Regt.; disch. April, 1863; re-enl. 1st Mass. H. A. Dec. 15, 1863.
- Reynolds, George M., private, enl. 1861, 3 yrs., 2d N. H. Regt.; disch. 1862, re-enl., Captain Herbert's Co. unattached heavy artillery at Marblehead, Nov. 23, 1863.
- Stuart, Charles H., private, 3 yrs.; disch. 1862; re-enl. 17th N. H. Regt., 1862; died in service.
- Rogers, Tristram, private, 3 months, Co. G, 5th Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
- Cogswell, William, surgeon, enl. Nov. 19, 1862, 9 months, 50th Regt.; disch. at exp. of term.
- Rundlet, James H., lieut., enl. Nov. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; disch. at exp. of term; served as signal officer.
- Carlston, Benjamin P., enl. Aug., 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; disch. at exp. of term.
- Fogg, George, private, 3 months, Co. G, 5th Regt.; disch. exp. of service.
- Clough, George W., enl. Aug., 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; died at New York, Nov., 1862.
- Hills, Henry C., enl. Aug., 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; disch. at exp. of term.
- Hanson, John A., enl. Aug., 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; re-enl. in 59th Regt., Dec. 1863.
- Kimball, Granville R., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; died at Cairo, Ill.
- Morse, George E., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; disch. exp. of term.
- Poor, John S., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; disch. exp. of term.
- Perkins, Calvin G., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; disch. exp. of term.
- Peabody, Calvin, private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; disch. exp. of term.
- Watson, George E., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; disch. exp. of term.
- Pearson, Charles S., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; died in term.
- Lucy, George, private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; disch. exp. of term.
- Carleton, Orlando T., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; disch. exp. of term.
- Hodges, Noah C., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; disch. exp. of term.
- Kimball, M. Warren, private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; disch. exp. of term.
- Libbey, Ira, private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; disch. exp. of term.
- Myers, Joseph, private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; disch. February, 1863.
- Poor, Warren F., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; died at Cairo, Ill.
- Peabody, Charles N., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; disch. exp. of term.
- Raymond, S. H., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; disch. exp. of term.
- Morse, Edwin C., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; disch. exp. of term.
- Crosby, Edward F., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; died on way home.
- Peabody, Daniel A., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; disch. exp. of term.
- Heckman, David, private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; disch. exp. of term.
- Jenkins, S. H., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; disch. exp. of term.
- Graham, Rufus M., private, enl. August, 1862, nine months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; disch. exp. of term.
- Lozier, Edward H., private, enl. August, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; disch. end of term.
- Lucy, Arthur W., private, enl. August, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; disch. end of term.
- Heath, Charles K., private, enl. August, 1862, 9 months, 50th Regt.; disch. end of term.
- Eaton, James J., private, enl. August, 1862, 9 months, 50th Regt.; disch. end of term.
- Cole, James R., private, enl. August, 1862, 9 months, Co. I, 6th Regt.; disch. end of term.
- Kimball, Charles G., private, enl. Sept., 1862, 9 months, Co. H, 4th Regt.; disch. end of term.
- Harris, Isaac B., enl. Nov., 1862, 9 months, Co. D, 48th Regt.; disch. end of term.
- Lowry, Thomas, enl. 9 months, Co. D, 48th Regt.; disch. end of term.
- Ford, Henry T., private, enl. 3 yrs., 2d Cav.
- Brien, Wm., private, enl. 3 yrs., 2d Cav.
- Blunt, Geo., enl. 3 yrs., 2d Cav.
- McGinnis, John, enl. 3 yrs., 2d Cav.
- McGinnis, Thomas, enl. 3 yrs., 2d Cav.
- Kelley, Adam, enl. 3 yrs., 2d Cav.
- Smith, Philip, enl. 3 yrs., 2d Cav.
- Ewings, John, enl. 3 yrs., 2d Cav.
- Sargent, Carlos R., enl. Sept. 11, 1861, 3 yrs., 2d Cav.; died of small-pox March, 1862.
- Tanner, Edward, enl. 3 yrs.





- Porter, John C., enl. 3 yrs.  
 Worthen, Perley A., enl. 3 yrs., V. R. C.  
 Follen, Patrick, enl. 3 yrs., V. R. C.  
 Whittier, Kimball, enl. 3 yrs., V. R. C.; disch.  
 Morse, Herman P., 3 yrs., Vet. Res. Corps.  
 Peabody, Charles N., 1 yr., H. A.  
 Poor, David N., Jr., 1 yr., H. A.  
 Hicks, James P., 1 yr., H. A.  
 Sneys, Bryant, 1 yr., H. A.; disch.  
 Buchanan, Alexander, 3 yrs.  
 Ordway, Nathaniel, 1 yr., H. A.; died at Newbern, N. C.  
 Graham, John L., 1 yr., H. A.  
 Eaton, George, 1 yr., H. A.  
 Foss, Robert, 1 yr., H. A.  
 Newhall, William H., enl. Dec. 19, 1864, 1 yr., 5th Batt.  
 Haseltine, William, enl. Dec. 31, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.  
 Stevens, Robert M., enl. Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.  
 Stevens, William M., enl. Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.  
 Woodman, William, enl. Dec. 31, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.  
 Morse, George F., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.  
 Trafton, William W., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.  
 Bailey, Ephraim, enl. Dec. 31, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.  
 Bailey, Lawrence H., enl. Dec. 31, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.  
 Abbott, Daniel B., enl. Jan. 1, 1865, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.  
 Bateman, Frank E., enl. Dec. 31, 1864, Co. B, Front. Cav.  
 Boynton, Isaac A., enl. Jan. 3, 1865, 3 yrs., Co. B.  
 Preston, Nelson, enl. Jan. 3, 1865, 1 yr., Co. B, 5th Cav.  
 Taylor, Sullivan A., enl. Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.  
 Johnson, Albert C., enl. Dec. 30, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.  
 Godfrey, E. F., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.  
 Hooper, Geo. E., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.  
 Murphy, John H., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.  
 Daussey, Michael, enl. Dec. 31, 1864, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.  
 Silsby, George E., Jr., enl. Nov. 30, 1863, 1st H. A.; trans. to Co. A July 31, 1865; absent sick since July 15, 1865; must. out in Co. A Aug. 16, 1865; absent, no discharge given.  
 Myers, Joseph, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; disch. May 18, 1862, disability.  
 Morse, Edwin C., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.  
 Morse, George F., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.  
 Peabody, Calvin, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.  
 Peabody, Charles H., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.  
 Peabody, Daniel A., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.  
 Perkins, Calvin G., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.  
 Poor, Frederick W., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.  
 Poor, John S., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.  
 Raymond, Samuel H., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.  
 Watson, George L., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.  
 Carr, Charles E., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs, 1st H. A., Co. F; must. out July 8, 1861.  
 Croston, William, enl. Nov. 28, 1863, 3 yrs., 1st H. A., Co. F; disch. July 27, 1865, disability.  
 Parker, Edward, Jr., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 1st H. A.; disch. Feb. 8, 1863, disability.  
 Parker, Henry R., enl. July 5, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. I, 1st H. A.; must. out June 19, 1865.  
 Parker, William, enl. Feb. 19, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. I, 1st H. A.; must. out Feb. 24, 1864, to re-enl.  
 Parker, William, enl. Feb. 25, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. I, 1st H. A.; disch. Feb. 27, 1865, disability.  
 Casey, Daniel, enl. Nov. 20, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. H, 3d H. A.; must. out Sept. 18, 1865.  
 Cogswell, William, enl. Nov. 11, 1862, 9 months; surg. 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.  
 Porter, John C., enl. July 13, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. D, 1st Cav.; must. out June 23, 1865.  
 Kimball, Elbridge, enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt. Inf.
- Hooper, George E., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. L, 3d Cav.; must. out Sept. 28, 1865, Co. E.  
 Dempsey, Michael, enl. Dec. 31, 1865, 3 yrs., Co. A, 1th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.  
 Godfrey, Edward, enl. Jan. 2, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. L, 1th Cav.; must. out Nov. 14, 1865.  
 Haley, Lewis, enl. Jan. 29, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. B, 5th Cav.; died June 16, 1864, Point Lookout, Md.  
 Nelson, Preston, enl. Jan. 3, 1865, 3 yrs., Co. M, 5th Cav.; must. out Oct. 31, 1865.  
 Stevens, Wm. M., corp., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt., Front. Cav.; disch. June 30, 1865.  
 Hazeltine, Wm., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt., Front. Cav.; disch. June 30, 1865.  
 Stevens, Robert W., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt., Front. Cav.; disch. June 30, 1865.  
 Johnson, Albert O., enl. Jan. 2, 1865, 1 yr., Co. C, 1st Batt., Front. Cav.; disch. June 30, 1865.  
 Tanner, Edward H., enl. June 23, 1864, 3 yrs., 11th Regt. Inf.; Unassigned Recruit.  
 Morse, Henry P., enl. June 26, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 12th Regt. Inf.; disch. May 23, 1862, disability.  
 Day, Joseph W., 1st lieut., enl. Aug. 26, 1863, 3 yrs., 17th Regt. Inf.; disch. March 15, 1865.  
 —, —, 2d lieut., enl. Sept. 30, 1862, 17th Regt. Inf.; and 1st serg. July 22, 1861.  
 Eaton, George W., enl. Aug. 11, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; must. out Aug. 3, 1864.  
 Graham, John L., enl. August 29, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 17th Regt.; disch. June 30, 1865, order War Dept.  
 Beckman, Jacob W., enl. August 11, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. August 3, 1864.  
 Eaton, James J., enl. January 30, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. February 14, 1862; disability.  
 Heckman, John H., enl. July 22, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. F, 17th Regt.; disch. August 3, 1864.  
 Peabody, Charles M., enl. September 29, 1864, 3 yrs., Co. G, 17th Regt.; disch. June 30, 1865, order War Dept.  
 Mills, John F., enl. February 14, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 17th Regt.; disch. January 1, 1864, to re-enlist.  
 Bruce, Norman, sergeant, enl. August 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 17th Regt.; trans. July 27, 1863, to V. R. C.  
 Hanson, Peter, enl. February 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; disch. December 9, 1862, disability.  
 Kimball, Moses G., enl. Aug. 28, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. A, 19th Regt.; must. out Aug. 27, 1864.  
 Kimball, Stillman, enl. Feb. 24, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 19th Regt.; must. out Dec. 3, 1862, disability.  
 Merritt, DeWitt G., enl. Feb. 14, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. D, 19th Regt.; disch. Oct. 26, 1862, disability.  
 Gale, Moses H., corp., enl. Dec. 31, 1863, 3 yrs., Co. F, 20th Regt.; must. out July 14, 1865; private, March 12, 1862, Co. F, 20th Regt.; must. out Dec. 20, 1863, to re-enl. as above.  
 Carter, Walter, corp., enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; sergt.-major, Jan. 25, 1863; Feb. 20, 1864, 1st lieut.; declined com.  
 Carter, Robert G., enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out Oct. 1, 1864.  
 Day, Wm. H. H., enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Feb. 1, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. Feb. 2, 1864; trans. Oct. 26, 1864, to 82d Regt.  
 Holt, Francis E., enl. Sept. 24, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; died Aug. 24, 1864; rebel prison.  
 Kimball, Charles W., enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. March 31, 1863, disability.  
 Kimball, Frank H., enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. April 1, 1863, disability.  
 Kimball, Leroy H., enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Oct. 17, 1864.  
 Lang, George H., enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; trans. Oct. 26, 1862, to 1st U. S. Cav.  
 Lovejoy, George E., enl. Aug. 5, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; disch. Feb. 1, 1864, to re-enl.; re-enl. Feb. 2, 1864; trans. Oct. 26, 1864, to 32d Inf.  
 Morrison, John, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; killed July 3, 1863, Gettysburg, Pa.  
 Phillips, Charles, enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out Oct. 17, 1864.



Pressy, William L., enl. Sept. 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out Oct. 17, 1864.

Sargent, Charles K., enl. Sept. 7, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; died March 8, 1862, Washington, D. C.

Walton, Edward M., enl. Aug. 6, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. H, 22d Regt.; must. out Feb. 1, 1864, to re-enl.

McClellan, John H., hospital steward, enl. April 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. A, 36th Regt.; must. out April 23, 1863.

Couelliard, priv., enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; must. out as corp. Aug. 17, 1862, disability.

Banfield, Charles E., priv., enl. Aug. 7, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Nov. 12, 1862, disability.

Mills, Orlando W., enl. July 23, 1864, 100 days, Co. I, 60th Regt.; must. out Nov. 30, 1864.

Foss, Robert, corp., enl. Nov. 13, 1864, 1 yr., 17th Unattached Co. Infy.; must. out June 30, 1865.

Cole, James R., enl. Aug. 31, 1862, 9 months, Co. I, 6th Regt.; must. out June 3, 1863.

Heckman, David, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Graham, Rufus M., musician, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Jenkins, Samuel H., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Lucy, Arthur W., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Tozier, Edward H., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Heath, Charles K., sergt., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Eaton, James W., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. F, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Rundlett, James H., 2d lieut., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Pearson, Charles S., sergt., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Carlton, Benjamin P., corporal, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Lucy, George, corporal, enl. Sept. 18, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Carlton, Orlando S., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Clough, George W., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; died Nov. 22, 1862, New York.

Crosby, Edward T., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; died Aug. 2, 1863, at sea.

Hanson, John A., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Hills, Henry O., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Hodge, Noah C., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Kimball, Granville R., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; died Aug. 1863, Mound City, S. C.

Kimball, Warren M., enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Lilly, Ira, enl. Sept. 19, 1862, 9 months, Co. K, 50th Regt.; must. out Aug. 24, 1863.

Hall, Cyrus J., private, enl. August 17, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; trans. to V. R. C. Sept. 30, 1864.

Morse, Sylvester P., private, enl. August 17, 1862, 3 yrs., Co. G, 35th Regt.; disch. Jan. 24, 1862, disability.

Whittier, Kimball, enl. August 25, 1864, V. R. C.; disch. Nov. 20, 1865, order War Dept.

Worthing, Perley A., enl. July 22, 1864, V. R. C.; disch. Nov. 21, 1865, order War Dept.

Abbott, Daniel B., enl. Jan. 1, 1865, 1 yr., Co. B, Front. Cav.

Kelley, Samuel E., enl. July 6, 1861, 3 yrs., Co. E, 14th Regt.

#### *Record of Seamen and Officers in Naval Service.*

Ordway, Allen W.  
 Buchanan, Wm., enl. June 14, 1864, 2 yrs.  
 Fenno, John, enl. June 19, 1864, 1 yr.  
 Hanford, Edward, enl. June 14, 1864, 2 yrs.  
 Powers, John, enl. June 27, 1864, 1 yr.  
 O'Leary, Patrick, enl. June 27, 1864, 1 yr.

Cavanaugh, Michael, enl. June 13, 1864, 1 yr.  
 Dunbar, Jefferson C., enl. June 11, 1864, 1 yr.  
 Stevens, Alonzo M., enl. June 11, 1864, 3 yrs.  
 Baldwin, Albert F., enl. June 14, 1864, 3 yrs.  
 Sampson, Robert, enl. June 8, 1864, 2 yrs.  
 Foley, Martin, enl. June 8, 1864, 2 yrs.  
 Bliss, Isaiah, enl. June 8, 1864, 3 yrs.  
 Boynton, Walter S., enl. June 27, 1864, 1 yr.  
 Gilman, Charles E., enl. August 17, 1864, 1 yr.  
 Mitchell, Charles, enl. June 15, 1864, 2 yrs.  
 Cahill, Peter, enl. June 15, 1864, 3 yrs.  
 Nudd, John H., enl. June 24, 1864, 3 yrs.  
 Bramhall, Charles H., June 24, 1864, 3 yrs.  
 Sawyer, Frank C., enl. June 27, 1864, 1 year.  
 Foss, Charles, enl. June 13, 1864, 1 yr.  
 McCarthy, Jeremiah, enl. June 2, 1864, 1 yr.  
 Howe, Geo. H. B., enl. Aug. 1864, 1 yr.  
 Dow, Albert H., enl. Aug. 1864, 1 yr.  
 Freeny, Wm., enl. April 18, 1864, 1 yr.  
 Newman, Wm., enl. April 18, 1864, 1 yr.  
 Chishane, Daniel, enl. April 18, 1864, 1 yr.  
 Dexter, James H., enl. April 18, 1864, 2 yrs.  
 Tabor, Otis, enl. April 16, 1864, 2 yrs.  
 Blake, Albion P., enl. April 19, 1864, 2 yrs.  
 Wallace, John, enl. April 16, 1864, 1 yr.  
 Jones, Benj., enl. April 19, 1864, 1 yr.  
 Heal, Isaac S., enl. April 19, 1864, 3 yrs.  
 Green, Franklin L., enl. June 16, 1864, 3 yrs.

The following names are credited to the town of Bradford in the official list:

Mills, John F., sergt., must. May 1, 1861, 3 mos., Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Mills, John E., musician, must. May 1, 1861, 3 mos., Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Kaler, Cornelius, private, must. May 21, 1861, 3 mos., Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Mills, Charles E., private, must. May 21, 1861, 3 mos., Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Mills, William W., private, must. May 21, 1861, 3 mos., Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Phillips, Leonard W., private, must. May 21, 1861, 3 mos., Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

Rogers, Tristram G., private, must. May 21, 1861, 3 mos., Co. D, 5th Regt.; must. out July 31, 1861.

At the Centennial celebration of the Declaration of Independence, July 4, 1876, Hon. George Cogswell was President of the day; Chief Marshal, Major Eugene Carter; Reader of the Declaration, Dr. William Cogswell; Chaplain, Rev. J. C. Paine, of Groveland; Toast Master, Samuel W. Hopkinson, Esq. Harrison E. Chadwick, Esq., delivered a valuable historical oration. The declaration was read from the identical sheet sent to Bradford by the authority of Congress in 1776, and then read from the pulpit by Rev. Samuel Williams, then minister. After a collation, interesting speeches were made.

December 27, 1882, the two hundredth anniversary of the organization of the Congregational Church, in Bradford, was appropriately commemorated. The memorial address, by Pastor Kingsbury, has been much referred to in this sketch. It will be ever regarded as a storehouse of information as to Bradford town and church. All the proceedings were worthy of the deeply interesting occasion.

Few towns in America have preserved the traditions of the Fathers so carefully, and walked so strictly in their ways.





## NOTE TO SKETCH OF BRADFORD.

One or two incidents overlooked in preparing the narrative will be adverted to in this place.

It has been heretofore said that in the time of Indian warfare, a guard was often kept at the block-house on the "Neck." The Indians evidently used to cross somewhere above that point, near the boundary line of Bradford and Andover.

Thus it is stated that in 1708 a company of "Centinels" was posted by Colonel Saltonstall (commandant of the militia for this district) at Bradford, from May 20th to October 7th; and another at Andover for the same time.

The land which the Rowley proprietors assigned for a parsonage in Bradford was to be "at all times forever hereafter for the use of the ministrie in that town, Merrimacke, and that it should never be the proper and peculiar right of any person or persons, any longer than while he or they were the orderlie minister of the aforesaid town of Merrimacke." When the first Mr. Symmes was established, the town gave him lands it had bought and a few acres donated by individuals. At his death, an amicable arrangement was made with his heirs, by which the land given to him, with the parsonage farm, house and buildings he had occupied, opposite the old cemetery, reverted to the town. These estates were doubtless improved by the different ministers until Rev. Ira Ingraham was installed colleague pastor with Mr. Allen, December 1, 1824, when an agreement was made with him under which the parish retained the beneficial use and the control of all parsonage or ministerial properties, from whatever source derived.

About the beginning of this century, Jonathan Chadwick gave the parish a State note of one thousand one hundred and seventy-five dollars, "the interest of which was to be applied to the support of a congregational minister in said society forever thereafter." February 10, 1804, an act of incorporation was obtained, by which a board of trust was created for the management of this and other funds. When the parsonage timber, wood and lands were sold, the proceeds were added to this fund, which increased till it yielded, in 1878, about four hundred dollars annually.

It would appear that Robert Haseltine, the pioneer, was the first man to keep an inn at Bradford, from the order of the General Court, September, 1655: "Ye Court being informed yt there is no ferry over Merrimack River, at Haverhill, the Court orders Robert Haseltine to keepe a fery over the said river: and to have of strangers 4d. a person if they pay presently: and 6d. if boekt: and to keepe entertaynement for horse and man, for one yeare, unless the General Court take further orders."

When Bradford celebrated the centennial of inde-

pendence, July 4, 1876, the residence of Jacob Kimball, near the common, the "Old Tavern," was appropriately decorated.

During the present century the Washington Hotel was kept by D. C. Knowles for more than forty-five years, for thirty-three of which it was conducted on temperance principles.

It has been remarked, and it is certainly remarkable, that in a town like Bradford, with over three thousand inhabitants, there should be only one church and only one house for religious worship. With all allowance for the fact that many of its inhabitants attend public worship in Haverhill, it is yet a circumstance worth noting. In the sketch of Haverhill in this volume, a somewhat extended account has been given of the advent of the Reverend Hezekiah Smith, which resulted in the organization of the First Baptist Church. Before visiting Haverhill, Mr. Smith had preached at New Rowley (now Georgetown), in 1764. He seems to have excited interest there, and a few years after some people in that place became Baptists, evidently under Mr. Smith's influence. The movement probably extended into the easterly part of the town of Bradford. Perhaps the most severe entry in Mr. Smith's diary is the following: "June 13, 1765: I went to the Fast, kept at Bradford, and heard Mr. Flagg and Mr. Tucker (Newbury) preach. And in my opinion, souls are to be pitied who sit under their preaching. Then went home, and expected to have more stones thrown into my chamber that night, after the ministers had been reflecting so much upon myself and the people who separated from them. The night before, they threw one stone through the glass into my chamber, soon after I got into bed." That outrage was in Haverhill. The stone—a large one—is said to be in the possession of one of Mr. Smith's descendants.

"January 15, 1766. I went to Bradford, and preached at Mr. Pike's from Acts 17: 6, 'Those that have turned the world upside down are come hither also.' It was a very solemn meeting. Thursday, 16th, I went to Solomon Kimball's, in Bradford, and preached from, 'I will arise, etc.' But before service, Milliken, the sheriff, and several of the head men of the Parish, came to prevent my preaching, and threatened me very much, should I proceed. At last, when they were engaged in their opposing talk, I began service, upon which they held their peace and went out, leaving us to carry on the service without any more disturbance." In 1774 Mrs. Martha Kimball, in a letter to Reverend Isaac Backus, the Baptist historian, gave an account of this meeting. She says: "The Rev. Hezekiah Smith was shamefully treated by many of the people of Bradford, who came, headed by the sheriff, Amos Millikin, at a time when Mr. Smith was to preach a sermon in our house at the request of my husband, and warmly contended with him, and





threatened him if he did proceed. However, Mr. Smith went to begin service by singing, notwithstanding the noise, clamor and threats of the people. But one of their number snatched the chair behind which Mr. Smith stood, from before him; upon which my husband desired Mr. Smith to tarry a little till he had quelled the tumult; but all his endeavors to silence them were in vain."

Mrs. Kimball adds the following account: "In the year 1768, in a very cold night in the winter, about nine or ten o'clock in the evening, I was taken prisoner and carried by the collector in the town where I live (Bradford) from my family, consisting of three small children, in order to be put into jail. It being a severe cold night, I concluded, by advice, while I was detained at a tavern some hours in the way to jail, to pay the sum of about £4 8s. legal money, for which I was made a prisoner, it being the ministerial rate. The reason why I refused paying it before was because I was a Baptist, and belonged to the Baptist Society in Haverhill, and had carried in a certificate to the assessors, as I suppose, according to law. After I had paid what they demanded, then I had to return two miles to my poor, fatherless children through the snow, on foot, in the dead of the night, exposed to the severity of the cold."

May 4, 1781, Mr. Smith "formed a branch of the Church (Haverhill) in Rowley—Georgetown." So says his diary.

After the controversy in the East Parish of Bradford, about the alleged Arminian heresy of Mr. Baleh, some or all these dissatisfied with the decision of the church and council "separated" themselves from the parish, bought a meeting-house of the Second Parish in Rowley, then building anew, and removed it into the East Parish in Bradford, where they set it up and held meetings without a settled minister. People converted by Mr. Smith to the Baptist way of belief joined them, and Mr. Smith mentions preaching from time to time, in the "North" meeting-house in Bradford. Those who frequented this meeting were principally residents of Bradford, Rowley and Newbury. After Mr. Smith formed the Rowley branch of his Haverhill Church, this meeting-house was taken back to Rowley and rebuilt there. This was about 1782. About 1785 this branch was set up as an independent church, Mr. Smith preaching a sermon on the occasion.

What was called "The Reformation in Haverhill and Bradford," began December 1, 1803, by a meeting at the house of John Marble, in Bradford, when Elder Elias Smith, of Portsmouth, preached. In 1805-6 forty-three persons were baptized in Bradford by Elders Smith and Jones. But when the church was organized it was established in Haverhill. Out of this movement grew the Christian Church of Haverhill.

The agreement in 1803 to build Bradford Academy had about thirty signers, who subscribed \$1218.80 to

put up the building. At the first term there were fifty-one pupils. In 1804 there were eighty-seven, of whom sixty were females. Afterwards one thousand four hundred and fifty dollars was subscribed in aid. The principal was not paid over, but the annual interest was guaranteed. About 1807 a subscription was also made, which was intended to yield an income of seventy-two dollars a year for twenty years. The amount was only paid, however, for five years, when the school became self-supporting. In 1817 there were one hundred and forty-seven pupils—sixty males and eighty-seven females. The high degree of intelligence and public spirit of the women of Bradford must largely be ascribed to the founding of this academy.

Daniel Noyes, who was preceptor in 1814, was afterwards a well-known druggist in Boston and always a warm and helpful friend of the academy.

The Merrimac Academy, established in 1821, in the East Parish, by the excellent Dr. Spofford and others, would certainly appear to a stranger to be an unwise and unnecessary movement, an excellent school being already in successful operation so near and in the same town. How much of the indisposition in that part of the town to support the Bradford Academy may have been due to the traditional friction and rivalry between the two sections of the town, it is not necessary to speculate. It is wonderful that both schools were sustained so long, and yet more wonderful that one has survived and grown strong. But the Merrimac Academy, also, did much good and was comparatively successful until about 1870, when it was merged in the Groveland system of public schools.

It is rather a curious than an important circumstance in relation to the early industries of Bradford, that there is said to have once been a pottery in operation on the Highlands, where common earthenware was made for a time.

In 1837, when the Andover and Haverhill Railroad was opened to Bradford, its leading shoe manufacturers are stated to have been Josiah Brown, Leonard Johnson, Samuel Heath, William Day & Company, J. P. Montgomery & Company, George K. Montgomery, Ordway & Webster, Humphrey Hoyt, Warren Ordway, Pressey & Fletcher and Guy Carleton, Jr., with Kimball Farrar in the leather business. These able business men gradually moved their plant to Haverhill, continuing to reside in Bradford, and this precedent has been followed ever since by the shoe manufacturers here.

After the Rebellion a small number of colored people settled in Bradford and organized a little church. Their location was soon changed to Haverhill, where they are known as the Calvary Baptist Church, on Ashland Street, and have recently settled the Rev. Mr. Roberts, formerly of Liberia.

In 1871 an organization was formed now known as the Bradford Farmers' and Mechanics' Institute.





*Geo. Bagshaw*





The first president was Warren Ordway; Secretary, William Hilton; Treasurer, George W. Ladd. The president in 1888 is Lieutenant E. E. Bradbury. Its lectures and meetings for discussion are well sustained, and its annual supper and reunion are conducted with a liberality and unanimity worthy of and expected from a place so characterized by the public spirit as the fine old town of Bradford.

### BIOGRAPHICAL.

#### HON. GEORGE COGSWELL.<sup>1</sup>

The story of this family has been told by Jameson in his elaborate work, "The Cogswells in America." The ancestor, John Cogswell, of Westbury Leigh, Wilts, England, a manufacturer of woollens, embarked at Bristol, May 23, 1635, with his wife and eight children, on the ship "Angel Gabriel." He was shipwrecked at Pemaquid, Maine, August 15th, but soon after was at Ipswich, where large grants of land were made to him at Chebacco (now Essex), for more than two hundred and fifty years cultivated by his descendants. Nathaniel Cogswell, great-grandson of John, born January 19, 1707, in Chebacco Parish, was in Haverhill early in life, and became a prosperous merchant on Water Street and a prominent citizen. He married, January 31, 1740, Judith, daughter of Joseph and Hannah (Peaslee) Badger. Joseph Badger descended from Giles, of Newbury, was also a merchant of Haverhill, who married a daughter of Colonel Nathaniel Peaslee. Nathaniel Cogswell had nineteen children, all of whom, according to Chase, were baptized in the meeting house of the First Parish in Haverhill. About 1766, Nathaniel Cogswell retired from business and went to live at Atkinson, where he gave the site for the first meeting-house, and was active in the business of the infant town. He had eight sons in the Revolutionary Army, who, in the aggregate, fulfilled a service of thirty-eight years—claimed as the longest rendered by any family in the country.

William, his tenth son, born at Haverhill, July 11, 1760, was a student in the family of his brother-in-law, Rev. Jonathan Searle, of Mason, New Hampshire, when the Revolutionary War broke out. Though not yet sixteen years old, he served from January 1, 1776, to January 1, 1777, in the company of his brother, Captain Thomas Cogswell, of Haverhill, Colonel L. Baldwin's regiment of Continental Infantry, and was at the siege of Boston. From January 1, 1777, to July 19, 1781, he was engaged in the study of medicine with Dr. (and General) Nathaniel Peabody, of Atkinson. Upon the last date he was appointed surgeon's mate and assigned to the hospital at West Point, where he was subordinate to Surgeon William Eustis, afterward Governor of Massachusetts. January 5, 1784, he was promoted to be surgeon-in-chief in

charge of that hospital and, June 20, 1784, upon the reorganization of the army by Congress, under the direction of General Washington, he was made surgeon-in-chief of the regular army of the United States, holding that position until August 12, 1785, when he resigned it and commenced the practice of medicine at Atkinson, New Hampshire. He had thus attained the rank of surgeon-general (or its equivalent) when less than twenty-four years of age, and given it up at twenty-five. July 22, 1786, he married his cousin Judith, daughter of General Joseph Badger, first of Haverhill and after of Gilmanton, New Hampshire. She attained her ninety-fourth year. Dr. Cogswell died at Atkinson, January 1, 1831. He was one of the founders of Atkinson Academy.

George Cogswell, his sixth son, was born at Atkinson, February 5, 1808. He received his early education at Atkinson Academy and studied medicine with his father. Dartmouth College, in 1830, gave him the degree of M.D. with the highest honors of his class, and in 1865 the honorary degree of M.A. He was also a private student with Professor Muzzey, of Dartmouth, and Dr. John D. Fisher, of Boston. In August, 1830, he commenced the practice of medicine at Bradford, continuing it successfully for many years, till obliged to retire from it by ill health. In 1841-44 he visited Europe, attending lectures in Paris, and studying in the hospitals of Paris and London. He had many medical students at Bradford and was considered a thorough anatomist. Within a few years he has performed capital operations. In 1844 he declined a medical professorship tendered him. He was active in forming the Essex North Medical Association, now merged in the Massachusetts Medical Society, under the title of the "Essex North District Medical Society," in which he not only retains his membership, but his interest, regularly attending its meetings and participating in its discussions. Dr. Cogswell had undoubtedly great natural gifts for his profession. A leading physician of Haverhill says: "He was the first physician in Essex North who made intelligent use of auscultation and percussion in the diagnosis of disease."

Dr. Cogswell was early active in the temperance and anti-slavery movements, and has been consistent in his devotion to the principles then adopted. He was a member of the Chapman Hall meeting in Boston, which organized the Republican party in Massachusetts, and is still contented to remain its adherent. He was a member of the Electoral College of Massachusetts in 1852 and 1868, which gave the vote of the State to General Scott and General Grant, respectively. In 1860 he was a member of the Massachusetts delegation in the National Republican Convention at Chicago, which nominated Abraham Lincoln for the Presidency. In 1858 and 1859 he was a member of the State Executive Council, Nathaniel P. Banks being Governor. In 1862, President Lincoln appointed him collector of internal revenue for the Sixth

<sup>1</sup> By John B. D. Cogswell.



District of Massachusetts. President Johnson removed him in 1866, and President Grant reappointed him in 1870. He held the position till 1875, when the office was consolidated with other districts. It was one of the most important districts in the country, and Dr. Cogswell administered it with marked fidelity and accuracy.

He has been a member of the First Parish Congregational Church, in Bradford, since 1831, and has been constantly ready and active in upholding it and promoting its usefulness and prosperity.

He was one of the original members of the Haverhill Monday Evening Club, organized in 1860, for literary and social purposes. He was chairman at its first meeting and at its twenty-fifth anniversary, November 19, 1885.

Dr. Cogswell has been many years a trustee of Atkinson Academy, and he is a trustee of the Peabody Academy of Science at Salem. He is a member of the American Association for the Advancement of Science, and of the New England Historic-Genealogical Society. When the Union Bank, in Haverhill, was organized, in 1849, he was elected its president, and when it became the First National Bank, in 1864, he was chosen to the same position, still holding it in 1888. He has long been vice-president of the Haverhill Savings Bank, and was for a while actively engaged in railroad affairs and president of a railroad in Essex County. Indeed, for many years and in many different departments he has been much employed in public and private trusts.

In 1878, when seventy years old, Dr. Cogswell made an extended tour in Europe, visiting the World's Fair in Paris, and traveling in Switzerland, Germany, Belgium and Holland, as well as the rural districts of England, Scotland and Ireland. He had visited Italy in the spring of 1841. Notwithstanding his advanced age, he was still an energetic traveler, and an active and enthusiastic sight-seer. With all his other occupations, he has in his life time found leisure to indulge the taste for farming, conceived when living upon the New Hampshire farm in youth, and during his second visit to Europe found much to enjoy in this department. He has done good work as an agriculturist in former years in Bradford, at his home property and in other parts of the town, particularly on the high lands at "Riverside," sloping down to the Merrimac. Almost contemporaneous with his citizenship in Bradford was Dr. Cogswell's connection with Bradford Academy, of which he has been a trustee for more than fifty years. He was a warm friend of Benjamin Greenleaf, its former distinguished preceptor. Treasurer for the larger part of the time, he has been constantly and intimately associated with its administration, even within the last year or two. The excellent condition of its finances must be ascribed to his successful management during years of doubt and struggle. The institution is now out of debt, and well equipped. An extended account of its

history is given elsewhere, but in this place may properly be claimed that Dr. Cogswell and his associates of the board, past and present, have given Bradford Academy fresh life, and have placed it upon an enduring foundation. He has been for some years, and still is, president of the board of trustees.

August 4, 1831, Dr. Cogswell married Abigail, daughter of Peter Parker, Esq., of East Bradford (now Groveland). She was born September 6, 1808, and died July 23, 1845. Their children were Abby Parker, born September 25, 1832, graduated at Bradford Academy, who married George F. Choate, of Salem, judge of Probate and Insolvency for the county of Essex. George Badger, born September 15, 1834, educated at Bradford and Gilmanton Academies, Dartmouth College, Harvard Medical School, was surgeon during the war, and for many years a successful physician at North Easton, Mass. His son, Charles H. Cogswell (Dartmouth College, 1880), is port physician of the city of Boston, being the third in regular medical descent from Dr. William, of Atkinson, and it is worthy of note that Dr. George Cogswell has several other grandsons, now prosecuting their studies with a view to increasing the ranks of the profession.

William Wilberforce, born January 22, and died August 5, 1837.

William, born August 23, 1838; educated at Phillips Academy, Dartmouth College and Dane Law School; lawyer at Salem and Boston; colonel Second Massachusetts and brevet brigadier-general in 1864; repeatedly mayor of Salem and member of both branches of the Legislature; at present, Representative in Congress.

Sarah Parker, born March 23, 1843; graduated at Bradford Academy. In 1846, Dr. Cogswell married Elizabeth, youngest daughter of Hon. Elisha Doane, of Yarmouth, Massachusetts. Their children were: Elisha Doane and Susan Doane, born Sept. 22, 1847. Susan died Nov. 29, 1847; Elisha died April 6, 1850.

Doane, born April 29, 1851; educated at Phillips Academy, (Andover), Dartmouth College and Boston Medical School; at present farmer at Riverside.

Caroline Doane, born August 2, 1852; graduated at Bradford Academy.

Dr. Cogswell was naturally a man of great energy, and through life has been remarkable for accuracy, promptness and punctuality. He has doubtless taken just pride in fulfilling his engagements, of every character, as a son, husband, father, friend, citizen, public servant and private trustee. In all matters of public concern he has been liberal, both of time, thought and money. As a friend and associate, he is reliable. One of his neighbors frequently says: "The doctor always does better than he agrees."

As a host, he has always been hospitable and genial.

Few men can look back upon so long a life of uninterrupted usefulness, and few, upon the very verge of four-score years, are so much relied upon in public and parochial business, and social affairs.





## APPENDIX.

### SALEM.

#### GIDEON BARSTOW.

Gideon Barstow, son of Gideon and Anna (Mead) Barstow, was born at Mattapoiset, September 7, 1783; died in St. Augustine, Fla., where he had gone for the benefit of his health, March 26, 1852; married Nancy, daughter of Simon and Rachel (Hathorne) Forrester, who is now residing in Boston. He descended in the sixth generation from William Barstow, who, at the age of twenty-three, embarked for New England with his brother George in the "True Love," John Gibbs, master, probably from the West Riding in Yorkshire; he was in Dedham in 1636, a freeman in Scituate in 1649, and the first settler in the present territory of Hanover,—a noted man of his day and a great land-holder; died in 1668, aged fifty-six; through William<sup>2</sup>, Benjamin<sup>3</sup>, Gideon<sup>4</sup>, Gideon<sup>5</sup>. Three or four of the later generations lived in Mattapoiset, and were largely engaged in ship-building. He first settled in Salem as a practicing physician, where he was considered skillful in his profession and attentive to its duties; afterwards a merchant engaged in foreign commerce; a member of both branches of Massachusetts Legislature; a Representative in United States Congress, 1821-23.

#### GAYTON PICKMAN OSGOOD.

Gayton Pickman Osgood, son of Isaac and Rebecca T. (Pickman) Osgood, was born in Salem, July 4, 1797; removed with his parents in early life to Andover, which was afterwards his place of abode; graduated at Harvard College, 1815; studied law with Benjamin Merrill, of Salem, where he began the practice of the profession; soon after returned to North Andover. He lived a retired life, and his range of study and reading was very extensive; several times elected a Representative in Massachusetts Legislature; Representative in United States Congress one term, 1833-35; married, March 24, 1859, Mary Farnham, of North Andover. He died June 26, 1861, aged sixty-four years.

#### JACOB CROWNINSHIELD.

Jacob Crowninshield, son of George and Mary (Derby) Crowninshield, was born at Salem, May 31,

1770; died at Washington, May 15, 1808; married June 5, 1796, Sarah, daughter of John and Sarah (Derby) Gardner (born 1773, died May, 1807). A brother of Benjamin W. Crowninshield, see *ante*. A merchant in connection with his father and brothers at Salem; Representative United States Congress, 1802-08. In 1805 he was appointed United States Secretary of the Navy by President Jefferson; declined the position on account of ill health. In Congress he was specially valued for his knowledge of marine and commercial matters, which was extensive and accurate. He was prompt and diligent in the performance of his duties, and possessed amiable manners, an open disposition and a liberal heart.

#### LITERATURE.

The Rev. Daniel Dorchester, D.D., who was pastor of the Lafayette Methodist Church from 1869 to 1872, has published many volumes of rare merit and value in addition to his work in the parishes over which he has been settled: "Concessions of Liberality to Orthodoxy," 1878; "The Problem of Religious Progress," 1882; "The Liquor Problem in all Ages," 1884; "The Why of Methodism," 1884; "Christianity in the United States from the Settlement to the Present Time," 1888. His works are extensively read and quoted.

As an illustration of the literary taste of Salem and its intellectual activity, the list of lecturers employed by the Lyceum is very significant, and is a proper conclusion to this subject. The Lyceum was founded in 1830, and was opened by Hon. Daniel A. White. In the list of lecturers from that time to 1878 we find John Brazer, Stephen C. Phillips, Henry Colman, Alexander H. Everett, Henry K. Oliver, C. W. Upham, Edward Everett, Rufus Choate, John Pickering, Leverett Saltonstall, William Sullivan, James Walker, S. G. Howe, Caleb Cushing, Charles T. Jackson, James Flint, W. B. O. Peabody, George S. Hillard, Ralph Waldo Emerson, (twenty lectures), Charles T. Brooks, Nehemiah Adams, Wm. M. Rogers, Alexander Young, Horace Mann, Jones Very, Oliver Wendell Holmes, George Bancroft, Henry Ware, Jr., Geo. Catlin, Jared Sparks, Samuel Osgood, Orville Dewey, A. P. Peabody, Convers Francis, Geo. E. Ellis, Charles Francis Adams, John G. Palfray, John





Quincy Adams, R. H. Dana, Jr., Ezra S. Gannett, Henry Giles, O. A. Brownson, Alonzo Gray, George Putnam, Wendell Phillips, E. P. Whipple, Theodore Parker, Henry W. Bellows, James T. Fields, John S. Dwight, Mark Hopkins, Samuel Johnson, Jr., Charles Sumner, Anson Burlingame, O. B. Frothingham, Louis Agassiz, Daniel Webster, Henry D. Thoreau, Lant Carpenter, Sylvester Judd, Jr., George Vandenhoff, Frances Ann Kemble, Thomas Starr King, G. P. R. James, Leonard Wood, E. H. Chapin, T. W. Higginson, Charles E. Norton, Charles H. Davis, George Sumner, W. H. Hurlbut, George W. Curtis, Henry Ward Beecher, Bayard Taylor, Prof. Guyot, John Pierpont, James Russell Lowell, Park Benjamin, F. D. Huntington, Moncure D. Conway, Frederick H. Hedge—a most illustrious list, whose influence was felt for many years on the mind and heart of the town. When we consider that the Lyceum Hall would contain but about six hundred persons, we are the more surprised at the distinguished characters of its courses, and in the absence of any considerable remuneration for the lecturers, the success of the institution must be attributed to responsive culture and mental activity of the community. Many of the ablest lecturers contributed many addresses, conspicuous among whom was Ralph Waldo Emerson, who appeared on that platform twenty times in his brilliant career.

## DANVERS.

### BANKS.

Some pages in regard to the banks of the town were overlooked when the manuscript was delivered to the publishers; and the newspapers of the town were not spoken of in any separate paragraph. A few words follow concerning these topics.

The earliest bank established in Danvers, prior to the division of the town, was the *Danvers Bank*, incorporated February 26, 1825. The *Warren Bank* was incorporated March 5, 1832. Both are Peabody institutions.

The *Village Bank* was chartered by the Legislature March 31, 1836, in compliance with a petition dated "Danvers, January 18, 1836," and signed by John Page, Moses Black, Elias Putnam, Jeremiah Stone, Allen Putnam, Daniel P. King and Jacob F. Perry. The petition read as follows:

"The undersigned, Citizens of Danvers and the neighboring towns in the County of Essex, respectfully represent: That the inhabitants of the Northerly and Easterly part of said town constitute a village of between fifteen and twenty hundred persons, a large portion of whom are actively engaged in business requiring the facilities of a Bank; and also the towns of Beverly, Wenham and Topsfield are connected with them in business; that they are now compelled to travel several miles for the purpose of transacting bank business, and are subject to much inconvenience. Wherefore we pray that we and our associates may

be incorporated as a Bank by the name of the Village Bank, with a Capital of one hundred and twenty thousand dollars, to be located at Porter's Plains (so called) in said Danvers."

The charter, granted in answer to this petition, was to extend to October 1, 1851.

The first meeting of the stockholders of the Village Bank was held "at Eben G. Berry's Tavern," on Friday April 22, 1836. Elias Putnam was chosen moderator and Moses Black, Jr., clerk. It was voted to accept the charter granted by the Legislature, and Elias Putnam, Jeremiah Stone and Eben Putnam were chosen to consider favorable locations for a banking-house. At adjournment, May 9th, the first board of directors were chosen, namely: John Page, Eben Putnam, Samuel Preston, John Perley, Elias Putnam, Daniel F. Putnam, Joseph Stearns, Amos Sheldon, Moses Black, Jr., Samuel Putnam, Nathaniel Boardman, Frederick Perley. It was reported "that Sleeper's house and land on the corner could be purchased for \$3000, and that it would be a favorable place for a Bank," and later this estate was purchased for \$2800.

It was a large brick building standing on the north-western corner of the main square of the Plains village. June 6, 1836, it was voted "an Engraving be taken, representing the location and situation of the Bank and vicinity for a picture on the bills." Lithographic reproductions of the old cut, recently printed on the checks of the bank, give a very good idea of the square as it appeared fifty years ago. In the great fire of 1845 the Sleeper Building was ruined and a smaller brick edifice was erected near the spot, Maple Street being then widened at that point. This structure, to which an extension on the south side has lately been added, was used by the bank until, in 1854, the large and fine building which it now occupies was erected on the opposite side of the street.

A special meeting was held October 5, 1840, to consider the expediency of surrendering the charter. On the question "Shall the Bank be continued?" there were two hundred and twenty-three yeas to ninety-three nays. In March, 1843, on the same question, the records show that by a slight majority of the whole number of stock votes, it was decided to surrender the charter. Most of those in favor of retaining the charter refrained from voting, but brought the matter before the Governor and Council, who, after the evidence, decided "that there was not a legal expression of a majority of the stockholders in favor of surrendering the charter." The following December the question came up once more, when those who thought it expedient to close up the bank again failed of a majority.

By an act May 2, 1849, the charter was extended to January 1, 1875. An increase of forty thousand dollars capital was authorized April 28, 1853, and still another increase of forty thousand dollars was authorized March 28, 1854. The capital thus having been



raised to two hundred thousand dollars, a reduction was afterward authorized to one hundred and fifty thousand dollars, February 13, 1862. The occasion of this reduction was the large loss sustained through non-payment of Southern paper at the breaking out of the Rebellion.

The par value of stock was then reduced from one hundred to seventy-five dollars.

In the fall of 1864 measures were taken to organize the bank as an association for carrying on the business of banking under the laws of the United States, and its name was subsequently changed to the First National Bank of Danvers.

At the first meeting of the directors, May 10, 1836, Elias Putnam was chosen president of the bank, and he held the office until his death, July, 1847. He had been foremost to see and meet the need of the establishment of such an institution, and it was largely owing to his firm and manly support in critical times that its charter was not surrendered. For further particulars of the origin of the bank and Mr. Putnam's connection therewith, see the sketch of his life in preceding pages. Moses Putnam, the second president, held the office until his decease, when, October 13, 1856, Daniel Richards was chosen his successor, and his term of office, covering more than thirty years, likewise ended with his life. Gilbert Augustus Tapley, the fourth and present president, was elected November 22, 1886.

The first cashier of the bank was Samuel B. Buttrick, who continued in office until May, 1841, when he returned to Salem, his former place of residence, where he recently died at an advanced age and highly respected by his fellow-citizens. He was succeeded by William L. Weston, who occupied the position for about forty-three years, resigning his place in March, 1884. The present incumbent is Mr. Benjamin E. Newhall.

The present board of directors, 1888, consists of Edwin Mudge, Samuel P. Fowler, Gilbert A. Tapley, John R. Langley, Charles H. Gould, William M. Carrier and Austin S. Richards. A complete list of directors, with their terms of service, here follows:

John Page.....	1836-39, 4 yrs.
Eben Putnam.....	1836-37, 2 yrs.
Samuel Preston.....	1836-45-48, 11 yrs.
John Perley.....	1836, 1 yr.
Elias Putnam.....	1836-46, 11 yrs.
Daniel P. Putnam.....	1836-38, 1861-5, 8 yrs.
Joseph Stearns.....	1836, 1 yr.
Amos Sheldon.....	1836, 1 yr.
Moses Black, Jr.....	1836, 1 yr.
Samuel Putnam.....	1836-40, 5 yrs.
Nathaniel Boardman.....	1836, 1 yr.
Frederick Perley.....	1836, 1 yr.
John Wright.....	1837-40, 21 yrs.
Joshua Sylvester.....	1836-52, 11 yrs.
Moses Black.....	1838-56, 19 yrs.
Daniel Richards.....	1840-86, 17 yrs.
George A. Putnam.....	1841-45, 5 yrs.
Aaron Putnam.....	1846-57, 12 yrs.
Joseph S. Black.....	1846-60, 15 yrs.
Moses Putnam.....	1847-55, 9 yrs.
Francis P. Merriam, of Middleton.....	1854-81, 29 yrs.
John A. Putnam.....	1854-81, 28 yrs.
Edwin Mudge.....	1855-88, 34 yrs.

John R. Langley.....	1855-60, 1882-88, 13 yrs.
Israel P. Boardman.....	1856, 1 yr.
Jacob Perry.....	1857-61, 5 yrs.
Israel H. Putnam.....	1858-60, 1861-84, 24 yrs.
Alfred Trask.....	1861, 1 year.
Samuel P. Fowler.....	1862-88, 27 yrs.
Gilbert A. Tapley.....	1862-88, 27 yrs.
Charles H. Gould.....	1882-88, 7 yrs.
William M. Carrier.....	1885-88, 4 yrs.
Austin S. Richards.....	1887-88, 2 yrs.

DANVERS SAVINGS BANK.—Under the name of the Danvers Savings Bank, Moses Putnam, Samuel Putnam, Elbridge Trask, their associates and successors, were incorporated March 20, 1850. Its first president, Gilbert Tapley, served from April 26, 1850, to March 30, 1859; his successors, Rufus Putnam, April, 1859, to November, 1875; Israel H. Putnam, January, 1876, to April 29, 1884; Augustus Mudge, from last date to the present. William L. Weston, the first treasurer, was elected to that office and also secretary, May 7, 1850, and after a service of nearly thirty-four years, resigned March 3, 1884. Israel H. Putnam then accepted the position of treasurer, which he continues to hold. A. F. Welch, assistant treasurer since April 11, 1884, was formerly teller in the National Bank. The first deposit was made May 13, 1850; there were three hundred and sixty-four deposits during the first year, amounting to \$31,646; and twenty-four payments, amounting to \$2823.72; the first dividend amounted to \$72.75. For the year ending May 1, 1887, there were 2015 deposits, amounting to \$138,587.84. Liabilities, May 1, 1887,—Deposits, \$1,065,621.57; profits, \$32,061.90, guaranty fund, \$33,300; total, \$1,130,983.47.

#### NEWSPAPERS.

The earliest newspapers published in Danvers were printed in the South Parish (now the town of Peabody,) and will be found referred to under the history of that town. *The Danvers Mirror* was first issued by H. C. Cheever, in October, 1870. It led a more or less precarious existence until November, 1875, when it was purchased by C. H. Shepard & Co., the firm consisting of Charles H. Shepard and his sister, Mary E. Shepard. Printing and editorial rooms were at once fitted up by the new proprietors in the Ropes Block, where the paper has since had its home. Mr. Cheever removed from town after selling *The Mirror*, but some years later returned, and for a short time published a paper devoted to the interests of the "Greenback" party. For a time an edition of the *Peabody Press* with the heading "*Danvers Monitor*" had a limited circulation, and several amateur publications have had a short existence. With these exceptions, *The Mirror* has held a monopoly of the local journalistic field since its establishment. Since January 10, 1885, Mr. Shepard has been sole proprietor, and he has always edited the paper. He is a native of Stetson, Maine, and lived in Texas from 1857 to 1866, where he was in the drug business, which business he at first engaged in here, opening, in





July 1873, the new store, in which he was succeeded by E. C. Powers. *The Mirror* has won a deservedly high reputation among newspapers of its class. It is ably conducted and is kept scrupulously clean. Its editorials are always pronounced in their view and in politics are stalwartly Republican. Its files are very rich in material for local history, and have been freely drawn upon in the preparation of the present sketch of Danvers. Early in 1876 a "Centennial Number" was issued in response to the invitation of the Exposition managers, in the preparation of which much care was taken, to make a valuable compendium of the history and condition of the town. Chief among the articles of historic value which have been from time to time contributed is a long and exceedingly interesting series of letters, contributed by Rev. A. P. Putnam, D.D., entitled "Danvers at Home and Abroad." Many facts and reminiscences have been thus preserved by Deacon S. P. Fowler, the late Deacon Samuel Preston, Rev. M. K. Cross, the late Hon. J. D. Philbrick, the late William R. Putnam, Miss Hattie P. Fowler and others; while among the more frequent general contributors are the names of Hon. Augustus Mudge, Rev. C. B. Rice, Hon. Arthur A. Putnam, George F. Priest, Charles H. Peabody, Edwin Mudge, from a trip round the world; Miss C. L. Turner, from the Sandwich Islands; Miss H. E. Jenners, from Europe. "Quad" and "A. S. K." contributors of locals from the Centre and Port respectively, are G. F. Priest and A. S. Kelly. W. E. Osborn and H. M. Kenniston have been associated with the printing department from the first.

#### EDWIN MUDGE.

Edwin Mudge, a shoe manufacturer, born August 4, 1818, was educated at the public and private schools of Danvers and at Andover Academy; resides in Boston one-half of the year,—his firm, E. & A. Mudge & Co., having had a store in Boston for thirty years, to which he has devoted his time. He was one of the selectmen in 1852 and 1853, and a member of the Legislature in 1868 and 1869, contributing all his salary (sixteen hundred and eighty-eight dollars) towards erecting the soldiers' monument in both of the towns of his district, Danvers and Wenham. He has been a director of the Village Bank (now the First National), since 1854, and one of the vice-presidents of the Danvers Savings Bank for several years.

He has spent one year and a half in foreign travel, making three tours—the first to Great Britain, Germany, Switzerland and France; the second extended seven hundred miles up the Nile, through Palestine, Constantinople, Athens and Italy; the third, around the world *via* California through Japan, China, India, Egypt, Spain, France and England, his wife accompanying him upon the two former and his daughter upon all of them. He has always been a thorough

temperance man in principle and practice, and in politics a strong Republican.

#### TOWN OF ESSEX.

##### A LONG WEDDED LIFE.

John Burnham, now eighty-nine years old (a descendant of the first John, who came in 1635), with his wife, now nearly eighty-one, commemorated the sixty-third anniversary of their marriage December 2, 1887, at their residence, near the North Church.

#### PEABODY.

##### WILLIAM KING.

William King, the ancestor of the King family in the vicinity of Peabody, at the age of forty, with his wife, Dorothy, and five children,—Mary, Kathryn, William, Hannah and Samuel—sailed from Weymouth, Dorsetshire, Eng., in March, 1635–36, for New England. He settled at Salem, and was admitted a freeman May 25, 1636. He received several grants of land, one of forty acres at Jeffrey's Creek (now Manchester-by-the-Sea), one of thirty acres at Royal Side, and one of forty acres in the northerly part of the territory now Peabody. His homestead was at Royal Side. In 1637 his name appears on the list of grand jurors. He was a member of the First Church, and in 1637 he identified himself with the Antinomian movement, and coming into opposition to the ecclesiastical authorities, he was admonished to sever his connection with that sect, under penalty of being disarmed. It is interesting to note in this early ancestor the same characteristic of independence in thought and action which distinguished Daniel Putnam King.

Mr. King succeeded the Hon. Leverett Saltonstall as Representative to Congress. Mr. Saltonstall was at the time of his death the president of the Essex Agricultural Society, and Mr. King delivered an address before the trustees of that society, June 25, 1843, on the death of Mr. Saltonstall. Mr. King held, at different times, the offices of secretary, vice-president and trustee of the society.

While in Congress he was prominent as a member of the Committee on Revolutionary Claims, and among other efforts in behalf of the veterans of the War of 1812, he labored earnestly for the granting of pensions to wounded privateersmen, as pledged by the act of June 26, 1812.

On the 11th of May, 1816, on a bill declaring that a state of war existed between this country and Mexico, one hundred and seventy-four voted in the affirmative and fourteen in the negative, including in the latter John Quincy Adams, Ashmun, Grinnell, Hudson and Daniel P. King. This minority was named, in a spirit of ridicule, "the immortal fourteen;" but Mr. King more than once afterward, on the floor of the House, upheld his position at that time, and in



his speech of February 4, 1847, on the general appropriation bill and the Mexican War, he said in explanation of his course: "This is a war of conquest, a war for the acquisition of territory; and the fixed determination of the Administration is, that that territory shall be slave territory." In the same speech he said: "But the course of the true patriot, to me, appears plain; the proud waves of slavery must be stayed,—so far, no farther,—it must not invade another inch of free soil. . . .

"For once let the South know that some Northern men have Northern principles; that though they love their favor and approbation much, they love more the favor and approbation of their own neighbors and constituents, and still more the approbation of their own consciences. On this great question of the extension of slavery, with all its fearful consequences, let it never be said of any one representative of the Free States that he sold his vote, and, 'like the base Judean,' for a few pieces of dirty silver, threw away a pearl worth more than all prospects of political

advancement—worth more than all prospects of earthly enjoyment."

Such language, and other equally outspoken sentiments in opposition to slavery in the same speech, at that period it required the highest courage to utter in Congress. In his speech of May 21, 1850, upon the California question and the ordinance of 1787, Mr. King reiterated his determination that by no act of his should one foot of slave territory be added to this country, and met the threats of disunion and civil strife with the most unflinching avowal of his principles, paying the highest tribute to the wisdom and statesmanship of Nathan Dane, the author of the famous ordinance of 1787.

In paying a tribute of respect to Mr. King in Congress, the Hon. Robert C. Winthrop said of him, "I can truly say that I have rarely met with a juster or worthier man, or with one more scrupulously faithful to every obligation to his neighbors, his country, and his God."

## ERRATA.

Despite earnest efforts to make the sketch of Danvers in the preceding pages free from errors, a few have been noticed, as follows:

On page 426, ninth line of the second column, for "daughter of Governor Winthrop," read "grand-daughter of Governor Winthrop," or "daughter of Governor Winthrop, the younger."

On page 440, near the end of the first column, at the commencement of the paragraph concerning the Mudge family, "1724" is a typographical error for "1624."

On page 448, last line but one of the second column, for "tight" read "tight," and on page 491, fourteenth line of the second column, "diary" should be "dairy."

On page 534, second column, the date of the sailing of the Eighth Regiment, November 7th, is given on the authority of Adjutant-General Schouler. A Danvers soldier says, however, the date was November 25th.

On page 522, in the sketch of Dr. Osgood, instead of "He was a son-in-law of Dr. Holten," read "He married a grand-daughter of Dr. Holten."

In the list of physicians of the town, the name of one of the most prominent resident practitioners, Dr. E. A. Kemp, does not appear. The writer cannot sufficiently blame himself for so strange and unpardonable an omission.

Page 547, second column, thirteenth line from bottom, read "is" for "was."

Page 552, first column, first line, read "men" for "man."

Page 563, first column, second line from bottom, read "solicitudes" for "solicitations."

Page 351, first column, eighth line from bottom, read, "In 1844, meeting."

Page 1795, first column, "of that city" should read "Lawrence."

Page 1882, first column, seventeenth line from top should read "In 1833 he."



# INDEX.

## A.

	PAGE
Abbot, Abiel.....(ill) 711	
Abbot Academy.....	1629
Abbot, John Emery.....	49
Abbott, Alfred A.....	XIV
Abbott, Wm. E.....(ill) 767	
Academies (see educational under town headings.)	
Adams, Benjamin.....	380
Adams family.....	949
Adams, John.....	813
Adams, William.....	641, 813
Alcott, Wm. P.....	597
Allen, George H.....(ill) 476	
Allen, E. W.....	54
Allen, Wm. S.....	IX
Alley, John B.....(ill) 360	
Alley, Hugh.....	1411
Alting, Jas.....	1451
Amesbury.....	1495
Introductory.....	1195
Boundaries.....	1495
Slaves and soil.....	1496
Settlement.....	1496
Saw-mills.....	1497
Townships.....	1498
First meeting-house.....	1499
First minister.....	1499
Indian roads.....	1501, 1502, 1507, 1511
Schoolmasters.....	1503
Lying-in matrons.....	1503
Society of Friends.....	1504
Taxes.....	1504, 1505
Meeting houses.....	1506, 1507
Free school.....	1509
King George's Wat.....	1510
The ferry.....	1508, 1512
Fornication.....	1512
War of Revolution.....	1513
Stacy's Rebellion.....	1515
First President of the United States.....	1515
Small pox.....	1516
Cannage business started.....	1516
Iron-foundry.....	1516
Academy established.....	1517
War of 1812.....	1517
Iron and nail company.....	1518
Mesonic order.....	1518
Silk culture.....	1519
Manufacturing.....	1520, 1521, 1521, 1527
War of the Rebellion.....	1522
Sparhawk's death.....	1525
Hattling business.....	1528
Cotton and woolen manufacturers.....	1528
Cannage business.....	1528
Schools.....	1529
General matters.....	1529
Newspapers.....	1530
Post-office.....	1530
Biographical.....	1530

## PAGE

Anderson, Galusha.....	55
Andrew, Chas. A.....XXXVI	
Andrews family.....	1206
Andrews, John.....	1768
Andrews, John.....	226
Andrews, Mrs. Joanna.....	1191
Andrew, Sir Edmund.....	10
Andover.....	1556
Early settlement.....	1556
List of settlers.....	1558
Division into North and South	
Parishes.....	1559
Inhabitants of.....	1560
Indian depredations.....	1561
Witchcraft (see also Witchcraft)	1562
Military.....	1561
French and Indian Wars.....	1561
Revolution.....	1570
Rebellion.....	1583
Resistance to taxation.....	1568
Formation of Constitution.....	1579
Powdermill.....	1582
Washington's visit.....	1583
Loyalty of citizens.....	1583
Andover Company.....	1583
List of officers and privates.....	1583
Memorial.....	1588
Tablet in hall.....	1589
Grand Army of the Republic.....	1590
Topography.....	1590
Churches.....	1592
South Parish.....	1592
South Church pastors.....	1595
West Parish.....	1603
Pastor of West Church.....	1603
Methodists.....	1606
Baptists.....	1606
Protestant Episcopal Church.....	1607
Universalists.....	1608
Free Christian Church.....	1608
Catholic Church.....	1609
List of native or resident minis-	
ters.....	1610
Schools.....	1616
Proprietors' fund.....	1612
Master Foster's School.....	1613
Punchard Free School.....	1613
Phillips Academy.....	1617
Abbot Academy.....	1620
Theological seminary.....	1623
Professors in the seminary.....	1631
Manufacturing and industrial.....	1641
Powder-mill.....	1641
Paper-mill.....	1641
Smith, Dove & Co.....	1650, 1651
Ballard Vale Manufacturing Co.....	1651
Craighead & Kintz Co.....	1655
Tyer Rubber Company.....	1655
Banks.....	1655
Insurance.....	1655

## PAGE

Appleton, Samuel.....	XVI
Appleton, John.....	XVI
Appleton, John, Jr.....	628
Appleton, Daniel.....	631
Appleton, Nathaniel.....	641
Appleton, James.....(ill) 659	
Atcy, Charles.....	46
Armatage, Jos.....	321
Atkinson, Benjamin.....(ill) 1552	
Atkinson, Moses.....	1790
Attorneys.....	XVI
Attwell, Richard I.....	318
Atwood, Edward S.....	52
Atwood, Julius W.....	598
Atwood, Moses.....	7011
Averill family.....	949
Avery, J. H.....	461
Ayer, John.....	1916
Ayres, Hannah.....	1193

## B.

Babcock, Rufus.....	54
Babcock, Wm. R.....	46
Babson, Fitz J.....	1353
Bachebier, D. H.....	522
Bachebier, Henry M.....	111
Bachra, George.....	1
Bachler, Stephen.....	213
Badger, Milton.....	1603
Badger, Moses.....	2012
Bailey, Eben C.....	1869
Bail y, Ebenezer.....	1869
Bald, W. D.....	261
Baker, D. C.....	260, (ill) 355
Baker, Charles.....	602
Baker, Edward.....	279, 355
Baker, John L.....(ill) 766	
Baker, Thomas.....	295
Bach, John.....	682
Baleh, John.....	2
Baldwin, John R.....	261
Ballard, M. H.....	590
Ballard, Wm.....	394
Ballou, Hosea.....	56, 467
Bancroft, C. F. P.....	1619
Bar of Essex County.....	18
Baker, James K.....	870
Barnabas, James.....	465
Barnard, Eleazar.....	62
Barnard, Thos.....	36, (ill) 49, 138
Barnard, Thos.....	1497
Barnard, Thomas, Jr.....	49
Barnard, Rev.....	1996
Barstow, Gideon.....	2111
Bartholomew, Richard.....	992
Bartlet, Wm.....(ill) 1804	
Barthett, Bailey.....	2009
Barthett, Isaac.....	2010
Barthett, Josiah.....	1856





	PAGE
Bartlett, Wm. F.....	2017
Bartlett, Wm.....	1767
Barry, Eugene.....	319
Bassett family.....	309
Batchelder family.....	850
Batchelder, H. F.....	523
Batchelder, Josiah.....	709
Batter, Edmund.....	991
Bayley, James.....	452
Bayley, Robert.....	1778
Beaman, C. C.....	53
Beane, Samuel C.....	44
Becket, Retire.....	106
Becket, Wm.....	106
Beede, Charles O.....	(ill) 375
Beede, Edward M.....	601
Bell, Wesley K.....	(ill) 673
Bench and Bar.....	XV
Benjamin, Charles A.....	181
Bennett, Josiah Chase.....	(ill) 369
Bennett, Samuel.....	293, 395
Bensel, James B.....	319
Bentley, Dr Wm.....	13, 43, 138
Berry, Eben, G.....	(ill) 566
Berry family.....	949
Berry, Thos.....	XXII, 633
Bertram, John.....	112, (ill) 239
Beverly.....	671
Physical features.....	674
Inds.....	676
Earliest white inhabitants.....	679
Early settlers.....	682
Chronology of events.....	683
First Church of Beverly.....	681
Incorporation.....	686
Narragansett War.....	688
Massacre of "Flower of Essex".....	688
Witchcraft (see also "Witchcraft").....	690
Pioneer families.....	693
Events of the 18th Century.....	695
Clegg's diary about Battle of Bunker Hill.....	704
Master rolls.....	706
Notable persons.....	709
Mother churches.....	711
First meeting-house.....	714
Baptist Church.....	715
Third Congregational Church.....	715
Civil history.....	716
Banks.....	716
Libraries.....	717
Charitable societies.....	717
Insurance companies.....	717
Earliest Sunday school in New England.....	718
Militia.....	718
Introduction of coal.....	721
Beverly Academy.....	721
Stage coaches.....	723
Universalists.....	723
Mexican War.....	724
"The California Fever".....	725
Whittier's poem on Rantoul, Jr.....	726
Beverly Insurance Co.....	727
Last survivor of the Revolution.....	727
Anti-slavery Society.....	730
Beverly in the Civil War.....	731
Street railways.....	735
Methodist Society.....	736
Cemeteries.....	736
Longevity.....	736
Roman Catholic Society.....	737
Schools and education.....	738
Fire Department.....	743
Water-Works.....	744
Societies.....	744

	PAGE
Post-office.....	745
Beverly Representatives.....	745
Shoemaking.....	747
Improvements.....	748
Census and statistics.....	750
Population.....	753
Biographical.....	754
Home of Moses Brown.....	(ill) 755
Brown coat-of-arms.....	(ill) 755
Biglow, Wm.....	113
Birchard, Eliphalet.....	595
Blair, John J.....	1603
Blake, Lyman H.....	1139
Blanchard, Nathaniel.....	1479
Blancys, The.....	1478
Blatchford, Hy.....	52
Blatchford, John.....	1359
Bodgett, George B.....	1128
Bumpsey, Philip H.....	(ill) 1813
Blunt, Wm. E.....	(ill) 2080
Blyman, Richard.....	1304
Boardman, Francis.....	(ill) 1127
Bolles, E. C.....	56
Bolles, Lucius.....	54
Bamer, Jos Edward.....	599
Boston & Maine Railroad.....	XVIX
Boston, Revere Beach & Lynn Railroad.....	e
Boston, Winthrop & Shore Line.....	e
Boswell, James A.....	463
Boswell, John A.....	1368
Botany and Zoology.....	IXXXIII
Boutine, Wm.....	XVIII
Bowditch, Nathaniel.....	11, 15, 110
Bowen, Dnane V.....	61
Bowley, Edwin.....	(ill) 2065
Boxford.....	947
First settlement.....	957
Witchcraft (see also "Witchcraft").....	958
General description.....	958
Religious history.....	959
First Parish.....	959
Second Parish.....	960
Third Parish.....	962
Early physicians.....	958
Military.....	962
Early companies.....	962
King Philip's War.....	962
Revolutionary struggle.....	963
War of 1812.....	963
War of the Rebellion.....	964
Schools, libraries, etc.....	964
Business and manufacturing.....	965
Distinguished natives.....	966
Lists of town officers.....	967
List of Representatives.....	967
Biographical.....	971
Boynton, Ebenezer.....	812
Boynton, E. M.....	1885, (ill) 1886
Boynton, Jonathan.....	812
Brace, Thos.....	581
Bradbury, Ebenezer.....	1778
Bradbury, John M.....	661
Bradbury, Theophilus.....	XXIII
Bradbury, Thos.....	1453, 1456
Bradford.....	2083
Rogers' plantation.....	2083
Resources and industries of town.....	2087
Erection of the town.....	2089
Old settlers.....	2090
First meeting-house.....	2090
First school house.....	2090
Early church history.....	2093, 2094
Indians and Indian deed.....	2097, 2107
Bradford Academy.....	2098, (ill) 2099, 2108
Merrimac Academy.....	2100, 2108
Small-pox.....	2100

	PAGE
Population.....	2100
Military.....	2102
Roster of soldiers.....	2103
Centennial celebration.....	2106
Colored people's settlement.....	2108
Biographical.....	2109
Bradford Academy.....	(ill) 2099
Bradford, Ebenezer.....	1138
Bradstreet, Anne.....	612
Bradstreet, Humphrey.....	1154
Bradstreet, Jonathan.....	811
Bradstreet, Nathaniel.....	1767
Bradstreet, Simon.....	378, 661
Braun, Isaac.....	(ill) 859
Braun, Milton P.....	(ill) 456
Brand, James.....	471
Brazier, John.....	50, 141
Bread, Allen.....	259
Breed, Andrews.....	260
Breed, Francis W.....	365, (ill) 364
Breed, Isaiah.....	(ill) 365
Breed, H. N.....	(ill) 67, 269
Breed, Stephen N.....	359, (ill) 358
Brenner, David.....	1365
Bridges, Robert.....	291
Briggs, Elijah.....	167
Briggs, Enos.....	167
Briggs, Geo. W.....	37
Brigham, Lincoln F.....	Iviii
Brockbanks, The.....	812
Brockwell, Chas.....	44
Brooks, Chas. T.....	116
Brooks, Henry M.....	225
Brown, Samuel.....	XVI
Browne, Wm.....	XVI, XVIII
Brown, Haydn.....	(ill) 1884
Brown, Isaac.....	1225
Brown, Jonathan.....	1538
Brown, John, Sr.....	992
Brown, John B.....	(ill) 641
Brown, Joshua.....	168
Brown mansion and arms.....	(ill) 759
Brown, Moses.....	(ill) 1508
Brown, Moses.....	709, (ill) 755, 1766
Brown, Nathaniel.....	226
Brown, Nicholas.....	975
Brown, Robert.....	18
Brown, Wm. A.....	(ill) 1249
Brown, Wm. G.....	(ill) 668
Bruce, Chas. C.....	1139
Bulber, Samuel M.....	261
Bullum, James N.....	261
Burley, Edward.....	709
Burley, Wm.....	709
Burnham, Andrew.....	1194
Burnham, George P.....	1199
Burnham, Jonathan.....	1182
Burnham, Lamont G.....	(ill) 1193
Burnham, Parker.....	1205
Burnham, T. O. H. P.....	1198
Burpe, Thomas.....	815
Burt, Austin.....	1606
Burrell, John T.....	60, 601
Burrell, John.....	XVI
Burrell, Theophilus.....	XXIII
Burrell, The.....	1478
Burrongs, George.....	152
Burton family.....	850
Buxton, John and Anthony.....	993
Byfield, Nathaniel.....	818

C.

Cabot family.....	709
Cabot, Joseph S.....	225
Cadwell, Alexander.....	(ill) 1846
Cadley, Samuel.....	226



	PAGE		PAGE		PAGE
Calman, Henry.....	38	County officers.....	viii, ix, x	Educational:	
Carleton, James H.....	(ill) 2073	Cranch, William.....	xxix	Early schools.....	475
Carlile, Thomas.....	46	Cressy, Oliver S.....	1226	First Grammar School.....	476
Carricr, Martha.....	1561	Crocket, Uriel.....	(ill) 1122	School code.....	476
Caruthers, Wm.....	471	Cromack, Joseph C.....	602	High Schools.....	480
Chadha, Aaron W.....	466	Cropley, Jacob M.....	(ill) 1126	Modern schools.....	482
Chandler, The.....	820, 821, 826	Crosby, Alpheus.....	118	Danvers Village.....	484
Chaplin, Jeremiah.....	461	Cross, Henry M.....	(ill) 1851	Early settlers in.....	485
Chase, P. M.....	522	Cross, Stephen and Ralph.....	1752	Fire in Danvers.....	487
Chase, R. F.....	474	Crowell, Robert.....	1172	Danversport.....	488
Chase, Stephen.....	380	Crowley, Daniel.....	472	Description of.....	489
Cheever, Amos.....	1281	Crowninshield, Benj.....	11	Early settlers of.....	490
Cheever, Edward.....	400	Crowninshield, Edward A.....	119	Tapleys and Tapleyville.....	494
Cheever family.....	602	Crowninshield family.....	111	Temperance.....	495
Cheever, George B.....	53, 142	Crowninshield, Jacob.....	11, 2111	Fire Department.....	497
Cheever, Samuel.....	1635	Cummings, David.....	xxxi	Anti-slavery movement.....	503
Cheverus, John.....	56	Cummings, Maria.....	163	Railroads.....	508
Chipman, John.....	xxix	Currier, John, Jr.....	1547, 1786	The centennial.....	509
Choate, David.....	1203	Currier, W. H. B.....	1441	Division of Danvers.....	511
Choate family.....	1207	Curtin, Enoch.....	313	Industrial.....	518
Choate, John.....	xviii, 630	Curwin, George.....	168	Agriculture.....	518
Choate, Joseph H.....	151	Curwin, George R.....	31, 41	Shoe business.....	519
Choate, Rufus.....	(ill) xxxi, xci, 15, 150, 1291	Cushing, Caleb.....	xvii, (ill) xxxvii, 1451, 1790	Brick-making.....	520
Churches (see churches under each town heading)		Cushing, John N.....	1780	Physicians.....	521
Church of All Saints.....	(ill) 756	Cushing, Stephen.....	602	Attorneys.....	523
Church of Immaculate Conception.....	(ill) 1795	Cutler, Rev. M.....	1210, 1213, 1215, 1217	Danvers Lunatic Hospital.....	523
Clapp, Dexter.....	44	Cutler, Rufus.....	1225	Literary societies.....	523
Clark, Daniel.....	1198			Rowditch Club.....	524
Clark, De Witt S.....	43			Danvers Women's Association.....	524
Clark, Peter.....	137			Secret societies.....	524
Clark, Peter.....	451			Civil history.....	525
Clark, Seth.....	1469, (ill) 1468			Town clerks and records.....	526
Clark, Thomas J.....	(ill) 1493			Moderators.....	527
Clarke, Wm.....	992			Representatives.....	527
Claxton, Timothy.....	lxxxiv			Treasurers.....	527
Cleveland, Ebenezer.....	1361			Selectmen.....	528, 529
Cleveland, John P.....	48			Civil War.....	531
Cleveland, John.....	1167, 1168, 1172			Banks.....	2112
Cleaves, Nathaniel, diary of.....	701			Danvers Bank.....	2112
Clement family.....	1910, 1913, 1917, 1927			Warren Bank.....	2112
Clement, Harrison D.....	870			Village Bank.....	2112
Cleveland, Charles D.....	142			Danvers Savings Bank.....	2113
Cleveland, Henry R.....	16			Newspapers.....	2113
Cleveland, Richard J.....	147			Davis, Edward F.....	560
Coe, Wm.....	1537			Davis, Edward S.....	(ill) 357
Coates, David.....	1752			Davis, George L.....	(ill) 1693
Cobbet, Thos.....	265			Davis, Joseph.....	(ill) 377
Collyn, Tristram.....	1910			Davis, Thomas.....	1911
Coggin, Jacob.....	594			Davis, Wm. T.....	161, 1535, 1691, 1706, 1860
Cogswell, Adison.....	(ill) 1208			Dearborn, Henry A. S.....	xxviii
Cogswell, George.....	(ill) 2169			DeLong, H. C.....	469
Cogswell, Jno. B. D.....	1893, 2083			Denison, Daniel.....	619
Cogswell, John.....	1154			Denison, Joseph.....	604
Cogswell, Joseph G.....	642			Dennison, John.....	583
Cogswell, Nathaniel.....	xxix			Derby, Caroline R.....	173
Cogswell, Rufus.....	1194			Derby, Elias Hackett.....	xli, 11, 14, 66, 71, 80, 83, 175, 1012
Cogswell, Wm.....	226			Derby family.....	169
Coit, Thos. W.....	46, 145			Dexter, Thomas.....	395
Colby, Abraham.....	(ill) 1479			Dexter, Thomas.....	1409
Colby, Joshua.....	1544			Dexter, Timothy.....	1765
Coldam, Clement.....	295			Dickinson, E. W.....	461
Cole, Robert.....	991			Dillingham, F. A.....	469
Colleges (see "Educational" under town headings)				Dinnan, Jas.....	421
Collyer, I. J. P.....	602			Dixey, Wm.....	251
Colman, Henry.....	147			Dodge, A. W.....	1226
Colman, Moses.....	(ill) 1735			Dodge, Francis.....	1225
Conant, Roger.....	2, 19, 161, 661			Dodge, Grenville M.....	556, (ill) 557
Conkeld, Cornelius.....	1419			Dodge, Miss Mary A.....	1226
Cooper, Jas. W.....	1363			Dole, Richard.....	815
Conket, Thos.....	582			Donovan, Jno. C.....	612
Corless, George.....	1919			Dove, Jno.....	1651, (ill) 1652
Corrington, Elias.....	48, 110			Dow, Ezekiel.....	595
Cortis, Zachariah.....	992			Dow, Moses.....	594
Cornin, Jonathan.....	xvi, 691			Downing, Amos W.....	(ill) 2082
				Downing, Sir George.....	994





	PAGE
Drinkwater, Arthur.....	463
Ducachet, Henry W.....	46
Dudley, George T.....	578
Dudley, Samuel.....	1198
Dummer Academy.....	1719
Dummer, Richard.....	1717, 1719
Dunbar, Asa.....	36
Duncan, James H.....	(ill) xlv, 204
Dungeon Rocks.....	341
Dunning, Wm. H.....	1363
Dwinell, Israel E.....	52

**E**

Eames, Ezra.....	(ill) 1407
Eaton, Joseph W.....	465
Eaton, Peter.....	2012
Eaton, Wm. W.....	522
Eastman, C. L.....	602
Eddy, R.....	1298
Edwards, Bela Bates.....	1636
Edwards, Justin.....	1699
Elliott family.....	950
Emanuel Church.....	(ill) 1290
Emerson, Brown.....	52
Emerson, John.....	1305
Emerson, Michael.....	1326
Emerson, Ralph Waldo.....	1154
Emery, Eliphalet.....	1893
Emery, George E.....	318
Emery, Samuel H.....	62
Emery, Samuel M.....	(ill) 1876
Endicott, Capt John.....	2, 3, 5, 7, 38
Endicott, Governor John, b. 8, 19, 44, 164, 126, (ill) 228.	
Endicott, Robert.....	710
Endicott, Wm.....	427
Endicott, Wm. C.....	(ill) ill, 150
English, Philip.....	8, 44, 198, 661
Essex.....	1151

Introductory.....	1153
Persons of prominence from.....	1153
First English residents.....	1153
Original landholder.....	1155
Early inhabitants.....	1155
Mason's shield.....	1155
Indian cunning.....	1155
Attorneys and notaries.....	1159
Schools.....	1161
Improvement in general.....	1161
Industrial.....	1156
Farming.....	1156
Fishing.....	1157
Brewing.....	1157
Early boat building.....	1157
Cordage.....	1158
Saw and grist-mills.....	1158
Ship building.....	1158
Spar making.....	1159
Printing.....	1159
Blacksmithing.....	1159
Wheelwright.....	1159
Painters.....	1160
Tanning.....	1160
Shoe manufacturing.....	1160
Order-mills.....	1160
Provision dealers.....	1160
Express business.....	1160
Seed planting.....	1160
Ice business.....	1160

Churches.....	1161
First Church minister.....	1162
Second minister.....	1165
Whitfield's power as an orator.....	1166
Davenport the fanatic.....	1166
Church troubles.....	1167
Third minister.....	1168
Church of Separatists.....	1168

First Baptist preaching.....	1176
First religious newspaper.....	1176
Universalist Society.....	1172
Military.....	1179
Pepnot War.....	1179
King Philip's War.....	1179
Narragansett.....	1179
Indian troubles.....	1180
French War.....	1180
Battle of Bunker Hill.....	1181
War of 1812.....	1181
Soldiers in Rebellion.....	1185
Witchcraft (see also "Witchcraft").....	1186
Court proceedings.....	1187
Slavery in Chelmsco.....	1187
Grave yard robbery.....	1188
Incorporation of town.....	1190
Town officers.....	1190
Post-office.....	1190
Physicians.....	1190
The professions.....	1191
Members of Legislature.....	1191
Temperance organizations.....	1191
Public commemoration.....	1191
Essex Branch Railroad.....	1192
Hog Island.....	1193
Centenarians.....	1194
Summer Resorts.....	1195
Historical houses and localities.....	1195
Congregational Meeting-House.....	1197
Name Chelmsco, significance of.....	1197
Grand Army.....	1197
Prominent persons.....	1198
Descendants of Jno. Cogswell.....	1199
Early surnames.....	1200
Biographical.....	1200
Common Point.....	1210
Miscellaneous.....	1210
A long wedded life.....	2111

**Essex County:**

Introductory.....	1
Plymouth Council.....	1
Massachusetts colony.....	1
Courts.....	ii, iii, iv, x
Organization of county.....	iii
Population.....	iv
County officers.....	viii, ix, x
Lawyers.....	xiii
Bench and bar.....	xv
List of bar.....	ix
Modes of travel.....	ix
Science in Essex County.....	ix, xvi
Geology and mineralogy.....	ix, xvi
Botany and zoology.....	ix, xvi
Early Lyceums, spirit of.....	ix, xvi
Miscellaneous.....	ix, xvi
Salem.....	1
Lynn.....	249
Lynnfield.....	377
Saugus.....	391
Danvers.....	424
Ipswich.....	566
Beverly.....	671
Methuen.....	769
Georgetown.....	794
Lawrence.....	861
Middleton.....	929
Boxford.....	957
Topsfield.....	972
Peabody.....	989
Mablehead.....	1058
Rowley.....	1128
Essex.....	1153
Hamilton.....	1210
Wenham.....	1229
Manchester.....	1249

Gloucester.....	1236
Rockport.....	1304
Nahant.....	1408
Salisbury.....	1441
Saundersville.....	1472
Amesbury.....	1495
Merrimac.....	1535
Andover.....	1556
North Andover.....	1657
Groveland.....	1694
Newbury.....	1706
Newburyport.....	1731
West Newbury.....	1860
Haverhill.....	1893
Braintree.....	2053

Essex Agricultural Society.....	xvii
Essex Institute.....	151
Essex North District Medical Society.....	xcix
Essex South Medical Society.....	xcix
Estes D. Gordon.....	(ill) 1531
Estey family.....	360
Evereth, Jos.....	1191
Evereth, Mary.....	61
Evereth, Jno.....	1283

**F**

Fabius, Wm.....	XXXXV
Fair, Wm.....	1771
Farley, Michael.....	619
Farrham, Daniel.....	xxiv, 1714
Faulkner, Enoch.....	1227
Fay, Richard S.....	(ill) 353
Felt, Joseph B.....	1112, 1218
Felton, Cornelius C.....	1868, (ill) 1880
Felton, Samuel M.....	(ill) 1883
Fisher, Ebenezer.....	56
Fisher, Joshua.....	710
Fisher, Nathaniel.....	45, 111
Fisheries, Treaties of.....	1326
Fisk, Samuel.....	35, 46
Fiske, Wm.....	816
Fitch, Jabez.....	581
Fitz, Daniel.....	590, (ill) 655
Firmen, Giles.....	1907
Fletcher, James.....	470
Flint, Charles L.....	(ill) 953
Flint family.....	950
Flint, Kenball.....	(ill) 2078
Flint, James.....	13, 141
Flower of Essex.....	186, 219, 688
Folly Hill.....	424
Foster, Ann.....	150
Foster, Caleb.....	(ill) 247
Foster, H. W.....	151
Forbes, Henry P.....	463
Forster, Israel.....	(ill) 1295
Foster, Benj.....	459
Foster, Gideon.....	1011
Foster, Jedediah.....	xxv, 1
Foster, W. H.....	138
Fowler, Edgat.....	523
Fowler, S. P.....	(ill) 553
Frankland, Sir Harry.....	1073
Frank, James P.....	61
French, Jonas H.....	(ill of res.) 1322, (ill) 1351
French, Jonathan.....	1567
Freddie, Levi.....	589, 612
Frost, W. G.....	623
Frothingham, Octavius B.....	50
Frothingham, Wm.....	403
Frye, Peter.....	xxvii
Fuller, Daniel.....	(ill) 956
Fuller family.....	950
Fuller, Maria A.....	37
Fuller, Timothy.....	939



G.	PAGE
Galbraith, John .....	603
Gale, Wakefield .....	1363
Gallison, John .....	xxx
Galloupe, Chas. W. .... (ill) 1183	
Galloupe, Isaac F. .... (ill) 568	
Gardens, Nicholas .....	1437
Gardner, F. A. ....	523
Gardner, A. P. .... (ites of) 1226	
Garrison, Wm. Lloyd .....	(ill) 1782
Gause, Henry C. ....	151
Gedney, Bart. ....	xvi, 691
Georgetown .....	794
Description of .....	794
Topography .....	791
Land grants .....	798
Early pioneers .....	799
Parish organization .....	817
Churches .....	817
Education .....	821, 822
Schools .....	822, 823
Library .....	824
Parish and religious movements .....	825
General town history .....	830
Cemeteries .....	842
Manufacturing interests .....	843
Military history .....	848
Modern history .....	852
Biographical .....	859
Gilbs, Henry .....	xviii
Gibbs, Josiah W. ....	142
Giddings, John E. .... (ill) 564	
Gibbs, B. K. ....	798
Gilbert, Addison .....	(ill) 1333
Glenester .....	1298
Settlement .....	1298
Growth .....	1299, 1300
Government .....	1302
Churches .....	1304
First Parish .....	1304
Second Parish .....	1308
Third Parish .....	1309
Fourth Parish .....	1310
Fifth Parish .....	1314
Universalists .....	1342
First Soc. ....	1313
Second Soc. ....	1314
Fourth Soc. ....	1314
Fifth Soc. ....	1315
Sixth Soc. ....	1315
Seventh Soc. ....	1315
Baptists .....	1315
Second Baptist Church .....	1315
Methodists .....	1316
Congregationalists .....	1317
Roman Catholics .....	1318, (ill) 1319
Episcopalian .....	1321
Swedenborgian .....	1321
Post-office .....	1331
Educational .....	
Schools .....	1322, 1323
Lyceum .....	1321
Libraries .....	1324
Newspapers .....	1326
Fisheries .....	1325
Review of treaties .....	1327
Industries .....	1330
Ship-building .....	1330
Foreign and domestic trade .....	1334
Quarries .....	1334
Granite companies .....	1333
Military .....	1333
Indian wars .....	1333
Capture of Louisburg .....	1333
Revolutionary struggle .....	1331
Revolutionary soldiers .....	1331, 1335

	PAGE
Privateering .....	1336
War of the Rebellion .....	1340
Rosters .....	1341
Biographical .....	1351
Goodell, Jonathan W. .... (ill) 379, 371	
Goodell, Robt. ....	991
Goodlines The .....	1207
Goodhue, Benj. ....	11
Goodwin, Alfred E. .... (ill) 1562	
Goss, Thos. ....	1459
Gould family .....	951
Gray, Wm. ....	11
Gray, John J. ....	57
Gray, Wm. ....	111
Gray, Adolphus W. ....	1733
Green, Joseph .....	453
Green, Thos. ....	460
Greenleaf, Simon .....	xxxv
Greenleaf, Jonathan .....	1753
Griswold, Alex. V. ....	16
Grosvener, David A., Jr. ....	522
Groveland .....	1694
Description .....	1694
Early settlers .....	1694
Erection of meeting-house .....	1694
Lists of early church members .....	1695
Later churches .....	1696, 1703
School committee .....	1697
School buildings .....	1697
Present school system .....	1698
Military .....	1698
Revolution .....	1698
Rebellion .....	1701
Roster of soldiers .....	1702
Incorporation .....	1699
Town-meetings .....	1700
Selectmen .....	1700
Moderators .....	1700
Representatives .....	1700
Ferry .....	1703
Insurance company .....	1703
Banks .....	1703
Industries .....	1703, 1704
Biographical .....	1706
Gunnison, Wm. .... (ill) 1333	
Gushee, Edward M. ....	16
<b>H.</b>	
Hager, D. B. ....	163
Haines, George F. ....	61
Hale, E. J. M. .... (ill) 2067	
Hale, Benj. .... 1368, (ill) 1811	
Hale, Rev. Edward E. ....	21
Hale, John .....	691
Hale, Josiah E. .... (ill) 1814	
Hale, Moses .....	1818, 1139, 1718
Hamilton .....	1210
Introductory .....	1210
Divisionists .....	1211
Churches .....	1212
First Church built .....	1212
Second Church building .....	1213
Early history of .....	1214
Sabbath-schools .....	1217
Church rebuilt .....	1219
First Congregational Society .....	1220
Universalist Society .....	1220
Asbury Camp Meeting Association .....	1220
Schools .....	1213, 1221
Incorporation .....	1217
Political .....	1222
Military .....	1223
Revolution .....	1224
Rebellion .....	1224
Roster of soldiers from Hamilton .....	1224

	PAGE
Biographical .....	1220
Population .....	1227
Business interests .....	1227
Burial Grounds .....	1228
Miscellaneous .....	1228
Hammatt, Abraham .....	612
Hanford, Chas. H. ....	603
Hanford, J. H. ....	602
Hanaden, Jonathan .....	12
Hardy, Jos. ....	106
Harmon, Nathan W. ....	xlv
Harrington, Leonard B. .... (ill) 246	
Harriman, Jonathan .....	842
Harris, Samuel .....	591
Hart, George D. ....	261
Haseltine family .....	2060, 2107
Haskell, Daniel H. ....	1784
Haskell, Wm. Henry .....	(ill) 1551
Hathaway, Wm. F. ....	1120
Hathorne, Wm. ....	xvi
Hathorne, John .....	xvii, 691
Haverhill .....	1893
Name .....	1893
Location .....	1893
The Wards .....	1894
Early settlers .....	1895
Geology of .....	1896
Fauna and flora of .....	1896
Topography of .....	1901
Settlements .....	1905
The Pentucketts .....	1905
Indian deed .....	1909
Building of the town .....	1911
First town meeting .....	1911
First settlement .....	1913
Churches .....	
First meeting-house .....	1896
Early ministers .....	1899
Their influence .....	1906
New meeting house .....	1920
Resignation of Mr. Ward .....	1925
Settlement of Mr. Rolfe .....	1941
New meeting house .....	1947
Settling ministers .....	1971
Baptists .....	1996, 2017
Episcopacy .....	2011
Church work .....	2016
Congregationalists .....	2017
Universalists .....	2017
St. James' Catholic Church .....	2018
Division of lands .....	1913
Valuation of early lands .....	1914
Early commerce .....	1915
Framing days .....	1919
Indians .....	1919, 1938, 1941, 1942, 1946, 1949
Whipping post .....	1920
Ox common .....	1921, 1929
Early orchards .....	1921
Saw-mill .....	1922, 1947
Grist-mill .....	1923
Laying out meadows .....	1925
First prison .....	1925
First death .....	1926
The ferryman .....	1925, 1926
The blacksmith .....	1927
The schoolmaster .....	1927
Schools .....	1927, 1928
Fines for neglect to attend town meeting .....	1928
Duties of selectmen .....	1930
Length of town-meetings .....	1931
A freeman's oath .....	1932
The shoemaker .....	1933
Sheep-raising .....	1935
Dispute about town boundaries .....	1936
Small-pox .....	1946





	PAGE
Witchcraft (see also "witchcraft").....	1965
War about the Commons .....	1969
Slavery in Haverhill .....	1973
Emigration .....	1976
Local events .....	1978
Boundary line dispute .....	1984
Frontier warfare.....	1990
French War.....	1992
Fire Club.....	1993
Controversy in West Parish .....	1995
Revolutionary War.....	1998
Visit of Washington.....	2002
Business after the War of Revolution .....	2002
Schools and societies.....	2007
The press.....	2019, 2020
Industries and manufacturing .....	2021
Civil war.....	2025
Rosters of soldiers and marines .....	2027
Population .....	2030
School and city statistics .....	2031
Town officers and representatives.....	2031
Grand Army.....	2033
Banks .....	2033
Societies.....	2034
Biographical .....	2036
Hawkes, Adam .....	395
Hawkes family.....	398
Hawthorne, John.....	322
Hawthorne, Julian .....	115
Hawthorne, Nathaniel.....	14, 16, 113, 742
Hazen, John and Samuel.....	811
Hazen, Nathan W.....	xxx1
Healy, J. J.....	1329, (ill) 3381
Healy, J. W.....	595
Henneman, Nathaniel.....	206
Herrick, A. F.....	602
Herrick, Henry.....	702
Hewes, James T.....	38
Higginson, Anna.....	981
Higginson, Francis .....	229, 136
Higginson, John.....	xvi, 23, 32
Higginson, Stephen.....	xvii
High, Wm. C.....	612
Hicks, Edward W.....	(ill) 362
Hill, Wm. M.....	227
Hobbs, Clarence W.....	318
Hodge, Michael.....	1759
Hodge, Michael.....	xxxi
Hodgkins, Joseph.....	618
Hodges, Benj.....	67
Holborn, F.....	498
Holbrook, William.....	1139
Holmes, Oliver W.....	1134
Holman, Edward.....	596
Holman, Sydney.....	463
Holroyd, John.....	464
Holt, Thomas.....	1173
Holton, Samuel.....	445, 521
Holyoke, Edward.....	162
Holyoke, Dr. Edward A.....	10, 137, 169
Hozel, George.....	253, 260, (ill) 352
Hood, M. H.....	(ill) 444
Hood, Richard.....	1411
Hozel, Richard.....	259
Hosper, Robert.....	417
Hopkins, Daniel.....	51
Hopps, James M.....	151
Horton, Nathaniel.....	1739
Hosford, B. F.....	(ill) 2663
Hosmer, George H.....	133
How, George O.....	(ill) 1332
How, David.....	2669
Howard, R. B.....	1361
Howe, Benj.....	596
How, Isaac R.....	xxxix

	PAGE.
How, Joseph S.....	769
Howe, Moses A.....	602
Howe, Nathaniel.....	643
Howe, W. G..... (ill)	1903
Hubbard, Wm.....	582, 605
Hudson, Thomas.....	395
Humphrey, John.....	294, 591
Humphrey, John.....	1473
Hunt, Ebenezer.....	522
Hunt, Wm.....	237, (ill) 236
Huntingdon, Arthur L.....	227
Huntington, Asahel.....	xx
Huntington, John.....	47
Hurd, Isaac.....	261
Hurd, Y. G.....	(ill) 666
Huse, Thomas.....	1779
Hutchinson, Anne.....	6, 20
Hutchinson, Col. Israel.....	451
<b>I.</b>	
Ingalls, Edmund.....	251, 259
Ingalls, Francis.....	254, 259, 1472
Ingersoll, Richard.....	428
Ingersoll, Nathaniel.....	428
Ingalls family.....	951, 1479
Ingalls, Wm.....	1178
Ipswich.....	506
Description of.....	507
Indians and customs.....	507
Planters.....	508
Pioneers.....	509
Incorporation.....	509
Early settlers' names.....	510
Government and officers.....	511
FUGITIVE.....	512
Hog-ringers.....	513
Fence-viewers.....	513
Town crier.....	513
Roads and turnpikes.....	514
Bridges and canals.....	515
Carriages.....	515
Mail service.....	515
Powder-house.....	515
List of voters.....	516
Villages.....	516
Topography.....	516
Old places.....	518
Ecclesiastical.....	519
Organization of the first church.....	519
Early parishes.....	580
South Parish and Church.....	589
Linebrook Church.....	591
Baptist Society.....	597
Methodist Episcopal Church.....	599
Unitarian Society.....	603
St. Joseph's Catholic Society.....	603
Educational.....	604
Grammar School.....	604
First teachers.....	605, 606
Manning school.....	607
District schools.....	608
Ipswich Female Seminary.....	610
Sunday schools.....	610
Libraries.....	611
Books.....	611
News-papers.....	611
The Burley Fund.....	611
Military.....	612
Pequot War.....	613
Philip's War.....	613
Cost of war.....	614
William's War.....	614
Anne's, George's and French Wars.....	614
The Revolution.....	615
Shay's Rebellion.....	626

	PAGE.
War of 1812.....	620
War of the Rebellion.....	621
Soldiers' Monument.....	621
Roll of honor.....	621
Colonial period.....	623
Great Court.....	625
Ipswich Courts.....	626, 631
Officers of.....	627
Jurisdiction of.....	627
Jail.....	627, 632
Representative men.....	627
Resistance to tyranny.....	628
Provincial period.....	629
Witchcraft (see also "Witchcraft")	629
Early records.....	631
Leading men.....	632
County buildings.....	632
Industrial.....	634
Farming.....	634
Description of land.....	634
Productions.....	634
Statistics of.....	635
Fisheles.....	635
Commerce.....	636
Trades.....	636
Grist-mill machinery.....	637
Saw-mills.....	637
Fulling-mills.....	637
Cloth manufacture.....	637
Woolen-mills.....	638
Lace manufacture.....	638
Cotton manufacture.....	638
Money.....	639
Benefactions and charities.....	639
Commons.....	640
Societies.....	640
Statistics of business.....	641
Absent natives.....	641
Biographical.....	647
Ipsen, Ben.....	1101
Isaac, Fielder.....	38
Ives, Stephen B.....	38
<b>J.</b>	
Jackson, Chas.....	xxxi
Jackson, Jonathan.....	418
Jackson, Patrick T.....	867
Jackson, Samuel C.....	1003
Jacques, Alden P.....(ill)	2081
Jaffrey, Wm.....	568
Jennett, Thos.....	1282
Jeppson, Wm.....	42
Jewett, David.....	1362
Jewett, Geo. B.....	131
Jewett, Jedidiah.....	1138
Johnson, Caleb.....1114, (ill)	1112
Johnson, Chas. T.....	603
Johnson, David N.....	316
Johnson, Edward.....	1014
Johnson, Edward J.....	1408
Johnson, Eleazer.....	1782
Johnson family.....	309
Johnson, F. H.....	1219
Johnson, Francis.....992, (ill)	1419
Johnson, John.....	1412
Johnson, Jonathan.....	1413
Johnson, Joseph.....(ill)	1413
Johnson, Samuel.....	16
Johnson, Wm. F.....	260
Johnson, Wm. R.....(ill)	1854
Jones, Anthony S.....(ill)	1852
Jones, Philip.....1432, (ill)	1532
Josselyn, Aaron.....	600
Joylin, Wm. R.....	1139
<b>K.</b>	
Kelly, Geo. W.....	1219
Kent, Richard, Jr.....	1719





	PAGE
Keysar, Geo.....	1475
Kibby, Epaphras.....	601
Kidner, Reuben.....	598
Kimball, Charles..... (ill) 661	
Kimball, David T..... 586, 647, 644, (ill) 648	
Kimball, Edward D..... (ill) 267	
Kimball, Edward P..... (ill) 654	
Kimball, Jos. E..... 645	
Kimball, Josiah F..... 519	
King, Daniel, and family.....	1476
King, Daniel P..... 51, (ill) 1046	
King, James P..... (ill) 1058	
King, John G..... xxx	
King, Rufus..... xxviii	
King, William..... 2114	
Kittredge, Ingalls, Sr..... 704, (ill) 706	
Kittredge, Thomas..... 1678	
Knapp, H..... 469	
Knapp, Jacob N..... 1777	
Knapp, Samuel L..... xxviii	
Knight, Frederick..... 1149	
Knight, Joel..... 601	
<b>L.</b>	
Ladd, Daniel..... 1914	
Laird, Jos. H..... 1093	
Lauson, John..... 1199	
Lander, Sarah W..... 153	
Lassell, Nathaniel..... (ill) 1532	
<b>Lawrence</b> ..... 861	
Introduction..... 861	
Description..... 861	
Indians..... 863	
Lawrence Bridge..... 865	
The chalet..... 865	
Water-power..... 867	
Early manufacturing..... 869	
Buildings..... 870	
Hotels..... 871	
Early post-offices..... 875	
List of early town officers..... 875	
Tables of population..... 876	
Representatives..... 877	
Public buildings and parks..... 878	
Cemetery..... 879	
Fire Department..... 880	
Water-works..... 880	
Sanitary arrangements..... 881	
Police and courts..... 881	
Industrial School..... 883	
Newspapers..... 883	
Societies..... 883	
Masonic..... 883	
Odd Fellows..... 884	
Benefit Insurance..... 884	
Beneficent societies..... 884	
Grand Army..... 884	
Musical societies..... 885	
Y. M. C. A..... 885	
Flower Mission..... 886	
<b>Educational</b> ..... 889	
Public schools..... 887	
High School..... 887	
Oliver Grammar..... 888	
Packard School..... 888	
Evening schools..... 888	
Sewing-school..... 889	
Training-school..... 889	
Private schools..... 889	
<b>Industrial</b> ..... 889	
Lawrence Machine Shop..... 889	
Bee State Mills..... 889	
Washington Mills Company..... 891	
Atlantic Cotton-Mills Company..... 891	
Pacific Mills..... 892	
Lawrence Duck Company..... 893	
Lyons Mill Company..... 894	

	PAGE
Pemberton Mill Company.....	894
Lawrence Woolen-Mill.....	897
Arlington Mills.....	897
Lawrence Gas Company.....	897
Wright Manufacturing Company.....	898
Merrimac Braai-Mill.....	898
Globe Worsted-Mill.....	898
Prospect Worsted-Mill.....	898
Butler Frie Company.....	898
Lawrence Spindle Works.....	898
Lawrence Coffee and Spice Mills.....	898
Downing Rubber Company.....	898
Stanley Manufacturing Company.....	898
Card clothing.....	898
Bleachery.....	899
Spicket Mill.....	899
Wamsit Mill.....	899
Machine Company.....	899
Merrimac Machine-Shop.....	899
Stedman & Smith.....	899
Boiler Works.....	899
Brass Works.....	899
Williams & Smith.....	899
Manufacture of paper-mill machinery.....	899
Line Company.....	899
Wheel Company.....	899
Shuttle Companies.....	899
Beach Soap Company.....	900
Briggs & Allen Manufacturing Company.....	900
Lumber Company.....	900
Flour-Mill.....	900
Merrimac Paper Company.....	900
Bacon Paper Company.....	900
Montee Felt and Paper Company.....	900
Public Library.....	902
Churches.....	905
Lawrence West Congregational.....	905
Central Congregational.....	906
Eliot Congregational.....	906
Methodists.....	907
Baptists.....	907
Free Baptists.....	908
Parker Street Methodist Episcopal.....	908
First Unitarian.....	908
First Universalist.....	908
South Congregational.....	908
Presbyterian.....	909
St. James' and St. John's Episcopal.....	909
Second Baptist.....	909
Riverside Congregational.....	909
Belwell Street Methodist Episcopal.....	909
German Methodist.....	910
St. Thomas' Episcopal.....	910
Roman Catholics.....	910
Lawrence in the Rebellion.....	912
List of volunteers who died in service.....	914
Soldiers' and sailors' monument.....	916
Roster of soldiers.....	918
Biographical.....	928
Lawrence, Abbott..... 867, 869	
Lawrence, Chas..... (ill) 556	
Lawson, Deodat..... 452	
Lawyers..... xiii	
Leach, Ezekiel W..... (ill) 1297	
Leach, Thomas..... 1295	
Leavitt, Dudley..... 35, 47	
Lee, Jeremiah..... 1085	
Lee, Jos..... 709	
Leeds, Geo..... 46	
Lennox, Patrick..... (ill) 376	
Leonard, Geo..... 59	
Leslie, Geo..... 592	

	PAGE
Lewis, Alonzo..... 317, (ill) 348	
Lewis, Jacob M..... 261	
Linah, Timothy..... xviii	
Literature..... 135, 2111	
Little, Jacob..... 1768	
Littlehale, Richard..... 1917	
Livermore, E. St. L..... lix	
Lodge, John E..... (ill) 1426	
Longfellow..... 1425	
Longstroth, Lorenzo L..... 1601	
Longley, Rufus..... 2010	
Lord, Asa..... (ill) 647	
Lord, Geo. R..... 633	
Lord, Nathaniel J..... (ill) xliii	
Lord, Nathaniel, Jr..... (ill) xxx	
Lord, Nathaniel (3d)..... 633	
Lord, Otis P..... (ill) xliiv	
Lord, Robert..... 628	
Loring, Bailey..... (ill) 1687	
Loring, Geo. B..... 135, 148, 1657, (ill) 1689	
Lothrop, Capt..... 688	
Lothrop, Thos..... 683	
Loving, Hy. B..... 261	
Low, Abiel A..... (ill) 243	
Low, John..... 1198	
Lowie, Chas..... 50	
Lowell, John..... xxiv	
Lowell, John..... 868	
Lowell, John..... 1755	
Lowie, John..... 1716	
Lunt, Ezra..... 1755	
Lunt, George..... xli	
Lunt, Henry..... 1717	
Lunt, Micajah..... (ill) 1858	
Lyceums..... lxxviii	
Lyford, John..... 44	
Lynde, Benj. (1st)..... xvii	
Lynde, Benj. (2d)..... xvii	
Lynn..... 219	
Population..... 249, 259, 261	
Indians..... 250	
Early Settlers..... 259	
Names of early settlers..... 262	
Origin of name..... 263	
Natural features..... 263, 264	
Productions..... 266	
Divisions of territory..... 267	
Civil history..... 268	
City charter..... 270	
Mayors..... 261	
Taxation, etc..... 261	
Alms-house..... 261	
Fire Department, etc..... 261	
Police Department..... 262	
Water works..... 262	
Banks..... 262	
Post office..... 262	
Ecclesiastical..... 263	
Churches:	
First Church..... 263	
Unitarian Congregational..... 268	
Methodist..... 269	
Baptist..... 269	
Christian..... 269	
Universalist..... 269	
Second Advent..... 270	
Protestant Episcopal..... 270	
Roman Catholic..... 270	
Swedenborgian..... 271	
Educational:	
Early schools..... 272	
Quaker schools..... 273	
Present schools..... 274, 276, 277	
Libraries..... 277	
Newspapers..... 278	
Lynn Reporter..... 280	



	PAGE		PAGE		PAGE
Lynn City Item.....	280	Aborigines.....	1257	Fishermen pressed into British navy..	1101
Daily Evening Item.....	280	Annals, 1700 to 1800.....	1259	The embargo.....	1101
Lynn Bee.....	280	Annals, 1800 to 1887.....	1272	Skipper Irons.....	1101
Industries:		Churches.....	1282	Seizure of Marblehead vessels.....	1101
Iron Works.....	280	Early church.....	1282	Resolutions sent to Congress.....	1102
Planting and fishing.....	282	Baptist Church.....	1288	Light infantry organized.....	1103
Cloth manufacture.....	283	Staying over.....	1290	Getty elected Governor.....	1103
Shoes and leather.....	283	Tything-man.....	1290	First Baptist Church organized.....	1103
Miscellaneous mfrs.....	289	Early houses.....	1291	War of 1812.....	1103
Electric lighting.....	290	Saw-mills.....	1292	Sabbath-schools organized.....	1106
Hat finishing.....	290	Grist-mills.....	1292	Second visit of Lafayette.....	1106
Ice business.....	290	Cabinet-making.....	1292	Columbian Society.....	1108
Military:		Shipmasters.....	1294	Shoe manufacture.....	1106, 1116
Early Indian troubles.....	292	Longevity.....	1296	First newspaper.....	1107
Persons of prominence.....	292, 296	Valuation.....	1296	Grand Bank incorporated.....	1107
King Philip's War.....	296	Biographical.....	1296	Light-house.....	1107
French and Indian War.....	296	Mann, Ebenezer.....	107	President Jackson's visit.....	1107
The Revolution.....	296	Mann, Joel.....	53	Fire Department.....	1107, 1108, 1109, 1117
War of 1812.....	297	Manning, Richard H.....	(ill) 608	Universalist Society.....	1107
Seminole War.....	297	Mansfield, Andrew.....	307	Schools.....	1107
Mexican War.....	298	Mansfield, Nathaniel B.....	248b, (ill) 248a	Surplus revenue.....	1108
War of the Rebellion.....	298	Map, outline, of county.....	(ill) i	Stages.....	1108
Grand Army of the Republic.....	298	Marblehead.....	1058	Anti-Slavery Convention.....	1108
Burial-places.....	299	Indian history.....	1058	Seaman's Charitable Society.....	1107, 1108
Old burying-ground.....	300	Indian relics.....	1060	Ship-building.....	1109
Friends' Burial-Place.....	301	First settlers.....	1060	Sons of Temperance.....	1109
Eastern Burial-Place.....	304	Fishing industry.....	1061, 1063, 1075	Roman Catholic.....	1110
Pine Grove Cemetery.....	304	Grants of land.....	1061	Industries and manufacturing.....	1110
St. Mary's (R. C.) Cemetery.....	304	First ship built.....	1062	Civil War.....	1111
Alms-house ground.....	304	First meeting-house.....	1063	Fire in 1867 and 1877.....	1116, 1119
Old families.....	306	Ordination of Mr. Cheever.....	1065	Grand Army of Republic.....	1117
Dungen Rock.....	314	Purchases from Indians.....	1066	Savings Banks.....	1117
Lynn Writers.....	316	Witchcraft (see also "Witchcraft").....	1067	Red Men's Society.....	1117
Taverns.....	320	Superstitious beliefs.....	1067	Abbott Hall.....	1118
Lynn Hotel.....	327	The town in 1714.....	1070	Monument.....	1118
Introduced to Lynn.....	330	Dialect of the people.....	1070	Abbott Library.....	1119
Lynn colonies.....	331	Pirates, capture of fishermen.....	1071	Reservoir.....	1119
Slavery and its abolition.....	352	Town Hall built.....	1071	Death of Garfield.....	1120
Secret societies.....	354	Small-pox scourge, 1072, 1076, 1078, 1081, 1100.....	1072	President Arthur's visit.....	1121
Drinking customs and temperance movement.....	355	Fishermen's tax.....	1072	Lasters' Protective Union.....	1121
Free public forest.....	356	Agues Surriage.....	1073	Street railways.....	1121
Chronological mention.....	357	Whitefield's advent.....	1074	Marblehead as a summer resort.....	1122
Lynn Regis.....	345	Fire Department.....	1075	Biographical.....	1122
Biographical.....	348	French and Indian War.....	1076	Merland, Abraham.....	1645
Lynn, C. B.....	470	Work-house.....	1077	Marsh Family.....	2011
Lynnheld.....	377	Rules for hucksters.....	1078	Marsh, John J.....	(ill) liv
Description of.....	377	Contests with the Crown.....	1078	Marshall, Capt. Thos.....	291, 322
Early settlement.....	378	Slavery in.....	1079	Marston, Benj.....	xviii
Surface.....	378	Resistance of sailors to impressment.....	1079	Marston, Stephen W.....	xxviii
Flora.....	379	Destruction of Small Pox Hospital.....	1082	Martin, Augustus B.....	(ill) 371
Fauna.....	379	Oppression by the Crown.....	1083	Martin, George.....	1502
Ecclesiastical:		Militia.....	1084	Martin, John.....	1536
First Parish.....	379	Minute-men.....	1084	Martin, Josiah.....	524
Orthodox Evangelical Society.....	381	British frigate in harbor.....	1085	Martin, Knott V.....	1129, (ill) 1127
South Village, Congregational.....	381	Battle of Lexington.....	1085	Martin, Josiah.....	404
Methodist.....	381	Committee of Safety.....	1085	Massachusetts colony.....	i
Newburyport Turnpike.....	385	Landing of British on Homan's Beach.....	1085	Massacre of the Flower of Essex.....	658
Races in the woods.....	385	First American privateer.....	1085, 1087	Mason, Chas.....	16
Old currency.....	385	Death of James Mugford.....	1087	Mason, John.....	568
Gold and paper currency.....	386	Loyalists punished.....	1088	Mather, Cotton.....	1895
Stanesse Twins.....	386	Ship "Franklin" and her exploit.....	1087	Mather, Nathaniel.....	136
Prize fighters.....	386	Restoration of peace.....	1090	Mauds, Thos.....	136
Golden spike.....	386	Glover's brigade.....	1090	McArthur, Jno. A.....	(ill) 370
Epidemic.....	386	Battle of Long Island.....	1091	McDaniel, Benj. F.....	59
Surplus revenue.....	386	General description of Marblehead regiment in war 1776.....	1091	McGilechrist, Wm.....	45
Forest Hill Cemetery.....	386	Naval history of Marblehead in Revolution.....	1093	McIntire, Chas. C.....	1363
Statistics.....	387	Visit of Lafayette.....	1098	McQuade, Paul.....	57
Chronological events.....	390	Washington's visit.....	1098	Merchant, E. W.....	1354, (ill) 1352
Biographical.....	390	Incidents of bravery.....	1098, 1099, 1100	Merrill, Benjamin.....	xix
		Organization First Methodist Church.....	1099	Merrill, C. A.....	603
		First post-office.....	1099	Merrill, Geo. E.....	55
		Marblehead Academy.....	1099	Merrill, James C.....	2012
		Bank established.....	1100	Merrill, Jas. Cushing.....	xix
				Merrill, Jas. H.....	1605
				Merrill, Joseph.....	1195
				Merrill, Samuel.....	xxxvi
Mages, James.....	67				
Mann, Lester.....	1249				
Boundaries and topography.....	1250				
Early settlers.....	1250				









## 2125

	PAGE
Early settlers.....	391
Developments.....	393
Early troops.....	393
Witchcraft (see also "Witchcraft").....	395
Separation of Middle Precinct.....	398
Middle Precinct.....	1001
Building of meeting-house.....	1001
School tax and separation: from	
Salem.....	1003
District of Danvers.....	1005
Manners and customs.....	1007
Military.....	1009
Revolutionary War.....	1009
List of soldiers in Revolution.....	1011
Military companies.....	1022, 1026
Civil War.....	1023
Lists of companies.....	1023
Town resolutions.....	1025
Lexington monument.....	1033
The great fire.....	1044
Centennial celebration.....	1015
Growth of manufactures.....	1016
East and West India trade.....	1017
Banks.....	1017
Insurance.....	1017
Freedmens.....	1018
Agriculture.....	1018
Social changes.....	1018
Education.....	1019
Newspapers.....	1019
Temperance movements.....	1019
Old-time taverns.....	1020
The almshouse.....	1021
Female benevolent societies.....	1021
Aqueduct, water.....	1022
Industries of.....	1027
Valuation.....	1027
Schools.....	1028
Peabody High School.....	1028
Temperance reform.....	1028
Law and Order Society.....	1028
Soldiers' monument.....	1028
Representatives and town officers.....	1028
Societies.....	1029
Newspapers.....	1029
Fire Department.....	1029
Cemeteries.....	1030
Churches:	
South Parish Second Congrega-	
tional.....	1030
First Unitarian.....	1033
First Methodist Society.....	1034
Second Universalist Society.....	1036
Second Baptist Society.....	1037
Rockville Congregational.....	1037
West Congregational.....	1037
St. John's Roman Catholic.....	1039
St. Paul's Mission (Episcopal).....	1039
Peabody Institute.....	1040
Ebendale Sutton Reference Library.....	1042
Grand Army Republic.....	1043
Old Ladies' Home.....	1044
Biographical.....	1044
Sources of information.....	1055
Abody, Andrew P.....	(iii) 757
Abody, Elizabeth P.....	115
Abody family.....	302
Abody, Francis.....	15, 229, (iii) 230
Abody, Geo.....	510, 1050, 1170
Abody, John.....	228
Abody, Jos.....	12, 69, 112, (iii) 229
Arson, Eliphad.....	1633
Aslee, Jos.....	1497, 1536
Aslee, Jos.....	1916
Atfield, Jos.....	(iii) 672
At, John.....	1343





	PAGE
Perkins, Dr. John.....	383
Perkins family.....	1201
Perkins, Jacob.....	1398
Perkins, Jacob.....	1399
Perkins, Jonathan C.....	xlv, 145
Perkins, John.....	xix, 399, (ill) 391
Perkins, Nathaniel.....	816
Perkins, Thos. H.....	67
Perley, Asa.....	958
Perley, David T.....	(ill) 669
Perley, John.....	597
Perley, M. V. B.....	566
Perley, Samuel.....	616
Perley, Sidney.....	957, 972, 1229
Perry, Gardner P.....	(ill) 1704
Peters, Andrew.....	932
Peters, Hugh.....	6, 8, 31, 136, 186, 1230
Peterson, Austin.....	(ill) 1939
Philbrick, John D.....	478
Phillips Academy.....	1617
Phillips, Eben B.....	(ill) 1491
Phillips family.....	1479
Phillips, Samuel.....	1136, 1198
Phillips, Samuel.....	1595, 1615, (ill) 1592
Phillips, Stephen C.....	16, 225, (ill) 236
Phillips, Stephen H.....	(ill) xlviii
Pickering, Henry.....	141
Pickering, John.....	xxiii, 15, 138, 993
Pickering, Octavius.....	xxv
Pickering, Theophilus.....	1162
Pickering, Timothy.....	11, 13, 15, 137, (ill) xxii
Pickett, John.....	(ill) 767
Pickett, Moses A.....	1109
Pickman, Benj.....	xix, xxii, 11
Pickman, Dudley L.....	(ill) 241
Pickman, Wm. R.....	46
Pigeon, Geo.....	44
Pierce, Benj.....	141, 146
Pierce, Chas. H.....	146
Pierce, Daniel.....	xvi
Pierpont, John.....	1765
Pierston, A. L.....	151
Pierston, Wm. H.....	599
Pike, Daniel P.....	1781
Pike, Nicholas.....	1752
Pike, John.....	1139, (ill) 1150
Pike, Robt.....	1417, 1435
Pillsbury, Amos D.....	871
Pingree, David.....	225
Pitcher, Mary.....	312
Plumer, Thos.....	813
Plummer, Benj.....	811
Plummer, Hezekiah.....	873
Plummer, Combs H.....	1
Poe, Fitch.....	1093
Poor, Joseph.....	(ill) 1067
Poste, Benj. Perley.....	(ill) 1813
Pope, Joseph.....	429
Population.....	i
Porter family.....	435
Porter, Moses.....	450
Porter, Nehemiah.....	1168, 1194
Porter, Samuel.....	xxxi
Porter, Thos. F.....	319
Potter, Daniel.....	(ill) 673
Power, Thos. E.....	474
Poyen, John S.....	(ill) 1555
Pratt, S. H.....	62
Prescott, Wm.....	xix
Prescott, Wm. H.....	147
Prescott, W. H.....	1425
Press, The (see "Press" under town head- ings).....	
Press, Jonathan.....	521
Prince, John.....	36, 138, 1152
Proctor, John.....	991, 995

## R.

Putnam, Alfred P.....	(ill) 547
Putnam, Amos.....	521
Putnam, Archelaus.....	521
Putnam, Edmund.....	467
Putnam, Elias.....	(ill) 542
Putnam family.....	431
Putnam, Hiram B.....	49
Putnam, Jacob.....	(ill) 235
Putnam, James.....	522
Putnam, J. W.....	469
Putnam, Oliver.....	1767
Putnam, Samuel.....	(ill) xxxii
Pynchen, Wm.....	xxiv
R.	
Raioni, Chas.....	474
Ramsey, Wm. H.....	41
Rand, Edward S.....	1769
Randall, Ephraim.....	403
Rantoul, Robert.....	(ill) 728
Rantoul, Robert, Jr.....	xli, 147, 724, xcii, (ill) xli
Rantoul, Robert S.....	152, lx, lxxxiv
Rawson, Edward.....	1716
Raymond, Geo.....	709
Raymond, John M.....	227
Reed, Nathan.....	11
Reed, Thos.....	991
Reynier, Humphrey.....	1136
Rhodes, Dea. Asa.....	398
Richards, Richard.....	307
Richardson, A. M.....	596
Richardson, Thos. P.....	260
Roads, Samuel, Jr.....	1058
Roberts, David.....	150, 226, 1225
Robinson, Deah.....	1867, (ill) 1871
Robinson, Jno.....	lxxxvi
Roby, Jos.....	401
Rockport.....	1354
General description.....	1354
First settlers.....	1358
Facts of interest.....	1359
Churches.....	1361
First minister.....	1361
Second Congregational.....	1361
Pigeon Cove Chapel.....	1365
Methodist Episcopal.....	1366
First Universalist.....	1367
Second Universalist.....	1368
Baptist Society.....	1368
Catholic Church.....	1369
Protestant Episcopal.....	1369
Military.....	1370
Revolution.....	1370
Privatizing.....	1372
War 1812-15.....	1371
Civil War.....	1389
Rosters of soldiers and histories of regiments.....	1390
Small-pox.....	1372
Drought, storms and sickness.....	1372, 1397
Fishing.....	1373
Fire Department.....	1373
Temperance and moral reform.....	1375
Women's Raid.....	1377
Fires.....	1378
Industrial:	
Cotton-mill.....	1379
Oil-cloth.....	1379
Stone quarrying.....	1380
Post-office.....	1380
Banks.....	1383
Celebrations.....	1383, 1384
Rockport Railroad.....	1388
Town hall.....	1397
Rescue of three young men from drowning.....	1398

## S.

Town Library.....	1398
Agriculture.....	1398
Rescued mariners.....	1399
Murder of Gilman.....	1399
Landing of the cable.....	1400
Deceased physicians.....	1402
A bomb-shell in church.....	1401
Deceased clergymen.....	1401
Newspapers.....	1401
Coal.....	1404
Ice.....	1404
Telegraph.....	1404
Insurance companies.....	1404
Lycium.....	1404
California gold fever.....	1404
Y. M. C. A.....	1404
Alms-house.....	1405
Roads.....	1405
Cemeteries.....	1405
Secret societies.....	1406
Last of veterans.....	1406
Biographical.....	1407
Rockwood, Oris.....	267
Rocky Hill Church.....	(ill) 1458
Rogers, Daniel.....	630
Rogers, Ezekiel.....	796, 799, 1125, 1135
Rogers, Jno.....	583, 584
Rogers, Nathaniel.....	581, 584
Rogers, Nathaniel L.....	112
Rogers, Richard S.....	(ill) 232
Rogers, Samuel.....	631
Rolfe, Benj.....	1895, 1942
Rollins, Jos. R.....	861
Ropes, Nathaniel.....	xxiv
Rowell family.....	1530
Rowell, Jacob.....	(ill) 1530
Rowell, Jno.....	(ill) 1470
Rowe, Jos.....	(ill) 1353
Rowley	
Formation of Rogers' Company.....	1128
Division of land into lots.....	1128
First settlers who obtained lots.....	1128
Original survey in 1661.....	1133
Churches:	
First Church.....	1135
Church of Byfield Parish.....	1139
Church of Bluebrook Parish.....	1139
Baptist Church.....	1139
First Universalist Parish.....	1139
Education in 1647.....	1140
Military.....	1141
Revolution.....	1141, 1142
Shay's Rebellion.....	1141
War of 1812.....	1141
Early volunteers.....	1144
Civil War.....	1144
Roster of soldiers.....	1145
Industrial.....	1148
Early enterprises and manufac- tures.....	1148
Glen Mills.....	1149
Town records and clerks.....	1149
Biographical.....	1150
Rowley, Edwin.....	265
Rues, Jno. D.....	1159
Russell, Wm. A.....	(ill) 901
Rust, Richard S.....	(ill) 665
S.	
Safford, Daniel E.....	1211, 1225
Sagamore, James.....	311
Salem:	
Introductory.....	1
Early settlements.....	2
Hanging of Quakers.....	7
Whipping of women.....	7





	PAGE		PAGE		PAGE
Manners and customs .....	9	Wesley Methodist .....	58	28th and 29th Regts. Vol. Inf. ....	205
Early reminiscences .....	10	Independent Congregational.....	58	54th and 55th Regts. Vol. Inf. ....	205
First navy furnished.....	12	Central Baptist.....	59	Sharpshooters.....	206
Near-sighted people.....	13	Crombie Street Church.....	59	1st Regt. Mass. Heavy Art. ....	206
Social rank.....	13	Second Advent.....	61	2d and 3d Regts. Mass. H. A. ....	206
Division of Congregational Society...	15	Grace Episcopal.....	61	4th Regt. Mass. Light Bat.....	206
War of 1812.....	15	Swedenborgian.....	61	5th and 13th Regts. Mass. Light	
Periods of city's progress.....	17	Calvary Baptist.....	61	Bat.....	206
Ecclesiastical.....	17	Seamen's Bethel.....	62	3d Regt. Mass. Cavalry.....	206
Puritan character.....	19	Colored people's church.....	62	2d Regt. Mass. Cavalry.....	207
Laying on of hands.....	23	Mormons' Society.....	63	1st Regt. Mass. Cavalry.....	207
The Covenant.....	24	Deaf-Mutes' Society.....	63	48th, 19th and 7th Mass. Militia	
Early ministers of First Church.....	29	Lutheran Swedish.....	63	Regts.....	207
Quakers.....	34	Literature.....	135	4th Heavy Art.....	207
Witchcraft (see also "Witchcraft")...	34	Defunct industries.....	159	61st Inf.....	207
Persecution of Quakers.....	40	Coal interests.....	159	Frontier Cav.....	207
Commercial history.....	63	Horse railroads.....	160	Enlistments in the navy.....	207
Early shipping interests.....	64, 65	Railroads.....	161	Lists of soldiers and privateers in	
Canton trade.....	66	Settlement.....	161	early wars 1812, <i>et al.</i> ,	
India trade.....	71	Boundaries defined.....	161	208, 209, 210, 211	
Batavia trade.....	73	First town officers.....	162	List of Mexican War enlistments...	211
Sumatra trade.....	75	List of selectmen.....	163	List officers and soldiers War of	
Manila trade.....	80	Essex County established.....	165	the Rebellion.....	212, 213
Isle of France trade.....	82	Early buildings.....	165a	Educational.....	129
The Mocha trade.....	84	Early town government.....	165a	Early free schools.....	129
Madagascar trade.....	84	Description of Salem and its indus-			
Zanzibar trade.....	84	tries in 1836.....	165a	First school-master.....	130
Cape of Good Hope trade.....	86	City seal adopted.....	165b	First school for girls.....	130
Australian trade.....	86	The water system.....	165c	Boys' Latin School.....	130
Ili Islands trade.....	86	Witchcraft delusion (see also Witch-			
South American trade.....	88	craft).....	165c	Boys' and girls' high schools.....	131
The West Coast of Africa trade.....	92	Societies:		Grammar and writing schools.....	131
West India trade.....	93	Literary and scientific.....	166	Women's Reading School.....	131
Trade with Spain and Portugal.....	95	Salem Athenaeum.....	167	Charity School.....	132
Miscellaneous trade.....	96	Social Library.....	167	Colored children's schooling.....	132
Mediterranean trade.....	98	Philosophical Library.....	168	Girls' education, disadvantages of	133
Nova Scotia trade.....	101	Athenaeum.....	168	State Normal School for Girls.....	133
Salem tonnage.....	102	Plummer Hall.....	168	Private Schools.....	134
Whale fishery.....	103	Essex Institute.....	169	Schools of 1887.....	134, 135
The coasting trade.....	103	Essex Historical.....	169	Manufacturing.....	134
The Custom-House.....	103	Essex County Nat. Hist. Soc.....	170	Leather.....	134
Collectors of customs.....	104	East India Marine Society.....	175	Strikes in.....	135
Marine insurance companies.....	105	Peabody Academy of Science.....	178	Cotton.....	136
Ship-building.....	106	Salem Lyceum.....	179	Shoes.....	136
Merchants of Salem.....	106	Salem Fraternity.....	180	Yarn bagging.....	136
Banks:		Young Men's Union.....	180	White lead.....	137
The Essex.....	114	Salem Charitable Mechanic Asso-			
The Salem.....	114	ciation.....	180	Oil.....	137
The Merchants'.....	114	Odd Fellows and Masons.....	180	Paints, etc.....	137
The Commercial.....	114	Military:		Type-writers.....	138
First National.....	114	Salem's early defenses.....	185	Chairs.....	138
The Exchange.....	114	First engagement.....	185	Gas Co.....	138
The Asiatic.....	114	Indian skirmishing.....	185	Electric Light Co.....	138
The Mercantile.....	115	War against the French.....	188	Miscellaneous.....	139
Merchants and Traders'.....	115	Privateers.....188, 192, 195,	196	The Press:	
The Nantucket.....	115	Flower of Essex.....	186	Essex Gazette.....	116
Bank of General Interest.....	115	Early wars.....	189	Salem Gazette and Newbury and	
North American.....	115	War of Revolution.....	190	Newburyport Advertiser.....	118
Salem Savings.....	115	*Lexington and Bunker Hill.....	191	American Gazette.....	118
Salem Five Cents Savings.....	115	Raising of troops and building of			
Churches:		forts.....	191	Salem Gazette and General Ad-	
First Church.....	28, 29, 30	Subscriptions for a naval vessel...	194	vertiser.....	118
Tabernacle Church.....	36, 36	War of the Rebellion.....	200	Salem Gazette.....	119, 120
Confederate Church.....	36	Salem's gallant support.....	202, 203	Salem Chronicle and Essex Ad-	
Society of Friends.....	39	Incidents of interest, enlistment,			
East Church.....	41	etc.....	202	vertiser.....	119
St. Peter's Episcopal.....	44	2d Mass. Vol. Inf.....	203	Salem Register.....	121
North Church.....	49	9th Regt. Vol. Inf.....	204	The Weekly Visitant.....	123
South Church.....	51	23d Regt. Vol. Inf.....	204	The Friend.....	123
Howard St. (or Branch) Church.....	52	19th Regt. Vol. Inf.....	204	Humorous publications.....	123
First Baptist Church.....	54	24th Regt. Vol. Inf.....	204	Gospel Visitant.....	123
Free-Will Baptist Church.....	55	11th Regt. Vol. Inf.....	205	Salem Observer.....	124
Universalists.....	55	40th Regt. Vol. Inf.....	205	Salem Courier.....	124
Roman Catholic.....	56	17th Regt. Vol. Inf.....	205	The Hive.....	124
Methodist Episcopal.....	57	32d Regt. Vol. Inf.....	205	Ladies' Miscellany.....	124
Second Methodist.....	58	35th Regt. Vol. Inf.....	205	Essex County Mercury.....	125
				Salem Advertiser.....	125
				Saturday Evening Bulletin.....	125
				The Constitutionalist.....	125
				The Landmark.....	125
				The Light-house.....	126



	PAGE		PAGE		PAGE
Essex County Democrat.....	126	Sargent, Jonathan B..... (ill)	1551	Savage, Sarah.....	154
The Harrisonian.....	126	Sargent, Nathaniel P.....	xxiv	Sawyer, Benj..... (ill)	1458
The Whiz.....	126	Sargent, Patten..... (ill)	1550	Sawyer Library.....	(ill) 1324
Genius of Christianity.....	126	Sargent, William.....	1541	Sawyer, M.....	1753
The Christian Teacher.....	126	Saugus.....	391	Schools (see "educational" under towns)	
The Locomotive.....	126	Situation.....	391	Science in Essex County.....	lxxvi
Essex County Washingtonian.....	126	Boundaries.....	391	Scott, A. A..... (ill)	421
Salem Washingtonian.....	126	Area.....	391	Scott, George H.....	588
Independent Democrat.....	126	Settlement.....	391	Scripture, James O.....	46
Voice of the People.....	126	Population.....	391	Seal, Joseph.....	381
Voice Around the Jail.....	126	Saugus Centre.....	392	Seal, Wm.....	816
The Evangelist.....	126	Cliffondale.....	392	Sewall, Samuel..... xviii, 1836	
Essex County Reformer.....	127	East Saugus.....	392	Sewall, Stephen..... xviii	
Temperance Offering.....	127	North Saugus.....	392	Sewall, Thomas.....	1189
Salem Oracle.....	127	Oddlandvale.....	392	Saahan, T. H..... 67, 473	
Essex County Times.....	127	Geology.....	392	Shatswell, Nathaniel..... (ill) 609	
Free World.....	127	Town-meetings.....	393	Shaw, Edward P..... (ill) 1849	
Salem Daily Chronicle.....	127	Town house.....	393	Shepard, Jeremiah..... 265	
The Astoroid.....	127	Almshouse.....	393	Shepard, Samuel.....	1136
Essex County Freeman.....	127	Cemetery.....	393	Shepherd, James..... 602	
National Democrat.....	127	New Town Hall.....	393	Shepherd, James W..... 591	
Union Democrat.....	127	East Saugus set off.....	393	Sherman, Edgar T.....	lvii
Massachusetts Freeman.....	127	Water pipes.....	393	Sherratt, Hugh.....	1910
People's Advocate.....	127	Town clerks.....	394	Short, Charles.....	2042
Salem Daily Journal.....	128	Representatives.....	394	Silsbee, Mrs. M. A.....	153
The Essex Statesman.....	128	Valuation and taxation.....	394	Silsbee, Nathaniel..... II, 111	
The Post.....	128	Post-office.....	394	Silsbee, Nathaniel, Jr.....	235
The Salem Evening News.....	128	Early settlers.....	394	Simpson, Michael H..... 1815, (ill) 1783	
Evening Telegram.....	128	Indians.....	394	Skellon, Rev. Samuel.....	29
Daily Times.....	128	Fish.....	394	Smiley, Jas. V..... (ill) 2069	
Salem Public.....	128	Marines.....	394	Smith, Capt. John.....	2
Civil history.....	225	Appleton's pulpit.....	395	Smith, Chas..... 1556, 1602	
List of city officials.....	227	Farms of a hundred years ago.....	396	Smith, Chas. N.....	603
Biographical.....	228	Ecclesiastical:		Smith, D. D.....	468
Salsbury.....	1141	Old Parish Church.....	399	Smith, E. A.....	601
First settlements.....	1141	First Methodist Church.....	403	Smith, Elias.....	1176
Boundaries.....	1142	Cliffondale Methodist Episcopal		Smith, James.....	1869
Early grants.....	1143	Church.....	405	Smith, John..... (ill) 1648	
Carri's Ferry.....	1145	Saugus Centre Methodist Episco-		Smith, Mathew H.....	56
Churches and schools.....	1146	pal Church.....	406	Smith, Peter..... D-F, (ill) 1648	
Early incidents.....	1146, 1146	St. John's Mission.....	106	Snow, J. W.....	322
Early ministers.....	1151	First Congregational Society,		Sombery, Anthony.....	1716
Saw-mills.....	1152	Clifton.....	407	Southgate, Frederick C.....	646
Iron works.....	1152	Industries.....	407	Southgate, Robert.....	587
Ship building.....	1152	Iron works.....	407	Spalding, Samuel J..... (ill) 1834	
Indians.....	1153	Mill site in East Saugus.....	409	Spalding, W. R.....	872
Military.....	1153	Pranker's Mills.....	410	Sparhawk, John.....	36
Revolution.....	1153	Scott's Mills.....	411	Sparhawk, Nathaniel.....	379
List of soldiers.....	1154	Cliffondale tobacco business.....	413	Spaulding, Joshua.....	48
Resisting the French.....	1160	Crockery-ware.....	413	Spaulding, Joshua.....	52
War of 1812.....	1162	Shoe business.....	414	Spaulding, N. S.....	601
Soldiers in the Rebellion.....	1165	Grain-mill.....	415	Spencer, John.....	1716
Witchcraft (see also "Witchcraft").....	1156	Brick-making.....	415	Spofford, Paul..... (ill) 2058	
Churches.....	1156	Early taverns.....	416	Spofford, Richard S..... (ill) 1783	
First Cong.....	1160	Roads and bridges.....	416	Spoffords, Th..... 819, 820	
Rocky Hill Ch..... 1456, (ill) 1458		Salem and Boston Turnpike.....	417	Sprague, John J.....	1782
Christian Baptist Soc.....	1458	Newburyport Turnpike.....	417	Sprague, Joseph E..... xxix	
Union Evang. Soc. of Amesbury.....	1458	Horse-railroads.....	418	Sprague, Jos. G.....	143
First Baptist Soc.....	1458	Educational:		Sprung, Gardiner.....	1765
Methodist Soc.....	1459	Private schools.....	419	Springer, John S.....	601
Schools.....	1459	Ladies' seminary.....	419	Standish, Miles.....	2
Salsbury Point.....	1459	Public schools.....	419	St. Ann's Roman Catholic Church..... (ill) 1319	
First frigate "Alliance".....	1460	Cliffondale Library.....	420	Stanton, Robt.....	42
Births in Salsbury.....	1462	Free Public Library.....	420	Stearns, Artemus W..... (ill) 928	
Town officers.....	1463	Free Masonry.....	420	Steere, M. D. F..... (ill) 1535	
Biographical.....	1468	Sons of Temperance.....	420	Stickney, Jeremiah..... c, xlv	
Saltonstall, Leverett.....	15, 169, 225, (ill) xxxiv	Good Templars.....	420	Stiles, David..... 929, (ill) 959	
Saltonstall, Nathaniel.....	xix	Fire insurance companies.....	420	St. James' Roman Catholic Church..... (ill) 2018	
Saltonstall, Sir Richard.....	xvii, 628, (ill) 228, 2612	Agricultural.....	420	St. Mary's Roman Catholic Church..... (ill) 910	
Sandborn, Jacob.....	601	Military.....	420	Stone, Ebenezer.....	1784
Sanders, Thomas..... (ill) 2076		War of the Rebellion.....	421	Stone, Thomas T.....	37
Sanderson, George P.....	291	List of soldiers.....	421	Storow, Chas S.....	805
Sargent, Aaron A..... (ill) 1817		Grand Army of Republic.....	422	Story family.....	1208
Sargent, Francis..... (ill) 1561		Biographical.....	422	Story, Joseph..... xxix, 139	
		Saunders, Daniel.....	865	Story, Wm. W..... iv, lvii, 16, 149	
		Saunders, Daniel, Jr.....	873	Streeter, Gilbert L.....	115





	PAGE
Strodelhurst.....	1483
Stuart, Moses.....	1634
Surriage, Agnes.....	1673
Sutton, Ebenezer.....	(ill) 1655
Swampscott.....	1472
General description.....	1472
Early settlers.....	1474
Egg Rock.....	1481
Seaweed.....	1482
Military.....	1484
War of Rebellion.....	1484
"Strodelhurst".....	1485
Soldiers' monument.....	1484
Statistical.....	1485
Agricultural.....	1485
Manufactures.....	1485
Annals from 1629 to 1886.....	1486
Biographical.....	1490
Swan, A.....	775, 776
Swan, Robert.....	1940
Swett, John B.....	1767
Swett, Samuel.....	1711
Swinton, Job.....	991
Symmes, Timothy.....	585
Symms, Wm.....	1579
Symms, Z.....	2089
Symonds, Samuel.....	578, 647

T.

Talbot, George.....	57
Tapley family.....	494
Tappan, Wm. H.....	1249
Tarbox family.....	510
Tarbox, John K.....	xlv, 877
Tasker, John.....	xviii
Taylor, John L.....	1691
Taylor, Samuel H.....	1619, (ill) 1638
Teeling, Arthur J.....	(ill) 1844
Tenny, Daniel L.....	1781
That her, Thomas C.....	267
Thayer, L. B.....	602
Thompson, Charles P.....	43
Thompson, Edwin.....	318
Thompson, James W.....	59
Thorndike, Israel.....	799, (ill) 754
Thorndike, John.....	991
Thorndike, Wm. and Albert.....	(ill) 761
Thornton, Jonathan.....	846
Thornton, Jos.....	1360
Tilton, Frederick W.....	1419
Titcomb, Albert C.....	(ill) 1839
Titcomb, Enoch.....	1733
Titcomb, Jonathan.....	1750, 1753
Titcomb, Moses.....	1733
Tobin, Francis.....	1769
Tolman, John B.....	(ill) 465
Tolman, Richard.....	470
Toppan, Chas.....	1779, (ill) 1833
Toppan, Christopher.....	1718
Topsheld.....	972
First settlement.....	972
Topsheld named.....	972
Incorporation.....	973
Division and boundaries of.....	973
Witchcraft (see also "Witchcraft").....	974
Victims of the delusion.....	974
Mode of punishment.....	974
Railroads.....	974
Early cemetery.....	974
Paupers.....	974
Odd Fellows.....	974
United Workmen.....	974
Fire Department.....	974
Town Hall.....	974
Clergymen.....	975
Lawyers.....	975

	PAGE
Physicians.....	975
Church History.....	975
Ministers.....	976-7
Methodists.....	978
Military.....	979
First companies.....	979
War of Revolution.....	980
War for the Union.....	980
Companies and men in Civil War.....	981
Schools, libraries, etc.....	981
Social Library.....	981
Public Library.....	981
Business, manufacturing, etc.....	982
Distinguished natives.....	983
Members Legislature.....	984
Town officers.....	984
Torrey, Chas. T.....	53
Towne, Chas. A.....	59
Towne, Peter.....	932
Townsend, Daniel.....	383
Tracy, Cyrus M.....	318
Tracy, Nathaniel.....	1748
Tracy, P.....	1753
Trash, Richard.....	1291
Trask, Alfred.....	(ill) 565
Trask, Wm.....	990, 992, 993
Treadwell, John.....	266
Trevett, Robert W.....	xlv
Frevett, Samuel R.....	1085
Tucker, Ichabod.....	xxix
Tucker, Jas. W.....	1139
Tudor, Frederick.....	(ill) 1420
Tufts, Gardner.....	315
Tufts, Jno.....	1867
Tollar, David.....	593, 1138
Turner, Christopher.....	107
Turner, Edwin L.....	5
Turner, Nathan L.....	293
Tyler, Jno. P.....	591
Tyng, Dudley A.....	1756

U.

Upham, Chas. W.....	26, 37, 113, 225
Upton, Elijah.....	(ill) 1056
Upton, Elijah W.....	1057, (ill) 1056
Usher, Edwin P.....	319
Usher, Roland G.....	261

V.

Varum, Jno.....	xxv, 2911
Vaughan, John A.....	46
Verryn, Joshua.....	992
Verr, Jones.....	1, 146
Vezina, F. A. I.....	57
Vinton, P. M.....	605
Voorhees, Louis B.....	60

W.

Wade, Nathaniel.....	618
Wade, Thos.....	628
Wadsworth, Benj.....	454
Wagner, Jesse.....	603
Wainwright, Francis.....	579
Wainwright, John.....	xviii
Walcott, Josiah.....	xviii
Walden, Edwin.....	261
Walker, Richard.....	293, 395
Walker, R. G.....	(ill) 2056
Wall, Henry.....	598
Walley, John.....	589
Ward, John.....	1894, 1918
Ward, Joshua H.....	xliv
Ward, Nathaniel.....	li, 589, 771, 1894, 1907
Ware, Benj. P.....	(ill) 1125
Warren, Jonas.....	553, (ill) 552
Warren, Orin.....	(ill) 1891

	PAGE
Waters, Jos. G.....	xix
Waters, Thos. F.....	590
Wayland, John.....	54
Webb, Daniel.....	601
Webb, Stephen P.....	xh
Webb, Stephen P.....	225
Webster, Daniel.....	xvii, 263, 1125
Webster, Jonathan B.....	(ill) 1531
Webster, Josiah.....	1173
Weed, John.....	1497
Welsh, Francis.....	594, 1538
Welsh, Moses.....	565
Wenham.....	1229
First settlement.....	1229
General history.....	1229
Settlers of 1700.....	1230
Early burial-places.....	1230
Physicians.....	1231
Apothecaries.....	1232
First railroads.....	1233
Post-office.....	1233
Town hall.....	1233
Fire Department.....	1233
Newspapers.....	1234
Churches:	
Early churches and ministers.....	1231
Baptist Church.....	1237
Military.....	1238
Indian troubles.....	1238
Revolutionary period.....	1239
War of 1812.....	1239
War of the Rebellion.....	1240
Schools, libraries, etc.....	1240
Business interests.....	1241
Distinguished natives.....	1241
List of Representatives.....	1241
List of town officers.....	1245
Westworth, Philip H.....	(ill) 565
West Newbury.....	1860
Incorporation.....	1860, 1863
Early ministers.....	1861
Meeting-house.....	1862
Town-meetings and officers.....	1864
Representatives.....	1865
Industries.....	1865
Churches:	
First religious movements.....	1862
Methodists.....	1866
Baptists.....	1866
Catholics.....	1866
Military.....	1866
War Rebellion.....	1866
Rosters of soldiers.....	1866
Old settlers.....	1870
Biographical.....	1871
Wetmore, Wm.....	xxix
Wheatland, Henry.....	151, (ill) 248a
Wheatland, Richard.....	68
Wheatland, Stephen G.....	226
Wheeler, Jonathan.....	814
Wheelwright, Isaac W.....	(ill) 1827
Wheelwright, John.....	1451
Wheelwright, Wm.....	1777, (ill) 1820
Whipple, Edwin P.....	143
Whipple, Mathew.....	1216
Whipple, Solomon.....	1225
Whitaker, Geo.....	603
Whitaker, Nathaniel.....	47
White, Alden P.....	424
White, Daniel A.....	15, 141, 304, (ill) xxv
White, Leonard.....	2011, 2012
White, John.....	18
White, Wm.....	1911
White, Wm.....	1153
Whiting, Samuel.....	263
Whitten, Frank R.....	319



	PAGE		PAGE		PAGE
Whiting, Lewis .....	522	Williams, William .....	52, 59	Wood, Daniel .....	(ill) 971
Whitney, Elisha .....	1216	Williams, Winfield S. ....	470	Wood, Mrs. Kate T. ....	153
Whittier, Thos. ....	1917	Wilks, Lemuel .....	56	Wood, John .....	251, 294
Whittier, John G. ....	(ill) 2070	Willson, Edmund B. ....	17, (ill) 51	Wood, Wm. ....	251, 316
Widger, Thos. ....	1479	Willson, Edmund B. ....	51	Woodbridge, Benj. ....	1717
Wigglesworth, Samuel .....	1212, 1215	Wingate, P. ....	1330	Woodbury, John .....	2
Wigglesworth, Edward .....	1754	Winthrop, Gov. ....	2, 4, 5, 1153	Woodbury family .....	680, 682
Wilde, Samuel S. ....	lix	Winthrop, John, Jr. ....	677	Woodbury, John .....	682, 693
Wilder, M. H. ....	53	Wise, Daniel .....	601	Woodbury, John P. ....	(ill) 373
Wilder, Geo. D. ....	61	Wise, John .....	1162, 1180	Woodward, Thos. ....	385
Wilds, Asa Waldo .....	xxvii	Witchcraft, 34, 1656, 453/629, 690, 931, 968, 996, 1067, 1186, 1456, 1562, 1685, 1714, 1965.		Woods, F. ....	603
Wilkins family .....	952	Withington, Leonard .....	(ill) 1733	Woods, Leonard .....	1868
Willard, John .....	931	Witter, Wm. ....	1474	Worcester, Dr. Saml. ....	27, 28, 48, 140
Williams, Gilbert T. ....	503	Wood, Aaron .....	958	Worcester, Samuel M. ....	48, 142
Williams, Henry L. ....	226	Wood, Daniel .....	(ill) 971	Worcester, Wm. ....	1151
Williams, Roger .....	4, 20, 39, 130			Wright, E. C. ....	472













